



The first Three English books on America.

[? 1511]-1555 A.D.

The Large Paper issue of this Work, in Royal 4to, consists of One hundred and twenty-five Copies; each numbered and signed: of which, 100 Copies on Superfine Paper, are numbered 1 to 100; and 25 Copies on Whatman Paper, are numbered 101 to 125.

125

This Volume is Copy No. .

The first
Three English books
on
America.

[? 1511] — 1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by

RICHARD EDEN,

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
Apostolical Protonotary, and Councillor to the Emperor CHARLES V.;

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
Professor of Hebrew, &c., at the University of Basle;

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
Grand Pilot of England;

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish,
Italian, and German Writers of the Time.

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER, F.S.A.

Fellow of King's College, London; Hon. Member of the Virginia and Wisconsin Historical Societies;
Examiner in English Language and Literature, Victoria University, Manchester;

Professor of English Language and Literature,
Sir Josiah Mason's College, Birmingham.

Editor of *English Reprints*, *English Garner*, *English Scholar's Library*,
A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1640; &c.

BIRMINGHAM:

1 MONTAGUE ROAD.

22 June 1885.

(All rights reserved.)

E141
A62
1895a
MAIN

In compliance with current copyright law,
U.C. Library Bindery produced this replacement volume on
paper that meets the ANSI Standard Z39.48-1984 to replace
the irreparably deteriorated original.

1992

TO THE READER.



Each of the three Texts in this Volume is of great rarity; the first two are extraordinarily scarce.

The present impression of them was begun so far back as 1870, and was nearly finished by 1872; when it came to a stand still through the great pressure of other work on all concerned, but more especially on myself.

For then, there came to me the overpowering vocation, for the sake of the Literature of our Golden Age, of attempting (single-handed though it might be, and when every one else forsook it and fled) the printing of *A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1646 A.D.* Through the toil and anxiety of the years 1873 to 1877, that great piece of work was religiously and accurately accomplished, in four Demy 4to volumes, containing in all some 2,800 pp.: and thus the Bibliography of Sidney, Spenser, Shakespeare, Bacon, Ben Jonson, and their contemporaries, was safely secured from destruction or oblivion, to the end of time.

Other circumstances then intervened; so that it was not till January 1885, on the occasion of my first visit to Edinburgh (where the book was in hand), that I was able to resume it. Once, however, the reproduction was again taken up, it was resolutely pushed through to its completion.

This Volume cannot fail to interest the cultivated reader. One is able therein to look out on the New World as its Discoverers and first Explorers looked upon it. Now-a-days, this Globe has but few geographical mysteries; and it is losing its romance as fast as it is losing its wild beasts. In the following Texts, however, the Wonderment of its Discovery in all its freshness, is preserved, as in amber, for all time: and they also contain notices of not a few barbaric civilizations which have long since passed away from off the face of the earth.

But this book has also some very special points of interest :

It is in many respects, an English Cyclopædia of the geographical and scientific knowledge of its Age.

No one can read the portion of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire given herein, without wishing to know a great deal more about him and his writings.

A large portion of what little we do know about Sebastian Cabot, will be found in the notices of him scattered through this volume.

It may also be regarded as a fitting Literary Monument of one of the Private Secretaries of Lord Burleigh, and a very worthy Englishman, Richard Eden : of whom some account will be found at *pp.* xxxvii.-xlvi. ; and who was certainly one of the principal Authors of the reign of Mary Tudor.

It is also clear, that from the third Text in this book (Eden's translation of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire), which was published in 1555, Francis Drake must have obtained all the knowledge that English books could give him respecting the West Indies and the Spanish Main, before he first went out there, under Captain John Lovell, in 1565.

Lastly, William Shakespeare read this third Text also, and created the character of *Caliban* in the *Tempest* out of the description of the Patagonian giants given at *pp.* 251-2.

But for us Moderns, the chief interest in these three Works may be, that they are the very beginning of a mighty Literature. The future of Mankind lies with the Anglo-Saxon race : and of all English books relating to the American portion of that race, the three reprinted in this volume are the *very first*.

The large initial letters are in the style of the Spanish designs of the Biscayan, Juan de Yciar (b. 1523), as they are found in the two editions of his *Orthographia practica*. Saragossa, 1548 and 1550, 4to. Yciar, who evidently looked upon them as the gems of his Work, calls them *Letras de Compas para iluminadores*.

In conclusion I desire most gratefully to acknowledge and record the very kind and cordial help rendered to me in the reproduction of this volume at Edinburgh, by the late Mr William Burnefs and the late Mr John Stevenfon, with whom it was commenced: and also by Mr James Skinner, of the firm of Messrs Burnefs & Co., and Mr James Turnbull, of the firm of Messrs Turnbull & Spears, by whom it has been brought to a successful conclusion.

EDWARD ARBER.

Contents.

To the Reader	v.-vi.
Contents	vii.-x.
PREFACE	xi.-xxii.

The First English book on America.

This Text is the first English book containing the word America (Armenica).

¶ *Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel.*
Of the. x. dyners nacyons crystened.
Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molodyes that in that lande is. } xxiii-xxxvi.
 [Antwerp, ? 1511,] 4to.

[The voyage round Africa to India	xxvii-xxix.]	The fourth nacyon [The Jacobites (? Abyssinians)]	xxx.
Of the blacke Mores [of Guinea]	xxviii.	The fyfth nacyon [The Nestorians]	xxxii.
[Of the lande of Allago]	xxviii.	The syxte nacyon [The Maronites]	xxxii.
Arabia	xxviii.	The seuenth nacyon [The Armenians]	xxxii.
Of greate Indyen	xxviii.	The eyght nacyon [The Georgians]	xxxii.
Of Gutchin [Cochin] that Kyngedome	xxix.	The nynthe nacyon [The Syrians and Samaritans]	xxxii.
		The tenthe nacyon [The Morabites]	xxxii.
<i>Of the. x. dyverce cristened nacions</i>	xxx-xxxii.		
The fyrst nacion [The Latins and Germans]	xxx.	[An abridgement of the mediæval Legend of Prester John	xxxii-xxxvi.]
The seconde nacyon [The Greeks]	xxx.	Of the people named Pynnies	xxxiii.
The thyrde nacyon [They of India under Pope John]	xxx.		

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden xxxvii-xlvi.

Richard Eden's Contributions to our Literature, during the reigns of Edward VI. and Mary, 1553-1555, A.D.

The Second English book on America.

¶ *A treatyse of the newe India, with other new founde landes and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knowen and found in these our dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniversall Cosmographie: wherein the diligent reader may see the good successe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses, by the which not only wordly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged. Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden.* } 3-42
 [London. 1553.] 8vo.

(Richard) Eden. [Dedication] To . . . the Duke of Northumberlande, hys Grace	5-6
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	7-11
THE TABLE	12

Of the newe India, as it is knowen and found in these our dayes	13-27
[The description of the Navigations from Spain to the new India, Eastward	13]
Of the Diamande stone, called in Latin <i>Adamas</i>	14
Of the kingdoms and cities of Narsinga and Canonor	14
How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre	15-16
Of the beaste called <i>Rhinoceros</i>	16
Of <i>Calicut</i> , the most famous market towne of India	16-17
Of the maners of the Indians in <i>Calicut</i>	17-18
Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of <i>Calicut</i>	18
Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of <i>Calicut</i> : and of the wyne of the merueylous tree	19
Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in <i>Calicut</i> , and from whence they are brought thither	20
Of the Iland of <i>Zaylon</i> , and of <i>Cinomome</i> found there	20

Of the cytie of <i>Taruasseri</i> , and the maner of the cytezens there	20-21	Of the greate Empyre of <i>Cathay</i> , being vnder the dominion of the greate Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of <i>Tartaria</i> , in olde tyme called <i>Scythia</i>	24-25
Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella	21	Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of <i>Cathay</i>	25-26
Of the greate and ryche Ilande of <i>Sumatra</i> , or <i>Samotra</i> , sometyme called <i>Taprobana</i>	22	Of the Prouince of <i>Mangi</i> , and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same	26
Of the Ilande of Bornei	22	Of the region of <i>Taugut</i> , and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles heard in the same, and of the <i>Salamandra</i>	26-27
Of the Iland of Giava	23		
Of the Iland of Iaua	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Madagascar</i>	23		
Of the Iland of Zanzibar	23		
Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women	24		
¶ Of the newe India, and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found, 28-42			
[Of the new Islands and India found in the West Ocean sea, from Spain Westward and South-west	28-31, 33-39]	How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> , and of the people with great hanging eares	34-55
Of the two Ilandes <i>Iohanna</i> and <i>Hispana</i>	28	The thyrd nauigation of <i>Christophorus Columbus</i>	35-36
Of the people called <i>Canibales</i> or <i>Anthropophagi</i> , which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe	29	Howe <i>Petrus Alonsus</i> soughte newe Ilandes	36
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of <i>Hispana</i> and of suche thynges as are found there	29	Howe <i>Pinzonius</i> , companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes	36
How <i>Columbus</i> , after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye <i>Canibales</i>	29-30	Of the foure nauigacions of <i>Americus Vesputius</i> to the newe Ilandes	37
How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chanced to hym and his companie in that viage	30-31	The fyrste viage of <i>Americus Vesputius</i>	37-38
How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes	31	The seconde viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	38
How the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to <i>Calicut</i>	32-33	The thyrd viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
How <i>Magellanus</i> by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne	33-34	The fourth viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
		How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India: and of the ryche Cytie of <i>Malacha</i>	40
		Of the Iland of <i>Medera</i> , and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse called the Ilandes of <i>Canaria</i>	40-41
		Whether vnder the <i>Aequinoctial</i> circle or burninge lyne (called <i>Torrida zona</i>) be habitable Regions	41-42
(Richard) Eden. To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses			42

The Third English book on America.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also learne many secretes touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature. Wrytten in the Latine toungue by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rycharde Eden.

Londini, In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell. Anno. 1555.

THE TABLE OF THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOKE (BESYDE THE <i>DECADES</i>)	45
(Richard) Eden. Latin Epistle to King Philip and Queen Mary	46-48
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	49-60
[Section I.	61-204.]
(Pietro) Martire's Epistle to the Emperor Charles V., 30 September 1516	63-64

The First Decade (or Ten Books)		65-105
Book I.	65-68	Book VI. 87-90
Book II.	68-72	Book VII. 90-93
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 391-3) 73-79	Book VIII. 94-96
Book IV.	79-82	Book IX. 96-102
Book V.	82-87	Book X. 103-105
The Second Decade		106-136
Book I.	106-111	Book VI. 122-125
Book II.	111-114	Book VII. 126-129
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 393-4) 114-118	Book VIII. 129-130
Book IV.	118-120	Book IX. 130-134
Book V.	120-122	Book X. 134-136
The Third Decade		137-185
Book I.	137-142	Book VI. 161-165
Book II.	142-145	Book VII. 165-169
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 395-7) 146-150	Book VIII. 170-174
Book IV.	150-156	Book IX. 175-178
Book V.	156-160	Book X. 178-185
Of the Landes and Ilandes lately founde		186-200
Pope Alexander VI. Bull dividing the New World between the Spaniards and the Portuguese, 4 May 1593 In Latin and English.		201-204
[Section II. 205-242.]		
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader		207
(Gonzalo) Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.		208-209
The [Natural] Hystorie of the weste Indies		210-242
Of the ordinary nauyagation from Spayne to the Weste Indies	210	Of Reedes or Canes 227-229
Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rychesse brought from thense into Spayne	211	Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes 229-230
Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym	211-213	Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge 230-233
Of the maner of fyshynge for perles	213-215	Of th[e]increase and decrease, (that is) rysynge and faullynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of <i>Sur</i> 233-234
Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome	215-216	Of the straight or narowe passage of the lande lyng betwene the North and South sea, by the whiche spycyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India 234-236
Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled <i>Torrida zona</i> or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons of the year	217-218	Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women 237-238
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. etc.	219-225	Of the chiefe Ilandes <i>Hispaniola</i> and <i>Cuba</i> 239-241
Of trees, fruites, and plantes	225-227	Of the Ilande of <i>Cuba</i> and other 241
		Of the lande of <i>Bacaleos</i> cauled <i>Terra Baccalearum</i> , situate on the North syde of the firme lande. 242
[Section III. 243-280.]		
Of the Universal Carde and Newe Worlde	245	(Antonio) Pigafetta. A briefe Declaration of the Vyage or Navigation made abowte the Worlde 249-262
(Richard) Eden. A Discourse of the Vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde abowte the Worlde	246-247	Of the prices of Precious Stones and Spices 263-269
Maximilian Transilvanius. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.	247-248	Cadamosto of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera 270
(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. The Debate and Stryfe betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices [at the Conference at Badajos, in 1524]		Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas under the Equinoctiall line 270
(Amerigo) Vespucci. } Of the Pole Antartike and the Starres about the same, &c. 277-280		
(Andreas) de Corsali. }		
[Section IV. 281-334.]		
Of Moscouie and Cathay		283-294
(Galeazzo) Butrigarius	283	(Sebastian) Münster. (Jacopo) Gastaldo. A briefe description of Moscouia 291-293
(Sebastian) Cabot	283	

(Jacobus) Ziglerus.	Of the North Regions	295-306
Of the North Regions and of the moderate and continuall heate in coulde regions aswell in the nyght as in the day in the soommer season	295-298	Laponia 301-303 Norwegia or Norway 303-304 Suecia or Svethlande 305 Bothnia 305 Gothia or Gothlande 306 Finland and Eningia 306
Schondia	298-299	
Gronlande	299	
Islande	300	
(Girolamo) Cardano. Of the difference of Regions, and causes of great cities		307
(Paolo) Gioio, Bishop of Nocera. The Historie of the Legation or Ambassade of the greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia to Pope Clement VII. of that name		308-317
(Sigismund) Liber. Other notable Things concerning Moscovia		318-321
The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and Easte from Moscouia	322-324	More directly from Moscouia to Cathay 325-326 Of the Tartars 327-330
Of the famous ryuer of Tanais	324-325	The nauigation by the frozen sea 330-332
Edward VI. The Copy of the Letters Missive sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytynge the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathaye. 1553 In Latin and English.		333-334
	[Section V.	335-352.]
(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. } (Sebastian) Cabot. }	Other notable thynges as touchinge the Indies	337-350
Of the foreknowledge that the Poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of this new Worlde and other Regions not then knowen	337	Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera 344 Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lying west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies 344-345 The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda 345-346 An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations about the same 346-347 That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiete to fiete ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e]oppinion of the owlde writers 347-348 Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vfe therof 348-349 The Situacion and byggenes of the earth 349 What degrees are 349-350
Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide	337-338	
Of the colour of the Indians	338	
Why they were cauled Indians	339	
The fyrste discouerynge of the Weste Indies	339	
What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies	340	
What labour and trauallye Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies	340-342	
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico	342	
Of Peru	343	
Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer	343-344	
(Richard) Eden. A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth		350
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . What credit ought to bee gyuen to Wryters as touchynge the workes of nature		351
	[Section VI.	353-369.]
(Richard) Eden. The preface to <i>The Booke of Metals</i>		355
(Vannuccio) Biringuccio. Of the generation of Metalles, and their mynes; with the maner of fyndinge the same		356-362
Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular	362-366	Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof 366-368
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . The maner of workynge in golde mynes in Egipt in owld tyme		369
	[Section VII.	371-390.]
(Richard) Eden. The Description of the two Viages made owt of England into Guinea		373
(Richard) Eden. A breefe Description of Affrike		374
The fyrst Vyage to Guinea		375-378
The Second Vyage to Guinea		379-388
Gemma Phrysius. The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of Regions by dyuers wayes		389-390
A BRYEFE REHERSAL OF THE CONTENTES OF THE <i>DECADES</i>		391-398
(Richard) Eden. Th[e] Interpretours excuse		398
INDEX		399-408

P R E F A C E.



TILL labouring in the diffusion of English Literature: we here, with heart-felt pleasure, present the reader with reprints of three exceedingly rare, curious, and costly Cosmographical Works; which are also the very earliest printed documents in our language, relating to South, Central, and North America.

It rarely falls to the lot of man to be able to put one's hand on the very earliest beginnings of a mighty literature. Yet it is not too much to say, that of all the vast multitude of English books that have been, or ever will be, produced, either in, or relating to, what we call our New World; the three Works reprinted in this Volume are the very first and earliest. However mighty and majestic, however subtle and eloquent, however deep and far-reaching, the American-English literature may become; here are its first fruits! Whatever period of mental florescence and splendour may yet be in store for the English-speaking races on that vast Continent; with these three Works begins the printed English Story of their Action, their Mind, and their Progress.

Almost all nations light their lamp with fire borrowed from their predecessors. They commence with translations; progress to imitations; and then, often by distinctly marked steps, the Literature mounts up to the height to which

the united wit and genius of the nation (through all the vicissitudes of earthly empire) can raise it. It rests not long at the summit; but first declines, and then decays. In its full ripeness, it oftentimes lights up the mind of younger and succeeding races; and so, at length, its life and vitality pass away. Thus has the now blazing, now dim, torch of human knowledge and mind-craft been handed down to us over the heads of the nations, through all the successive Ages of Time.

Human literature is also, like human nature, in many essentials evermore the same in all Ages. As is the life of a Man; so is the mind, that is, the higher life, which is the glory of a Nation. Both alike pass through Inception, Growth, Florescence, Decay, and Death: both alike but minister to the purposes of a Power greater than they, until the cycle of His plans shall be completed. Then cometh the end, when the World shall crack at the fiat of the Almighty Trinity.

Instances of this Law of successive Literary Cycles inter-ring one with the other, readily suggest themselves. Such was the Literature of Greece in its earlier relations to Egypt and Phœnicia; and in its later to Rome. Such also that of the *Renaissance* in Italy, in respect to the Greek literature of Byzantium; and to its subsequent influence (which, either as to fulness or extent, has hardly yet been measured) on the rawer nations of Spain, Germany, France, and England.

Such was that of Spain (which now we consider so dead), with reference to the anterior civilisation and letters of the Moorish kingdom there. Such undoubtedly has been, and will be the literature of England; now, it may be, in the early afternoon of its glory. And such has been, and will be that of English-America; now in the morning of its strength and power. In the words of the great and wise Preacher, "To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven."

Under any circumstances, therefore, the present Texts would excite great interest; whatever might be the nature of their contents. It is pleasant, however, to find that each of them has for us modern readers, a distinct interest and a strong charm: while all three do afford us a most vivid picture of those early days of oceanic discovery; of the terrible real dangers, and the still more terrible imaginary ones, undergone and dared by the many noble-hearted Portuguese and Spaniards for themselves and for us; when they *won*, in their little cockboats, for the succeeding Human Race, a truer knowledge of the Globe in which, by the Divine Providence, it has been placed.

But the first impression—the most salient and significant interest of this volume—is that it contains reprints of *The first Three English books on America*.



Our next consideration respects their *contemporary* standpoint; their relation to the story of the nation, for whom the three Texts were printed: and especially to supply Eden's omissions, as regards the very early oceanic voyages of the English, both East and West.

These publications are of great and perpetual interest, inasmuch as they photograph for all time, the fragmentary and imperfectly attained knowledge, and the vast and credulous wonderment, prevailing in England in respect to far-distant countries, during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his two immediate successors. The Texts of this volume embrace, in fact, all that the gentry and merchants of England could, down to the year 1555, A.D., read in the tongue in which they were born, of the wonderful discoveries, and still more marvellous conquests, of the Portuguese and Spaniards in the two Indies.

Neither was this amount of printed information much added to, in Eden's lifetime. His greatest literary feat—the Compilation of 1555—found no immediate imitators: so that it was left to himself (after twenty years more, of great vicissitude, had passed over his head) to undertake its repetition, in the form of a Second and much revised Edition of this labour of love; in the preparation of which he died. This revised Compilation finally appeared in 1577, “set in order, augmented, and finished” by Richard Willes, under the fresh title of *The History of Trauayle in the VWest and East Indies, and other countreys lying either way, &c.* It was five years later (1582), that R[ichard] H[akluyt] published his first Collection, under the title of *Diuers voyages, &c.*

An enquiry into the printed naval literature of Queen Elizabeth's reign, has also elicited the fact, that it was not until about that same year (1577), that our Oceanic Literature fairly began to constitute a distinct section of English books. It soon, however, greatly increased in bulk, variety, and interest; until now, it has no compeer in any other language.

Eden is therefore, in very deed, the Pioneer of British geographic research, the very First of our Naval Chroniclers, and the Herald and Forerunner of all our subsequent discoveries and victories at sea. So that in English literary history, Richard Eden stands in the same relation to Richard Hakluyt, that Richard Hakluyt does to Samuel Purchas; and Samuel Purchas, to our present Hakluyt and Royal Geographical Societies.

This multifarious volume should be studied in conjunction with the inland Chronicles of Halle, Grafton, Stow, and others; together with the more modern histories of the Reformation Age. These are chiefly, if not exclusively, occupied with home and continental affairs; and but rarely travel further abroad. In this direction, this Work will help, in a very important manner, to complete for us, the external history of England, during the period 1511–1555, A.D.

2. It will soon, however, be seen that it does this rather by way of narrating the deeds of other nations, and thereby teaching and guiding our forefathers to do the like; than by describing

II.

the English navigations of its own time. Indeed, there are only two English voyages described in it with any detail, and those are rather late ones, viz., the voyages to Guinea in 1553 and 1554. Yet these accounts (the very earliest of their kind ever printed in our language) were not, as it is quite evident from page 388, included in the original conception and plan of the Work: but were added, just as the book was being completed, by way of a postscript; the extra expense of which, was borne by Master Toy, the London printer and publisher.

It is also to be especially noted, that this omission did not arise because there were no English Voyages to relate; but because the custom of narrating them in print had not yet arisen in our language. Sea-Histories had not, as yet, become a section of our Literature.

Inasmuch, therefore, as so large a portion of this Volume is occupied with the famous deeds of other nations, and particularly of those of the Spaniards; it may be well (as it is indeed but just to our own race) to place in the forefront of them all, a very slight account, by way of a rescue from oblivion, of the sea-doings and sea-daring of our forefathers in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Mary:—narrating the Oceanic voyages with fuller detail than those to the Continent and the Levant, as they were the more adventurous and difficult.

3. From the capture of Constantinople in 1454, till after the battle of Lepanto in 1572; there was an almost ceaseless fight between the Christians and the Turks along the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after they had been driven from Rhodes in 1522, finally settled at Malta in 1530; where by their heroic valour in the frightful siege in 1565, they materially contributed, with the great naval victory of Don John of Austria, to stem the flow of Turkish invasion, which else threatened to swallow up all Christian States.

Recollecting that the formidable, ruthless, and barbaric power of the Turkish empire was at this time ever surging onward and westward in those eastern seas; it will interest most of us to know that there was a regular organised and direct commerce by sea between England and the Levant so early as 1511, A.D.; and for many years afterwards. For our knowledge of this we are indebted to our great English Worthy and famous Cosmographer Richard Hakluyt, Preacher; sometime a Student of Christ Church in Oxford: who, in the second edition of his great work entitled *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoueries of the English Nation, &c. &c.*, London, 1599–1600 fol., has preserved for us the following important note on—

The antiquitie of the trade with English ships into the Leuant.

IN the yeeres of oure Lord, 1511, 1512, &c., till the yeere 1534. diuers tall ships of London, namely, *The Christopher Campion*, wherein was Factor one *Roger Whitcome*; the *Mary George*, wherein was Factor *William Gresham*; the great *Mary Grace*, the Owner whereof, was *William Gunson*, and the master one *John Hely*; the *Trinitie Fitz-williams*, whereof was master *Laurence Arkey*; the *Matthew* of London, whereof was master *William Capling*, with certaine other ships of *Southampton* and *Bristow*, had an ordinarie and vsuall trade to *Sicilia*, *Candie*, *Chio*, and somewhiles to *Cyprus*, as also to *Tripolis* and *Barutti* [*Beyroul*] in *Syria*. The com-

modities which they caried thither were fine Kerfies of diuers colours, courfe Kerfies, white Westerne dozens, Cottons, certaine clothes called Satutes, and others called Cardinal-whites, and Calueskins which were well fold in *Sicilie*, &c. The commodities which they returned backe were Silks, Chamlets, Rubarbe, Malmesies, Muskadels and other wines, sweete oyles, cotten wooll, Turkie carpets, Galles, Pepper, Cinamom, and some other spices, &c. Besides, the naturall inhabitants of the foresayd places, they had, euen in those dayes, traffique with Iewes, Turkes, and other forreiners. Neither did our merchants onely employ their owne English shipping before mentioned, but sundry strangers also : as namely, *Cardiots*, *Raguseans*, *Sicilians*, *Genouezes*, *Venetian* galliasses, *Spanish* and *Portugale* ships. All which particulars doe most evidently appeare out of certaine auncient Ligier booke [i.e. *Ledgers*] of the R[ight]. W[orshipful]. Sir *William Locke* Mercer of *London*, of Sir *William Bowyer* Alderman of *London*, of master *Iohn Gresham*, and of others; which I *Richard Hakluyt* haue diligently perused and copied out.—*Vol. II., Part I., p. 96, Ed. 1599.*

4. Next in the order of time comes the mythical voyage of 1517 of Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert from England towards Cathay; the sole authority for which is Eden's statement at page 6 of this Volume : in which, so far as we have been able to inquire, we believe him to have been utterly mistaken, and that the voyage had no existence; and the more especially because Sebastian Cabot was at that date in Spain, where he remained until after the Conference of Badajos in 1524, which (as Gomara tells us at p. 272) he attended as an expert on behalf of the Emperor Charles V.

5. Important and authentic as is that early Levant traffic; it was a very different thing from a voyage across the then but half discovered Atlantic. As Pietro Martire vaunts, few or none but Spaniards were licensed to go from Spain to the New World. It is, therefore, very striking to find, ere Cortes had consolidated his marvellous conquest of Mexico, or Pizarro had finally set forth to imitate him in Peru; and while at home, the great Cardinal was in serene prosperity and unruffled power, our first printed New Testaments were being secretly read in the principal English towns, and our nation's Reformation was just beginning to bud forth: it is indeed surprising to trace one Englishman at least in the West Indies; to learn, of a certainty, that one, if not two English expeditions had reached the American coast; and, most startling of all, to know that one of these squadrons found in the harbour of St John's, Newfoundland, not another royal fleet of discovery, but a fleet of fourteen *fishing-boats* (and, if Spanish reports be correct, thirty or forty more in the neighbourhood), that had ventured (at a time when, to us, so little appears to have been known of the north-eastern seaboard of America; and so much to have been dreaded in a voyage thither) across the wide Atlantic, simply for the sake of codfish.

6. Hakluyt gives the following account of Thomas Tyson or Tison, the first Englishman known to have reached the West Indies:—

A briefe note concerning an ancient trade of the English Marchants to the Canarie-lands, gathered out of an olde ligier booke [ledger] of M. Nicolas Thorne the elder a worshipfull marchant of the city of Bristol.

HT appeareth evidently out of a certaine note or letter of remembrance, in the custody of me *Richard Hakluyt*, written by *M. Nicolas Thorne* the elder a principall marchant of *Bristol*, to his friend and factour *Thomas Midnall* and his owne seruant *William Ballard* at that time resident in *S. Lucar* in *Andeluzia*; that in the yeere of our Lord 1526 (and by all circumstances

and probabilities long before) certaine English marchants, and among the rest himselfe with one *Thomas Spacheford* exercised vsuall and ordinary trade of marchandise vnto the *Canarie* Ilands. For by the sayd letter notice was giuen to *Thomas Midnall* and *William Ballard* aforesayd, that a certaine ship called *The Christopher* of *Cadiz* bound for the *West Indies* had taken in certaine fardels of cloth both course and fine, broad and narrow of diuers forts and colours, some *arouas* [arobas] of packthread, fixe *cerons* or bagges of sope, with other goods of *M. Nicolas Thorne*, to be deliuered at *Santa Cruz*, the chiefe towne in *Tenerifa*, one of the feuen *Canary-lands*. All which commodities the sayd *Thomas* and *William* were authorized by the owner in the letter before mentioned to barter and sell away at *Santa Cruz*. And in lieu of such mony as should arise of the sale of those goods, they were appointed to returne backe into *England* good store of *Orchell* (which is a certaine kinde of mosse growing vpon high rocks, in those dayes much vsed to die withall), some quantity of figar, and certaine hundreds of kid-skinnes. For the procuring of which and of other commodities, at the best and first hand, the sayd *Thomas* and *William* were to make their abode at *Santa Cruz*, and to remaine there as factours for the abouesaid M[after] *Nicolas Thorne*.

And here also I thought good to signifie, that in the sayd letters mention is made of one *Thomas Tison*, an English man, who before the foresayd yere 1526 had found the way to the *West Indies*, and was there resident, vnto whom the sayd M[after] *Nicolas Thorne* sent certaine armour and other commodities specified in the letter aforesayd.—*Principal Navigations, &c. &c. of the English Nation, Vol. II., Part II., p. 3, Ed. 1599.*

Hakluyt, referring again to this note, hazards the following surmise:—

This *Thomas Tison* (so farre as I can coniecture) may seeme to have bene some secret factour for *M. Thorne* and other English marchants in those remote partes, whereby it is probable that some of our marchants had a kind of trade to the *West Indies*, euen in those ancient times and before also.—*Idem, Vol. III., p. 500, Ed. 1600.*

This conjecture is confirmed by the fact that *Nicolas Thorne*, at his death in 1527, owed this *Thomas Tyson* the sum of £12: 5s. (probably on account of business).—See *Letters and Papers on the Reign of Henry VIII.*, Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A., IV. (2), p. 1256.

7. Imbedded in Halle's Chronicle is the following note, quite unconnected with anything going before or after, and to which also he makes no subsequent allusion whatever:—

This same moneth [May 1527, 19 Hen. VIII.], the kyng sent two sayre shippes, well manned and vitailed, hauing in them diuers conning men, to seke strange regions; and so furth thei fet, out of the *Thamis*, the twentie day of May, if thei sped well you shall here at their retorne. fol. 158, b.

This note *Richard Grafton*, who had printed Halle's Chronicles in 1548, transferred (with but variations of spelling) to p. 1149 of his own Chronicle, printed by *Henry Denham* in 1569.

Richard Hakluyt, in his *Principal Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries*, thus records his researches as to this expedition:—

AND whereas master Hall and master Grafton say, that in those ships there were diuers cunning men, I haue made great inquirie of such as, by their yeeres and delight in navigation, might giue me any light to know who those cunning men should be, which were the directers in the aforesayd voyage. And it hath bene told mee by Sir *Martin Frobisher*, and master *Richard Allen* a Knight of the Sepulchre, that a Canon of *S. Paul* in *London*, which was a great Mathematician, and a man indued with wealth, did much aduance the action, and went therein himselfe in person, but what his name was, I can not learne of any. And further they told mee that one of the ships was called the *Dominus vobiscum*, which is a name likely to bee giuen by a religious man of those daies. and that sailing with farre Northwestward, one of the ships was cast away as it entred into a dangerous gulphe, about the great opening, betweene the North partes of *New found land*, and the country lately called by her maiestie *Meta Incognita* [i.e. *Labrador*].

Whereupon the other ship shaping her course towards *Cape Britton*, and the coast of *Norumbega* [Hakluyt substitutes *Arambec* in his 1600 Edition], and oftentimes putting their men on land to search the state of those unknown regions, returned home about the beginning of October, of the yeere aforesaid. And thus much (by reason of the great negligence of the writers of those times, who should have used more care in preferring the memories of the worthie actes of our nation) is all that hitherto I can learne, or find out of this voiage.—p. 517, *Ed.* 1589; also, iii 129, *Ed.* 1600.

Of this enterprise, Purchas some thirty-five years later has preserved for us, at pp. 808-91 of the Third volume of his *Pilgrimes*, 1625, the following more authentic testimony:—



EE will recreate you with a plaine Mariners Letter endorsed in homely phrase, To the Honourable Kings Grace of *England*, here (as I thinke) given you from the Originall. I have also another written to Cardinal *Wolsey* touching the fame voyage in Latin, by *Albertus de Prato*; for the antiquitie rather than any remarkable raritie, worthy here to be mentioned.¹

² I mentioned before Master *Thornes* fathers finding out *New-found Land*, with Master *Eliot*. These animated King *Henrie* the eight to fet forth two ships for discouerie, one of which perished in the North parts of *New-found Land*. The Master of the other, *John Rut*, writ this Letter to King *Henrie*, in bad *English* and worfe Writing. Ouer it was this supercription.³

Master *Grubes* two ships departed from *Plymouth* the 10. day of *Iune*, and arriued in the *New-found-Land* in a good Harbour, called *Cape de Bas*, the 21. day of *Iuly*: and after we had left the fight of *Selle* [*Scilly*], we had neuer sight of any Land, till we had sight of *Cape de Bas*.



Reafing your Honorable Grace to heare of your seruant *John Rut*, with all his Company here, in good health, thanks be to God, and your Graces ship, *The Mary of Guilford* with all her thanks be to God: And if it please your honorable Grace, we ranne in our course to the Northward, till we came into 53. degrees, and there we found many great Ilands of Ice and doepe water, we found no sounding, and then we durst not goe no further to the Northward for feare of more Ice, and then we cast about to the Southward, and within foure dayes after we had one hundred and sixtie fathom, and then we came into 52. degrees, and fell with the mayne Land, and within ten leagues of the mayne Land we met with a great Island of Ice, and came hard by her, for it was standing in deepe water, and so went in with *Cape de Bas*, a good Harbor, and many small Ilands, and a great fresh Riuer going vp farre into the mayne Land, and the mayne Land all wildernesse and mountaines and woods, and no naturall ground but all mosse, and no inhabitation nor no people in these parts: and in the woods we found footing of diuers great beasts, but we saw none not in ten leagues. And please your Grace, the *Samson* and wee kept company all the way till within two dayes before wee met with all the Ilands of Ice. That was the first day of *Iuly* at night, and there rose a great and a marvailous great storme, and much soule weather; I trust in Almighty *Iesu* to heare good newes of her. And please your Grace, we were considering and a writing of all our order, how we would waite [*watch*] vs, and what course wee would draw, and when God doe send soule weather, that with *Cape de Sper she* [i.e. each ship] should goe, and he that came first should tarry the space of sixe weeks one for another, and watered at *Cape de Bas* ten dayes, ordering of your Graces ship, and fytting, and so departed toward the Southward to seeke our fellow: the third day of *August* we entered into a good Hauens, called *Saint Iohn*, and there we found eleuen saile of *Normans*, and one *Brittaine*, and two *Portugall* Barkes, and all a fishing, and so we are readie to depart toward *Cape de Bas*,⁴ and that is twentie fve leagues, as

¹ The very high antiquity of these letters—which are the earliest ever known to have been sent home by Englishmen from America—constitutes their great modern value.

² The next two sentences are a jumble of error. It is clear from the text that the expedition consisted of three ships: Master *Grube's* or *Grub's* two ships, one of which was called the *Samson*, the name of the other does not transpire (if it could be ascertained to be the *Dominus Vobiscum*, the chain of testimony would be complete): together with the King's ship, the *Mary of Guilford*, commanded by *John Rut*.

³ Purchas evidently intends us to understand that the endorsement is contemporary with the letter.

⁴ This is evidently a mistake through the hurry in writing. It should be *Cape de Sper* [*Cabo de Spera*, "the Cape of the Spear"]. For the two ships, after having stayed

shortly as we haue fished, and so along the coast till we may meete with our fellow, and so with all diligence that lyes in me towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded by the grace of God, as we were commanded at our departing. And thus *Iesu* saue and keepe your honorable Grace, and all your honorable Reuer., in the Hauens of *Saint Iohn*, the third day of *August*, written in haste. 1527.

By your seruant *John Rut*, to his vttermoost of his power.

I haue by me also *Albert de Prato's*¹ originall Letter, in Latin stille, almost as harsh as the former *English*, and bearing the same date, and was indorsed, *Reuerend in Christo Patri Domino Domino Cardinali et Domino Legato Anglie*: and began, *Reuerendissime in Christo Pater salutem. Reuerendissime Pater, placeat Reuerendissimæ paternitati vestræ scire Deo fauente postquam exiimus à Plemut quæ fuit x. Iunij &c.* (The substance is the same with the former, and therefore omitted.) *Datum apud le Baya Saint Iohan in Terris Nouis, die x. Augusti 1527. Reuer. Patr. vest. humiliter seruus, Albertus de Prato* (the name written in the lowest corner of the sheet).

We are fortunately able to trace this expedition still further. By "towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded," *John Rut* meant the West Indies; and we have accounts by two Spanish historians of his arrival there, which will demand of us some further attention.

Gonzales Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés—b. at *Madrid* 1478, d. at *Valladolid* 1557, and who resided for many years in the West Indies—wrote, in addition to the *Natural hystoria de las Indias* printed at *Toledo* on 15th *February* 1526, from which *Eden* has translated large extracts at pp. 208-242 of this Volume; another and his most important work, entitled *La historia general de las Indias*, the printing of which was completed at *Seville* on 30th *September* 1535 (or about eight years after *Rut's* expedition); every copy of which is attested with *Oviedo's* written signature. It does not appear that *Eden* had met with this important work, or he would have assuredly have made the following extract from it.

On folio clxj. of this work, being the Thirteenth chapter of the Nineteenth book, is the following passage, for the literal translation of which we are much indebted to the courtesy and kindness of the celebrated Spanish scholar, *Don Pasqual de Gayangos*.

Before we come to the extract; an error as to its date (which misled *Hakluyt*, and may mislead others) must be noted for avoidance, in the Third Volume of *J. B. Ramusio's Navigazioni e Viaggi*. Each Volume of this celebrated Collection was printed in a different year by *L. A. Giunti* at *Venice*. Vol. I., of which a First Edition had been printed in 1550, appeared corrected and enlarged in *March* 1554. Of Vol. II., the Preface of which is dated 7th *July* 1554, the earliest known is that of 1559; while Vol. III., the Preface of which is dated 20th *June* 1553, appears to have been first printed in 1556; that is to say, in the year after *Eden's* Compilation was published in *London*.

Now, at p. 204 of this Third Volume, of 1556, occurs this important typographical error. *Oviedo* in 1535 begins *Elanno*

ten days, 21-31 *July* 1527, at *Cape de Bas*, sailing southward, had reached *St. John's* harbour on the 3d of *August*, and then purposed to go 75 miles more, evidently to the southward, to *Cape de Sper*, the appointed rendezvous, where they hoped to meet the *Samson*. From the date of the priest's letter, however, it is evident that the two English ships stayed a week longer at *St. John's*. These letters were probably sent to *England* in one of the *Norman* or *Breton* fishing boats.

¹ I have quite failed to find any notice of this *Albertus de Prato*. Might that be a latinised form of *Albert Prat*? or was the bearer of the name a foreigner? I can trace no such name in *Le Neve's Fasti* or *Newcourt's Repertorium*. It would be interesting if he could be identified with *Hakluyt's* mathematical Canon of *St. Paul's*.

de M.d.xxvij. annos, &c.; which Ramusio in 1556 translates *Nel 1517* instead of *Nel 1527*. Hakluyt in 1589, not suspecting any falsification, thereupon adduces the following extract in support of fabulous English voyage of 1517, hereafter asserted by Eden at p. 6: but the date being wrong, his argument, of course, falls to pieces.

It would also seem that Oviedo was residing in the city of Santo Domingo, when he wrote this portion of his history.

CHAPTER 13. *Of certain foreign corsairs which passed to these parts and Indies, and what has been the cause and origin of their bad thoughts.*

IN the year Mdxvii. an English corsair, under colour or pretence that he was going to discover land, came with a large ship to the Brazil on the coast of Tierra Firme, and from thence crossed to this Island Hispanola, and arrived close to the mouth of the harbour of this city [Santo Domingo]. He sent his boat properly manned, and asked for permission to come into port, saying that he came with merchandise and to barter [with the inhabitants]. At the same moment the Governor, Francisco de Tapia, ordered a gun to be fired against the said [English] ship, which was coming straight into the harbour; which being observed by the English, they went away, after taking on board the said boat's crew. And, to tell the truth, the Governor [Tapia] was wrong in what he did, for had the English vessel entered the harbour, armed though she was, she could not have left without the consent of this city and castle.

So that the English, seeing the reception that was made to them, sailed in the direction of the Island of San Juan, and having entered the Bay of San German, spoke to the inhabitants of that town, and asked for provisions: uttering complaints against the people of this island [Hispaniola], and saying that they had not come to annoy the people, but to traffic with them, if they consented, for money or merchandise. Provisions were given to them, and they gave pewter vessels and other goods in return. After which the ship sailed for Europe; but it is supposed that she never reached her destination, for nothing more was heard of her.

Considering that Oviedo *printed* the above less than eight years after the event, there can hardly be any mistake as to the year being 1527. Yet in a later Spanish historian we find these circumstances, in much fuller detail, narrated as occurring in 1519. So that of the three dates 1517, 1519, and 1527; the last is the true one.

Antonio de Herrera Tordesillas, [b. 1559 at Cuella de Segovia; d. 29th March 1625 at Madrid], was born two years after the death of Oviedo. The first four *Decades* of his *Historia General de los Hechos de los Castellanos en las Islas i tierra firme* were printed in 1601, the last four in 1615; both at Madrid. In the second *Decas*, which was published seventy-four years after Rut's voyage, we have an account of him and his doings, evidently derived from a written deposition; as Oviedo's had been either from hearsay or from personal observation. It consists of the narrative (for the translation of which I am indebted to my friend, the late H. Pyne, Esq., Assistant Tithe Commissioner) of Ginès Navarro, master of a Spanish caravel, who apparently piloted Rut's ship from Porto Rico by the island of Mona to Santo Domingo, and then back again to San Germano in the island of Porto Rico.

THE ARRIVAL OF AN ENGLISH SHIP IN THE INDIES, AND THE STATE OF AFFAIRS IN THE ISLANDS.

AFTER the departure of the ships which carried [? to Spain] the gold pearls and ordinary merchandise; a caravel of Saint Domingo being in the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico], loading with casava; there arrived [at Porto Rico] a ship of three masts, and of the burden of 150 tons. The

master of the caravel, [who] went out in his boat to this ship, supposing it to be a Spanish vessel, discovered [coming towards him] a pinnace containing twenty-five men armed with corslets and cross-bows, and having two pieces of artillery in its prow.

They said that they were Englishmen, and that their ship was from England; that, in company with another armed ship, they had sailed to seek the country of the Great Khan, but that the ships had been separated in a tempest: and that theirs, proceeding on its voyage, came to a frozen sea, where they found large islands of ice; that they had then altered their course, and came to a hot sea [? the Gulf Stream], which seethed like water in a caldron; and in order that the caulking of the ship might not be melted, they went in search of the Baccalaos,¹ where they found fifty² Spanish, French, and Portuguese ships, and that they wishing to land there in order to obtain an Indian interpreter, they [the Indians] killed the pilot, who was a Piedmontese. From thence, they had coasted as far as the *Rio de Chicora* [the River of Chicora, i.e. River in Carolina], and had crossed over from that river to the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico].

Upon being asked, What they were searching for in those islands? they said that they were desirous of seeing them, for the purpose of giving an account of them to the King of England, and to take a cargo from Brazil.

They invited the master of the caravel, who was called Ginès Navarro, to come on board their ship, and to show them the course to Saint Domingo. He saw in the ship a quantity of wine, flour, and other provisions; as well as much cloth, linen, and other articles of merchandise. They carried much artillery and a forge, and carpenters for ship-building, and an oven for baking bread; and there were [in the ship] threescore men.

Ginès Navarro further stated that, if he could have read them, the captain of the ship wished to show him the instructions which he brought from the King of England; that they had sent a company ashore at the Island of Mona,³ and that they had bartered some pewter in the Island of San Juan.

This ship went to the port of Santo Domingo, and sent the bark ashore, saying That they were desirous of trading; and [it] tarried there two days, The governor of the Castle, upon the arrival of the ship, sent to inform the Magistrates [? the Royal Audience], for the purpose of their giving him orders what to do; and as they returned no answer, he discharged a gun at the ship, in consequence of which, she forthwith recalled the bark, and by and by set sail.

The ship then returned to the back of the island of San Juan, and tarried a short time there, trading with the inhabitants of the town of Saint Germans; and did not appear again.

The magistrates [of Saint Domingo] arrested the governor, saying that he ought to have waited for their answer; and sent information of this affair to the King [of Spain], as well as of the bad condition of the fortress, so that orders might be given for the fortification of it, and [that] there should be directions [given] for the providing it with men, artillery, and military stores.—*Decades*, ii., *Book v.*, *Chapter 3*, *Ed. 1601*.

Thus from four perfectly distinct and independent sources, comes to us the certainty of this English voyage across the Atlantic in 1527; for a further discussion of which see that masterpiece in its way, and rare book (in the Eastern hemisphere at least), Mr. J. G. Kohl's *History of the Discovery of Maine*, published by the Maine Historical Society at Portland, in 1869; and Mr. Biddle's *Memoir of Sebastian Cabot*, London 1832. Both these writers think that the Piedmontese pilot was the celebrated Verazzano.

It is interesting to know that John Rut got back safely to England. For in Sept.-Dec. 1528, while still in the command

¹ The Indian word for codfish, applied by S. Cabot to the land he first discovered, and afterwards loosely and vaguely applied to the American coast from Labrador far to the southward. Here it evidently includes Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the northern seaboard States of the United States.

² This number may be an exaggeration. If it be correct, the English squadron must have met thirty or forty other fishing-boats on the Newfoundland 'banks,' beside the fourteen they saw in St. John's harbour.

³ Mona is a small island in the track from Port Rico to Santo Domingo.

of the *Mary of Guildford*, he was employed in freighting home, on the King's behalf, wine from Bourdeaux. See *Royal M.S.* 14. B. xxix., in the British Museum.

8. We have seen by the above that the King's ships left the Thames on 20th May 1527. Whatever else may be doubtful, that is certain: and therefore it is equally certain that the 'Book' which Robert Thorne, the Bristol merchant, wrote at Seville in that year, and sent to Doctor Leigh, the King's almoner, and the English ambassador in Spain, had nothing to do with the fitting out of that London expedition.

This far-seeing discourse, with its preliminary exhortation to the King, was first printed by R[ichard] H[akluyt] in his *Diuers Voyages*, &c. in 1582. Its only date is 1527, which occurs twice; each time after the author's signature—'Robert Thorne. 1527.' As Hakluyt reproduced Thorne's curious 'Carde' or map, it is quite evident that he had before him, in 1582, the original and autographic book penned by the author; and therefore the date 1527 must be accepted by us without a doubt.

Now it was the English custom at that time, to reckon the year from the 25th March, the Feast of the Annunciation of the Virgin. The 'Book' was therefore written at the earliest after the 25th March 1527.

The two following passages in it, taken together, would seem to show that it was not *written* till the summer was far advanced, probably while Rut's expedition was skirting the American coast.

In a flote of three shippes and a carauell that went from this citie, armed by the merchautes of it, which departed in Aprill last past, I and my partner haue 1400. Ducates that we employed in the sayd fleete, principally for that two Englishmen friends of mine [see p. xiii.] which are somewhat learned in Cosmographie, shoulde go in the same shippes, to bring mee certaine relation of the situation of the countrey, and to bee experte in the Nauigation of those seas, and there to haue informations of many other things, and aduise that I desire to know especially. Seeing in these quarters are ships, and marriners of that countrey, and cardes [charts] by which they sayle, though much vnlike ours, that they shoulde procure to haue the said cards, and learne howe they vnderstande them, and especially to know what Nauigation they haue for these Ilandes Northwardes and Northeastward. B. 4.

But if it please God that into Englande I may come with your Lordship, I will shewe some coniectures of reason though against the generall opinion of Cosmographers, by which shall appeare this that I say not to lacke some foundation. And tyll that time I beseeche your Lordship let it bee put to silence: and in the meane season, it may please God to sende our two Englishmen, that are gone to the spicerie, which may also bring more plaine declaration of yat which in this case might be required. . . D. 3.

It would seem that Thorne by 'April last paste' means April 1527; for if he had intended April 1526, and wrote this 'Book' in the seven days of 25-31 March, then by English custom reckoned as the first days of 1527, he would assuredly have said 'April last year.' It is also evident from the allusion that a considerable time had elapsed since the two Englishmen had left for the West Indies; and that, at the time of writing, Thorne was looking forward to their return. The earliest approximate date that can therefore be assigned to its composition is the summer of 1527. Dr. Leigh did not return to England till January 1530.

We must therefore assign the occasion and preparation of this English voyage of Oceanic discovery of 1527 to other

persons than Robert Thorne. Such an important effort, as this expedition most certainly was, could not have been suddenly determined upon, and probably originated in the previous year.

Thorne's 'Book' is also interesting for another reference to a very early English voyage across the Atlantic.

So that as afore is sayde, if betweene our Newe founde landes or *Norway*, or Ilande the Seas towarde the north be Nauigable, wee shoulde goe to these Ilandes a shorter way by more then 2000. leagues. And though wee went not in the saide Ilandes, for that they are the Emperours or Kinges of Portingale, wee shoulde by the way, and comming once to the line Equinoctiall, finde landes no lesse riche in Golde and Spicerie, as all other landes are vnder the saide line Equinoctiall: and also shoulde, if wee may passe vnder the North, enioye the Nauigation of all Tartarie.

Which shoulde bee no lesse profitable to our commodities of clothe, then these spiceries to the Emperour, and King of Portugale.

But it is a generall opinion of all Cosmographers that passing the feuenth clyme, the sea is all ice, the colde so much that none can suffer it. And hitherto they had all the like opinion that vnder the line Equinoctiall for muche heate the lande was inhabitable.

Yet since by experience is proued no lande so much habitable nor more temperate. And to conclude, I thinke the fame shoulde bee founde vnder the North, if it were experimented. For as all iudge, *Nihil fit vacuum in rerum natura*, so I iudge there is no lande inhabitable [i.e. uninhabitable], nor Sea innaigable. If I shoulde write the reason that presenteth this vnto me, I shoulde be too prolix, and it seemeth not requisite for this present matter. God knoweth that though by it I shoulde haue no great interest, yet I haue had and still haue no little minde of this businesse: So that if I had facultie to my will, it shoulde bee ye first thing that I woulde vnderstande, euen to attempt, if our Seas Northwarde be nauigable to the Pole or no. I reason, that as some sickenesse are hereditarious, and come from the father to the sonne, so this inclination or desire of this discouerie I inherited of my father, which with another merchant of Bristowe named Hugh Eliot were the discouerers of newe found lands, of the which there is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had bene ours. For all is one coaste, as by the carde appeareth, and [as] is aforesaide. . . . D. 2.

A most excellent account of the merchant family of the Thornes of Bristol will be found in *English Merchants*, 1869, written by my fellow-student at King's College, Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne.

9. The next English Voyage on our record introduces us to a very famous name. It is thus preserved to us by Hakluyt.

A VOYAGE TO BRASILL, MADE BY THE WORSHIPFULL M[ASTER] WILLIAM HAUKINS OF PLIMMOUTH, FATHER TO SIR JOHN HAUKINS, KNIGHT, NOW LIVING,¹ IN THE YEERE 1530.



Lde M. William Haukins of Plimmouth, a man for his wisdome, valure, experience, and skill in sea causes, much esteemed and beloued of King *Henry* the eight, and being one of the principall Sea Captaines in the West partes in his time, not contented with the short voyages commonly then made onely to the knowen coastes of *Europe*, armed out a tall and goodly stipe of his owne of the burthen of 250 tunnes, called the Pole [Paul, Ed. 1600] of *Plimmouth*, wherewith hee made three long and famous voyages vnto the coast of *Brasill*, a thing in those dayes very rare, especially to our Nation. In the course of which voyages he touched at the Riuer of *Seglos* vpon the coast of *Guinea*, where hee trafiqued with the *Negroes*, and tooke of them Oliphants [Elephants, Ed. 1600] teeth, and other commodities which that

¹ As this was printed in 1589, old William Hawkins lived to see the overthrow of the Spanish Armada, and so is very properly introduced by the Rev. Canon Kingsley, with his usual truthfulness in details, in his celebrated Elizabethan romance of *Westward Ho!* as a very old man, present at Plymouth with the Captains who were waiting the arrival of the great Spanish Fleet.

place yeeldeth: and so arriuing on the coast of *Brasil*, vsed there such discretion, and behaued himself so wifely with those sauage people, that he grew into great familiaritie and friendship with them. Infomuch that in his 2. voyage, one of the sauage kings of the countrey of *Brasill*, was contented to take shippe with him, and to bee transported hither into England, whereunto M[after] *Haukins* agreed, leaning behinde in the Countrey as a pledge for his safetie and returne againe, one *Martin Cockeram* of *Plimmouth*. This *Brasilian* king being arriued [*i.e.* in 1531], was brought vp to London, and presented to King *Henry* the 8. lying as then at *Whitehall*: at the sight of whome, the King and all the Nobilitie did not a little marueile, and not without cause: for in his cheekes were holes made according to their sauage maner, and therein small bones were planted, standing an inche out from the said holes, which in his owne Countrey was reputed for a great brauerie. He had also another hole in his nether lippe, wherein was set a precious stone about the bignesse of a pease. All his apparell, behauiour, and gesture were very strange to the beholders.

Having remained here the space almost of a whole yere, and the king with his sight fully satisfied, M[after] *Haukins* according to his promise and appointment, purposed to conuey him againe into his Countrey: but it fell out in the way that, by change of ayre and alteration of diet, the said sauage king died at Sea, which was feared would turne to the losse of the life of *Martin Cockeram* his pledge. Neuerthelesse, the Sauages being fully perswaded of the honest dealing of our men with their Prince, restored againe the saide pledge, without any harme to him, or any man of the companie: which pledge of theirs they brought home againe into England, with their shippe freighted and furnished with the commodities of the Countrey. Which *Martine Cockeram*, by the witnessse of Sir *John Haukins*, being an officer in the towne of *Plimmouth*, was liuing within these fewe yeares.—*p.* 520, *Ed.* 1589.

10. Let us now look eastward. In 1592, (three years after the appearance of the First edition of his *Voyages*, &c.), Hakluyt became acquainted with a very old man, a Londoner named *John Williamson*, then apparently the sole survivor of our first traffic in the Levant; which dying out, had been revived in 1580.

These early Levant voyages were very important; inasmuch as they were the school in which some of the principal Agents and Captains of the Moscovy Company, like *Richard Gray* and *Richard Chancellor*, received their chief training.

A voyage made with the shippes called the Holy Croffe, and the Matthew Gonfon, to the Iles of Candia and Chio, about the yere 1534, according to a relation made to Master Richard Hackluit by John Williamson, Cooper and citizen of London, who liued in the yere 1592, and went as cooper in the Matthew Gonfon the next voyage after.

The shippes, called the *Holy Croffe* and the *Matthew Gonfon*, made a voyage to the Ilandes of *Candia* and *Chio* in *Turkie*, about the yeere 1534. And in the *Mathew* went as Capitaine M[after] *Richard Gonfon*, sonne of old Master *William Gonfon*, paymaster of the kings Nauie. In this first voyage [*i.e.* of the two described by *Williamson*] went *William Holstocke* (who afterwards was Controuller of her Maiesties [*i.e.* Queen Elizabeth's] Nauie, lately deceased) as page to M[after] *Richard Gonfon* aforesaid, which M[after] *Gonfon* died in *Chio* in this his first voyage. The ship called the *Holy Croffe* was a short shippe, and of burden 160 tunnes. And hauing bene a full yeere at the sea in performance of this voyage, with great danger she returned home, where, vpon her arriuall at *Blackwall*, in the riuer of *Thames*, her wine and oyle caske was found so weake that they were not able to hoysse them out of the ship, but were constrained to draw them as they lay, and put their wine and oyle into new vessels, and so to vnlade the shippe. Their chiefe freight was very excellent Muscatels and red Malmesie, the like whereof were seeldome seene before in *England*. They brought home also good quantitie of sweete oyles, cotton woollles, *Turkie* Carpets, Galles, Cynamon, and some other spices. The saide shippe called the *Holy Croffe* was so shaken in this voyage, and so weakened, that she was layd vp in the docke, and neuer made voyage after.—*Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 98, *Ed.* 1599.

EDEN.

Another voyage to the Iles of Candia and Chio made by the shippe, the Matthew Gonfon, about the yeere 1535, according to the relation of John Williamson, then Cooper in the same ship, made to M[after] Richard Hackluit, in the yeare 1592.

The good shippe called the *Mathew Gonfon*, of burthen 300 tunnes, whereof was owner old M[after] *William Gonfon*, pay-master of the Kings Nauie, made her voyage in the yere 1535. In this ship went as Capitaine, *Richard Gray*, who long after died in *Russia*. Master *William Holstocke*, afterward Controuller of the Queenes Nauie, went then as purser in the same voyage. The Master was one *John Pichet*, seruant to old M[after] *William Gonfon*. *James Rummie* was Masters mate. The master cooper was *John Williamson*, citizen of *London*, liuing in the yeere 1592, and dwelling in *Saljnt Dunstons* parish, in the East. The M[after] Gunner was *John Godfrey* of *Bristol*. In this ship were 6 gunners and 4 trumpeters, all which foure trumpeters at our returne homewards went on land at *Messina* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, as our ship road there at anker, and gat them into the Gallies that lay neere vnto vs, and in them went to *Rome*. The whole number of our companie in this ship were about 100. men, we were also furnished with a great bote, which was able to carry 10 tunnes of water, which at our returne homewards we towed all the way from *Chio* vntil we came through the straight of *Gib[r]altar* into the maine Ocean. We had also a great long boat and a skiff. We were out vpon this voyage eleuen months, yet in all this time there died of sicknesse but one man, whose name was *George Forrest*, being seruant to our Carpenter called *Thomas Plummer*.—*Idem*.

The Island of *Scio*, the extreme point of the above two voyages, had long been the property of a Genoese family, the *Justiana*, under the sovereignty of the Senate of that city. How the Turks first put it to tribute, and finally took possession of it in 1568, is thus narrated in two letters, written on the 14th of February 1569 by an Englishman, *Gaspar Campion*, who had "traded in this countrey [*i.e.* the island and its vicinity] about this 30. yeres [*i.e.* 1539-1569], and haue bene married in the towne of *Chio* full 24. yeres [*i.e.* 1544-1569]."

If, you shall vnderstand that the Island of *Chio* in time past hath bene a *Signiorie* or lordship of it selfe, and did belong to the *Genouaies*. There were 24. of them that gouerned the island which were called *Mauneses*. But in continuance of time the Turke waxed so strong and mightie, that they, considering they were not able to keepe it, unlesse they should become his tributaries, because the Island had no come, nor any kind of vitales to sustaine themselues, but onely that which must of necessitie come out of the Turkes dominions, and the sayd island being inclosed with the Turks round about, and but 12. miles from the Turks Continent, therefore the said *Genouaies* did compound and agree to be the Turkes tributaries, and to pay him 14000. thousand ducates yeerely, Alwayes prouided that they should keepe their lawes both spirital and temporall, as they did when the Island was in their owne hands. Thus he granted them their priuiledge, which they inioyed for many yeeres, so that all strangers and also many English men did trade thither of long continuance, and went and came in safety. In this meane time, the prince *Pedro Doria* (being a Genouois) became a capitaine to serue the Emperour with 30. or 40. gallies against the Turke. And since that time diuers other captaines belonging to *Genoa* haue bene in the seruice of king *Philip* against the Turke. Moreouer, whensoever the Turke made out any army, he perceiued that no nation did him more hurt then those Genouois, who were his tributaries. Likewife at the Turkes siege of *Malta*, before which place he lay a great while, with losse of his men, and also of his gallies, he found none so troublesome vnto his force as one *Iuanette Doria*, a Genouois, and diuers others of the Iland of *Chio*, who were his tributaries. At which sight, he tooke such displeasure against them of *Chio*, that he sent certaine of his gallies to the Iland, for to seise vpon all the goods of the 24. *Mauneses*, and to turne them with their wiues and children out of the Iland; but they would let none other depart, because the Iland should not be vnpeopled. So that now the Turke hath sent one of his chiefe men to rule there.—*Hakluyt*, *Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 114, *Ed.* 1599

C

xvii

Another letter of Campion's, begins thus :

T may please your worship to vnderstand, that as concerning the voyage to *Chio*, what great profit would be gotten, both for merchants and also for owners of shippes (as it was well known in those dayes when the *Matthew Gonson*, the *Trinitie Fitzwilliams*, and the *Saujour of Bristow*, with diuers other ships, which traded thither yerely, and made their voyage in ten or twelue moneths, and the longest in a yeere), M[after] *Francis Lambert*, M[after] *John Brooke*, and M[after] *Drauer* can truly inform you hereof at large. And by reason that wee haue not traded into those parts these many yeeres [*i.e.* previous to 1569], and the Turke is growen mighty, wherehy our ships doe not trade as they were wont . . . —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 116, Ed. 1599.*

Finally we may take leave on this occasion of the interesting subject of the early English trade in the Mediterranean, with the following note of Hakluyt's.

His trade into the Leuant. . . . was very vsual and much frequented from the yeere of our Lord 1511 till the yeere 1534, and afterwards also, though not so commonly, vntil the yeere 1550, when the barke *Aucher* under the conduct of M[after] *Roger Bodenham* made a prosperous voyage into *Sicilia*, *Candia*, *Sio*, and other places within the Leuant. Since which time the foresaid trade (notwithstanding the grand *Signiors* ample priuilege granted to M[after] *Anthony Jenkinson* 1553, and the strong and weighty reasons of *Gaspar Campion* for that purpose) was vtterly discontinued, and in maner quite forgotten, as if it had neuer bene, for the space of 20. yeares or more [*i.e.* from the date of Jenkinson's priuilege of 1553 until 1575; when the preliminary steps which resulted in the formation of the Turkey Company, were taken]. *Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 136, Ed. 1599.*

II. We now come to the tragical English voyage to Newfoundland, in 1536; as narrated by Master Oliver Daubeny, a London merchant, to Hakluyt's cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Inner Temple; and by Master Thomas Butts of Norfolk, to himself. It will ever be thought one of the worthiest acts of our younger Hakluyt's worthy life, that, for the simple assurance, with further details, of this voyage, he travelled 200 miles on horseback, probably into Norfolk and back.

The voyage of master Hore and diuers other Gentlemen, to Newfoundland and Cape Breton, in the yeere 1536. and in the 28. yeere of King Henry the eight.

Ne master Hore of London, a man of goodly stature and of great courage, and giuen to the studie of Cosmographie, in the 28. yeere of King Henry the 8. and in the yeere of our Lord 1536. encouraged diuers gentlemen and others, being assisted by the kings fauour and good countenance. to accompany him in a voyage of discouerie vpon the Northwest partes of America: wherein his perswasions tooke such effect, that within short space many gentlemen of the innes of court, and of Chaucerie, and diuers other of good worship desirous to see the strange things of the world, very willingly entered into the action with him, some of whose names were as followeth: M[after] *Wickes*, a gentleman of the West countrey of five hundred markes [*equivalent to an income of £2500 of the present day*] by the yeere liuing. Master *Tucke*, a gentleman of Kent. Master *Tuckfield*. M[after] *Thomas Butts*, the sonne of Sir *William Butts*, Knight of Norfolk, which is yet aliue, and from whose mouth I wrote most of this relation. Master *Hardie*, Master *Biron*, Master *Carter*, Master *Wright*, Master *Rastall* Sarieant *Rastals* brother, Master *Ridley*, and diuers other, which all were in the admirall called the *Trinitie*, a ship of seuen feore tunnes, wherein M[after] *Hore* himselfe was imbarked. In the other shippe, whose name was the *Minion*, went a very learned and vertuous gentlemen, one master *Armigil Wade*, father to the worshipfull master *William Wade*, now clerke of the priuie counsell, Master *Oliuer Daubeny* merchant of London, M[after] *Joy* afterward gentleman of the kings chappell, with diuers other of good account. The whole number that went in the two tall ships aforefayd, to wit, the

Trinitie and the *Minion*, were about six feore persons, whereof 30. were gentlemen, which all were mustered in warlike maner at *Grauefend*, and after the receiuing of the sacrament, they embarked themselues at the end of *Aprill*, 1536.

From the time of their setting out from *Grauefende*, they were very long at sea, to witte, aboue two moneths, and neuer touched any lande vntill they came to part of the West *Indies* about *Cape Breton*, shaping their course thence Northeastwards, vntill they came to the Island of *Penguin*, which is very full of rockes and stones, whereon they went and founde it full of great foules white and gray, as bigge as geefe, and they sawe infinite numbers of their egges. They draue a great number of the foules into their boates vpon their sailes, and tooke vp many of their egges, the foule they flead and their skinned were like hony combs full of holes being flead off: they dressed and ate them, and found them to be very good and nourishing meate. They sawe also store of beaves both blacke and white, of whome they killed some, and tooke them for no badde foode.

M[after] *Oliuer Daubeny*, which (as it is before mentioned) was in this voyage, and in the *Minion*, tolde M[after] *Richard Hakluyt* of the middle Temple these things following: to wit, That after their arriual in *Newfound land*, and hauing bene there certaine dayes at ancre, and not hauing yet seene any of the naturall people of the Countrey, the same *Daubeny* walking one day on the hatches spied a boate with *Sauages* of those partes, rowing downe the bay towarde them, to gafe vpon the shippe and our people, and taking viewe of their comming aloofe, hee called to such as were vnder hatches, and willed them to come vp if they would see the naturall people of the Countrey, that they had so long and so much desired to see: Whereupon they came vp and tooke viewe of the *Sauages* rowing toward them and their shippe, and vpon the viewe they manned out a shipboote to meete them and to take them. But they spying our shipboote making towards them, returned with maine force, and fled into an Island that laye vp in the bay or river there, and our men pursued them into the Island, and the *Sauages* fledde and escaped: but our men founde a fire, and the side of a beare on a wodden spit left at the same by the *Sauages* that were fledde.

There in the same place they founde a boot of leather garnished on the vtter side of the calfe in certain braue trailles, as it were of rawe filke, and also founde a certaine great warme mitten: And these carried with them, they returned to their shippe, not finding the *Sauages*, nor seeing any thing else besides the foyle, and the things growing in the same, which chiefly were store of fire and pine trees.

And further, the said *M. Daubeny* told him, that lying there they grewe into great want of victuals, and that there they found small reliefe, more then that they had from the nest of an *Osprey*, that brought hourelly to her yong great plentie of diuers forts of fishes. But such was the famine that increased amongst them from day to day, that they were forced to seeke to relieue themselues of rawe herbes and rootes that they fought on the maine: but the famine increasing and the reliefe of herbes being to little purpose to satisfie their insatiable hunger, in the fieldes and desertes here and there, the fellowe killed his mate while hee stouped to take vp a roote for his reliefe, and cutting out pieces of his body whome hee had murdered, broyled the same on the coles, and greedily deuoured them.

By this meane the company decreased, and the officers knewe not what was become of them; and it fortuneth that one of the company driuen with hunger to seeke abroad for reliefe, founde out in the fieldes the fauour of broyled flesh, and fell out with one that hee would suffer him and his fellowes to sterue, enjoying plentie as he thought: And this matter growing to cruel speeches, he that had the broyled meate, burst out into these wordes, If thou wouldest needes knowe, the broyled meate that I had, was a piece of such a mans buttocke. The report of this brought to the ship, the Captaine found what became of those that were missing, and was perswaded that some of them were neither deuoured with wilde beastes, nor yet destroyed with the *Sauages*: And hereupon he stood vp and made a notable Oration, containing, How much these dealings offended the Almighty, and vouched the Scriptures from first to last what God had in cases of distresse done for them that called vpon him, and told them that the power of the Almighty was then no lesse, then in al former time it had bene. And added, that if it had not pleased God to haue holpen them in that distresse, that yet it had bene better to be punished in body, and to haue liued euerlastingly, then to haue relieved for a poore time their mortal bodies, and to bee condemned euerlastingly both body and foule to the vnquenchable fire of hel.

And thus hauing ended to that effect, he began to exhort to repentance, and befought all the company to pray, that it might please God to looke vpon their miserable present state, and for his owne mercie to relieue the same. And such was the mercie of God, that the same night there arriued a French shippe in that port, well furnished with vittaille, and such was the policie of the English, that they become masters of the same; and changing ships and vitayling them, they fet faile to come into England.

In their journey they were so farre Northwards, that they sawe mightie Islands of yce in the summer season, on which were haukes and other foules to rest themselues, being wearie of flying ouer farre from the maine. They sawe also certaine great white foules with redde bills and redde legs, somewhat bigger then Herons, which they supposed to be storkes. They arriued at *S[aint]. Iues* in Cornwall about the ende of October. From thence they departed to a certaine Castle belonging to sir *John Luttrell*, where *M[after] Thomas Butts* and *M[after] Raftall* and other gentlemen of the voyage were very friendly entertained: after that they came to the Earle of Bathe at *Bathe*, and thence to *Bristoll*, and so to London. *M[after] Butts* was so changed in the voyage with hunger and miserie, that sir *William* his father and my Lady his mother knewe him not to be their sonne, vntill they found a certaine secret marke which was a wart vpon one of his knees, as he tolde me *Richard Hakluyt of Oxforde* himselfe, to whome I rode 200. miles onely to learne the whole trueth of this voyage from his owne mouth, as being the onely man now aliue [*i.e.* in or about 1589] that was in this discouerie.

Certaine moneths after, those Frenchmen came into England, and made complaint to king *Henry* the 8: the King causing the matter to be examined, and finding the great distresse of his subiects, and the causes of the dealing so with the French, was so moued with pitie, that hee punished not his subiects, but of his owne purse made full and royal recompense vnto the French.

In this distresse of famine, the English somewhat relieue their vitall spirits by drinking at the springs the fresh water out of certaine wooden cups, out of which they had drunke their *Aqua composita* before.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, pp. 517-519, Ed. 1589.*

12. These are all the oceanic voyages performed by the English in the reign of *Henry VIII.* which we have been able to trace. It was under *Edward*, that our sailors first began to creep down the African coast. The special significance of these voyages lay in the then accredited proprietorship (through the Papal Bull, reprinted at *pp. 201-204*) of the Portugese to the entire continent of Africa; and in the intentional and studied ignorance of its coast line, in which the World was kept by that nation. Every English voyage to its west coast was therefore at once an act of revolt against the Papacy, and a challenge to the pretensions of Portugal.

The Levant trade was open to all who would dare to run the gauntlet of the Turks. The Spaniards recognised the claim of the English discovery, by the Cabots, of *Baccalaos*; and had not yet worked up northward to it. But the African sea coast, so honourably and so patiently discovered, was (by all laws, human and divine, hitherto accepted) the possession of its brave discoverers. It was therefore a new impulse, that made our English ships, passing the familiar Straits of Gibraltar on their left hand, to go forward southward, first to *Barbary*, and then to *Guinea*; cost what it might.

Discoveries are made by successive steps, one after another; and the passage of English ships around the world and to the Eastern seas was but the succession and development of these first attempts to *Marocco*. All that we know of these *Barbary* voyages is preserved to us by *Hakluyt*, who collected his information forty to fifty years after the event, and has thus transmitted it to us.

THE FIRST VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1551, DESCRIBED BY JAMES ALDAY, SERVANT TO SEBASTIAN CABOT.

The originall of the first voyage for traffique into the kingdom of *Marocco* in *Barbarie*, begun in the yeere 1551, with a tall ship called the *Lion* of *London*, whereof went as captaine Master *Thomas Windham*, as appeareth by this extract of a letter of *James Aldaie*, to the worshipfull master *Michael Locke*, which *Aldaie* professeth himselfe to haue bene the first inuenter of this trade.



Orshipfull Sir, hauing lately bene acquainted with your intent to profecute the olde intermitted discouerie for *Catui*, if therein with my knowledge, trauell or industrie I may doe you seruice, I am readie to doe it, and therein to aduerture my life to the vttermost point. Trueth it is, that I haue bene by some men (not my friends) euill spoken of at *London*, saying that although I be a man of knowledge in the Arte of Navigation and Cosmographie, and that I haue bene the inuenter of some voyages that be now growen to great effect; yet say they maliciously and without iust cause, that I haue not bene willing at any season to proceed in those voyages that I haue taken in hand, taking example especially of two voyages. The one was when I was master in the great Barke *Aucher* [which left *Gravesend* on 13th November 1550] for the *Leuant*, in which voyage I went not, but the causes they did not know of my let from the same, nor of the other. But first the very trueth is, that I was from the same voyage letted by the Princes letters, which my Master *Sebastian Gabota* had obained for that purpose, to my great grieue.

And as touching the second voyage which I inuented for the trade of *Barbarie*, the liuing God knoweth that I say most true, that when the great sweate was [The sweating sickness began in London on 9th July 1551, and continued till the following September] (whereon the chiefe of those with whom I ioyned in that voyage died, that is to say, Sir *John Luttrell*, *John Fletcher*, *Henry Ostrich* and others), I my selfe was also taken with the same sweate in *London*, and after it, whe:her with euill diet in keeping, or how I know not, I was cast into such an extreme feuer, as I was neither able to ride nor goe; and the shippe being at *Portsmouth*, *Thomas Windham* had her away from thence before I was able to stand vpon my legges, by whom I lost at that instant fourescore pound [= £800 of the present day]. Besides I was appointed by them that died (if they had liued) to haue had the whole gouernment both of shippe and goods, because I was to them the sole inuenter of that trade.

In the first voyage to *Barbary* there were two *Moors*, being noble men, whereof one was of the Kings blood, conueyed by the said Master *Thomas Windham* into their countrey out of *England*.

Yours humble at your commandement, JAMES ALDAY.

THE SECOND VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1552, DESCRIBED BY MASTER JAMES THOMAS.

The second voyage to *Barbary* in the yeere 1552. Set forth by the right worshipfull Sir *John Yorke*, Sir *William Ger[r]ard*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Master *Frances Lambert*, Master *Cole*, and others. Written by the relation of Master *James Thomas*, then Page to Master *Thomas Windham*, chiefe Captaine of this voyage.



He shippes that went on this voyage were three, whereof two were of the Riuer of *Thames*, That is to say, the *Lyon* of *London*, whereof Master *Thomas Windham* was Captaine and part owner, of about an hundred and fiftie tunnes: The other was the *Buttolfe* [*Botolph*] about fourescore tunnes, and a *Portugall Carauel*, bought of certaine *Portugals* in *Newport* in *Wales*, and freighted for this voyage, of summe sixtie tunnes. The number of men in the Fleete were an hundred and twentie. The Master of the *Lyon* was one *John Kerry* of *Mynhe[a]d* in *Somersetshire*, his Mate was *David Landman*. The chiefe Captaine of this small Fleete was Master *Thomas Windham* a *Norfolke* gentleman borne, but dwelling at *Marsfield-parke* in *Somersetshire*.

This Fleete departed out of *Kings[r]-rode* neere *Bristoll* about the beginning of May 1552. being on a Monday in the morning [The 2d and 9th of

May 1552, were Mondays], and the Monday fortnight next ensuing in the evening came to an anker at their first part in the roade *Zafia* or *Afafi* on the coast of *Barbarie*, standing in 32. degrees of latitude, and there put on land part of our merchandise to be conueid by land to the citie of *Marocco*: which being done, and haue refreshed our selues with victuals and water, we went to the second port called *Santa Cruz*, where we discharged the rest of our goods, being good quantitie of linnen and woollen cloth, corall, amber, Iet, and diuers other things well accepted of the *Moores*. In which roade we found a French ship, which not knowing whether it were warre or peace between *England* and *France*, drewe her selfe as nere vnder the towne wals as she could possible, crauing aide of the towne for her defence, if need were, which in deed seeing vs drawe nere, shot at us a peece from the wals, which came ouer the *Lion* our Admirall, between the maine mast and foremast. Whereupon we comming to an anker, presently came a pinnes aboard vs to know what we were, who vnderstanding that we had bene there the yere before [*This confirms Alduy's statement*], and came with good leaue of their king in merchant wife, were fully satisfied, and gaue vs good leaue to bring our goods peaceably on shore, where the Viceroy, whose name was *Sibill Manache*, within short time after came to visite vs, and vsed vs with all curtesie. By diuers occasions we spent here very nere three moneths before we could get in our lading, which was Sugar, Dates, Almonds, and Malaffos or fugar Syrope. And for all our being here in the heate of the Sommer, yet none of our company perished by sicknesse.

Our ships being laden, we drew into the Sea for a Westerne wind for *England*. But being at sea, a great leake fell vpon the *Lion*, so that we were driuen to *Lancerota* and *Forteuentura*, where, betwene the two Ilands, we came to a roade, whence we put on land out of our fayd ship 70. chestes of Sugar vpon *Lancerota* with some dozen or fixteene of our company, where the inhabitants supposing we had made a wrongfull prize of our carauell, suddenly came with force vpon our people, among whom I my selfe was one, tooke vs prisoner, and spoiled the fugars: which thing being perceiued from our ships, they manned out three boates, thinking to rescue vs, and draue the Spaniards to flight, whereof they slewe eighteene, and took their gouernour of the Iland prisoner, who was a very aged gentle-

man about 70 yeeres of age. But chafing the enemie so farre for our recouerie, as powder and arrowes wanted, the Spaniards perceiuing this, returned, and in our mens retire [*retreat*] they slewe six of them. Then a Parle[y] grew, in the which it was agreed, that we the prisoners should be by them restored, and they receiue their old gouernour, giuing vs a testimony vnder his and their hands what damages wee had there receiued; the which damages were there restored, and made good by the King of Spaine his marchantes on our returne into England.

After we had searched and mended our eake, being returned aboard, we came vnder faile, and as wee were going to the sea on the one side of the Iland, the *Cacafuego* and other ships of the King of *Portugals Armada* entered at the other, and came to anker in the roade from whence we were but newly departed, and shot off their great ordinance in our hearing. And here by the way it is to bee vnderstood that the *Portugals* were much offended with this our new trade into *Barbarie*, and both in our voiage the yeere before, as also in this they gaue out in *England* by their marchants, that if they tooke vs in those partes, they would vse vs as their mortall enemies, with great threats and menaces. But by God and good prouidence wee escaped their handes.

From this Iland shaping our course for *England*, we were seuen or eight weekes before we could reach the coast of *England*. The first port wee entered into was the haven of *Plimmouth*, from whence within short time wee came into the Thames, and landed our merchandise at *London*, about the ende of the moneth of October 1552.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part II., pp. 7-9, Ed. 1599.*

13. All these English Voyages, therefore, had been planned and carried out before either of the two following Works, translated &c. by Eden, had come from the press. As he has given no account of them; it has been all the more necessary to say thus much here, in order to shew that in these very early days of oceanic discovery, our forefathers were not altogether idle.

III.



Unique, imperfect, copy of *A new interlude and a mery of the nature of the .iiij. elementes, &c.*, written in the reign of Henry VIII., and probably printed [?] by John Rastel] about 1519, is in the Garrick Collection of Plays, in the British Museum (Press mark, C. 39, b. 17).

This interlude contains [at C i.] the following reference to the New World, in a dialogue between *Experyence* and *Studyous desire*:—

Ex. ¶ Syr this ys ynglande lyenge here
And this is skotlande yat Ioyneth him nere
Compassyd a boutte euery where
With the occian see rownde
¶ And next from them westwardly
Here by hym selfe alone doth ly.
Irelande that holsome grounde
¶ Here than is the narowe seey
To Calyce and Boleyne the next wey
And flaunders in this parte
Here lyeth fraunce next hym ioynynge
And spayn southwarde from thens standynge
And portyngale in this quart
This contrey is called Italey
Beholde where Rome in ye myddes doth ly
And Naples here be yonde
And this lytell See that here is

Is callyd the Gulfe of Venys
And here venys doth stande
¶ As for almayne lyeth this way
Here lyeth denmarke and norway
And northwarde on this syde
There lyeth Iselonde when men do fyshe
But be yonde that so colde it is
No man may there abyde
¶ This See is called the great Occyan
So great it is that never man
Coude tell it sith the worlde began
Tyll nowe within this. xx. yere
Westwarde be founde new landes
That we neuer harde tell of before this
By wrytynge nor other meanys
Yet many nowe haue ben there
¶ And that contrey is so large of rome
Muche lenger than all cristendome
Without fable or gyle
For dyuers maryners haue it tryed
And sayled streyght by the coste syde
Aboue. v. thousand myle
¶ But what commodityes be within
No man cau tell nor well Imagin
But yet not longe a go
Some men of this contrey went
By the kynges noble consent
It for to serche to that entent
And coude not be brought therto
¶ But they that were the ventere[r]

Haue cause to curse their maryners
 Fals of promys and dissemblers
 That falsly them betrayed
 Which wold take no paine to saile farther
 Than their owne lyst and pleasure
 Wherfore that vyage and dyuers other
 Suche kaytyffes haue destroyed
¶ O what thyng a had be than
 Yf that they that be englyshe men
 Myght haue ben the furst of all
 That there shulde haue take possessyon
 And made furst buyldynge and habytacion
 A memory perpetuall
 And also what an honorable thyng
 Bothe to the realme and to the kyng
 To haue had his domynyon extendynge
 There into so farre a grounde
 Whiche the noble kyng of late memory
 The most wyse prynce the. vij. Hen[ry]
 Causyd furst for to be founde
¶ And what a great meritoryouse dede
 It were to haue the people instructed
 To lyue more vertuously
 And to lerne to knowe of men the maner
 And also to knowe god theyr maker
 Whiche as yet lyue all be[st]ly
 For they nother knowe god nor the deuell
 Nor neuer harde tell of heyn nor hell
 Wrytynge nor other scripture
 But yet in the stede of god almyght
 The[y] honour the sone for his great lygg[ht]
 For that doth them great pleasure
¶ Buyldynge nor house they haue non[e] at all
 But wodes / cotes / and causy small
 No merueyle though it be so
 For they vse no maner of yron
 Nother in to[ol]le nor other wepon
 That shulde helpe them therto
¶ Copper they haue which is founde
 In dyuers places aboute the grounde
 Yet they dyg not therfore
 For as I sayd they haue non[e] yryn
 Wherby they shuld in the yerth myne
 To serche for any wore
¶ Great haboundaunce of woddes ther be
 Moste parte vyr and pyne aple tre
 Great ryches myght come therby
 Both py[t]che and tarre and sope asslys
 As they make in the eest landes
 By brynnynge therof only
¶ Fyshe they haue so great plente
 That in hauyns take and slayne they be
 With stauns withouten fayle
 Nowe frenchemen and other haue founden the trade
 That yerely of fyshe there they lade
 A boue an. C. [hundred] sayle
¶ But in the south parte of that contrey
 The people there go nakyd alway
 The lande is of so great hete
 And in the north parte all the clothes
 That they were / is but be[st]es skynnes
 They haue no nother fete [feat]
 But howe the people furst began
 In that contrey or whens they cam
 For clerkes it is a questyon[.]
 Other thynges mo I haue in store
 That I coude tel therof but now no more
 Tyll a nother season

Stu. **¶** Than at your pleasure shew some other thinge
 Yt lyketh me so wel your commynynge
 Ye can not talke a mys

Er. **¶** Than wyl I tome a gayne to my matter
 Of Cosmogryly where I was err [err]
 Beholde take hede to this
¶ Loo estwarde beyonde ye great occyan
 Here entereth the see callyd mediterran
 Of. ii. M. [two thousand] myle of lengthe
 The Soudans contrey lyeth here by
 The great Turke on ye north syde doth ly
 A man of merueylous strengthe
¶ This sayde north parte is callyd europa
 And this south parte callyd affrica
 This eest parte is callyd ynde
 But this newe landes founde lately
 Ben callyd america by cause only
 Americus dyd furst them fynde
¶ Loo Iherusalem lyeth in this contrey
 And this be yonde is the red see
 That moyses maketh of mencyon
 This quarter is India minor
 And this quarter India maior
 The lande of prester Iohn
¶ But northwarde this way as ye see.
 Many other straunge regions ther be
 And people that we not knowe
 But estwarde on the see syde
 A prynce there is that ruleth wyde
 Called the Cane of catowe ¹
¶ And this is called the great eest see
 Which goth all a longe this wey
 Towardes the new landis agayne
 But whether that see go thyther dyrectly
 Or if any wyldernes bytwene them do ly
 No man knoweth for certeyne
 But these newe landes by all cosmografye
 Frome the cane of catous lande can not lye
 Lytell paste a thousand myle
 But from those new landes men may sayle playne
 Estwarde and cum to englande againe
 Where we began ere whyle
¶ I.o all this parte of the yerth which I
 Haue here discryuyd openly
 The north parte we do it call
 But the south parte on the other syde
 Ys as large as this full and as wyde
 Whiche we knowe nothyng at all
¶ Nor whether ye most parte be lande or see
 Nor whether the people that there be
 Be be[st]yall or connyng
 Nor whether they knowe good or no
 Nor howe they beleue nor what they do
 Of this we knowe nothyng

The Voyage referred to, clearly took place in Henry VIII.'s reign. It was probably the Bristol expedition sent out by N. Thorne's father and Hugh Eliot, which discovered Newfoundland; of which Thorne tells us, at p. xvi, "There is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the mariners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had bene ours."

¹ *Khan of Cathay.*

IV.



THE special purpose of this Preface has now been carried out. It has been to shew what our forefathers actually accomplished, ere Eden set about the following Translations, or during the time he was actually engaged upon them: and so to supplement the other accounts of Oceanic Discovery contained in the volume.

We have, in conclusion, only space briefly to touch upon one other point, and that is but a simple act of justice.

Most notable is Eden's position as a Man of Science in the Tudor Age. He had the true modest scientific spirit; as when he wrote in 1562, to Sir W. Cecil, "Syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hathe pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire)," *p.* xliii.; and likewise when, in 1574, he thus dwelt at large upon what he did *not* know, a list of disqualifications that must not be pressed too literally, "For yf there be any thing in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of

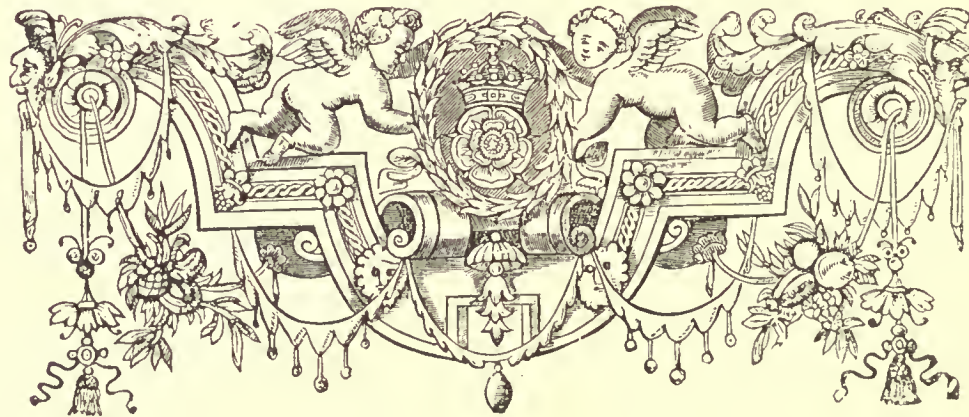
singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof mee selfe have litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke," *p.* xlvi.

But whatever may have been his knowledge or his ignorance, actual or relative; Eden had already grasped the Inductive Method. His life overlapped that of Lord Bacon. May he not be regarded as a near Herald and Forerunner of the Father of Scientific Enquiry, when he uses such language as this; of which his whole life was but the fuller expression?

"Experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errors, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes. as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reason. . . .

"Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculacion, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experience." *p.* 9.

And thus, from henceforth will the reputation of Richard Eden continue to increase, both as a Scholar and a Scientist.



[The First English book on America.

¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the .v. dyuers nacjons crystened.

Of pope Rohn and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.]

A Note on Jan van Doesborch, a printer at Antwerp, between 1508-1530 A.D.



Nothing that concerns the printer of the first English Work relating to America, must henceforth be of increasing interest.

There does not appear to be in existence, any typographical history of Antwerp for the period during which the first Text in this volume was produced.

The learned and most courteous Librarian of the Royal Library at the Hague, Dr M. F. A. G. Campbell, the author of the well-known *Annales de la Typographie néerlandaise au XV^e siècle*, La Haye, 1874-8, 8vo, thus writes, on the 21st April 1885.

How glad should I have been if I had been able to give you full information about Jan van Doesborch, the Antwerp printer in the first half of the sixteenth century. But, alas, the History of Printing in that century has been, without any sound reason, neglected to that point that even sixteenth-century books are now-a-days more rare than their predecessors of the fifteenth. If Jan van Doesborch had had only one foot in the fifteenth century, I should have been able to give you matter enough to compose his history: because I, and my predecessor as Librarian of this Library (Mr Holtrop), have devoted the better part of our lives to the study of the typography and typographers before the year 1500. Now John of Doesborch did not print till after 1500, because in that year, he entered the Guild of St Lucas at Antwerp, as *verlichtere*, "miniature painter."

In a later communication, in June 1885, Dr Campbell adds—

The books printed by John of Doesborch must, I am convinced of it, be posterior to 1508: in which year he entered the Craft, not yet as a book-printer, but as a *verlichtere*; the person, very likely, who rubricated the copies before, and at, the time they were purchased by the public. It is only later that he was able to establish himself as a printer, by succeeding to the then extinct printing office of Roelant van den Dorpe.

When such an authority as Dr Campbell writes thus, the present Editor may be excused of his ignorance on this subject. Nevertheless the following is offered as a mere beginning of this study.

2. Doesburg is a Dutch town, about ten miles to the east of Arnheim.

Jan van Doesborch, Doesborcke, Doesburgh, or as he styles himself in (*f*) the *xv. tokens*, Iohan fro doesborch, may have succeeded to the printing business of Roeland van den Dorpe, at Antwerp. He was contemporary with our Wynkyn de Worde and Richard Pynson: and occupies a similar position in Antwerp typography, to that filled by those two English printers at Westminster and London.

He seems to have printed in three different houses. His earliest books were printed at the sign of *Aen dijere wage*, "the Iron balance." Those produced about 1518, are printed "besides the *Camer porte*." His latest books, finished about 1530, are at *die Lombaerde veste*, "the Lombard fortress."

It is very remarkable that Doesborch should, at such an early date, have printed the English books that he did; especially such an important work as Arnold's *Chronicle*. He was probably employed in this work by some of the merchants of the English House at Antwerp. He stands in the same relation to our Literature at this time, that Hans Luft of Marburg did fifteen or twenty years later. No books are so scarce as the early English books printed by foreign printers on the Continent; of which the following Text is one of the earliest.

3. The first book attributed to this printer, by P. C. van der Meersch, in his *Recherches sur la vie et les travaux des imprimeurs Belges et Néerlandais établis à l'étranger*, 1 131, Gand 1856, is—

(a) *Die destructie van Troyen, die laatste ende die schoone amoreusheid van Troylus ende der schoonder Breseda Calcas doghter die een verrader was. Antwerpen aen dyseren Waghe bi Jan van Doesborch.* Fol., no date. "The destruction of Troy, the last and beautiful amours of Troylus and the fair Breseda [*Cressida*], daughter of Calcas, who was a traitor. Antwerp, at the iron balance, by John of Doesborch."

This title is quoted as given by Visser and Panzer.

The late eminent bookseller of Amsterdam, Mr Frederick Muller, issued, in 1872, a *Catalogue of Books, Maps, Plates on America; and of a remarkable Collection of Early Voyages*, offered by him for sale. At p. 6, he states that he acquired, in 1871, at the sale of an insignificant library at Antwerp, a volume containing four pieces, "all printed there in the first ten years of the 16th century."

One of these was—

(b) *Van der nieuwer werelt oft landschap nieuvelier ghehouden vanden doorluchtighen conn. van Portugael door den alderbeste pyloet ofte zeeken-der d'werelt*, "Of the new world or landscape, newly found for the illustrious King of Portugal by the best pilot or mariner in the world." This is a translation from the Italian (through the Latin) into Dutch, of the Third Letter of Amerigo Vespucci. The colophon runs, *Gheprent Thantwerpen aen Dyseren waghe. Bi Jan van Doesborch*, "Printed at Antwerp, at the iron balance, by Jan van Doesborch."

It consists of eight unnumbered leaves, [with] 6 woodcuts. The verso of the last leaf is filled up by a wood engraving. On the recto of the first leaf [is the identical cornerwise engraving that is described hereafter at p. xxix., col. 2]; on the verso of leaf 1, Jonas thrown into the mouth of the whale; recto of leaf 3, four female aborigines [see p. xxviii.]; verso of leaf 4, fighting Indians [see p. xxix.]; verso of leaf 6, repeated from the recto of leaf 1; and verso of the last leaf, repeated from the recto of leaf 3.

Mr Muller states—

The book bears no date, but it is out of question, that it has been printed in the period 1506-9, the time when all the separate editions of Vespucci were published. It is one of the first productions of the famous printer, Jan van Doesborch, at Antwerp; whose publications (principally romances of chivalry with woodcuts, curious popular books, &c.) rank among the rarest of the Antwerp printers. Just the kind of publications that makes it easy to understand that they have disappeared, as it were, under the hands of the reading public.

Another text in this precious volume is thus described, at p. 277, by Mr Muller—

(c) *Van de wonderlicke en costelichen van Pape Ians landen*, "Of the wonders and precious things of Pope John's lands."

The remainder of the first page filled with four curious woodcuts, representing 1°, a wild man with a beast's head bearing a fish [see p. xxxv.]; 2°, an elephant [see p. xxxii.]; 3°, a griffon with a man in his paws [see p. xxxiv.]; and 4°, three men fighting against three birds [see p. xxxiii.]

Recto of the last leaf, *Gheprint Thantwerpen. Aen dijsere wage by my Jan van Doesborch*. "Printed at Antwerp at the iron balance by me, Jan van Doesborch."

Eleven different woodcuts in the text, four of them repeated from the recto of leaf 1. On the 5th leaf, a woodcut of the bird Phoenix in flames [see p. xxxiv.] The verso of the last leaf filled with two wood engravings, one representing the Virgin with the Child, the other the printer's mark of Roeland van den Dorpe, used in 1497, &c. [a herald with his attributes, holding a trumpet].

It is therefore perfectly clear that the First English book on America is mainly a translated compilation from these two early Dutch tracts; and that most of the woodcuts of the English text had already appeared in its Dutch originals.

We therefore place next—

(d) *Of the new landes, &c.*

Clearly, the latest date that can be assigned to this tract is 1511. Had it been written later, the information contained in it would not have been so crude. See the progress of knowledge as shewn in the English Interlude of 1519, quoted at p. xx. It would seem to have been translated by a priest in the Low Countries, who had but an imperfect acquaintance with English; for he uses *hemls* for heavens; *drycantlyche*, for three-cornered, *ferstwynmygnes, kettlers*, &c.

The *Catalogue of the Grenville Collection*, in describing the unique copy here reprinted (Press mark, G. 7106), states—

"From mentioning Emanuel, King of Portugal, and exclaiming against Luther, the present tract may be about 1521 or 1522, when King Emmanuel died, and Luther was burned in effigy."

There is not a word about Luther in the tract; and it is typographically evident from the above, that the tract can hardly be later than 1511.

4. It is quite impossible, at present, to give a chronological list of books produced by Jan van Doesborch. A few only can be cited.

(e) [The compilation by R. Arnold, known as *Arnold's Chronicle*.] In this booke is conteyned the names of ye bayliffes of the cite of London from the tyme of king richard the first, and also th[e] artycles of the Chartur and libarties of the same Cyte, &c. No date or place of printing. British Museum (Press mark, 21, a. 10).

This is attributed to Doesborch's press, and was a very large work to be undertaken by him, in what was probably a foreign language to him. It contains the original text of the poem of *The Nut-brown Maid*.

In the British Museum (Press mark, C. 25, e. 29) there is an imperfect copy of a tract on the Fifteen tokens of the Day of Doom. It wants the title page. The colophon is as follows:—

(f) "A lytill treatyse that whiche is called *the xv. tokens* which been late translated out of frenshe in to Englishe.

Emprinted by me Iohan fro doesborch dwellinge at Anwerpe by the Iron ballaunce, &c.

These six texts are probably among the earliest productions of Doesborch's press.

5. We now come to the middle period of his life's work.

In the British Museum (Press mark, 1073, b. 32) there is a Dutch life of the fabulous necromancer of the Middle Ages, Virgilius.

(g) *Virgilius* ¶ *Van zijn leuen doot | ende vancu*, &c. No date or place of printing.

This tract is probably the original of the rare English *Virgilius* among the Douce books at the Bodleian, which has been reprinted by Mr Utterson, and also by Mr Thoms, in his *Early English Prose Romances*, Vol. 2, Ed. 1858.

(h) The title runs thus:

The lyfe of Virgilius and of his deth and many marvayles that he dyd in his lyfe tyme by whychcrafte and nygramancye thorough the helpe of the devyls of hell.

The colophon is

Thus endethe the lyfe of Virgilius with many dyuers consaytes that he dyd. Emprynted in the cytie of Anwarpe By me Iohn Doesborcke dwellynge at the camer porte.

Mr W. C. Hazlitt, in his *Handbook of Popular Literature, &c.*, p. 381, Ed. 1867, quotes the following title of a Work apparently at present in an English private library.

(i) Here begynneth a lytell story that was of a trewthe done in the land of Gelders, of a mayde that was named Mary of Nemegeu that was the dyuils paramoure by the space of vij yere longe.

Imprinted at Anwarpe by me Iohn Duisbrowghe dwellynge besyde the camer porte.

Dr Campbell states that in the Royal Library at the Hague, is a copy of the following Work, printed by Doesborch.

(j) *Den oorspronck onser Salicheyt*. Printed at Antwerp on 31 May 1517. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Also, a Work, sometimes erroneously attributed to Jan van Naeldwyck,

(k) *Die aller excellenste Cronyke van Brabant* 1518. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Of this work, there is a copy of an earlier edition printed in October 1512 in the British Museum (Press mark, G. 405, f.) This may also have been printed by Doesborch.

The next Work that we can quote is, for the time it was produced, a wonderful book. It is a pictorial representation of all the birds, beasts, and fishes, real and imaginary, of the time. It is in three Parts.

(l) *Der dieren palleys enn die v'guleringe vanden beesten*. The colophon is *Gheprint bi my Jan van doesborch Thantwerpen Int iaer ons heeren M.CCC.CC. ende. xx. den vijftsten dach in Meye*. [5 May 1520.]

Copies are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

Mr Hazlitt, *Handbook, &c.*, p. 8, gives the following account of Lawrence Andrewe's translation of this work.

(m) The noble lyfe and natures of man, of beestes, serpentys, fowles, and fysshes, that be made known.

Andwarpe by John of Doesborowe, n.d. fol.

In the prologue, Andrewe, the translator, says, "In the name of oure Saviour criste Iesu maker and redemour of al mankynd, I Laurens andrewe of the towne of Calis haue translated for lohnes doesborrowe booke prenter in the cite of Andwarpe this present volume denyded in thre partes which was neuer before in no maternall langage prentyd till now."

6. One other Work will complete our present provisional list of this printer's productions.

(n) *Van Brabant die excellent Cronike*. Of which the colophon runs, *Gheprint tot Antwerpen op die Lombaerde veste, bi mi Jan van Doesborch, int iaer ons heren M.CCC.CC. xxx, in Iunio*.

Copies of this work are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

7. This is all we have been able to learn, so far, of the printer of the First English book on America. Much more, no doubt, remains to reward the researches of the bibliographer.]

Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. v. dyuers nacyns crystened.

Of pope Rohn and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.



Ere aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god. M.CCCC.xcvi. [1496] and so be/ we
with shyppes of Luffeboene sayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaunde-
ment of the Kynge Emanuel So haue we had our vyage/ For by fortune
ylandes ouer the great see with great charge and daunger so haue we at the lasle
founde oon lordshyp where we sayled well. ix. C. [900] mylee[s] by the cooste of
Selandes there we at ye lasle went a lande but that lande is not nowe known
for there haue no masters wryten therof nor it knowethe and it is named
Armenica/ there we sawe meny wonders of beestes and fowles yat we haue neuer
feen before/ the people of this lande haue no kynge nor lorde nor theyr god
But all thinges is comune/ this people goeth all naked But the men and women
haue on theyr heed/ necke/ Armes/ Knees/ and fete all with feders bounden for
there bewtynes and sayrenes. These folke lyuen lyke bestes without any refo-
nablenes and the wymen be also as comon. And the men hath conuersacyon
with the wymen/ who that they ben or who they fyrst mete/ is she his syster/
his mother/ his daughter/ or any other kyndred. And the wymen be very
hoote and dyposed to lecherdnes. And they ete also on[e] a nother The man
eteth his wyfe his chylderne/ as we also haue feen and they hange also the bodyes or persons fleefhe in the smoke/ as men
do with vs swynes flefhe. And that lande is ryght full of folke/ for they lyue commonly. iii. C. [300] yere and more as with
fykenesse they dye nat/ they take much fyfsh for they can goen vnder the water and fe[t]che so the fyfshes out of the water.
and they werre also on[e] vpon a nother/ for the olde men brynge the yonge men therto/ that they gather a great company therto
of towe partyes/ and come the o: [e] ayene the other to the felde or bateyll/ and flee on[e] the other with great hepes. And nowe
holdeth the fylde/ they take the other prysoners And they brynge them to deth and ete them/ and as the deed is eten then
fley they the rest And they been than eten also/ or otherwyse lyue they longer tymes and many yeres more than other people for
they haue costely spyces and rotes/ where they them selfe recouer with/ and hele them as they be feke.

[[Here follows a woodcut of the Natives of] GENNEA]

Of the blacke Mores.



THE fyrste cam we in the lande of Canarien/ whyche is. C. and. l. [150] myles from Lyffebone. And ther betwyn been. ij. ylandes. In yat one is well made people and men make there moche cheefe of great wyld gootes. also is ther fishe and suykere good cheep. That other yland is not enhabite ther be lytell people therin/ and they be all a frayde and wyld/ also ther ayen lyeth the lande of Barbera/ and is from them in to ye Gennea. CC.l. [250] myles. and that is the blackes mores land. and ayen ye begynnyng of this lande is oon aforemontayen and hooth caput viride/ and thereby is ye towne Bitfagitsch. v. C. [500] myles from Luffebonen there by be many w[h]alefysches and flyngc fyfshes on the on syde of Bisfagitsche. ij. C. and l. [250] myles sayle men vnder yat sone fo ferre/ that men the northe sayle sterre or pollumarticum/ or the waghcn called/ no more may be seen/ but pollum ante articum or yat fowth layd sterre sawe we fourth with[.] the forsayde Morelande is M. iiij. C. [1400] myles great/ there ye people goeth all naked with golden rynges on handes and fete.

[[Here comes a woodcut of Natives] IN · ALLAGO]



THAT lande of Allago is. v. C. [500] myles greater And gothe ayenste the begynnyngc of Arabien and there is that kyngdom Safale[.] in this lande Allago is the people clothed as aboue is marked/ the[y] were and bere for there clothes skynnes of wyldc bestes. The men bere cokes made of barkes of trees and ledder to kyuer theyr members with. And the women kyuer theym with skynnes of bestes. and take vpon there heddes for kerchers skynnes of oxen or other bestes[.] also py[t]che the[y] theyr mennes forhed lyke as men pytche the thypes/ and there dwellyngc is vnder the erthe. There is many cowes. oxen/ great shepe and other fayre bestes. This is on fayre and lusty lande of good water and fwete herbes. This people hathe a swyfte hasty speche. There is no money but of yrou [? iron] and that euery body take it for there ware they bere whyte stauces there wepyns is lange pykes and stoncs ther they caste myghtly with. That Lande is so full of fande yat they muste goo vpon brode trenchers that they falle not and synke. After that cometh men into the lande of arabyen.

[[Here is another woodcut representing Natives] IN: ARABIA]

Arabia.



OMYNG in Arabia sawe we ye people clothed lyke as here is figured stonde. and out [of] this kyngdome hath be oon of the three holy kyngys. Item ther bynde they ther oxen with Arabie gold about ther hornes/ and erys. And also goldyn rynges aboute th[e]yr legges. And for gold take they of marchandes fylkyng kerchers and lynen clothe. Item ther after se we now. v. ylandes. the fyrst yland named Momfabeth. sixty myles from Safalen. is lecid ye towne Quiola that was founde of the kynges folke of portyngal And they flewe there moche people and robbed the towne. And there without had there kyngc edyfyed on castell that is named feynt Iacobi castell there in lyeth a. C. [100] bolde and hardy men that lyeth and kepeth it.

[[Here is a striking woodcut representing, with great life and action, a spirited attack on the gate of some European town; which has evidently been borrowed by John of Desborough from some other printed book, chronicle, or other work, printed by himself or other printer.]



HE[n] seunte myles from Quiola lyeth the towne Bombassa that they also byrned and robbed that also there they gatte moche goodes. From thens nowe. xxiiij. myle[s] lyeth the great towne Meli[n]da and they be frendes/ and there be many floueynes and fell people out of Geneen From Melinda it is. iiij. score and. x. myles to on Persia there gowe they ouer the see. For by the towne Megha into the ylande. Auxendia There is also one that hath be of ye three holy kynges of the east. C. [100] myles into the Kyngdome of Canenor and there begyn the spyces to growe and from thens fare they forthe in to the great lande of great Indyen.

¶ *Of great Indyen.*

[[Here follows a woodcut of the Inhabitants of] MAIOR: INDIA]



THEY gowe from Canenor into great Indyen there the people goo all naked but yat the[y] kyuer there members with lynen cloth and they be brounde blackc/ with longe here and of tho women is not wryten but on kaute the see sawe men manye meruelouse people of manereren the women bere there chylidren and theyr householde stufte. Here synde men gynger/ peper/ comeyn/ and all manere of spyces/ and

costely stoncs for lytell moneye. There be also many maner of frute fygges of good fauyour. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode. There be bulfeldes and coyces but the coyces slepe they not/ there groweth good wyne/ muche honeye/ ryfe/ costely come whyte as wete mele/ Ther by standeth the towne of Banderana and it is. vij. myles into Callienten from thens is. xl. myles there men goo for all maner of spyces that men were wonte to caray and conuey ouer the redde see thorowgh Alexander but nowe is there one newe way founden ouer the the see[.] in Calacuten is many folke out of feynt thomas lande yat also be crystened/ and folke of other landes and nacyons they goo ouer into that kyngdome Kyngryche Gutfchyn as hereafter standes wryten.

¶ Of Gutfchin that Kyngdome.

[Here is a woodcut representing two Natives fighting, see p. xxv.]



And than cam we in the kyngdome of Gutfchyn and ther hath the kynge of portyngale do make. ij. Casteyles from here was the thre holy kynges. there groeth much peper and the properest flapell therof. That kyngdom Colen is. xxiiij. myles from there/ and there been many krystened men/ we fynde also great Olyfantes and many dyuers maner and wonders bestes and other thynges that men cannot wryghte all. gardeynes frutes is there muche gretter than in our landes of Europa. That ylande Melaqua is from thens. viij. C. [800] myles/ There also is moche costely spyces. There is nowe. ij. ylandes the on is Bandan and therin groweth the cloucs. That other Tanagora or Narnaria and there groeth not no other wodde than whyte and red fandelen wodde/ This is fortunad that for a bell of a glasse men may haue one handfull of peerles. In Gutfchin bere some tymes there kynge but that do the people of his courte and holde obedyance vnder theym one with a nother They doo all there thynges all sleightly. For as as they be assembled in one gatherynge/ than cryeth the capitayne I will fowe/ and as the subiectes here theyr capitayne crye fowe than take they parte of/ the fede and no man sayth the contrary and letteth the other iye and that takethe the lorde with out any body contrary saynge/ and so do they in all merchaundyse. Forthe by that kyngdome Gutfchyn/ Colum/ Bandan/ and Nagaria. xxx. [thirty] myles[.] in Arfinia there hath the kynge. xij. kynges vnder hym/ and there lyeth buried feynt Thomas apouell.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree apparently intended to represent a fig-tree. It might do equally well for many other kinds of trees.]



In some of these aforfayde wrytten landes ben great and fayre frutes and they be greater than in these our landes of Europa In Ista mandra be great hygh trees for the people of yat contrey hewe great steppes aboute to clyme vp in to the tree to gather the frutes that groweth there on for whan they be a thrust to take there of. In Arfinia is great brode fygge Trees with great fygges well. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode and the Fygge tre is so brode of braunche and leues that. xl. [forty] men may be hydde vnder the forefayd braunches and leues for the hete of the sonne/ and there for to reffe all to gather at theyr one pleasure.

[Here are two woodcuts cornerwise, one representing two Indians, the other two men and a woman of Europe, see p. xxv.]



We haue in this vyage fayled aboute the forth parte of the worlde for to reken from Luffsyngboren whiche is ferre equinoccyall scher linien. xxxix. [thirty-nine] grades and on halfe fo haue we fayled ouer ye linie equinocciall. l. [fifty] grades that maketh xc. [ninety] grades therfore they of Luffbone is vnder yat forfayde linie. xxxix. grade and one halfe in the hygh hed of the hemels is the breyde of westes/ fo is them of Luffbone to these folke to fene the. l. [fifty] grades is ouer the selfe lyne soth cornerwyse. v. grades in perpendicular linia whiche linie as we stande ryght of yat poynt the hemls hange vpon our hed and these folke in theyr fydes or rybbes and woort fet in the maner of on tryanghel or on drycantlyche cornard. therefore it must nedes be yat the fowth landes be tempered with fwete erthe for the northe wyndes can nat there blowe.

[Here, across the middle leaf of the tract, is an excellent representation of the King of Cochin seated on a kind of tressel, carried by four men, surrounded with armed attendants: and with an umbrella borne by one man, and not a canopy borne by four men, as stated below in the text. The woodcut extends across about two-thirds of the folio, in the margin of which occurs the following note.]



After this maner of fourme is the Kynge of Gutfchyn borne with the nobleste of his lande/ And before hym is borne many instrumentes of musyke as trompettes and other and. iiij. of the nobleste bereth the canapie ouer his hed lest that the soon shuld burne hym/ and this kynge is beloued of all his estates and common people.

[This fresh tract is headed by a woodcut representing angels bearing the pyx.]

OF THE. X. DYVERCE CRISTENED NACIONS.



It is to knowe that ye people of crystindom is deuided and ben in. x. Nacyons. That is to vnderstand the Latyne/ Grekes/ Indien/ Iacobites/ nestorijnes/ moronites/ Armenes/ georgianes/ Surianes/ mororabes/ wherof ye moost deyle is ketters and kyt of/ of the holy Romes chyrche.

The fyrste nacyon.

[Two woodcuts, evidently taken from some Martyrology, come in here. One represents an angel standing by the cross, the other a female saint with a sword sticking in her breast.]



The fyrste nacyon is the Latynes and they haue to theyr lorde the Emperour of Almayne and many Kynges/ as the kyng of castlylly an of Aragon/ of portyngale/ of nauaryen/ and these kynges is for spaynnes nacyon. In yat nacion of the frenche lande is one kyng of Fraunce and many dukes and Erles. In

the nacion of Italian is the kyng of Cicylian/ the kyng of Naples and many dukes and Erles and there is also many lordshyppes as Veneyse Florence feu en Ienuen [? Sienna, Genoa].



In the nacyon of Germanien is nowe many kynges with out the emperoure/ as the Kyng of Englande/ of Scotlande/ of Vngerien/ of Bohemen/ of Polen/ of Denmarke/ of sweden/ of Northwegen/ of Dalmacyen/ and there is many Dukes and Erles &c. In that ylande of Sypers [? Cyprus] is the kyng of Sypers/

All these a fore wryten is vnder the obeyifaunce or [? of] the chyrche of Rome.

xxx

The seconde nacyon.



The Grekes haue spyrytually the Patriarcke of Constantynnoplen/ and many Archebysshops/ bysshops/ and abbottes. And in ye temperalte haue they one Emperour and many dukes and erles/ and there is but fewe of them that be crystened/ For the Agarenen and Turkes hath nowe the moost parte of Grekes/ and is not obedient to the chyrche of Rome. And they haue a great erre for they faye that the holy ghost cam not of the fone but alone of the fader. And they fay also that there is no purgatory/ that is all a yenste our belefe.

The thyrde nacyon.

[Here follows a woodcut representing St. Thomas kneeling to our Saviour.]



Hey of Indyen hath one prynce and that is pope Iohn whose myghtynes and rychedome amounteth aboue all prynces of the world for he hath vnder hym. lxxij. [seuenty-two] kynges and as pope Iohn dayely rydeyth he bere a fore hym one croffe of wode for to thynke on at all tymes and remember vpon the passion of I[es]hu and to the batayle doth he bere. xij. croffes of golde made and fet with precyouse stoness for his baners/ in this lande is the body of feynt Thomas.

The fourth nacyon.



Iacobytyn named also of on ketter Iacob and was be one dyfflyple of the Patriarcke of Alexandryne/ and this helde the one great land in Oryenten and Afyen and is named that lande of Mambrone and it is by Egipten and gothe to Ethyopen and into Indien to/ and hathe vnder hym well. xl. [forty] kynges rychedom/ these be kytte and chrystened with a byrnynge yren for they branne the token of the holy croffe in theyr forched/ vpon the breste/ vpon the arme/ they confesse them to God alone and none prestes/ and they fay that in christo is alone the godhed without the manhod/ and some of them spekethe Caldesche some Arabier/ some other spe[ce]ches after theyr language of the lande/ and these been condemned of the holy chyrche in that counfayll of Ceden.

¶ *The fyth nacion.*

Here be also Nestorijnen named of the ketter Nestorinus that was one bysshope of the bysshops of Constantynenoplen and they fett ij. perfones in christo that is the Godhed and ye perfones/ and they forsake that maria is the moder of god/ but they beleue well of I[es]hu. and they wrytynge is in caldenssher speche and they make the sacrament in broune brede and there be great multytude of them and they dwell in Tartarien and in great Indyen/ and theyr lande is as great as a thousande of Italy/ and these ketters be condemned in that thyrd councayll of Ephesyn and is departed of the holy Romes chyrche and abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The syxte nacion.*

Y the ketter Moren they be named Moroniten they say alone in christo is one vnderstande and one wyll and those dwell by Lybien in the lande of Phenicen and there be great multitude and they be bolde and hardy men. and great warryars with the bowe/ And they haue theyr bysshops clothed as the Latynes with the bissshops myter on his hed/ and with the croysers staffe and rynges/ These hath ben some tyme vnder the obeyffaunce of the chyrche of Rome whan Innocentius was pope/ but afterwarde came they ayen in theyr opynion and there abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The seuenth nacion.*

Rmennyten is also named for that they dwell in the lande of Armeneten nere vnto Anthiochyen and there is whrythyn seruyce of the masses. and theyr other tydes is all in theyr one comon speche so that they all mey vnderstande it what they syng or rede/ and they haue theyr hed or fader to whome they do reuerence as we do the pope. And they faste the lenton with greater deuocyon than we doo/ for they ete in the lenton no fyssh/ nor they drynke no wyne/ but they ete flesshe vpon frydays.

[Here is a woodcut representing a squadron of English knights, with St. George's flag, armed *cap à pie*, and galloping in battle. It has nothing whatever to do with the text.]

¶ *The eyght nacion.*

His nacion is named Georgidni of feynt George for they haue hym in theyr batelles for theyr patrone/ and they dwell in the lande of Orynten/ and they be fayer/ lusty/ and stronge pepyll/ and they be fore a drad of the Medon perssen Assyryen there they aboute dwelle And they haue theyr scrpy-

ture in ye Greekes speche and they haue theyr sacramentes as the Grekes/ and the clarkes haue rounde crownes/ and they feke the holy graue to Iherusalem with open or spred baners. And they gyue the sarafons no trybute for the sarafons fereth those folke very fore/ there women bere harneyse lyke the men and they haue also beardes as ye men and they bere vpon theyr heddes and vpon hye cubettes hye hattes and as the[y] wryte to the Sodan than gyueh he them that they dyssyre.

¶ *The Nynthe nacion.*

He Surianen is named after theyr towne Surie that is the grettest in all Suryen or Assyryen theyr scrpyture and seruyce of god in ye Grekes speche but they speke sarafons speche and they holde the manere of ye grekes/ and haue bysshoppes that in all thynges be obedyent and they make theym sacrament of browne brede and they haue the opynion of the Grekes ayen the Latynes there be some crystened that in the holy lande is namyd Samerytanes that were conuerted in the tyme that the apostels preched but they vnderstande them not well in the crysten beleue.

¶ *The tenth nacion.*

Ororaben so called after the laten for they holde and vse the maner of the crysten of Ar[a]bien/ and of these were wonte to be manye people in Afrijken and in Spaengnien but nowe is there lytell in the tellyng/ They haue in theyr seruyce of god lateyne as we do/ And they be vnder the obeyffaunce of the chyrche of Rome. And the latynes prelates but in many thynges ben they dyuerse departed for also the day hath xxiiij. houres/ Also many tymes hymnes and psalmes and other orafouns haue they and very longe/ And that that ye Latyns rede in the begynnyng of theyr seruice that rede they in the mydle or in the laste ende. And that sacrament of the auter breketh some of them in. vij. partes and some in. x. partyes/ and these people be very deuoute and they mareye but ones in theyr lyfe and as the women hath losse theyr fyrst husbond so dothe they meddle no more with no man/ but abyde fro thenffourth in chastyte.



Or. ij. causes cometh the departynge of ye crysten nacyns. The fyrste cause is that men in olde tyme myght the crysten haue only haue generall consilium/ Therefore as the ketters stode vp ayen the crysten belefe so was there no body turned nor saught counsayll there ayen. The other cause was the ferfwynmyngnes of ye opprest pope of ye schole of Rome that no messengere nor lerned shulde to the krysten thow that were come in feche lodyng/ for had they do that they shulde haue be conuerted to the ryght belefe. Thorowst whicher ryght belefe brynge vs to the hyghest glorye the fader the sone the holy ghooste thre perfones and one god. Amen.

[AN ABRIDGMENT OF THE MEDIÆVAL LEGEND OF PRESTER JOHN].

[This third Tract has a very large initial letter I, containing what appears to be a representation of Prester John, and of a Roman Catholic monk or pilgrim kneeling beneath him.]



Pope Iohn by ye grace of god the mooste myghtyfte kyng a boue all kyngys of ye worlde gyue saluyte the Emperour of Rome. and also thekinge of France.

Oure wel belouyd frynde We late you vnderstande and knowe of our lande And the maner of oure lyuinge and of our people beestes and fowles.

¶ And you faye that we beleue not in god and praye not to hym as you do. So late we you vnderstande that we beleue in god the father. in god the sonne. and in god the holy gooste. The whyche be vnpartyble and one very god. and is all thyng myghty.

And also certefye yow with oure lettres sealed and doo you knowelege of oure folke or people and of our lande. And yf there be ony thyng yate we kan doo for you. fende vs worde and we shall it doo with good herte and wyll. And yf it please ony of you to come in oure lande we shall gyue theym gold and fyluer to th[e]yr necessitie/ and make them great lordis. and gyue to them also lande and good[s] to lyue on. and do to [t]hem worship and honor. For the goodnes that we haue herde say of you. And we do you knowledge that we haue the richeste crowne of the worlde as of golde and syluer and of precyous stonys in great multitude And we haue also vnder vs mighty. xliij. kingdomes and al good cristen people. and we kepe also the poure people with our almes alle that cometh be it strenger or of oure owne people thorough the loue of almyghty god oure lorde Ihesu Criste.

¶ Item Oure lande is parted in. iiij. For the landes of Indien/ there be two. and in that grettest Indien is the body of feynt Thomas. And this same Indien is partiner of ye coste

of orient for it lyeth besyde a toure ye which is caalled babel/ and it id [P is] not ferre fro Babilonyen. And also that other parte of Indien is aboute Septentryon. and there is great plenty of wyne/ bredde and all maner of vytayle.

¶ Item also in our lande be gryffons/ and it is a great byrde and a myghty. for he wyll well cary in his neste an oxe/ or an horse for his yonge byrdes to etc. Also in Saxen is a towne which is called Grounzyk ther is one of the clawes yat which is well as great as an horn of an oxe.

[Here comes, in the original, at the side of the page, a woodcut of an elephant with a castle on its back.]

¶ In our lande be olyphantes/ dromedaries/ wylde oxes the whyche haue. vij. hornes. also Beeres and Lyons of dyuers colours/ as ye redd/ grene/ blacke/ and whitte

¶ Item and also be wylde asses the whych haue longe eeres/ and haue twoo fmale hornes. &c.



¶ In our lande be also fowles ye whyche that haue the maystery of all birdes of the worlde/ and haue a colour lyke ye fyer/ and his wingis kyt [P cut] lyke a rasour. and this byrdes ben called Ilerion. and in alle the worlde is no more than two. and they lyuen. iiij. skore yere and thenne they laye eggis and sytte vpon them. xl. dayes and as sone as they haue yonges they flee awaye/ fader and moder to the zee and ther they drowne them self. and alle tho byrdes yat come ayenst them do them company to the zee. and as sone as the[y] be drowned all the other byrdes tourne ayen to the neste there they yonge byrdes ben leste/ and gyue them mete and drinke to the tyme that the[y] can flee and nurter them selfe. &c.

¶ Yet ben there other byrdes the whyche ben called Tygris/ and they be so stronge that they wyll bere or cary in theyr neste a man sytting vpon an horse all armyd fro the hede to ye fote.

[Here, at the side of the page, is the representation of a naked man with one eye in his forehead, and bearing a club.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a grete deferte or forest therein dwelleth people bothe men and wymmen the whyche haue nomore than one eye afore. and behinde they haue. iij. or. iiij. eyen

¶ Yet is in oure lande an other maner of people the whiche ete none other than rawe fleshe. and they care not yf it were of man or woman or of beestis and also the[y] care not of ther owne deth. and as fone as there one of them dyeth the[y] ete theym all rawe/ both there one [? own] fader or moeder. And they faye yat mans fleshe is good and natur[a]ly to ete rawe/ for they faye that they doe it for parte of penaunce for there fynnes. And they be also curfed of god/ and they be called Gog and Magog And of them be no more than one maner of people of this worlde and they shall be dystrubuted or parted thorough all the world whan Antechryft shall come. and these fame were the people or folke the whych they hadde put in pryfone or in holde the great kynge Alexander of Macedonien. But for all that he wente his way And of this people shalbe no iugement at the dredefull day of dome lyke the prophete fayeth. ¶ *Nescio quis. &c.*

But neuertheles thonder and lytenynge shall come fro heuen and bourne theym all in po[w]der And whan that we haue ony enemyes thanne gyue we theym lycence to put theym downe and ete them that be ayenffe vs and then make we them to tourne ageyne into there owne lande. For if they sholde abyde longe with vs they shuld vndo vs all and ete vs lyke as they do there owne propre folke.

[Here, also at the side, is the pictorial representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And yet is there another manere of people/ the whyche hath rownde fete lyke an horfe/ and also they haue. iiij. sharpe clawes behynde/ at there Heles. Wherewith they strongly fyght that there is no manere thyng can stonde ayenste them/ nether harnayfe/ yrone/ nor stele they passe all thorowth/ and this people gyue vnto vs great trybute. and they be also without dowte great labourers.

¶ Yet is there a nother smale lande in a parte of that fame forest aforefayde/ and it is. xliij. [forty-two] dayes Iourneyes longe. And it is called Feminie the great. And in that fame lande there be thre Quenes without all other landes/ thowe that holden there been of these quenes forefayde And whan these quenes shall goo to felde/ then eche of them hath. iij. hondered. M. [300,000] wymen and all in harnayfe/ with out all the other women the whych that caray vytayle with carte horfe and also with olyfauntes. And these women be very manly in fytynge and hardy. ¶ And in this fame lande may come

no men but. ix. dayes in the yere and no lenger/ and than they haue conuerfacion and felyfshyp with the men and nomore of the hole yere. For if the men there wolde abyde the women shulde them flee all.

¶ And this fame lande is clofed all aboute with a water called Cyphon comynge out of paradyse And in this fame lande may come no man without a great shyp or a great barke.

¶ Of the people named Pygnies.

[Here is a woodcut representing the battle of the Pigmies and the storks.]



¶ And yet is there a nother smale lande and also another Ryuer called Pyconye that is. x. dayes iourneye longe/ and. vij. brode and this people of this forfayde lande be not great/ but they be lyke chyldren of. vij. yere of age and they haue horfeys as great as a great dogge and they be good crystened folke and they haue no warre ayenste noman/ But they haue warre ayenste the fowles euery yere/ whan they shall haue in there frute and corne And than the kynge putteth on his harnayfe. and than they fyght ayenste the byrdes. And than there be slayn on bothe partyes many on/ and also they be great labourers/ and whan the fylde is don than the byrdes flee a waye fro them.

[Here, at the side, is a circular woodcut of Sagittarius, evidently one of the signs of the Zodiac taken from some illustrated almanac.]

¶ Also in our lande been ye Sagittary. the whyche ben fro the myddel vpward lyke men/ and fro ye myddell donwarde ben they lyke the halfe neder parte of an horfe. and they bere bowes and arowes. And the[y] shute stronger than any other naeyon of people.

¶ And in our lande be also vnicornes and they been of the manere with blacke and grene/ and these vnicornes flee many Lyons. and the Lyon sleeth the vnicorne with subtylnes. Whan the Vnicorne hath put hym to rest at a tree/ and than cometh the Lyon and ronnyth aboute the tree and after hym than ronnyth the vnicorne and wolde fayne sleigh hym/ and than he ronnyth hym felse into the tree with his horne so harde that he cannot pull it out a geyne. than commeth the Lyon and hath the mastery vpon the vnicorne.

¶ Item there is a nother parte of a forest therein dwelleth another maner of folke and this people ben. xx. Cubettes of heythe. But they were in tyme paste to be of the heyth of. xl. Cubettes. And they haue nat the pore to come out of that deferte or foreste and all is thorowe the myghte of almyghty god. For if they sholde come out by there strength and hardynesse the[y] wolde conquere all the worlde.

[Here, at the side, is a curious cut representing the Phoenix burning.]

¶ Here begynnith of ye birde the whyche is called Fenix.

¶ In oure lande is also a byrde ye whyche is called Phenix and is ye fayrest byrde of all ye world and there is nomore than one in all ye cours of nature. and he lyueth C. [100] yere. and thenne flyeth he fo hyghe that the fonne fett the fyre in his wynges/ and thenne cometh he don ayen to his nest and there he burneth to p[ro]udre and of the affhes comyth a worme/ and within. C [100] dayes after growyth there out another byrde as fayre as euer that other was.

¶ Item Also in our lande is plenty of wyne bredde/ fleshe. All that is necessary for mannys body

¶ Item In our lande maye come none venyn beeste on that one fyde

¶ Item Betwene oure lande and the Turkes lande is a ryuer ronnyng and is called Sydon it commeth out of paradyse of the erthe/ and is full of precyous stones.

¶ And also in oure lande ben ronnyng many finale riuers the whyche that come out of this forfayde riuier. and they also ben fulle of precyous stones. As Yfmaraddus Iaspis Saphyrus Scobaffus Dyamant Topafius/ Carbonkel. Rubin. and yet more other they whyche I not all can reherce.

¶ Also in oure lande groweth on herbe and is called Parmanabel/ and that fame herbe is fo myghty euer foo who that fame herbe beryth a boutte hym he may coniuere the deuyll of helie and do hym faye what fo euer he wyl axe of hym and therefore the deuyll dare not come in to our lande.

Item also in our lande growith pepper in forestis full of fnakes and other venym beestes. and whan it is ripe than fende we for our folke and they put that fyre ther in/ and than they venym beestys flee awaye. than we gadder it and caryed to oure houfes and waffhed in two or. iij. waters/ and than we drey it ayen/ and also it waxed black and good

¶ Item aboute this passage is a fonteyne or a conduyte/ fo who of this watere drincked. iij. tymes he shall waxe yonge/ and also yf a man haue had a fykenes. xxx. yere and drynked of thys fame water he shall therof be hole and fonde. And also as a man therof drincked hym femeth that he had occupyed the beste mete and drinke of the worlde. and this fame fonteyne is full of the grace of the holy goost. and who fo we in this fame water waffhed his body he shall become yonge of. xxx. yere.

And ye shall knowe that I am haloweth in my moder wombe/ and I am old. v. C. lxiij. [562] yere. and I haue me weffhed. vi. tymes in that fame water.

[Here, at the side, is a woodcut of a flying griffon carrying a man.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a zee very peruuluous/ and there can we haue noo passage with noo maner of shyping and than do we vs cary there ouer with our gryffons.

¶ Item at that one fyde of this zee ronnyth a female ryuere and therin be many precyous stones. and also ther growyth a certen herbe that is good to all maner of medycyne.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande that betwene vs and the Iewes ronnyth a great ryuer that is full of precyous stones and it is fo stronge in here ronnyng yat noman ther ouer can passe/ excepte ye faterdaye/ and than parted shehere and toke with here all that she fyndeth in here waye. And this fame lande mozte we strongly kepe for oure ennemyes. an[d] vp these costes haue we. xliij. [42] stronge castels none stronger in ye world. and ben well kepte of people. To vndestande. x. M. [10,000] knyghtes on horsbacke. vi. M. [6000] Crosse bowes. xv. M. [15,000] longe bowes. and. xl. M. [40,000] othere men on horsbacke well armed. ye whyche these Castels haue in kyping by caufe that the great kyng of Ifrahel shall not therpasse with his people. For he is twyes as stronge as I am. And his lande is twyes as grete as all Crystente and turkey. For he hath in his keypyng the seconde parte of the worlde. And the great kyng of Ifrahel hath vnder hym iij. C. [300] kynges. iij. M. [4000] princes. duces. erles. barons knyghtes/ squyers without nombre. and all these be subgette to the great kyng of Ifrahel. But yf he myght passe ouer this forfayde ryuer with his people they shoelde flee both crysten and turkes. And ye shall knowe that we all faterdaye late passe. viij. C. or. M. [800 or a 1000] men for beye fuche manere good[s] or marchaundyse as they wyl haue. but we late them not come with in ye wallis of thys castels. for they bye it without ye walles of thys fortresses. and they paye ther marchaundyfes with platys of syluer or of gold for they haue none other money. and whan they haue don ther besynes they tourne home ayen in theyr owne lande. and these forfayde castels be fete to gyder within a bowe shotte. And ye shall vnderstande that within a myle of these castels is a great Cite and a fayre and it is the strongest of all the worlde. the whyche cite is in our keypyng of one of our kyngis. and he receyueith tribute of the great kyng of Ifrahel. And also gyueth vs euery yere. ij. C. [200] horses laden with golde/ fyluer/ and precyous stones. Except alle charges and costes that men doth in the cyte and in thys forefayde castels. And whan that we haue warre ayenst them/ than flee we them alle and late noman alyue. and therefore they wyl kepe no warre ayenst vs. and the wymmen of the Iewes be very fayre none fayrer in erth nowe a dayes lyuinge. And by this forfayde ryuer is a zee ther noman may passe/ but

whan the wynde blowythe fro benethe strongly than parted she here/ and thanne the[y] paffe with great hast. and than they take with hym all maner of precions stones. but they may felle none therof [be]for[e] that wee haue taken therof our chofe.

¶ In a parte of our lande is an hylle there noman may dwelle for hete of the sonne/ and there bee wormes many on without fyre can not lyue. And by this fame hylle we kepe. xl. M. [40,000] people that no thyngeells but make fyre/ and whan this wormes feele the fyre than thei come oute of the erthe and goo in too that fyre. and there they spynne lyke the wormes yat the fylke spynneth And of that fame spynnyng we make our clot[h]ynge that we were on feste dayes. and whan they be foule/ than they be cast in to ye fyer and they becom as fayre as euer they were afore

And ye shall vnderstande that faint Thomas doeth more myracles/ than any feynt in heuen For he comyth bod[i]ly euery yere in his chirche and doth a fermon/ and also in a palays there ye here after of hym shall here.

[Here, at the side, is the representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And ye shall also knowe that there be dyuers of people of fason in our lande/ also there be people that haue the body of a man and the hede lyke a dogge and they be good takers of fyffhe. and they be good to vnderstande of theyre specche. and they wyll goo in to the zee a hole daye longe to the tyme that they haue taken fuche as they wolde haue/ and than ye [they] come ayen charged with fyffhe. and bere them in to ye houfes for they haue there dwellinge places vnder erthe. and thenne take we part of there fyffhes that vs beste lyketh. and they do great harme among our bee thow yat be wylde. and they fyghte also ayenste our archers. &c.

¶ In oure londe is also one manere of byrdes and laye ther eggis in the zee. xxi. and ther out growen yonge byrdes. and than the[y] flee away and we take fomytyme of them for they bee good for to ete whan they be yonge For yf they were any man that hath lost his nature and ete of this fame byrde he sholl it gete ayen and becom as stronge as euer he was afore.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree dropping oil, guarded by a dragon, as described in the next paragraph.]

¶ Also in our lande is that fame tree/ ther yat holy creften- dom or olye [? oyle] out ronnyth. and this tree is dreye/ and ther is a great ferpent which yat tree hath in keypyng all the hole yere nyght and daye but alone vp[on] feynt Iohns daye and night and than slepyth the ferpent or dragon. and than goo we to the tree and take yat crisma. and of this fame is nomore than iij. po[u]nd. and than tourne we ayen secretelly

with great drede and fere yat he vs not fee/for ells he wyll flee vs. and this fame tree is a dayes iourney fro ye paradys of ye erthe. but whan this ferpent is a waked than maked he great mone and forow. and this dragon hath. ix. hedes and. ij. wynges. and is as great as twoo horses. But for all yat it followeth vs flylle tyl we ben come to the zee ayen. and than tourned it ayen. and thenne bere we that crisma. to ye patriarch of feynt thomas and he haloweth it/ and ther with they make vs al crysten. and ye remenaunt fende we to ye patriarche of Iherusalem. and he fende it forth to the Pope of rome. and he puth therto olye tof lyfe [? oyle of lyfe] and than halowyth it/ and then he fendeth all crystente through

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande whan we shall goo to warre than doo we afore vs bere with. xiiij. [14] kynges. xiiij. [14] cofers with golde and fyluer really wrought with precions stones. and the other kynges come after vs with grete stremers and baners of fylke and fyndale very rychely wrought. Ye shall knowe also that afore vs gone. xl. M. [40,000] clerkis and also many knyghtis. and men afote there be ij. C. M. [200,000] without cariers and cariers that go with the olyphantes and cary our harneys and vitales.

¶ Ye shall vnderstande also as we goo to fylde than put we oure lande in the keypyng of the Patriarche of feynt thomas. And whan we pecefably ryde than do we bere afore vs a croffe of wodde in worshyp of oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. Also in the incomynge of euery cyte stande. iij. croffes made of wodde/ for to remembre ye passion of oure lord Ihesu cryste. And whan we ryde pecefably than do we also bere afor vs a bafyn full of erthe to remembre yat we be come of erthe and that we shall waxe erth ayen. and we do also bere for vs another bafyn full of fyne gold to a token that we be the nobleste and myghtyest kyngis of all the worlde.

¶ There is also in our lande noman so hardy that dare breke his wedloke. but yf he dyde he sholde be incontynent be burnyd. For our lorde hym felse hath ordeyned wedlok therfore it shold be kept by reafon yf that we louyd oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. For it is one of the sacramentes of the holy chyrche.

¶ Also there dare noman make a lye in oure lande. for of he dyde he sholde incontynent bee sleyn and we be feythful in oure faying and doying.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstand that we euery yere goo vyfite the holy body of the prophete danyel in oure forest/ and we take with vs. x. M. [10,000] clerkis and as many knyghtys. and. CC. [200] castels. made vpon Olyphantes fore to kepe vs from ye dragons ye whyche haue. vij. hedes. the whych that haue theyr dwellynge in that forest.

¶ And there bee also in that fame place dates ye winter and fomer hange on the trees fayr and grene. And ye foreste is great a. C. and xxx. [130] dayes journey. and ye. ij.

patriarches ben before vs at table for they haue the myght of the pope of rome. And we haue twyes as many abbotes in oure lande as there be dayes in the yere. [and] xv. more And euerich one of them cometh ones in ye yere and faythe maffe vpon faint Thomas auter. And I my self feye also maffe in the grete festis of ye yere. and ther for I am called pope Iohn. For I [am] prifte after the outshewyng of facrificie of the auters. and kinge after outfhwying of Iustice. ¶ And I pope Iohn was halowid afore I was borne. for oure lorde fende his angell to my fader and fayde to hym make a pallays the whyche shall be of the grace of god and a chamber of that paradyfe for your sonne comynge For hi shall be the grettest kyng of the worlde. and he shalle a longe tyme lyue. So who that in this pallays comyth he shall haue no hongre or thyrste. and he shall not deye and as fone as my fader was a wakyd he was very mery/ and incontynent he began to make thys pallays lyke ye shall here. At fyrst of ye incomynge of thys pallays is made of cristall and the couerynge of it is of precious stoness and with in realy wrought with sterres lyke yf it were ye heuen. and that pauing is also of cristall and within this fame pallays be none wyndowes. and within this fame pallays be. xxiiij. [24] pyllers of fyne gold and of precyous stoness of all maner fortes. and ther am I at great feste dayes of the yere and feynt Thomas prechyth in middell of this pallays to the

people. And within this fame pallays is a conduyte or a fonteyne is lyke wyne in drynkyng/ fo who thereof drincketh he defyred none other mete nor drinke and noman can telle fro whens it cometh or whyther it gothe. Also ther is another great inerueyll in this fame pallays whan we shall goo to our dyner/ fo is there no maner of mete made redy for vs/ nor there is no manner of instrumentes to make mete redy with all. but there comith before vs all maner of delycious mete that comyth there thoroughe the holy goost. And it is not wel possyble to wrytte all maner of goodnes they [haue] whiche yat be in oure lande. And ye shall vnderstande that we wrytte nothyng to you but trewe is. For if we sholde wryte lyes to you/ god and feynt thomas sholde punyffhe vs/ for we sholde lese all our dignyte and oure worthyp.

And we praye you that ye wyl wrytte vs ayen with the berer of this lettre. and fende to vs ayen a good knyght of ye generacyon of fraunce.

And we praye the kyng of Fraunce that he wyl vs recomaunde to the myghty kyng of Englande. and also to all other kynges the whyche yat dwelle be yonde the zee thow that ben crystened and we praye god that he you wyl gyue the grace of the holy goost Amen.

Written in oure holy pallays in the byrth of my selfe. v. [five] hondred. and feuen.

Emprenteth by me Iohn of Doesborowe:



The
Life and Labours
of
Richard Eden,
Scholar, and Man of Science.

[? 1521]—1576.

* Probable or approximate dates.

The best Life of our Author hitherto, is in Cooper's *Athenæ Cantabrigienses*, ii., 2, Ed. 1861.

1509. Apr. 22. Henry VIII. comes to the throne.
- 1521.* The year of our Author's birth has not yet been ascertained, but it cannot be much later than 1521. He would therefore be of nearly the same age as Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, who was born on 13th September 1520. He stated in 1573 (*see under that year*) that 'he was of a respectable family in Hertfordshire; where he, in that year, had a sister still living.'
- 1526*—1534.* He is well educated as a boy. 'When I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus*.'—*p.* xli. *col.* 2.
1526. Pietro Martire of Anghiera dies.
1526. Feb. The printing of the *Sumario de la natural y general istoria de las Indias*, written by Gonçalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, is finished at Toledo.
1530. Jan. 25. Sir Thomas Smith [b. 28th March 1514 at Saffron Walden], being then B.A., is elected Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge.
1533. Aug. 31. The printing of the Third edition of Pietro Martire's Latin *Decades* is finished at Basle. It is undoubtedly the text from which Eden translated *pp.* 63-200 of this present work.
- 1533-1539. Sir T. Smith is resident at Cambridge.
1540. Vaunuccio Biringuccio's *Pyrotechnia* is first printed; at Venice.
- 1535-1544. Eden studies at Cambridge for ten years (*see under 1573*). What he states there, he confirms elsewhere, *see p.* l. *col.* 1, 'that the ryght worthyfull and of singular learnynge in all sciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and sometyme my tutor.' He does not, however, seem to have taken any degree, while up at the University.
- 1539-1541. Sir T. Smith is travelling abroad.
1542. A folio edition of Chaucer's works is published, remarkable for being an early instance of joint enterprise among English printers, 'each having his own name alone as printer, in the colophon of so many copies as were his proper share.'—Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, *p.* 557, *Ed.* 1785-90. The joint partners in this edition were W. Bonham, F. Petit, R. Kele, and R. Toy.
- 1842-1547. Sir T. Smith is again resident at Cambridge. It was probably during this period, that he taught Eden: who had, for his fellow pupils under Sir T. Smith, Edward Vere, afterwards the Earl of Oxford and a most exquisite poet; and John Ponet, afterwards Bishop of Winchester.
- 1544-1546. Eden comes to Court, and holds a position in the Treasury, for about two years; which is his first appointment in the Civil Service.
1545. Oct. The First edition of Thomas Geminus' important 'Epitome of *The Fabric of the Human Body*, by A. Vesalius,' is published in Latin in London, in folio size; illustrated with remarkable engravings, 'all drawn out, and graven in brasse, and so imprinted by my own labour.' The dedication to Henry VIII. is dated London, 4 Kal. Oct. [28th September] 1545.
- Geminus, in his next edition of 1553, states that King Henry very much wished that this anatomical work should be widely published abroad: and that he himself had subsequently heard that it had been 'notably well

accepted, and hath doen muche good in Italye, Fraunce, Spaine, and Germaine, and other foren parties.'

1547. Eden is destined to the office of the Distillery; when the King dies: see *p.* xlv.

1547. Jan. 28. Edward VI. succeeds to the Crown.

1547. The Lord Protector, however, gives the Distillery to one, who held it down to, at least, so late as 1573.

1547.* Eden marries; and has by his wife twelve children in the next fourteen years: who all apparently grow up to manhood; else the argument and appeal then used by him in 1573, would seem to be faulty.

1548. Sept. Master William Cecil, æt. 28, is appointed Secretary to the Lord Protector Somerset.

1549. Oct. 10. In the political revolution, occasioned by the advent to power of the Earl of Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland—to whom Eden, in 1553, dedicated his *Treatyse of the newe India*—Master W. Cecil is confined to his house (Oct. 10); and in November is sent to the Tower; from whence he is set free on the 25th

Nov. January following.

1550. Jan. 25. The First edition of Girolamo Cardano's work, *De Subtilitate*, is printed at Nuremberg in folio. It was written in eight months; but under constant correction for three years before it appeared. Eden thought very highly of it.

1550. May. The First edition, of the First Volume only, of *Navigazioni e Viaggi* [collected by J. B. Ramusio] is printed at Venice. It was probably this First impression; and not the Second edition of the same Volume printed in March 1554, that Eden made use of in his Compilation.

Sept. 5. Master W. Cecil is appointed one of the Secretaries of State and a Privy Councillor.

1551. July 3. The sweating sickness, which had begun on 15th April at Shrewsbury, begins in London; where 500 persons die in the first week. At this time, the first English ship that ever went to Barbary, leaves Portsmouth; under the command of T. Windham (see *p.* xix).

Oct. 11. Sir W. Cecil is knighted.

1552. Spring. Eden writes thus, at *p.* 355, about the middle of 1555, 'And wheras as concernynge the knowlege of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the boole worke of Pyrotechnia, wherof I fynysshed. xxii. chapiturs now more then three yeares fence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I could neuer get it ageyne (omyttinge to speake of other ingratitude) I was therby discouraged to proceede any further in that worke.' From this, it is evident that, by this time, Eden was a good Italian scholar. His translation of the first three chapters will be found at *pp.* 356-368.

1552. About this date, Eden was, I believe, acting as private secretary to Sir W. Cecil. I have, however, lost the reference to the authority for this.

1552. April 22. Sir W. Cecil is made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter.

May 2 or 9. The second English voyage sets out for Barbary, *p.* xix.

June 3. Girolamo Cardano, on his way from Italy, reaches London; and after a rest of three days, travels in twenty-three days to Edinburgh: where he somewhat successfully prescribes for Cardinal Beaton. After a stay of seventy-five days there; he leaves Edinburgh on

Sept. 12. 12th September, on his return towards Italy.

See further respecting this famous Italian magician or physician—this considerable genius—this prolific author (he wrote in all 222 treatises, large and small)—this most impudent liar and profligate liver, in Professor Morley's *Life of Jerome Cardan*, 1856. It is quite possible that Eden saw Cardano—whose works, he quotes as of the highest authority—while he was staying in London.

1552. July 20. Geminus, in the Dedication prefixed to the Second edition of his "Epitome of Vesalius' *Anatomy &c.*"

(with the explanations to the plates, greatly augmented and in *English*), which is dated "At Windfore, the. xx. July 1552," (the engraved title is, however, dated 1553) goes on to state, after what we have already quoted above, under 1545, as follows:—'And now of late by the information of fundrye frendes and also of diuerse furgeons, I haue ben borne in hande, that the same worke beeyng fet fourth in the English tounge might greatly auaille to ye knowledge of the vnlained Surgeons, and by meane of them, should bee muche more beneficiall, then in latin it is to an infinite nombre of people in thys your Maiesties Royalme of Englande. Wherefore myndyng to rendre vnto this Countrey, in which by your graces proteccion and bounteous liberalitie I liue, as muche fruite as my poore industrie and continuall trauaile may possibly bee hable to yelde, I haue earnestly applyed my felse to make common and familiar to all Englishe people that which hath ben found profitable among so many foren nacions. Whereunto forasmuch as I am not my felse fo perfeict and experte in the Englishe tonge that I dare warrant or trust myne owne dooynges, I haue vfed the studious peines of Nicholas Vdall [the author of *Roister Doister*, our earliest known English comedy] and certain other learned men whose exercise in translaacions and pennyng in this tounge hath ben (as I vnderstande) not without some fruite to the common weale.' Eden edited the next edition in 1559.

1552. Dec. 2. The printing of the first edition of Francisco Lopez de Gomara's *Istoria de las Indias y conquista de Mexico*, is finished at Saragossa.

1553. May 9. The date of the Ordinances &c. for the English fleet going for the discovery of Cathay by the North-East; given by Sebastian Cabot, as 'Gouernour of the mysterie and companie of the Marchants aduenturers for the discouerie of Regions, Dominions, Ilands, and places vnknown;' who were not, however, incorporated by royal charter, until 6th February 1555 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary). For these Ordinances, see Hakluyt's *Voyages, &c.*, *p.* 259, *ed.* 1589.

1553. May 20. The first English fleet, consisting of the *Bona Esperanza*, 120 tons, Captain Sir Hugh Willoughby, General of the whole fleet; the *Edward Bonauenture*, 160 tons, Captain Richard Chancellor, Pilot Major, with Stephen Burrough (or as Eden calls him at *p.* xli. *col.* 2, Steuen a Burrough), for Master; and the *Bona Confidentia*, 90 tons, Cornelius Deerfoorth, Master: leave Ratcliff on their voyage, and get as far as Deptford.

May 21. About 2 P.M. they leave Deptford. Then occurred the scene thus vividly described to us by Clement Adams: of which it is almost certain that Eden was an eye-witness.

'The greater shippes were towed downe with boates, and oares, and the mariners being all apparelled in watchet or skie coloured clothe, rowed a maine, and made way with diligence. And being come neere to *Greenewich* (where the Court then laye) presently vpon the newes thereof the Courtiers came running out, and the common people flockt together, standing very thicke vpon the shoare: the priuie Counsell, they lookt out at the windowes of the Court, and the rest ranne vp to the toppes of the towers: the shippes hereupon discharge the Ordinance, and shoote off their pieces after the maner of warre, and of the sea, infomuch that the tops of the hilles founded therewith, the valleys, and the waters gaue an Echo, and the mariners they shouted in such fort, that the skie rang againe with the noyse thereof. One floode in the poepe of the shippe, and by this gesture biddes farewell to his friends in the best manner he coule. Another walkes vpon the hatches, another climbs the shrow[d]es, another flandes vpon the maine yarle, and another in the toppe of the shippe. To bee short, it was a very triumphe (after a fort) in all respects to the beholders. But (alas) the good King Edwarde (in respect of whome principally all this was prepared) hee only by reafon of his sicknesse was absent from this shewe, and not long after the departure of these shippes, the lamentable and most forowfull accident of his death followed.'—Hakluyt, *Voyages, p.* 282, *Ed.* 1589.

May This voyage seems to have aroused a general interest in cosmography. People began to think of the great unknown world outside and beyond England. Some one printed a tract or single sheet, entitled *Of the new found lands*, which Eden derides at *p.* 5. This publication stirred him up to a rapid translation of a part of the Fifth book of Muenster's colossal *Cosmography*.

June.* Thus appeared Richard Eden's first literary work, (see title at p. 3), printed by Edward Sutton. He dedicates it to John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, the then all-powerful Protector. The Dedication is important in relation to the controverted life of Sebastian Cabot. It is to be noticed that in it Eden *boasts* of having already read the *Decades*. To this month and year is therefore also to be assigned the composition of his address 'To the Reader' at pp. 7-11; in which he so manfully strives to uproot the general ignorance and timidity of his time.

1553. July 6. *Mary's* reign commences.

1553. Aug. 12. The first English voyage to Guinea leaves Portsmouth, see p. 375.

Aug. 20. The printing of the second edition of Lopez de Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Medina del Campo.

Aug. 22. John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland (to whom, Eden had dedicated, within less than three months before, his first work), is beheaded at the Tower; with Sir T. Gates, and Sir T. Palmer.

1554. Summer.* Richard Chancellor's ship, the *Edward Bonaventure*, returns to England; but is robbed on the way home, by some Flemings. The crews of the other two ships,

Spring.* under Sir Hugh Willoughby, to the number of seventy persons, are frozen to death; while wintering at Arzina fiord, for 'want of experience to have made caues or stoues.' It appears from a will found in one of the ships, that Sir Hugh Willoughby and most of his company, were alive in January 1554.

1554. July 25. Queen Mary is married to Philip, Prince of Spain, at Winchester. 'Shortly after King *Philip* and Queene *Mary* remooued from Winchester to Basing, [and] from

Aug. 5. thence to Windsor, where, on the fifth of August, the King was stalled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.'—*Stow*, p. 1057, *Ed.* 1600.

Aug. 17. 'The King and Queene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the King in one barge, the Queen in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchester's staires neere to S. Maries Oueries church, and so passed through that place and park into Suffolke place, where they rested that night.'—*Stow*, *idem*.

Aug. 18. 'And the next day, being the 18 of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision received of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c., and passing through *Pauls* churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were flying upon a rope, from *Pauls* steeple down to the deans wall.'—*Stow*, *idem*. (As Eden tells us, at p. 46, intoxicated by the shows, the triumphs, and universal acclamations that greeted the gorgeous royal procession through the City, he was led first to debate within himself as to whether he could by any original publication perpetuate to future Ages, not so much the glorious reception, as its worthiness and significance: but thinking of nothing sufficiently worthy, he was led to consider the marvellous discoveries, conquests, and empire of the Spaniards; all of which bade fair to become (should the royal pair have issue) the joint heritage of England.) Hence his great Compilation is distinctly the result of the Marriage Procession of this day.

Within the following twelve months (working incessantly, and for nothing), Eden translated or wrote all that is reprinted in this volume, between pp. 43 and 398. Inasmuch as the work was one of great bulk (though, at the time, of national importance), several printers combined together for its risk of its publication: while the printing of it was wholly intrusted to William Powell. There are copies extant with the colophons of Robert Toy, Richard Jugge, Edward Sutton, and also, as Herbert states at p. 738, William Seres, and perhaps others. These are the "parteners" to whom Eden refers at p. 330.—See 1542 above.

Leonhardus Gorecius, a Polish knight, writes a congratulatory Latin Oration to the people and nobles of England on the royal marriage, which was printed by William Powell, who was also, at the same time, busily engaged on Eden's Compilation. Eden refers to this Oration at p. 47.

1554. Oct. 2. 'There came to the Tower in twenty carts made for the show, accompanied with certain Spaniards of the King's Guard, ninety-seven little chests, of a yard long and four inches broad, of silver, which will make by estimation fifty thousand pounde' [equivalent to £750,000 of the present day]: *Hart. MS.* 194 [which is a 'Pocket Diary of a resident in the Tower between July 1553 and October 1554'] reprinted by the Camden Society under the title of *The Chronicle of Queen Jane*, 1850. John Foxe, in his *Actes and Monumentes*, &c., *Ed.* 1563, states that the silver was 'matted about with mats, and mayled in little handles, about two feet long and almost half a foot thick, and in euery cart fixe of those bundles' I presume this is what Eden refers to at p. 56, as the 18,000 pounds 'weyght of fyluer which was coyned to the Kynges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath byn seene at once as fuche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme.' It was brought there from Peru and Rio de la Plata, by the celebrated Spanish historian Augustin de Zarate; whose *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Peru* was published at Antwerp in the next year.

It was probably after the formation of this acquaintanceship with Zarate, and while his great Collection, here reprinted, (itself an honour to the Spanish nation) was in the press; that by the favour of certain Spanish nobles, Eden obtained a place in the English Treasury of the Prince of Spain.

1554. Oct. 11. The second expedition to Guinea leaves the River Thames, see p. 379.

Oct. 12. The third edition of Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Saragossa.

1554. Nov. 28. The Council of State announce by letter, at Dr. Chedsey's sermon at Paul's Cross, that the Queen is *enceinte*.

1554. Nov. 11. } Parliament sits at Westminster.

1555. Jan. 16. } Among other Acts passed by it, was the following short one, now known as 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, c. 6—entitled *An Acte for reuocing of three Estatutes made for the punishment of Heresies*:—"For th[e]xchuing and avoiding of Errours and Heresies which of late haue ryfen growen and much encreased within this Realme, for that th[e]ordinaries haue wanted auctoritee to procede agaynste thos that were infected therwith: BE IT therefore ordeined and enacted by th[e]auctorite of this prefente Parliament, That the Statute made in the fifthe yere of the Reigne of King Richarde the Seconde, concerning th[e]jarresting and apprehencion of erroneous and hereticall Preachers, And one other Statute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fourthe concerning the repressing of Heresies and punisment of Heretikes, And also one other Estatute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fifthe, concerning the suppression of Heresie and Lollardye, and euery Article, Branche and Sentence contained in the same three feerrall Actes and euery of them, shall from the xxth day of Ianuarye next coming [1555] be revivod and be in full force strengthe and effecte to all Intentes construccions and purpofes for ever."—*Statutes of the Realm*, iv. 244, *ed.* 1819.

1555. Jan. 1. The date of John Elder's letter describing the marriage of the King and Queen in the previous July; which letter was immediately printed.

Jan. 20. The burning of Protestants becomes lawful on and after this day, by the above Act of Parliament.

Feb. 4. John Rogers, the first of the Marian martyrs, is burnt at Smithfield.

Feb. 6. The Moscovy Company is incorporated by Royal Charter: having for its Executive; Sebastian Cabot, Governor; four Consuls; and twenty-four Assistants.

Eden must have watched the proceedings of this Company with the deepest interest. Indeed, it is probable that the entire section, *Of Moscovie and Cathay* (which has nothing whatever to do with the title-page or original plan of his Compilation; at which he must have been working hard, all through this winter) was suggested by the return of Richard Chancellor and the subsequent Incorporation of this Company; and put forth by him, as a goodwill offering towards their success and information.

1555. Feb. 8. Laurence Saunders is burnt at Coventry; and so the legalized religious massacre goes on.

- May 21. Is the latest actual date in Eden's Compilation, and therefore in the three Works here reprinted. It will be found towards the bottom of *p.* 382. On this day the English ships, returning on their way home from Guinca, were in 39° 30' N. At their rate of progress they could hardly have reached England before the end of July.
- July.* Therefore Section VII. of Eden's Compilation was written and printed in August; and, at the earliest, his newly printed Compilation and the printing of the entire book could hardly have been finished before
- Aug.* September.
- Sept.* Immediately after which; Thomas Watson, Bishop of Lincoln,—the fellow-student of Roger Ascham; by whom his Latin play of *Absalom* [? if the MS. is now at Wilton House] is exceedingly praised in his *Schoolmaster*, 1570—accuses Eden before Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, for heresy; of which his newly printed Compilation would afford ample evidence.
- Oct. 24. Bishop Gardiner, however, dies; and Eden somehow escapes punishment, with simply the loss of his office; and then seems, for the next three years to be living in retirement; his family steadily increasing all the while.
1556. Jan. 10. The printing of Martin Cortes' *Breve compendio de la sphaera y de la arte de nauegar* is finished at Seville.
- Nov. 7. Richard Chancellor, in the wreck of his ship the *Philip and Mary* in Pettislego Bay, Scotland, is drowned—while endeavouring in a boat to save the Russian Ambassador's life; in accomplishing which, he loses his own.
1557. Feb. 27–28. Eden probably witnessed the splendid reception by the Moscovy Company, of Osep Gregorevitch Napea, the first Russian Ambassador, on his arrival in London, for the *procès verbal* of which, see Hakluyt, *Voyages, &c.*, *p.* 321, *Ed.* 1589. From the omission in this notarial document of all allusion to Sebastian Cabot; it is evident that he was recently dead. For Eden's account of his death—the only one extant—see *p.* xlvi., *col.* 2. It probably occurred about this date: for when Eden, about the Summer of 1555, wrote the heading at *p.* 283, 'that woorthy owlde man Schaftian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande,' was still 'Gouernour of the company of the marchantes of Cathay.'
1558. Nov. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.
- We now come to the two earliest printed notices of Eden. His reputation had travelled over the Continent to the English Protestant exiles in Switzerland; and two of them thus vaguely and incorrectly refer to his literary labours, but give him the wrong Christian name.
1558. Lawrence Humphrey (who died Dean of Winchester, on 1 Feb. 1590), in his three books of *Interpretatio linguarum*, the Dedication of which is dated, Basilæ, Feb. 3, 1559, thus refers to our Editor-Author, at *p.* 520. 'Petrum quoque Martyrem Angleriensem Joannes Eden, Cosmographus et Alchumista uertit *De insulis nuper inventis.*'
1558. Bp. Balc, at *p.* 110 of his Supplement (written in 1558), to his *Scriptorium illustrium, &c.* the printing of which was finished in Feb. 1559, is a little more explicit; but still follows Humphrey closely. "Johannes Eden, Cosmographus et alchumista ut à quibusdam [*i.e.* L. Humphrey] narratur, ingeniosus ac peritissimus, inter alia scripsit *De nauigationibus Portugalensium*, Lib. 1. [This is evidently Eden's first publication, *Of the newe India.*] Transtulit Petrum Martyrem Angleriensem. *De insulis nuper inuentis*. Lib. 1. [or rather the *Decades*]. Aliaque fecit multa. Clariut anno Domini. 1556."
1559. Sept. The printing of the Third edition of Geminus' *Anatomy, &c.*, 'enlarged, amplified, and so corrected and diligently perused, that it maye seeme a newe worke, and rather an other than it was before,' is finished. Richard Eden is, this time, the English reviser; and the fresh Dedication to the new Queen is evidently written by him for Geminus, as its smooth connected style abundantly demonstrates.
1561. Eden's next literary work seems to have been the translation (and probably also, in part, the devising of the numerous, and, for that time, difficult woodcuts of

this work of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Naviar*, at the expense of certain members of the Moscovy Company: towards which, Eden appears, at this time, to have stood in the same relation as Hakluyt did, fifty years later, to our East India Company. This work is remarkable not only for the number of the wood engravings (some of them moveable) of different mathematical instruments; but also for a small outline map of *The Newe Worlde*, or more properly of the North Atlantic basin. This is probably the earliest printed map of America ever produced in England: and is evidently copied from the original in Cortes' *Compendio*.

To this translation, Eden prefixed the following excellent Preface: in respect to which, it is significant to notice that Sebastian Cabot's name is omitted from the inscription.

To the ryght worshipfull syr VVyllyam Garrerd Knyght, and Master Thomas Lodge, Aldermen of the Citie of London, and Gouernours of the honorable felowshyp or societie, aflowell of certeyne of the Nobilitie, as of Marchauntes aduenturers, for the discovery of Landes, Territories, Ilandes, and Seignories vnknowen, and not before their first aduenture or enterpryse by Seas or Nauigations commonly frequented:

And to the ryght worshipfull the Consulles, Assistentes, and communalitie of the same societie, Richarde Eden wyffeth health and prosperitie.



Hat foener he was (ryght honorable and worshipfull) that fyrste beleued that the frame and coaptacion of the bodye of man, with the functions, offices, and duties of the partes and members of the fame, knytte together in a certen vnitie to a common ministracion, dyd represent a lyuely Image and fimilitude of a perfecte common wealth: I thinke that he was a man of no vulgare iudgement or abiecte mynde, but rather of singuler wyfdome and prudence in the contemplacion of Diuine and humane thynges. For he sawe, that as in the small natie feede of all growyng or luyng thynges, is conteyned the fourme that bryngeth them to their perfection: so in certeyne small and obscure members of the common wealth, consisteth no small increafe to the perfection of the whole. He sawe lykewyse that herein, as in the bodye of man representyng the partes and members of the worlde (as I haue sayde) are dyuers partes of dyuers and fundrye actions and motions, greatly dyfferyng in fourme, number, and quantitie, yet all the fame to be so knytte together, and so to consent in one vniformitie to the common profyte of the whole, that a greater concorde and harmonye can not be imagined, then is proportioned by the frendly vnitie of dyuers and contrarye. He sawe lykewyse in the fame, such a mutuall compassion of parte to parte, and member to member, by one common fence existent in them all, that no one part or member can feele eyther ioye or payne, but that in maner all the other are parttakers therof more or lesse, yf they be lyuely members, and not wythered or otherwyse vnfenate by reason of dead fleshe, which onely by cuttyng and burning ought to be deuyded from the founde and whole. But as in man (whom Plato calleth the lesse world) the vigour and agilitie of the immortal soule and mynde, neuer ceaseth from continuall mouyng, but is euer exercysed in excogitacions and inuencions of great thynges (herein resembling God, whose caracte it beareth) by prouidence forefeing, and by intelligence vnderstandyng and deuyfing what is to be done, and what to be eschewed, doth immediatly moue and rayse vp the faculties, powres, and members of the body to execute the fame: Euen so in the greater worlde, the prouidence of God, and vniuerf- all counfayle and consent of men, hath elected and appoynted certen principal men, to beare lyke rule and auctoritie in the bodye of the common wealth, as hath the intellectuie soule in the members of our bodye to moue and commaunde the fame. To Princes therefore counfaylours, rulers, gouernours and magistrates, as to the most intellectuie and sensitiue partes of the societie of men, hath God and nature geuen preeminence and gouernance of the common wealth, that by their prouidence, wyfdome, and ayde, it may vniuerfally florysh, not onely by iuste administration of good lawes, with due correction of malefactours, but also by lyberall rewardyng of fuche as haue well deserued: and especially by maintenance of fuche artes and sciences, as the common wealth can not well be without. And to draw nearer to the applyng of my fimilitude: I saye, that whatfoeuer vertue, whatfoeuer arte, or the ingenious industry of men hath to this day inuented, all the fame is to be imputed to the beneuolence and liberalitie

of fuche as haue honourably maintayned and freely rewarded the traualles, paynes, and charges of them that haue spent their lyues, goodes, and wyttes (as many haue done) in the inuentions of necessarie and profytable artes and sciences. For euen as holsome and temperate ayre with feasonable wether and fauorable influence of the heauens and planettes, causeth fruitfulness on the earth, and contrary wyse, barrenesse by the contrarye: Euen so the fauour of Princes and Magistrates norytheth, augmenteth, and amplifyeth all artes and sciences by liberalitie, and extynguysheth the same by miserable couetousnes and parcimonie. And although in some men of rare and noble nature, the desyre of honour and fame onely for vertues sake, and study toward their countrye and common wealth, hath moued them in maner to their owne vndoing through their greate losse and hynderaunce, to sette forth and inuent diuers thynges for the commoditie of the common wealth and other, rather then for their owne: yet vndoubtedly, who so wel considereth and indifferently wayeth that I haue sayde, shal fynde and see by daylye experience, that in maner onely munificence, liberalitie, and rewarde, or the hope thereof, geueth spurres to them that attempte great and vertuous enterpryses, as I coulde more largely proue by so many testimonies of Hystories, both holy and prophane, that the rehearfall therof shoulde be but tedious and not greatlye necessarye for my purpose, especially wrytyng vnto your honoures and worshipps, of whose munificence and liberalitie, I haue had great experience, bothe in my selfe and others, who by your ayde and mainteynaunce haue attempted and performed many goodly inuentions, viages, nauigations and discoueries of landes and Seas heretofore vnknewen. Wherein, what great charges you haue fusteyned, and howe lyberall and constant you haue ben in furtheryng the same, doth well declare that hyther to you are rather losers than gayners therby. The whiche thyng doubtlesse is the more to your commendation, in that it maye hereby appeare that you haue attempted the same rather for knowledge and vertues sake, then for couetousnes of gaynes: as is furthermore well knowne by your fyrste viages of discouerye attempted to Cathaye by the Northeast seas, vpon certen losse and detriment, for vncerteyne hope eyther of gaynes, or of any such way to be founde, otherwyse then by certen lykely coniectures: not much vnlyke to the shynyng flowres of Marchasites, which outwardly appearyng in minerall mountaynes, are signes and token wherby is coniectured what metal is conteyned therein, and whether the same is to be folowed or not. And although it sometyme so chaunce that such signes are sayleable, shewyng more in appearance then they conteyne in substaunce: yet are not such signes tokens, or shewes to be contemned, but rather earnestly to be folowed, forasmuch as it hath ben often proued and founde by experience, that by folowyng the same, haue ben founde great and riche mynes of metalles: as *Georgius Agricola* in his booke *De rebus metallicis*, doth largely declare and proue by manye examples. But to wryte at large what greate thynges haue proceeded of small and obscure begynnynges, and in maner mere coniectures: it woulde so farre exceede the measure of an Epistle or Preface, that it woulde rather increase to the iust quantitie of a booke. For in maner all the late discoueries both of the Spanyardes and Portugales, had their begynnyng of such small coniectures, with vncerteyne hope (as it were *preter spem sub spe*) vntyll God and good happe, by the constant traualle and valiaunt mynde of such as fyrst attempted the same, gaue them to enioye that they hoped for. But whatsoever they haue obteyned and do enioy, this may I boldly say in your behalf (right honorable and worshipfull) that there hath not lacked in you eyther the lyke or greater promptnesse of mynde, forwardnes in attemptyng, magnificence in expences, and liberall in rewarde. For besyde the great charges and losses that you haue ben at otherwyse, what should I speake of the great gyftes that you haue sente to the Emperour of Ruffia? What of your last chargeable vyage of discouerye among the innumerable Rockes, Ilandes, and moueable mountaynes of Ice in the frozen sea, by innumerable landes and Ilandes vnknewen to the Antiques, euen vnder and farre within and beyonde the circle Artike, where they thought that no luyng creature coulde drawe breath or liue for extreme colde: wheras neuerthelesse the same hath ben by you discouered euen vnto the myghty ryuer of Ob, that falleth into the Scythian Ocean, or *Oceanus Hyperboreus*, not farr from the mountaynes called *Hyperborei*, so named because they are situate almost vnder the North pole, and thought therefore to be inaccessible. A vyage doubtlesse of such difficultie and in maner impossibilitie, that confyderyng the infinite daungiers therof (as I haue learned by th[e] information of Steuen a Burrough, that was then the chiefe

Pilote of the same vyage) it may seme impossible that they shoulde euer haue escaped, excepte the myghty hande of God, by the experte skylfulness of so excellent a Pilot, had deluyered them from those daungers. And although in dede (as religion byndeth vs) it is conuenient in all thynges to geue all honour, glorye and thanks to God, yet are we not thereby restrayned to be thankfull to such men, as by their arte, ingeniousnes, traualle, and diligence, haue deserued both iuste commendation and large rewarde. And therefore referring the rewarde to you (ryght honorable and worshipfull, to whom it apperteyneth) yf I should not here geue hym at the leaste fuche commendation, as in my iudgement he hath well deserued, I myght seme both to defraude hym of his worthy desertes, and also to forgette the frendshyp and good wyll I beare hym, onely for his vertues and excellencie in his profession. For certeynly when I consider how indigent and destitute this Realm is of excellent and expert Pilottes, I can do no lesse of conscience, then in respect of your owne commoditie, yea rather for the commoditie of the Queenes Maiestie and the whole Realme, to exhort you and put you in remembraunce (although I may herein seme to put the spurres to a runnyng horse, as saith the Prouerbe) so to regard hym and esteme hym and his faythfull, true, and painefull seruice toward you, that he maye thereby be further encouraged, and not discouraged, eyther for lacke of maintenaunce, or other wyse by the iniurious assaultes of such his enemies, as onely his vertues and excellencie haue moued to beare hym displeasure, as enuye doth euer folowe vertue, as saith the Latine Prouerbe, *Virtuti comes inuidia*. And howe true a sentence this is, is well verified by the faying of a certayne Philosopher (whose name I do not remember) who hearynge one vaynely reioyce that he had no enemies, answered that that was a token he hadde done lyttle good: Meanyng thereby (as daylye experience proueth) that yf he had excelled in any vertue, he coulde not haue lacked some enemies. And hauyng here touched to speake of enuye, I remember that when I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus* of two kyndes of enuye, whereof the one is called *Inuidia*, and the other *Aemulatio*, which is more tollerable then the fyrste, for that it is ioyned with some vertue, and enuyeth that anye shoulde excell hym in any excellent qualitie that he professeth. But forasmuch as this enuy of emulation procedeth of some singuler vertue of them that are so maliced, they maye herein reioyce, that they shall euer haue a hundreth frendes for one enemy: yea and although they hadde none, yet is vertue a rewarde to it selfe, and to be embrased for it selfe onely, as the Philosophers affirme. What then shall we say to such, as forgettyng this rewarde of vertue, do not onely [not] fauour, but rather hynder the preferment and maintenaunce of such experte men, more estemyng certayne Fyshermen that go a trawlyng for fysh in Catches or mongers, and dragdges for Oysters about the sandes, betwene the South furlande and Wynterton nesse, and the sandes about Temmes mouth, then they do fuche excellent Pylotes as are able without any Rutter or Carde of Nauigation, not onely to attempte longe and farre viages, but also to discouer vnknewen landes and Ilandes, as haue doone of late yeares many excellent men, to the great honour and enrychyng of their Prynce and countrye. But as touching Steuen a Burrough, the chiefe Pylote of your viages of discouerye, it may hereby well appeare yat he is neyther malicious nor eniuous of his arte and science, in that he desireth ye fame for the common profite to be commen to al men: And for the same intent was the fyrst that moued certen worshipfull of your company, as Syr William Garrerd, Maister William Mericke, Maister Blase Sanders, and Maister Edwarde Castlen, to haue this worke translated into the English tongue. Who of their own good nature fauouryng al vertuous studies and the professours of the same, did fone incline to his honest request herein: and therewith not only desired me, but also with liberall rewarde entertained me, to take in hande the translation. Whiche being nowe finished as well as my poore learning may performe, I desyre your honours and worshipps, to accepte in as good parte as I haue ment herein to gratifie you, and doe fuche seruice as my abilitie may suffice. Nowe therefore this worke of the art of Nauigation, beyng publyshed in our vulgar tongue, you may be assured to haue more store of skylful Pilottes. Pilottes (I faie) not Pirottes, Rulers, not Rouers, but fuche as by their honest behaour and conditions ioyned with arte and experience, may doe you honest and true seruice: whiche is not to be looked for of fuche as beyng destitute as well of the feare of God as of all moral vertues, superbounde in all notorious vyces, accompting desperatnesse for boldnesse, rashnesse for hardinesse, impudencie for stoutnesse, and crueltie for manhod. What other

thyng (I faye) is to bee looked for of fuche, then of fuche trees fuch fruites, *Et mali corui malum ouum*. But for as muche as thefe haue no place appointed them in the bodie of our common wealth, whiche we haue here before compared to the members of the bodie of man: therefore are they no otherwyfe to be eftemed then as excrementes of the bodye, to whom nature hath appointed no place in the fame, but laboureth continuallye to caft them forth dyuers wayes, leaſte by theyr filthynesse they ſhould infecte the other members, euen as the pompe of the ſhyppe if it be not auoyded, is noyous to the ſhippe and all that are therein. But the wyſe and honeſt Pylot, fyrſt hauyng before his eyes the feare of God, and puttyng his chief truſt in hym, ſhall ſecondarely truſt to his arte and ſcience, without any fuche vayne obſeruations as the ſuperſtitious Horoſcopers (Aſtrogiers I meane, and not Aſtronomers) are accuſtomed to vſe in the elections of houres, tymes, and dayes, by conſtellations and aſpectes of the Starres and Planetes, as many fonde menne haue doone, thynkyng thereby to haue eſcaped fuche daungers, as they haue thereby the rather fallen into, through the contempte of arte and ſcience by folyſhe confidence in ſuperſtitious Aſtrogie: which for the vanitie and vncertaintie thereof, the ryght worſhyppfull and of ſingular learnyng in all ſciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, and fometyme my Tutor, was accuſtomed to call *Ingenioſiſſimam artem mentiendi*. (That is) the moſt ingenious arte of lyinge. Omitting therefore the ſuperſtitious and phantaſticall obſeruations of the iudicials of Aſtrogie, it ſhalbe better and more neceſſary for all Pylotes that deſyre to excelle in theyr profeſſion, to learne and obſerue the principles of thys booke, whereby they may haue fuche knowledge of the Sphere, as may inſtructe them the makynge and vſe of dyuers goodly Aſtronomicallynſtrumentes pertynyng to the arte of Nauigation, by knowledge of the mouynges of the Sunne and Moone in their Spheres, and the other Planetes and fixe Starres: thereby to attayne to the true knowledge of houres, tymes and tydes, with the variation of the Compaſſe, and many other goodly naturall obſeruations of weathers, tempeſtes, and calmes, by certain infaileable ſygnys and tokens of the ſame, very neceſſary to be obſerued. And this by the true principles of Aſtrogie and not of Aſtrogie. And this is the true Aſtrogie wherof the Diuine Philoſopher Plato hathe wyrtten ſo diuine a ſentence, that I haue thoughte the ſame here worthy to be alleaged, that by the aucthoritie of ſo famous an aucthour, we maye knowe what is true Aſtrogie, with the vſe and commoditie therof. Therefore in his booke intituled *Timeus vel De Natura*, theſe are his wordes. *Rerum autem optimarum cognitionem, nobis oculi attulerunt. Nam hæc quæ de mundo diſputantur, nunquam inuenta fuiſſent, ſi neque Sydera, neque Sol, neque Cælum ſuſpicere potuiſſet. Cognitione vero diei ac noctis, ab oculis orta, fecit ut diſpenſatione quadam, menſium annorumque ambitus metiremur, tempus cognoſceremus, ac vniuerſe naturæ ordinem ſerutaremur. Quibus ex rebus, philoſophiam adepti ſumus.* That is to faye. Our eyes haue brought vnto vs the knowledge of moſt excellent thinges. For what ſo euer is diſputed of the worlde, had neuer bene inuented, yf neither the Starres, neither the Sunne, neither heauen, coulde haue bene ſeene. For the knowledge of the daye and nyght, takyng beginning at ye eyes, cauſed vs as it were by certen limites and boundes to meaſure the circuites of monethes and yeares, wherby we came to the knowledge of tymes and the order of vniuerſall nature. And hereby alſo we obtayned the knowledge of Philoſophie. &c. And thus by the aucthoritie of Diuine Plato (whome for hys excellencie Cicero called *Deum Philoſophorum* (that is) the God of Philoſophers) we maye vnderſtande that the true Aſtrogie, is the perfecte knowledge of the miraculous mouynges of ye Planetes, Starres, and heuens (and eſpecially of the Sunne and Moone) whereby is cauſed the varietie of tymes and dyuerſitie of all naturall thynges, by naturall cauſes: as by the qualities of Elementes, as hoate, colde, moyſte and drye, whyche are augmented or dymynyſhed by the more or leſſe influence of theſe twoo Luminaries, as they comne nearer vnto vs at ſome tymes, or depart further from vs at other tymes, with diuers motions in diuers climates whyche cauſeth not onely varietie of tymes in fundry climates, but alſo the varietie of diuers complexiones, formes, and diſpoſitions of all creatures vnder the face of heauen, none other accidentall contyngent, voluntarie or violent cauſe to the contrarie notwithstanding. And this is it that Plato meaneth by thoſe wordes. *Vt tempus cognoſceremus ac vniuerſe naturæ ordinem, &c.* That is, to knowe the tymes and vniuerſall order of nature. And doubtleſſe, who ſo well conſidereth the marueilous effectes that are cauſed, eſpecially by the variable mouyng of the Sunne

in the Zodiac, muſt needes acknowledge it to be the chiefe inſtrument and meane that God vſeth in the generation, perſeruacion, and alteration of all creatures that are conteyned in the worlde of generation and corruption. And for this conſideracion, certen of the auncient Philoſophers called it the foule of the worlde: Other the eye, and other alſo the heart of the worlde. Plato alſo affirmeth that the foule of the worlde is in the Sunne: And that all other liuyng thynges, receyue lyfe from hence. And hereof commeth the fayinge of the Philoſopher, *Sol et homo generant hominem*: (that is) the Sunne and man, begette man. And therefore (as wryteth *Marcilius Ficinus*) of all Idolaters they are moſt tollerable that honour the Sunne for God. The whiche although it bee not, yet vndoubtedlye are his effectes ſo greate and wonderfull in this inferiour worlde, that it may ſeme in maner to be Gods Viceregent, Lieftenant and Viceroy in all the woorkes of nature, excepte where and when it pleaſeth hym in any thyng myraculouſlye, otherwyfe then by the common order and courſe of nature, to commaunde the contrarie.

And yf it may not be tedious vnto you (ryght honorable and worſhyppfull) it ſhalbe a pleaſure vnto me, for the better declaracion hereof, to make a briefe diſcourſe of the marueilous and ſtraunge effectes that are cauſed by the Sunne: whiche perhappes fewe haue done, otherwyfe then diſperſedlye here and there, as occaſion hath ſerued. Fyrſt therfore let vs conſider what it hath done ouer the Equinoctiall line, and vnder both the poles at one inſtant, yet diuerſely and contrarely the one to the other. For ſo hath the infinite wyſedome of the greate God of nature, the ſupreme Architecture of the vniuerſall worlde, diſpoſed all thynges in ſuch perfecte order, that to them that are vnder the Equinoctiall, and haue theyr Horizon paſſyng by the two Poles, the daye is of xii. houres and the nyght as much, and theyr yeare alſo is deuyded into. xii. monethes: But they that dwell iuſt and perpendiculery vnder our pole, and that haue their Horizon paſſyng ouer the fayde line, haue the daye of fyxe monethes. That is to faye: begynnyng from the tenth daye of Marche, when the Sunne cometh ouer the fayde Horizon, whyle it returne to paſſe vnder the ſame at the tenth of September. And contrarywyfe one nyght of fyxe monethes haue th[e] inhabitants vnder the Pole Antartyke: whoſe yeare (that is to faye, all the courſe that the Sunne maketh by the. xii. ſignes of the Zodiac) is accompliſhed in one daye and one nyght. A thyng doubtleſſe moſt wonderfull and marueylous. Lykewyfe, when we haue Sommer, they that are vnder our Pole haue the daye of fyxe monethes, and they of the oppoſite or contrary Pole, haue theyr nyght of the ſame length. Agayne, when it is wynter with vs, then vnder our Pole is the nyght of the fayde fyxe monethes: and vnder the oppoſite Pole, is the day of the ſame length. So that as it were courſe by courſe, when we haue the night, they haue the day: And contrarywyfe, when we haue the day, they haue the night. The which although it be ſo longe and of ſo great ſpace of tyme, yet is it not continuallye obſcured with darkeneſſe. For the Sunne maketh his courſe in ſuch order, that th[e] inhabitants of that parte, lyue not duryng that tyme altogether in darkeneſſe, as Moles lyue vnder the grounde, but as other creatures that lyue vpon the globe and face of the earth, they haue fuche lyght as maye ſuffice to ſuſtayne and mayntayne theyr lyfe. For the bodye of the Sunne declineth no more eyther beneath the Equinoctiall line, eyther about the ſame line (which is the Horizon to both the Poles) than. 23. degrees: That is to faye, no lower or hygher then the Tropikes, whiche are no more than 23. degrees or there about from the fayde Equinoctiall that is theyr Horizon, as is aforeſayde. And yet in theſe 23. degrees he maketh not his courſe by the oppoſite Diameter, but goeth continuallye rounde about in circuite: ſo that his beames reuerberatyng heauen, repreſente fuche a maner of lyght, as we haue in Sommer two houres before the Sunne ryſe. And this example which we haue taken of the diuerſitie of the Horizons of the Equinoctiall and vnder the two Poles, is to demonſtrate the marueylous effecte that the Sunne maketh departyng from the. xii. houres of the Equinoctiall (that is to ſay, from Aries to Libra) and comyng by lyttle and lyttle, illuminatyng the globe of the earth, and ſo reduceyng the yere of. xii. monethes, into one onely day and one nyght, as is fayde before. Vnder the infinite varietie of the which courſe, ſometyme with long dayes and ſometyme with ſhorte, all the inhabitants of the worlde are ſourmed and diſpoſed of fuche complexion and ſtrength of body, that eury of them are proportionate to the Climate affigned vnto them, be it hotte or colde: And may dwel and abyde there, as in theyr naturall place and temperament, not lamentyng or deſyryng to dwell elſewhere, ſo grete a loue reſteth in

them to their natie situation. But not to departe from the vyage whiche the Sunne maketh in one whole yeare, as sometyme approchyng neare vnto vs, and sometyme departyng from vs. I saye that at one selfe same tyme in dyuers partes vpon the rounde globe of the earth, it causeth the Spryng, Sommer, Autumne, and Wynter. And neuerthelesse at the same instant and punct of time it maketh day and high noone in one place, and nyght and mydnyght on the opposite part. The which varietie although it appeare incomprehensible to the slenderesse of our wyttes, yet beholdyng the same with the eyes of vnderstandyng, and therewith consideryng the vnestimable mouyng that the Sunne maketh continually, we shall fynde it to be true, hauyng respecte to the dyuers situations of the earth, as it is continuallye illuminate more or lesse by the Sunne. And this varietie is made with such a Harmonye and consonancie, and such a lawe perpetuall and immutable, that yf any poynt or pricke thereof shoulde fayle, it is to be doubted least the elementes should be confounded together, and returne to their fyrst Chaos.

And to haue sayde thus muche of the wonderfull effectes of the course of the Sunne, it maye suffice for an example to proue howe necessary a thyng it is, not onlye for all Pilottes and Sea men to haue the knowledge hereof, but also for all other such as shall attempt great and farre viages in vnknown landes and straunge cuntryes, as dyd of late master Jenkynson a worthy gentleman, sette forth by you and mainteyned at your charges, more lyke an Ambassatoure sente from anye Prince or Emperour, then from a companye of marchant men. Wherein, what commendation you haue deserued, to the increafe of your perpetual fame and honour, I referre it to that I haue sayde before. And as touching master Jenkynson, what trauayles, paynes, and daungers he hath susteyned, and hardely escaped, and what diligence and arte he hath vsed in the searching of straunge cuntryes, and in the description of those his viages, it were but in vayne for me to wryte much vnto you, vnto whom the same is better knowne then to me. And therefore to conclude, with rendring iust commendations both vnto you and him, I can say no more, but as Plato wryteth in his booke *De Legibus*. *Decens est eos ciues laudibus ornare, qui corporis vel animi viribus, res arduas preclarasque gesserunt, et legibus libenter paruerunt.* That is to say: It is decent to commend those Citizens that by theyr industry of bodye or mynde, haue done greate assayes, and haue willingly obeyed good lawes.

And thus estones desyryng your Honours and Worshyppes to accept in good parte whatsoeuer I haue saide of good wyll and affection towarde you and your procedynges, and with your shielde of Iustice and auctoritie, to defende me agaynst the assaultes of such as are enemies to vertue, and captious of other mens doinges: I reste at your commaundement to the vttermoost of my powre, to do you what seruice I maye.

1562. March I. John Taisnier, Doctor of Laws [b. at Ath, in Brabant], a writer in astrology and chiromancy, publishes at Cologne a tract, *De natura magnetis et ejus effectibus*. Graesse, in his *Tresor*, states that it is a gross plagiary from Pellegrine de Maricourt's *De Magnete*, printed in August 1558.

1562. The Civil Wars in France begin by the unpremeditated massacre of Huguenots at Vassy by the Duke of Guise.

1562. Eden's wife is apparently dead, and he himself residing in the house of a friend; when the following Aug. I. letter was written. It is manifestly addressed to Sir W. Cecil, who was brother-in-law to Sir John Cheke. Both

the writer and the Secretary of State were now about forty-two years of age. Apparently Eden was to receive £20 [= £150 now] as an earnest penny for a translation of Pliny into English.



HE only searcher of mens hartes the eternall god I take to wytnesse (right Honorable) that neuer the greefes of aduerse fortune (wherof I haue had my parte), dyd so muche prostrate my mynde and pearce my harte with sorowes, as the vnderstanding of your honours fauour and goodnesse towarde me in your lately earnest traualle in my behalfe (as I was informed by the Master of Savie) hath reioiced me and revived my Discouraged spirites, heretofore no lesse languysshed for lacke of suche a Patrone, then nowe encouraged by the fauoure of suche a *Maccenas*, as I haue iust cause to name your honour, syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hath pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for

me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire) but also to be more earnest in folowing the same, then I might without presumption demaunde, and muche lesse without desertes dequire. As touching the which matter (right Honorable) as it was no parte of my diuise, but suche as the Master of Savoy had then in hande as I suppose no lesse to pleasure hym selfe and his frende then for xx^{li} thereof to be lotted to me for an earnest peny to begynne the booke (as he saith), Even so am I right forie that for so smaule a matter, and not so favorable a sute as I wolde haue wysshed, not only your Honour hath taken suche paynes, but that also suche contention is ryfen therof betwene the Master of Sauoy and Master Baptist of the prive chamber, that by reason therof the pardon being steyed by your Honour, the younge gentleman his kynfman (as he hath informed me) is in Daungour of his lyfe. But vnder your honours fauour to speake playnelye as I thinke, I suppose that here *Aliquid latet quod non apparet*. For as this sute for dyuers considérations at the first dyd not greatly like me, yet perceauing his earnestnesse therein for the safegarde of his kynsmans life and gratifying his frendes, I no lesse willing therein to do hym pleasure also, was well contented to assent to his request, and to stande to his appoyntment, not suspecting his frendshipp, but rather commending his wyddome, so to doo for his frende as therewith not to forget hym selfe, *quia nihil sapit qui sibi non sapit*. But if at that tyme, I might so boldelye haue presumed vpon your honours fauour, as by your earnestnesse in my behalfe I nowe perceauie I might haue doonne, I wolde haue moued your Honour of an honeste sute (for a lease to be had at the queenes handes) wherof I made hym priuie, and was longe sence so mynded to haue doonne, but that he Deterred me frome the same, alleaging certain commiffioners to haue the Doinges therof, and that therefore no suche thing might be had at her Maiesties handes: Albeit, I haue sythens hard of Dyvers that haue obteyned the like. Notwithstanding (as in my former letters I wrotte to your Honour) my meaning is, so to move your Honour hereof, as neyther to be an importunate suter; or otherwise to thinke the same to be folowed, then shall seeme good vnto your Honour, vnto whos[e] will I submitte my selfe in all thinges: Only putting your Honour in remembrance of the commodious place and tyme that I nowe enioye for that purpose: for the contynuaunce wherof, I was a suter vnto your Honour for your letters vnto the gentleman my frende in whose house I yet remayne, Who also being one that faouereth learninge, and my greate frende, and no lesse gladde to further so good a purpose, is well willing the rather to my vse, to departe frome a piece of his commoditie, in suche sorte as appeareth by the byll herein inclosed. Wherof, further to aduertise your Honour if you shall so thinke it convenient, he will hym selfe repayre vnto your Honour to giue you perfecte informacon of all thinges as touching the same.

And wheras the Master of Savoye tolde me that your Honour sumwhat Doubted that the booke coule not be translated into the Englysshe toonge, I assure you Honour that this I Dare saye without arrogancie, that to translate the variable historie of Plinie into our toonge, I wolde be ashamed to borowe so muche of the Latine as he Dothe of the Greke, although the Latine toonge be accompted ryche, and the Englysshe indigent and barbarous, as it hath byn in tyme past, muche more then it nowe is, before it was enriched and amplyfied by sundry bookes in maner of all artes translated owt of Latine and other toonges into Englysshe. And it is not vnknowne vnto your Honour that the Latins receaving bothe the science of philosophie and phisike of the Grekes, Do still for the most parte in all ther transacions vse the Greke names, in so muche that for the better vnderstandyng of them, one *Otto Brunfelsius*, a learned man, hath writen a large booke Intituled *Onomasticon medicinae*, where he hath these woordes. *Res ipsas, atque artium vocabula, scite, apposite, designatque efferre, atque ad Polyceleti regulam (quod aiunt) exprimere, res est non minus difficilis quam gloriosa. Quo, nullum studii genus, maiori constat molestia. Id quod in causa esse reor, quod hodie tam pauci in ea palastra sese exercent etc.* Aen, it is not vnknowne vnto your Honour that ons all toonges were barbarous and needie, before the knowlege of thinges brought in plentie of woordes and names. Wherby it maye well appeare that men in the first age of the worlde, had a shorte language, consistyng of fewe woordes: which euer after increased by the knowlege and inuention of thinges. Exercise also maketh suche woordes familier, which at the first were Difficulle to be vnderstode. For children at the first (as saith Aristotle) caule all men fathers. But shortly after by exercise, caule them by there names. And I haue learned by experience, that the maryners vse manye

Englyſſhe woordes which were as vnknewen vnto me as the Chaldean toonge before I was conuerfant with them. It maye therefore ſuffice that the woordes and termes of artes and ſciences be knowen to the profeſſours therof, as partly by experience, and partly by the helpe of dictionaries deſcribing them. *Per proprium, genus, et differentiam*, as the logitians teache, and as *Georgius Agricola* vſeth to do in the Germanye toonge: which as well in that parte of philoſophie as in all other, was barbarous and indigent before it was by longe experience brought to perfection. But not to trouble your Honour any longer with this matter, one thinge remaineth wherof I wolde gladlye haue certified your Honour at my laſt being at the courte at Grenewich, if I might haue had conuenient acceſſe vnto you. And this is. That perceauinge your Honour to take pleaſure in the wonderful woorkes of arte and nature (wherin doubtleſſe ſhyneth the ſparke of the diuine Spirit that god hathe gyuen you) I was then mynded to ha[ue] delyuered vnto your Honour this philoſophicall booke, wher[in] is deſcribed (as appeareth in folio. ii.) ſo excellent and precious an experiment, wrought by arte to the ſimilitude of the vniuerfall frame of the worlde made by the omnipotent and greate God of nature, that I beleue the like was neuer doonne ſynſe the creacion of the worlde. And maye therefore in my iudgement, more woorthely be cauled *Microcosmos*, then eyther man or any other creature that euer was made of corporall ſubſtance. *Angelus Politianus* in his epiſtells, deſcribeth an inſtrument cauled *Automaton* made in his tyme in the cite of Florence, obſeruing the exacte mouing of *Primum Mobile* and *Octaua Sphæra*, with alſo the mouinges of the 7 planetes in there ſpheres, in all poyntes agreeable to there mouing in the heauen. Of the like inſtrument alſo, our Roger Bacon wrotte longe before in his booke *De Mirabili poteſtate artis et naturæ*, where he writeth in this maner. *Manus omnium figurarum et rerum figuratarum eſt vt Cæleſtia deſcriberentur ſecundum ſuas longitudines et latitudines in figura corporali, qua mouentur corporaliter motu diurno. Et hæc valeret Regnum homini ſapienti etc.* The which inſtrument doubtleſſe, although it be of a diuine inuention: yet dothe this *Microcosmos* ſo far ſurmount it, as nature paſſeth arte, and as *Motus animalis* paſſeth *Motus violentus*, for as the other is moued only by waight or wynde incloſed (as is ſeene in clockes and organs) ſo is this moued by the fame Spirit of life wherby not only the heauen, but alſo all nature is moued: whoſe mover is god hym ſelſe as faith S. Paule: *Ipfus eſt in quo vivimus, mouemur, et ſumus.* As alſo Aristotle, Plato, and Philo, in there bookes *De Mundo*, do affirme. And eſpecially *Marcus Manilius* in *Aſtronomicis ad Auguſtum Cæſarem*, writing thus:

*Hoc opus immenſi conſtructum corpore Mundi,
Membraque naturæ diuerſa condita forma,
Æris atque ignis, Terræ, pelagique iacentis,
Vis animæ diuina regit: Sacroque meatu
Conſpirat Deus, et tacita ratione gubernat, etc.
Ære libratum vacuo, qui ſuſtinet orbem,* Item *Lucanus*
Totius pars magnus Iouis.

And wheras the autoure that deſcribeth this *Microcosmos* affirmeth that the *Chaos* therof, is *Materia Lapidis Philoſophorum* (which is alſo *Chaos, vel Ouum, vel prima Materia Mundi maioris*) it ſeemeth to agree with that *Cornelius Agrippa* hathe written in his ſeconde booke *De Occulta philoſophia, in Scala Vnitatis*, where he wryteth thus: *Lapis philoſophorum eſt vnum ſubiectum et inſtrumentum omnium virtutum naturalium et tranſnaturalium etc.* And that this greate and diuine ſecreate of this *Microcosmos* maye not ſeeme incredible vnto your Honour, I aſſure you that I that am *Minimus Philoſophorum*, dyd long ſenſe (as I haue to wytnefſe Mr Thomas Whalley, th[e]lder ſonne of Mr Richard Whalley) woork a ſecreate practiſe ſumwhat like vnto this, in maner as ſoloweth. I diſſolued two ſubſtances in two waters. Then I put the waters together in a glaſſe, ſuffering them fo to remayne for a tyme. Then I ſtilled off [t] the water frome the maſſe or *Chaos* leſte of them bothe. And put it on ageyn. And fo dyd dyuers tymes. In fine, the maſſe being diſſolued in the water, I let it reſt all night in a coulede place. In the morning, I founde ſwimming on the water and in the myddelt therof, a little rounde Iland as brode as [a] riall or ſumwhat more, with at the leaſt a hundreth fyluer trees abowt an ynche high, ſo perfectly formed with trunkes, ſtalke, and leaves, all of moſt pure and glyſtering fyluer, that I ſuppoſe no lymne[r] or paynter is able to conſerfecte the like. Then ſhaking the glaſſe, all fell in pieces into the water, and fille[d] it with glyſtering ſparkes, as the firmament ſhyneth w[ith] ſtarres in a cleare wynter nyght. Then putting the glaſſe to a ſofte

fyre vpon warme aſhes, all turned agen into cleare water, which agen being put in a colde place all night, made an Iland with the like trees as before. What this wolde haue byn in fine, god knoweth, and not I. But of this I am ſure, that if the floure of learning of our tyme and ſumtyme Tutor and brother in lawe vnto your Honour Mr [*i.e.*, Sir John] Cheeke, had ſeene any of theſe two ſecreates, he wolde greatlye haue reioyſed: As I knowe the diuine ſparke of knowledge that is in your Honour partly received of hym, will move you to doo the like, fythe to a philoſophicall and vertuous man, there is nothing ſo delectable as to beholde the infinite poure and wyldome of God in his creatures, in the which, his deitie is not only viſible, but in maner palpable, as ſum philoſophers haue written. And as touching theſe matters, I haue red a maruelous ſentence in an olde written booke where theſe woordes are written: *Qui poteſt facere Mediam naturam, poteſt creare Mundos novos.* But to diſcourſe of this oracle, or to interpret the fame, it were to muche to moleſt your Honour therewith: and an argument muche meeter for a ſeconde Socrates then for me. And of theſe ſecreates, writeth Roger Bacon in his booke before alleaged, where he hathe theſe woordes: *Multa ſunt archana admiranda in operibus artis et naturæ: Quæ licet multam utilitatem non habeant (habent vero maximam) vt ſapientibus cognitum eſt) tamen ſpectaculum ineffabile ſapientiæ præbent et poſſunt applicari ad probationem omnium occultorum quibus vulgus inexpertum contradicit, et indicat fieri per opera Dæmoniorum, etc.*

And thus moſt humbly deſyring your Honour to pardon my boldneſſe in writing vnto you, and according vnto your accuſtomed clemencie to accept in good parte this my preſumptuous attempte which only the loue I beare to your vertues hath moued me vnto, my truſt is that theſe things ſhall not be all togyther vnpleaſant vnto your Honour otherwyſe occupied in greate affayres bothe in the courte and common wealthe, as was Plato with King *Dyonifius*, Aristotle with greate Alexander, and Cicero Senator and Conſul of Rome. The eternall God and immortal mover of the greate worlde and the leſſe, preferre your Honour in healthe and proſperitie.

Frome the ſholde byſyde Barnet. The firſt of Auguſt. 1562.

Moſt bownde to your Honour.

RICHARDE EDEN.

Tuæ Dominationi addictus, alios non quæro pœnates.

Sententia Hippocratis.—*In ſecretis et occultis, ſecretus et occultus eſto.*

ENDORSED—Primo Auguſti. 1562. Richard Eden.

Lands. M.S. 101, art. 5.

The advancement which Eden ſought, came almoſt immediately after he wrote this letter: but it is ſad to know, that it ultimately ruined him both in health and fortune, and brought him to a premature grave.

We muſt now introduce a celebrated hiſtorical perſonage, with whoſe wanderings and trials Eden's life was for the next ten years indiffolubly identified; and in the narration of which, we ſhall be telling the ſtory of our Author's life during the period he was on the Continent. In doing which, we thankfully acknowledge our obligations to the *Vie de Jean de Ferrières, Vidame de Chartres, Seigneur de Maligny*, by a Member [Count L. de Baſtard] of the Hiſtorical and Natural Science Society of the Yonne. 170 copies only of which, were printed at Auxerre in 1858.

A *Vidame* was originally the principal lay officer of a biſhop. In France, however, only five biſhops had ſuch an officer, viz., thoſe of Rheims, Amiens, Mans, Laon, and Chartres; together with certain Abbeys. In proceſs of time, however, it became a mere hereditary title; dependent for its renown on the perſon who held it and the wealth whereof he was poſſeſſed.

JEAN DE FERRIÈRES, diſinherited by his father, François de Ferrières, in 1540; became Seigneur de Maligny in 1544; went to Rome in the embaſſy of M. de Urſe in 1549; accompanied the then Vidame, François de Vendome, to the relief of the Siege of Metz in 1553; and went to Piedmont in 1557. François de Vendome having died on 22d December 1560: the Seigneur de Maligny then became Vidame de Chartres; and thereby immenſely rich, if he could have enjoyed his own in peace. But not daring to adminiſter to his vaſt eſtate in perſon, for fear of attracting the attention of his enemies to it: his ſiſter Beraude, by ſecret agreement with him, preſented herſelf as the ſole heir to François de Vendome.

On the breaking out of the Civil Wars, Condé ſent the new Vidame (whoſe riches gave him great influence among the Proteſtant party) over to England, with the Seigneur de Saint Aubin, to induce Elizabeth to join

in so holy and just a quarrel. Being joined by La Haye, they finally arrived in England about 15th August 1562; and after many secret conferences, the Treaty of Hampton Court was signed by them, on 20th September following. *Cott. MS. Cal. E. v. f. 113*, is a copy of this Treaty bearing the signature of the Vidame.

At this moment, Eden, who was an excellent linguist, entered the service of the Vidame. Time pressed. 3000 men under Sir Adrian Poynings, and with them the Vidame and Eden, left Portsmouth on 2d October, and wore in Havre on the 4th: the majority of them to be killed, or die of the plague by the 29th of July following, when Havre was surrendered to the French. Such as survived brought with them to England, the plague which they had there caught.

In the meantime, the Civil Wars had been stopped by the Edict of the Pacification of Ambois on 19th March 1563.

All the goods of the Vidame were pronounced confiscated, under pretence that he had brought the English into Havre. The French Court, while in progress after the Pacification, reached Troyes on the 23d March 1564; when the Vidame [and Eden] joined on the 8th April the Prince de Condé there, and received a simulated welcome from Charles IX. and Catherine de Medecis. Leaving the Court at Vitry on 27th April, he rejoined Condé, at Paris; where he appears to have chiefly resided for the next two or three years.

Eden states below, and at p. xlvii., that he had been in Germany, and, among other places, at Strasburg. He probably accompanied the Vidame there.

A fresh rising of the Protestants occurred on 27th September 1567, when they nearly captured by a *coup de main* the entire French Court. Then came the Battle of St. Denis on 10th November, and the Pacification of Longjumeau on the 23d March 1568.

The Vidame and his newly married wife (Francoise Joubert, widow of Ch. Chabot) and suite [including, it is presumed, Eden] arrived on the Cornish coast, on 28th April 1569; and after some delay, were allowed to come to London. The Vidame was received by the Queen, on 18th July, at Greenwich. On the 23d September 1569, he was burnt in effigy, for the second time within a year, on the *Place de Grève*, at Paris, by an arrêt of the French Parliament.

In consequence of the Peace of St. Germain; the Vidame, after about a year's stay in England, returned in October 1570, by Dieppe, to Paris: where some of his servants being attacked in the street, he retires to Boubige, in Poitou. In February 1572, he was at La Ferté, on private affairs.

Soon afterwards he returned to Paris; where he found all the chiefs of the Huguenot party lulled into a belief of perfect safety, through their trust in the King's word. He, however, did not trust the Court, and would not reside in the city, but in the Faubourg of St. Germain. When questioned for the reason of this; he replied 'that the air of the Faubourgs was better than that of the City, and that of the fields better than that of the Faubourgs.'

Maurevert, the assassin of the Count de Mouy, attempted the assassination of Admiral Coligny; but fails to kill him. Charles IX. had hardly left the wounded Huguenot chief; when the Vidame called on him, and let loose his indignation at the dastard cowardice of the act.

On the next day, Saturday, 23d August, at a meeting of the Protestant chiefs at Coligny's house, the Vidame urged that the Admiral should be conveyed out of Paris; and that the Protestants should quit the city: but he was overruled.

That night, occurred the MASSACRE OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW, commencing on the right bank of the Seine. The Vidame, his brother-in-law Jean de la Fin, and ten others [including probably Eden], who were living on the left bank of the river—warned by the firing—escaped for their lives, riding first to La Ferté. Hearing, however, that the Duke de Guise had sent the Sieur de St. Leger to take them: they hurriedly left the Chateau, and—after some wandering up and down the country—managed to reach the coast; where they found a ship, which carried them safely to England. The Vidame arrived in London on 7th September 1573.

1573. Sept. The Vidame, in a very flowery letter, solicits of the Queen, that Richard Eden, who had given him good and faithful companionship for the space of ten years, may be admitted one of the poor knights of Windsor. He also refers to his erudition, and the experience he had acquired in the secrets of Nature. He further encloses the three following *autographic* memoranda; by the side of which, we have put an English translation:—

I.

Si placeat suæ Maiestati concedere Richardo Eden proximam vocationem Militum illorum, qui Winsori Milites Oratorij vocantur, à Rege Henrico 8^o fundati.

If it may please Her Majesty to grant to Richard Eden the next vacant place among the Knights, who are called the Knights of the Oratory of Windsor, founded by King Henry VIII.

II.

Richardus Eden natione Anglus, ex honesta familia natus in agro Herfordensi, ubi adhuc sororem habet viventem, suæ Maiestati bene cognitam, nempe uxorem equestris ordinis viri Iohannis Butleri de Lamer: A pueritia educatus in bonis literis, studuit in Achademia Cantabrigiensi decem annis sub tutore doctissimo viro, domino Thoma Smyth, nunc Secretario suæ Maiestati, qui de eius eruditione et morum integritate satis testari potest.

Richard Eden, an Englishman, born of a respectable family in Herfordshire,—where he still has a sister living, well known to Her Majesty, being the wife of a knight, John Butler of Lamer,—was well educated as a boy, studied at Cambridge for ten years under that most learned man, Sir Thomas Smyth, now Her Majesty's Secretary [of State], who can testify to his erudition and blameless character.

Deinde a serenissimo Rege Henrico Octavo ab achademia vocatus, ipsius Regis mandato, in Ærario officium obtinuit, ubi usque ad mortem Regis, hoc est duobus annis, permansit; qui etiam moriens illius non immemor assignavit illi domus distillatorii officium. Quod tamen Rege mortuo Sumerseti Dux illi concessit qui nunc fruitur.

Afterwards, being summoned from the University by the most serene King Henry VIII., he held, by his order, an office in the Treasury, where he remained for two years until the King's death; who, when dying, did not forget him, but assigned to him the office of the distillery. After the King's death, the Duke of Somerset granted the office to the present holder.

Postea uxorem duxit, ex qua in xiiij. annis xij. infantes generavit, ut vel hac ratione videatur de patria bene meritus.

Afterwards he married, and in fourteen years begot twelve children, so that for this reason also he seems to deserve well of his country.

Qui etiam tempore aliquot Reipublicæ utiles libros ex sermone Latino Italico Hispanico traduxit, qui typis impressi extant, ut *Decades de Novo Orbe*, liber iusti voluminus, vizt. 600 foliorum; ac deinde librum de Arte Navigandi a Martino Cortesio in lingua Hispanica ad Carolum V. scriptum; insuper ex Pyrotechnia Italica multa de rebus metallicis, quæ antea in nostra lingua exitere.

At this time he translated from the Latin, Italian, and Spanish several books useful to the State, which are still in print, as *Decades de Novo Orbe*, a book of good size, viz. six hundred folios; and a book *De Arte Navigandi*, written by Martin Cortes to Charles V. in Spanish; and in addition many portions of *Pyrotechnia Italica* concerning metals; which did not exist before in our language.

Tempore vero Mariæ Reginæ Hispanorum quorundam nobilium favore, denuo in Regis Philippi Ærarium electus: hereseos apud Wintoniense Episcopum accusatus a Watsone Lincolnensi Episcopo, officio privatus est.

In the time of Queen Mary, he was again placed in the Treasury of King Phillip, through the favour of certain Spanish nobles: but being accused of heresy before [Gardiner] the Bishop of Winchester by Watson, Bishop of Lincoln; he was deprived of his office.

Mortua verò uxore, illius fama ad illustrissimi Domini Vidami aures pervenit. Cum quo, quomodo his x. annis et amplius in Germania et Gallia vixerit in utraque fortuna, nec mercenarius nec desertor, et semper illi charissimus, ipsemet Dominus Vidamus pro sua humanitate, veritate testimonium feret. A quo etiam multis amplissimis muneribus donatus, si tamen non ditatus nulla profecto illustrissimi Domini incuria vel

After the death of his wife, his repute came to the ears of the most illustrious Lord the Vidame. How he lived [with him] for ten years and more in Germany and France, with varying fortune, neither a mercenary nor a deserter, and always most dear to him; the Lord Vidame himself will kindly bear witness. From whom also he received many large gifts. And assuredly it is not through carelessness or oblivion on

oblivio in causa fuit, sed sola volubilis et nouerca fortuna culpa.

Nunc vero, senio affectus, et corporis infirmitate, cogitur peregrinandi finem facere; nihil magis habens in votis quam ut suae Maiestatis gratia et favore, possit tandem in patria honestis studiis et Reipublice utilibus vitam finire. Nulla vero magnarum divitiarum, aut honoris ambitione flagrans solam vitam tranquillam et studiis commodam exoptat.

Deus optimus maximus suam Celsitudinem semper seruet incolumen.

the part of his illustrious Lord, but only in consequence of changeful and adverse fortune; that he was not enriched.

Now affected by age and bodily infirmity, he is obliged to make an end of wandering; desiring nothing more than, by Her Majesty's favour, to end his life in his own country, in honourable studies, and useful to the State. He has no ambition for great riches or honour; but only desires a quiet life, suitable for study.

May God ever preserve Her Majesty.

III.

Quandoquidem maxima pars hominum non est semper melior pars, sed reperiuntur quamplures Ardeliones quibus nihil est magis gratum quam ex quavis leuissima occasione bonos viros calumniari. Ideoque ut agni a luporum faucibus in tuto vivant, necessum erit ut leonis animalium regis, hoc est, Regia autoritate tueantur.

Quis enim nunc in Anglia potest Paracelsi admiranda medicamenta ex metallis et mineralibus componere (quae cum Alchimia aliquo modo symbolizantur) nisi statim ab ignaris et calumniatoribus Alchimiae legibus prohibita infamiam et periculum incurrat. Cui malo obuiando Principis diplomatae opus erit. Nec dubito quin quum Brocardo multisque aliis peregrinis libere permittitur exercere. Idem mihi aequiori iudicio Principis autoritate concedatur.

There were thirteen poor knights of Windsor, whose annual allowance was paid by the Dean of Windsor. It consisted of £18:5s. in money; a gown or coat of red cloth; and a blue or purple cloth mantle with the badge of St. George embroidered on the left sleeve. Eden's application does not appear to have been successful.—See Tighe and Davis, *Annals of Windsor*, i. 223. *Ed.* 1858.

1573. Sir W. Winter is knighted this year.—See Sylvanus Morgan's *Sphere of Gentry*, Book 3, p. 14, *Ed.* 1661.

1574. Win-
tertide. Eden writes the following dedication to Sir W. Winter of his translation of John Taisner's book *De natura magnetis, &c.*, which he designed as a complement to a new edition of his previous translation of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Naviar*. Though written at this time, it did not appear in print for four or five years afterwards, in consequence of the successive deaths of Eden, Richard Jugge the printer, and his son John Jugge.

The most important allusion in it is the account of Sebastian Cabot's death, the only one on record.

A very necessarie and profitable Booke concerninge Nauigation, compiled in Latin by *Ioannes Taisnerus*, a publike professor in Rome, Ferrara, and other Vniuersities in Italie of the Mathematicales, named a treatise *Of continuall motions*. Translated into English, by Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London by Richarde Jugge.

To the ryght woorshipfull Syr Wylliam Wynter, Knyght, Maister of the Ordinaunce of the Queenes Maiesties Shippes, and Surueyor of the sayd Shippes, Richarde Eden wyssheth health and prosperitie.



It is nowe about twelue yeeres paste (gentle Maister Wynter) since the curtesie and fauour which long before I founde at your hande, moued me no lesse for the good wyll that I haue euer borne you and your vertues, to excogitate or deuise somethyng, within the compasse of my poore abilitie, that myght be a witnesse, and as it were a seale, to testifie both that I haue not forgotten your gentleneffe, and also how defyrus I am to pay the debtes of frendeshyp which then I promised you, and also attempted to performe: But beyng at that tyme preuented, by meanes of my sodayne departyng out of Englande, with my good Lorde the *Vidame*, with whom I remayned for the space of ten yeeres, vntyll the calamities of that miserable cuntry, with losse of goods, and danger of lyfe, hath dryuen me home agayne into my natie cuntry: Where syndyng my selfe at some leysure, and defyrus to passe fourth parte of my tyme in some honest exercise, which myght be profytable to many, domagable to none, and a meanes to geat me newe freendes, the olde in my so long absence, in maner vtterly wasted: I chaunced in the meane tyme, to meete with my olde acquayntance and freend, Richard Iugge, Printer to the Queenes Maiestie, who had many yeeres before, printed the Booke of *Marten Cortes*, of the Art of Nauigation, by me translated out of Spanyshe tongue. Whereof, hauyng with him some conference, he declared that he woulde prynt that booke agayne, yf I woulde take the paynes to deuise some addition touchyng the fame matter, that myght be ioyned thereto. At whiche tyme, hauyng with me in the Latine tongue, these booke here folowyng printed, whiche I brought with me out of Francke, I soone agreed to his honest request, to translate them into Englyshe: Whiche beyng accomplyshed, this onely remayned, accordyng to the common custome, to consecrate and dedicate the fame to some worthie personage, whose fame, auc[t]horitie, and dignitie, myght defende them from the euyl tongues of such as are more redie rather to reprooue other mens dooynges, then to doo any good them selues. And therefore (gentle Maister Wynter) knowing your authoritie and fame in well deferyng, and honorable seruice vnto your Prince and Cuntry, to be suche as all men thynke so well of, and so greatlye esteeme, to whom (rather then to you) may I dedicate this booke of Nauigation? In confyderation whereof, and the hope that I haue in your approoued curtesie, fauourably to accept this dedication, as proceed[ing] from one that desyreth nothyng more then to doo you seruice, and remayne in your grace, I shall thynke my trauayle wel bestowed, and suffieiently recompenced, yf it shall please you to accept the fame as thankfully, as I wyllingly offer it vnto you.

For yf there be any thyng in me, wherein I maye by good reafon please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singuler vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof I mee selfe haue litle knowledge, as are Geometric, Aftronomie, Architecture, Muficke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke: Of the whiche, this our age maye seeme not onely to contende with the Auncientes, but also in many goodly inuentions of Art and wyt, farre to excede them. For (not to speake agaynft all the marueylous inuentions of our tyme) what of theirs is to be compared to the Artes of Printyng, makyng of Gunnes, Fyre woorkes, of sundry kyndes of artificiall Fyres, of suche marueylous force, that mountaynes of mofte harde rocks and stones, are not able to resyft their violence, but are by them broken in peeces, and thrown into the ayre with suche violence, that neyther the spirite of *Demogorgon*, or the thunderboltes of infernal *Pluto* can doo the lyke. What shoulde I here speake of the woonderfull inuentions of *Fartalio*, in his booke *De Arte maiori*? or of many other, whereof *Vannucius Beringocius* wryteth in his booke, entituled, *Pyrotechnia*. As touchyng which terrible inuentions, and the lyke, although some men be of opinion that they were inuented by the insligation of the deuyll, for the destruction of mankynde: yet other weyghyng the matter more indifferently thynke that the inuention of Gunnes hath ben the fauyng of many mens lyues, because before the vse of them, men were not woont so long tyme to lye batteryng in the besegyng of Townes or Fortrefes, but in short space to come to hande strokes, and to foughten feeldes, to the great slaughter of great multitudes. And seeyng that nowe our enemies the Turkes, and

other Infidels, haue the vse of these deuilythe inuentions (as they name them) it may be thought requisite for vs, agaynst suche deuylles to vse also the lyke deuilythe inuentions, lest refusing the fame, and geuyng place to euyl, we shoulde wyllyngly suffer the kyngdome of the deuyll to triumphe ouer vs, not otherwyse able to refyft, and much lesse to ouercome so puiffant and horrible enimies (except beyde al hope) myght aryse in our defence some newe Moyfes, or Elias, or the Priestes of Iericho, whiche onely with the noyfe and founde of Hornes or Trumpettes ouerthrewe the walles of the towne. Neyther wyl the example of Dauid and Goliath, or of Samson and the Philistines, serue our turne at this tyme, although I beleuee that the arme of the Lorde is not weakened, yf there lacked not a Moyfes with his rodde, and woorthie Assistentes, which myght helpe to holde vp his wecrye arme.

But to returne to speake of ingens, and ingenions inuentions, whiche inuented and vsed to the glorie of God, and defence of his people, against the furie and tyrannie of Infidelles, they may as woorthly be called the gyftes of God, as were the inuentions and Art of them that buylded eyther the Temple of Hierusalem, or the Arke of God: And

Exod. xxxv. yet is it there wrytten of those Artificers, that God gaue them the spirite of knowledge and cunning in suche Artes.

Bezaleel and Ahaliab. And therefore I thinke it may also be sayde without offence, that the knowledge of *Archimedes*, and other men in suche commendable inuentions, are the gyftes of God, for as muche as the gyftes of God are free, and not bounde to any nation or person.

And yf it may be graunted that the spirites of men, or the spirite of God in men, may be diuided (as was the spirite of Moyfes to twelue other) or otherwyse that the spirites of dead men may reuiue in other (after the opinion and transanimation of *Pythagoras*) we may thinke that the soule of *Archimedes* was reuiued in *Besson*, that excellent Geometer of our tyme, whom I knewe in Fraunce the Maister of the engins to the Freuche kyng, Charles the nienth, vnder whom that lamentable slaughter at Paris was committed, in the whiche were slayne so many noble men. Whiche crueltie the sayde *Besson* abhorryng, fled hyther into England, and here dyed, in the yeere. 1573. and left in witnesse of his excellencie in that Art, a booke in prynt, conteynyng the fourmes or portractes of fyxtie engins of marueylous strange and profytable deuice, for diuers commodious and necessary vses. Of the whiche, for as muche as three of them, that is to meane, the 54. 57. and 60. be engins cheefely parteynyng vnto Shyppes, it shall not be from my purpose here to make a breefe rehearal of them.

The 54. therefore (as he wryteth) is an engin not vnlyke vnto that whiche in auncient tyme *Archimedes* inuented for the *Syracusians*, wherewith a man with the strength of onely one hande, by helpe of the instrument called *Trispaiston* (which in our tongue some cal an endless Scruce), brought a Shyp of marueylous greatnesse from the lande into the sea, in the syght of kyng *Hirou*, and an infinite multitude, whiche with all their force coulde not doo the fame. &c. Of the which also, our country man, Roger Bacon, a great Philosopher (and no Nicromancer, as that ignorant age flaudered him) seemed to haue had some knowledge: For in his booke of the marueylous power of Art and Nature, he maketh

mention of an Instrument (as farre as I remember) no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith one man myght drawe to hym the strength of three hundred men. And I well remember, that at my beyng in Fraunce, I hearde credible

reporte, that the Earle of *Rocumdoise*, an Almaine, made an engin, wherewith the sayde kyng Charles when he was but. xvi. yeeres of age, lyfted from the grounde a weyght, whiche the strongest man in the court was not able to remooue. Almoste the lyke deuice we vse in the bendyng of a Crossebowe. Also at my being in Germanie in the cite of *Strofburge*, a woorthy and learned Gentleman, *Monsieur de Saleno*, tolde me that in that cite one had inuented an engin of iron, no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith to fastenyng a rope, with a hooke of iron, and castyng the hooke vpon a wal, tree, or other place, where it myght take holde, he coulde with that engin lyft hym selfe vp to the wal, or other place. But to returne to the other two engins of *Besson*, parteynyng to our purpose. Therefore the 60. fygure (as he there wryteth) is the inuention of an engin, scarcely credible, wherewith by ballance and easie motion, beyond the order of nature, a Shyp may be so framed and gouerned, that in the calme sea it shall mooue forward, and in litle wynde hasten the course, and in too much

wynde temper and moderate the same: A thyng woorth the knowledge to a kyng, as he sayeth. Of the thyrde engin, which is the 57. fygure of his booke, he wryteth thus. An Artifice not yet diuulgate or set forth, whiche placed in the pompe of a Shyp, whyther the water hath recourse, and mooued by the motion of the Shyp, with wheelles and weyghtes, dooth exactly shewe what space the Shyp hath gone. &c. By whiche description, some doo vnderstand that the knowledge of the longitude myght so be founde, a thyng doubtlesse greatly to be desyred, and hitherto not certaynely knowen, although *Sebastian Cabot* on his death bed told me that he had the knowledge thereof by diuine reuelation, yet so, that he myght not teache any man. But I thinke that the good olde man, in that extreme age, somewhat doted, and had not yet euen in the article of death, vtterly shaken of all worldlye wayne glorie.

As touchyng whiche knowledge of the longitude, to rehearse the saying of that excellent learned man, *Iohannes Fernelius*, in his incomparable booke *De abditis rerum causis*, where in the Preface to King Henrie of Fraunce, he writeth in this manner. We haue put our helpyng hande to the Arte of Nauigation and Geographie: forby obseruation of the houres of the Equinoctialles, we haue inuented howe, in what so euer region or place of the worlde a man shall be, he may knowe in what longitude it is: which certaynly we haue not taken of the fountaynes of the auncientes, but fyrste, of all other (as I thinke) haue drawn it of our ryuers, as our owne inuention. &c. So that (saith he) whiche way so euer you turne your eyes, you may se that the posteritie hath not ryotously wasted the inheritance of Artes and sciences, left them by their predecessors, but haue greatly encreased the fame, and inuented other: For certaynly, the multitude of thynges incomprehensible, is infinite, and so therefore inuentions must needes also be infinite, and without ende. And therefore, as touchyng this thing (saith he) to speake freely what I thinke, they seeme to me to offende as muche, whiche contende that the auncientes haue inuented and comprehended all thynges, as doo they whiche attribute not vnto them the fyrst inuentions, so depriuyng them of theyr right possession. For whereas now by the benefite of almighty God (who hath geuen vs his Chryste, and with hym all good thynges) the lyght of trneth shyneth in our vnderstandyng by godly inspiration, there is no iust cause why we shoulde in suche thynges thinke vs inferior to the auncientes. Of which Argument, who lysteth may reade more in the sayde Epistle of *Fernelius*.

And for as much as I haue made mention of such inuentions, it shall not be from the purpose, to describe the goodly instrument wherof *Angelus Policianus* in the fourth booke of Epistles to *Fran-* An instrument in motion agreeyng with the motion of the heauen. Anno Domo. 1584.
cifus Casa, wryteth in this manner, I haue receyued your Epistle, wherein you signifie vnto me, that you haue hearde of the strange engine or instrument *Automaton* inuented, and made of late by one Laurence a Florentine: in the which is expressed the course and motions of the Planettes, conformable and agreeyng with the motions of heauen: And that (for as muche as the reporte thereof is hardly beleueed) you greatly desyre that I should wryte vnto you, what certayne knowledge I haue of that thing, wherein I am redie to obey your request. And although nowe it be long since I sawe it, yet as farre as I beare in memorie, I wyll brecefely declare the fourme, reason, and vse thereof. And yf the description of it shall seeme vnto you somewhat obscure, you shall not ascribe it altogether to my declaration, but partly to the subtiltie and noultie of the thyng. It is in fourme of a square pyller, sharpe towarde the top, in maner of a *Pryamis*, of the height of almost three cubites: ouer and aboue it, in maner of a couer, is a flat or playne rounde plate of gylted copper, garnyshed with sundry colours, on whose other part is expressed the whole course of the Planettes, and whose dimention or meafure is somewhat shorter then a cubite, and is within turned or moued with certayne litle denticle wheelles, an immouable circle comprehending the hyghest border or margent, and diuided with the spaces of xxiiii. houres within it, in the hyghest turnyng rundel, the twelue signes are discerned by three degrees. Further, within are seene eyght rundels, in maner all of one greatnesse. Of these, two obteyne the myddle poynt, the one fastened in the other, so that the lowest beyng somewhat bygger, representeth the Sunne, and the hygher the Moone. From the Sunne a beame comyng to the circle, fleweth in it the houres: and in the Zodiacke, the monethes, dayes and number of degrees, and also the true and half motion of the Sunne. From the Moone also procedeth a pyne, or wyre, whiche beneathe or downward in the border or margent of the

greatest rundell, sheweth the houres : and passing by the center of the Epicycle of the Moone, and extending to the Zodiacke, sheweth the halfe motion of his Planet. Another also rysyng from thence, and cutting the border of the center of the Moone (that is of the Epicycle) sheweth her true place, whereby are seene the slownesse, swyftnesse, al motions and courses, coniunctions also, and ful Moones. About these are fyxe other rundels: of the whiche, one, whom they calle the head and tayle of the Dragon, sheweth the Eclipses both of the Sunne and Moone. The other are attributed to the Planets: from euery of whiche, proceede two poyntes, assignyng the motions (as we haue sayd) of the Moone: but they also goe backwarde, whiche chaunceth not in the Moone, whose Eelypse is moued contrarywyse. And thus the reason of coniunctions, departynges, and latitudes, is manifest in all. There is also an other border lyke vnto a Zodiacke, cutting or diuidyng vpwarde or aboue, those fyxe litle rundels (whereof we haue spoken) being the rundels of the Planettes: whereby appeareth the degrees of the East signes, and the spaces of the dayes (that is to say) at what houre the Sunne riseth, by the whiche, euery of the Planettes are carried in their rundels or circles by course, in the day tyme to the East, and in the nyght to the West. Agayne contrarywyse, the greatest rundel of al, draweth with it al the Planettes, in the nyght to the East, and in the day to the West, in the space of. 24. houres. Az which, to agree with the motions of heauen, both reason and experience doo confyrme. And therefore ought ye not to marueyle, yf these thynges seeme incredible to many. For (as sayth the wyfe Prouerbe) sayth is slowlye geuen to great thynges, for euen we scarcely beleue our owne eyes, when we see suche thynges. And therefore, whereas in tyme past I read, that suche a lyke instrument was made by *Archimedes*, my faith yet fayled me to geue credite to so great an Aucthour, which thyng neuerthelesse this our Florentine hath performed. The worke doubtlesse beyng of such excellence, that all prayse is inferior to it, and can not therefore for the woorthynesse thereof be otherwyse praised, then to say that it passeth all prayse. The Artificer him selfe also being a man of such integritie of maners, that the funne is nothing inferior to the excellencie of his wyt: in so much that he may seeme a man sent from heauen, where he learned the makynge of this heauen, by the example of the other. Hytherto *Policianus*. Of the lyke instrument, Roger Bacon also maketh mention in his fayde booke, of the maruellous power of Art and Nature, affyrmyng the same to be woorth a kyngdome to a wyfe man.

But for as muche as the subiect whiche I haue nowe in hande, is chiefly touchyng inuentions parteynyng to Shyppes, and the Art of Nauigation, I thinke good to speake somewhat of the inuention of a certayne Italian wryter, named *Leonardo Fiorauanti*, who in his booke, entitled Lib. 3. Ca. 18. *Specchio de scientia vniuersale*, doeth greatly glory in the inuention of Shyppes, whiche can not perylye cyther on the sea, or the lande, affyrmyng that the lyke was neuer inuented since the creation of the worlde. But I feare me, lest vayne glorie of discouryng in the Italian tongue, hath caused him more then needes, to commende his owne inuention, as for the moste parte is the maner of the Italian writers. Therefore committing the iudgement hereof to men of greater experience and knowledge in these thynges, I wyl onely translate his woordes, whereby in the booke before named, he describeth the fayde Shyppe in this maner. Take beames of Fyre, or Pyne tree, which of their owne nature can neuer goe downe, or syncke, or abyde vnder the water, and with these beames forme an engine (*Machina*, yf I may so call it) of the length of three score foote, and of the breadth of twentie foote, and of the heygth of fyxe foote, laying the fyrste ranke in length, and the other trauese, or ouerthwarte, and the thyrde againe in length, fashionyng the fore parte lyke vnto other Shyppes, and in lyke manner, bryngyng the poupe or hynder parte to good forme: then with such irons as apparteyne, hynde it, and strengthen it in suche maner that it can not breake. And vpon this frame or fundation buylde your Shyppe, of suche fashon as you thinke best. &c. It were here too long to rehearse with what proude woordes and ostentation he magnifieth this inuention. But whether this frame or engine shoulde be bylden vpon the keele or hottome of the Shyp, or otherwyse, I commit it to them of better iudgement, as I haue fayde.

But wheras it may for this tyme fuffise to haue wrytten thus muche of these thynges, I wyl make an ende with onely a breefe rehearful of the inuention and encrease of the Art of Nauigation. After that the Art of Nauigation was founde, euery man began to chalenge vnto hym the

dominion of the sea, and there to dwel and kepe warre euen as on the land. *Minos* (as wryteth *Strabo*) was the fyrst that ruled on the sea, whiche neuerthelesse, other ascribe to *Neptunus*, who fyrst founde the Art of Nauigation, and was therefore (as wryteth *Diodorus*) appoynted by *Saturnus* to be Admiral of the fyrste Naue: and thereby the posteritie afterwarde ascribed to him the gouernaunce of the sea, and named him the God thereof. After whom the *Cretenses* euer were esteemed most expert in the Art of Nauigation. But (as wryteth *Plinie*) boates were fyrst inuented, and with them was the fyrste saylyng in the Ilandes of the redde sea, vnder kyng *Erythra*, as also witnesseth *Quintilian*, sayyng, If none had proceeded further then the inuentions of our predeceffors, we had had nothyng in the Poets aboute *Andronicus*, and nothing in histories aboute the *Annales* or Cronicles of Bysshoppes, and had yet haue fayled in trouges or in boates. Other haue ascribed this inuention to diuers other nations and persons, as to the Troians and Mysians in *Helleponto*, and also that the ancient Britanes made boates of leather or hydes, and fayled with them in the Ocean sea. *Plinie* wryteth, that *Danaus* was the fyrst that brought a Shyppe out of Grece into Egypt. Some also geue the fame to *Minerua*. But most ryghtfully, the inuention both of the Shyp, and Art of Nauigation, is ascribed to Noe, who (as wryteth *Eusebus*) was longe before *Neptune* or *Danaus*. For doubtlesse (sayth he) the Arke of Noe was none other then a Shyp, and the fyrste and onely exemplar of all other Shyppes or vesselles of saylyng. Also the moste ancient wryter *Berosus* the Chaldean (as wryteth *Iosephus*) calleth the Arke of Noe, a Shyp. The same *Iosephus* also sayth, that the Nephues of Noe, departyng to inhabite diuers partes of the worlde, vsed many Shyppes. &c. Long after Noe, the *Tyrians* were counted most expert in the Arte of Nauigation: and after them, diuers other nations. For whereas no Art is so perfect, but may receaue encrease, hereof doth it folowe, that this Art also hath been greatly augmented, and brought to further perfection by witty inuentions of the posteritie, euen vnto our age: whereof, who so lysteth to know further more particularly who inuented all other partes and instrumentes parteynyng to al fortes of Shyppes, and Art of Nauigation, may read ye thyrde booke of *Polidor Virgil*, Cap. xv. *De Inuentorib. Rer.* and *Baysius, de re nauali*.

This gentle Maister Wynter, beseechyng your woorthyp to take in good part this testimonie of my thankfull hart (suche as it is) I beseeche the immortall God to prosper all your dooings to his honor, and the benefite of your Countrey.

1576. The last work which it was permitted to Eden to undertake, was an English translation from a Latin version of Ludovico Barthe'ma's *Travels in the East* in 1503, which was posthumously printed by R. Wille, the next year. He was also endeavouring to collect the Reports of the Agents of the Moscovy Company, which form so important a part of Hakluyt's Collection: when death exchanged his earthly life of troubles and labours, for, we can but think, the blessed peace of heavenly rest.

I am indebted to my friend the late Mr. C. Bridger, Hon. Mem. of the Soc. of Ant. of Newcastle, for the following note:

1576. July 20. Letters of Administration were granted, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, to the estate of Richard Eden, of the parish of St Dunstan's in the East, (the same parish in which Sir John Hawkins lived), in favour of Alban Eden, his son.

1577. Summer. R. Willis published a second and altered edition of the Third Work here reprinted, under the title of *The History of Trauayle in the West and East Indies, &c.*

1586. April. It would appear from T. A. D'Aubigne's *Histoire Universelle*, iii. book i. c. 3, p. 15, Ed. 1620, that the Vidame, after many wanderings, was captured by one Captain Carles: who (not crediting that a member of so good a family was unable to pay his ransom) suffered this distinguished Nobleman, whom the King of Navarre had called his Uncle, and who was now about sixty-six years; to die like a dog, while bound to the magazine at the bottom of the hold of his galley. A prisoner so placed would be situated immediately below the planking of the passage which extended between the two rows of galley slaves from the prow to the stern of the galley: and therefore, when the galley was in motion, would ceaselessly suffer from all the noise of the sixty or eighty rowers; from whom he would be separated, only by the thickness of the planking above his head.

Richard Eden's
Contributions to our Literature,
during the reigns of
Edward VI. and Mary.


1553-1555 A. D.

[The Second English book on America.]

A treatyse of the newe *India*,
with other newe founde landes
and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as
westwarde, as they are knowen
and found in these oure dayes,
after the descripcion of Sebas-
tian Munster in his booke of vni-
uersall Cosmographie: wherin the
diligent reader may see the good
successe and rewarde of noble
and honeste enterpryses,

by the which not only world-
ly ryches are obtayned,
but also God is glor-
ified, and the Chri-
stian fayth en-
larged.

Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By
Rycharde Eden.

 *Præter spem sub spe.*

¶ TO THE RIGHT HYGHE AND MIGHTY PRINCE,
THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLANDE,
HYS GRACE.



Reade in auncient writers (most noble prince) how that mightie kyng and conquerour of the world, Alexander the great, at such tyme as he beheld ye tombe of fearse Achilles, and therewith called to his remembraunce howe excellently the Poet Homere had set forth his heroical factes, which notwithstanding he thoughte to be muche inferiour vnto his, he sighed and sayde: Oh the most fortunate, which haste founde suche a trompe to magnifi thi doinges, meaning hereby, that the fame of Achilles was no lesse notable to hys posteritie by homers writing, then it was in hys lyfe tyme by hys owne marciall affayres. Wherby we maye perceue such magnanimitie to haue ben in our prediceffours, men of noble and stout courage, yat they thought it not sufficiente in their life time to deserue prayfe and honour, except the fame might also redounde to theyr posteritie, yat they mighte therby bee encouraged to do the like. Whyche thing truely hath ben ye cause, yat in al ages noble enterprifes haue ben commended, and such as haue attempted ye fame, haue bene honoured. Wherfore if honest commendacions be a iust reward dew to noble enterprifes, so much do they robbe and spoyle from ye dignitie therof, which in any poynt diminishe the fame: no lesse confoundinge the order of thinges, than he whiche cloteth an ape in purple, and a king in fackcloth. This I speake ye rather, beecause there chaunfed of late to come to my handes, a shiete of printed paper, (more worthy so to bee called then a boke) entytuled of the newe founde landes. The whyche tytyle when I readde, as one not vtterlye ignoraunt hereof, hauynge before in my tyme readde *Decades*, and also the nauigations *de nouo orbe*, there seemed too me no lesse inequalitye betwene the tytyle and the booke, then if a man woulde professe to wryte of Englande, and entreated onelye of Trumpington a village wythin a myle of Cambrydge. Wherfore partelye moued [by] the good affeccion, whyche I haue euer borne to the science of Cosmographie, whyche entreately of the descripcion of the worlde, whereof the newe founde landes are no smal part, and much more by ye good wyll, whych of duetie I beare to my natyue countrey and countreyemen, which haue of late to their great praife (whatsoever succede) attempted with new viages to serche ye seas and newe found landes, I thought it worthy my trauayle, to their better comfort, (as one not otherwise able to further theyr enterprife) to translate this boke oute of latin into Englishe. The which, albeit it do not so largely or particulerlye entreate of euery part, region or commoditie of ye sayd new found landes, as the worthines of the thing might requyre: yet sure I am that aswel they which set forth or take vpon them this viage, as also they which shal hereafter attempt ye lyke, may in this smal boke as in a little glasse, see some cleare light, not only how to learne by the example, dammage, good successe,

and adventures of other, how to behaue them felues and direct theyr viage to their most commoditie, but also if dew successe herein shoulde not chaunce according vnto theyr hope and expectation (as oftentimes chanceth in great affaires,) yet not for one foyle or fal, so to be difmayd as with shame and dishonor to leaue wyth losse, but rather to the death to persist in a godly, honeste, and lawful purpose, knowing that whereas one death is dewe to nature, the fame is more honourably spent in such attemptes as may be to the glorye of God and commoditie of our cuntry, then in soft beddes at home, among the teares and weping of women. Which manlye courage (like vnto that which hath ben seen and proued in your grace, aswell in forene realmes, as also in this oure cuntry) yf it had not been wanting in other in these our dayes, at suche time as our fouereigne Lord of noble memorie Kinge Henry the. viij. about the same yere of his raygne, furnished and sent forth certen shippes vnder the gouernaunce of Sebastian Cabot yet liuing, and one fyr Thomas Perte, whose faynt heart was the cause that that viage toke none effect, yf (I say) such manly courage whereof we haue spoken, had not at that tyme bene wanting, it myghte happelye haue comen to passe, that that riche treasurye called *Perularia*, (which is now in Spayne in the citie of Ciuile, and so named, for that in it is kepte the infinite ryches brought thither from the newe found land of *Peru*,) myght longe since haue bene in the towre of London, to the kinges great honoure and welth of this his realme. What riches the Emperoure hath gotten oute of all the newe founde landes, it may wel appeare, wheras onlye in the Ilandes of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and other Ilandes there aboute, were gathered in two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of gold as youre grace maye reade in this boke, in the description of the Ilandes. Yet speake I here nothyng of perles, precious stoness, and spices. Neyther yet of the greate aboundaunce of golde, whiche is engendred almost in al regions neare vnto the *Æquinoctial* line. And whereas I am aduertised yat youre grace haue bene a greate fortherer of thys viage, (as you haue bene euer studious for the commoditie of your cuntry,) I thought my trauayl herein coulde no wayes be more worthely bestowed, then to dedicate the same vnto your grace: Most humbly desiringe youre honoure so to accepte mine intente herein, as one whose good will hath not wanted to gratifie your grace with a better thing if mine abilitie were greater. Thus Almighty God preferue your grace in health and honour long to continue.

¶ Your graces poore orator Rychard Eden.

¶ RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



Hereas in this Booke (welbeloued Reader) thou mayest reade many straunge thinges, and in maner incredible, except the fame were proued most certayn by dayly experience, and approued auctoritie, (as shall hereafter appeare) I thought it good for thy better instruction to make this Preface, wherby thou mightest more playnly and sensibly comprehend the reasons and causes, yf not of al, yet of some of the chiefeft thinges, which are conteyned in the same. Therefore wheras thou shalt reade of the great abundaunce of gold, precious stoncs and spices, which the Spaniardes and Portugales haue brought from the South partes of the worlde, as from the newe founde landes and Ilandes, the sodeyn straungenes or greatnes of the thing shal not so much amase thy wittes, and gender in thee incrudelitie, yf thou consider the saying of wyse Salomon, who affyrmeth yat there is no new thing vnder the Sunne, and that the thing that hath been, cometh to passe again: which saying doeth greatly confyrme the trueth, of such thinges as are spoken

of in this Boke, wheras the same perhappes to some men might otherwyse seme in maner incredible, yf the lyke had not been sene in tyme paste, and approued by auctoritie of moste holy scripture, which declaring the great wysdom, ryches, and noble viages of King Salomon, sayth that God gaue him wysdom and vnderstanding exceding muche, and a large heart, and that he prepared a nauie of shippes, in the porte of *Azion Gaber*, by the brinke of the redde sea, which sayled to *Ophir*, and brought from thence. xxi. score hundreth (which is. xlii.M. [forty-two thousand]) weyght of golde. Agayne, that the weyghte of golde which was broughte to Salomon in one yere, was. vi. hundreth, thre score and. vi. talentes of gold, wheras the Hebrue talente, called *Talente Hebraicum sanctuarij*, was of our sterling money 500. ponde, and *Talent Hebraicum uulgare*, was halfe so much. Lykewyse yat siluer was nothing worth in the dayes of Salomon, and yat he made siluer and gold in Hierusalem as plentious as stoncs Agayn, that he ouerlayd the house of the Lord with precious stoncs beautifully, and the gold wherwith he couered it, was golde of *Paruaim*. Also that the kinges nauie of shippes went once in thre yere to *Tharsis*, and brought Gold, Siluer, Apes, Peacockes, and Elephantes teeth. Which wordes surely seme so to confirme such thinges as are spoken of in the nauigacions wherof this boke entreateth, that nothinge can make more for the truth of the same: and briefly to speake of the places whether Salomons shippes sayled for Gold, as *Tharsis* and *Ophir*. This ought to be confydered for a general rule, that nearest vnto the south partes of the world betwene the two Tropikes vnder ye *Equinoctial* or burning lyne, where the sunne is of greatest forse, is the chiefeft place where gold is engendred, although it be sometymes founde in colde regions as in Scotland, in Crayford more, likewyse in Hungary, yet nether pure of it self, nor in great quantitie: the reason whereof is largely declared in the Bookes of George Agric, and Albertus Magnus. And wheras it is written in ye Boke of Kinges in the Actes of Salomon that he prepared his shippes in *Azion Gaber*, beyng by the brinke of the readde sea, and sayled from thence to *Ophir* for Golde, it is appraunt, that (howfoeuer the names of thinges haue altered and perished in tyme) he sayled from thence southwarde towarde the Equinoctial lyne, for asmuche as there is none other passage oute of the narrowesse of the readde sea, but onely into the mayne South sea, by the which the Portugales euen at this daye make theyr viage to *Calicut*, *Samotra*, *Madagascar*, and such other Ilandes in the South east partes of the worlde, where Golde, Spyces, Apes, and Elephantes are nowe founde in lyke manner. But as for *Tharsis* beyng a cytye of *Cilicia* in Asia the lesse and the natiue countreye of S. Paule the Apostle, and situate muche more toward the North, then is Iudea, and in maner directlye ouer againste Iudea on the otherfyde of the sea called Mare Mediteraneum, and in the same clime, in the which standeth the Ilande of Sicilia, and the cytie of Ciuille in Spayne, it hardelye agreeth with the principles of Philosophie and common experience, that golde should be there engendred in lyke abundaunce as in Regions more towarde the south, much lesse Elephantes and Apes, which are no where engendred farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne, or beyonde the two Tropikes, nor yet wil engendre yf they be

Nothing new
vnder the Sunne.

3. Reg. 4
3. Reg. 9
3. Re. 10.

2. Par. 1
1 Par. 3.
Tharsis.
Golde Apes
Elephantes.
Salomons
shippes.
Ophir.

Where Gold is
engendred.
Scotland.
Hungary

3. Reg. 9
Azion Gaber.

The *Equinoctial*
line.

Calicut.

Tharsis in
Cilicia.

Sicilia.
Ciuille in Spayne.

Spyces.
 Pepper.
 Orange tree.
 East India.
 Solomon boughte
 golde of
 marchauntes.
 The south and
 southeast.
 Mat. 12.
 3 Reg. x
 1. Par. 9
 The quene of
 Saba, the quene
 of the south.
 2 par. 9
 3 Reg. x
 Saba in *Ethiopia*
 vnder *Egipt*.
 Saba in Arabia.
 The quene of
 Saba came from
 the Iland of
Meroe.
 From Rome to
 England.
 The viage of our
 men to *cathay*
 Norway, Lappia,
 Finmarchia.
 Globes and
 mappes.
 Ptolomeus.
America.
 The strayghtes of
Magellanus.
 The Ilandes of
Molucca.
 Passage by the
 north sea into
 the East.
Pius secundus.
lib. i. Capit. ii.
 Note wel the
 passage by ye
 North sea.
 Augustus
 th[e]mperour
Cimbria.
Caspia.
 The warres of ye
 Macedonians

broughte into those partes of the world. The lyke is to be vnderstande of Poppingiayes and spyces, and dyuers other beastes, frutes, and trees, which are engendered in certayne climes of the worlde, and wyll not prospere in other places: the reason wherof were here to longe [to] declare. For lyke as pepper wyll not growe in Spayne, no more wyll the Orange tree bringe forth fruite in Englande. Wherefore, it may seme by good reason, that the Golde, Apes, and Elephantes teeth which were broughte from *Tharfis* (yf it were *Tharfis of Cilicia*) were not engendered there, but rather brought thether by merchauntes from the fourth partes of the world, out of Mauritania, Marmarica, Ethiopia, Libia, and Arabia, or otherwise by lande, from the East India, lyke as at this daye, the greate multitude of Spyces, Golde, Precious stoncs, Sylke, and Iuerye, whyche is at Calicut and Cambaia, growe not al in the regions there about, but are brought thether from dyuers other countreys, as doeth more largely appeare in this Boke. And that Salomons factours for exchange of other marchaundyse, bought the same in *Tharfis*, beyng brought thether from other countreys, as it is written in the thyrde Boke of the Kinges, that Salomon had great plentie of Gold of Marchauntes and Apothecaries. So that to conclude, I would rather thinke (sauing reformation of other better learned) that this *Tharfis* (and not *Tharfis of Cilicia*), from whence Salomon had so great plentie of Gold and Iuerie, were rather some other countrey in the fourth partes of the world, then this *Tharfis of Cilicia*. For, not onely olde and newe Histories, dayly experience, and the principles of natural Philosophie doe agree, yat the places most apte to bring forth gold, spices, and precious stoncs, are the South and Southeast partes of the world, but also our Sauour Christ approueth the same, declaring that the Quene of the South (meaning the Quene of Saba) came from the vtmoste partes of the worlde to heare the wyfdom of Salomon. And lyke as by the auctoritie of these woordes it is playne from what partes of the world she came, the same to a philosophical head is apparent by suche ryces and presentes as she broughte with her. For albeit that in the Chronacles of Salomon it is not written by expressed wordes that she came from the Southe, yet is it wrytten that she came to Hierusalem with a very great trayne, with camels laden with spyces, swete odours, and exceeding much gold and precious stoncs, which descripcion doeth well agree, both with the situation of the cytie of Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder *Egipt*: and also with the countrey of Saba, being in the middel of Arabia, inuironned about with great rockes wherein is a great wood of Precious trees, some of Cinomome and Cassia, and some bringing forth frankencense and myrrre, as writeth *Plinius lib. 12.* and *Theophrastus li. 9. de Hist. Plant.* Wherefore the Quene of Saba myghte worthely be called the quene of the South, forasmuch as bothe Saba (or rather Sabat) in *Ethiopia*, whiche Iosephus thinketh to be the Iland of *Meroe*, now called *Eisaba*, beinge in the ryuer of *Nilus*, and that the quene came from thence, and also Saba in Arabia, are situate farre Southwarde from Hierusalem, euen in maner in the middest of the lyne, called *Tropicus Cancrici*, and the *Equinoctial* lyne, where the Pole Artike is eleuate not passing. 13. degrees or thereabout (as in *Meroe*) where as the same pole is eleuate at Hierusalem. 32. degrees: whereby it may appeare yat the quene of Saba (whom Christ calleth the quene of ye south,) came from the fourth partes about. xi. hundredth and. xl. miles from Hierusalem for the same distaunce is from Saba in *Meroe* to Hierusalem, as betwene Rome and England. But as touching this matter, it shall suffyse to haue fayde thus muche. Nowe therefore to returne home from these farre countreys, and to speake somewhat of this viage which oure countreyenne, haue attempted to sayle into the Easte partes, by the coastes of Norway, Lappia, and Finmarchia, and so by the narrowe tracte of the Sea by the coastes of Gronelande, into the frozen sea, called *Mare Congelatum*, and so forth to Cathay (yf any suche passage may be found) whiche onely doubteth doeth at this daye discourage many faynte hearted men, speciallye becauise in the moste parte of Globes and Mappes they see the continente or fyrme land, extended euen to the North Pole without any such passage. Which thing ought to moue no man greatly, forasmuch as the most parte of Globes and mappes are made after Ptolomeus Tables: Who, albeit he was an excellent man, yet were there many thinges hyd from his knowledge, as not sufficientely tryed or searched at those daies, as manifestly appeareth in that he knew nothing of *America* with the hole fyrme lande adherent thereunto, which is nowe found to be the fourth parte of the earth. Neyther yet knew he any thinge of the passage by the Weste into the Easte, by the strayghtes of *Magellanus* as you shal reade in this Boke. Neyther of the Ilandes in the Weste Ocean Sea, nor of the Ilandes of *Molucca* situate in the mayne Easte Indian Sea. And as touchinge this passage, albeit, it were not knowen in Ptolomeus dayes yet other auctors of later time, who perhappes haue hadde further experience of the thing (as good reason is) doe wryte not onely that there is a passage by the Northe Sea into the mayne Easte Sea, but doe also further declare, howe certayne shippes haue safely sayled throughe the same, as *Pius secundus* (otherwyse called *Aeneas Siluius*) an excellent auctour descrybeth in his Boke of Cosmographie, where he hath these wordes folowing. Of the North Ocean Sea, whether it may be sayled aboute or not, the contencion is greater, yet is it apparaunte that the greateste parte thereof aboute Germanie, hath been searched by the commaundemente of Augustus th[e]mperour, euen vnto the promontorie or landes ende of the people, called *Cimbri*. The seas also and coastes of *Caspia* were so searched during the warres of the *Macedonians* vnder the dominion of *Seleucus* and *Anthiocus*, that al

moft all the North on euery fyde was fayled about. Plinie rehearfe the teftimonie of Cornelius Nepos, who wryteth that the King of Sueuia (or Swethelande) gaue to *Metellus celer*, proconfull or leauctenaunte of Fraunce, certayne Indians or menne of Inde, whiche faylinge out of India for marchaundyfe, were by tempeft driuen into Germanie. We alfo reade in Otho, that vnder th[e]mpyre of the Germaines, there was a fhippe of Indians taken in the North fea of Germanie, and driuen thether by contrary wynd from the Eaft partes: which thing coulede by no meanes haue comen to paffe, yf (as many menne thinke) the North fea were not nauigable by reafon of extreme cold and lfe. And thefe be the very wordes of *Pius Secundus*, whereunto I adde, that thys, notwithstandinge, yf it fould fo chauce, that ether there can no fuch pafage be found, or the fame fo daungerous, or otherwyfe that the very cutte thereof by which onely perhaps any fhippes might paffe, could not be founde, yea, or to cafte the worfte, yf they fould perifhe in this viage, yet I woulde wifhe all men to be of fuch corage and conftancie in thefe affayres, as are valiaunt capitaynes in the warres: who, yf by miffortune they take a foyle, doe rather studie how by fome other wayes to recouer theyr honour and reputacion diminished by the fame, then with fhame, loffe, and difhonour, euer afterwarde to geue place to theyr enemyes, or forfwere the warres. Wherefore, to conclude, yf no good can be done this way, it were worthy the aduenture to attempt, yf the fame viage may bee broughte to paffe, another waye, as by the ftrayght called *Fretum trium fratrum*, weftward and by North from England, whiche viage is fufficiently knowen to fuche as haue any fkyll in Geographie. As for other landes and Ilandes in the weft fea, where the Eagle (yet not in euery place) hath fo fpled his winges, that other poore byrdes may not without offence feke theyr praye within the compaffe of the fame, I wyll fpeake nothing hereof, bycaufe I wold be loth to lay an egge, wherof other men might hatche a ferpent. Wherefore to let this paffe, and to entre into another matter. Forafmuch as in thefe our daies hath chaunced fo great a fecret to be found, as the like hath neuer been knowen or heard before, (what fo euer God meant to kepe this miftery hyd fo long) I thoughte it good to fpeake fomwhat hereof: trufting yat the pleafant contemplacion of the thing it felfe, fhall make the length of this preface leffe tedious, epecially yf it find a reader whofe foule delyteth to prayfe God in his workes. The thing therefore is this, how the hole globe of the world (of the earth and water I meane) hath been fayled aboute, by the Weft into the Eaft, as doth more largely appeare in this boke in the nauigacions of *Magellanus*, who from Spayne fayled Weftward to the Ilandes of *Molucca* being in the Eaft fea, farre beyond ye furtheft partes of Eaft India: and the portugales came to the fame Ilandes from Spayne fayling Eaftward by the coaftes of Aphrica, Arabia, and the vttermoft India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges* where, in yat Indian fea the fayd Ilandes of *Molucca* are fuate. A thing furely moft wonderful, and in maner incredible, but that the fame is proued moft certayne by experience, the teacher and meftres of all fciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errours, fo by her ayde, many bafe and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practife of fuch wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the difcourfe of reafon. Which thing or other lyke, I fuppoze was the caufe why the noble Philofopher Ariftoteles fayde: *Quod nihil est in intellectu quod non fuit prius in fenfu*, that is, that nothinge is in vnderftandinge, but the fame was fyrft in fenfe, that is to faye fubiect to ye fenfes. Yet would I not that any rafhe witte fould hereby take holde, as thoughe eyther Ariftotle or I, meant that fence were more excellent then reafon, but rather that reafon vfiing fenfe, taketh his principles and fyrft fedes of thinges fenfyble, and afterwarde by his owne difcourfe and fearching of caufes, encreafeth the fame from a feede to a tree, as from an acorne to an oke. Nought els to fay, but that experience to be moft certayn which is ioyned with reafon or fpeculacion, and that reafon to be moft fure which is confirmed with experience, accordinge as the Phificians determen in theyr fciences, that neyther practyfe is fafe without fpeculacion, nor fpeculacion without practyfe. Wherefore, whereas men of great knowledge and experience, are to great affaires, theyr attemptes haue for the moft parte good fucceffe, as doeth moft playnly appeare in all histories: notwithstandinge that fome ignoraunt men wyl alledge that certayn rafhe aduentures haue prospered well: which fayinge proueth no more then yf a man fould fay, that twife or thrife a man vnarmed flew a man armed (as dyd fometye the wyld Irifhmen at bullen) Ergo, it were better to fight vnarmed then armed. And wheras I haue here fpoken of knowledge ioyned with experience, I meane by knowledge yat which we commonly call learning, whether it be gotten out of bokes (which are the writings of wyfe and expert men) or otherwyfe by conference and educacion with fuch as are lerned: meaning nought els by learning, but ye gathering of many mens wittes into one mans head, and the experience of many yeres, and many mens lyues, to the lyfe of one, whom we call a learned, wyfe, and expert man. The which defynicion and effect of learning, the noble and learned cortier Baltaffar Caftaglione (the auctour of the boke called in the Italian tongue *il cortegiono*,) diligently confideringe, doeth greatlye blame and reprove the frenfmen in that they thinke yat the knowledge of letters doeth hinder the affayres of warre, ye which perfwafion he proueth by many reafons and examples to be moft falfe. But as concerninge the matter whereof this boke entreateth the greate Philofopher Albertus Magnus, onelye by learninge, wythoute

*Plinius.**Cornelius Nepos.*
Suecia, called also
Suecia nere vnto
gotland and
norway.A fhip of Indians
driuen from the
Eaft into the North
feas.The viage to
Cathay
Weftwarde and
by north.The earth
compassed aboutThe viage of
Magellanus.
The Ilandes of
Molucca.Experience, ye
teacher of al
fciences.Sense and
vnderftandinge.A fentence of
Aristotell.Experience ioined
with fpeculacionA perticular
proueth no
vniuersall.What is
knowledge and
learning*Baltassar*
Castaglione.A falfe
perfwasion of ye
Frenfmen.*Albertus Magnus*

Temperat regions
vnder ye
Equinoctial line.

An error of S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.
Antipodes.
Apianus.

Lactantius.

The roundnes of
ye earth.
S. augustyne.

Apianus.

The apostles,
Antipodes the
one againste
th[e]other.

The Spanyardes
and the Indians
are *Antipodes*.

S. augustine of
the heresie of
Manicheus.
S. augustines
boke of retractes.

Mountaynes, let
not ye roundnes
of the earth.
A galle.

A Sentence of S.
augustines.

Commendacion of
s. augustin

Lactantius.

experyence, affirmed that habitable or temperate Regions myghte be vnder the Equinoctial or burninge lyne, as appeareth in hys Boke *de Natura locorum*, contrarye to the opinion of other wryters whyche were before hys tyme, and yet is nowe proued by experience to bee moſte true, albeit not in all places vnder the fayde lyne, the cauſe whereof were here to longe to declare. And lyke as Albertus Magnus by knowledge of Aſtronomye (wherein he excelled) came to the vnderſtandinge hereof, euen ſo that greate Clerke (but better dyuyne then Phyloſopher) Sayncte Auguſtine and alſo Lactantius, for lacke of lyke knowledge in that ſcience, fell into a chylidiſhe erreure, denyng that there is anye people, called Antipodes, of whom the greate Aſtronomer of our tyme, Apianus wryteth in thys maner. Antipodes are they, whyche walke wyth theyr ſete dyrectelye contrarye agaynſte oures, and haue the heauen dyrectelye ouer theyr heades as we haue. Yet haue we nothinge common wyth them, but all thinges contrarye: for when the Sunne cauſeth Sommer wyth vs, then is it Myddewynter wyth them: and when it is day wyth vs, it is nyghte wyth them: And when the daye is longeſte wyth vs, then is the longeſte nyghte wyth them, and the ſhorteſte daye. Whiche, Lactantius, a manne otherwyſe well learned, in his thyrde Booke, Capitulo ſoure and twentye, childiſhelye erringe, wyth hys lyghte and opinionate argumentes, denyeth that there is anye ſuche, and mocketh the Aſtronomers, becauſe they affyrme the earth to bee rounde, whiche neuertheleſſe they proue wyth moſte certayne and apparente demonſtracions of Geometrye, and vnſayleable experymentes. Whome, Sayncte Auguſtine folowing, in his ſixtenth Booke. *de Ciuitat. Dei. Capittu. ix.* wryteth after thys forte. Suche as fable that there is Antipodes, that is to ſaye, menne of the contrarye parte, where the ſunne ryſeth when it falleth to vs, and to haue theyr ſete agaynſte oures, we oughte by no reaſon to beeleue. Thoſe bee the woordes of Sayncte Auguſtine. Nothwithſtandinge (ſayeth Apianus) putte thou no doubtte Gentle Reader, that the Apoſtles of Chriſte were Antipodes the one to the other, and ſode ſete to ſete the one agaynſte the other, when James th[e]elder and brother to Iohn the Euangelifte, the ſonne of Zebedeus, was in Spayne in Galitia, and Thomas the Apoſtle in the hygher India, they were mooſte certaynelye Antipodes, walking ſete to ſete one agaynſte the other, almoſt as directly as a diametrical lyne. For the Spanyardes are Antipodes to the Indians, and the Indians in lyke maner to the Spanyardes. Which thinge alſo the excellent and aunciente Auctour Strabo conſfirmeth to bee true, and likewiſe Plinius *Nat. Hiſt. lib. 2. Cap. 67.* Dolateranus alſo, and all other Cofmographers and Aſtronomers. Hetherto Apianus: and to declare my opinion in fewe woordes, I thinke it no greate marueyle that Saincte Auguſtine ſhoulde fall into an erreure in the ſcience of Aſtronomie in whiche he trauayled but as a ſtraunger, forafmuſche as he erred in many thinges in diuinitie which was his chief profeſſion: and was longe of the hereſye of *Manicheus* beefore he was conuerted by Saincte Ambroſe: and wrytte alſo at the lengthe a Booke of retractes, in which he correcteth hys owne errours. And I beleue playnely that, that excellent witte of hys, could not haue remayned in yat errour yf he had been wel exerecyed in Aſtronomy, or had knowen any ſuche experyence as is ſpoken of here beefore, howe the Spanyardes by the Weſte and the Portugales by the Eaſte compaſſed aboute the earth, whiche coulde neuer haue come to paſſe yf the earthe were not rounde (*Quantum ad maximas ſui partes*) as they call it. For, as for hylles and Mountaynes, though they be neuer ſo greate, yet in reſpecte to the byggenes of the earth, they doe no more lette the roundneſſe hereof, then doe the lyttle knobbes of the berrye, which we call a galle, lette the roundneſſe of the ſame. Wherefore I am certaynelye perſwaded, that yf Sayncte Auguſtine had continued hys ſtudye in Aſtronomye (as it hadde been pytye he ſhoulde) or were alyue at thys daye, he woulde alſo haue retracted this erreure. But yf here anye ſuperſticious head ſhall thinke it a heynous matter in any poynte to contrary Saincte Auguſtine, lette hym hearken howe Auguſtine hym ſelſe ſayeth: that he wyll neyther hys wrytynges or other mennes, of howe greate name or fame ſoer they be, otherwiſe to be beleued then the ſame ſhall, by reaſon bee approued to be true: *Neque quorumlibet diſputaciones, &c.* And lyke as the greate Philoſopher Ariſtotel, when he wryte agaynſte hys mayſter Plato of the queſtion *de Idais*, and agaynſte Socrates who by the oracle of Apollo was proued to be moſt wyſe, and certayne of hys frendes asked hym why he durſte be ſo boulede, he aunſwered that Plato was hys frende, and ſo was Socrates: but trueth hys frende more then they bothe, euen ſo I thinke it no iniurye nor contumelye to Sayncte Auguſtine, yf the ſame were fayde of hym alſo geuyng hym otherwyſe hys dewe commendacions, as he was ſurelye an excellent man, of dyuyne witte, and knowledge, and ſo trauayled in fettyng forth Chriſtes true Relygion in thoſe turmoylous dayes, in perpetual combatte, agaynſte learned heretykes and Prynces of the worlde, that he is worthelye called a Doctour and Pyller of Chriſtes Church. And as for Lactantius, the intente of whoſe wrytynges was chieflye to thys ende, to dyminiſhe th[e]ſtimacion of Philoſophye, (as at thoſe dayes it was neceſſarie to doe amonge the Gentyles) and to aduaunce Goddes worde, (whyche they contemned for the ſimplicite of the ſame,) albeit, he attempted as farre as hys learninge woulde ſerue hym, to make all thynges in Philo[ſo]phie vncertayne, yet are hys argumentes ſo ſlender, that vnleſſe GOD by the ſecrete working of hys ſpyryte, hadde called the Gentyles to the true Faythe, I feare me leaſte fewe or none of them, (ſpecyallye of the greate wyttes) woulde haue been conuerted by Lactantius

argumentes. Howe he dalyeth in denyinge the yearth to bee rounde, and that it is possyble that it myghte bee longe and rounde, (lyke an Egge,) or otherwyfe longe and holowe lyke a bote, (meanyng I suppose that the Sea myghte bee conteyned in the holownesse of the fame, wyth fuche other opinyons grounded of no reason, it were to longe to rehearse. Yet, forasmuche as he was a learned manne, and for the better satisfyinge of fuche wyttes as are desyreous to know some apperaunce of truth by naturall reason and demonstracions, lette vs admytte that the earth were rounde after anye of those fashions whiche he deserybeth: yet can it not bee denyed, but that it is conteyned wythin the holowenesse (yf I maye so call it) of the ayre, hauynge the heauen in euerye place dyrectelye ouer euery parte of the fame, as fayeth the Poete and Philosopher *Virgill*, *Calum undique fursum*: Exepte perhappes Lactantius shoulde thinke that it honge by some thyng, or were otherwyfe borne vppe wyth pyllers as the Poetes Fable, that the Gyaunte *Atlas* beareth the worlde on hys shoulders, whereby they meane that a manne of valiente mynde must stoutelye beare the chaunces of the worlde. Of whyche hangeinge or bearynge of the earth, I reade a better and more true fayinge in the holye Scripture, where it is written, *Fert omnia uerbo oris fui*, that is, that God sustayneth and beareth all thinges with the woorde of hys mouth.

Holye Iob also fayeth, that the LORD stretcheth oute the Northe ouer the emptye, and hangeth the earth vpon nothyng: Meaninge by nothyng, the ayre, becaufe to oure senses it appeareth in maner as nothyng: Or otherwyfe that it is not dependynge of anye other substaunce, but to bee sustayned onelye by the power of GOD who hath appoynted the Elementes theyr places and lymittes, and caufeth the heuye to stande faste: as wytnesseth Moyses in hys songe, fayinge: By the wynde of thy nostrils the waters gathered together, the floudes floode flyll as an heape, and the deepe water congeled together in the heart of the Sea. Wherefore yf the heauen be rounde (whiche no manne can reasonablye denye that euer sawe the Sunne and sterres moue.) And yf the earth bee the center of the worlde dependynge as we haue sayde beefore, then muste it needes folowe, that they whiche inhabitinge the Northweste partes of the earth, haue the Pole Artike eleuate thyrtye degrees, must needes bee Antipodes to them whiche inhabitinge the Southeaste partes of the earth, haue the Pole Antartike eleuate in the same degree, and so the lyke to bee vnderstand of all other eleuacions and degrees. And yf here anye wyll obiect, that eyther the earth or firme land is not so large, or so farre extended, or other wyfe not inhabited although it were so large, or that the sea is greater then the lande, to thys I aunswere, that no man knoweth further hereof then is tryed and founde by experience, as we haue sayde beefore. And albeit that the sea were larger then the firme lande, yet forasmuche as there are Ilandes founde in all places of the mayne Sea, and in maner all inhabited, there is no reason to the contrarye, but that the people of those Ilandes maye be Antipodes to such as dwel on the firme lande, on the contrarye parte, whether the earth bee round and longe, yea or square, (yf you wyll) notwithstandynge. But wyth what certayne demonstracions the Astronomers and Geometricians, proue the earth to bee rounde, and the Sphericall or rounde forme to bee mooste perfecte, it were to longe to declare. I wyll therefore make an ende of thys matter wyth the fayinge of Saynete Paule in hys Oracion, to the menne of Athens. That GOD made of one bloudde, all nacions of menne, to dwell vpon the hole face of the earth.

¶ I hadde entended here (well beeloued Reader) to haue spoken somewhat of fuche straunge thynges and Monsters, whereof mencion is made in thys Booke, to th[e]nde that fuche as by the narownes of their vnderstandinge are not of capacitie to conceaue the causes and natures of thynges, myghte partelye haue been satisfyed wyth some sensyble reasons. But beyng at thys tyme otherwyfe hindered, it shall suffice al good and honest wittes, that whatfoeuer the Lorde hath pleafed, that hath he done in heauen and in earth, and in the Sea, and in all depe places.

¶ Ecclesiasticus. Capit. i.

¶ *The eye is not satisfyed with syght, and the eare is not fylled with hearinge.*

Of the roundenes
of ye earth.

The earth hangeth
in ye aire

The fable of
Atlas.

The word of God
beareth vppe the
world.

Iob. 26.

The elementes.

Exo. xv.

The eleuation of
the pole.

The largenes of
the earth.

Ilandes

Astronomers and
Geometricians.

Act. xvij

Psa. 135

¶ *The Table.*

¶ Of the Ilande of Iaua.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of Madagafcar.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of zanzibar.	[p. 23.]
Of the two Ilandes in the which men and women dwell a funder.	[p. 24.]
Of the mightie Empyre of Cathay, fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham or Cane, Emperour of Tartaria.	[p. 24.]
Of certayn Prouinces fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham.	[p. 25.]
Of the Prouince of Mangi.	[p. 26.]
Of the Region of Tangut.	[p. 26.]
Of the newe Ilandes, howe, when, and by whom they were founde.	[p. 28.]
Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.	[p. 28.]
Of the Canibales, which eate mens fleshe.	[p. 29.]
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of Hispana.	[p. 29.]
How Christophorus Columbus, after that he had founde the newe Ilandes, returned to Spayne : and preparing a new nauie, failed agayn to ye Canibales.	[p. 29.]
How Columbus the Admiral, paffed many Ilandes and what chaunced to hym and his in that viage.	[p. 30.]
Of the newe India, as it is founde and knowen in thefe oure dayes.	[p. 13.]
Of the Adamant ftone, otherwife called the Diamant.	[p. 14.]
Of the Kingdoms and cities of Narfinga and Canonor	[p. 14.]
Howe the Elephantes in India are prepared to the warres.	[p. 15.]
Of the beafte called Rhinoceros.	[p. 16.]
Of Calicut, the moſte famous markette towne of India.	[p. 16.]
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.	[p. 17.]
Of Pepper and other ſpyces which growe in the Region of Calicut.	[p. 18.]
Of the byrdes and beaftes which are found in the Region of Calicut : and of the wyne of the tree.	[p. 19.]
From whence all kyndes of ſpyces are brought to the cytie of Calicut.	[p. 20.]
Of the Iland of zaylon, and of the cinomtome tree.	[p. 20.]
Of the cytie of Tarnafferri, and of the maners of the cytezyns.	[p. 20.]
Of the excellent cytie and Kingdom of Pego.	[p. 21.]
Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Bornei.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Giaua.	[p. 23.]
Howe the Spanyardes abufed the ſubmiſſion and frendſhip of the inhabitauntes of the Ilandes.	[p. 31.]
Howe the Portugales foughte newe Ilandes in the Eaſt partes, and howe they came to Calicut.	[p. 32.]
Howe Magellanus by a ſtrayght or narrow arme of the Sea, fayled by the Weſte into the Eaſte to dyuers Ilandes, where alſo he was ſlayne.	[p. 33.]
Howe the Spanyardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging cares.	[p. 34.]
The third nauigaion of Christophorus Columbus.	[p. 35.]
[How Petrus Alonfus foughte newe Ilandes.	p. 36.]
How Pinzonus companion to the Admiral, fought newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
The foure nauigacions of Americus Veſputius to the newe Ilandes.	[p. 37.]
The fyrſte viage of Veſputius.	[p. 37.]
The fecond viage of Veſputius.	[p. 38.]
The thyrde viage of Veſputius.	[p. 39.]
The fourth viage of Veſputius.	[p. 39.]
Howe the Kyng of Portugale ſubdued certayne places in India, and of the ryche cytie of Malacha.	[p. 40.]
Of the Ilande of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyfe called the Ilandes of Canaria.	[p. 40.]
[Whether vnder the Æquinoetial circle or burning lyne (called Torrida Zona) be habitable Regions.	p. 41.]

¶ *Finis.*

¶ Of the newe India,
as it is knowen and found in these our dayes.

In the yeare of oure Lorde. M.D.LIII.

After the description of Sebastian Munster in
his Booke of the vniuerfall Cosmographie.

Libr. v. De terris Asiæ Maioris.

And translated into Englishe
by Richard Eden.



Here are two viages or nauigacions made oute of Europa into India. The one southeast from spayne, by the coastes of Aphrica and Ethiopia, euen vnto Arabia to the citie called Aden. And from thence to the Ilande of Ormus, and from Ormus to the citie of Cambaia, and from thence euen vnto the citie of Calicut. Cambaia is situate nere vnto the floudde *Indus*. This citie is of great powre, riche, and abundaunt in al kyndes of grayne and corne. The foyle hereof bringeth forth fondry kyndes of swete oyntmentes, and cotten which groweth on certain trees called *Gofsampini*, this cotton, is otherwyse called *Bombage* or fylke of the trees. The Kynge of Portugall subdued this cytie, and bylded hard by the same a strong fortresse: with which thing the Turke beeing fore greued, commaunded a greate nauie of shippes with greate sumptuousnes to bee furnished in the goulse called *Sinus Arabicus*: to the ende that he might dryue the Portugalles out of India, and the better to accomplishe this his purpose, he appointed one Soliman a noble man of

warre (beyng also the Captayne of Alcayre,) to be the admiral general, or gouernour of his nauie, hauing in his retinue. xx. thousand fouldiers beesyde mariners and gonners, whiche were in nombre foure thousand. This nauie was appointed in the hauen Suezio, beeing a port of the redde fea, in the yeare of Christ. 1538. And arryued fyrste at the citie Aden: where laying anker, the gouernour of the nauie sent letters to the king of Aden, certifying him that he woulde take his viage into India, from thence to expell the King of Portugall. The Kinge of Aden whiche was then tributarye to the King of Portugall, receyued the Turkes letters thankfully, offering him selfe and all that he might make, to so mightie an Emperoure, desyringe the gouernoure to come forth of the ship, and to beholde the cytie obedient and readye at his commaundemente, in the which also accordinge vnto his dignitie and office, he should be worthely interteyned: but the gouernour agayne allured and entyfed hym to come out of his citie, and so by craft circumented him, that he toke him priefoner, and commaunded him to be hanged on the sayle yarde of the shyp, and with hym foure other of the rulers of the citie of Aden, affirming that he was commaunded of the Turke so to handel them, because the cytiezins of Aden had not only made a leage with the Portugales, but had also payde them tribute: whiche nacion the Turke playnely entended to drieue out of India. And thus after the Kynges death, that most riche and beautiful cytie, was euer a praye to theues, spoylers, and murtherers without refystaunce. Then the gouernoure departing from thence, lefte there behynde him a garrison of two thousand men of warre, and saylyng forwarde on hys viage, he came to the citie called *Dium*, whiche the Portugales held: and his armie was greatly encreased by the waye, as wel by land as by sea, by reason of the great confluence of the Turkes which on euery side reforted to him, so that in a short space they rowled before them a bulwarke or countremure of earth, in maner as bigge as a mountayne, which by little and litle they moued neare vnto the trenche or ditche of the castell, so that they might safely stand behynde the bulwarke, (thus rayng a mount,) they besieged the castell on euery syde, and battered the walles and towres thereof very fore: yet that notwithstanding, were at the length, enforced to departe, not withoute greate losse and slaughter of theyr fouldiers: for this *Dium*, is the strongest citie that is vnder the dominion of

The —
ther is
Southweste.

The citie of
Cambaia

Calicut.

Gossipium,
Bombage or
cotton of the trees

The turkes nauie
agaynste the
king of Portugale.

The cytie of Aden.

The kinge of
Aden is hanged.

The destruction
of the citie of
Aden.

The turke
besiegeth the
cytie of D'um.

The turke is
repulsed.

The excellencie
of the citie of
Cambaia.

Lacha is gumme
of a tree, and is
vsed in dying of
silke.

The Kyngdom of
Ioga.

The Kyngdom of
Dechan.

The diamonde
stone.

Cambaia: but the cytie of *Cambaia*, is situate in the goulfe called *Guzerat*, and is well inhabited, and in maner most excellent of all the cities of *India*, and is therefore called *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, or *Babilon* of *India*. It is enuironned with a walle, and hath in it very fayre byldinges. Ye Soldan or chefe ruler hereof, is of Mahumets secte as are ye Turkes. *Lacha* groweth there more plentifully then in any other countre. The inhabitauntes, for the moste parte goe naked, couering only theyr priuie partes: they bynd theyr heades about with a clothe of purple color. The Soldan or prince of this citie, hath in a redines for the warres. xx. thousand horfemen, he hath also a mightye and magnificent court. When he waketh in ye morning there is heard a great noyse of cimbals, drumslades, timbrelles, shames, pipes, flutes, trumpettes, and diuerse other muscal instrumentes, hereby signifying that the king lyueth and is in health and merye: in lyke maner doe they whyle he is at dyner. To the kyngdom of *Cambaia*, is the Kingdom of *Ioga* nexte adioyning, which reacheth farre on euerye side. In this kyngdom, by reason of the greate heate of the sonne, the bodyes of men begin to waxe blacke and to be scorched: the people of thys countreye haue ringes hanging at their eares and colers aboute theyr neckes of fundry fortes, al beset and flynyng with precious stonnes. The foyle hereof is not very fruitful, this region is rough with mountaynes, the byldinge[s] are despicable, and euyl to dwell in: there is beyonde this, another Kingdom called *Dechan*: this cytie is very beautiful to behold, and fruitful in maner of al thinges: the king hereof vsfeth great pride, and folemnitie: his pompes and triumphes are in maner incredible, they that wayt vpon the kinge, weare on the vpper partes of theyr shoes certayne flynyng precious stonnes, as *Piropi* (whiche are a kind of Rubies or Carbuncles) with Diamandes and such other. But what maner of Iewelles they vse in ye fiede of collers, earerings, and ringes, you may well confyder, whereas they geue suche honour to theyr fete. In this kyngdom is said to be a mountayne, out of the which Diamandes are digged.

¶ Of the Diamande stone, called in Latine *Adamas*.

The stone
Siderites.

The hardnes of
the diamond.

How the diamand
is made softe.

The montayne of
diamantes.



The Diamande is engendred in the mynes of *India*, *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Macedonia*, and *Cyprus*, and in the golde mynes of the same countries. That of *India* excelleth all other in beautie and clearenes: that which is of the coloure of yron, is called *Siderites*, it is often tymes found in colour like vnto cristall, and though it be sometimes lyke thereto in whytnes, yet doth it differ from cristall in hardnes, in so much that if it be layd vpon an anuil and strongly striken with a hammer, the anuyl and hammer shall soner be wounded and leape away, then the stone perished or diminished: it doth not onelye refuse the forse of Iron, but also resisteth the power of fyre, whose heate is so farre vnable to melte it, that it can not so muche as heate it, if we geue credit to Plinie, and is also rather made purer therby, then anye wayes defyled or corrupted: neuertheles, the singuler and excellent hardnes of this stone, is made so softe with ye hoate blood of a Goate or a Lyon, that it may be broken: and if it be put with molten lead in hoate fornaces, it waxeth so hoate that it wylbe dissolued: yet are not all Diamandes of such hardnesse, for that of *Cyprus*, and also that of the coloure of Iron: called *Siderites*, may be broken with hammers and perced with another Diamand: his vertue is to bewray poisons, and to frustrate th[e]opperacion therof, and beeing therefore greatly esteemed of Kinges and Princes, it hath euer been of great price. The mountaine of *India* out of the which the Diamandes are digged, is compaffed with a walle on euery fyde, and kepte with a strong defence.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of *Narsinga* and *Canonor*.

The citie of
Narsinga.

The kinge of
Narsinga.



The King of *Narsinga*, in riches and dominion excelleth all other Kinges in those partes. The chiefe cytie where the King is resident, is in situacion and fynenes, much lyke vnto the cytie of *Milayne*, but that it standeth in a place somewhat declyning and lesse equall. This king hath euer in a redines manye thousandes of men of armes, as one that is euer at warre with other countreys, borderers nere aboute him. He is geuen to moste vile Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll, euen as doth the king of *Calicut*. The maners and fashions of the inhabitantes, are after this forte. The gentlemen or such as are of greatest reuenewes, vse to weare an inward cote or peticote, not very long: hauing theyr heades bounde aboute with listes and rowles of fundry coloures after the maner of the Turkes. The common people, couer onli their priuie parts and are beyde all together naked. The Kyng weareth on his head a stately cap made of the riche cloth of *Afia*, beyng two handfulles in length. When he goeth to ye warres, he weareth a vesture of ye filke called *Goffampine*, which he couereth with a cloke adorned with plates of gold: ye hemme or edge of his cloke is beset with all maner of ouches and Iewelles. Hys horse is iudged to be of such valure if you respect ye price, as is one of

our cities. And this is by the meanes of ye innumerable multitude and fundrie kindes of precious fiones, and perles wherewith ye trappers, barbes, and other furnitures of his horfe are couered, with an incredible pompe and glori. The foyle of Narfinga, beareth nether wheate nor grapes, and is in maner without al kinde of fruites, except citrons and gourdes: the inhabitantes eate no bread, but ryce, fishe and fleshe, and alfo walnuttes, which that countrey beareth, there begin spyces to be found, as ginger, pepper, mirabolanes, Cardamome, Casfia, and dyuers other kyndes of spyces.

Canano. is a very excellent cytie, fayre and beautifull in all thinges, fauing that the Kinge thereof is an Idolater. This citie hath a hauen whether the horses of Persia are brought, but theyr tribute or custome, is excedinge great: the inhabitantes lyue with ryce, fleshe, and fysh as do they of Narfinga: in the warres they vse the sweorde, the round target, speares and bowes, and haue nowe alfo the vse of gonnes, they are all naked fauing their priuie partes, and go beare headed, except when they goe to the warres, for then they couer theyr heades with a redde hatte which thei folde double, and bind it fast with a lyst or bande. In the warres they vse neither horse, mule, or asse, neither that kynde of camels which we commonly call dromedaries: but v'e onely Elephantes. There is also in the kingdom of Narfinga another godly citie called *Bisnagar*: it is compassed aboute with a walle, and situate on the side of a hyll, beeyng. viij. myles in circuite hauinge also in it a famous market place. The foyle is very fruitful, there are all delicate thinges to be found that may encrease the pleasures of this lyfe. There maye no where be found more pleafaunt felde and woddes for hauking and huntinge, a man woulde thinke it were a very Paradyfe of pleasure. The king of this citie is of great power, he keepeth dayly many thousandes of men at armes, vsinge Elephantes in the stede of horses. And hath euer foure hundreth Elephantes prepared for the warres.

¶ *How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre.*



He Elephant is a beaft very docible and apte to be taught, and little inferiour from humaine fense, excellinge all other beastes in fortitude and strenght. Therefore ye Indians, when they prepare them to the warres, put great packfaddels vpon them, which they bind fast with two chaines of Iron, comming vnder theyr belyes. Vpon the packfaddels, they haue on euery side a little house or towre, or cage (if you list so to call it) made of wood. These towres ar made fast to the necke of the beaste with certayne fawed bordes of the thickenes of halfe a hande breath. Euery towre receyueth thre men. And betwene both the towres, vpon the back of

the beaft fytteth an Indian, a man of that countrey which speaketh vnto the beaste. For this beaste hath marueylous vnderstanding of the language of hys natyue countrey, and doth wonderfulli beare in memorie benefytes shewed vnto him. It is also moste certayne that none other beaft draweth so nere to the excellence of humayne fense or reafon as doeth this beaft, as maye most playnly appeare, yf we confidre, how he is geuen to loue and glory, to a certeyn frendly gentlenes and honest maners, ioyned with a marueylous discrecion, to know good from euil, more redy to recompence benefites then reuenge iniuries, which excellent properties are not to be found in other brute beastes. Therefore when the Elephantes go forward to ye warres, feuen armed men are appoynted to be caried vpon one Elephant, bearing with them, bowes, iauelins, sweordes and targettes: also the longe snout of the Elephant (which thei cal his hand) is armed with a sweorde of two cubites in length, and in bredth and thickenes a handfull, standinge righte forth, tyed faste to the snowte of the beaft, and thus beeing furnished, they procede to the battaile: and whereas occasion requyreth to go forward or backwarde, the ruler of the beaft geueth him warninge, whose voyce he vnderstandeth and obeyeth: slyke hym, fayth the ruler, forbearre hym, be fearse agaynst thefe, abstayne from thefe, the beaste obeyeth hym in all thinges, as though he had humayn reafon, but yf it so chaunce that being made afrayd with fire (which thinge they feare aboute all other) they beginne to flye, they can by no meanes bee allured to stoppe theyr course, or retourne agayne, for the people of that nacion, can with many subtyl deuises as often as them listeth, raise vp fires to make those beastes afrayde. There be some men which thincke that Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, which opinion other affirme to be vntrue, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beastes, but that they are very low and almost at their fete. The females are of greater fierceneffe then the males, and of much greater strenght to beare burdens: they are sometime taken with madnes, declaring the fame by theyr furious running. An Elephant excedeth in greatnes thre wilde oxen called *Bubali*, and is much lyke of heare, and eyed lyke a swine, hauing a long snout, hanging downward, with the which he putteth into his mouth whatsoeuer he eateth or drinketh, for his mouth is vnder his throte, not muche vnlyke the mouth of a swyne: his snowte hath holes in it, and is holowe within, with this they ouerthrow ye stumpes of trees: and that of fuche bignes, that the forfe of. xxiij. men is not able to do the fame. The two great tuskes which they haue comming farre oute of theyr

The riche trapping of the kinges horse.

Spices of Narsinga.

The cytie of *Canano.*

The vse of Elephantes in the warres.

The cytie *Bisnagar.*

Hauking and huntinge. The kinge of *bisnagar.*

The Elephantes towre.

Elephantes vnderstandeth the language of theyr countrei.

Seuen armed men vpon one Elephant

The ruler speaketh to the Elephant.

The Elephantes ioyntes.

The bignes and shape of the Elephant.

The painters erre herein.

Vnderstande the handbreadth with the thumbe stretched forth. The Elephantes pase.

The Elephant is vexed with flies.

How the Elephant kylleth flies.

mouth, or placed in the vpper iawe, hauinge on euery syde lappes hanging downe of the bignes of two hand brea[d]th. Theyr fete are round like vnto a flat trene dishe, hauing fyue toes like hoeues vndeuided, of the bignes of great oystersshelles. Theyr tayles are lyke vnto the tayles of wilde oxen, thre handfull in length, hauing but few heares. The males are hygher then the females. They are of sundry bignes: some are of. xiiij. handfuller hye, some of xiiij. and some. xvi. Their pase in goyng, is somewhat slowe and walowinge, by reason whereof, some whiche ryde on them and haue not been accustomed thereto, are prouoked to vomitte, euen as they were tossed on the sea. Yet it is great plesure to ride on the yong Elephantes, for they goe as softely as ambeling moiles. When you attempt to geat vp, to ryde on them, they bow downe toward you, as though they would ease you with a sterope, that you may the easelier geat vp, which neuertheles cannot wel be done without helpe. They are all vnbrideled hauinge neither withe nor coller aboute theyr neckes, but goe with theyr heades al together lose. And because they are not couered with bristles or bigge heares, they haue not so muche as in theyr tayle anye helpe to dryue away flies. For euen this greate beaste also (sayeth Plinie) is troubled with this lyttle vermyne. Theyr skinne is very rowghe, and full of chappes, and riftes, like the barke of a tree, being fomwhat filthye and full of swette, whiche by heate resolued into vapoure, by fauour draweth flies vnto it: therefore when any flies or other creeping vermen are entered into the sayde riftes of theyr skinnes, sodeynly bending and drawing together their skinne, they hold them fast and kyl them, and this is to them in the stede of a tayle, a mane, or rough and bristled heare.

¶ Of the beaste called Rhinoceros.

Ennitie betwene the Elephant and Rhinoceros.

The Rhinoceros ii. hornes

The fight betwene Rhinoceros and the Elephant

Rhinoceros naturally armed.

Rhinoceros sene in Portugale.

Rhinoceros ouercometh the Elephant



Rhinoceros is comonly found in the same country, where Elephantes are engendred, and is borne an enemy to the Elephant (as saith Plinie) no lesse feking his destruction then doth the dragon: wherfore the Romaynes considering the natures of these beastes, were wont to put them together vpon the theater or stage, for a spectacle, therby to declare the natures of enemies. This *Rhinoceros* hath two hornes, whereof the one is of notable bignes, growing oute of his nosethrilles, and is of flatte forme, and as harde as Iron. The other groweth aboue in his necke, and is but a little one, but wonderful strong: when this beast attempteth to inuade the Elephant, he fyleth and whetteth his horne on a stone and stryketh at the belly of the Elephant, which place he knoweth to be most open to his stripes, and easyest to receaue hurt, because of the softenes thereof, which he cutteth with his horne as with a sweord. Some auctours write that *Rhinoceros* is vnequall in bignes to the Elephant: but *Iulius Solinus* saith, that he is as long as the Elephant, but hath shorter legges: when *Rhinoceros* therefore and the Elephant ioyne together in fighte, they vse theyr naturall weapons: the *Rhinoceros* his horne, and the Elephant his tuskes, wherewith he so violentlye beateth and teareth the skinne of *Rhinoceros* being as harde as horne or shell, and scarcelye able to be pearfed with a dart, that he neuertheles enforseth him to fall downe. *Rhinoceros* agayne on the other partie so woundeth the belye of the Elephant with the horne of hys nosethrilles, yf he doe not preuente hys strokes, yat he fainteth with bleding. In the yere of Christ. 1513. the first day of Maye, was broughte oute of India to Emanuel the king of Portugale *Rhinoceros* alyue, of the coloure of boxe, fomwhat variable and as it wer chekered, couered with shelles lyke scales, or rather lyke shieldes. This beast was in bignes equall to an Elephant, but had shorter legges, and was armed on euery parte. He had a stronge and sharpe horne in his nosethrilles, the whiche (as I haue sayde) he fyleth, when he prepareth him to fight. All this great hatred betwene these two beastes, is for ye best pastures which one striueth to take from the other as some wryters saye. In the yere of Christe. 1515. King Emanuel fet forth a spectacle in the citie of *Lisbona*, in which was a combat betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*. A fight doubtlesse worthy great admiracion. But in this fight, the Elephant had the ouerthrowe.

¶ Of Calicut, the most famous market towne of India.

Lowe and simple houses.



The cytie of *Calicut* is in the continente or mayne lande. And the houfes therof adioyning to the sea. It is not walled about, but conteyneth in circuite. vi. thousand houfes, not adherent together as the maner of bylding is with vs, but one being distant from another, a further space. It is extended in length a thousand pases. The houfes thereof, are but simple and very lowe, not passinge the heygth of a manne on horsebacke from the grounde. In the stede of a roofe, they are couered with bowes of trees, harde and thicke couched together, the cause hereof is, that yf the earth there be in anye place digged fyue handfull depth, the water

springeth forth, by reason wherof they can lay no depe foundacions for theyr houses, sufficiente to beare anye heauye roofe. The Kinge of this citie is geuen to Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyl himself. Yet he denieth not but that there is a God which made heauen and earth. And the fame to be the chiefe auctour and fyrste cause of all thinges. But sayth that he hath committed the rule and iudgemente of the world, to the deuyl, to whom he hath geuen power to rewarde men with good or bad according to their desertes. This deuyl they cal *Deumo*, but the mightie God and maker of the world, they cal *Iamerani*. The king hath in his Chappell the Image of this deuyl *Deumi*, sytting with a diademe or crowne on his head, much lyke vnto the myter which the Romaine Bishoppes weare, saue that this deuyls myter hath foure notable hornes. He sytteth gaping and hath a greate wyde mouthe, with foure teeth and a deformed nose, lowringe eyes, a grimme, terrible, and threatening countenance, with hooked handes lyke fleshehookes, and feete not much vnylike the feete of a cocke. Al such as behold this horrible monster, are sodeynly astonied. For it is surely a thing most vyle to beholde, and no lesse terrible. The chappel is on euery syde ful of painted deuyls: and in euery corner thereof sytteth a deuyl made of copper, and that so workemanly handeled, that he semeth like flaming fire, miserably confuming the foules of men. This deuyl with his righte hande, putteth a soule to his mouth, and with his lefte hand, he taketh another from a place beneth. Euery morning their Priestes (called *Bramini*) washe the Image of the deuyl with rose water, or such other swete liquoure, and perfume hym with dyuerse swete faouours, kneeling on theyr knees and praying vnto him. Euerye seuenth day, thei take the bloud of a cocke and put it in a siluer vessell, ful of burning coales: addinge thereunto innumerable odoriferous gummes and pouders to make a swete smoke or fumigacion. Then the Prieste taketh his fenser with burning coles, putting therto frankencense, and thus maketh his oblation to Sathan, during which tyme of sacrifice, a lyttle syluer bell, is ronge continuallye. The king sytteth not downe to his meate, vntyll foure of his chapleins haue offred parte of the same meate to the deuyl. And when the Kyng goeth to dyner, he sytteth on the grounde withoute eyther carpet or table cloth. And as he sytteth at diner, foure of the priestes wayte vpon him standing: not approchinge nere vnto hym by the distaunce of foure pases, geuing reuerent attendaunce vnto the kinges talke. When he hath dyned, the Priestes take the meate that is left, and geue it to the crows to eate: which byrdes they haue in such estimacion, yat it is not lawfull to hurt them. When the king shal marie a wife, he goeth not to bed with her, vntill she be defloured of ye high Priest, whom the king for his paines rewardeth with. v. C. [five hundred] pieces of golde.

The king honoreth the deuyl.

The Image of the deuyl.
The bisshop of Romes vicar at Calicut.

The deuyl eateth soules.

The deuils chaplins.

Sacrifice to the deuyl.

The chapleins offer to the deuyl.

The priestes wait on the kyng.

Crows had in estimacion
The priestes desoure ye queene.

¶ Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.



NExt after the King, ye priestes which serue ye Idols, are had in chiefe reuerence. Nexte vnto them, the Magistrates, called *Nerl*, are no lesse esteemed then amonge vs Senatoures or Lordes of the counsayl. When these goe abroade, they cary with them swordes, targettes, bowes and iauelins. Such as are counted of the thyrde order, are in like place with them, as are Artificers with vs. They of the fourth order, lye by fishing. And to them of the fyfthe order, perteyneth the gathering of pepper, wyne, and walnattes. The basest and poorest sort, are they which sowe and gather ryce, beyng contemned both of the priestes and Senatours. The Kinge, the Quene, and the inhabitantes of the cytie, haue almost no apparel, couering onely theyr sylthy partes with cotton of the tree called *Goffampine*, and not with silke: and are beside altogether naked. They goe barefoted and bareheaded. When the King is dead, yf there remayne alyue any heyres, males, either children or brethren, or brethers children, they succede not in the kingdome: for by custome of the countreye, the systers sonnes are inheritours to ye crown: but yf there bee no suche luyng, he succedeth in the kingdom which is nearest of bloud to ye king, of whiche custome, the reason is (as they saye) because the Priestes desoure the Quenes. When the King taketh any farre journey, or rydeth a hunting, the Priestes wayte vpon the Quene at home, and kepe her company: for nothinge can be more thankfull to the kyng, then to haue the Quene thus accustomed in adulterye with the Priestes, by whiche common prostitucion of the quene, he maye well iudge that the chyldren borne of her, are not to be esteemed as his owne: and therefore assigneth the right of his inheritance to his systers children, as to the nerest of his bloude, because his brothers children (as is sayd before) may not succede him in the kingdome by the custome of the countrey. The noble men and marchauntes vse this fashion among themselves. Such as haue wyues, do often tymes chaunge theyr wyues, one frende with an other for th[e]ncrease of further frendship. At which exchaunging of wyues, one of them speaketh to another after this manner. Forasmuch as you are my veri frend, let vs chaunge wyues: on such condicion, that I maye haue yours and you myne. The other asketh him yf he speake in earnest. He sweareth yea: let vs goe then (sayth his felow) to my house: when they are come thether, the good man calleth forth his wife, saying vnto her:

Priestres.
Magistrates.

Artificers.
Labourers.

The succession of the kingdom.

As are ye priestes, such is ye people.
The priestes kepe the quene.

Exchaunging of wyues.

Obedience in
cuyll.

One woman
maried to seuen
men.

The punishment
of murther.

Sinne redemed
for money.

Superstition.

Outward
clenlynes.

Deuylishe
gestures.

Woman, come hether and folow this man: for he shall from henceforth be thy husband. She asketh him yf he speake in earnest: he answereth, in good earnest. Then sayth the woman: I wil folowe him gladly. He taketh her away with him, and in lyke maner sendeth his wyfe to his frende. And this is the custome which thei vse in chaunging of wyues. But the children remaine with theyr fyrste father. Other of these Idolaters vse dyuerse other customes. For among some of them, one woman is maried to seuen husbandes, which lie with her by course one after another. And when she hath broughte forth a child, she sendeth it to whiche of her seuen husbandes she list: who maye in no case refuse it. When they eate, they lye along on the grounde, and haue theyr meate in great dishes, or treys of copper. In the stede of spones, they vse leaues of trees. Their meate, is ryce, fishe, spyces, and fruites of the common sorte. Yf any man committe murther, and bee apprehended, he is punished after this maner.

They haue a kynde of gallows made, with a poste of the lengthe of foure pafes: On the whyche, not farre from the toppe, are fastened two staues with sharpe endes, ye one lying ouer the other after the maner of a croffe: then the body of ye offender is thruft through vpon one of ye staues. And so the miserable wretche hangeth vntyll he haue geuen vppe the ghost. But yf any man wound another, or beate hym with a staffe, he redemeth th[e] offence, payinge to the king a certayn of golde. When they pray, they go fyrst before the ryfing of the funne, to some ryuer or standinge water, wherein they plunge themselues, to th[e] intent to washe them cleane: And so beeing washed, they touche nothing vntyll they haue at home at theyr houses, poured forth theyr prayers before theyr Idols. When they laye them selues down on the grounde, secretely to praye, they make certayne deuylishe gestures lyke vnto madde men, staring with theyr eyes, and turning them inward after a straunge sorte, wyth no leffe deforminge their countenance, very monstrous to beholde. When the king prepareth him to ye warres he hath in a readynesse a hundreth thousand fotemen. For of horfemen they haue no vse, but only of such as fyght on Elephantes. Al that are of the Kinges bande, haue a silken fyllet of scarlet colour, tied about their heades. When thei go to the warres they vse round sweordes, targets, iauelins, and bowes.

¶ Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of Calicut.

Howe pepper
groweth



Pepper groweth in ye suburbes of the citie of *Calicut*. There is some also gathered within the citie. The stalke of pepper is veri weake: so that it can not stande vpryghte, without a stake or proppe to sustein it, as haue ye vines. It is not much vnlike vnto Iuie: and in like maner crepeth and stretcheth forth it self embrasing and ouerspreading such trees as grow nere vnto it. This tree (or rather shrubbe) is deuided into many braunches, of the lengthe of two or thre hand bredth. The leaues are lyke the leaues of an Orenge tree: fauinge that these are somewhat grosser and fatter, with small vaynes running betwene on the contrarye side. On

euery twigge ther hangeth fixe thicke clusters of berries, a hand breadth in length, and of the colour of wild grapes. They are gathered in the monethes of October and Nouember: Inclining yet to a grene colour, and so laying them on mattes or couerlettes, they fet them in the funne to be dried: where, within the space of thre dayes, it waxeth black, euen as it is brought hether. They vse neyther cutting nor digging, or other tillage, but onely the simple and pure fruitfulness and encrease of the earth. Plinie sayth that the trees of pepper are lyke vnto oure iuniper trees. And that in his time, some affirmed yat they were brought forth only in the front of ye mount *Caucasus* on the fourth side toward the sonne. But the Portugals, whiche in this our daies sayle into the East partes, haue found it otherwise. The region of *Calicut*, beareth also Ginger: which doubtles is a roote, and is often tymes founde of the weighte of. xii. vneces: but al are not of lyke bignes. This roote entreth no deper into ye ground, then. iii. or. iiii. handbredth, like vnto the rede. When ginger is digged out of ye ground, they leaue the knotte or ioynte of the roote, in the pytte out of which they digged the ginger: couering ye same with earth as a fede, agaynst the next yeare to encrease and bring forth more ginger. It is found in playn ground of a redde erth, as ar *Mirabalanes*. Ther groweth also diuers other frutes and shrubbes vnknownen to vs, as *Iaceri*, *graccara*, *amba*, *Carocapel*, *Comolanga*, and such other of which some haue the taste and fauoure of quinces, some of peaches, some of damaske prunes, some of melones, and some of figges, etc. *Aloe* groweth also in that region: and is a certayn gumme, gathered from a litle tree, which is fastened in the earth, onely with one roote after ye maner of a staffe, pytched in the grounde. The bodie of the tree, is tender and redde, of strong fauour and bitter tast. It somtyme putteth forth droppes of gumme withoute anye cuttinge. And this of India, is muche better then that which groweth in *Iudea*.

Fruitful grounde
without tillage

Ginger.

A roote for a fede.

Fruytes vnknownen
to us.

Aloe.

¶ Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and
of the wyne of the merueylous tree.



Here is found in *Calicut*, diuers and fundry kyndes of foure footed beastes and foules. As lions, wilde boores, hartes, hyndes, wolues, kyne, wyld oxen, goates, and Elephanes: whych neuertheles are not engendred there, but brought thether. There bee also grene poppingiays, and some [of] white fethers of variable colours, lying like scoutchins. Some also of purple colour. Of these there is such plentie, that they are fayne to appoint men to kepe them from the rice which groweth there in the felde. They are merueilous chatteringe and of small price. There are also birdes called *Sarau*, somewhat lesse then poppingiayes, but make a much sweter noyse. There are also manye other kyndes of byrdes vnylyke vnto oures: Of which, euerye morning and euening is hearde suche a harmonie and so fwete a noyse, that nothing can be more delectable: In so little mouthes consisteth in maner al musicke, and therefore the inhabitauntes lyue in greate pleasure, as though they were in an earthly paradife, where floures are euer springing, and trees continue grene al the hole yeare. The heauen is beneficiall vnto them, and the ayre most temperate continually. So that thei are nether bytten with colde in winter nor burnt with heate in somer, but lyue as it were in continual springe tyme. The same region bringeth forth also Marmasets and Munkeys, whiche are great hinderaunce to ye men of the countrey: and specially to the poore forte, beecaufe they clyme the walnut trees, and spyllle the sweete liquoure of the fruyte thereof, of which the Indians make most pleasaunt wyne. For these Indians haue a tree most excellent aboute all other trees of the world, which bringeth forth dates lyke vnto the Palme tree. This tree serueth them for firewood: and beareth a kynde of walnuttis most delicate to be eaten: Also a kind of cordes, softe cloth, wine, oyle, and fuger. But chiefly it bringeth forth this excellent kynde of nuttes like vnto dates. From these they take awaye the fyrste rynde or barke and cast it in the fire. The other fruite is not muche vnylyke *Goffampine* cotton, or fylke. Of the floures they make cloth lyke silke: the flaxe whiche is lesse, they spinne agayne, and make therof smal roopes or cordes. The last barke or rinde, containeth the nutte, whose thickenesse is no more then the lyttle fynger of a mans hande. Furthermore the sweete liquoure or wyne, is engendered with the nutte, so that as the nutte groweth, the liquoure also encreaseth: In so much that when the nut is full grown, the lyquoure fylleth the inne warde partes of the same. And thys liquoure or wyne, is most cleare, not muche vnylyke vnto rose-water: Of which neuertheles is made a very fatte oile. They cut also the trunke or stocke of the tree in ye morning and euening: by whiche meanes they gather a most excellent liquour, which they feeth on the fyre, and make thereof so merueylous a drinke, that if a man drinke thereof beyond measure, he is driuen into furie and madnes. This liquour is vsed there in the stede of wyne. But let vs nowe returne to the beastes which are found in *Calicut*. Serpentes growe there vnto such hodge greatnesse, that they are in maner as bigge as swyne. They haue heades muche larger then bores heades. Thei are foure footed, foure cubites in length, engendered and conuersaunte in fennie and marishe groundes. The men of that countrei saye that these beastes are without poyson. There are also found other kyndes of serpentes: of the whiche one kynde hath so mortall venime, that yf they drawe neuer so lyttle blud, it causeth present death. There are other serpentes which in quantite represent the serpent called *Aspis*. Again, other some are much higher of whiche there are greate plentie. The men of the countrey thinke yat they are spirites fallen from heauen: and therefore haue them in great reuerence. Thei haue conceaued this opinion of them, because that in maner with touching, they bringe present death. And this is the cause whi there is so great abundaunc[e] of serpentes, that by the kings commaundement it is not lawfull to hurt them: and therefore they wander safelye where them listeth, and are esteemed of them as thinges that bring good fortune. For whereas the men of yat countrey, goe abroade aboute anye busines, thei take it for good luck to mete any of them by the waye. The poppingiayes of *India* are for the most part, of grene colour besyde ye head, which is ether redde or yelow like golde. They haue a great and large toung, and are therefore of a louder voyce, and speake more plainly. They learne the fyrst and second yeare such thinges as are taughte them. And beare them longer in memory. They drinke wyne, and vse theyr fete in the stede of handes when they feede.

Papingiayes of
dyuers kyndes.

Sweete singinge
of birdes

Earthly paradise
Temperate ayre.
Continual spring.
Munkeys

A tree of sundrye
commodities.

Silke of trees.

Ropes of trees.
Wyne of trees

Oyle of water

Serpentes as bigge
as swine

Serpentes without
poyson.

Serpentes counted
for heauenly
spirites.

Grene
poppingiayes

¶ Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thither.

Canonor.
Zaylon.

Corimucol.

Meluza.
Molucha.

Pego.

Ormus

Cambaia.
Arabia.

Chiua.
Samotor.

Darnasseri.



Inger groweth in *Calicut*, yet is there much brought thether from the cytie of *Canonor*.

Cinamome commeth from the Ilande of *Zaylon*, whyche is fyfye leages beeyonde *Calicut* Eastwarde.

Pepper groweth in *Calicut*: but muche more is brought thether from *Corimucol*, whiche is. xij. leages beyonde *Calicut*.

Cloues are gathered in a place, called *Meluza*, certayn leages distant from *Calicut*.

Nutmegges and Mace, growe in *Molucha*, beyng distante from *Calicut* hundreth and thre score leages, and fomewhat more.

Musk and Castoreum, is brought from the region of *Pego*, whiche is from *Calicut*, almoſte hundreth and fyfye leages.

Pearles of the biggest forte, are gathered neare vnto the Iland and cytie of *Ormus*, situate in the goulfe called *Sinus Perficus*: And are fente from thence to *Calicut*, as to the generall market towne of all the East partes.

Spikenarde, and Mirabalanes, are brought from *Cambaia* to *Calicut*.

Frankencense, and Myrre, come from *Arabia*.

Aloe, and *Camphyre*, are brought from *Kyui*, or *Chiua*. i. [fifty] leages from *Calicut*.

Long pepper cometh from *Samotor*. Cardamome ye greater, is brought from *Canonor*.

Preſilium, or braſyll, cometh from *Darnasferi*, otherwyſe called *Tarnasferi*, almoſt. CC. [two hundred] leages from *Calicut*.

¶ Of the Iland of Zaylon, and of Cinomome found there.

Elephantes.
Precious ſtones.
Cinomome.



Aylon is a very large region, and bringeth forth cheſelye Elephantes in greate plentie. It hath alſo Mountaynes of merueylous length: at the rootes wherof are found Rubines, Hiacinthes, Saphyres, Topafes, and fuche other precious ſtones. In this Iland groweth the Cinomome tree, not much vnlyke ye bayetree, ſpecially in the leaues. It bringeth forth graynes much lyke vnto baye berries, but fomewhat leſſe and whytiſhe. That which we commonly call Cinomome, is nothinge els but the barke or rynde of a tree, which is gathered after this maner. Euery thyrde yeare they cut of the braunches of the trees, and take of the barke or rynde thereof, which is our Cinomome. They cut not the body of the tree, but only the branches. When it is firſt gathered, it is grene, and not perfectly fwete vntyll it be kept a moneth. This Iland is ſituate vnder the Equinoctial line, where is continuall ſprynge all the yeare. The inhabitauntes weare clokes, with one arme oute vncovered, and haue clothe made of *Goffampine* cotton, or of filke. A rede is to them in the ſtede of ſworde, rapyre, and iauelyne. And are therefore feldome ſlayne in the warres.

The Equinoctial
lyne
Weapons of redes

¶ Of the cytie of Tarnasferi, and the maner of the cytezins there.

Narſinga.



The cytie of *Tarnasferi*, is diſtaunte from the Kingdome of *Narſinga*. xiiij. dayes fayling Eſtward, and hath a king of great puyſſaunce and marueylous riche. The foyle of this cytie, bringeth forth wheate, cotton of *Goffampine* trees, and plentie of filke. The fieldes bringe forth all kindes of fruites; quinces alſo and oranges. It is replenished with manye and fundrye kyndes of beaſtes aſwell wyld as tame, as kyne, ſhepe, gotes, ſwyne, hartes, hyndes, wolues and lyons. There are alſo ſeene thoſe kyndes of cattes which beare the riche fures called *Zibellini*, which we call Sables. In all the fieldes and woodes of this region are founde many Peacockes, Faulcons, and moſt fayre Poppingiayes of white colour intermingled with feuen variable coloures.

The beaſt whiche
beareth the furre
called Sables.

Fowles of
meruelous bignes.

There is alſo maruelous plentie of hares and partryches. There are manye of other ſtraunge kyndes of foules: and ſpecially ſuch as lyue by praye, whiche are muche higher then Eagles: whoſe vpper beakes are of fuche bignes and hardnes, that handles for ſweordes are made thereof. Alſo the cockes and hennes of thys region are

muche hygher and bigger then ours. When the people of the countrey goe to theyr meate, they lye downe on the grounde withoute carpet or cloth: Yet vse they woodden vesselles, workemanlye made. Theyr drinke is water myxte with fuger: but the poorer forte, drinke onelye water. Their beddes are made of Gossampine cotton, wyth couerlettes also of cotton or fylke. They goe all in generall barefooted excepte the Priestes. The Kyng of this cytye, doeth not commytte his wife to the Pricstes to bee defloured, as doth the king of *Calicut*, but to whyte men, as are the christians and Turkes. For this office is not committed to the Idoloters. But after that the new married quene hath been thus defloured the fyrst night, yf euer after she doe dishonour the Kyng her husband, by violating the faith made to him, from thencefoorth neuer to knowe any other man carnally, her punishment is death incontinently. When the Kynges or the Priestes dye, their bodies are laid on a great fyre, and the ashes thereof referued in erthen pottes, putting thereto a porcion of falte petre, and buryng the same in theyr owne houses. While the bodies are burning, they cast into the fyre al kyndes of swete fauouring gummes, and spices: as Aloe, Frankencense, Myrre, Storax, Coralle, fandalles, and fuche other innumerable: In the meane tyme blowing trumpets and shawmes, after the maner of them which amonge the gentiles were canonized into ye nombre of the goddes. And within xv. dayes after ye husbandes death, the wyfe calleth to her all her kinffolkes, bidding them to a banket: and so being decked with al her iewels, she procedeth with them to the place where her husbande was buried, where a graue is redye digged for her, inclosed about with silken cloth, hauinge in it a fyre made of sweete wood. When the woman hath thus feasted her kynffolkes, she eateth much of the herbe called *Betola*, wherby she is driuen into a madnes. In thys meane whyle, innumerable trumpetters (wearing such vestures as they vse in the deuyls seruice) go as it were on procesion aboute the graue, while the woman runneth vp and down, daunsing continually like a frantike bodie. And thus when the ceremonies are fynished, she casteth her selfe headlong into the fyre and graue: and that with no lesse cherefulness then yf she should be receaued into heauen. And vnlesie the woman should performe thys custome, she should incurre most vyle infamie, and be a mocking stocke to all her nacion, as one that loued not her husband. But the common people vse not thys custome: but only the rulers and princes. And therefore the king him selfe is often tymes presente at these solemnitie.

Beddes of silke.
Priestes.

The quene
defloured of white
menne.

Adulteri punished
with death
Howe the kinge
is buried.

Ministrels.

The quene dyeth
willingly.

The herbe *Betola*.

What credulitie
maye doe in false
religion.

Honour dere
boughte.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella.



From the cytie of *Tarnafferi*, to the cytie of *Bangalla*, is. xi. dayes saylinge. This cytie hath a kyng: and the countrey is very fruyteful with great plentie of wheat, fleshe, fuger, ginger, and gossampine cotton: and hath therefore very rich marchantes. There yearely passeth from this citie systie shippes frayghted wyth gossampine cotton, and silke clothes: which are caried from thence to the Turkes, Syrians, Arabians, Persians, Ethiopians, and Indians. Here are also founde certayne Christian merchaunt men, which come out of Th[e]mpire of the great *Cham* of *Cathay*: bringing with them Aloe, Castoreum and the swete gumme called *Laferpitium*, with other swete fauours. In this cytie, the men spinne and carde and make clothe, and not the womenne. From this cytie Eastwarde, is another great citie called Pego, beyng situate by a verye fayre ryuer. The Kinge of thys cytie, is an Idolater, and hathe innumerable menne of warre, both horfemenne and footemenne. The foyle beareth wheate plentifullye: and bringeth forth in maner all kyndes of beastes, and hath therefore great abudaunce of fleshe, yet are there but fewe Elephants: But of other beastes and foules, great plentie as is at *Calicut*: and speciallye of poppingiayes, whiche are of louder voice then in any other place. There is little trafficque or marchaundise in this region, except iewels and precious stones, and speciallye Rubies, called *Pyropi*, whiche are broughte thether from the cytie of *Capelan*. These precious stones shyne so brighte in the darke nyghte, as thoughe it were the sonne beames. The countrey adioyning, bringeth forth *Lacha*, *Sandalum*, called faunders: Also brasile, gossampine cotton and fylke. From *Pego* to the cytie of *Malaccha* (whiche some call *Melaqua*) is eygh[t]e dayes saylinge: where on the other fyde is sene a great Iland called *Sumatra*, otherwise *Samotra*, and was in time paste called *Taprobana*. This *Malaccha*, hath a goodly and commodious hauen: by reason wherof, moe shippes arriue there then in any other place: bringinge with them spyces and other marchaundise in great abundance. The region is not generally fruytful, yet hath it wheat and fleshe: but greate scarceneffe of wood. The foules wander in the feldes as they doe in the region of *Calicut*. But the poppingiayes are here much fayrer. It bringeth forth also spices, faunders, tinne, elephantes, horses, shepe, wilde oxen, pecokes, and such other kyndes of beastes. It is not lawfull there to bye and sell, except you bye spices and fylke. It is also there very dangerous to walke in the citie in the nyghte seafon, beecause of the theft and cruelnes of the inhabitantes, which kil one another like dogges. And therefore the marchaund straungers lodge not out of their shippes. How the Portugales subdued *Malaccha*, shalbe said hereafter in the descripcion of the newe Ilandes.

The king and
citie of *Bangella*

Silke.

Christian men of
Cathay.

The citie of Pego.

Rubies shyning by
nyght.

Lacha, *Lacca*, or
Lacta, is ye
gumme of a tree
wherewith silke is
colored.

Malaccha.
Sumatra.
Taprobana.

¶ Of the greate and ryche Ilande of Sumatra, or Samotra, sometyme called Taprobana.

The Iland of Taprobana.

Men of a hundreth yeres of age.

Shelles of fishes for houses.

Great pearles. Coyned golde and siluer for moneye.

Fishes of monstrous bignes.

Lacha.

Pepper solde by measure. Cathay. The Iland of banda.

The nutmeg tree.

Mace.

The Iland of Monoch.

Cloues.

Charles Waine. Pole Antartike.



Some thinke this Sumatra, to be that Iland which of the old writers is called *Taprobana*. It is verye great and riche: and hath in it foure Kinges crowned with Diademes. They are Idolaters: in religion, maner of lyuinge, and apparell, not muche vnylike the Kinge of *Tarnasferi*. They excede all other men in bignesse of bodie. They haue greye or blewe eyes, and are of cruell countenance, and terrible voyce. They are long lyued and lyue euen vntyl an hundreth yeres of age. The sea in certaine chanelis is of such heigth and depth, that no anker may come to the bottome therof. The inhabitantes are great fyshers on the sea, and haue great pleasure to take the shelle fysh, called the Tortoyse of the sea: of whiche, some are of suche hodge bignes, that the shelle of one of them may suffise to make a house well able to receaue a hole famelic. For some of them beare shelles of xv. cubites in length: and are therefore apt for that purpose. The most part of this Ilande is burnt with heate, and hath in it many desolate places and wilderneises. There are founde many and greate Pearles. For theyr money, they vse coyned golde, syluer and tynne. The golden coyne, hath on the one fyde a deuils head grauen, and on the other fyde a chariot which Elephantes draw. This region bringeth forth more plentie of Elephantes, of greater stature, and a better broede, then are found in any other place. In the sea about this Ilande, are often tymes fene the great monstrous fyshes, and kynde of Whales, called Balene, which bring many incommodities to the inhabitantes. They are of such monstrous bignes, that when they approche to the Sea bankes, they seeme lyke vnto hylles: they haue rough backs full of sharpe prickes. And except men walke very warely by the sea bankes, they are in daunger to be sodeynly swalowed vp of these monsters. Some of them haue so greate and wyde mouthes, that they sometymes swallowe whole shippes with the men. This countrey bringeth forth the *Lacha*, *Lacca*, or *Lacta*, which steyneth filke and cloth in high redde or crimison coloure. It is engendred in a tree, not much vnylike vnto our walnut trees. Ther is also great plenty of pepper, higher then is founde in other places. In their mother tonge pepper is called *Molaga*. It is folde there by measure, as wheat is with vs, and not by weight. There is so great plentie hereof, that there are yearly certayne shippes laden therewith to *Cathay*, where ye aire is colder. From Sumetra to the Iland of Banda, which is but rude and barren, and of playne and lowe grounde, whose inhabitantes are barbarous, and little differinge from beastes, hauing lowe houses, and no apparell but shertes, barefoted and bareheaded, with long heare, of despicable stature, dulle witted, of no strength, and Idolaters. The foyle of this countrey, bringeth forth nothing but nutmegges, and a few other fruites. The stalke or bodi of ye nutmeg-tree, is not much vnlike ye stalke of a peache tree, bringing forth lyke braunches and leaues, but somewhat narrower. Before these nutts be ripe, ye mace crepeth on the tree, lyke a florishing rose. And when the nutte waxeth ripe, the mace embraseth it round about. And so they gather both together in commune, at a tyme appointed: for they vse no distribucion thereof, but he that gathereth most, hath most. This tree bringeth forth his fruyte plentifully without any arte of husbandrye or tyllage. They are gathered at such time as we gather chestnuttes. From this Iland within fixe dayes sayling, is the Iland of *Monoch*, in the which cloues are founde, as also in other Ilandes, therto adioyninge. The tree whiche beareth cloues, hath his stalke not much vnlike vnto the boxe tree, with leaues lyke the Cinomome tree, but somewhat rounder. And when the cloues beginne to waxe ripe, they beate the trees with redes, spreding fyrst couerlettes or mattes vnder ye fame. The grounde where these trees grow, is of ye colour of cleye or sand. This region is situate so low, that ye feuen starres called *Septentriones* (being not farre from *Vrsa maior*, called charles wayne) can not there be fene, because ye south pole (called pole Antartike) appeareth about the earth.

¶ Of the Ilande of Bornei.

Idoloters.

Camphire.



The Iland of Bornei (which some call Porne) is distant from *Monoch* fiftie leagues. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, very quick witted, and of maner of liuing not greatly to be discommended. Thei vse not al one kynde of apparell. Some weare shertes of goffampine cotton, some beastes skinned, and some high cappes lyke myters, of redde colour. This Iland bringeth forth yearly great plentie of *Camphora*, called camphyre, whiche they affirme to be the gumme of a certayn tree. Of this Ilande I wil speake more hereafter in the nauigacions toward the East partes.

¶ Of the Iland of Giava.



The Iland of *Gyaua*, is distant from *Bornei*. v. dayes sayling towarde the fouth. This Iland is so great, yat it containeth in it many kingdoms: ye inhabitantes ar geuen to idolatri. It bringeth forth filke, which of it felse groweth there plentifullye in the wooddes. The precyous stone called *Smaragdus* (which is ye true *Emerode*) is found there more excellent, then in any other place of the worlde. It hath abundaunce of golde and copper of the best kynd. The foyle beareth wheat and other corne, with al kindes of frutes in great plentie. When the men of this cuntrye goe to the fea, theyr weapons are bowes, and arrowes of redes. They vse also to infect theyr arrowes with venime, and to blowe them oute of a trunke as we doe pellets of claye: with the which yf they drawe neuer so little bloud, present death foloweth immedia[t]lye. They haue also this custome, that when they see theyr parentes by reason of age to be vnprofitable, they bring them to the market towne, and there sell them to the people called *Anthropophagi*, which eat mens fleshe, of whom they are incontinently slayne, and eaten. The same doe they with the yonger forte also, yf they fall into any desperate diseafe.

Silke groweth in woodes.
The smaragde or emerode.
Go'de and copper

Arrowes of redes

Arrowes infected with venime.
A strange custome.

Anthropophagi.

¶ Of the Iland of Iaua.



Here are two Ilandes of thys name, as *Iaua* the more and *Iaua* the lesse. The biggest reacheth forth toward the South, and is sayd to haue in it many kingdoms. The inhabitantes are Idolaters and haue a peculier language. In this Iland is greate plentie of pepper, Nuttemegges, Spikenarde, Galangale, and other spices. Mani marchauntes of other cuntries are wont to reforte thether, and geat great riches by ye spices which they carie from thense. In this Iland also are people called *Anthropophagi*, which are wont to eate mens fleshe.

Spyces

¶ Of the Iland of Madagascar.



This Iland is counted to be one of the greatest and rycheffe Ilandes of the worlde. The inhabitantes are of Mahumets secte as are the Turkes. It bringeth forth many Elephanes, by reason wherof there is greate plentie of Iuerie which is the Elephanes tothe. For it is thought that there is no greater plentie of Iuerie, then in this Iland and in the Iland of *Cuzibet*. They eate the fleshe of none other beastes, but onely of Camels, because the Ilande is full thereof, and also that it is founde to be more holefome for the people of that cuntrye then any other fleshe. There are also in this Iland many woddes that bringe forth redde sanders, for the which many marchauntes refort thether. In the fea about this Iland, great whales are taken, out of the which amber is gathered. There are lions, leopardes, hartes, hyndes, goates, and many other beastes and foules, by reason whereof, they vse muche haukinge and huntinge.

Mahumetistes
Elephanes.
Iuerie

The Iland of *Cuzibet*.
Camels fleshe eaten.

Woddes of redde Sanders.
Whales
Amber.
Lions, and Leopardes.

¶ Of the Iland of Zanzibar.



The Ilande of *Zanzibar*, hath a peculier Kinge and language. The inhabitantes are idolaters, and are of grosse and shorte stature: but yf theyr heyghth dydde aunfwere to theyr thickenesse and breadth, they mighte seme to be giantes. They are all blacke, and goe naked, onely couering theyr pryue partes. The heare of theyr heades, is merueylouflye corlide. They haue greate mouthes, nofethrilles flyrtting vpwarde and wyde, with great eares and cruell eyes. Theyr women are deformed by reason of theyr greate eyes, greate mouthes, and greate nofethrilles. They liue with milke, fleshe, ryce, and dates. They lacke wyne: yet they make a pleasaunt drinke of ryce, fuger, and other spices. Many marchauntes reforte thether for yuerie and Amber, for there is greate plentie of Elephanes and greate whales.

Digge men of low stature.

People deformed

Ryce and Dates.
Drinke of spices.
Amber.

¶ *Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women.*

The Iland of men.

The Iland of women-
Christians

Fishing.



IN the mayne sea, there are two Ilandes, distante the one from the other aboute. viij. or. ix. leagues toward the fouth, situate betwene the cytie of *Aden* and *Calicut*. In one of the which dwel onely men without the company of women, and is called the Ilande of men. And in the other dwell onely women, without men, and is called the Ilande of women. They are Christians and contract matrimonic. The women neuer come to the Ilande of men, but the men are accustomed to vyfite the women once in the yeare, and tarye with them thre monethes continually, euery man with his owne wife in his owne house: after which time they returne agayn to [t]her owne Ilande, where they remayne all the yere after. The women kepe the men children with them vntyll they bee xv. yeares of age, and then fend them to theyr fathers. The women haue nought els to do, but to take charge of their children, and to gather certayne frutes. But the men labour and haue care how they may synde theyr wyfe and chyl dren. They are exercyfed in fyshing, and fell fyshes both newe taken and olde dryed, to marchaunte straungers, whereby they receaue great commodities.

¶ *Of the greate Empyre of Cathay, being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of Tartaria, in olde tyme called Scythia.*

The great Cham
of Tartari

Famous cities
vnder the greate
Cham.

Manye wyues.
What naturall
affection may doe

A strange
custome

The people of
Cathay.

Ido. otours.

Mouey of paper



HE superiour or high *India*, whiche is nowe called *Cathay*, is a region excedinge large and of greate power, whose Emperour is ye great Cham of *Tartaria*, hauinge vnder him many Prouinces, people and Princes, and innumerable Ilandes in the great East sea, called the greate Ocean. He hath vnder his dominion great and famous cities, as are these: *Cambalu*, *Quenquinafu*, *Mien*, *Cacaufu*, *Canglu*, *Tadinfu*, *Tingui*, and dyuers other. Among the people of this countrey, one man hath manye wyues, whiche declare theyr loue to their husbandes after this fort. When the husband is dead, euery one of his wiues pleade their cause before a iudge, to proue which of them was most louing to her husband and beste beloued of him: so yat she which by the sentence of the iudges is found to haue been most faythful and diligente, decketh her selfe moste gorgiously in all her sumptuous araye, and procedeth like a *Virago* stoutly and cherefully to the fire, where the corps of her husbande was burnte, castinge her selfe into the same fyre, embrasing and kissing the dead bodi of her husband, vntyll she also be consumed by the fyre, whiche she reputeth for an honourable sepulture: whereas his other wyues are esteemed to lyue in shame and infamie. They ioyne in mariage, neyther in respect of riches or nobilite, but onlye for loue and beautie: and rather for ye encrease of posteritie, then for pleasure. There is also another straunge custome among these Indians: and yat is, that whereas the poorer fort are not able to geue any dowry with theyr daughters to mariage, they bringe them forth, euen in ye floure of their age to ye market place, with trumpettes and such other instrumentes as they vse in the warres. Where, the multitude beyng called together, the maydes fyrste of all, discouere theyr backe partes, euen vp to the shoulders, and afterward theyr forepartes in lyke maners. And vpon this declaring their pouertie and nakednes, are married to such as lyke them best. This people of *Cathay*, are of the nacion of them which in tyme past were called *Scythians*, a kind of men (as faith *Haitho*) of subtill wyt: affirming that onely they see with two eies, and that all other men besyde them are blind of the one eye. Their quickenes or witte is great, but their boasting is more. The hole nacion is perswaded that they greatly excel all other men in subteltie of wit and knowledge. The inhabitantes are whyte men, with small eyes, withoute beardes, and vtterly voyde of all godly knowledge. For some of them pray to the sunne, some to the mone, some to Images, some to an oxe, and some to other monsters of theyr phantasticall supersticion. They haue no law written, and are of no faith. And albeit that in workemanship and artes they are marueylous wyttie, yet haue they no knowledge of dyuine or godly things. It is a timorous kynde of men, and greatly fearinge death. And are therefore in theyr warres, more politike then valient. In the warres, they vse arrowes, and certayne other kyndes of weapons vnknown to men of other countreis. The monie which they vse, is made of a certayne paper, beeinge foure square, with ye Kinges ymage printed thereon. Their housholde stuffe is

of golde and fyluer and other metals. They haue greate scarcenes of oyle. The great Emperour of *Cathay*, keepeth his courte in the riche and mightie cytie called *Cambalu*, being the chefest citie of all the Empyre, and of such greatnesse that it conteyneth in circuite fixe leagues. This citie is foure square, so that euery quadrature or syde of the wall, hath in it thre principal portes or gates. Also in all the corners of the walles, are veri faire palaces, in which the artillery or armure of the cytie is referued. The stretes are made very streyght and right forth: so that from any one gate to the other beinge directly ouer against the same, a man may fe plainly through the cytie, hauing ye houses on euery syde lyke palaces, placed in goodly ordre, most beautifull to behold. Without the cytie, there are twelue great suburbes, adherent to the. xii. gates of ye cytie, whether the marchauntes and straungers, haue their continual recourse as to ye burse or strete. It can not be spoken what great abundaunce of marchaundise and riches is brought to [t]his citie: a man wold thinke that it were sufficient to serue all the worlde. Precious stones, pearles, filke, and spices of dyuers kindes are brought thether, from *India* and *Mangi*, and other regions. There passeth not a daye in the yeare in which there are not about a thousand waynes laden with filke which are brought to this citie by straunge marchauntes. What greate pompe, glory, and furniture of all thinges, is obserued in the Emperours courte, it can not be spoken. He hath in his courte twelue thousand horsemen, whiche haue the custodie of his body: and distribute their waytinge dayes after this order, yat whereas one of ye captaynes of this garison with his thre thousand fouldiers hath wayted vpon the kinges personne, three dayes, another captayne in lyke order wyth as many menne succedeth in hys rowme for other three dayes, and lykewyse an other after hym, executethe the same offyce. When the Emperoure maketh anye bankette, it cannot be said what great pompe is obserued. He hath fytting at his lefte hand his chefest quene whom he most estemeth: and at his right hand hys fonnes, and suche as are of the kinges blood: but thei fyt fomewhat lower and further of. The other noble men which wayte not, fytte in a place yet fomewhat lower. All such as in the court fyt at meat, vse none other drinking cuppes then of gold. The Princes whiche wayte on the Emperoure at hys meate, haue all theyr mouthes couered with fyne filken clothes, leaft in any case they should blow or breath on the kinges meate or drinke. And when the Emperour listeth vp his cup to drinke, al the musiciens and minstrels that stand about him, playe on theyr instrumentes, while in the meane time all suche as wayte on hym, stoupe downe and make lowe curtesie. How great honoure is exhibited to this Emperour, and howe many precious and riche presentes are offred vnto him by his Princes, Dukes, Leauetenauntes and presydentes of prouinces, and rulers of cities, no man is able to expresse, forasmuche as he hath vnder him in maner innumerable Kingdomes, Prouinces, Nacions and Dominions, which are on euery syde about *Cathay*, and acknowledge him to be theyr onelye Lorde and King, whom they honoure and reuerence as a great God and mighti Mahumet. In what pompe and triumphant magnificence he sheweth him self when he goeth to hauke or hunt, and how many tentes he pitcheth in the felde, which beinge fene a farre of, a man would thinke to be a greate cytie, he that desyreth to knowe, let him reade *Paulus Venetus*, in the second boke of hys nauigacions into *India*, where he shal find thinges to marueyl at. In *Cathay* they make a pleasaunt drinke of ryce and certayne spyces, which in drinking excelleth the swetenes of wine. In many places they haue great lacke of wood: In the stede wherof, they digge out of the mountaynes a certayn kinde of blacke stone whiche burne in the fyre like coles, and continue so long, that yf they be kyndled ouer night, they kepe fyre vnto the morning.

Golde and Syluer.
The cytie of
Cambalu.

Marchandyse.

Precious stones
and spyces.
Note.

The king of
Cathay his court

The Quene.

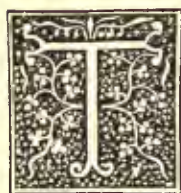
Golden plate.
Worldly glory.

A liuing Idol.

Paulus Venetus.
Drinke of rice and
spyces.

Digged cole.

¶ Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of *Cathay*.



Here passeth through the kingdom of *Cathay*, a certayne greate ryuer called *Pulifachnites*, which emptieth it selfe in the great Ocean Sea, by the whiche ryuer, shippes haue their passage into that lande. Ouer this ryuer is a very fayre bridge of marble, beyng in length three hundreth pases, and in breadth, eyghte pases, with. xxiii. arches, and grauen Lions on euery syde, adourning the rayles or highest margentes of the same. From hence it is not farre to the fayre and greate kingdom of *Tainfu*, in the which are many goodli vynes. For in the kingdom of *Cathay* there groweth no wyne, but is brought thether from this region. In this kingdom is greate vse of marchaundyse, and hath plentie of conning artificers, so that al the armure which the great Cham vseth in his warres, is made there. Toward the region of *Mangi*, is situate the ryuer *Caromoram*, whiche for the greate breadth and depth, hath no bridge. In this region is greate abundaunce of Ginger, filke, byrdes, and speciallye Phefantes. Somewhat beyonde this, is the great cytie of *Quenquinafu*, beyng the chief cytie of the same kingdom. In this region are founde many muskecattes. This beaſt in this countrey, is

A greate bridge of
marble.

The kingdom of
Tainfu.

Connyng artificers.

Ginger.

Quenquinafu.

The muske catte.

Siuet or muske.

but lyttle and fayre, aboute the bigneffe of a meane catte, with groffe heare lyke a harte, hauinge blunte clawes on his fete, with two longe teeth in the vpper iawe, and two in the nether iawe: and hath nere vnto the nauell a bladder full of a certayne matter like vnto bloud, being of wonderful fragrant faouore, and is the true muske.

¶ *Of the Prouince of Mangi, and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same.*

Marchandyse.

Salte.

Sylike.

Cloth of golde.

Ryce.

vi. M [six thousand] bridges of stone.

The great cite of *Quinsai*.

xij. M. [twelve thousand] bridges of stone.

Artificers.

Marchauntes.

Common banketinge houses.

A good prouision againste fyre.

Flesh of horses eaten.

A prouision against rebellion.

Anthropophagi.

Hennes hauinge heare in the stede of fethers.



The Prouince of *Mangi*, hath in it many notable and great cities, in the whiche is great exerceyse of marchaundyse: and specially in the cite of *Conigangui*, is folde great plentie of salt. In the cytie of *Panchi*, there is great sale of filke. In the cytie of *Sianfu*, is made great plentie of clothes of golde and filke. In the cytie *Singui* is a famous market where great abundance of marchaundise is brought by the ryuer. Nere vnto the cite of *Caigui*, groweth plentie of blade and ryce, that it is caried from thence to the court of the greate Cham. In ye cite of *Singui*, are numbred to be about fixe thoufande bridges of stone, hauinge so highe arches, that greate shippes maye passe vnder the same without bowing down of the mast. There is another cite called *Quinsai*, which is so fayre and great, that there is thought to be no bigger in al the worlde. It conteyneth in circuite, a hundreth Italien miles, which make. xxv. leages. It hath twelue thoufande bridges of stone, and those so highe that greate shippes with the mast standing vp right, maye passe vnder. This cytie is situate in a marishe ground, muche lyke vnto venes. Therefore if they should lack bridges, they could not passe ouer from the one syde of the streete to the other. It hath innumerable artificers and many marchauntes. The cytezens lyue pleasantly, and specially the women, which are fayrer then in other partes of *India*. Toward the South syde of the cytye, there is a great lake or poole within ye walles of the cytie, whiche conteyneth in circuite about. viii. leages, hauinge about the bankes therof many noble mens houses, very fayre both without and within. In the middelle of this lake, there are two litle Ilandes and in euery of them a goodly palace, in ye which are referued al fuche ornamentes and vessels as they vse for their mariages and solemne feastes, for whereas any of the cytezens entende to make any great banquet, or feast, they bring theyr gestes to one of these palaces, where they are honorably entertained. In the stretes of ye cite, are certayne comon towres, into ye which, al such as dwell neare therto, carie theyr goodes and stufte, yf it so chaunce, yat fyre be in the cite. The inhabitantes are Idoloters: and eate the fleshe of horses and camels, and of other vnclene beastes. The great Cham hath in this cytie a myghtie garison to the intente to auoyde rebellion, thefte and murther. For on euery bridge there wayteth dayly and nightlye. x. watchmen for the same purpose: and because the Prouince of *Mangi* is exceding large, the great Cham hath deuyded it into nyne Kingdomes, assiginge vnto euery one a peculier Kyngde: whiche are al of greate powre, and yet subiecte to the greate Cham. One of them dwelleth in the cite of *Quinsai*. In thys Prouince of *Mangi*, is an other Kyngdomme, called *Fugui*, in whiche the people eate mannes fleshe, so that they dye not of any diseafe. They drinke the bloud and eate the fleshe of such as are slayne in ye warres. There are hennes found in this region, which in the stede of fethers, haue heare much lyke cattes heare of blacke colour: And laye very goode egges.

¶ *Of the region of Tangut, and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles hearde in the same, and of the Salamandra.*

The way from Persia to *Cathay*.The cytie of *Loi*.The iorney by y^e desertes.

Bitter waters.



From the Kingdome of Persia, there are two iorneyes to the region of *Cathay*. For either the south side must be obserued towarde *India*, or elles to passe by the prouinces of *Carcham*, *Cotam*, and *Peim*, Northeastwarde to the cite of *Loi*, beyng the greatest and most notable cytie in all that region, lying betwene the East and the North at the entraunce at the great desert. In this cytie, al fuche marchauntes, as entende to passe the desertes, make preparacion for all thinges necessarye for their iorneye: And rest in the same, vntill they are well prouided of strong asses and camels to carye there vitayles. And when in ye desert their vitayles begin to fayie them, they kyl their asses or leaue them there in the wyldernes, because they can no longer prouide them of pasture, vntyll they haue passed ouer the deserte. But they preferue theyr camelles, becaufe they are susteyned wyth lesse meate, and beare greater burthens. In this deserte are often tymes founde bytter waters: but more often fresshe and sweete waters: so that in maner euerye daye for the space of thyrtye dayes, a man maye fynde fresshe water, but that in so lyttle quantitie that it doeth not suffice al the marchauntes whiche passe that waye together. That

deferte is verye full of mountaynes. And when you are come to the lowe and playn ground, the residue of the journey is all together by the fandes : it is throughout baren and saluage, so that it is not able to nourishe any beastes for lacke of pasture. In this wildernes are often tymes heard and sene, as well by daye as by night, fundrie illusions of euyl spirites. And therefore siche as trauayle throughe the same, haue nede to take great hede leaft they disseuer or depart farre in fundre, or leaſte any linger behynde his companie, afwel for that he may hereby lose the sight of them by reason of mountaynes or hilles, lyinge beetwene, as also because there are heard voyces of deuyls, calling them that wander alone, by theyr proper names, conterfeyting the voyces of theyr companie that goeth beefore, by this meanes withdrawing them from the right waye, and bringinge them to destruccion. There is often tymes heard in the ayre, as it were a noyse of muscicall instrumentes : but more often like the founde of drumflades or timbrels. This great defert being passed ouer, they come to the cytie called *Sachion*, which is situate in the enteraunce of the greate Prouince of *Tangut*, where amonge certayne Mahumetistes, are found a fewe Christian men called *Nestoriani* of the secte of *Nestorius*. There are also manye Idoloters, hauinge theyr monasteries consecrated to dyuers Idols, to which they offre many sacrifices and attribute greate honor to deuyls. And when a man hath a sonne borne, he forthwith commendeth him to some Idol, in whose honoure he nourissheth a ramme al that yeare, which after that his sonne be twelue monethes olde, at the nexte feaste of the same Idoll, he and his sonne offre with many ceremonies. When this oblacion is finished, thei bringe the sacrificed fleshe to a place appoynted, where al his kinsfolkes being gathered together, they eate that fleshe with great religion, and kepe the bones reuerently in a certayn vessell : but in the funeralles of the dead they vse these ceremonies and superstitions. Al the neighbors of the dead, prouyde that the dead corps be burned : which custome all the people of the East partes do obserue. Yet some of them kepe ye dead bodye by them certayne dayes beefore they burne it : As some, seuen daies : some for the space of a moneth and some sixe monethes, preparing for the same a cloſe cheſte, so inuoluinge with cereclothe, and powderinge with spyces the bodye therein inclosed, that no euyl fauoure maye passe forth. Thys done, they paynte the cheſte very curiouslye, and couer it with a precious clothe, placing theyr dyninge table harde by the same, where they dyne continually as long as the dead bodye is thus referued at home. And in the dyner tyme for the space of one hole houre, they sette wyne and meat vpon the cheſte, supposinge the soule of the dead bodye to be partaker of the same. The Region of *Tangut*, is verye large, and conteyneth in it many priuate Prouinces, as the Prouince of *Camul*, of *Cinchital*, and *Suchur*, wyth dyuerſe fayre Cyties, whiche are all Subiecte and obeye to the great Cham of *Cathay*. Some of the inhabitantes beleue in Mahumet : some acknowledge Chrifte after the hereſye of *Nestorius*. In the land of *Chinchital*, is a Mountayne oute of the whyche is dygged the myne of stele and Audanici. There is also founde the Serpente called *Salamandra*, which lyueth in the fyre wythoute any hurte. Of the heare of this serpent, is made a certayne cloth, which being cast in the fyre when it is foule, is thereby made cleane and very white if it remaine there for ye space of an houre. Such other innumerable and marueilous thinges, writeth *Paulus uentus* that he hath sene and founde in his nauigacions into these partes : of whom also I haue gathered thus muche, lettinge passe manye other thinges whereof he speaketh more at large.

Illusions of euyl spirites

Voices of deuyls.

Strange noises in the ayre.

The cite of *Sachion*.
Christians of the heresie of *Nestorius*.
Monasteries of Idoloters.
A strange custome

Ceremonies in funeralles

A grosse and wayne perswasion.

The region of *Tangut*.

Mahumetistes.

Stele.
Salamandra.*Paulus Venetus*.

¶ Here endeth the descripcion of the Nauigacions
from Spayne to the newe India Eastward,
and foloweth
Of the newe Ilandes and India found in the West Ocean sea,
from Spayne Westward and Southweste.

¶ Of the newe India,
and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea,
how, when, and by whom they
were found.

*Christophorus
Columbus.*

Great enterprises
have euer ben
counted
phantasticall.

The fyrst viage
of *Christophorus
Columbus.*

The Ilandes
called *Gades.*
The Ilandes of
Canaria,



Christophorus Columbus, a Gentleman of Italie, and borne in the citie of *Genua*, when he had been longe conuerfaunt in the Kyng of Spaynes courte, he applyed hys mynde to searche vnknown partes of the worlde. And for his better furtheraunce herein, made humble peticion to the kinge, to ayde him in this his enterpryse, which doubtlesse shoulde redownde to his great honour, and no little commoditie to all the hole countreye of Spayne, yf by his helpe and charges, he might fynde new regions. But the Kinge and Quene laughed him to scorne, saying: that his ymaginacion was but vayne and phantasticall. At the length, eyght yeares beyng passed ouer, and *Columbus* styll persistinge in his purpose and fute, the Kyng began to geue eare to his talke, and after muche reafoning and debating of the matter, determined to trie the witte of the manne. And there vpon commaunded a foyst and two brigantines to be furnished with all kynde of ordinaunce and vitalyes: which being pre-

pared, the fyrst of September, in the yere of Christ 1492, *Columbus* departed from the coastes of Spayne, and wente forwarde in his viage longe defyred. And when he had passed the Ilandes called *Gades*, he diuerted toward the fortunate Ilandes called *Insule Fortunatæ*, which are now called *Canariæ*, because they are full of dogges. They were in time past called *Fortunate*, for the excellent temperatenes of the ayre, and greate fruytefulness. *Columbus* departinge from hence, sayled towarde the Weste, and at the length founde certayne Ilandes, of the whiche two were very greate, wherof the one he called *Hispana*, and the other *Iohanna*.

¶ Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.

Iohanna.

Hispana or
Hispaniola.

Gold for earth
and glasse.

The king of the
Iland.
Bylding without
the vse of Iron.



Columbus came to the Ilande whiche he called *Iohanna*, he hearde a merueylous sweete noyse of innumerable byrdes, and especiallye of Nightingales whiche wandred in the thicke wooddes in the Moneth of Nouembre. He founde also mooste fayre Ryuers, swete to drinke, and many goodly hauens. And as he sayled by the costes of the Ilande Southweste warde, and coulde synd no ende, he thought it had been the mayne land, and therefore determyned to drawe backe, being partly enforced by roughnes of the sea: and thus returninge some what Eastward, he came to an Iland whiche heafterwarde called *Hispana*, where arriuing to the land, he and his companye was fene of the Inhabitantes of the Iland, which sodeinly fled into the thicke woodes: whom the Spanyardes purfewinge, toke a womanne whome they brought to theyr shippe, entreatinge her verve gentillye, fyllinge her with delicate meates and wyne, and clothing her in fayre apparel, and so let her depart: for thei goe naked, and are not vsed to delicates. And as this womanne returned to her companie, some beyng moued by the lyberalitie declared vnto her, came by greate multitudes to the sea bankes, bringinge golde with them, which they changed for earthen pottes, and drinkinge glasses. Thus a further frendship by this meanes contracted, the Spanyardes begonne more diligently to searche theyr maner of luyng and maners, and so vnderstode that they had a king. And therefore enteringe further into the Iland, they were honorably receyued of the king. Thei vewyde their houfes, and merueyled to see them so bylded without the vse of Iron, which they are vterly without: in the stede wherof they vse a certeyn stone, wherwith the cut and sawe theyr timbre.

¶ *Of the people called Canibales or Anthropophagi, which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe.*



Her as the people of the forenamed Ilandes, fled at the sight of our menne, the cause thereof was, that they suspected them to haue been *Canibals*, that cruel and fearfe people which eate mans fleshe, which nacion our men had ouerpassed, leauinge them on the southfyde. But after they had knowledge of the contrary, they made greuous complaynt to our men, of the beastly and fearfe maners of these *Canibales*, which were no lesse cruel agaynst them, then the Tyger or the Lyon agaynste tame beastes. Declaring furthermore, yat when foeuer they take any of them vnder the age of. xiiij. yeares, they vse to gelde them, and francke them vntyll they be very fat, as we are wont to doe with capons or hennes: and as for fuche as drawe towarde. xx. yeare olde, to kyll them forthwith and pull out theyr guttes, and eate the same freshe and newe, wyth other extreme partes of the bodye, poudering the residue with salte, or keping it in a certayne pickle as we do iegottes or fanfages. Yet eate they not the women, but referue them to encrease, as we doe hennes to lay egges. And if thei take any old women, they kepe them for drudges. And therfore when the *Canibales* make incurfion, the people of these Ilandes flye with all spede. For albeit they vse arrowes, yet are they not able to refyste their fearfenes.

*Canibales
Anthrophophagi.*

The fearfenes of
the *Canibales*.

Mans fleshe
poudered.

¶ *Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of Hispana and of fuche thynges as are found there.*



The inhabitantes of this Ilande, vse in ye stede of bread, certayne rotes like vnto nauie rotes, hauing the tast of soft and grene chestnuttes. Gold with them is in estimacion, for they hange certayne peces therof at their eares: they go not out of ye limities of their own contrie, nor exercise any marchandise with strangers: thei gather gold in ye sandes of a certen riuier which springeth out of veri high montaines. They gather it with great laboure and melte it and caste it, fyrste into masses or wedges, and afterwarde into brode plates. They haue no foure foted beastes, except connies: they haue serpentes of monstrous greatnes, but without hurte or venime. They haue also wylde turtle doues and duckes, muche greater then ours, and gefe whyter then swannes, fauing yat they haue redde heades. Thei haue also many poppingiayes: some grene, some yelow, and some not muche vnylike them of India, with redde circles about their neckes. This Iland bringeth forth also *Mastix*, *Aloe*, and fuche other gummes: and especially certayne redde graynes, which are sharper then pepper.

Rootes in ye
stede of bread
Gold in estimacion.

Howe golde is
gathred.

Serpents wythout
venime.

Poppingiayes.

Spices and
Gummes.

¶ *How Columbus, after he had found newe Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye Canibales.*



Columbus, not a little ioyeful of the landes newly found, the spring tyme drawing nere, he determined to returne to his countrey: leauing with the king of the Iland. 38. men which should diligently searche the situacion of the Ilande, the maners of the people, and the natures of trees and fruites. But he, hoyfeninge vp his sayles, directed hys viage towarde Spayne, bringing with him tenne menne of the fayd Ilande, to th[e]nde that they might learne the Spanishe tonge, which they might easely doe, because al the wordes of their language may well be written with our letters. *Columbus*, after thys his returne, and fortunate successe in his fyrste viage, was honorablye receuyed of the Kyng and Quene, and greatlye magnified with innumerable glorious tittles: willinge that he should no more thenceforth be called *Columbus*, but the Admiral of the great Ocean Sea: and prepared for him towarde his second viage. xvij. foistes and. xij. brigantines, wel furnished with al kynd of artillerye and plentie of vitayles, and in them twelue hundreth men wel appoynted:

The Indian tong
Columbus, at his
returne, is made
Admiral of the
Ocean sea.

The second viage
of *Columbus*

Gades.
The Ilandes of
Canaria.

The Iland of
Dominica.

Insula Crucis.
Lisertes.

Houses of trees.

Young men stalled
to be made fatte.

Fine cokerye.

Canibales allured
wyth lyberalite.

Matinina An
Iland of women
onelye.

The names of
sundrye Ilandes.

Arrowes infected
with venime.

Archipelagus.
Buchema

Corne also to fowe, and al kindes of feedes and plantes. For, excepte pine apple trees and date trees, there growe none in these Ilandes that are knowen to vs. The Admirall toke also with him al fortes of Iron tooles to th[e]intent to byld townes and fortresses where his men might lye in safegarde. Therefore the first day of September departing from the Ilandes called *Gades*, with a prosperous wind he arryued at the Iland of *Canaria* the fyrst daye of October: from whense directing his viage towarde the lefte hande, he fayled toward ye South, and at ye length came to the Ilandes of the *Canibals*. And becaufe he came thether on the Sundaye called the Dominical day, he called the Iland where he arryued, *Dominica*: which when he perceyued to be but saluage and rude, he fayled on further: and in twentie dayes sayling, came to another Iland replenished with al kindes of trees, from which came a marueylous fragrant fauour: By reason whereof, some being allured by the pleasantnes of the place, went aland, where they fawe no kynde of lyuinge beastes, fauinge lyfertes of wonderful houdge greatnes. This Ilande he called *Insula Crucis*, whiche was also an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as afterward they proued in dede. For as they fayled about the Iland, they founde certayne lowe cotages made of trees, lyke vnto flagies. For they fet trees vpright in order round about, fastening postes in them crosse ouer, where vnto the trees cleaue faste, so that by this meanes they cannot fall. They frame the roofes of these cotages, with sharpe toppes after the maner of rownde tentes. And last of al, they inclofe and couer these trees thus fet in order, wyth the leaues of date trees, and certen other trees, to th[e]intent to make them a stronger defence agaynst wynd and wether. And within the cotage, they tye the postes together with ropes of bombage cotton, and a certayne longe roote. They haue couches made, one aboue another, the flowres whereof they strawe wyth heye and cotton. And as foone as they hadde spied our men, they fled incontinente. And when oure men came into theyr houfes, they found in theym certayne young men bound to postes, and kept to be made fatte, and lykewyse many olde womenne whiche these *Canibales* kepte to be their drudges. They founde there also earthen vesselles of all fortes, in which they fodde mens fleshe with poppingiayes, geese, and duckes fleshe, al together in one vessell. They roasted also mans fleshe vpon spyttes, referuing the bones of the armes and legges, whiche they vse in the stede of Iron, to piece and ttype theyr arrowes. For they are vtterlye without Iron. The[y] found also the head of a yong man, yet bleding and fastened to a poste. But certayne womenne whiche had fledde from the *Canibales* to oure menne, the Admirall commaunded to be gorgeiously decked after the maner of our women, and with manye rewardes to be sent agayne to theyr owne companye. By meanes whereof, the *Canibales* beyng allured by the lyberalitie and gyftes of our men, hoping that they also shoulde be lykewyse rewarded, came running toward our men: but when they drew fomwhat nere vnto them, they fled immediatly into the nexte wooddes. And thus our men departing from thence, returned to the Ilande of *Hispana*.

¶ *How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage.*



AS the Admirall departed from the Iland of the *Canibales*, and went forward on his viage, he passed by many Ilandes: among the whiche was one called *Matinina*, in whyche dwell only women, after the maner of them, called *Amazones*, as he learned of the men of the Ilandes which he brought with him into Spayne at his fyrste viage, and faued them from the fearfenes of the *Canibales*. He passed also innumerable other Ilandes of which to some he gaue names, as *Mons Farratus*, *Sancta Maria rotunda*, *Sancta Martinus*, *Sancta Maria antiqua*, and *Sancta Crux*. Into the which oure men entering to th[e]intent to fetche freshe water, found foure *Canibales*, which had taken foure yonge women: who, as foone as they had spied our men, wringed theyr handes, fering therby to defyre ayde of oure men: at whose coming to deliuer them, the men fled into the woodes and left the women. Shortly after, our men saw a bote coming on the fea with. viij. men and as many women: with whom oure men bickeringe lost one of theyr companions, by reason that these barbariens are accustomed to infecte theyr arrowes with venime: yet oure men preuayled and slewe parte of them, and broughte the refydue by forse to the Admyrall. As they departed from hence, they found many other Ilandes, but such as they could not come to for the roughnes of the fea and multitude of rockes. But some of the smallest brigantines which drewe no great depth, went somewhat nearer, and noumbred aboue feuen and fortie Ilandes, and called the place *Archipelagus*. Sayling from hence, they found another Iland called *Buchema*, into the whiche ye *Canibales* make fundry incurfions, by reason wherof the inhabitantes are at continual warre with them. Thus at the length, the Admirall with his hole nauie returned to the Iland of *Hispana*: but in an euyl tyme. For they which he hadde lefte there for a

garrifon, were all dead: as were also they whiche he toke with him from the same Ilande into Spayne to vse them for intrepretours. Of whiche feuen dyed by change of the ayre. One of them was permitted of the Admirall to departe, when the nauie came neare to hys country. The residue stole away priuelye, and swamme to lande: but the Admirall doubting whether all his men were dead or no, whiche he lefte in the Iland, commaunded certayne ordinaunce to be shot of, that by the noyse thereof they myghte haue warning to come forth, yf any laye lurkinge in corners: but none appeared, whose fatall dayes had fynished theyr lyfe. At the length, the kyng of the Ilande beyng therto enforced, declared the hole matter to the Admyrall as well as he coude by interpretours: affirming that there were in the Iland other Kynges beyde him: and of greater power then he, which were fore offended that the Spaniardes hadde subdued the Ilandes: and in reuenge therof, came to the town where the Spaniardes lay, which they ouercame and burnt, and slew al the men therin: and that he also at the same conflicte, taking part with our men, was fore wounded with an arrow on the arme, for the better tryall whereof he bore hys arme in a towell, because it was not yet hole of that wounde. But shortelye after they had knowledge, that the King fayned this tale: so that he hardely escaped the handes of the Admiral, who was determyned wyth some kynd of punishment to haue examined him further. But he suspecting the matter, fled into ye inner partes of the Iland, declaring therby, that he was the destruction of our men: whom, eertyn of our companie, purfuinge, founde manye marueylous thinges: and especiallye ryuers in whiche is founde muche golde, and a mountayne, whose fande is sparkeled with gold. In this place, the Admiral bylded a citie, which he compassed about with a walle. And departing from hence, he searched almost all the Iland: in ye inner partes wherof he bylded a towre, and named it S. Thomas towre, whiche he made to th[e] intent that he might the more safely searche out the secretes of so plentifull a region, and especiallye the gold mines of the same: and thus leauinge a garrifon there, he departed, takinge with him three foystes, wherwith he sayled to feke newe Ilandes, and came first to the Ilande of *Cuba*, and from thence to *Iamaica*, being greater then *Sicilia*, very fruytfull and wel inhabited. Which, when he had vewed, he departed from thence, and sayled about the sea costes where he sawe innumerable other small Ilandes, standinge so thicke, that the ship was in maner borne a lande: and was therefore enforced to returne home, the same way which he came.

Change of ayre
is daungerous.

The king
dissembleth with
the Admyrall.

Goldefound in
riuers and
mountaines.

The Ilandes
of *Cuba* and
Iamaica.

A multitude of
Ilandes

¶ *How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendeshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes.*



IN this meane tyme, the Spaniardes which the admiral had left in the Iland of *Hispana*, had euyl entreated the inhabitauntes: so that for wante of vitayles and foode, they begonned to famyne: imputinge the fault hereof vnto the Christian men, which had digged vp al the rootes wherwith thei were accustomed to make theyr bread. And whereas they yet perceaued, that ye Christien men entended to continue there, thei sent an ambaffadour to the admiral to defyre him to restrayne the outragioufnes and crueltie of his men, at whose handes they sustained such iniuries and violence, as they scarcely loked for at the handes of mortal enemies. Declaringe further, that vnder the pretence of feking for gold they committed innumerable wronges and mischieuous actes, spoyling in maner all the hole region: and that for the auoyding of such enormities and oppreffions, they hadde rather paye tribute, then to be thus dayly vexed with incurfions, and neuer to be at quiete. Vpon this complaynte it was agreed, that they shoulde paye yearely tribute to the Christian king and that they should applie them selues to gather and encrease theyr rotes, whiche were to them in the fiede of flowre and wheat, and so consumed that with great labour they coude scarcely fynde any in the wooddes. They payde therefore for their tribute, euery thre monethes, certayn pound weyghtes of gold: but suche as had no gold, payde spyces, and goffampine cotton. In the meane time the Spaniardes, who should haue been occupied in digging for golde, gaue them selues to play, wantonnes and idlenes, contemning, and falling into hatred with their gouernour, by which theyr licentioufnes, the people of the Iland beyng prouoked, became more difobedient and wyld, degeneratinge from al kind of honestie and faithfulnes: yea ye spaniardes also became so negligent in feking for gold, yat sometyme the charges exceeded the gaynes. Neuertheleffe in the yere of Christ, 1501. they gathered within ye space of two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of golde. But the Admirall appoyntinge his brother *Bartholomeus Columbus*, to be gouernour of the Iland, he in the yere. 1495. determined to returne to Spayne, to certifye the kyng of al these matters. In which viage, he manfullye defended him self in battayl against the rebelles of certayne other Ilandes which had confpyred agaynst the Spanyardes.

The crueltie of the
Christian men

Crueltie of
couetousnes.

Bread of rotes

The tribute of
the barbarians

Disobedience
foloweth idlenes

Note.

*Bartholomeus
Columbus.*

¶ *How the Portugals fought newe Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to Calicut.*



N this meane tyme that ye Spanyardes foughte newe and vnknown landes in the West partes, the Portugales attempted to doe the fame in the Easte partes. And leaft one of them should be a lette or hinderaunce to the other, they deuyded the world betwene them by the auctoritie of the Bifhop of Rome, Alexander the. vi. of that name. And that on this condicion, that from the Ilandes called *Hesperides* (whiche are now called *Caput ueride*) the one should fayle Westwarde, and the other towarde the South pole, thus deuyding the world betwene them in two equal partes. So that whatfoeuer vnknown landes shoulde be

discouered in the Easte partes, the fame to be dewe to the Portugales: And all suche as shoulde be founde in the Weste partes, to appertayne to the Spanyardes. Whereby it came to passe, that the Spaniardes, euer by the South, fayled into the Weste, where they founde a large mayne land, with Ilandes great and litle innumerable, hauing in them great plentie of golde and pearles, and other great riches. But the Portugales, by the Southe, and costes of the Ilandes called *Hesperides*, and *Equinoctial* lyne, and *Tropicus Capricorni*, came into ye East, by the goulfe called *Sinus Perficus*, euen vnto the costes of India, within the riuier of *Ganges*, whereas is now the great market towne, and kingedome of *Calicut*. And from thence to the Iland of *Taprobana*, (now called *Sumetra*, *Zamara* or *Samotra*) and so forth to *Aurea Cherfonesus*, whereas is nowe the great cytie of *Malaccha*, beying one of ye most famous market townes of al ye East partes. From *Malaccha*, they entered into a great goulfe, by which they came to the region of *Sinarum*. Not farre from *Malaccha*, are the Ilandes called *Molucca*, in which al kyndes of spyces growe and are brought to the cytie of *Malaccha*. But the Spanyardes hauing knowledge what greates commoditie the Portugales had receuyed by the Ilandes of *Molucca* attem[p]ted to proue yf they also might find the same Ilandes in sayling so farre Westward that they mighte at the length by West and southwest come into the East, as by good reason they presuppofed the roundnesse of the earth would permitte, if they were not otherwyse lette by the fyrme or mayne land lyinge in the waye and stoppinge theyr passage, whereof as yet was no certeyntie knowen. And this dydde they to th[e] intent that by this meanes they myghte more easelye and wyth lesse charge bringe spyces from thence into Spayne. Therefore, the maner of this viage was, that they should fayle from the Weste, vnder the lowest hemispherie or halfe compasse of the earth, and so to come into the East. A thinge surelye that myghte seeme verye harde to attempte, becaufe it was vncertaine whether that, most prudente and beneficiall nature, (who worketh al thinges with most high prouidence) had not so deuided and seperated the East from the West, partely by sea, and partely by land, that there might by this waye haue been no passage into the East. For it was not yet knowen, whether that great region of *America*, (whiche they call the fyrme or mayne lande) dyd seperate the Weste sea from the East: But it was founde that that fyrme lande extended from the West to the South. And that also towarde the North partes were found two other regions, whereof the one is called *Regio Baccalearum*, and the other *Terra Florida*: which, if they were adherent to the sayde fyrme land, there could be no passage by the Weste seas into the East India, sofarre as ther was not yet founde any strayghte of the sea, wherby any enteraunce mighte be open into the East. In this meane while, the kyng of Spayne beyng elected Emperoure, prepared a nauie of fyue shippes, ouer the whiche he appointed one *Magellanus* to be captayne, commaunding him that he should fayle towarde the coastes of the sayd fyrme land, dyrectinge his viage by the south partes thereof, untill he had eyther found the ende of the same, or elles some streyghte wherby he mighte passe to those odoriferous Ilandes of *Molucca*, so famously spoken of for the great abundaunce of swete fauours and spices founde therein. The shippes therefore, beying well furnished with all thinges necessarie, *Magellanus* departinge from Ciuile in Spayne, the tenth day of August, in the yeare of Christ. 1519. came fyrst to ye Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to ye Ilandes called *Hesperides*: from whiche dyrectinge hys course betwene the West and the East toward the sayd fyrme land, in few dayes with prosperous sayling, he discouered a corner or poynt of the sayd mayne land, called *Promontorium S. Marie*, where the people dwell, called *Canibales*, whiche are accustomed to eate mans fleshe. From hence he fayled on southwarde by the long tracte of this fyrme land, which reacheth so farre into ye south and extendeth so many degrees beyond ye circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, yat the south pole (called pole Antartike) is there eleuated fortie and fyxe degrees. And thus beyng brought into the East, they saw certayn Indians gatheringe shel fyshes by the sea bankes: beying men of very high stature, clothed with beastes skinnes. To whom, whereas certayne of the Spaniardes went a land, and shewed them belles and paynted papers, they begon to daunce and leape aboute the Spaniardes, with a rude and murmuring sounge. At the length there came three other, as though they

The bishop of rome deuideth the world.

Hesperides or *Caput ueride*.

How the Spanyardes and ye Portugales deuided the world betwene them.

Gold and Pearles

The *Equinoctial* lyne.

The riuier of *Ganges*.

Calicut.

Taprobana.

Samotra.

The great cytie of *Malaccha*.

The region of *Sinarum*.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*.

Sayling into the East by the west

The roundnes of the erth.

The fyrme land

Spices

The viage from the West vnto the Easte.

America.

The fyrme land.

Regio Baccalearum
Terra Florida.

The king of spayne sendeth fourth shippes.

The viage of *Magellanus* by the west into ye east.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*

The Ilandes of *canaria*.

Promontorium S. Marie.
Canibales

The eleuacion of the south pole. 46 degrees

The Region of giannes.

were ambaffadours, whiche by certayn signes defyred ye Spaniardes to go with them further into the land, making a countenance as though thei wold intertayn them wel, where vpon, ye captayne *Magellanus* sent with them. vii. men well instructed, to th[e] intent to searche ye region and maners of the people. And thus they went with them into ye desertes, wher they came to a low cotage couered with wylde beastes skinnes, hauing in it two mansions, in one of ye which were women and children and in the other only men. They interteined their gestes after a barbaros and beastly maner, whiche neuertheles femed to them princelike: for they killed a beast, not much vnlike a wylde asse, whose flesshe (but halfe rosted) they set before our men, without any other kind of meate or drinke. Here were our men of necessitie constrained to lye al night vnder these skinnes, by reason of the great abundaunce of snowe and wynde. And when it was day, our men were very earnest with them, and would in maner haue enforced them to goe with them to the shippe: which thing thei perceauing, couered them felues from the head to the foote with certayn horrible beastes skinnes, and paynted theyr faces with fundrye colours. Thus taking their bowes and arrowes, and bringing with them other of theyr companie, of much greater stature and terrible aspect, then they were, they shewed them felues to oure men in araye, as though they were ready to fight. But the Spaniardes, whiche thoughte that the matter would haue comen to hand strokes, commaunded a piece of ordinaunce to be shotte of. The which although it dyd no hurte, yet these hardy giauntes, which a little before femed to be as bold as though they durst haue made warre against Iupiter, were by the noyse thereof put in fuche feare, that they forthwith beganne to entreate for peace. Our men entended to haue brought some of these Gyauntes wyth them into Spayne for the straungenes of the thinge: but they all efcaped oute of theyr handes. *Magellanus* therefore vnderstandinge that it were vnprofytable to tarie there any longer, and that also the fea was very rough, and the wether stormie and boyste[r]ous, and that furthermore the firme lande extended further toward the fouth, in so muche, that the further they sayled that waye, they should fynde it so much ye colder, he deferred hys proceeding vnto [in?] the moneth of may, at whiche tyme, ye sharpenes of winter, exccadeth with them, when as with vs, sommer is begon. He found there greate plentie of wood. The fea also ministred vnto them great abundaunce of shelifishe, besyde other fyshes of fundrie kyndes. He found lykewyse many springes of freshe and holefome waters: and vsed huntinge and taking of foules. Only bread and wyne, was lackinge in the shippe. The fouth pole was there eleuated fortie degrees.

Cotages couered with beastes skinnes.

Onager.

Abundaunce of snowe and wynde

The Giauntes are putte to flyght.

Extreme winter in maye.

The south pole eleuate.xl. degrees

¶ *How Magellanus by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne.*



He wynter now being past, the. xxiiij. day of Auguste, *Magellanus* departed from the place aforesayde, and styll folowed the tracte of the firme land toward the fouth, vntyl at the length, the. xxvi. day of Nouember, he found in that firme land, certayn open places lyke vnto strayghtes or narrow seas. Into the which entring with his nauie, he commaunded that certayn shippes should searche the goulfes on euery fyde, yf anye way or passage might be found into the East. At the length, they found a certayn depe straight, by the which they were perfwaded yat there was enteraunce into some other mayne sea, infomuch that *Magellanus* attempted to searche ye same. This straight was found to be somtime of ye bredth of thre Italian myles, sometyme of two, and sometime of tenne, and reached fomwhat toward the West. The altitude or eleuacion of the fouth pole in this place, was founde to be. lii. degrees. They coule see no people stering in the costes of this entraunce. Therefore *Magellanus* seing thys lande to be rough and saluage, and vnpleafaunt to abide in, by reason of extreme cold, he thought it not worthye the trauayle, to spend any time in serching the same. Therefore failing forward in his viage thus attempted by ye said strayghte, (which is now called the strayght of *Magellanus*) he was therby brought into another mayn sea, verye greate and large. The length of this strayght or narrow fea, is estemed to be a hundreth spanishe miles. The land which he had on his right hande, he doubted not to be mayne lande: and that on the left hand, he supposed to bee Ilandes. *Magellanus* fawe lykewyse the fyrme lande to be extended directly toward ye North: wherefore letting passe that great lande, he sayled by that greate and large sea betwene the West and the North: and that for this intente, that at the length he might by the West come into the East, and agayne vnder the burning lyne called *Zona Torrida*, beyng well assured that the Ilandes of *Moluca* (which he soughte) were in the Easte, and not farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne. When they hadde thus sayled fortie dayes, and came now agayne vnder the line or circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, they founde two lyttle Ilandes inhabyted, but very barren, and therefore called them infortunate Ilandes. Departinge from thence they failed on for a great space, and found a certayne Ilande which ye inhabitantes called

The strayght of *Magellanus*.

The altitude of the south pole. lii. degrees.

The main sea beyond the strayghtes.

The fyrme land.

The burning line *Torrida Zona*.
The Ilandes of *Moluca*
Tropicus Capricorni.

The Iland of
Inuagana.
The Ilandes of
Gades called
Cales Males.
Archipelagus.
Acatan.
Selani.

Massana.
Subuth.

Bread of the
trunke of trees.
Drinke of the
dropping of date
trees.

Goide and Ginger

Magellanus is
slayne.

The new
captaine *Serranus*
is betraied of his
bondman.

The king of
Subuth conspyreth
agaynst the
Spanyarden.

The captayne
Serranus is taken
prisoner.

The Ilandes of
Gibeth and *Porne*.
Siloli.

Peace and Idleness

Bread of Rice

Camphire

Pearles as bigge
as turtle doues
egges.

A maruelous big
shellfish

Gilona.
Men with
hanging eares.

Inuagana, where ye eleuacion of the Northe pole, (called pole Artike) was. xij. degrees: And the length from the Ilandes called *Gades*, by the Weste, was iudged to bee. c.lviii. [one hundred and fifty-eight] degrees. Thus proceeding, they saw dyuers other Ilandes, and that so manye, that they supposed they had been brought into a great sea lyke vnto that called *Archipelagus*, where with fynges and poyntinges (as the dumme are wont to speake with the dumme) they asked of these Indians, the names of the Ilandes, whereby they learned that they were in *Acatan*, and not farre from the Ilande called *Selani*, wel inhabited and replenished with abundaunce of al thinges necessarie for the commodities of this life. Saying therefore toward the Ilande of *Selani*, they were with a contrary wind driuen on the Iland of *Massana*, from whence they came to the greate Iland of *Subuth*, where ye Spanyarden were wel enterteined of the Kinge of the Iland, who brought them into a certayn cotage, and set before them such delicacies as he hadde. Their bread, was of the trunke of a certen tree, cut in pieces, and fried with oyle. Their drinke was of the humoure or ioyse which droppeth out of the branches of the date trees, when they are cutte. Their meate was suche as they toke by foulinge, with such fruites as the contrei brought forth. This Ilande was very riche of gold and ginger. In these partes *Magellanus* made warre agaynst the inhabitants of certayne other Ilandes: In whiche conflicte, the spaniarden hauing the ouerthrow *Magellanus* was slayne with feuen of hys men. When the Spaniarden hadde thus lost their captayne, they elected a new gouernoure of their nauie, appointing one *Iohannes Serranus* to that office. *Magellanus* had also a bondman borne in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whom he had bought in the cite of *Malacca*. This bondman vnderstode the Spanishe tongue: and where as the captayne *Serranus* could do nothing without him, who now lay sicke by reason of the woundes which he had receaued in the said conflicte, so that he was fayne to speake sharply to him and threaten to beate him or he could geat him out of the shyppe, he here vpon conceaued so great hatred and indignacion agaynst the Spanyarden, that he wente immediately to the Kinge of *Subuth*, declaring the couetousnes of the Spaniarden to be vnfaciabie, and yat they wold shortly vse crueltie agaynst him also, and bring him into subiection and feruitude. The barbarous king beleued his wordes, and therewith pryuelye with the ayde of the other Ilandes, conspired agaynst the Spanyarden, and toke or slew as many of them as came to a banket whereunto they were bidden vnder pretence of frendship. Among the which also, *Serranus* the Captaine was taken prisioner. But the resydue of the Spanyarden which remayned in the shippes, beyng taught and warned by the euyll chaunce which befell to their companions, and fearing greater deceytes and conspiracies, lyft vp their ankers and gaue wind to their sayles. In the meane tyme was *Serranus* brought bound to the sea bankes, desiring his companions to delyuer or redeme him from that horrible captiuitie of hys enemies. But the Spaniarden, albeit they toke it for a dishonour, to leaue or forsake their Captayne, yet fearing fraude or further dissimulacion, they sayled asyde from that Iland, and came to the Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne*. In this mayne sea, were two great Ilandes, wherof the one was called *Siloli*, and the other *Porne* the lesse, where our men were wel entreated. The inhabitantes of *Porne* honoure the funne and the mone: they keepe also a certayne ciuile iustice and frendly loue one to another. And aboue all thinges, desyre peace and ydleness. Therefore their chiefe studie is, in no case to moleste their neyghbours or straungers, or to be iniurious to anye man. They haue lyttle houses, made of earth and wood, and couered partely with rubbishe, and partly with ye bowes of date trees. They take as manye wyues as they are able to keepe. Their comon meat, is such as they take by foulinge or fischinge. They make bread of ryce: and drinke, of the liquor whiche droppeth from the branches of date trees, cutte. Some vse marchaundyse in the Ilandes nere about them: some applie themselves to huntinge and fysching, and some to husbandry. Their apparell, is of Gossampine cotton. They haue greate abundaunce of camphire, ginger and cinomome.

¶ How the Spaniarden came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.



THE Spaniarden takinge their leaue of the king of *Porne*, departed: directing their viage towarde the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche were shewed vnto them by the same King. They came fyrst to the costes of the Ilande called *Solo*, where are found Pearles as bygge as turtle doues egges: but they are gathered in the depth of the sea. The inhabitantes of this Ilande, at suche tyme as the Spanyarden came thether, toke a shellfish of suche hodge bignes yat the fleshe therof wayed. xlviij. pound weyght. Wherby it is apparaunt yat great pearles should be found there forasmuch as pearles are the byrth of certayne shellfishes. From hence they came to the Iland of *Gilona*, in which are certayne people hauing hanging eares of such length, that they hang downe to their shoulders. Wherat as the Spaniarden marueyled, the men

of the Iland tolde them, that not farre from thence was another Iland in which were a kind of men, not onely with hanging eares, but also with eares of fuche breadth and length, that with one of them they myghte couer theyr hole head. But the Spanyardes, who foughte for gold and spyces, and not for monstres, fayled dyrectly to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, where they arryued, the eyghte moneth after the death of their gouernour *Magellanus*. These Ilandes are fyue in noubre, the names wherof are these *Tharant*, *Muthil*, *Thedori*, *Mare*, and *Mathien*. Some of them are fyuate on thys fyde the *Equinoctiall* lyne, some vnder it, and some beyonde it. Some beare cloues, some Nutmegges, and some Cinomome. They are not farre distaunt the one from the other. They are but little and narrowe. The inhabitantes are very poore, because ther is no encrease of anye other thinge fauing onely of spyces. They lyue with bread and fyfhe, and fometime poppingiayes. They lurke in lowe cotages: And in fyne, all thinges with them are despicable and vile, beside peace, idlenes, and spyces. In *Thedori* is great plentie of cloues, as also in *Turante* and *Mathien*. The trees which bringe forth cloues, growe not, but on rockes and broken cliffes, which fometime they grow fo thicke, that they appeare lyke a lyttle woode or groue. This tree, bothe in leaues, biggenes, and heyght, is much lyke vnto the baye tree. It beareth the fruite in ye toppes of euery braunche. The budde springeth out fyrst, and then in it the floure, not much vnlike the floure of an orange tree. The cloue is fyrst redde: but after beyng scorched by the heate of the sonne, it is made blacke. The inhabitautes deuide the groues of these trees betwene them, as we doe the vynes. The Iland of *Muthil*, bringeth forth cinomome. This tree, is ful of small braunches and baren, best lyking in a drye foyle, and is very like vnto the tree, that beareth the pomgranate. The barke of this tree, by reason of the great heate of the sonne, ryng from the braunches, or bodie of the fame, is gathered and dried at the sonne, and is fo made perfecte cinomome. Neare vnto this, is another Iland, called *Beda*, greater and larger, then anye of the Ilandes of *Molucca*. In this Iland groweth the Nutmegge, whose tree is bigge and highe, and much lyke vnto the walnutte tree, for as is the walnutte, so is this fruite defended with a double couering, as fyrste with a grene huske, vnder the whiche is a thinne skinne or rimme like a nette, encompassing the shell of the nutte: which skinne we call the flowre of the nutmegge, but of the Spanyardes, it is called mace, an excellent and holefome spyce. The other couering, is the shell of the nutte, within the which is the fruite it selfe, which we call ye nutmegge. Ginger groweth here and there in all the Ilandes of this *Archipelagus*, or mayne sea. Of the whiche, some is fowen, and some groweth of it selfe. But that which is fowen, is the better. The herbe of this, is lyke vnto that which beareth faffrane and hath hys roote, (which is Ginger,) much lyke vnto the fame. In this meane time came two other shippes out of Spayne: whereof the one fayled directly to the poynte of *Aphrica*, called *Promontorium bonæ spei*: And the other by the greate mayne South sea, to the coastes of that continent or fyrme land whereof we haue spoken here beefore. It shall suffyfe that we haue hetherto declared of the nauigacions whiche the Spanyardes attempted by the Weste to fayle into the Easte, by the strayghte of *Magellanus*, where the passage by Sea is open into the Easte, by the continente or fyrme lande of the newe worlde, called *America*. Nowe therefore lette vs retourne to the other Nauigacions of *Columbus*, otherwyfe called the Admyrall, who longe beefore was the fyrst fynder of the newe Ilandes, and of the fayde mayne or fyrme land, and yet founde not that strayght or narrow sea, by the which *Magellanus* fayled from the West into the East.

The spanyardes
arriue at the
Ilandes of
Molucca.

The tree that
beareth cloues.

The cinomome
tree.

The nutmeg tree

Mace.
The nutmegge-
Ginger

*Promontorium
bonæ spei*

Columbus the
admyrall, first
finder of the new
Ilandes

¶ *The thyerde nauigation of Christophorus Columbus.*



IN the yeare of Christ. 1498. *Columbus* the Admyrall departed from Spayne with eyght soiftes, and arryued fyrst at the Ilandes of *Madera*, where he deuyded hys nauie into two partes. For. v. of these shippes he directed to the Iland of *Hispana*: and with the residue, he failed towarde the fouth, entendinge to passe ouer the *Equinoctial* line, and from thense to turne towarde the Weste, to searche fuche landes as were hetherto vnknowne to the Christian men. Coning therfore to *Caput ueride*, he failed to the burning line, called *Torrída zona* where he found so great heate, that he was in daunger of death: but returninge his shippes towarde the West, he found a more holefome ayre and (as God would) came at the length to a lande well inhabited, where there came agaynst him and his, a bote with. xxiiiij. young men, armed with bowes, arrowes, and shieldes, couering only theyr priuie members with a clothe of Goffampine cotton, hauing also very longe heare. The admirall, (as well as he could by signes) allured them to comunicacion. But they trusted not our men, fearing some deceate. The Admirall perceauing that he could nought preuayle, by signes and tokens, he determined with Musical instrumentes to appeafe their wildnesse. As the minstrelles therefore blewe theyr shaulmes, the barbarous people drew neare, suspecting that noyfe to bee a token of warre, whereupon they made ready theyr bowes and arrowes. But the Spaniardes drawinge nearer vnto them, caste certayne appaell into theyr

The Ilandes of
Madera
Hispana or
Hispaniata

Greate heate vnder
the burning lyne.

Signes and
pointing

The faire region
of *Parias*.
Gold and Pearles

Fearse beastes.
Canibales

The Spanyardes
refuse to obey the
admiral.

bote, willing by this token of frendshippe to concile them, although all were in vayne. For they fled all awaye. Wherefore the Admyrall departing from thence, came to a region called *Parias*, wel inhabited and ful of ciuile people, declaring muche humanitie toward straungers. They shewed our men Pearles and Gold, and such other riches, desyryng them to come a land, where they gently entreated them. When our men asked them where they had fuche plentie of golde: they (with home poynting was in the stede of speech) declared by signes and tokens, that thei had it in certayne mountaines, and that thei could not without great daunger refort thether, by reafon of certayne fearse beastes in those partes, and also becaufe of the cruell people called *Canibales*, whiche inhabite those mountaynes. But the Admiral, becaufe his wheate fayled, was enforced to departe thence. Dyrrectinge therefore his viage toward ye North easte, he came to the Iland of *Hispana*, where he found all things confounded and out of ordre. For the Spanyardes which were lefte in the Ilandes, refused to obeye the Admirall and his brother, mouinge greuous complayntes agaynst them before the King of Spaine, and at the length fente them thether bound.

¶ Howe Petrus Alonfus soughte newe Ilandes.



Parias
Curtana.
Pearles for belles
and nedles
Peacockes.
Phesants.

The Region of
Canchietes.
The region of
Ciniana

Pearles

After that the Admyrall hadde incurred the indignacion of the Kynge, manye of his companions, fuche as hadde been broughte vpppe with him, and were experte Sea menne, decreede to searche other partes of the worlde yet vnknown. Among which number was *Petrus Alonfus*, who with a shippe wel furnished, fayled to *Parias*, and from thence to *Curtana*, where he begon to exerceyse merchaundise with the inhabitantes, receauinge Pearles for belles and nedles. Entiring also into the land, he was honourably entertayned. In their woodes, he saw innumerable Peacockes, nothings vnylike vnto oures, fauing that the males differ litle from the females. In this region are great plentie of Phefantes. *Alonfus* departinge from hense, failed to the region of *Canchietes*, beyng fixe dayes fayling from *Curtana*, toward the West. In this region is great abundance of golde, Poppingiayes, Goffampine cotton, and moſte temperate ayre. From hence he fayled into another fruiteful region, but inhabited with wilde menne, which could by no gentilnes be allured to frendshippe. Departinge therefore from thence, he came to the region of *Ciniana*, whereas pearles are found in great plentie: but before he came there, he chaunced to come amonge the *Canibales*: agaynst whom, discharginge a piece of ordinaunce, he droue them easely to flight. But *Alonfus* laden with pearles, returned home into Spayne.

¶ Howe Pinzonus, companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes.



Naked people.
Gold for belles.

A conflict betwene
the wild men and
the Spanyardes
The Region of
Payra.
Woodes of
Sanders.
The tree yat
beareth *Cassia*
fistula.
A monstrous
beast.

Incentius, otherwise called *Pinzonus* in the yeare of Chrifte. 1499. prepared foure brigantines, and failed fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to *Caput ueride*. From whence directinge his viage toward the south farre beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne, he found men in a certayne Iland, but such as he could by no meanes conyle vnto him. Therefore leauinge them, he came to another lande, in whiche were innumerable naked people, diffimuling that thei desired to ioyne frendship with the Spaniardes. And whereas one of our men caste a bell amonge them oute of the shippe, they againe cast to the Spanyardes a masse or piece of golde: which, one of oure companye somewhat to bolde, attemptinge to take vp, they fodeynlye toke him and caried him awaye with merueylous swiftenes: but our men leauinge their shippes, made haſt to help their fellowe, in so muche that the matter came to handstrokes. This conflict was so sharpe, that our men hadde much a doe to escape wyth theyr lyues, by reafon of the fearfenes of the barbarians. Departing therefore from thence, they fayled toward the Northeaste, and came to the region of *Payra*, and to the Ilandes neare aboute the same in the whiche are woodes of sanders wherewith the marchauntes lade theyr shippes, and carie it into other countreys. In this Region also growe the trees, whiche beare *Cassia fistula* of the beste kynd. There is also founde a foure foted beaſt of monstrous shape, whose former parte is lyke vnto a wolfe, fauing that the feete are lyke vnto the fete of a man, with eares like an owle: Hauinge also beneath his comon belye, an other belye lyke vnto a purse or bagge, in which he kepeth his yonge whelpes fo longe, vntyll they be able safely to wander abroad alone, and to geat theyr meate withoute the helpe of theyr parents. The whelpes while they are very yong, neuer come out of this bagge but when they sucke. This portentous beaſt with her three whelpes, was broughte to Ciuile in Spaine, and from thence to *Granata*.

¶ Of the foure nauigacions of Americus Vesputius to the newe Ilandes.



Americus Vesputius, beyng sent with *Christophorus Columbus*, in the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcij. at the commaundement of Ferdinando King of Castile, to seke vnknown landes, and wel instructed in sayling on the sea, after a fewe yeares, fet forward foure viages of hys owne proper charges. That is to witte, two vnder the sayd King Ferdinando, and two other vnder Emanuel, king of Portugale, of the which he himselfe wryteth after this maner.

Ferdinando kinge of castiie.

¶ The fyrste viage of Americus Vesputius.



IN the yere of Christ, M.cccc.xcvij. the. xx. daye of Maye, we came with foure shippes, to the fortunate Ilandes, called *Insulæ fortunatæ*, where the North pole hath his eleuacion. xxvij. degrees, and. xl. minutes. And from thence within the space of. xxvij. dayes, we came to a land more Westwarde then the fortunate Ilandes, where the North pole was eleuate. xvi. degrees: where also we founde a nacion of naked people, of innumerable multitude, whiche as fone as they sawe vs, fled to the next mountayne. From hence within two dayes sayling, we came to a safe port wher we founde manye men, which with much adoe, we could scarcely allure to comunicacion, although we profered them belles, lokinge glaffes, cristallyne cuppes, and suche other iewelles. But at the length perceauing our good wyll and liberalitie towarde them, they came to vs by heapes, and ioyned frendshyp with vs without all feare. They goe all as naked as they came forth of their mothers wombe. They suffre no heare on their bodie fauing only on theyr head, in so much that they pulo[f] ye heares of their browes. They are all so perfectlye exercysed in swimminge, that they can continue therein, for the space of two leages without any thinge to beare them vp and especialye the women. Their weapons are bowes and arrowes. They arme theyr arrowes with ye teeth of beastes and fyses, bycause they lacke Iron and other metals. They kepe warre against their borderers whiche are of straunge language. They fyght not for the enlargeing of theyr dominion, forasmuche as they haue no Magistrates: nor yet for th[e] increafe of riches, because thei are contente with their owne commodities: but onely to reuenge the death of theyr prediceffours. At theyr meate, they vse rude and barberous fashions, lying on the ground without any table clothe, or couerlet. They slepe in certayne greate nettes made of Gossampine cotton and hanged a losfe in the ayre beetwene trees. Their bodies are verye smothe and clene by reason of theyr often washinge. They are in other thinges fylthy and withoute shame. Thei vse no lawful coniunction of mariage, but euery one hath as many women as him listeth, and leaueth them agayn at his pleasure. The women are very fruitful, and refuse no labour al the whyle they are with childe. They trauayle in maner withoute payne, so that the nexte day they are cherefull and able to walke. Neyther haue they theyr bellies wrimpeled, or loofe, and hanginge pappes, by reason of bearinge manye children. Their houfes and cabbens, are all in common. Their houfes are fashyoned lyke vnto belles: are made of greate trees fastened together, couered wyth the leaues of date trees, and made very stronge against wind and tempestes. They are also in some places so great, that in one of them fixe hundreth persons may lodge. Thei vse euery feuenth or eyght yeare, to remoue and chaunge theyr dwelling places, because that by theyr longe continuance in one place, the ayre shoulde bee infected. They vse no kynd of marchaundise or bying and selling, beyng content onely with that which nature hath lefte them. As for Golde, Pearles, precious stoness, iewelles, and suche other thinges, which we in Europa esteeme as pleasures and delicacies, they fette noughte by. They haue no kynde of corne. Their common feedinge, is a certayne roote whiche they drye and beate and make floure or meale therof. They eate no kynd of fleshe except mans fleshe: for they eate all suche as they kyl in theyr warres, or o[t]herwise take by chaunce. When we had thus vewed the countreye, and confydered the maners of the people, we determyned to sayle further, downe by the landes syde, and came after a fewe daies, to a certayn hauen, where we sawe about twentie greate houfes, rayfed vppe muche after the fashion of belles. There came vnto vs a great multitude of men vnder pretense of frendshyp. Some swimminge, and some in botes. Who, as fone as thei drew neare vnto vs, fodeynly bent theyr bowes against vs, where we defended oure felues manfully. In this bickeringe, we slewe of them about twentie, beefyde manye that were wounded: But of our men, were onely fyue hurte, whiche were all perfectlye healed. Thus departinge from this hauen, we sayled on, and came to another nacion, in conuerfacion and tongue vtterlye differing from the fyrst. For

Insulæ fortunatæ.

Naked menne.

Wylde men allured with gentlenes

People expert in swimminge.

Cabens hanging betweene trees.

Women in comen.

Women very stronge and fruitful.

Housses made of trees.

Housses of maruelous bigness.

Ryches and superfluites contemned

Bread of a certain roote.
Mans flesh eaten

A conflict

A gentle nacion
Parias.
Fruites vnlike
vnto oures.

Gold everywhere,

Canibales.

An expedition
agaynst ye
Canibales

comming oute of our shippe, we were very frendly entreated of them, where we continued for the space of nyne dayes. This region is verye fayre, and fruitefull, hauinge manye pleafaunt woodes, which continue grene all the yeare longe. They haue frutes innumerable, vtterlye vnlyke vnto oures. The Region is situate dyrectelye vnder the lyne, called *Tropicus Calieri*. The inhabitantes them selues, call it *Parias*. Saylinge farre beyond this Region, and ouerpasseinge manye countreyes and nacions, fyndinge Gold euery where, (but in no great quantitie) we came to another nacion full of gentleness and humanitie, where we rested. xxxvij. dayes. These people made greuous complaynte vnto vs, that there was not farre from them, a certayne fearse and cruell nacion, whiche vexed them fore, and made incursion into theyr countreye at a certayne tyme of the yeare, kyllyng them and violentlye caryng them awaye, to th[e]intente to eate them, in so muche that they were not able to defend them selues agaynst theyr fearfenesse. Whiche thinge when they hadde so lamentablye declared vnto vs, and we hadde made them promyse that we woulde reuenge theyr so manye iniuries, they ioyned vnto oure company feuen of theyr men. Thus we wente forward: and after feuen dayes, came to an Ilande, called *Ity*: where these fearse people dwelte. Who, as sone as they hadde espyed vs, came armed agaynst vs. We ioyned with them in battaile, which contynued for the space of twoo houres. At the length we droue them to flyghte, and slewe and wounded a greate nombre of them, and toke. xxv. captiues. But of our men was onely one slayne, and. xxi. wounded, and shortly after restored to health. We gaue to those feuen men which went with vs, thre menne of oure prifouners and foure women, whom with greate reioynginge they caried with them into theyr countreye: and we returninge home toward Spayne, with many captiues came fyrste to a porte of Spayne called *Calicum*, where we solde oure priefoners, and were ioyefullye receaued: In the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcix. the. xv. daye of Octobre.

¶ The seconde viage of Vesputius.

The Equinoctial
line.



IN the moneth of May folowing *Vesputius* attempted another viage and came by Ilandes of Canaria, euen vnto the burninge lyne, called *Torrida zona*, and founde a lande beeyonde the *Equinoctial* line, toward the South, where the South pole is eleuate fyue degrees. And wheras he coulde fynde no apte enteraunce into the land, and fayled vp and down alonge by the fame, he espyed a bote in which was aboute twentie men: who, as sone as they saw the Spanyardenes, lepte into the Sea and escaped all, excepte two, which they toke. In theyr bote which they forfoke, were founde foure young men which they had by force taken oute of another countrey, hauinge theyr priue members newelye cutte of. These, *Vesputius* toke into his shippes and learned by theyr signes and tokens, that they hadde been taken of the *Canibales*, and should shortly haue been eaten. But departinge from these cofles, and faylinge on forward, they came to a commodious hauen, where they founde muche people, with whom they ioyned frendshyp, and fell to chaungeinge of ware, receauinge for one bell, fyue hundreth Pearles. In this lande they drinke a certayne kynde of wyne, made of the iuyse of frutes and fedes, being lyke whyte and redde fydar. Departinge from hence, and faylinge yet further, they founde a certayne Ilande in which was a beafty kind of people, and simple, yet very gentle. In this Ilande is no freshe water: but they gather the dew which in the night feafon falleth vpon certayne leaues muche lyke vnto the eare of an Affe. They lyue for the moste parte, by sea fishe. They haue no cotages or houfes: but haue certayne broade leaues, wherewith they defende them selues from the heate of the Sunne, but not from showres: but it is verye lykely, that it rayneth but lyttle in that Iland. *Vesputius* wyth his companye departinge from hence, fayled vnto another Ilande: into the whiche when he hadde entered, he founde certayne cotages, and in them two old women, and three young wenches, whiche were of so greate stature, that they marueyled thereat. And whereas our menne stryued with them to bringe them to the shyppe, to th[e]intente to haue caryed them into Spayne, they espyed cominge toward them fyxe and thyrtye men, yet of muche greater stature then were the women, bearing with them bowes, arrowes, and great flakes lyke vnto clubbes: at the syghte of whome, oure menne beinge afrayd, made haste to theyr shyppes. But these Gyauntes folowinge them euen to the Seafyde, bended theyr arrowes towards the Spanyardenes, vntyll they discharged two pieces of ordinaunces, wyth the horryble founde whereof, they were immediatly driuen to flight. Oure menne therefore departinge from thence, called that Ilande, the Ilande of Gyauntes. And came to another nacion, which frendlye entreated them, and offered them many Pearles: in so muche that they boughte. xix. markes weyghte of pearles, for a final price. They gaue vs also certayne shellyshes, of the whiche some conteyned in them a hundreth and thyrtye Pearles, and some fewer. Departinge from thence they came to the Ilande of *Antiglia*, which *Columbus* had discouered a fewe yeares before. Leauinge this, they fayled directely to *Calicum*, a porte of Spayne, where they were honourablye receaued.

Canibales

Fyue hundreth
pearles for one bell.
Wyne of the iuyse
of frutes

An Iland without
fresh water.

Broad leaues.

The land of
Gyauntes.

Pearles

A hundreth and
xxx. pearles in one
shellyshe.
Antiglia.
Calicum

¶ The thyrde viage of Vesputius.



Vesputius beyng called from Castile to serue Emanuel the King of Portugale, in the yeare of Christe. M. ccccc. ij. the tenth daye of May, departed from the hauen of lisburne, and fayled downe by the coastes of the sea Atlantike, vntil he came vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. And the. xvij. daye of Auguste, they arryued at a certayne lande where they found a kind of beasty people. This land is situate toward the South, fyue degrees beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. A greate multitude of the inhabitantes wer gathered together, and as wel as they coulede by signes and poyntinges, desired oure men to come alande and to see theyr countrey. There were two in the shippe, which toke vpon them to vewe the lande, and learne what spyces and other commodities might be had therein. They were appoynted to returne within the space of fyue daies at the vttermost. But when eyght dayes were now paste, they whiche remainyd in the shippes, heard yet nothing of theyr returne: wheras in the meane time great multitudes of other people of the same lande reforted to the Sea fyde, but could by no meanes be allured to comunicacion. Yet at the length they broughte certayne women, which shewed them felues familier towarde the Spaniardes: Wherupon they sent forth a young man, beyng very strong and quicke, at whom as the women wondered, and stode gasinge on him and feling his apparell: there came fodeynly a woman downe from a mountayne, bringing with her secretly a great stake, with which she gaue him such a stroke behynde, that he fell dead on the earth. The other womenne foorthwith toke him by the legges, and drewe him to the mountayne, whyle in the mean tyme the men of the countrey came foorth with bowes and arrowes, and shot at oure men. But the Spaniardes discharginge foure pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them, drouc them to flighte. The women also which had slayne the yong man, cut him in pieces euen in the sight of the Spaniardes, shewinge them the pieces, and roasting them at a greate fyre. The men also made certayn tokens. wherby they declared that not past. viii. daies before, they had in lyke maner serued other christian men. Wherfore ye Spaniardes hauinge thus fustayned so greuouse iniuries vnreuenged, departed with euyl wil: sayling therfore further toward ye south, they found a nacion of great multitude, and of much genteler condicions, with whom thei remained. viij. dayes, bartering and changeing ware with them. Sayling on yet farther, they went beyonde ye line called *Tropicus Capricorni*, where the south pole is eleuate. 32. degrees: and wheras in those parts thei found no great riches, they failed yet further southward vntill ye pole was eleuate. liij. degrees: where thei came into such a tempeste, that they were enforced to gather vppe theyr sayles, and to rowe only with the maste, directinge theyr viage toward the costes of Ethiopia, from whence they returned againe to Lisburne in Portugale.

The sea Atlantike.

Three of the Spaniardes slayne and eaten.

Fearsome and cruell women.

A ciuile people.

The south pole eleuate. liij. degrees.

Lisburne.

¶ The fourth viage of Vesputius.



His navigation was attempted in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. iij. but was not brought to the ende hoped for, by reason of a misfortune which chaunced in the goulfe of the sea Atlantike. *Vesputius* entended in this viage to sayle to the Ilande of *Melcha*, beyng in the East, in which is fayde to be great ryches, and the stacion of restinge place of all shippes comming from the goulfe *Gangeticus*, and from the Indian Sea. This *Melcha*, is situate more toward the West, and *Calicut* more enclininge towarde the south. *Vesputius* came fyrst to ye grene Ilandes, called *Insula uerides*: and fayled from them to *Serraliona*, beyng in the Southe partes of Ethiopia: from whence saylinge on yet further, he sawe in the midst of the sea an Iland, high and merueylous: where also the M[as]ter. Pilate of this nauie, lost his shippe by running vpon a rocke: but all the mariners escaped. This shippe was of thre hundred tunne, and had in it al the power of the nauie. When *Vesputius* had entered into the Iland, he found it rude and vnhabited: yet was it full of byrdes: but had no beastes except Lisertes with forked tayles, and Serpentes. Thus makinge prouision for necessaries, he was enforced to returne to portugale, failing of his purpose.

The Iland of *Melcha*.*Calicut*.*Insula uerides*

A shippe wracke.

Lisertes and Serpents

¶ How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India:
and of the ryche Cytie of Malacha.



Orasmuche as therefore in the yeares folowinge, there were more often nauigacions made from the West by the fouth into the East, and the Portugales had now founde a safe passage by ye sea, they thought it expedient for theyr better safetie, to make certaine fortifications and places of refuge in the East. The which theyr intent the better to accomplishe, King Emanuel appoynted one *Alphonfus* an experte man on the sea, to be captayne of this viage. Who, desyring to reuenge the losses and iniuries which the Portugales had before sustained, sayled directly to *Aurea Chersonesus*, now called *Malacha*, a merueylous great and riche citie, whose king is an infydel of the secte of the Moores: for euen thus farre was the secte of Mahumet extended. *Alphonfus* therefore at his coming thether, besieged the cytie, and made warre agaynst the Saracens whiche helde the fame. In this conflict a greate number of theyr enemies beyng flayne, the Portugales entred into the citie by force and kept the same, permitting free libertie to theyr fouldiers to spoyle, kyll, and burne. The king himselfe, fyghting vpon an Elephante, and beyng fore wounded, fledde with the resydue of his companye. A greate numbred of the Moores were slaine with the losse of a fewe Portugales: manye were taken, and great spoyle caried awaye, in the whiche were feuen Elephantes, and all kyndes of ordinaunces pertheyning to the warres, made of copper, to the noubre of two thousande peces. The cytye beinge thus taken and sacked, and the enemyes drieuen to flyghte, *Alphonfus* the Capitayne the better to prouyde for the fauegarde of the Christians, buylded a strong forte at the mouth or entraunce of the riuer which runneth through ye citie. At this time, that is to witte, in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. xij. there were in *Malacha* many straungers and marchauntes of dyuerse nacions, whereby the cytie was replenished with great ryches and abundaunce of spyces. They of theyr owne mocion, desyred to make a leage with *Alphonfus*, and were of him gently receaued: So that for theyr better safetie, he permitted them to dwell in the houses neare about the forte. And by this meanes, this markette towne was reedified and broughte to muche better state than euer it was before. These thinges thus happely atchiued, and al thinges in *Malacha* set in good order, *Alphonfus* leauing in the forte a garrison of. vi. hundreth valiante fouldiours, returned into India, where he besieged the chiefe castell of the cytie of *Goa*, which (he) a fewe yeares beefore, hadde with no smal daunger of our men, and great slaughter of their enemies, subdued vnder the dominion of Emanuel kynge of Portugale, and was now possessed of the mores. he manfully recouered agayne, and enforced them to render vp the same. Also the ambassadours of the Kinge of *Narfinga*, the Kinge of *Cambaia*, and the King of *Grosapha* with the legates of dyuers other kinges and Princes, offered them selues to be at a leage wyth *Alphonfus*, and thereupon broughte theyr presentes vnto hym. No lesse power and dominion obtayned the king of Spayne in the Ilandes of the Weste partes: In so muche that at his commaundement, were buylded fixe townes in the Ilande of *Cuba*. Lykewyse in the Ilande of *Iucatana*, was buylded a greate cytie wyth fayre houses. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, the Spanyardes called *Santa Crux*, beecause they came fyrste thether in Maye, on the daye of the Inuencion of the Crosse. In the Ilande of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola*, were erected. 28. suger presses, to presse ye sugre whiche groweth plentifully in certaine canes or redes of the same countrey. From hence also is brought the wood of *Guaiacum*, otherwyse called, *Lignum Sanctum*, wherewith dyuerse diseases are healed by the order of the newe dyete.

The Portugales
bild fortes in the
Easte partes.

Alphonfus

Aurea

chersonesus.

The great and
ryche cytie of
Malacha
Saracens.

Malacha besieged
The king fighteth
on an elephant.

Plenty of copper.

Marchaunts.
Spyces.

The cytie of *Goa*.

The Ambassadors
make a league
wyth *Alphonfus*

The west Ilandes
Cuba.

Iucatana.

Cozumel or
Santa Crux.
Hispana.
Suger presses.

The wood called
Guaiacum.

¶ Of the Iland of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse
called the Ilandes of Canaria.



Etweene Spaine and the Ilandes of *Canaria*, is the Ilande of *Medera*, which the Spaniardes in our time founde vnhabited and saluage. But perceauinge that the foyle thereof, was very fruitfull, they burnt the woodes, and made the ground apt to bringe forth corne, and buylded many houses, and so tilled the same, that at this day is no where founde a more fruitfull lande. It hath in it many springes of fressh water and goodly ryuers, vpon the which are bylded manye sawe mylles, wherewith manye fayre trees, lyke vnto Ceder and Cypresse trees, are sawed and cut in funder, whereof are made most fayre tables, coberdes, cofers, and chayres, and such other curious workes made of wood. These trees are of redde colour, and swete

Medera or
Madera.

Sawe mylles.
Fayre tree

fauour, the bodies and braunches whereof are broughte into Spayne in great plentie. The Kynge of Portugale thought it goode to plante in this Iland, that kynde of redes in which fuger groweth: wherein he was not deceaued in his opinion: For they growe there moſte fruitfully, and beare fuger which excelleth the fuge of Candye or *Sicilia*. There were alſo vynes broughte out of Candye and planted in this Ilande, where they proſper fo wel, that for ye moſte parte they bring forth more grapes then leaues, and thoſe very great. In this Iland is alſo great plentie of Partriches, wyld doues, and Peacockes, wild bores, and diuers kindes of other beaſtes, which onely poſſeſſed the Iland before men dyd inhabite the ſame. Alſo the Ilandes called *Inſulæ fortunatæ*, (whiche are now called *Canaria*, for the multitude of dogges which are in them) are ſayd to be no leſſe fruytefull. Theſe Ilandes are tenne in noubre, of the which ſeuē are inhabited, and thre remaine deſolate. They which are inhabited, are called by theſe names: *Fraſſa laucea*, *Magna forſ*, *Grancanaria*, *Teneriffa*, *Gincra*, *Palma*, and *Ferrum*. At *Columbus* firſt comming thether, the inhabitantes went naked, without ſhame, religion, or knowledge of God. But in ſuceſſe of time, ſoure of the greateſt Ilandes embraced the Chriſtian faith: They haue eche of them a priuate language. *Teneriffa* and *Grancanaria*, are bigger then the other. *Teneriffa* may be ſene aſarre of, to the diſtaunce of fiftie leages, in a fayre and clere daye. The reaſon whereof is, that in the middeſt of the Iland, ryſeth a marueylous great and ſtrong rock, which is thought to be. xv. leages high, and caſteth ſoorth continuallye greate flames of fyre and pieces of brimſtone, as doth the mount *Etna* in the Iland of *Sicilia*. The people of theſe Ilandes, lyue with barlye bread, fleſſhe, and mylke. They haue alſo greate plentie of Goates, wylde Affes, and Fygges. They lacke wyne and wheate.

Suger

Vynes

The Ilandes of *Canaria*.

Chriſtians

A mount of burninge brimſtone.
Fygges-

Whether vnder the Æquinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called *Torrída zona*) be habitable Regions.



*P*ius ſecundus (otherwiſe called *Eneas Siluius*.) of this queſtion, wryteth in this maner.

It hath beene muche doubted whether habitable regions maye be founde vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. *Eratosthenes* is of th[e] opinion, that the ayre is there verye temperate. So thinketh *Polybius* alſo, affirming that the earth is there verye highe, and watered with many ſhowers. *Poſidonius* ſuppoſed that there is no Mountaynes vnder the *Equinoctial*. Some thoughte that the *Equinoctial* lyne was extended beyond the earth ouer the mayne Ocean ſea: whiche thinge the Poete *Homere* ſemeth to inſinuate, where he ſaineth that the horſes which drawe the chariote of [the] ſunne, drinke of the Ocean ſea, and the ſunne it ſelfe to take his noriſhement of the ſame. Whiche ſentence *Macrobius* alſo ſoloweth. Neither was *Albertus Magnus* farre from this opinion, who ſuppoſeth yat the ſunne draweth vp ſo much moyſture vnder the *Equinoctial* circle, as engendreth the cloudes vnder the poles, where by reaſon of th[e] exceדינגe coldneſſe, ayre is continuall turned into water. But *Ptolomeus* thinketh the earth to bee extended beyonde the *Equinoctial*, whereas he placeth a part of the Iland of *Taprobana*, vnder the *Equinoctial*, and alſo many nacions of the *Ethiopiens*. Many haue thought that th[e] earthly Paradyſe was ſette vnder that lyne: which opinion is contrary to th[e] auctoritie of the holy ſcripture which witneſſeth the two famous fluddes *Tigris* and *Euphrates* to ſpringe oute of Paradiſe: whiche neuertheleſſe we know from the North partes to fal into the goulfe called *Sinus Perſicus*: but as concerninge the heate vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne, the neareneſſe of the ſunne, or the directe beames of the ſame, are no ſufficiente cauſes why vnder that line ſhould be no habitable regions, if we conſider how thoſe places are otherwyſe ſhadowed, and tempered with the moyſtenes and dewes of the nightes, which are all the yeare throughe of equal length with the dayes. Yet wyl no man denye, but that vnder the *Equinoctial* throughout all the burninge lyne there are manye wilderneſſes and deſolate places, lacking water, and incommodious for the lyfe of man: Albeit euen in *Ethiopia*, people dwell neare to the ryuers and woodes. *Plinie* alſo ſayth that one *Dalion*, and *Ariſtodeon*, and *Bion*, and *Baſilides*, went Southward beyonde *Meroæ* whiche is almoſte vnder the *Equinoctial*. And that *Simonides* who writte the deſcripcion of *Ethiopia*, dwelte ſyue yeres in *Meroæ*: whiche Ilande, (beeinge in the fyrme lande and compaſſed aboute wyth the Ryuer of *Nilus*) he affirmed to bee ſituate. 972. thouſande paſes beeyonde *Syenes* of *Egypte*, as the ſearchers of *Nero* declared. But at *Syenes* the *Aſtronomers* appoynte the ſommer conuerſion of the ſunne: and that there the burninge lyne beginneth, being diſtaunte from the *Equinoctial* ſoure and twentieth degrees, that is twelue thouſande furlonges. Wherby we maye perceauē that *Meroæ* is ſituate ſome what beeyonde the myddeſt betwene the *Equinoctial* and *Syenes*. *Ptolomeus* alſo deſcrybeth the Region of *Agisimba* to bee inhabited beeyonde the *Equinoctial*. Lykewyſe the Mountaynes of the Mone, called *Montes Luna*, out of the which, the ſennes or marifes of the riuer *Nilus* haue their ſpring and originall. He addeth hereunto that there are certayne *Ethiopiens* called *Anthropophagi*,

Libr. i. Capit. v.

Eratosthenes.

Polybius.

Poſidonius.

The *Equinoctial*

line

The poet *Homere*

Macrobius.

Albertus Magnus

Ptolomeus.

Taprobana

Ethiopes

Tigris and

Euphrates.

Sinus Perſicus.

The nearenes of

the ſunne.

Temperatenes

vnder the

Equinoctial.

Torrída zona

Ethiopa.

Plinie.

The Iland of

Meroæ

Syenes in *Egypte.*

The conuerſion

of the ſunne.

Of the furlonges

of *Italie* viii. doe

make one *Italien*

myle, conteyning

a .m. [thouſand]

paſes.

Agisimba.

Montes Luna.

Paludes Nili.

Ethiopes

Anthropophagi.
Habitable regions
how farre
extended.
Clima.

that is, such as eate mans fleshe, which inhabite regions beyond the *Equinoctial* about the space of. xvi. degrees. And thus the inhabitation of men is found to be extended. x. hundreth thousand pases beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. Whiche space conteyneth no lesse then two clymes of earth. And a clyme is a porcion of the worlde betwene South and North, wherein is variacion in length of the daye, the space of halfe an houre.

¶ *Finis.*

¶ *Thus endeth the fyfth boke of Sebastian Munster,
of the landes of Asia the greater, and of the
newe founde landes, and Ilandes.*

1553.



¶ *Imprinted at London, in Lom-
barde Strete, By Edward
Sutton.*

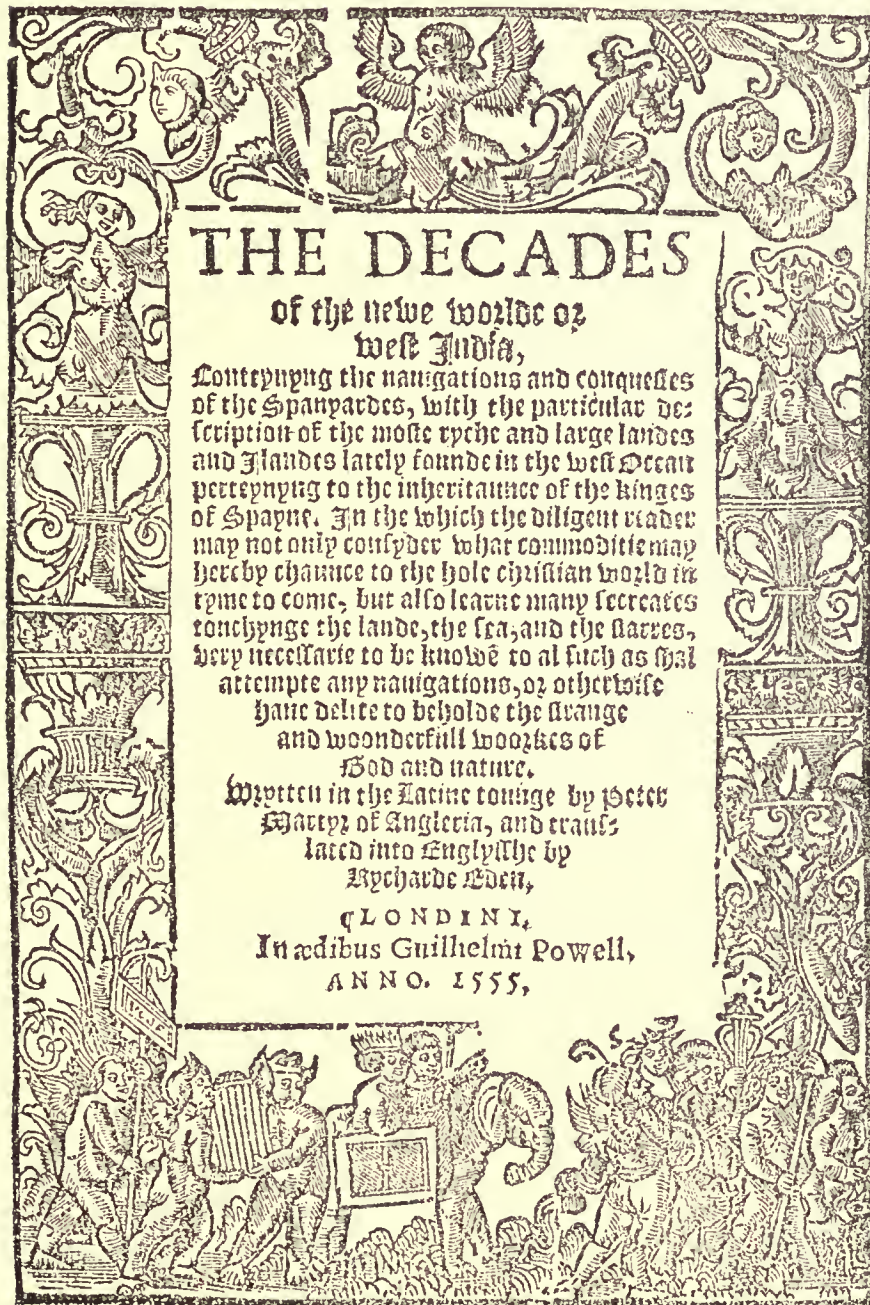


¶ *To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses.*

Who hath not of fowrenes felte the bitter tast,
Is not worthy of swetenes to take his repast.
To cracke the nutte, he must take the payne,
The which would eate the carnell fayne.
Who that of bees feareth the slinge,
Shal neuer by hony haue great winninge.
As the swete Rose bringeth forth the thorne,
So is man truely to ioye and payne borne.
The byrde vpon hope byldeth her neste,
Where oftentimes she hath but euyl reste,
Yet is she not therby drieuen to fuche feare,
But yat she performeth the fame the nexte yeare.
Much casting of periles doth noble corage swage
Yet do not I commende rashenes or outrage.
What foles do fable, take thou no hede at all,
For what they know not, they cal phantastical.
Nought venter nought haue, is a saying of old.
Better it is to blow the cole, then to fyt a cold.
Fortes fortuna adiuuat, the Latin prouerbe faith,
But fayleth to such as faynt and lacke fayth.
God giueth al thinges, but not ye bul by ye horne
The plowman by trauaile encreafeth his corne.
As fortune fauereth thou mayst be riche or poore,
As *Crefus* or *Irus* that beggeth at the dore.

¶ *Omnis iacta sit alea.*

[The Third English book on America.]



THE DECADES

of the newe worlde or
west India,

Conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes
of the Spanyardes, with the particlar de-
scription of the moste ryche and large landes
and Ilandes lately founde in the west Decat
pertynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges
of Spayne. In the which the dilligent reader
may not only consyder what commoditie may
hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in
tyme to come, but also learne many secretes
touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres,
very necessarie to be knowe to al such as shal
attempte any nauigations, or otherwise
haue delite to beholde the strange
and woonderfull woorkes of
God and nature.

Wrytten in the Latine tongue by Peter
Martyr of Angleria, and traufz
lated into Englyshe by
Rycharde Eden,

LONDINI,

In adibus Guillelmi Powell,

ANNO. 1555,

Befyde the Decades (the table of whose contentes you may reade in the ende of the booke [see pp. 391-397.] are conteyned furthermore in this booke these thynges followynge.

¶ Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde.	Folio. 149. [p. 186.]	The hyflorie of Paulus Iouius of the ambaffade of great	
The popes bulle and donacion	167. and. 171. [p. 201.]	Baſilius Prince of Moſcouia to pope Clement the feuenth.	278. [p. 308.]
The hyflorie of the Weſte Indies, wrytten by Gonzalus		Other notable thynges as concernynge Moſcouia, gathered	
Ferdinandus.	174. [p. 208.]	owt of the bookes of Sigifmundus Liberus.	289. [p. 318.]
The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the Weſte Indies.	175. [p. 210.]	The deſcription of the regions and people lyinge North	
Of two notable thynges as touchynge the Weſt Indies:		and Eaſte from Moſcouia to the ryuer Petzora and the pro-	
and of the greate ryches brought from thence into Spaine.	176. [p. 211.]	vince of Iugaria and the ryuer Obi. &c.	294. [p. 322.]
Of the golde mines and maner of woorkynge in them.	177. [p. 211.]	Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.	297. [p. 324.]
The maner of fyſſhyng for pearles.	180. [p. 213.]	More directly from Moſcouia to Cathay.	298. [p. 325.]
The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll.	181. [p. 215.]	Of the Tartars. 299. [p. 327.] The nauigation by the frofen ſea.	303. [p. 330.]
Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equino-		The letters miſſiue which kynge Edwarde the. vi. ſent to the	
ciall line. &c.	184. [p. 217.]	kynge, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the north	
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ſerpentes,		eaſt partes of the worlde towarde the Empire of Cathay. 306. and. 308. [p. 333.]	
beaſtes, foules. &c.	185. [p. 218.]	The letters of the prince of Moſcouia ſente to kynge	
Oftrees, fruites, and plantes, &c. 194. [p. 225.] [Of Reedes or Canes. 196. p. 227.]		Edwarde. 319. [These are not included in the work.]	
Of the venomous apples wherwith the Canibales inueneme		Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies: and of	
theyr arrowes. 199. [p. 229.] Of fyſſhes & theyr maner of fyſſhyng.	201. [p. 230.]	the foreknowledge that the poet Seneca had of the fyndyn-	
Of the ryſynge and faulynge of owre Ocean ſea and the		g of the newe worlde and other regions not then knowne.	310. [p. 337.]
fouth ſea called the ſea of Sur.	204. [p. 233.]	Of the greate Ilande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlan-	
Of the freight of lande beinge betwene the north and		tide. 310. [p. 337.] Of the coloure of the Indians.	311. [p. 338.]
fouth ſea.	205. [p. 234.]	Why they were cauled Indians.	311. [p. 339.]
Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the		The fyrſt diſcouerynge of the Weſt Indies.	312. [p. 339.]
place: and of the beaſtes cauled Tygers.	206. [p. 235.]	What maner of man Chriſtopher Colon was, and howe he	
Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme		came fyrſt to the knowledge of the Indies.	313. [p. 340.]
lande and of theyr women.	208. [p. 237.]	What labour and trauaile he tooke in attemptynge his	
Of the Ilandes Hiſpaniola and Cuba.	210. [p. 239.]	fyrſt vyage to the Indies.	313. [p. 340.]
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.	213. [p. 241.]	Of newe Spaine cauled Noua Hiſpania or Mexico.	315. [p. 342.]
Of the lande of Baccallaos.	213. [p. 242.]	Of Peru. 316. [p. 343.] Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata.	316. [p. 343.]
Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyuers autours:		Of the hygher or ſuperior India cauled India Tercera	
and of the vniuerfall carde and newe worlde.	214. [p. 245.]	or Terciera.	317. [p. 344.]
A diſcourſe of the maruelous vyage made by the Span-		Ageyne of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos.	318. [p. 344.]
yardes rounde about the worlde.	215. [p. 246.]	The diſcouerynge of the lande of Florida.	319. [p. 345.]
The order of the ſtarres abowt the pole Antartike.	222. [p. 253.]	An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Aſia, are Ilandes:	
The prices of precious ſtones and ſpices with their weightes		and of certeyne Nauigations abowt the ſame.	320. [p. 346.]
and meaſures as they are ſoulede bothe of the Moores and		That the Spanyardes haue fayled to the Antipodes whiche	
Gentyles.	233. [p. 263.]	inhabite the vndermoſt halfe of the baulde of the earth, con-	
Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they agree.	239. [p. 269.]	trary to th[e] opinions of the owlde wryters.	321. [p. 347.]
Of the dooues of the Ilande of Madera.	239. [p. 270.]	Who fyrſt founde the needle of the compaſſe and the vſe there-	
Of the Ilande of faynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line.	240. [p. 270.]	of. 322. [p. 348.] The ſituation and byggenefſe of the earth.	323. [p. 349.]
The debate and ſtrife betwene the Spanyardes and Portu-		What degrees are.	324. [p. 349.]
gales for the diuiſion of the Indies and the trade of ſpices.	240. [p. 271.]	A demonſtration of the roundeneſſe of the earth.	324. [p. 350.]
Of the pole Antartike and the ſtarres about the ſame:		What credit ought to be gyuen to wryters as touchynge	
and of the qualitie of the regions and diſpoſition of the		the workes of nature.	325. [p. 351.]
elementes abowt the Equinoctiall line: Alſo of certeyne		The preface to the booke of metals.	326. [p. 355.]
ſecreates touchynge the arte of faylynge.	245. [p. 277.]	Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the	
A diſcourſe of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which		maner of fyndynge the ſame.	327. [p. 356.]
ſpices, precious ſtones, and golde were brought in owlde		Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof.	334. [p. 362.]
tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde.		Of the myne of ſyluer.	340. [p. 366.]
Alſo of the vyage to Cathay and Eaſte India by the northe		The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte	
ſea: And of the viages of Sebaſtian Cabot.	249. [p. 283.]	in owlde tyme.	342. [p. 369.]
Of the vyages to Moſcouia and Cathay.	249. [p. 283.]	The diſcription of the two vyages made owt of Englande	
A breefe deſcription of Moſcouia.	259. [p. 291.]	to Guinea in Afrike.	343. [p. 373.]
The deſcription of the north regions: and how they are		A breefe deſcription of Afrike.	344. [p. 374.]
habitable, contrary to th[e] opinion of the owlde wryters.	264. [p. 295.]	The fyrſt vyage to Guinea.	345. [p. 375.]
Scandia. 267. [p. 298.] Gronlande. 268. [p. 299.] Iſlande. 269. [p. 300.]		The ſeconde vyage to guinea.	350. [p. 379.]
Laponia. 270. [p. 301.] Norway. 273. [p. 303.]		The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by	
Suetia or Suethlande. 275. [p. 305.] Gothia or Gothlande. 276. [p. 306.]		dyuers wayes.	360. [p. 389.]
Finlande and Eningia. 276. [p. 306.] Bothnia. 275. [p. 305.]		A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.	361. [p. 390.]
The difference of regions and cauſes of great cities.	277. [p. 307.]	A breefe rehearfall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades, &c. [p. 391.]	

FINIS.

¶ *The interpretation of certeyne woordes.*

¶ <i>Continente</i> (that is) the firme lande not incloſed with water, or no Ilande.	<i>Equinoctiall</i> , the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe in the myddeſt betwene the two poles, in the which when the ſonne commeth, the days and nyghtes are of equal length	<i>Paralleles</i> , are lines whereby the ſonne paſſynge cauſeth variation of tyme.
A <i>Carauel</i> or <i>Caruel</i> , a kynde of ſhyppes.	<i>Clima</i> , is a portion of the worlde betwene north and ſouth.	<i>Gatti Mammoni</i> , Monkeys.
<i>Hemiſpherium</i> , the halfe globe of the earth and water.		<i>Schoenus</i> , is a ſpace of xl. furlonges.
<i>Pefus</i> , a ducate and a halfe.		<i>Werß</i> , is an Italian [p. <i>Ruſſian</i>] mile.
		<i>Colonie</i> , an habitation.

The Indian language.

¶ <i>Canoa</i> , a boate or barke.	<i>Machana</i> , a ſworde.	<i>Quines</i> , preſtes.	<i>Cauni</i> , golde.
<i>Caciqui</i> , kynges or gouernours.	<i>Areitos</i> , ſonges or balades.	<i>Chiuu</i> , a man.	<i>Mayani</i> , nothyng. &c.
<i>Zemes</i> an Idole.	<i>Tona</i> , the moone.	<i>Ira</i> , a woman.	
<i>Tuyra</i> , the deuyll.	<i>Tonatico</i> , the ſonne.	<i>Boa</i> , a houſe.	

¶ Note that the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, is nowe cauled San Domingo by reaſon of the chiefe city ſo named. Alſo faynte Iohus Ilande cauled ſancti Iohannis, or Burichena, is otherwyſe cauled Boriquen.

QUOD POTENTISSIMO AC SERENISSIMO
 PHILIPPO, AC SERENISSIMÆ POTENTISSIMÆQVE MARIÆ,
 Dei gratia Regi ac Reginae, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et
 Hiberniæ: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispaniarum et Siciliæ,
 Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducibus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et
 Brabantiæ, comitibus Haspurgi, Flandriæ, et Tirolis,
 Richardus Edenus perpetuam optat fœlicitatem.



QVAM IN PRIMO VESTRO ingressu in hanc cele-
 berimam Londini urbem (illustriissimi Principes)
 cernerem quanto omnium applausu, populi con-
 cursu, ac civium frequentia, quanto insuper
 spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum splendore,
 equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore, cæterisque
 magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro dignitate
 vestra accepti estis dum omnes quod fui est officij
 facere satagebant, vbi in tanta hominum turba vix
 vnus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo aduentum
 vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoque aliorum
 exemplo (propius presertim ad me accedentibus Cel-
 situdinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid
 agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona
 otiosus viderer, quod vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem
 temere erupissem, nisi et præsentiae vestræ maiestas, et mea me obscuritas a tam audaci
 facinore deterruisent. Verum, cum postea penitus de hac re mecum cogitarem, con-
 sideraremque quam hæc omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac
 regiae dignitatis eminentiæ comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, cœpi denuo cum
 animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortalis rerum memoria fœlicissimum vestrum
 aduentum gratularer, vt inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum
 temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio
 statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possum quod me ad
 aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale
 reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum,
 atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totque precla-
 rissimorum principum propagines, vt merito ab ipsis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac
 Hercule, cæterisque theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur. Quod cum ita sit, non
 aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus
 hominum et æterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula rerum a vobis et progenitoribus
 vestris præclare gestarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama
 ac veneratione cernantur. Cum itaque inter cætera a maioribus vestris præclare gesta,
 nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam
 Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, fœlicissimo tandem euentu, Indiæ Occidentalis

ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis possem felicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus haec haecenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperijs non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et P L V S V L T R A terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admirationem ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem capiunt. Haec dum cogito, venit mihi in mentem quod olim adolescens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimi Ferdinandi regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) proauis oratore, Latine conscriptas, atque sacrae Caesariae maiestati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaque auctoris fide et eruditione motus, eum praeter ceteris in nostram linguam traducendum suscepi, quod non solum ut historicus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit, sed etiam ut philosophus (quod in ceteris scriptoribus desideratur) naturalium rerum occultas causas reddit, ac admirabilium naturae operum (quibus haec vestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atque ut huius Indiae posterior status cognoscatur, quantumque thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumque ditissimarum mercium ac annui census inde quotannis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi viri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille Indicae historiae generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit, eiusdemque illustrissimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui nomini consecrauit: Caeteraque plurima ex recentioribus scriptoribus excerpti, quae mihi in tam immensa rerum memorabilium bibliotheca, praecipue adnotanda videbantur. Quae, quanta et qualia sunt, quantisque parafrangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarum res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas superent, haec mea sequens praefatio vulgari sermone ad huius historiae lectores populumque Anglicum conscripta, satis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo ut idem hic repetere superuacaneum sit, minimeque necessarium, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissima Regina vernacula est, idemque illustrissimo Regi quod tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum quod diuino vinculo vnum fitis in carne vna, sed etiam quod eadem animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, caeterisque virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quam carnis vinculo vnum fitis. Sed neque hic opus est ut ego Latino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem, clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationem, castitatem felicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam, victorias, imperia, stemmata, caeteraque huiusmodi multa enumerem, cum praesertim vir nobilis et doctus Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deque felicissimo vestro matrimonio, orationae satis fusa tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit quod ad Celitudinis vestrae et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute partam, pertineat. Caeterum cum regiae vestrae virtutes nominisque splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia satis nota sint, nisi forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota esse deberent, nempe in hoc Angliae regno, ideo opere praecium et rem omnibus bonis gratam, quodque mei est officij erga Celitudines vestras me facturum existimaui, si haec nostris (ut dixi) hominibus, nostraque lingua ob oculos contemplanda proposuero. Quod quam feliciter aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudicium. Quam vero fideliter, sincere, ac animo in Maiestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum, testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui hominum corda et renes scrutatur. Macte igitur virtutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes, atque Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua coepistis fiducia, huius deploratae ac collapsae reipublicae nostrae statum, pristino decori restituere, id quod omnes a vobis expectant atque efflagitant,

pollicentes infuper vobis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam. Ne terreat vos quorundam canum latratus qui bonis omnibus oblatrant, et tunc definent latrare cum definent viuere. Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos homines viris probis vel propter inuidiam vel propter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille probus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime improbauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de nobis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogitate (Serenissimi Principes) quod magnanimitate ac maiorum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquilæ natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare. Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generosus equus per plateas incedens, canes vt animalcula imbella præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præsertim qui contumelia lacescuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos solet de gradu dejicere. Sed (vt supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in summo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuiſtis, de quare fusius in præfatione ad lectores tractaui. Iam itaque vt huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras vt has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore suscipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem rejicitis. Quem admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam plantauit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primitias soluit a quo prima femina primaque arborum insitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum rebus gestis primis sumptis feminibus, hos qualescumque fructus ædidi, videor profecto mihi, debito vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eisdem vestro nomini ac numini obtulisssem.

Deus. Opt. Max. Celsitudines vestras perpetuo seruat incolumes,
 faxitque vt fœcunda sobolis propagine, summaque pace
 ac tranquillitate, huius regni habenas ad Diuini
 nominis gloriam, diu gubernetis.

FINIS.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



He moſte famous oratoure and learned Phyloſopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wryteth, that in all conſultations as touchyng owre behaoure and order of luyng amonge men, it behoueth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothyng but beaſtely appetites, whereunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryſhed with knowlege, and taketh pleaſure in diuiſyng or excogitayng ſume honeſt thyng, whereby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortal nature, but alſo engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to ſee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr predicelours. And this ſurely thynke I to bee the cauſe that eyther the famous factes of woorthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diuifers of the fame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte

of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken peynes in illuſtratyng and ſettyng furthe theyr doynges. For who ſhulde at this daye haue knowen Mauſolus the kyng of Caria, with his wyfe Artemiſia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woorke of the ſepulcher whiche Artemiſia made for kyng Mauſolus her huſband (beinge of ſuch woorkemanshpype that it was accompted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortal fame, whereas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende it ſelfe ageynſt th[e] iniurie of tyme conſumyng all thynges. There remaineth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moifes buylded, or of the renoumed and marueilous Temple that was buylded in Hieruſalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. Yet ſhall the name of the excellent artificers Ooliab and Beſelchel, and Hiram the kyng of Tyrus, lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore alſo, Salomon hym ſelfe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glory to that princely buyldyng. But certeynly the moſt trewe and permanent glory, procedeth of ſuch monumentes as bryng ſume great and notable commoditie and profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of ſtones of the Pyramides of Egypt, wherin is nought els to ſee but the fonde and barbarous oſtentation of ſuperfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrinthi, or of horryble great Images cauled Coloffi, of knottes inexplicable, of braſen caudrons of monſtrous byggenefſe, of hauens with echo ſeuene tymes reboundyng, and dyuers ſuche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in conſideryng the maruelous arte and witte of ſuche artificers as diuifed and made the fame, ſo are they otherwyſe vnprofitable: And bryng rather a fame to theyr inuentoures, then trewe glorye. Perillus was famous by diuiſyng his braſen bulle: yet ſo, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obſcure and vnknown. They haue therefore deſerued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldyng of cities, townes, fortrefſes, bridges, cundites, hauens, ſhyppes, and ſuche other, haue ſo ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal teſtimonie of abſolute glory, whoſe perfection extendeth to the gratifyng of vniuerſal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I conſider, and caule to memorie howe Cicero defineth trewe glory to bee a fame of many and greate deſertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre countrey, or towarde all man kynde, and the fame to bee of ſuch excellencie that the owlde poetes for ſume effecte fayned it to bee the ſweete Ambroſia and Nectar wherwith the goddes are fedde, and that of ſuch force that who ſo may drynke therof, ſhal alſo become a god, (that is to ſay immortal and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy ſcripture ſpeaketh of Moifes and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may ſpeake it without offence of other) may ſo much the more for theyr iuſt deſertes and good fortune be compared to thoſe goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured them with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes ſo farre excell al other, as I dare not ſpeake to ſuch as haue not yet harde or redde of the fame, leaſt the greatneſſe therof ſhulde at the firſt brunte ſo muche aſtonyſhe the reader that he myght geue the leſſe credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuertheleſſe hath moſte faythfully wrytten this hyltorye of ſuche thynges wherof he hath ſeene a greate parte him ſelfe (as being by

Commendation
of noble factes.

Mauſolus.
Cunnyng
artificers.

The Tabernacle
of Moifes.
The Temple of
Salomon.
Hiram.

Trewe glory.

Great and
ſumptuous works

Fame differeth
from true glory.

Absolute glory.

What is true
glory.

The kynges of
Spayne.
Heroes.

The certentie of
this hyltorye

The house of the
contractes of
India.

The counsayl for
the Indies
The heroicall
factes of the
Spanyardes.

Great Alexander.

The Spanyardes
warres in the
Indies.

The benefites that
the Indians haue
receaued by the
Spanyardes.

Lybertie.
The Canibales,

Fcareful idleness.

Isai. 65.

The warres of
Moises.

The Indians
subdued to the
fayth.

Isai. 42.

The contemplation
of gods workes.

The Christian
Empire enlarged.

The conersion of
the gentyles.

Leuiathan.

the moste catholyke and puiffaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted a commissiōarie in th[e] affayres of India) and gathered the residewe partly by informatiō and partly out of the wrytinges of such as haue byn (as Vyrghyll wryteth of Eneas, *Et quorum pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of such thynges as are conteyned in the hystorie: as Gouvernours, Licuctenautes, Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by their painefull traauayles and prowes, haue not onely subdued these landes and seas, but haue also with lyke diligence commytted th[e] order therof to wrytinge: And not this onely, but for the better tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner clayly fende from thense into Spayne such monumentes as are most certeyne testimoniōes of theyr doynge, as yow may reade in dyuers places in this boke. This newe worlde is nowe so much frequented, the Ocean nowe so well knowen, and the commodities so greate, that the kynge erected a house in the cite of Siuile (cauled the house of the contractes of India) perteynyng onely to th[e] affayres of the Ocean, to the which al such reforte for necessaries as attempte anye vyage to this newe worlde, and lykewyse at theyr returne make theyr accompte to the counfayle for the Indies for the golde and fuche other thynges as they bryng from thense. It is therefore apparent that the heroicall factes of the Spaniardes of these days, deserue so greate prayse that th[e] about of this booke (beinge no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynge about the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and such other which for theyr glorious and vertuous enterpryses were accounted as goddes amonge men. And surely if great Alexander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then deserued immortall fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victories onely for theyr owne glory and amplifyinge theyr empire obteyned by flawghter of innocentes and kepte by violence, haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much more then shal we thynke these men woorthy iust commendations which in theyr mercyfull warres ageynst these naked people haue so vsed them selues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enfewed to the vanquished then the victourers. They haue taken nothyng from them but such as they them selues were wel wyllynge to departe with, and accounted as superfluities, as golde, perles, precious stōnes and such other: for the which they recompened theym with fuche thynges as they muche more esteemed. But sum wyll say, they possesse and inhabyte theyr regions and vse theym as bondemen and tributaries, where before they were free. They inhabite theyr regions indeede: Yet so, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng the same, they maye nowe better susleyne both, then one before. (Theyr bondage is fuche as is much rather to be desired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales rather a horrible licenciousnesse then a libertie, and to the innocent so terrible a bondage, that in the mydde of theyr ferefull idleness, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to those manhuntinge woolues.) But nowe thanked be God, by the manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelysh generation is so confumed, partely by the slaughter of fuche as coulede by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by referuynge such as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertynge them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein bee fulfilled that the wolfe and the lambe shall feede together, and the wyldelinge with the vale of Achor, shalbe the folde of the heard of gods people. Moises as the minister of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in fyer and tempestes, was commaunded in his warres to faue neyther man, woman, nor chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercame and possessed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes as the mynisters of grace and libertie, brought vnto these newe gentyles the victorie of Chrystes death wherby they beinge subdued with the worldely sworde, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghty poure of this triumphante victourer, whom (as fayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to deliuer the bounde owt of pryson and captiuitie. What other men do phantasie herein, I can not tell: but fuer I am, that lyke as the slowe and brutyshe wyttes, for the selenderness of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or seldome lyfte vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maiesie of nature, but lyke brute beastes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dungehilles or cages, lyttle passynge whether the Chrystian fayth do sprede through the worlde, or bee dryuen to one corner: Euen so al good wyttes and honest natures (I doubt not) wyl not onely reioyce to see the kyngedome of God to bee so farre enlarged vpon the face of the earthie, to the confusion of the deuyll and the Turkysh Antichryste, but also do the vttermost of theyr poure to further the same. For surely, as Gonsalus Ouiedus wryteth to the Emperours maiesie in his hystorie of the Weste Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whose ayde and godly zeale this myghtie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the flocke of Chrystes congregation, Euen so do I thinke them no trewe Chrystian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of these owre brootherne, owre fleshe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemye the oulde serpente who hath so longe had them in hys possession, vntyll the fulnesse of the gentyles be accomplisshed accordynge to the time prefinite by hym, who vnto the yere after his incarnation. M. CCCC. lxxxii. hath suffered the greate serpente of the sea Leuiathan, to haue fuche dominion in the Ocean and to caste such myfles in the eyes of men, that fence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yere before named, there hath byn no passage from our knowen partes of the world to these newe landes, whereas nowe the same

are moſte certeynely knowne to be not paſt. xxx. dayes faylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowlege of the myghtie Chryſtian Empire of Precioſus Iohannes, otherwyſe cauled Preſbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nations in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCCC. xxxiii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhop of Rome, Paule the thyrd of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde ſence the tyme of the Apoſtles. A thyng certes moſt woonderfull, and fuche, that yf the fame were not hydde hetherto by gods vnfercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in owr forefathers and predicceſſours vntyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Th[e]mperours maieſtie by his eldeſt dowghter, and to the queenes hyghneſſe by his ſeconde dowghter the moſt vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubtleſſe of fuche nobilitie, prowes, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who ſo ſhall indifferently way all his doinges and good ſucceſſe in all his affayres, comparinge the fame to th[e]nterpryſes and doinges atchyued by fuche famous princes in whome the Greekes and Romans haue ſo greatly gloryed, maye with one eye perceauce not onely howe farre his noble factes do ſurmount theyrs, but alſo wel conſyder what noble braunches of iſſhewe were lyke to ſprynge owt of ſo woorthy a ſtocke. And fuerly if ſence the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knowne by ſuch benefites and bleſſynges as he hath geuen to men, it ſeemeth to me that in maner (onely Chryſte excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and ſhewed more fauoure. Great doubtleſſe was the fauour and mercie that god ſhewed vnto Noe, by whom he ſaued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he ſhewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whoſe meanes he ſaued not onely the bodies but alſo the ſoules of innumerable millions of men inhabytyng a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknowne and drowned in the deluge of erreure. What ſhulde I here ſpeake of Abraham the father of fayth whoſe promyſes were great, and he cauled the frende of god: Dyd he or his poſteritie ſee Iſraell increaſe to ſuch multitudes and nations as kyng Ferdinandos poſteritie may ſee th[e]increaſe of this ſpirituall Iſraell vnto whome as a ſeconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moifes was ſo great in the fyght of god that he diſcloſed vnto hym his ſecrete name, and miraculoſly cauled a corner of the ſea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greate Ocean thought before that tyme to bee without ende, where neuertheleſſe he and his poſteritie the kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche greater then that whiche Moifes ledde through the red ſea. It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde founde a man accordynge to his hartes deſyre: and yet maye it be doubted whether his plages and ſcourges were greater then his benefites? His ſonne Salomon for al his inconſtant and wauerynge wyſedome and his great ryches obteyned by his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no knowlege of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes ſayle abowt the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe the Equinoctial line to th[e]inferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhyppes Victoria ſent furth by Th[e]mperours maieſtie. A thyng doubtleſſe ſo ſtrange and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the nauigations of the Spanyardes excelled the vyage of Iafon and the *Argonautæ* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Paralipomenon it bee hyperborically wrytten that in the dayes of Salomon golde and ſyluer were in Hieruſalem in maner as plentiful as ſtones, and that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure hundreth and fiftie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that any of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke, as dyd a ſhyppes of kynge Ferdinandos as yow maye reade in the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the dominion of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the lande of the Philiftians and th[e]extreme confines of Egypte to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn brought from thence into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al fuche as wyll ſecke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to ſpeake any further of the myracles which god hath wrought by the handes of this noble prince in this newe world among theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowne to all the world what a defence and braſen wall he hath byn to all Chryſtendome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores or Sarafens and Iewes which ſo many hundreth yeares poſſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungioure of the hole Chryſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee cleane vanquyſhed vntyll the dayes of this noble and Catholyke prince ſo named for his warres ageynſt the infidelles, whom God rayſed for a Capitayne of his people as an other Gedion vnder whoſe banner they myght ouercome theyr enemies and poure his vineyarde from fuche wycked weedes. The which thyng doubtleſſe may ſeeme ſo much the greater and more difficulte, ſoſmuch as in the myddeſt of the chiefe heate of his chargeable

Preſter Iohn
the Chryſtian
Emperour of
Ethiope.

Don Ferdinando
kynge of Aragon.

The fauour of god
knowne by his
benefites.

Noe.

What god hath
wrought by kynge
Ferdinando.

Abraham.

Spirituall Iſraell.

Moifes.

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.

Antipodes.
The nauigation
rounde about the
worlde.

The dominion
of Salomon.
Paral. 9.

The Indies.

The warres of
kynge Ferdinando
ageynſt the
Saracens.

The conqueste of
the IndiesThe conqueste
of Naples.The Emperours
maiestie.

warres ageynste the Moores of Granada, he euen then and at the same tyme fente furth shyppes for the conquestynge of the Indies, as though he and the nation of the Spanyardes had byn appointed by god eyther to subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Christes religion. The selfe same kynge Ferdinando also abowte the yeare of Chryst. 1503. fente a nauie of shyppes into Italy, where they vanquysshed, chafed, and slewe the Frenchemen, and recouered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions belongynge thereunto. By which noble victory, his succession and posteritie as the[e]mperours maiestie and nowe his sonne the kynge owre master and foueraigne lorde haue euer fence enjoyed th[e]inheritaunce of the same as of antiquitie by iust and ryght tittle dewe to them and theyr prediceffours. And as it is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie of his grace vpon theyr succession from generation to generation, so hath he with lyke felicitie prospered the reigne of Th[e]emperours maiestie who by his wysdome and prowes hath not onely polliticky gouerned, but also augmented and enlarged such dominions as fel to hym by discente of inheritance. What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India, in Aphrike, in Italie, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaunders: all the which to be declared accordyngely wolde rather require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one in fewe woordes effectually expressed his dominions and conquestes in these verses folowynge,

*Impiger expauit rapidas transire per undas
 Oceani Alcides: continuitque gradum.
 Maximus at Cæsar, PLVS VLTRA tendere cursum
 Ausus, et ignotis est dare iura locis.
 Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuersus,
 Cætera sub sceptro ponat ut ipse suo.
 Nam pater omnipotens ut famam terminet astris
 Iussit, et imperium fucat Oceano.*

¶ An other also briefely hath declared the same in these verses.

*Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,
 Astra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.*

Gen 17.

The kinges
maiestie

And certes who so well considereth the progenie of kynges that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Ferdinando, and howe many kyngedomes they possesse, may see that God hath fulfilled in hym also the promyses and blessinges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nations, and his feede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that many kynges shulde come furth of his loynes, and to make a perpetuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posteritie to bee theyr god for euer. And here to omytte to speake of other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now, that these blessinges and promyses of god shulde continewe in this princely progenie, fyth the vertues and felicitie of them al doo so thyne and florisse in owr noble and gracious prince kynge Phylippe, to whom euen in his youth his father (occupied in the warres of Italye and Aphrike) comytted the hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Indies. Of his behaour in Englande, his enemies (which canker, vertue neuer lacked) They I say (if any such yet remaine) haue greatest cause to reporte well: ye so well, that yf his naturall clemencie were not greater then was theyr vnnaturall indignation they knowe them selues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyse men are declared in these owld verses.

*Quid stulti proprium? Non posse et velle nocere.
 Quid sapientis opus: Non velle et posse nocere.*

Apostrophe to
Englande.

Isai. 1.

That is to say: What is the propertie of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woork of a wyse man? Not to wyl to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyl, it is knowen to barbers and blere eyde men. Who lamented theyr folly more then he? Who more humbly admytted theyr futes and supplications? Ye who obteyned theyr pardon but he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemy hauynge the swoorde in his hande. Stoope Englande stoope, and learne to knowe thy lorde and master, as horses and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monstres noyous to man kynde. God by the mouth of Isaias the prophet reproneth the Israeletes that they knewe not so well theyr dewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of theyr masters. The ox and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of theyr master, but Israell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be woofe then oxen and asses, and lyke vnto horses and mules in whom is no vnderstandynge. But O vnthankfull Englande and voyde of honest shame? Who hath geuen the the face of a hoore and toonge of a ferpent without shame to speake venomous woordes in secretes ageynst the annoynted of god. O paynted hoore that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyll in thy harte. Hath not the pocke of thy licentiousnesse brusht furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wylt thou nurysshe in thy boofome

that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme leaft thy difeafe become vncurable. What neede I rehearse vnto the thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thine owne owtragioufnesse? If the greefes of them bee to thee vnfenfible by reason of thy feeblednesse and longe fickenes, take vnto the that glaffe wherein thou gloryest with the Iewe and thynkest that thou feest al thynges and canst iudge all mysteries: Looke I fay in that pure glaffe and beholde thy owne deformities, which thou canste not or wylte not feele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen throughte thy selfe, thou wylte abhorre thy selfe to see howe many monsters lye hid in the vnder the shape of man. There is euen nowe great talke of the in the mouthes of all men that thou hast of late yeares brought furthe many monsters and straunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretations more monstrous then the monsters them selues. But shall I breiefely and simply declare vnto thee the signification of thy monsters? Fyrst then confyder that they are monsters of mankynde and not of other beastes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, so that the monstrositie groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Confyder ageyne that disorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that such monstrous byrthes signifie the monstrous and deformed myndes of the people mysshapened with phantastical opinions, dissolute luynges, licentious talke, and such other vicious behaoures which monstrously deforme the myndes of men in the fyght of god who by fuche signes dooth certifie vs in what similitude we appere before hym, and thereby gyueth vs admonition to amende before the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beastes are more monstrous then lyinge, rebellion, strife, contention, priuie malice, flauderynge, mutterynges, conspiraces, and such other deuilysshe imaginations. But O Englande whyle tyme is gyuen thee, circumsife thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayste fynde grace and faouere to recouer thine aunciente bewtie whiche hath so longe been defaced. Thou haste nowe a kynge and queene that desyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abroad to embrace thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are fory to occupie the whyppe yf thou mightest otherwyse bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleasure to persist in frowarde floobbernesse, knowe thou that they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monsters whereof thou hast had fuche experience, that proudly trustyng in thine owne strengthe, and attemptyng lyke an other Nemroth to buylde a newe towre of confusion, the woorkes of thy gigantes were miraculously ouerthrowne by a woman who deliuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughtest to knowe the daungour thou wast in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaste whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath sent the, thou bee lyke vnto Isopes frogges to whom for theyr vnquietnesse, Iupiter sent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Confider what benefites thou mayst receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Confyder ageyne that as they are able, so may thy gentelnesse make them wyllynges to recompense the fame. Stoppe thine eares from vayne fables as from the inchauntynges Mermaydes. For as manye speake of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer shot therein, so doo fooles prate of such thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantasies are nowe in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe smaule sparkes they kyndle great flames? Summe are so curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iust matter woorthy reproche in them whom they desyre to depraue, they speake euyll of theyr parentes and kynred of whom they knowe as lyttle. And not so satisfyed they dispise and with lyinge dispraye theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye sum take such pleasure herein, that if they can fynde noughte els to dispraye, they wyl fynde faute in fuche as they fauour not, bycause they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhappes are not so effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, so parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudenesse, thynkyng them selues the better for disprayinge of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey fayth one: Th[e]mperour is but poore fayth an other: He is deade fayth an other: The Indies haue rebelled fayth an other, and eyther there commeth no more golde from thense, or there is no more founde nowe: with fuche other false and licentious talke diuised by vnquiet braines in whose heades the hammers of fedition seafe not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I shulde here answere to all these querels particularly and as the woorthynesse of the thynges requireth, I myght fynde matter sufficient to make a volume of iuste quantitie and perhappes be tedious to summe. Yet not to passe ouer so great a matter vntouched, and partely to stoppe the mouthes of fuche impudente lyers, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat hereof. Fyrst therefore to speake of Spayne, and by the testimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodities therof: Plinie a graue and faythful autour, in the last boke and last chapiture of his natural history greatly commendynge Italy aboue al other contreys, giueth the second prayse vnto Spaine, aswel for al such thynges as in maner the heuen can geue and the earth bryng furth for the commoditie of this lyfe as also for the excellent wittes of men and Ciuile gouernaunce. Also Diodorus Siculus in the sixt booke of his Bibliotheca speakyng of Spayne (cauled of the Greekes Iberia) writeth that when in the mountaines named Pyrinei th[e] inhabitants burnt vp the wooddes, there ranne owt of the mountaynes as it were dyuers streames of pure syluer molten by the heate of the fyre. But the estimation and price of syluer beinge at those dayes to them vnknown, the Phenician marchauntes bought the fame of them for thynges of smaule value: And caryinge

Monstrous byrthes.

The significacions of monstrous byrthes.

The deformity of monstrous myndes.

The kyng and Queene.

How curious summe are to fynde faute in other.

Lyes Imagined.

Commendacions of Spain

Ryche syluer mynes in Spayne.

The Romans
enriched by the
syluer of Spayne.

The
Carthaginensis
enriched by the
syluer of Spain.

The comodities
of Spain

The sygne of
the steeple.

Englande
impoueryshed,
Spayne enriched.

Syluer mines
founde of late
in Spayne.

Syluer brought
fome Peru into
Englande.

The]emperours
reuenues from
the Indies.

The Ilandes of
the Southe sea.

The Ilandes of
Maluca.

it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great rycheffe therby. For the defyre of gaynes (sayth he) so greatly moued the marchauntes, that when more fyluer remaind then myght lade theyr shyppes, they tooke the leade frome theyr ankers, and put fyluer in the place therof. The Phenices by these gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd affigne many colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and also in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price of fyluer, and applied them felues to the feekynge of metals and founde great plentie of fyluer, they obteyned greate ryches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earth of the mountaynes is so replenysshed with fyluer that it is a marueylous thyng to confyder the nature of the region and the continual labour of the woorkemen in those mynes. Lykewyfe when afterwarde the Romans subdued the Iberians, the Italians which for the defyre of gaynes searched those metals, gotte great rycheffe by the fame. For they deputed to that labour a multitude of bowghte feruauntes, whiche fearchyng the vaynes of metals in dyuers places, and Percyng the earth dyuers wayes for the space of many furlonges, browght furthe great plentie of golde and fyluer. But the rycheffe of these mynes was fyrst founde at such tyme as the Carthaginenses (the enemies of the Romane Empire) had the Iberians in subiection: which was the cause that they poure afterwarde increafed. For, with monye hyring the best and moste experte fouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynst theyr enemies. And not vsyng the ayde eyther of theyr owne fouldiers or theyr associates, they were a terrour to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they browght into great daungiour by reason they passed them al in abundaunce of golde and fyluer. With better fortune therefore, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals fought in Spayne, the goodnesse of whose foyle yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde and fyluer. And these be the very wordes of Diodorus Siculus, which the later wryters doo also confirme. For Iulius Solinus in his Polyhystor, compareth Spayne to the best countreys in plentie of grayne, vyttayles, oyle, fyluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyfe Strabo, Statius, and Claudius, do no lesse commend it. It were to longe here to speake of the greete plentie of fine woolles lyttle inferiour vnto owrs: also abundaunce of fugar, vines, pomegranates, limondes, and orangies in such plentie that they suffice not only Spayne, but also in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are scarfely able to ferue it selfe. And althowghe here summe wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thynges, yet are theyr comodities so greete otherwyfe, that al such thynges are browght them owt of other countreys for theyr wares: and that in such plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande fence the signe of the steeple the poore mans Inne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greete faute that in trauallyng in Spayne, men shalbe serued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meate and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye yow? What inconuenience enfeweth hereof? Is it not better so to doo then to pay thryfe for one thinge as is the maner to doo in summe of owre Innes and in tauernes where all that eate roste meate are beaten with the spitte, as where they that of late in Barthelmewe fayre payde fortie pence for a pygge, where the good man of the house was not a shamed to make his vaunte that he had made foure shylynges of a pygge, and had in one day taken foure ponde for pygges. But if I shuld here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in fewe yeares decayed and impoueryshed, and howe on the contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I shulde perhappes displeafe more in deferyng the myserie of the one, then please other in exprefsyng the florysshynge state of the other, which by all reason is lyke dayly to increafe, aswell for the great rycheffe that are yearely browght thither from the Indies, as also for the ryche fyluer mynes that are founde of late in Spayne in the cuntry of Asturia as I was credably informed by the woorthy and lerned gentelman Augustinus de Ceratta, Contador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes who had longe before byn surueyore of the golde mynes of Peru, and browght from thense and from Rio de Plata. xiii. thousand ponde weyght of fyluer which was coyned to the kinges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath byn seene at once as suche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme. What shulde I heare speake of the golde which th[e]emperours maiestie receaueth frome all the Indies, whereas onely in the two meltyng shoppes of the gold mines of the Ilande of Hispaniola, is molten yearely three hundreth thousande ponde weyght of. viii. vneces to the pound, wherof the fyfte parte is dewe vnto hym, whiche amounteth to three score thousande weyght yearely. Yet doo I not here speake of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme lande reachyng. viii. thousande myles from the north to the south: Neyther of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea cauled Mare del Sur, where the kyng of one lyttle Ilande named Tacarequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe of Saynt Michael, payeth yearely for his tribute a hundreth ponde weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of other thynges, as precious stones, brafile, goffampine cotton, spices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras also the ryche Ilandes cauled the Maluchas perteyne to the inheritance of Castile, although the kyng of Portugale enjoy them for certeyne yeares by composition. But the Indies haue rebelled (say they) and there commeth no more golde from thense. But what if summe of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder obedience? But if thou wylt say that they haue al rebelled at once, thou must proue that thou sayest eyther by hystorie or wytnesse of such as know the truth herof, as I (hauing made diligent searche for the fame) am able to proue the contrarie, and that

fuche talke is onely imagined by bufie headdes. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in fomme prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be browght vnder fubiectiō as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in owre dayes dyuers countreys of Englande whiche haue byn fore afflicted with that plage. But whether the fandes of the ryuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee fo emptied with golde that no more can be founde there, I thinke it here fuperfluous to anfwere to this obiectiō, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where yow shall fynde by experience that metals growe and increafe, and that after certeyne yeares. fuche owlde caues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenyffhed with vre: Also that the fprynges of fuche mountaynes turnyng the courfe and breakyng furth in other places, bryng with them greate plentie of fuch golden fande as is founde in the ryuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it therefore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whose poure is fo greate, his treafure fo infinite, and his doinges fo chargeable, that I beleue that when fo euer it pleafe almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate damage of all Chryftendome, it fhall be harde to fynde an other that fhall in all poyntes bee fo well able to fupplye that roome and maynteyne th[e] imperiall dignitie. Let al honeft natures therefore learne to fpeake well of princes accordyng to the fentence *De Principibus nil nifi bonum*, forasmuch as they are the ministers of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and ruleth the fame as feemeth beste vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that refyfteth or fpeaketh euyll of the poure, refyfteth and fpeaketh euyll of god. Thou fhalt not fpeake euyll of the prince or ruler of thy people faith faint Paule.

But wheras nowe by the poure of Neptunus (I wot nere with what wynde) I haue byn dryuen thus farre from my nauigations, I haue thought good to turne my fayles and to folowe the ordinarie courfe which I beganne, and by th[e] example of this woorthy capitayne kyng Ferdinando, encourage al other to theyr poure to attempte the lyke vyages: As touchyng the which in fewe woordes to declare my opynyō, if any man fhulde me what I thinke thefe thinges wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll anfwere as dooth the autoure of this booke, that when I confyder howe farre owre pofteritie fhall fee the Christian religion enlarged, I am not able with tounge or penne to exprefse what I conceaue hereof in my mynd. Yet one thyng I fee which enforceth me to fpeake and lament, that the harueft is fo great and the workemen fo few. The Spanyardes haue fhewed a good exemple to all Chryftian nations to folowe. But as god is great and wonderfull in all his woorkes, fo befyde the portion of lande perteynyng to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye as yowe maye reade in the lafte booke of the feconde Decade) and befide that which perteineth to the Portugales, there yet remayneth an other portion of that mayne lande reachyng towarde the northeaft, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knowen but only by the fea coaftes, neyther inhabyted by any Christian men: whereas neuertheleffe (as wryteth Gemma Phrifius) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beaftes. Also cities and towres fo wel buylded and people of fuch ciuilitie, that this parte of the worlde feemeth lyttle inferiour to owre Europe, if th[e] inhabitants had receaued owre religion. They are wyttie people and refufe not barteryng with ftraungers. Thefe regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalearum or Bacchallaos of the which yow may reade funwhat in this booke in the vyage of the woorthy owlde man yet luyng Sebaftiane Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrde Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and moft barbarous parte hereof, from whence he was repulfed with Ife in the moneth of Iuly. Neuertheleffe, the weft and fouth partes of thefe regions haue fince byn better fearchd by other, and founde to bee as we haue fayde before. The chiefe citie in the fouthweft partes of thefe regions, is cauled Temixtetan, or Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicus Cancri, and ftrongely defended by the nature of the place. For it ftandeth in a very great lake hauyng about it innumerable bridges, and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Th[e] inhabitants alfo can wryte and reade. Summe wrytters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Asia: But the truth hereof is not yet knowen. And althoughe the Spanyardes haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is nowe cauled Noua Hispania, yet are the people for the moft parte Idolatours. Howe much therefore is it to be lamented, and howe greatly dooth it founde to the reproche of all Chryftendome, and efpecially to fuch as dwell nereft to thefe landes (as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the fame then are the Spanyardes (as within. xxv. dayes faylinge and leffe) howe muche I faye fhall this founde vnto owre reproche and inexcufable flothfulneffe and negligence bothe before god and the worlde, that fo large dominions of fuch tractable people and pure gentiles, not beinge hytherto corrupted with any other falfe religion (and therefore the eafyer to bee allured to embrace owres) are nowe knowen vnto vs, and that we haue no refpecte neyther for goddes caufe nor for owre owne commoditie to attempte fomme vyages into thefe coaftes, to doo for owr partes as the Spaniardes haue doone for theirs, and not euer lyke fheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothyng woorthy memorie amonge men or thankes before god, who maye herein woorthely accufe vs for the flackeneffe of owre dewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gentiles (to whose Apoftelshippe alfo thefe newe gentiles doo perteine) was of fuch zeale toward the Iewes whom god had reiectd, that

The nauigations
of the Spanyardes.

Itali is. 1020 myles
in lengthe and.
126. in breadthe.

The lande cauled
Terra florida, and
regio baccalearum.

Looke the last
booke, thirde
decade.

This region is
now cauled Noua
Hispania. Sum
thinke that this
citie is Quinsai of
Marcus Pau us.

Looke the last
booke of the 3.
decade, and the
beginning of the
booke of the
landes lately
found.

The godlye zeale
of. S. Paule.

he wysshed hym selfe to bee accursed of god for theyr fakes. He went from Damascus to Arabie, preached the gospell in Grecia, came prisoner to Rome, was scourged and stoned, and suffered thyrse shypwracke, what then thinke yow he wold do if he were now alieue? Is it to be thought that he wolde not aduenture. xxv. dayes saylynge to come to such a marte of foules in such redinesse to bee easely obteyned? I beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor Leuiathan, nor the worlde, shulde let hym but that he wolde geue th[e]onfet ageynst them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom he sayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his office nor ignorant of his reward, but trusted to the promesse of him that sayde by the mouth of the prophet Isai: Of them that shalbe faued, I wyl fende sum to the gentyles in the sea, into Aphrike and Libia, Italie, and Grecia, and into the Ilandes a farre of, to them that haue not harde of me, and haue not seene my glorie. The like zeale that Paule had, and proceadyng of the same spirite, hath euer sence Chrystes tyme, moued not only the Apostles, but also many other famous and godly men (as superuifours of his testamente) to fende owte preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to shewe furth the gladd tydyng of the gospell. By this zeale dyd Gregorye bysshoppe of Rome and fyrste of that name, when he sawe Englysshe mens chyldren in Rome and asked what nation they were, when answere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englysshe men) he sayd (alludyng to the similitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural bewtie and comelynesse, so it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe pastoure of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr foules might be made woorthy to inhabite such bodies and the hole nation consecrated vnto god by baptysme. For he sayde furthermore: It is meete that vnto these also, the gospell of life bee preached: And hereuppon immediatly sent preachers into Englande whereby the hole nation was in shorte tyme conuerted to Christes faith, although sum had receaued the gospell long before euen from Chrystes tyme by the preaching of Ioseph of Arinathia who asked the body of Chryste of Pilote, and buried it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo such Gregories in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelnesse bee founde in vs Englysshe men towarde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Owre prediceffoures were not vtterlye vnmyndefull of these benefites, but applyed them selues lykewise to spreade the gospell in other nations. For Vadianus in his booke *De tribus terra partibus*, wryteth, that more then feuen hundreth yeares after the death of Chryste, one Vnesfride an Englysshe man and bysshoppe of Mogunce, (nowe cauled Menfe) was the fyrste that tawght the fayth of Chryste amonge the Germaines, at such tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had passed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttyng the garrysons of the Romans to flight, had possessed a great parte of theyr most notable prouinces. For albeit that these rude and barbarous nations then accustomed onely to warre and robberie did hardly admitte that holsome doctrine at the beginning. Yet by the pollicie and wisedome of the Frankes, it came so to passe that in maner through owt all Germanie, greate increase of the Christian religion folowed there moste ample victories, as the lyke successe is also seene in these barbarous nations subdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although sum holde opinion that none owght to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we see by experience that without disputyng of opinions (lest the pacientes shulde dye before the phisitians agree of the remedie) these entreprises haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who cauleth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinyng worlde, otherwyse nowe then in the tyme of Chryste and his Apostles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe sayth which had yet preuaied no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it shuld so be requisite, as yowe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a simple mariner euen in th[e]infancie of faythe. And fuerlye, lyke as there is no cause why we shulde anye thyng doubte of goddes goodnesse in this behalfe if the faut be not in owre selues. Euen so, if we wolde fyrste sette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue encrease and woork with vs as he hath doone with other, by whose prosperous successe we may plainely see that it was his wyll that suche thynges shulde go forwarde. For euen Israell to whom promesse was made by signes and miracles that they shulde possesse the lande to th[e]inheritaunce wherof, the sea opened it selfe to giue them free passage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the swoorde to make way, with greate losse and slaughter of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promysed to theyr fathers, whiche neuerthelesse fewe of them possessed that first fought for the same, but lest theyr carkeses in the wildernesse. Is it not also written of the Iuwes which repayed the walles of the citie of Hierusalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine fet the people in order with swoordes, speares, and bowes to defende the woorkemen? And that also euen the Princes of Iuda wrought vpon the walles and caried burdens? lykewise that they wrought with one hande and held theyr swoordes in the other? And if it were lawful for Israell accordyng to the fleshe, to vse all meanes and pollicies to buylde vp the walles of earthly Hierusalem, howe muche more then ought the spirituall Israelites to

Isai. 66.

Gregorie the First.

Th[e]office of
byshoppes.England
conuerted to the
fayth of christ.This vnfride was
afterwarde
named Boneface.Whether any may
bee compelled to
the faythe.The tyme of
miracles.Miracles of late
dayes.Howe Israell
possessed the
lande of
promesse.Ezra. 2.
cap. 4.

vfe all poffible meanes to buylde vp the walles and temples of fpirituall Hierufalem, whofe fundation is Chrifte, wyllynge all the nations of the worlde to be buylded vpon the fame. It is the propertie of a wyfe buylder to vfe fuch tooles as the woork requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vfe one toole. For that that ferueth in fofte tymber, wyll not ferue in knottie pieces, nor yet for ftones. Th[e]xpert phifitian vfeth vehement remedies for desperate difeafes: And cunnige furgians vfe burnynge and cuttynge if the cafe fo require, as in cuttynge of the fpynger to faue the hande, or in cuttyng of the hand to faue the hole body. Ye it hath fumtymes fo chaunfed that wheras men haue entended hurt, there hath good proceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue flaine Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his fwoorde, whereby he was healed of that difeafe. So is god able to turne euyll into good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that are. Euen fo although fumme wyll obiecte that the defyre of golde was the chiefe caufe that moued the Spanyardes and Portugales to fearch the newe founde landes, trewly albeit we fhulde admitte it to bee the chiefe caufe, yet dooth it not folowe that it was the only caufe, forasmuch as nothyng letteth but that a man may bee a warrier or a marchaunte, and alfo a Christian. Therefore what fo euer owre chiefe intente bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rycheffe, (althoughe the zeale to encrease Chriflian religion ought chiefly to moue vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrft attempte the matter: And then I doubt not but that it wolde fo comme to paffe with vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning of the worlde before menne were accustomed to cate fleffhe, thought it firft fufficient fo to vfe them felues amonge beaftes that they were not hurte of them: but shortly after, vfed them for their commoditie: Then begunne to weare theyr fkinnes: And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr fleffhe, and to vfe certeine partes of them for remedies ageinft difeafes. Euen fo may thefe barbarians by the only conuerfation with the Chriflians, (although they were enforced therto) be brought to fuch familiaritie with ciuilitie and vertue, that not onely we maye take greate commoditie thereby, but they may alfo herewith imbibe trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we fhulde feeke the fame. For lyke as they that goo much in the foonne, are coloured therewith although they go not for that purpofe, So may the conuerfation of the Chriflians with the gentyles induce them to owre religion, where there is no greater caufe of contrarye to refyfte as is in the Iuwes and Turkes who are already drowned in theyr confirmed erreure. But thefe fimple gentiles lyuinge only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a fmoothe and bare table vn timer, or a white paper vn timer, vpon the which yow may at the fyrft paynte or wryte what yow lyfte, as yow can not vpon tables already paynted, vn timer yow rafe or blot owt the fyrfte formes. They may alfo th[e]felyer bee allured to the Chriflian fayth, for that it is more agreable to the lawe of nature then eyther the cerimonious lawe of Moifes, or portentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therefore as defyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chryfte as to feeke worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherein we may doo bothe. We muft not nowe looke for a newe Paule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerted by heauenly reuelations: Or for a newe Moifes to leade men through the fea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to an other as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe th[e]apoftle was caryed by the fpirite from Gaza to Azotus: but muft (as fayth the prophete Ifaias) euery man exhorte his neyghboure, and bid his broother be of good chere: That the mafon and carpenter may buylde togyther, and fay to the glewe or cemente, it is good and fafte byndynge. What negligence and flackenefie hath hytherto byn in Chriflian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the greate clerke Erasmus hath declared in his booke intituled Ecclefiastes, whofe woordes for the woorthynefie of the autoure, I haue here thought good to rehearfe as they are wrytten by hym in the laten tounge in the fyrfte booke of the fayde woork. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantium collapsam Christianam religionem, eamque ditionem quæ quondam complexa est uniuersum terrarum orbem, in has angustias esse contractam. Hoc igitur quibus ex animodolet, eos decet ardentibus assiduisque votis flagitare a Christo ut operarios dignentur mittere in messem suam, aut (vt melius dicam) feminatores mittere in segetem suam. Deum immortalem, quantum in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactum est semen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum est, vt plus sit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars est Europa: Omnium florentissima pars est Græcia et Asia minor in quam magno successu primum a Iudæa demigravit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, nonne tenetur a Mahumetanis et ijs qui Christi nomen habent inuisum? Iam in Asia maiore quæ latissime patet, quid obsecro nostrum est? quum ipsa Palestina vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, feruiat Allophylis? In Aphrica vero quid nostrum est? Nec dubitandum est quin in tanta vastitate regionum sint populi rudes et simplices qui facile possent ad Christum alici, si mitterentur qui facerent bonam sementem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hæcenus incognitæ reperiuntur, ferunturque superesse quo nullus adhuc nostratium peruenit. Omitto nunc infinitam Iudæorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plurimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto tantas schismaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges. Quantus in his esset prouentus Christo, si gnauis ac fideles mitterentur operarij qui iaciant semen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur estructuras non inuidentes petrae Christo, denique qui metant maturam segetem, sed Christo

The buylding
of spirituall
Hierusalem.

The conuersion of
the gentiles.

The christian
faythe

Isai. 45.

Augustina
Christiana
ditionis.

Preseian
Aethiopia rex.

Pilapii.

Franciscani
Seraphici.
Dominicani
Cherubici.
Linguae
impericia.
Miracula.

Damianus a Goes

To the christian
princes.

The sheepe of
Europe.

The doctoure
of diuinitie

An admonition
to riche men.

The marchant.

me tant non sibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes sibi. Nuper Aethiopiae rex quem vulgus appellat Preseian, per oratorem suum submisit se sedi Romanae, non nihil exoptulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Christi non sit aliena, tam diu fuerit a totius orbis pastore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandae religionis studiosi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiae septentrionalis populum mire simplicem ac rudem, a nescio quibus principibus Christianis teneri dititione, sed ita duro premi iugo humano, ut eis non imponatur suauis iugum Christi, atque ita spoliari bonis externis, ut non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratissimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos studemus Christo lucrifacere, ac sic eos in dititionem nostram recipere ut gaudeant se subiectos esse principibus sub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante debebant. Nouimus cicurare bestias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad usum vulgarem: et non nouimus mansuefacere homines ut seruiant Christo? Monarchae alunt qui doceant elephantos ad saltandum, qui doment leones ad lusum, qui doment lynces et leopardos ad venatum: et monarcha ecclesiae non inuenit quo homines alliciat ad amabilem Christi seruicium? Scio vix ullam reperiri beluam domitu difficiliorem quam est Iudaeus obstinatus, et obduratus haereticus: quanquam nullum est animal tam immitte quod non cicuretur beneficentia et suauitate. E repertis regionibus cucitur aurum et gemmae: Sed triumpho dignius erat illuc inuhere Christianam sapientiam auro preciosiorem, ac margaritam euangelicum quod omnibus diuenditis bene comparatur. Dominus iubet suis rogare dominum messis ut extrudat operarios quod messis esset ampla, operarij pauci. Non minus opus est nunc rogare deum ut in tam late patentes agros ejiciat operarios, Sed excusant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Christiana ditio tot habet myriadas Franciscanorum in quibus probabile est quamplurimos esse qui vere flagrant igni seraphico: nec pauciores sunt myriades Dominicanorum, et in his consentaneum est permultos esse Cherubici spiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur viri, mundo vere mortui, Christo viui, qui syncere apud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excusatur linguae imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiscant: Et Themistocles Athenienses vno anno sic didicit sermonem Asiaticum ut absque interprete cum rege loqui posset: An idem non studebimus in tam sublimi negotio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apostoli inuenerunt vicium et amicum: et Deus pollicitus est nihil defuturum quarentibus regnum Dei. Nec miracula quidem defutura sunt si res postulet, modo ad sit sincera fides cum seraphica charitate, &c.

Furthermore Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *De deploratione Lappiana gentis*, that he was the fyrst that moued Erasmus to speake sumwhat hereof: And that he (Erasmus I meane) was determined to write a iust volume of this matter yf he had not byn preuented by death. Albeit (sayth Damianus) in his booke entiteled *Ecelesiastes*, he dyd not keepe silence of so wicked an vngodlynesse, whiche surely is fuche, that it may in maner make all Christian men (and especialye such vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowlege) giltye of so heyghnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them in the day of iudgement before the iuste iudge Chryst. Nowe therefore (sayth he) let the Christian Monarches take heede what accompte they shall make before the tribunal of Chryste at the laste daye, when neyther fauoure, nor pardon, or flatterie can take place to bee any excuse for the losse of so manye foules. And these be the very woordes of the woorshipful and lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the bysshoppe of Rome Paule the thyrde of that name, whom he further chargeth to looke diligently hereunto, as a thyng moste chiefly perteynyng to the office of Christian prelates. Mee thynke verely that the sheepe of Europe shulde by this tyme be so well fedde, that they shulde by good reason be so stronge and mightie in Christes religion (excepte they be infected with the dysease which the phisicians caule Cachexia, beinge an euyl disposition of the body whereby the more they are fed the worfe they lyke) that many sheppardes myght well bee spared to bee sent to other sheepe which ought to be of the same fould. For this purpose the doctoure of diuinitie when he commenfeth, hath his scapular cast ouer his headde in token that he hathe forsaken the worlde for Christes sake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he shall euer bee in a redynesse to go forwarde in preachyng the gospell, as I doubt not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge these newe gentyles if they were therto mainteyned by the ayde of the secular poure as in this case it shalbe requisite for the furniture of necessaries hereunto apperteynyng, I must nowe therefore appele vnto yow, yow riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them selues, but onely as they are vsed wel or euil. If yowe vse them well, they are the gyftes of god wherwith yow may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if yow vse them otherwyfe, yowe possesse not them, but they possesse yow, and theyr canker and ruste (as saythe the Apostle) shalbe a testimonie ageinst yow in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therefore that this thyng perteyneth not vnto yowe, if yowe perteyne vnto Christe and looke to haue any parte with hym. Confyder with yowre selues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy yowe wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyrde part, withowt castyng of any perell by lande or by sea, as the wyttie poet Horase hath in fewe wordes descrybed the marchautes defyre and aduentures to obteyne rycheffe.

*Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,
Fer mare pauperiem fugiens, per faxa, per ignes.*

The which verses are thus much to fay in effecte.

The marchaunt in hope greate rycheffe to fynde,
By fyer and by water passeth to Inde,
By the burnte line or Equinoctiall,
To flye from pouertie and hafarde all.

As the poet hath in these verses, by the marchaunt declared the desyre that couetous men haue to obteyne slippery riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we see in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them selues forward to the moste daungerous aduenture as to haue the forewarde of the battayle: a token surely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortal god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be so valient, stowte, and in maner desperate in theyr owne priuate matters, perteynyng onely to theyr bodies, and yet so coulde, negligent, and fearefull in goddes cause and thynges touchyng the health of theyr foules? If there were neyther deuyll nor lawe to accuse men before god in this case, shall not theyr owne consciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynste theym in that they haue not shewed that loue to mankynde, which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beastes to shewe one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there (excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hartes of such men) what hope is there I say, that they wyll depart with any of theyr gooddes, muche lesse aduenture theyr bodies, to the furtheraunce of Christes religion in these regions beinge so farre from them, wheras many shewe lyttle loue, charitie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyrannie, and oppression) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling euen at home at theyr owne clbowes. But as this couetousnesse is to bee reprobued, so is the liberalitie of such to be commended as haue byn at greate coaste and charges in settyng forwarde suche viages: wherein not onely the marchauntes of London, but also diuers noble men and gentelmen aswell of the counsaile as other, which bothe with theyr money and furtheraunce otherwyse haue furnysshed and sent furth certeyne shippes for the discoueryng of suche landes and regions as were heretofore vnknown, haue herein deserued immortal fame, for as much as in such attempts and daungerous vyages, they haue shewed no smaule liberalitie vpon vncerteyne hope of gayne: wherein they haue deserued so much the greater prayse as theyr intent seemed to bee rather to further honest enterprises then for respecte of vantage. And here certeynely in the mention of these viages I myght seeme vngatefull if I shulde omitte to giue dewe commendations to the two chiefe capitaynes of the fame as the woorthy knyght syr Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chaunceler who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commoditie of theyr countrey: Men doubtlesse woorthye for their noble attempts to bee made knightes of the Ocean or otherwyse preferred if euer god sende them home ageyne although they sayle of theyr purpose. For as suche haue obteyned absolute glory that haue brought great thynges to passe, so haue they deserued immortal fame which haue only attempted the fame: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the vnwoorthyest) is not in the poure of man. Xerxes obteyned glorie in makynge a bridge ouer the sea Hellespontus ioynynge Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosphorus when he passed with his armye towarde the Scythians. No lesse fame and commendation (although not lyke glory) deserued Demetrius, Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted to cutte in fundre certeyne places cauled Isthmi, (beinge narrowe portions of lande so diuidynge two seas, that there is no passage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finished that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered eyther by death, warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans and Greekes gaue such glorie vnto them that had eyther well deserued of the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enterprises as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyr death they caused Images of golde, syluer, brasse, Iuery, and marble to bee made to theyr lyknesse, and the fame to be placed in theyr solemne hauies, palaices, or temples, with certeyne verses made to the commendation of them whom the Images represented. And this no lesse to prouoke and encorage other forwarde natures to th[e] emulation of their vertues, then also to geue them the due honoure of theyr iust desertes. And surely if euer fence the begynnynge of the worlde any enterpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a thyng atchyued by men of heroicall vertue, doubtlesse there was neuer any more woorthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche owre nation haue attempted by the north seas to discouer the mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which vyage not only golde, syluer, precious stones, and spices, may be brought hether by a safer and shorter way, but also much greater matters may hereof ensue in tyme if it shall please God to gyue vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christian princes

The desyre of wordely fame.

Men are slothfull in goddes cause.

Vyages from Engiande.

Syr Hugh Wylloby and Rycharde Chaunceler.

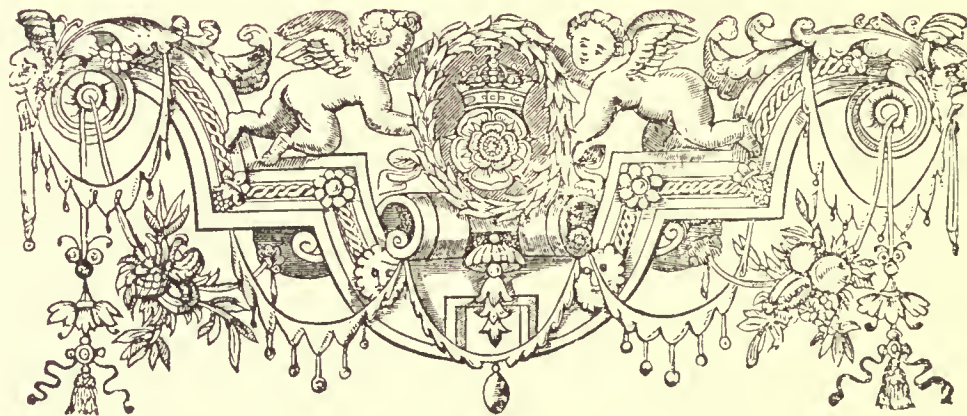
Glory and fame.

The rewarde of noble enterprises.

The vyage to Cathay by the north seas.

Societe betwene
the Tartars and
the Christians
The Turke.
The Sophie.
Tambulanes.
Baiafetes.

of Europe and the greate emperoure of Cathay, that (as wryteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can nothyng be imagined more effectuall for the confusion of the Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Persia on the one syde, and the Christian Princes on the other syde, shulde with one consent inuade his dominions, as dyd Tamburlanes Th[e]emperoure of the Tartars who abowte the yeare of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prifoner Baiafetes Ottomanus Th[e]emperoure of the Turkes and slewe. xx. thoufande of his men in one battayle besyde many other great victories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hystorie of Paulus Iouius. And to haue fayde thus muche in maner of a preface it may suffice.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION I.

Pietro Martire.

The First Decade, . *Of the Ocean.*

First printed in 1511.

The Second Decade, . *Of the supposed Continent.*

The Third Decade, . [*The discovery of the Pacific by
Vasco Nunez de Balboa, on the
25th September 1513. The
voyages of Pedro Arias, and
Sebastian Cabot.*]

The Second and Third Decades were first printed in 1516.

Of the new found islands (i.e. Yucatan and Mexico.)

First printed in 1521.]

[This eloquent Dedication first appeared in the Second and enlarged Edition of the *Decades*, the printing of which was finished at Alcalá on 9th November 1516. Nearly the whole of the following First *Decas* (pp. 65-105) had, however, been previously printed in 1511, and was for the most part *written* even earlier than that year.]

TO THE MOSTE NOBLE PRINCE AND CATHOLIKE KYNGE, CHARLES,
PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA WYSHETH
PERPETUALL FELICITIE.



He diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he fyrste created the worlde, hathe referued vnto this day the knowlege of the great and large Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened the same, chiefly vnto yowe (moſte mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie ſucceſſe of yowr grandfather by yowr mothers fyde. The ſame prouidence (I knowe not by what deſtenie) hath brought me owt of my natiue cuntry of Milane, and owt of the cite of Rome (where I continued almoſt. x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularlye collecte, theſe marueylous and newe thynges, which ſhoulde otherwyſe perhappes haue line drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men

The largenes of the Ocean vnknown to this day.

woorthy [of] greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of theſe thynges. Notwithſtandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile beſtowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Aſcanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceauyng that I was wyllyng to departe owt of the cite to be preſent at the warres of Granatum, diſſuaded me from my purpoſe. But ſeing that I was fully reſolued to departe, exhorted and required me to wryte vnto hym ſuch newes as were famous in Spayne and woorthy to be noted. I tooke therefore my iorney into Spaine chiefly for the deſyre I had to ſee th[e] expedition whiche was prepared ageynſt the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in Italye, by reaſon of the diſſention among the Princes, I coulde fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beinge a younge man deſyrous of knowlege and experience of thynges. I was therefore preſente at the warres: from whence I writte to Cardinal Aſcanius, and by fundry epiſtels certified hym of ſuch thynges as I thought moſte woorthy to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a natural moother to a ſteppedame, I ceaſed from wrytyng. Yet after I ſawe, that by th[e] ouerthrowe of the enemies of owre faythe, Spayne was purged of the Moores as of an euyll weede plucked vp by the rootes, Leaſte I ſhulde beſtowe my ſlippery yeares in vnprofitable Idleneſſe I was mynded to returne to Italic. But the ſinguler benignitie of bothe the Catholyke Kyng and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promiſes towarde me vppon my returne from my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpoſe. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drewe backe my foote: Aſwel for that I ſee in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke woorthy thynges to be done: As alſo that in maner through owt all Italy, by reaſon of the diſcorde of the Chriſtian

Cardinal Aſcanius.

The warres of Granatum ageynſt the Moores.

The autour was ſent ambassadeur to the Soltaic of Alcayr in Egypte.

Italy diſquieted with warres.

The sequels of
warre.

Kynge Frederike.

Leo the tenth,
byshoppe of Rome.

Spayne subdued
from the Moores.

The kyn[g]dome of
Naples.

Note, from the
begynnyng of the
worlde.

The temperatnes
of the Equinoctial
vnknown to the
owld wryters.

Contiente or firme
lande as bygge as
thre Europes

Ryches are the
instrumentes of
conquestes.

Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge into ruine, the countreys to be destryed and made fatte with human bludde: The cities sacked, virgines and matrones with theyr gooddes and possessions caried away as captiues and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne vnarmed within theyr owne houfes. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtcryes, but dyd also feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinffolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therfore mufynge with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrste bookes of my Decades wrytten to Ascanius, required me in the name of kynge Frederike his vncl, to put forth the other eyght epistell bookes, In the meane tyme also, while I was voyde of all care as touchynge the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the bysshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whose holfome counfayle and autoritie we truste the calamities of Italy shalbe fynysshed) rayfed me as it were from sleape, and encoraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To his holynesse I writte two Decades comprysed in short bokes after the maner of epistels, and added them to the fyrst, which was printed without myne aduise, as shall further appeare by the preface folowyng.

But nowe I returne to yow (most noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Therefore wheras yowr graundefathers by your moothers fyde, haue subdued all Spayne vnder yowr dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also lefte yowr the kyngedome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of owr seas, it is fuerly a greate thyng and woorthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due to owre prediceffors, what so euer frome the begynnyng of the worlde hath byn doone or wrytten to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee confyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what fundry nations and tounes, what golde mynes, what treasuries of perles they haue lefte vnto yowre hyghnesse, beyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare.

Come therefore moste noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto yowe the Equinoctiall line hetherto vnknown and burnt by the furious heate of the soonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owld wryters a fewe excepted: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moste fortunate, with a thowfande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, beyde that greate portion of earth supposed to bee parte of the firme lande, excedyng in quantitie three Europes. Come therefore and embrace this newe worlde,

and suffer vs no longer to consume in defyre of yowr prefence. From henfe,
from henfe I faye (most noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes
be prepared for yow, whereby al the worlde shalbe
vnder yowr obeyfaunce.

And thus I byd yowr maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal
perceau the fruites of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyll
hereafter doo my endeuoure that yowe maye receaue the
same more abundantly. From Madrid. The
day before the Calendes of October,

In the yeare of. Chryste.

M. D. X V I.

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES
OF THE OCEAN, WRITTEN BY PETER MARTYR OF
Angleria, Milenoes, counsiler to the kyng of Spayne and
Protonotarie Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*
Sphorcia, vicount Cardinall. etc.



THE REVERENDE AND thanckefull antiquite was accustomed to esteeme those men as goddes, by whose industrie and magnanimitie suche Landes and Regions were discovered, as were vnknown to theyr predicesoures. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god whom we honour in triplicitie of person, this resteth, that albeit we do not woorschip that kind of men with diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthely maruell at theyr noble actes and enterprifes. Vnto kynges and princes we gyue due obeyfaunce, by whose gouernaunce and furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme theyr attemptes. We commende bothe, and for theyr iust desertes woorthely extoll them. Wherefore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the west Ocean, lately discovered, and of the auctours of the fame, (whiche thynge you desyre by your letters to knowe) I wyll begynne at the fyrst auctoure therof, lest I be iniurious to any man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

O *Christophorus Colonus* (other wise called *Columbus*) A gentilman of Italy, borne in the cite of *Genua*, perfwaded *Fernando* and *Elyzabeth*, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they wolde furnyssh him with shyppes and other thynges apperteynyng. Affyrminge that therby not onely the Christian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also enryched by the great plentie of golde, pearles, precious stones, and spices, whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shyppes were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great caracte with deckes: and the other two were light marchaunte shyppes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Christ 1492. and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with. CC. xx. [two hundred and twenty] Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canaria*, found but of late dayes) are distaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thoufande and two hundreth myles, accordyng to theyr accompte: for they say they are distant three hundreth leaques: wheras such as are expert sea men, affyrme that euery leaque conteyneth foure myles, after theyr supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of fommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore sayled fyrste to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, to the intente there to refreshe his shyppes with freshe water and fuell, before he committed him selfe to thys so laborious a vyage. And bycause I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canaria*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vnknown they became known, and of saluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknown.

These feuen Ilandes (therfore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permission of queene *Katharine*, protectrix of kyng *Iohn* her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christe. M.CCCC.V. This *Betanchor* inuaded twoo of these Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortisuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire folde bothe the sayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble cite of *Xericium*, and *Michaell of Moxica*.

1
The reward of
vertue

The Ilandes of
the weste Ocean.

Christophorus
Colonus.

India.

The fyrst viage
of Colonus.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Gades or
Cals mals.
A leaque, what it
conteyneth by sea.
The fortunate
Ilandes.
Cabouerde.

The seuen Ilandes
of Canarie.
Betanchor A
frenche man
subdued the
ilandes of Canarie
Lancelotus.
Fortisuentura.
Ferrea.
Gomera.
Grancanaria.

Palma.
Tenerifen.
Alphonfus Lugo.

2

Colonus men rebel
against hym.

Faire wordes and
promises.

Hispaniola.
Iohanna.

Nightingales
syng in
Nouember.

The Ilande of
Ophir.

The ilandes of
Antilia.

A shypwrack

The people of
the ilande.
Naked people.

Expert swimmers.
Gold for erth and
glasse.
Many kynges

Relygious and
humaine people.

Canoas.

Monoryla. 3

They haue no
Iren.
Canibales or
Caribes
Anthrophophagi.

The crueltie of
the Canibales.

Palma and *Tenerifen*, by *Alphonfus Lugo*, at the kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrca* were easely subdued: But the matter wente harde with *Alphonfus Lugo*. For that naked and wylde nation, fyghtinge onely with stoncs and clubbes, droue his armie to flighte at the fyrste assaulte, and slewe about foure hundreth of his men. But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canaria* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directynge his viage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge of the sonne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande, fayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, hauynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrste to murmure secretely among them felues: and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyl of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and consulted with them felues, eyther to rydde hym out of the waye, orelles to cast hym into the sea: Ragynge that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into sliche daungerous places, that they myght neuer retorne ageyne. And after. xxx. dayes were paste, they furiously cryed out againste him, and threatned him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme desyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynst hym, or other wife disobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espied the lande longe looked for. In this fyrst nauigation, he discouered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyfe called *Cuba*,) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales syng in the thicke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harborowe greate nauies of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the west, he rode lyttell lesse then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure score leaques) supposyng that it had byn the continent or fyrme land, bicause he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudge with his eye: wherfore he determined to retorne backe agayne, beyng therto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. For the sea banckes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by fondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them felues so muche towarde the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughly tossed the shippes by reason of the wynter. Turnynge therefore the stemmes of his shippes towarde the Easte, he affirmed that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whyther Salomons shippes fayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that bothe these, and the other Ilandes adioynnyng, are the Ilandes of *Antilia*. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe fyde as he approached nere to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggeste vessell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in funder. But the playnnesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makyng haste therefore with the other two shippes to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurte. Here comyng fyrst a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknownen nation comyng towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thicke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares coursed with grehoundes. Owre men purfuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the shippes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue descended from heauen. They cast them felues by heapes into the sea, and came swimmyng to the shippes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owre men for erthen pottes, drinkinge glasse, poyntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasse, and sliche other trifles. Thus growyng to further familiaritie, owre men were honorably enterteined of the kyng of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynges, as when Eneas arriued in Italy, he founde *Latium* diuided into many kyngedomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mezcutium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narrow boundes, as shall more largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulynge of the sonne, when owre men went to praier, and kneled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crosse, they folowed them in all poyntes as well as they coulde. They shewed much humanitie towards owre men: and helped them with theyr lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken shyppe: And that with sliche celeritie and cherefulness, that no frende for frende, or kynsman for kynsman, in sliche case moued with pitie, coulde do more. Theyr boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narowe. Many affirme that they haue sene some of them with fortie ores. The wylde and myscheuous people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthrophophagi*) molested them excedyngly, inuadyng theyr countrey, takyng them captiue, kyllyng and eatyng them. As owre men fayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they lefte the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middest of theyr viage towarde the south. They complayned that theyr Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incurfions of these manhuntyng *Canibales* when they go forth a rouynge to seeke theyr praye: then are

other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of fuche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other moſte fleshy partes, they powder for flore, as we do pestelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they absteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therefore fuche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennes to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe caul owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceauē the *Canibales* coming, haue none other shyfte but onely to flie: for althoughe they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repressē the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confesse, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundreth of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: muche lyke a nauew roote in fourme and greatnesse: but of sweete taste, muche lyke a greene chefnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often roasted or foddē, then to make breade therof. But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be first sliced and pressed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or foddē. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be dronke it causeth present death, and yet the breade made of the masse therof, is of good taste and holfome, as all they haue proued. They make also an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulse, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plentie in the dukedome of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brawne: The graynes wherof are fette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme somewhat lyke a pease. While they be foure and vnripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whyter then snowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizium*. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hange certain small pieces therof at theyr eares and nosethrilles. A lyttell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freshe water, where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whose fande was myxed with muche golde. They founde there no Kindes of foure footed beastes excepte three kyndes of lyttell conyes. These Ilandes also nourishe serpentes: but such as are without hurt. Lykewise wyld geefe, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as swannes, with heades of purple coloure. Also Popiniaies, of the whiche some are greene, some yelowe, and some lyke them of *India*, with yelowe rynges about theyr neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they broughte fortie with them, of moſte liuely and delectable coloures, hauyng theyr fethers entermengled with greene, yelowe, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the fense not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to speake of Poppingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) specially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Christophorus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wryters as touchyng the bignesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portion of the same beyng vnder vs, yet the Poppingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, doo declare that these Ilandes fauoure somewhat of *India*, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the same nature: forasmuche as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke *De Calo et Mundo*, and likewise *Seneca*, with diuerse other authours not ignorant in Cosmography, do affirme that *India* is no longe tracte by sea, distante from Spayne by the weste Ocean, for the foyle of these Ilandes, bryngeth forth the Mastix, Aloes, and fundrye other sweete gummes and spyces as doth *India*. Cotton also of the goffampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called Seres.

¶ The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turei*. A house, *Boa*. Golde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but pyne app[er]e trees, and date trees: And those of maruelous heght and exceeding harde, by reason of the greate moistnesse and fatnesse of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the sonne, whiche endureth fo all the hole yere. They playnely affyrme the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to be the most fruiteful lande that the heauen compaffeth aboute, as shall more largely appere hereafter in the particular description of the same, whiche we intende to fette forth when we shall be better instructed.

Thus makyng a leage of frendshyppe with the kyng, and leauyng with hym. xxxviii. men to searche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takyng with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spanishe tongue, to the intent to vse them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therefore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who caused him to fyttē in theyr presence, whiche is a token of great loue and honoure amonge the Spaniardes. He was also made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother gouernour of the Iland.

Towarde the second viage, he was furnished with. x[v]ii. shippes: wherof three were great caractes of a thousand tunne: xii. were of that forte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*: without deckes: and two other of the same forte somewhat bygger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reason of the gretnesse of theyr mastes.

Ages.
Rootes in the
steede of meate.
Iucca.
Breade of rootes.

An herbe of a
straunge nature.

Maizium.

Golde in
estimation.

Golde in the
sandēs of ryuers.
Serpentes without
venime.
Turtle doues
Duckes.
Poppingiaies.
Plini.

These Ilandes are
parte of India.
The Indians are
Antipodes to the
spaniardes.

Aristotle.
Seneca.
India not far
from Spaine
4
Mastix.
Aloe.
Gossampyne
cotton or bombase
Seres.
The language of
these Indians.
Trees and frutes
vnknown to vs.
Fat and moyste
grounde.
Heate continuall
and temperate.
The fruitfulness of
hispaniola

The seconde viage
of Colonus.

Come and sedes
to sowe.

Tooles and
artillery.

Water droppng
from a tree
continually.

He had also a thousand and two hundred armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as smythes, carpenters, myners, and fuche other: Certayne horsfemen also, wel armed: Likewise mares, shiepe, heyghfers, and such other of bothe kindes for increafe. Lykewise all kynde of pulfe or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beans and peafe, and fuche other, as well for food as to fowe: Befyde vynes, plantes and feedes, of fuche trees, fruites, and herbes, as those countreyes lacke. And (not to be forgotten) fundry kindes of artillery and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, crossebowes, bylles, hargabufes, brode swoordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, shoouelles, hammers, nayles, fawes, axes, and fuche other. Thus beyng furnished accordyngely, they set forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*,) the. vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Christe. 1493. and arriued at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of these Ilandes, the laste is called *Ferrea*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually distilleth from one onely tree growyng on the highest backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mannes hande. We were informed of these thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What shal succede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE to Afcanius Phorcias, vicounte Cardinall, etc.



Methynna Campi
Castella Vetus.

Gades

5

The Iland of
Ferrea.

Ilands of the
Canibales.

The Iland of
Dominica.
viii. hundredth and
xx. leaques in. xxi.
dayes.

Lysertes,

The Iland of
Galanta.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

Vilages of. xx or.
xxx. houses
The building of
theyr houses.

Owe repete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are desirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that those thynges haue greatly deliyted you which I wrote vnto yowe highnesse of the fyrste nauigation. Yowe shal now therefore receaue what hath succeeded. *Methynna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the respecte frome yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*: beyng distant from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte remayned, when aboute the. ix. of the kalendes of Aprell in this yere of nyntie and foure, there were postes sente to the kynge and queene, certifyinge them that there were. xii. shippes come from the newe Ilandes and arriued at *Gades*. But the gouernoure of the shippes sente worde to the kynge and queene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but onely that the Admirall with fye shippes and. iiii. score and tenne men remayned styll in *Hispaniola*, to searche the secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr presence, by worde of mouthe. Therefore the daye before the nones of Aprel, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other faythfull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherse vnto yowe in such order as they declared the same to me when I demaunded them. Take it therefore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departyng from *Ferrea*, the laste of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of. xvii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclinyng of purpose more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrst viage, folowyng the northnortheast wynde: and arriued fyrst at the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, or *Caribes* of which, onely the same was knowen to our men. Amonge these, they chaused fyrst vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. This they called *Dominica*, because they found it on the funday. They taried here no tyme, because they sawe it to be deserte. In the space of these. xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled viii. hundredth and. xx. leaques, the Northernortheast wynde was so full with them, and so fresshly folowed the sterne of theyr shippes. After they hadde sayled a lyttell further, they espied dyuerse Ilandes replenyshed with fundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant fauours of spyces and sweete gummes. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lifartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to viewe the countrey. This Iland they cauled *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, espying a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thither. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer discending whiche seemed to be a token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrst lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and is an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hispaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrst viage. Serchyng the Ilande, they founde innumerable vilages of. xx. houfes or. xxx. at the mooste, sette rounde abowte in order, makynge the streete in coompass lyke a marktete place. And forasynuch as I haue made mention of theyr houfes, it shal not be greatlye from my purpose to describe in what maner they are buylded. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauylions. Theyr frame is rayfed of excedyng hygh trees, sette close together and fast rampaired in the grounde, so standyng a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyne

together and beare one agaynste an other, hauynge also within the houle, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whiche susteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with the leaues of date trees and other trees strongly compact and hardened. wherewith they make them close from wynde and wether. At the short postes or proppes within the house, they tie ropes of the cotton of gossampine trees, or other ropes made of certayne long and tough rote much lyke vnto the shrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vsed to make bondes for vynes and cabuls and ropes for shypes. These they tye ouerthwarte the houle from poste to poste. On these they ley as it were certayne mattresses made of the cotton of the gossampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes. This cotton the Spaniards call *Algodon*, and the Italians *Bombasine*. And thus they sleepe in hangynge beddes. At the enteraunce of one of theyr houfes, they sawe two Images of woodde lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn such idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that they were sette there onely for coomlynesse. For they knowe none other god then the Sunne and Moone, although they make certayne Images of gossampine cotton to the similitude of such phantasies as they say appere to them in the nyghte. Our men found in theyr houfes, all kyndes of erthen vessels, not muche vnylyke vnto oures. They founde also in theyr kichens, mannes fleshe, duckes fleshe, and goose fleshe, al in one pot: and other on the spittes redye to be layde to the fire. Entryng into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they referue to make heades for theyr arrowes, bycause they lacke iron. The other bones they caste away when they haue eaten the fleshe. They founde likewise the heade of a yonge man fastened to a poste and yet bledinge. They haue in some villages, one great haule or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common houfes are placed. To this they refort, as often as they come together to playe. When they perceaued the comynge of our men, they fledde, in theyr houfes they founde also about. xxx. chyldeyn and women captiues which were referued to be eaten, but our men tooke them away to vse them for interpretoures. Searchyng more diligently th[e]ynner partes of the Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whiche we spake of before, runnyng throughe the Ilande, with fruitefull and pleafante banckes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande, they called *Guadalupea*, for the similitude that it hath to the mounte *Guadalupeus* in Spayne, where the Image of the virgin MARIE is religiously honored. But the inhabitauntes caul it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiara*. It is the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. Popyngayes, bygger then phefantes, muche differynge from other in coloure: hauynge theyr backes, brestes, and bealies of purple coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of poppingiayes then with vs of sparowes or starlinges. As we bryng vp capons and hennes to francke or make them fatte, so do they these bigger kyndes of popyngaiyes for the same purpose. After that they hadde thus searched the Ilande and dryuen these *Canibales* to flyghte, (whiche ranne away at theyr fyrst approche as sone as they had espied them) they cauled theyr company together. And as soone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lyghters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they lowfed theyr ankers the daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the defyre he hadde to se his companions, whiche at his fyrst vyage he lefte the yere before in *Hispaniola* to searche the countrey, lette passe many Ilandes bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and fayled directly thither. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hispaniola*, cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only with women: To whom the *Canibales* haue accesse at certen tymes of the yere, as in owlde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the Ilande of *Lesbos*. The men children, they fende to theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them selues. They haue greate and stronge caues or dennes in the ground, to the which they flye for safegarde if any men reforte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende them selues with bowes and arrowes, agenst the violence of fuche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reason of the Northenortheast wynde which blewe soo vehemently from the same, wheras they nowe folowed the Eastefoutheast. After they departed from *Madanino*, and fayled by the space of. xl. myles, they passed not farre from an other Ilande which the captiues fayde to bee verye peopulous, and replenyshed with all thynges necessarie for the life of man. This they cauled *Mons Serratus*, bycause it was ful of mountaynes. The captiues further declared that the *Canibales*, are wonte at some tyme to goo frome theyr owne coastes aboute a thousande myle to hunte for men. The daye folowynge, they sawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycause it was rownde, they cauled *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled *S. Martini*. Which they lette passe also bycause they had no leasure to tarye. Lykewyse the thirde daye they espyed an other, whose *Diametral* fyde extendynge frome the Easte to the weste, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyftie myle. Theye affirme all these Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laste, they cauled *Santa Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had fayled aboute fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reste, which th[e]inhabitan[t]s caule *Ay Ay*; but they named it *Insula crucis*. Heare they cast anker to fetche fresshe water. The Admirall also commaunded. xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne shyp, and to searche the Ilande. Here they founde fowre dogges on the

Gossampine cotton.

Bombase. Hanginge beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery
Arrowe heds of bones.

6

The mount Guadalupeus.

Carucueria.
Popyngayes bygger then phefantes

The Canibales dryuen to flyght.

Matinino an Ilande of women.

The Ilandes of Mons Serratus.

Huntinge for men
Sancta Maria Rotunda.
Sanctus Martinus

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis
An Ilande of the Canibals.

The Canibales are expert archers. Arrowes infected with veneme.

A conflict with the Canibales. 7

The fiercenes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of Metales and precious stones.

The sea cauled Archipelagus. Insula. S. Iohannes or Buchena.

Death for deathe

The mountaynes are colder then the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola fyue hundreth leaques

The Spanyardes lefte in the Iland are slayne. Kyng Guaccanarillus rebelleth.

Two images of goulde. 8

Libertie and idlenes.

A happy kind of lyfe.

floure. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in flutinge, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poyfon: when they had taryed there two dayes, they sawe a farre of, a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women hauynge with them bowes and arrowes. They fearfly assayed owre men withoute all feare, and hurte sum of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Amonge these there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though she were theyr queene. Her sonne wayted vppon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible and frownyng countenance and a Lyons face. Owre men leaste they sholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farre of, thought it beste to ioyne with them. Therefore with all spede fettinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were fette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men swymminge, caste theyr dartes at owre men, thicke and threefolde. At the lengthe, gatheryng them felues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fowght manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one beinge slayne, and the queenes sonne fore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their fiernes and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when they perceauethem felues to be bownde in chaynes. There is no man able to behoulde them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certen horroure, nature hath endewed them with soo terrible menacyng, and cruell aspecte. This coniecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceedinge thus further and further, more then fyue hundreth myles, fyrste towardes the Westefoutheweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the Weste northe weste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouslye differinge one frome an other, for sum of them were verye frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, very drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blewe or asurine coloure, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposed them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stones. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke togyther, hindered them soo, that they cowlde caste no anker leaste the bigger vesselles shulde runne vppon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searchinge of these Ilandes vntyl an other tyme. They were so manye and floode so thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and fyxe Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forrewarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which th[e] inhabitants caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*. But they named it *Insula S. Iohannis*. Dyuers of theym whome we had delyuered frome the *Canibales*, sayde that they were borne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be very peopulous and frutefull, hauinge also manye sayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales*. They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*. But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incurfion into theyr countreye to seke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteyne) they serue them with like faufe, requitinge deathe for deathe. For one of theym mangeleth an other in pieces, and roste them and ate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this Ilande. Yet in the weste angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for fresshe water, and fownd a greate and high howse after the maner of their buylding, hauinge. xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed abowte the same: but were all lefte desolate, whether it were that they reforted to the mountaynes by refon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to returne to the playne when the ayre waxeth colder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incurfion into the Ilande at certen seasons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The fouth syde hereof extendeth abowte two hundreth myles. Shortlye after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante frome the fyrste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundreth leaques. Here they fownde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they lefte here at their fyrste vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue sayde) is the region of *Xamana* whose kinge is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* ioyned frendshippe with owre men at the fyrste viage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cause of owre mens destruction, although he diffimuled the same, and pretended frendship at the Admirales returne. As owre men sayled on yet a litle further, they espied a longe *Canoa* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He brought with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And towlde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade, or escaped or stoulne away when they drewe nere the Ilandes. But of the. x. [ten.] vii. [seuen] dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of these Ilandes haue lyn euer soo vsed to liue at libertie, in playe and pastyme, that they can hardely away with the yoke of feruitude which they attempte to shake of by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued owre religion, I wolde thinke their life moste happye of all men, if they might

therwith enjoye their aunciente libertie. A fewe thinges contente them, hauinge no delite in fuche superfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite paynes and commit manie vnlawfull acteſ, and yet are neuer fatiffied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inowgh. But emonge theſe ſimple ſowles, a fewe clothes ſerue the naked: weightes and meaſures are not needefull to ſuch as can not ſkyll of crafte and deceyte and haue not the vſe of peſtiferous monye, the feede of innumerable myſcheues. So that if we ſhall not be aſhamed to confeſſe the truthe, they ſeeme to lyue in that goulden worde of the whiche owlde wryters ſpeake ſo much: wherin men lyued ſimplye and innocentlye without inforcement of lawes, without quarrellinge Iudges and libelles, contente onely to ſatiſſie nature, without further vexation for knowlege of thinges to come. Yet theſe naked people alſo are tormented with ambition for the deſyre they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reaſon wherof they kepe warre and deſtroy one an other: from the which plague I ſuppoſe the golden world was not free. For euen then alſo, *Cede, non cedam*, that is, gyue place, and I wyll not giue place, had entred emonge men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which we haue digreſſed. The admiral deſyrous to knowe further of the death of his men, ſent for *Guaccanarillus* to come to him to his ſhip, diſſimulinge that he knew any thinge of the matter. After that he came aboard ſhypp, ſaluting the Admiral and his company gyuing alſo certen golde to the Capetaynes and offycers, turned him to the women captiues which not longe before our men had deliuered from the *Canibales*. And ernestly beholding one of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he ſpake gentelly vnto her. And thus when he had ſeene and marueyled at the horſes and fuche other thinges as were in the ſhypp, vnknewen to them, and had with a good grace and merelye aſked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet ſum there were which counſeyled the Admirall to kepe hym ſtyll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was conſenting to the deathe of owre men, he might bee puniſhed accordinglie. But the Admirall conſidering that it was yet no tyme to incenſe th[e] inhabitants myndes to wrathe, dyſſynſſed hym. The next daye folowing, the kinges brother refortyng to the ſhyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, ſeduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aſwell to recouer her owne libertie as alſo her felowes, being ſuborned therto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promiſes attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, which beinge in hoſtage with other maydes to the kynge *Porcena*, deceaued her keepers, and rode ouer the ryuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For wheras they ſwamme ouer the ryuer on horſebacke. This Katharyne with ſeuē other women, truſtyng onely to the ſtrength of their owne armes, ſwamme aboue three longe myles: and that alſo, at fuche tyme as the ſea was ſumwhat rowghe. For euen ſoo farre of frome the ſhore, lay the ſhippes at rode, as nigh as they could coniecture. But owre men folowinge them with the ſhippeboates, by the ſame light ſeene on the ſhore wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them: ſuppoſinge that Katharyne with the other foure, went to *Guaccanarillus*. For in the ſprynge of the morninge, certen meſſengers beinge ſente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and ſtuffe, and the women alſo. which thinge miniſtred further ſuſpection that he was conſenting to the death of owre men. Wherfore the Admirall ſente forth an armye of three hundrethe men, ouer the which he appoynted one *Melchior* to be capitayne, wylling him to make diligent ſearche to ſynde owte *Guaccanarillus*. *Melchior* therfore with the ſmauleſte veſſels enteringe into the countreye by the ryuers and ſcouringe the ſhores, chaunced into certen croked goulfes defended with. v lyttle and ſliepe hilles, ſuppoſinge that it had byn the mouth of ſum greate ryuer. He founde here alſo a verry commodious and ſafe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They ſaye that the enteraunce of this is ſo crooked and bendinge, that after the ſhippes are once within the ſame, whether they turne them to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceaue where they came in vntyll they returne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there ſo brode that three of the byggeſte veſſels may ſayle together on a froot. The ſharpe and high hilles on the one ſyde and on the other, ſo brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr ſayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleaſaunte groue full of Poppingayes and other byrdes which breede therein and ſinge verry ſweetlye. They perceaued alſo that two ryuers of no ſmaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus ſearched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* eſpied a high houſe a farre of, where ſuppoſinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goyng, there mette hym a man with a frownyng countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundreth men ſolowyng hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and ſharpe ſtaues like iaelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approchyng towardes owre men, ſpake owte alowde with a terryble voyce, ſayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them ſignes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercenes. Thus geuyng eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for ſo greate a rewarde, that they deſyred to enter bondes of nere frendſhypp with vs, and feared not immediatly to ſubmitte them ſelues vnder owre power, and reforted to our ſhypps with theyr preſentes. They that meaſured the houſe (beinge made in rounde forme) ſownde it to be from ſyde to ſyde. xxxii. greate paces, compaſed abowte with. xxx. other vulgare houſes, hauinge in them many beames croſſe ouer, and couered with reedes of fundry colours, wrethed and as it

Superfluite.

Many haue to much and none inough.

The goulden worlde

Naked men troubled with ambition.

Gyue place.

The Admiral ſendeth for the kynge.

No horſes in the Ilandes

A tyme for all thynges

A desperate aduenture of a woman.

Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus is ſought. Melchior.

9

Poppingayes and byrdes.

Taini.

Haukes belles.

A large houſe

Reedes of
sundry colours.

Caccic[us].

Hoiadius and
Gorualanus.

Golde in ryuers
faulnge from
mountaynes.

The maner of
gathering golde.
Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude
golde weighinge
ix ounces.

Caunaboa, kyng
of the house of
gold

Holsome water
and plentie of
fyshe.

The day and nyght
of equal length
in December.

Byrdes breed in
December

The eleuation
of the pole

The starres are
cauled gardens
of the pole. 10

The Equinoctial
lyne.

A chapel and
preestes.

Marchaunts
Sirophenicians.
The Cynamome
tree.

Xiloloes or
lignum Aloes.

were weaved with maruelous art When owre men asked fum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus*. They aunfwered that that Region was none of his. But theyr kynges beyng there presente. Yet they fayde they fupposed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makyng therefore a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to faye a kyng) they returned to the Admyrall to make relation what they hadde feene and harde: wheruppon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their hundrethes to searche the countrey yet further. Emonge the which were *Hoiadius* and *Gorualanus*, noble younge gentlemen and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaines to seeke *Guaccanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene them, one of them fownde on the one fyde therof foure ryuers faulng from the fame mountaynes: and the other fownde. iiii. on the other fyde. In the fandes of all these ryuers is fownd great plente of goulde, which th[e] inhabitants of the fame Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the fande with their handes, a Cubette deape, and takyng vp fande with their lefte handes from the botome of the fame, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withowte any more arte or cunningge. And so deliuered it to owre men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fytchis. And I my selfe fawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to faye, such as was neuer molten) lyke vnto fuche stons as are founde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ownces, which *Hoiada* him selfe fownde. Being contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyshment that they shuld meddle no further then their commissiõ: which was only to searche the places with their signes. For the fame went that there was a certayne kyng of the mountaynes from whence those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Caccicus Caunaboa* that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house *Boa*, goulde, *Canni*: and a kyng or Lorde, *Caccicus*, as we haue fayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fysh, nor of more pleafant tast, or more holsome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the fame to be most holsom to drynke. *Melchior* hym selfe towld me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales*. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not therunto. Albeit that in the fame moneth, fume byrdes make their nestes, and fume haue already hatched their egges by reason of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He towld me also when I questioned with hym as concernyng the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that al the sterres cauled *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the Northe pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thence at this viage, to whome there is more credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronomye, he shulde haue fayde that the day was almoste equall with the night. For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (cauled *Solsticium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for as much as they had euer the northe pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in sight aboue the *Horizontal*. Thus haue I briefly written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficiente at this tyme. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of fuche matters as shalbe dayly better knowen. For the admirall hym selfe (whome I vse famylyerly as my verye frende) hath promysed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al such thynges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chosyn a stronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious hauen. And hath already buylded many houfes and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly serued with. xiii. preestes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approched when he promysed to fende to the kyng and queene, and hauyng prosperous wynde for that purpose, sent backe the. xii. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no smaule hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially confyderyng the death of his men whom he lefte in the Ilande at the fyrst vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes wherof we might otherwyse haue had further knowlege. But as tyme shall reueale them ageyne, so wyll I aduertise yowe of the fame. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt strangers *Sirophenicians*, what these Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to bee the Cinamome tree. And yf it be your pleafure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the smaule feedes the which you shoulde perceau to haue fawlen from these graynes, or of the wodde it selfe, touch them firste softly mouinge them to your lippes. For although they bee not hurtfull, yet for theyr excessiue of heate; they are sharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any while theron. But if the tongue be blystered by tastyng of them, the fame is taken away by drynkyng of water. Of the corne also wherof they make theyr breade, this brynger shall deliuer fume graynes to your Lorde shyppe bothe whyte and blacke: And therwith also, a Trunke of the tree of *Aloes*. The which if you cutte in peeces, you shall feele a sweete fauoure to proceade from the fame. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Methinna Campi*. The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. Anno. Domini, M. CCCC. XCIII.

THE THYRDE BOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and Neuie to the kynge.



Owe desyre that folythe *Phaeton* shulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe sweete lycoures out of the harde flynte, wheras you requyre me to dyscribe vnto you the newe worlde, fownde in the weste by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and *Helisabeth*, your Vncle and Aunte: shewyng me also the letters of kynge *Frederike* your vncle, wrytten to me in the same behalfe. But sythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am wel able. Ye bothe shal receaue this precious stone, rudely clofed in leade after my maner of workemanshpye. Wherfore when you shall perceaue the lerned forte frendelye: The malicious, eniuously: And the backebyters, furiously, to bende theyr sclaunderous dartes ageynst owre fayre *Nymphes* of the *Ocean*, you shall freely proteste in howe short tyme, and in the myddeste of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wryte of the same. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall passyd by the coastes of the *Canibales* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entende further to shewe what he fownde as concernyng the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better searched the seacreates of the same: Likewyse of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet supposed to bee the firme lande. *Hispaniola* therefore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyerde boke of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue southe degrees: hauyng the northe pole eleuate on the northe fyde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe fyde (as they fay) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the Easte to the Weste, feuen hundrethe and foure score myles. It is distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* (cauled *Cales*) xlix. degrees, and more as sum fay. The forme of the Ilande, refembleth the leafe of a chesnutte tree. Vppon a high hyll on the North fyde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycause this place was most apte for that purpose by reason of a myne of stones which was nere vnto the same, seruyng well bothe to buylde with, and also to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of three score myles in lengthe: and in bredth sumwhere. xii. sumwhere. xx. myles where it is brodest, and. vi. myles where it is narrowest. Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of holfome waters. But the greatest of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the hauen of the citie for the space of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you shal vnderstand by these thynges which folowe. On the fiore of this ryuer, they haue lymtyed and enclosed certeyne grounde to make gardeynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyse, letuse, colewortes, borage, and such other, waxe ripe within. xvi. dayes after the feede is sownen. Lykewyse Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and suche other, within the space of. xxxvi. dayes. These garden herbes, they haue freshe and greene all the whole yeare. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, suger is made, growe a cubette high within the space of. xv. dayes: but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or shrouddes of younge vines: And that they haue the second yeare gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same. But by reason of to muche rankenes, they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey fowed a lyttle wheat about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handfull of the ripe eares of the same the thyerde day before the calendes of Aprell: which was that yeare the vigile of the Refurrection of owre Lorde. Also, al kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peafon, fytches, tares, and suche other, are ripe twyfe in the yeare, as all they which come from thense, affirme with one voyce: Yet that the grounde is not vniuersally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall sent owte a companye of. xxx. men to searche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyse cauled *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to searche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynges as touchinge the great ryches of this Region. Frome these mountaynes, descende foure greate ryuers, which by the maruelous indusyrie of nature, deided the hole Ilande into foure partes, in maner equall, ouerspreyng and wateringe the hole Ilande with their branches. Of these foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Easte. This the inhabitantes caule *Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weste, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laste reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admiral him selfe with al his horse men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde the South fyde of the goulden Region. Thus passyng ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other fyde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyrste, and many other meane ryuers

The fable of
Phaeton.

Kynge
Ferdinandus and
queene Helizabeth

Nereides.
He meaneth
the Ilandes.

Hispaniola.

11
Ophir whether
Salomons ships
sayled for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of
threescore myles
of lengthe.

A token of
maruelous
fruitfulness.

Herbes grene al
the hole yeare.
Suger reeds
plantes and vines.

Corne and grayne
rype twise a yeare

The Region of
Cipanga or
Cibana.
Golde.

Foure greate
ryuers.

The golden
region of Cibana

Vales and
mountaynes

The vale of
Cibana.

Golde for haukes
bels. 12

Graynes and
pipple stones of
golde.

They passe not
for go'de, in that
it is golde onely
but. etc.

Stones of golde as
byg as the heade
of a chyld.

Spyces.

Wylde vines of
pleasaunte taste.

Fruitful
mountaynes

Golde in the
sandles of ryuers
faulinge from the
mountaynes.
Libertie and
Idelnes.
The mountaynes
are coulde.

The Ilande of
Cuna.

Least any other
prince, &c

Discencion
betweene the
Portugales and
Spaniardes.

The Ilandes of
Cabouerde or
Hisperides

13

The Portugales
viages

runne through. When he had also conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer and passed the seconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firste, he made away through the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and descended into an other vale which was nowe the beginninge of *Cibana*. Through this also runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euery hyll, and in the fandes of theym all, is fownde great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered three score and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he entended to buylde a fortresse vpon the toppe of a hyll, standing by the shore of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more safelye seache the secreates of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortresse of faynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldynge, th[e] inhabitants beinge desirous of haukes belles and other of owre thinges, reforted dayly thither. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde brynge goulde, they shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith turnynge theyr backs and runnyng to the shore of the next ryuer, they returned in a short tyme, brynginge with them their handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld man bringynge with him two pybble stones of goulde weighinge an vnce, defyrng them to gyue him a bell for the same who when he sawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof, he made signes that they were but fmaule and of no value in respecte of fume that he had seene. And takynge in his hande foure stones the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and the byggest as bygge as an orange, he sayde that there was fownde peeces of goulde foo bygge in his countrye, beyng but halfe a dayes iourney from thenfe, and that they had no regarde to the gatheringe therof. Wherby we perceau that they passe not muche for goulde in asmuch as it is goulde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe fashioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly esteeme rowgh marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be wrought with the cunninge hande of *Phidias* or *Praxiteles*, and shaped to the similitude of the fayre nimphes or sayeres of the sea (cauled *Nereides*) or the fayres of the wods, (cauled *Hamadriades*) they shal neuer lacke byers. Befyde this owld man, there came also dyuers other, brynginge with them pypple stones of gold weighing. x. or. xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found sumtyme stones of gold as bygge as bygge as the heade of a chyld. When he had taryed heare a fewe dayes, he sent one *Luxanus*, a noble younge gentylman with a fewe armed men to seache all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported that th[e] inhabitants shewed him greater things then we haue spoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothyng therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales commaundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spyces: but not suche as we commonly vse. These they gather euen as they do golde: that is as much as wyl ferue for theyr purpose, euery man for hym selfe, to exchange the same with the inhabitantes of other countreys adioynge to them, for such thinges as they lacke, as dyffhes, pottes, flooles, and suche other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes, certeyne wylde vines, rype and of pleafaunt taste. But th[e] inhabitants passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stones and rockes (and is therefore cauled *Cibana*, whiche is as muche to faye as a stone) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the graffe of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the fpace of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many showers of rayne doo faule in this Region, whereof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increase, in euery of the which, golde is fownde myxte with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For suche as inhabyte the mountaynes, fyt quakyng for coulde in the wynter seafon, and had rather foo wander vppe and downe Idelly, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of goffampine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulde in wynter. When the Admirall had thus seached the beginninge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayred to *Isabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to seach further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iohanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola*, onely three score and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedicion, caulng to remembrance the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrst with all celeritie to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other prince shulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the same. For the Kyng of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to difcouer these vnknown landes. But the byshop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cause of this discencion, graunted to the Kyng of Spayne by th[e] auctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shulde bee so bould as to make any viages to any of those vnknown regions, lyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawn from the North to the Southe a hundreth leaques westwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thynke to bee thofe that in owld tyme were cauled *Hesperides*. These perteyne to the kyng of Portugale. And from these, his pylottes whiche doo yearely seache newe coastes and regions, directe their course to the Easte, saylynge euer towarde the left hande by the backe of Aphrike and the seas of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme sayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*.

Preparyng therfore three shippes, he made haste towarde the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba* whyther he came in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrst arryued, *Alpha* and *O*: that is, the fyrste and the laste: for he supposed that there had byn th[e]end of owre Easte bycause the sonne fauleth there: And of the weste, bycause it ryfeth there. For it is apparenthe, that westwarde, it is the beginninge of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reafon forafnuche as the Cosmographers haue lefte the lymites of *India* beyonde *Ganges* vndermynded: where as also fume were of opinion that *India* was not farre from the coastes of Spaine as we haue fayde before. Within the prospecte of the begynnynge of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. For in this part, the Iland receaueth a greate goulfe. This hauen, he named faynt Nycolas porte, beinge fcarfely. xx. leaques from *Cuba*. As he departed from henfe and fayled westwarde by the fouth fyde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea seemed to bee extended in breadth and to bende towarde the fouth. On the fouth fyde of *Cuba*, he fownde an Ilande which th[e]inhabitanes caule *Iamaica*. This he affirmeth to bee longer and broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one mountayne, which on euery parte begynninge from the sea, ryfeth by little and little into the myddeft of the Ilande: And that soo playnely without rowghnes, that fuche as goo vp to the toppe of the same, can fcarfely perceau that they ascende. This Ilande he affirmed to bee very fruitfull and full of people as well in th[e]inner partes of the same as by the shore: And that th[e]inhabitanes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more experte artificers and warrelyke men. For in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came armed ageynst him and forbodde him with threatening wordes. But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendeship with hym. Thus departynge from *Iamaica*, he fayled towarde the Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore and tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had passed so farre by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe cauled *Malaccha*,) in owre Easte India beyonde the beginninge of *Perfides*. For he playnely beleued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howres of the sonne, which were vnknown to vs, for the owlde wryters haue lefte halfe the course of the sonne vntouched, where as they haue but onely discuffed that superficiall parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades and the ryuer of *Ganges*: or at the vttermoste, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In this nauigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running with a faule as it had byn the streames of fluddes: Also many whorlepooles, and shelles, with many other daungers, and streyghtes by reason of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley on euery fyde. But not regardinge all these perelles, he determyned to proceade vntyl he had certayne knowledge whether *Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he fayled forward coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of CC. xxii. [two hundred and twenty-two] leaques, that is, abowte a thoufande and three hundreth myles: And gaue names to feuen hundreth Ilandes by the waye: Leauynge also on the lefte hande (as he feared not to reporte) three thoufande here and there. But let vs nowe returne to fuche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylinge therfore by the fyde of *Cuba*, and fearchinge the nature of the places, he espied not farre from *Alpha* and *O*, a large hauen of capacitie to harborowe manye shippes: whose enteraunce is bendinge, beinge inclosed on bothe fydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water. This hauen is large within, and of exceadinge depthe. Saylinge by the shore of this porte, he fawe not farre frome the same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places fyer kyndeled. Here he fente certeyne armed men owte of the shippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor woman, but rostemeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne spyttes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fyfhe on them about a hundreth pownde weight, and two serpenttes of. viii. foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokinge about if they coulde espye any of th[e]inhabitanes, and that none appeared in fyght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the comminge of owre men) they fell to theyr meate, and eate the fyfhe taken with other mens traunyle: But they absteyned from the serpenttes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Crocodiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Flinie* fayth) Crocodiles haue fumetymes byn fownde of. xviii. cubettes long. But of these the byggest were but of. viii. fote. Thus beinge well refreshed, they entered into the next woodde where they fownde many of the same kynde of serpenttes hangynge vpon bowghes of trees: of the which, fume had theyr mouthes tyed with strynges, and fume theyr teethe taken owte. And as they searched the places nere vnto the hauen, they fawe abowte. lxx. men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche fledde as soone as they had espied owre men. Who by signes and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one which came nere them and stode on the toppe of a rocke, feemyng as though he were yet ferefull. But the Admirall fent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his fyrste vyage taken in the Ilande of *Guanahaini*, beinge nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee afrayde. When he harde *Didacus* speke to him in his owne tonge he came bowldly to hym: and shortly after reforted to his company, perswadinge them to come without all feare. After this message was doone, there descendede from the rockes to the shippes, abowt three score and ten of th[e]inhabitanes, proferinge frendeshippe and gentelnes to owre men: whiche the Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them dyuers rewardes: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, that they were the kynges

Alpha and O
The ende of the
Easte and west.

Note.
India not fur
from Spayne.

Saynt Nycolas
porte.

The Iland of
Iamaica.

Iamaica.

Quicke wytted
people.

The compaseinge
of the earth.

Aurea
Chersonesus, or
Malaccha.
A secreate of
Astronomie.
The ryuer of
Ganges.

Daungerous
streyghtes by
reason of many
Ilandes.

The Admirall gaue
names to seuen
hundreth Ilandes.
Three thousand
Ilandes.

A large hauen

Rosted fyfhe and
serpenttes of. viii.
foote longe.

14

Crocodiles of
Egypte.

Didacus
th[e]interpretour.

The kynges
fysshers.

Serpentes
esteemed for
delicate meat
Ophiophagi.

Blossomes and
fruites bothe at
one tyme.

Trees which
beare gourds

A multitude of
Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge kynde
of fysshynge.
A huntynge
fysshe.

Abundance of
tortoyes. 15

Fyssher men.

The fysshe
Guaicanum.

Humaine people.

A mountaine
fruitfull and well
inhabited.

Dogges of strange
shape and dumme.
Duckes.
Hearons.
Streigthes.

fyffhers, sent of theyr lorde to take fyffhe ageynst a folemne feaste which he prepared for an other kynge. And wheras the Admirales men had eaten the fyffhe whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, bycause they had lefte the ferpentes. For there is nothinge amonge theyr delicate dyffhes, that they esteeme fo muche as these ferpentes: In foo muche that it is no more lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then peacockes or phefantes amonge vs. As for the fyffhes, they doubted not to take as many more the fame nyght. Beynge asked why they fyrst rosted the fyffhe which they entended to beare to their kynge. They answered, that they might bee the fressher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token of further frendeship, euery man reforted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the faulginge of the sonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Alpha* and *O*. The shores or sea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountains. Of these trees, fume were ful of bloffoomes and flowres, and other laden with fruites. Beyond the hauen the lande is more fertile and peopulous, whose inhabitants are more gentyll and more defyrous of owre thinges. For as sone as they had espied owre shippes, they flocked all to the shore, brynginge with them fuche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto owre men, and further defyringe them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare gourdes in the steade of fruites. These they vse only for drinkyng pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them, is fowrer then gaule, and the barke as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men lokinge owte of the toppe castell of the shyppe toward the Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standinge thicke together, beyng all well replenished with trees, grasse, and herbes, and wel inhabited. In the shore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was foo hotte, that no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme. The day folowinge, espying a farre off a Canoa of fysher men of th[e]inhabitantes, fearinge least they shulde flye at the fyght of owre men, he commaunded certeyne to assaile them pryuiely with the shyppe boates. But they fearinge nothinge, taryed the comminge of owre men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind of fysshinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunte hares, in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntynge fyffhe, take other fyffhes. This fyffhe was of shape or fourme vnknewen vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very towgh skynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. This fyffhe is tyed by the fyde of the boate with a corde lette downe foo farre into the water, that the fyffhe maye lye clofe hyd by the keele or bottome of the same, for shee may in no case abyde the fight of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fyffhe, or tortoyfe (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when shee feeleth her selfe loofed, shee enuadeth the fyffhe or tortoyfe as swiftly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her howld shee casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And by drawyng the same togyther, so graspeleth her pray, that no mans strength is sufficient to vnloofe the same, excepte by lyttle and lyttle drawinge the lyne, shee bee lyfted sumwhat about the brymme of the water. For then, as sone as shee feeth the brightnes of the ayer, shee letteth goo her howld. The praye therefore, beinge nowe drawen nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth foodenly owte of the boate into the sea foo manye fyffhers, as maye suffice to holde faste the praye, vntyll the reste of the company haue taken it into the boate. Which thinge doone, they loofe foo muche of the cord, that the hunting fyffhe, may ageyne returne to her place within the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her a piece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue kylled theyr game. This fyffhe, they caule *Guaicanum*, But owre men caule it *Rouerfum*. They gaue owre men foure tortoyfes taken by this meanes: And those of such byggenes that they almoste fylled theyr fyffhing boate. For these fyffhes are esteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Owre men recompened them ageyne with other rewardes, and foo lette them departe. Beinge asked of the coompasse of that lande, they aunswered that it had no ende westwarde. Most instantly defyringe the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to sende one with them to salute their *Cazicus*, (that is) their kinge: Affirmyng that he wolde gyue owre men many presentes, yf they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaste he shulde bee hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo with them. Then they defyred to knowe his name, and towld owre men lykewyse the name of theyr kyng. Thus sayling on yet further euer toward the West, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certeyne exceding high mountayne, wel inhabited by reafon of the great fertilitie of the same. Th[e]inhabitautes of this mountayne, brought to owre shippe, breade, goffampine cotton, cunnies, and fundry kyndes of wyldfowle: demaundyng relygioussly of th[e]interpretores, if this nation descended not from heauen. The kynge of this people, and dyuers other sage men that stode by hym, informed hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, enteringe into one of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they fownde no body therein: for they fledde al at the commyng of owre men. Yet fownde they there foure dogges of maruelous deformed shape, and fuche as coulde not barke. This kynd of dogges, they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geefe, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the continente, he entered into foo narowe streyghtes, that he coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes: And these also fo shalowe, that the keele of the shypps sumtyme rased

on the sandes The water of these streyghtes, for the space of fortie myles, was white and thicke lyke vnto mylke, and as though mele had byn sparkeled through owte al that sea. And when they had at the lengthe escaped these strayghtes, and were nowe coome into a mayne and large sea, and had fayled thereon for the space of foure score myles, they espyed an other exceedinge hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall referred to store his shyppes with fresshe water and fuel. Heare amonge certeyne wooddes of date trees, and pyneable trees of exceeding height he fownd two natiue sprynges of fresshe water. In the meane tyme whyle the woodde was cuttyng and the barrells fyllyng, one of owre archers went into the wood to hunt: where he espyed a certeyne man with a whyte vesture, foo lyke a fryer of th[e] order of faynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrste fight he supposed it had byn the Admiralles preeste which he browght with hym, beyng a man of the same order. But two other folowed hym immediatlye owte of the fame wooddes, shortly after, he fawe a farre of a hole company of men clothed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in number. Then turning his backe and crying owte to his felowes, he made haste to the shyppes with all that he myght dryue. These apparelled men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee afrayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceafed not to flye. The Admirall beinge aduertised hereof, and not a lytle reioysyng that he had fownde a ciuile people, incontinently sent forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede should foo requyre, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther those apparelled men, or other inhabitantes of that countrey. When they hadde passed ouer the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of graffe and herbes, in which appeared no token of any pathe way. Here attemptinge to goo through the graffe and herbes, they were foo entangled and bewrapte therin, that they were fearfully able to passe a myle, the graffe beinge there lytle lower then owre rype corne. Beinge therefore weryed, they were enforced to returne ageyne, syndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he sent forth. xxv. armed men an other way: Commaunding them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had fownde not farre from the sea fyde certeyne steppes of wyld beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete being striken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they fownde a woodde in the which were many natiue vines here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall fruites and spyces. Of these vines they browght with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other fruites, they browght none bycause they putrifed by the waye in the shippe, and were cast into the sea. They saye also that in the laundes or medowes of those wooddes, they fawe flockes of greate cranes twyfe as bygge as owres. As he went forward and turned his sayles towarde certeyne other mountaines, he espied two cotages on the shore, in the whiche he fawe onely one man: who beinge browght to the shyppes, signified with heade, syngers, and by al other signes, that he coule deuife that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* hauinge in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and frendshyp. But here *Didacus* th[e] interpretour whiche vnderstoode the language of th[e] inhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderstode not them one whytte, wherby they confydred that in fundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were fundry languages He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kynge of greate power, and accustomed to weare apparell. He sayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, befette with many trees, after the maner of owre marysshes, yet whereas in this place they wente alande for fresshe water, they fownde many of the shel fysshes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that coule not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at this viage, only to proue howe many landes and seas he coule discouer accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceeded forward, they fawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great smoke ryfinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyl that coule be seene, but the fame was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by th[e] inhabitantes for their necessary busynes, or as we are wont to fette beacons on fyre when we suspecte th[e] approche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather togyther if perhappes owre men shulde attempte any thinge ageynst them, or otherwyse as seemethe most lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre shippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended sumetyme towarde the Southe, and sumetyme towarde the Weste and westefouthwest: And the sea was euery where entangled with Ilandes: by reason whereof, the keeles of the shippes often tymes rased the sandes for shalownes of the water: So that the shippes beinge very fore brufed and appayred, the sayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the vytayles, (especially the bykette breade) corrupted by takyng water at the riftes euyll clofed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his sayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the supposed continente, he chaunced into a mayne sea where was fuche a multitude of greate tortoyfes, that sumtyme they slayed the shyppes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we spake before. At the length fearing the shelves of the Ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by

Whyte and thicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men appareled like white fryers.

16

Grasse almost as hyghe as corne.

Steppes of wyld beastes feete.

Natiue vines

Trees bearinge spyces and sweete fruites.
Greate Cranes.

Dyuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in shelfysshes.

The sea entangled with Ilandes

Euangelista.
A multitude of great tortoyfes

A goufe of whyte water
Humaine people.
Stocke doues of more pleasaunt tast then partriches.

17

The humanitie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opinion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not fynde.
Virtus post nummos. &c.

The Iland as common as the sunne and water.

The golden worlde.

Prouision without care.

Simple diete

18

The Iland of Iamaica.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

the same way which he came. Here a multitude of th[e]inhabitanes, as well women as men, reforted to hym with cheerefull countenance and without feare: bringynge with them popingayes, breade, water, and cunnys: But especially stocke doues much bygger then owres: which he affirmeth, in fauour and taste, to bee muche more pleafaunt then owre partryches. Wherefore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne faouere of spyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the croppe to bee opened of fuche as were newly kylled, and fownde the fame full of sweete spyces, whiche he argued to bee the cause of theyr strange taste. For it standeth with good reason, that the fleshe of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accustomed nuryshmente. As the Admirall harde masse on the shore, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernoure, a man of four score yeares of age, and of great grauitie, although he were naked fauinge his pryue partes. He had a great trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the whyle the preefte was at masse, he shewed hym selfe verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, he presented to the Admirall, a baskette of the fruites of his countrey, delyueringe the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly interteyned hym, desyryng leaue to speake, he made an oration in the presence of *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertised (moste mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hytherto vnknown to you: and haue browght no little feare vppon all the people and inhabitantes of the same. The which your good fortune, you shal beare with lesse insolencie, if you remember that the foules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodye. The one fowle and darke, prepared for fuche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: The other pleafaunt and delectable, ordeyned for them which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your selfe to bee mortall, and consyder that euery man shall receaue condigne rewarde or punyshment for such thinges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongefully hurte no man. When he had fayde these wordes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by th[e]interpretoure, he marueylinge at the iudgemente of the naked owlde man, answered, that he was gladde to heare his opinion as touchinge the fundry iourneys and rewardes of fowles departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th[e]inhabitanes of those Regions, had had any knowlege thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comminge thyther was to instructe them in such godly knowlege and trewe religion: And that he was fente into those countreys by the Christian kynge of Spayne (his lorde and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and punishe the Canibales and such other mischeuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynst the violence of such euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other such as embrased vertue, in no case to bee afrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other fuche quiete men as he was, hadde susleyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold see the same reuenged. These comfortable wordes of the Admirall soo pleased the owlde man, that notwithstanding his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admirall as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chylde had not hyndered hym of his purpose. But he marueyled not a lyttle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when th[e]interpretour towlde hym of the glorye, magnificence, pompes, greate powre, and furnymentes of warre of owre kynges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendynge therfore to haue gone with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desyryng hym not to forsake them and leaue them desolate. At whose pytifull requestes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and famylie, satisfyyng rather them then hym selfe. For not yet ceasinge to wonder, and of heauy countenance bycause he myght not departe, he demaunded oftentymes if that lande were not heauen, which browght forth fuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the sonne and water: And that Myne and Thyne (the feedes of all myscheefe) haue no place with them. They are contente with soo lyttle, that in soo large a countrey, they haue rather superfluitie then scarcenes. Soo that (as wee haue sayde before) they seeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dyuyded with hedges, or defended with wales. They deale trewely one with another, without lawes, without bookes, and without Iudges. They take hym for an euyl and myscheuous man, which taketh pleasure in doinge hurte to other. And albeit that they delyte not in superfluities, yet make they prouision for th[e]increase of fuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Maizium*, *Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with fuche simple dyet, wherby health is preferued, and dyceases auoyded. The Admirall therefore departinge from thense, and myndinge to returne ageyne shortly after, chaunced to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Iamaica* beinge on the fowthe syde therof: and coasted all alonge by the shore of the same, from the Weste to the Easte. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe towarde the North on his lefte hand, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the fowthe syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the hauen of the same Ilande, cauled faynt Nycolas hauen, he repayred his shippes to th[e]intent that he myght ageyne waft and spoyle the Ilandes of the Canibales, and burne all theyr Canoas, that those raueninge wolues myght no longer perfecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his

purpose by reason of a dyseafe which he had gotten with to much watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the cite of *Ifabella*, where, with his two brytherne which were there, and other his familiers, he recouered his health in shorte space. Yet could he not at this tyme affayle the Canibales, by reason of fedicion that was ryfen of late amonge the Spanyardes which he had lefte in *Hispaniola*, wherof we wyll speake more hereafter. Thus fare ye wel.

Sickenes of to
much watchinge.

THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Olonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as he supposed) from the continent or firme lande of East India, had aduertisement that his brother *Boilus* and one *Peter Margarita*, an owld familier of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of thofe to whom he had left the gouernement of the Iland, were of corrupted mynde ageynst him, departed into Spayne. Wherefore as wel to purge him of such crimes as they shuld ley to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and especially to prouyde for vitales, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and such other which the Spanyardes are accustomed to

Easte India.
The Spanyardes
rebelle in the
Admirals absence.

eate, bycaufe they could not yet well agree with such meates as they fownde in the Ilandes, determined shortly to take his vyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearse.

The kynges of the
Ilande rebell.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hitherto lyued quietly and content with theyr lyttle whiche they thought abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that owre men began to fasten foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter so greuoufly, that they thowght nothyng else but by what meanes they myght vtterly destroy them, and for euer abolysshe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the most parte vnruly, regardyng nothinge but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes absteyne from iniuries: Rauyng the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their husbandes, fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhominable mysdemaynour, they disquieted the myndes of all th[e] inhabitants: In so much that where so euer they fownde any of owre men vnprepared, they slewe them with fuche fyercenes and gladnes, as though they had offered sacryfyce to God. Intendyng therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to punyssh them that slew his men before he departed from thense, he sent for the kyng of that vale, which in the booke before, we descrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of *Cibaua*. This kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more fleyghtly to coneyle vnto hym the frendshyppe of the Admirall, gaue hys syfster to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age brought vp with the Admirall, whom he vsed for his interpretoure in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he sent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lorde of the howse of goulde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*. For this *Caunaboa*, he sente one capitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde bysiegeinge for the space of. xxx. dayes, the fortresse of faynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his syftie souldiers, stode at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, many ambaffadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were sent to *Caunaboa*, perswadinge hym in no condicion to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather ferue then rule. On the other parte, *Hoieda* aduertified *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendship with hym. But the ambaffadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde foo doo, the other kynges wolde inuade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunswered theym ageyne, that wheras they conspired to maynteyne their libertie, they shuld by that meanes be brought to feruitude and destruction if they entended to resist or keepe warre ageynst the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one syde and the other, beinge troubeled as it were a rocke in the fea, beaten with contrary fluddes, and much more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie conscience for that he had priuillie slaine. xx. of owre men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing excogitated this deceyte, to haue slayne the Admirall and his company vnder the colour of frendshippe if oportunitie wold foo haue ferude, he repayed to the Admirall with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theyr maner. Beinge demaunded why he brought foo greate a rout of men with hym, he aunswered that it was not decente for foo great a prince as he was, to goo forth of his howse without fuche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwyse then he looked for. For he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repente hym that he came forth of his howse, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyses, brought hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken and put in prifon: So that the fowles of owre men were not longe

The Spaniardes
misbehauour.

Guarionexius the
kyng of the
great vale
Didacus the
interpretour
Caunaboa, the
kyng of the
house of goulde.

Capitayne Hoieda

19

Kyng Caunaboa,
had slaine the
Spanyardes.

Caunaboa
conspireth the
Admiralles death.

Fayre words
make fooles fayne.

Famine in the
Ilande of
hispaniola.

The hunger of
golde causeth
great famine.

The towre of
conception.

A masse of gold
weighinge. xx.
ounces.

Tofus.

Electrum is a
metall naturally
mixt of one portion
of golde and an
other of siluer
beinge of propertie
to bewray poyson,
and was 20
therefore in
owlde tyme in
greater estimation
then golde.

The myne of
Electrum.

An other kynde of
amber is taken out
of greate whiale
fishes
Orpement or oker.
Wooddes of
brasile trees.

Causes of
hinderance.
Licenciuousnes of
to much libertie

And this only
gathered and not
digged out of the
bodi of the mine

The people make
supplication to
stand to their
tribute

from their bodies vncruenged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amonge th[e] inhabitants, that there was alrebye fyftie thousande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotten sheepe: The cause wherof was wel knowne to bee theyr owne obftinacie and frowardnes. For where as they sawe that owre men entended to choofe them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driuen them from thence if the vytailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they determyned with them felues, not only to leaue sowing and plantyng, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alrebye fowen of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrst booke. But especially amonge the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, otherwyfe cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweledge that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cause that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent fourth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the fowthe fyde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throwghe out all the Regions that he trauallyed, there was fuche scarfenes of breade, that for the space of. xvi. dayes he eate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wylde trees, But *Guarionexius*, the kynge of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedoom was not too waisted as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne vytayles.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe the journeyes myght bee the shorter, and also that owre men myght haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitants shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylded an other fort[r]esse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Isabella* and faint Thomas fortresse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the fyde of a hyll, hauynge a fayre ryuer of holfome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitants sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre shippes lyinge in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to despayre of any hope of libertie, and wandered vp and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchyng diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeyne kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyft, weighing. xx. vnces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is soone refolued into fande. This masse of golde, I my selfe sawe in Castile, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the courte lay all that wynter. I sawe also a great piece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many fuche other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in owlde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This piece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grownde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They affyrmed that it wayde more then three hundreth pownde weight, after. viii. vnces to the pownde. It was fownde in the howfe of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predecessours. And albeit that in the dayes of th[e] inhabitants yet liuyng, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owre men with muche adoo, coulde hardely cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them fuche priuie hatred. Yet at the length, they browght them to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbiffhe. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restored agein, if myners and other woorkemen skylfull therin, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is fownd great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yelowe coloure whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greate wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowe wolde aske what shoulde be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shyppes laden with brasile, sumwhat of goffampine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and sum spices, why they haue not broughte fuche plentie of golde and fuche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulnessse of these regions seeme to promisse. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewise demaunded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with him into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlenessse, then to labour: And were more studious of fedition and newes, then defyring of peace and quietnessse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycenciuousnes, they rebelled and forfooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusafions agaynst hym, bycause he went aboute to repreffe theyr owtragioufenes. By reason wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitants, and freely to possessse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the cause that hitherto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wryte these thynges at yowre requeste, they gathered in twoo moonethes the summe of a thousande and twoo hundreth poundes weight of golde. But bycause we intende to speake more largely of these thynges in theyr place, we wyll nowe retourne from whense we haue digressed. When the inhabitants perceaued that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and apply them felues to reincrease the fruites of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almost waisted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that euery Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to

theyr portion, and at fuche tyme as they were agreed vppon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the trauayles of theyr bodyes, were fearfully able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beinge of long tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wyld trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, browght parte of theyr tribute: Moste humbly defyringe the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Iland were restored to the owlde state. Promynginge farther, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee dowble recompensed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, kepte theyr promyse, bycause they were forer oppressed with famine then any of the other. They faye, that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes, differ no lesse in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amonge vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylnes of the courte: wheras notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many things, much after one fasshion, as in nakednes, and rude simplicitie. But nowe lette vs returne to *Caunaboa*, the kyng of the howse of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him selfe to be caste in pryson, frettinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightlyc deuisinge with hym selfe howe he myght bee deliuered, beganne to persuaide the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wherof he was king) it shulde bee expedient to sende thither a garryson of Christian men, to defende the same from the incurfions of his owld enemyes and borderers. For he fayde, that it was signyfyed vnto hym, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with fuche incurfions. By this crafty deuise, he thought to haue browght to passe, that his brother whiche was in that regyon, and the other his kynfolkes and frendes with their adherentes, shoulde haue taken, eyther by sleighte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admirall vnderstandyng his crafty meanynge, sente *Hoieda* with fuche a company of men, as might vanquishe the Cibauians, if they shulde moue warre ageynste them. Owre men had fearfully entered into the Region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agenste them with an armie of fyue thousande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howses: and encamped rownde about the same on euery fyde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the disciptyne of warre, abowte the distance of a furlonge from the house, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuite by equal diuision: And placed the froot of his owne batayle, directlye ageynst owre men. When he had thus fet his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne signes that the hole army shulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a larome fresshly affayle theyr enemies, in such fort that none might escape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onfet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycause that place was most commodious for the horsemen. When the horsemen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the brestes of theyr horses, and slewe as many as abode th[c]ende of the fyght. The residue beinge stryken with feare, disparted, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whense they made a pytifull houlyng to owre men, defyringe them to spare them: protestinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what so euer they wolde commaunde them, if they wolde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa* beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to reforte euery man to his owne. These things thus fortunately atchiued this Region was pacified. Amonge those mountaynes, the vale which *Caunaboa* inhabited, is cauled *Magona*, and is excedyng fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly springes: and ryuers, in the fande wherof, is fownde great plentie of golde. The same yeare in the mooneth of Iune, they faye there rose fuche a boyt[r]ous tempeste of wynde from the fowtheaste, as hath not lyghtly ben harde of: The violence hereof was such that it plucked vppe by the roots what so euer greete trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the hauen of the cite, it beate downe to the bottome of the sea, three shippes which lay at anker, and broke the cables in fundre: and that (which is the greater maruail) without any florme or rowghnes of the sea, onely turnyng them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes also affirme, that the same yeare, the sea extended it selfe further in to the lande, and rose higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the space of a cubet. The people therfore, muttered amonge them selues, that owre nation hadde trowbled the elementes, and caused such portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayer (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they say, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor theyr great grandfathers euer sawe fuche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vppe greete trees by the rootes: Neyther yet fuche furges and vehement motions on the sea, that soo wasted the lande. As in deede it may appeare, for as muche as, where so euer the sea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner euery where, flourishing medowes reachinge euen vnto the shore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kyng *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother shoulde haue binne browght into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verve penyuenes and anguysh of mynde. The Admirall, whose shippes were drowned in the forfayde tempeste, perceauinge him selfe to bee nowe enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniards

Famine.

The nature of the Region disposeth the maner of the people.

Kyng Caunaboa in captiuitie.

The persuation of Caunaboa.

21

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthrowe.

A great tempest in the moneth of Iune.

Three shippes drowned lyinge at anker

Whyrle wyndes Furacanes.

The death of kyng Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus
Colonus the
lieutenantaunt
searcheth the
golde mines.

22

The golde mynes
of Salomon.

Golde in the
superficiall partes
of the earth.

The Admirall
taketh his viage
to spayne

caule *Carauelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers pertynyng therunto. Whyle these thinges were dooinge, he sent fourth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beinge lieutenantaunt of the Ilande, with an army of men to searche the golde mynes beinge dystant three score leaques from the citie of *Ifabella*, which were fownde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, beefore the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibana* were known. In these mynes, they fownde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee Ophir, as we haue sayde before) supposeth that Salomon the kynge of *Hierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testamente: And that his shippes sayled to this Ophir by the goulfe of *Perfia* cauled *Sinus Perfcus*. But whether it bee soo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the myners dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, duryng for the space of. vi. miles, and in dyuers places sýtsted the fame on the drye lande, they fownde such plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could easely fynde euery day, the weyght of three drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Lieutenantaunte certified the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the. v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertise the kynge of all his affayres, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Lieutenantaunte,

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.

The golden towre.

Lacke of vytayles.

Huntinge
houndes.

Kynge
Manicautexius.

Vytayles brought
from Spayne.

Saynt Dominikes
towre.

Groues of
date trees.

Isabella.

23



After the Admyrall departyng into Spain his Brother the Lieutenantaunte, buylded a fort[re]sse in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, bycause the labourers fownde golde in the earth and ston whereof they made the waulles of the fortresse. He consumed three monethes in makynge the instrumentes wherwith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, tryed, and molten. Yet was he at this tyme by reafon of wante of vytayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meate. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered three score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there refortynge to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coulde not long tary here, bicaufe they lacked meate in the fortresse, whyther he hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng therefore in the fortresse a garryfon of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leauyng also with them a hownde to take those kyndes of lyttle beastes which they caule *Vfias*, not muche vnlyke owre conyes, he returned to the fortresse of Conception. This also, was the moonthe wherin the kynge *Guarionexius*, and also *Manicautexius*, bortherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the hole moonthe of Iune, he exacted the hole tribute of these two kinges, and vytayles necessary for hym and suche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundreth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendes of Iulye, there came three Carauelles from Spayne, bringyng with them fundry kyndes of vytayles, as wheate, oyle, wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordyng as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryual of these shyppes, the lieutenantaunte receaued commaundment from the kynge and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde remoue theyr habitation to the fowthe syde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make dilygent searche for those kynges whiche had slayne the Christian men, and to fende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte vyage therefore, he sent three hundreth captiues with three Kinges: And when he had dilygently searched the coastes of the south syde, he transported his habitation, and buylded a fortresse there, vpon the toppe of a hyll, neere vnto a fure hauen.

This fortresse, he cauled saynt Dominikes towre. Into this hauen, runneth a ryuer of holsome water, replenysht with fundry kyndes of good fysshes. They affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature. For, where so euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng pleasaunte and fruitfull: hauyng on euery syde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, often tymes the branches therof laden with flowres and frutes, hunge soo ouer theyr heades, that they mighte plucke them with theyr handes. Also that the frutes of this grownde, is eyther equall with the foyle of *Ifabella*, or better. In *Ifabella*, he lefte only certeyne sicke men and shippe wrightes, whom he had appointed to make certeyne carauels. The residue of his men, he conueighed to the fowth, to saint Dominikes towre. After he had buylded this fortresse, leauinge therein a garryfon of. xx. men, he with the remanent of his fouldiers, prepared

them felues to searche the inner partes of the Weste fyde of the Ilande, hytherto knowen onely by name. Therefore abowte. xxx. leaques, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortresse, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the fowth, by the myddest of the Iland. When he had ouerpasse this ryuer with a coompanye of armed men diuided into. xxv. decurions, that is, tenne in a company with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decurions to the regions of those kynges in whose landes were the great woods of brasile trees. Inclynge towarde the lefte hande, they fownde the woodes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. Eche of the decurions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howses with the trunkes of brasile, there to be referued vntyll the shyppes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieuetenaunt directinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, fownde a certeyne kyng whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynst th[e] inhabitants of the prouince of *Naiba*, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, bortherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kyng, is cauled *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the Ilande, distante from the ryuer of *Naiba*. xxx. leaques. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from *Naiba*, to the furthest marches of the weste, is vterly withoute golde, although it bee full of mountaynes. When the kyng had espied owre men, layinge a parte his weapons, and gyuinge signes of peace, he spake gentely to them, (incerteyne whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demaunded of them what they wolde haue. The Lieuetenaunte aunswered: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kyng of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, whereas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth foorth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they desyred none other thyng. The leauetenaunt answered ageyne: God forbydde that we shulde enioyne any man to pay such tribute as he myght not eafely forbear, or such as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderstand that your Regions brynge foorth great plentie of Gossampine cotton, and hempe, with suche other, whereof we desyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde these woordes, he promysed with cherefull countenance, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismissing his army, and fendyng messengers beefore, he hym selfe accompanied the Leauetenaunte and browght hym to his palaice, beinge dystante (as we haue sayde). xxx. leaques. In al this tracte, they passed through the Iurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, fume gaue them hempe, of no lesse goodnes to make tackclinges for shippes then owre woodde. Other fume, browght breade, and fum gossampyne cotton: And soo euery of them payde tribute with suche commodities as theyr countreys browght foorth. At the lengthe they came to the kynges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, a greate multitude of the kynges seruantes and subiectes reforted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receaue theyr kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the strangers which he browght with hym to se the magnificence of his courte. But nowe shall yowe heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and fyghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of. xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, fyinge and daunsinge: They were all naked, saynge that theyr pryue partes were couered with breeches of gossampine cotton. But the virgins, hauyng theyr heare hangyng downe abowte their sholders, tyed abowte the foreheade with a fyllet, were vterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodies, were excedyng smoothe, and well proportioned: but sumwhat inclynge to a louely brown. They supposed that they had seene those most beautyfull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauetenaunt with lowe curtesy and fnylyng countenance. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they fownde a delicate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were browght by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodginge, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howses abowte the palaice, where they rested them in hangyng beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken more largely in an other place.

¶ The daye folowyng they browght owre men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or tryumphes, as we haue said before. Here, after many daunsynges, fyinges, maskynges, runnynges, wreslynges, and other tryyng of mastries, foodenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kyng for his pastyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniards vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere together, they assayed the one the other as fiercly, as if mortal enemies with theyr baners fpleade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyl dren. Soo that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, if the kyng had not at the request of owre men, caused them to cease. The thyrde day, the

The ryuer of
*Naiba*Wooddes of
brasile trees.Kinge *Beuchius*
Anacauchoa.
The palaice
of *xaragua*.Mountaynes
without gold

Tribute.

The wolfe
entreateth the
sheepe.Hempe and
gossampine cotton.Howe the
Lieutenant was
receaued at the
kynges palaice.

The kynges wyues.

Well fauered
women.*Dryades*.
24

A delicate supper.

Hangyng beddes.

A common haule

A pretie pastyme.

Foure men slaine
in sport

Prouision for
diseased men

The castels or
towers of
hispaniola.

The golden
mountaynes
of Cibaua.

Bonauum

Tribute.

The kynges
rebelle.

Guarionexius
capitaine of
the conspiracie.

An army of xv.
thousand
Barbarians.

25

The kynges are
taken prisoners.

Kynge
Guarionexius
is pardoned.

Lacke of vytayles.

Benchius
Anacauchoa, the
kynge of Xaragua.

Lieutenant confelynge the kynge to fowe more plentie of goffampine vppon the bankes nere vnto the waters fyde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordyng to the multitude of theyr howfes, he repayred to *Ifabella* to vyfite the ficke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his abfence. xxx. of his men were confumed with diuerfe difeafes. Wherefore beinge fore trowbled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he were best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges neceffarie as well to reftore them to healthe whiche were yet acrafed, as also vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no fhippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to fende abrode the ficke men here and there to rundrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the caftelles which they had erected in the fame. For directly from the cite of *Ifabella* to faynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the fouth, through the Iland, they had buylded thus many caftelles. Fyrfte. xxxvi. myles diftante from *Ifabella*, they buylded the caftell of *Sperantia*, from *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the caftell of faynte Catharine, from faynte Catharines. xx. myles, was faynt Iames towre. Other. xx. miles from faynte Iames towre, was a ftronger fortrefse then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the ftronger bicaufe it was fituate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the greate and large playne foo fruitfull and well inhabited as we haue before deferibed. He buylded also an other in the mydde waye betwene the towre of Conception and faynt Dominikes towre. The which also was fstronger then the towre of Conception, bycaufe it was within the lymittes of a great kynge, hauinge vnder his dominion fiue thowfande men: whose chiefe Citie and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonauum*, he wyllid that the caftell fhulde also bee cauled after the fame name. Therefore leauyng the ficke men in thefe caftels and other of the Ilande howfes nere vnto the fame, he hym felfe repayred to faynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. When he had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumor fpredde, that all the kynges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had confpyred with desperate myndes to rebell agenfte the Spaniardes. When the Lieuetenaunte was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng difcoraged eyther by the lengthe of the waye, or feeblenefse of his fouldyers, beyng in maner forweried with traunyle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertifement that kynge *Guarionexius* was chofen by the other prynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellion: And that he was enforced therto halfe vnwilling, beyng feduced by theyr perfwafions and prouocations. The whiche is more lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the power and policie of owre men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accompanied with. xv. thoufande men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieuetenaunte confultyng with the Capitayne of the fortrefse and the other fouldiers of whom he had the conducte, determyned to fette vpon them vnwares in their owne howfes before they coulde prepare theyr army. He fent foorthe therfore to euery kynge, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundreth, which were commaunded vppon a fudden to inuade theyr howfes in the night, and to take them fleepinge, beefore the people (beinge fcattered here and there) might affemble togyther. Thus fecreatly enteringe into their vylages, not fortified with wauls, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vppon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away euery man his prifoner according as they were commaunded. The Lieuetenaunt hym felfe with his hundreth men, affayled kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier perfonage, whom he tooke pryfoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, and at the fame howre appoynted. Foureteene of theym were browght the fame nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had fuborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the fame: leaft the people for forowe of theyr kynges fhulde neglece or forfake their cuntry, whiche thinge myght haue byn greate incommoditie to owre men, who by th[e]increafe of theyr feedes and fruites were oftentimes ayded, he freely pardoned and difmiffed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the number of fyue thowfande withowte weapons, with pytifull houling for the delyueraunce of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, and the earth trembeled through the vehemencie of theyr owtery. The Lieuetenaunt warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynge, with rewardes, and with promyfes, neuer hereafter to attempte any fuche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great power of owre men, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to fuche as remayne faithfull: defyryng them to quiet theyr myndes: and from heneforth nother in dede nor thowght to interpryfe any thyng ageynft the Chriftians, but to obeye and ferue them, excepte they wolde dayly bryng them felues into further calamities. When the oration was fynifhed, they tooke hym vp and fet hym on theyr fhoulders, and foo caryed hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a whyle. But owre men, with heauy countenance, wandered vppe and downe, as defolate in a ftrange cuntry, lackinge vytailes, and worne owte of apparell, whereas. xv. moonethes were nowe paffed fince the Admirals departure: duringe which tyme, they coulde heare nothyng owte of Spayne. The Leauetenaunt comforted them all that he coulde with fayre wordes and promyfes. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, the kynge of the Weft partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we fpake before) fente meffengers to the Lieuetenaunt to fignifye vnto hym, that he hadde in a redynes the

goffampine cotton and fuche other thinges as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his trybute. Whervppon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iorney thither, and was honorably receaued of the kyng and his fyfter, sumtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kyng of *Cibaua*, bearing no lesse rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he hym selfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyfe woman, of good maners, and pleafaunt in company. Shee earnestly perswaded her brother by th[e] example of her husbnde, to loue and obeye the Christians. This woman was cauled *Anacaona*. He fownde in the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*. xxxii. kynges whiche hadde browght theyr tributes with them, and abode his comminge. They browght with them also befylde theyr trybute assigned them, further to demerite the fauour of owre men, great plentie of vytayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnys, and fyffhes, alre dyed bycause they shulde not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kynd which wee fayd to bee esteemed amonge them as most delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles fauing in byggenes. These serpentes they caule *Iuannas*, which owre men learned sumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durste aduenture to taste of them by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothefumnes. Yet the Lieuetenaunt beinge entyfed by the pleasantnes of the kynges fyfter, determined to taste of the serpentes. But when he felte the fleshe therof to bee so delicate to his tonge, he fel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge his coompanyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in greedines: In foo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke then of the sweetenes of these serpentes: which they affyrme to bec of more pleafaunte taste, then eyther owre phefauntes or pertriches. But they lose theyr taste, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne fashion: as doo peacockes and phefauntes except they bee interlarded beefore they bee roasted. They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrst takyng owte theyr bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washè and rubbe theyr bodies very cleane bothe within and withowte. Then roulng them togyther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a slepyng snake, they thruste them into a potte of no bygger capacitie then to houlde them only. This doone, puttinge a lytle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they feethe them with a soft fyre of sweete woodde, and fuche as maketh no greate smoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus fodde, is made an excedinge pleafaunte brothe or potage. They fay also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to feethe by them felues. They are good to bee eaten as fone as they are fodde: And may also bee referued many dayes after. But hauinge fayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe speake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howses with the goffampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promysed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gently accepted theyr frendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in fundry Regions to bee browght to the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kyng of *Xaragua*, he sent messengers to *Ifabella* for one of the two carauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to sende the same thither ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladd of these tydynges, sayled abowte the Ilande, and in short space browght the shippe to the coastes of *Xaragua*. The fyfter of kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyfe and pleafaunt woman *Anacaona*, (the wyfe sumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kyng of the golden howse of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose husbnde dyed in the way when he shulde haue byn caryed into Spayne,) when shee harde faye that owre shyppe was arryued on the shore of her natieue countrey, perswaded the kyng her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to see it. For the place where the shyppe lay, was not paste. vi. myles distante from *Xaragua*. They rested all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne vyllage in the which was the treasurie or iewell howse of *Anacaona*. Her treasurie was nother goulde, fyluer, or precious stones, but only thynges necessary to bee vsed, as cheyars, stooles, fettels, dyffhes, potingers, pottes, pannes, basons, treyes, and fuche other howsholde stufte and instrumentes, workemanly made of a certeyne blacke and harde shyninge woodde which that excellent lerned phifition *Iohn baptiste Elifus*, affirmeth to bee hebene. What so euer portion of wytte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes, the same doth most appeare in these kynde of woorkes, in whiche they shewe great arte and cunnyng. But those which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, situate in the mouth of the weste fyde of *Hispaniola*. In these they graue the lyuely Images of such phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Also the Images of men, serpents, beastes, and what foo euer other thyng they haue once seene. What wolde yowe thinke (most noble Prynce) that they could doo, if they had the vse of Iren and steele? For they onely fyrste make these softe in the fyre, and afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certeyne stone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of stooles and chayers, shee gaue the Lieuetenaunt. xiiii. And of vesselles perteynyng to the table and kychen, shee gaue hym three score, sum of wood and sume of earthe. Also of goffampine cotton ready spunne foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the sea fyde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the shyppe boat to bee browght to the shore. The kyng also had prepared two canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym selfe and certeyne of his gentelmen: an other for his fyfter *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* defyred to bee caried in the shyppe boate with the

Queene Anacaona,
the wife of kyng
Caunaboa.

xxxii. kynges.

Serpentes eaten.

26

The dressing of
serpentes to be
eaten.

Serpentes
egges eaten.

Gossampine
cotton.

Queene Anacaona

The treasurie of
Queene Anacaona.

Hebene woode.

The Ilande of
Guanabba

Conninge artificers

A stone in the
steede of Iren

Gunnies.	<p>Lieuetenaunte. When they nowe approached nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with smooke. They trembled and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of fauling. But when they sawe the Lieuetenaunte lawgh, and looke cherefully on them, they cauled ageyne theyr spirites. And when they yet drewe nerer to the shippe, and harde the noyse of the fluites, shalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astonyed at the sweete harmony therof. Enterynge into the shyppe and beholdinge the fore-shippe and the sterne, the toppe castel, the maste, the hatches, the cabens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother fixinge his eyes on the fyfter, and the fyfter on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amafed, and wylste not what to fayre for too muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge these things they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ankers to bee loofed, and the failles to be hoyfed vp. Then were they further astonysed, when they sawe soo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without ores and without the force of man. For there arose from the earth suche a wynde as a man wolde haue wysshed for of purpose. Yet furthermore, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue sumtyme forwarde and sumtyme backwarde: sumtyme towarde the ryght hande and sumtyme towarde the lefte, and that with one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at theyr wyttes ende for to muche admiracion. These thynges fynished and the shippes beinge laden with breade and suche other rewardes, they beinge also recompensed with other of owre thynges, he dismissed not onely the kynge <i>Beuchius Anacauchoa</i>, and his fyfter, but lykewise all theyr seruantes and women replenyshed with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the cite of <i>Ifabella</i>: where he was aduertised that one <i>Roldanus Ximemus</i>, a naughty felowe, (whom before beinge his seruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Iudge in causes of controuersie) had vsed hym selfe owtragiouly and was malyciously mynded ageynst hym, and further, the cause of muche mischiese in his absence. For kynge <i>Guarionexius</i> (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion. and perswaded the people to obeye the Spanyardes) was by his naughty vsage, and suche other as were confethered with hym, so accented to reuenge the iniuries which they susteyned at his handes, byfde the abhominable actes which they folowyng onely the lawe of nature, abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelic, famylers, and ditionaries, of desperate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge distant from <i>Ifabella</i> onely tenne leaques Westwarde, towarde the north syde of the sea. These mountaynes, and also the inhabitantes of the same they caule by one name <i>Ciguaios</i>. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of these mountayne[s], is cauled <i>Maiobanexius</i>: and his courte or palaice is named <i>Capronus</i>. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and suche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also bendyng: and haue theyr corners reachinge downe to the sea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verye fierse and warlyke men, hauing their original of the Canybales. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr bortherers, they eate all suche as they kyll. <i>Guarionexius</i> therefore, flyng to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many presentes of suche thynges as are wantinge in his country: therwith declaryng howe vylly, vylaynously, and violently, he had byn vsed of owre men: with whom he could nothinge preuayle nother by fayre meanes, nor by foule: nother by humylytie nor by floutnes. And that to bee the cause of his resortinge to hym at that tyme: moste humbly desyryng hym to bee his defence ageynst th[e] oppressions of suche myscheuous people. <i>Maiobanexius</i> here vpon, made hym promesse to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieuetenaunt therefore made hast to the fortresse of Conception: whyther as soone as he was coome, he sent for <i>Roldanus Ximemus</i>, who with suche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the Ilande vylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Lieuetenaunt asked hym what al these flurres and tumultes ment. He answered without abashment: Yowre brother the Admirall hath to do therwith, and shall answere for the same before the kynge. For we perceaued that the kynge hath soo put hym in truste, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryshe for hunger whyle we folowe yowe: and are dryuen to seeke owre vnhappy foode in the desertes. Yowre brother also, assigned me assistant with yowe in gouerninge the Ilande. Wherefore fyth yowe haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder yowre obedience. When <i>Roldanus</i> had spoken these wordes and suche other, the Lieuetenaunte wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his fyngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of <i>Xaragua</i>, hauinge with hym a trayne of threescore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy synke of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loose brydels in al kyndes of myschefe, robberyng the people, spoylinge the country, and rauysing bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle these thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght shippes appoynted hym by the kynge: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vitayles, from <i>Cales</i> or <i>Cades</i> of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenaunt his brother. These shippes by chance arryued fyrst on that syde of the Ilande where <i>Rolandus Ximemus</i> ranged with his companyons. <i>Rolandus</i> in shorte tyme hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattockes, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger,</p>
27	
Musical instrumentes. Ignorance causeth admiration.	
Roldanus Ximemus. The intemperancie and malice of a seruile witte aduanced.	
Ciguaios.	
Maiobanexius, the great kyng of the mountaynes	
The inhabitantes of the mountaynes	
Guarionexius rebelleth ageyne.	
Roldanus Ximemus rebelleth.	
28	
Licentiousnes in libertie	
Hercules pyllers A violente persasion.	

abundance: and for wearynes and watchinge, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, assemblunge a power of his freendes and confetherates, came oftentimes downe into the playne, and flewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulede meete conuenientlye, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: wastynge theyr grounde, destroyinge theyr feedes, and spoylinge theyr vylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowlege that the Admirall wolde shortly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne whiche came in the fyrste shippes. Whyle the Lieutenant was thus toffed in the middest of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admirall fet forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more towarde the fouth. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coastes bothe of the lande and sea he coompased, and what newe regions he difcouered, wee wyl fyrst declare. For to what ende and conclusion the fayde tumultes and feditions came, wee wyl expresse in th[e]nde of the booke folowynge. Thus fare ye well.

THE SIXTE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Golonus the Admyral, the thyrde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yeaere of Christe. 1498. hoyfed vp his fayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre distante from Cales: and fet forwarde on his vyage with eyght shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries. He diuerted from his accustomed rafe which was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reason of certeyne frenchemen pirates and rouers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght way to meete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, abowte foure score and ten myles towarde the lefte hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more southwarde then the cite of *Ciuite* by foure degrees. For the pole artyke is eleuate to *Ciuite*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners faye) only xxxii. He fayled therfore fyrste to *Madera*. And fendinge from thense directly to *Hispaniola*, the refydue of the shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries, he hym selfe with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles coasted towarde the fouth to coome to the *Equinoctial* lyne, and fo furth to folowe the tracte of the same towarde the West, to th[e]intent to searche the natures of suche places as he coulede fynde vnder or nere vnto the same, leauinge *Hispaniola* on the north fyde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rafe, lye. xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in owlde tyme cauled *Hesperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Cabourde*. These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer ageynst the inner partes of Ethiopie, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these the Portugales caule *Bonauista*. With the snayles, or rather tortoyfes of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and clenfed of theyr leprofite. Departing fodainly from henfe by reason of the contagioufnes of the ayre, he fayled. CCCCLXXX. [four hundred and eighty] myles towarde the Weste fouthwest, which is the myddest betwene the weste and the fouth. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of Iune) that his shippes were almoeste fette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrels cracked and brake, and the freshe water ranne owte. The men also complayned that they were not able to abyde that extremitie of heate. Here the northe pole was eleuate only. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of. viii. dayes in the which he suffered these extremities, only the fyrst day was fayre: but all the other, clowdy and rayny: yet neuerthelesse feruent & tte. Wherefore it oftentimes repented hym not a little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge toffed in these dangiours and vexations eyght contynnall dayes, at the lengthe an Eastfoutheast wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his fayles. Which wynde folowynge directly towarde the weste, he fownde the starres ouer that paralelle, placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym selfe towlde me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes saylinge, they fownde moste temperate and pleasaunte ayre. The Admirall also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholosome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulede he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watcheman lookynge forth of the toppecastell of the greatest shyppe, cryed owte alowde for ioy that he espyed three exceedynge hyghe mountaynes: Exhortinge his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all penfuenes. For they were very heauy and forowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of th[e]intollerable heate, as also that their freshe water fayled them, which ranne owte at the ryftes of the barels, caused by extreme heate as we haue fayde. Thus beinge wel comforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrst approche, they coulede not arryue by reason of the shalownes of the sea nere the shore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr shippes, they might wel perceau that the Region was inhabyted and well cultured. For they sawe very fayre gardens, and pleasaunte medowes:

The furie of
guarionexius

The thyrde vyage
of Colonus the
Admirall.

Frenche men
pyrats.

The Iland of
Madera.

The Admirall
[s]ayleth to the
Equinoctiall.

xiii. Ilandes of
Hesperides, now
cauled Cabouerle.

Healyng of the
leper.

Contagious ayre
and extremitie of heate

The pole eleuate.
v. degrees.

29

The starres placed
in other order.

A sea rysyng lyke
a mountayne.

Heate causeth the
barrels to breke.

Swete sauours
proceedynge
frome the lande.

The Iland of Puta.
People of (good)ly
corporature and
longe heare nere
the Equinoctiall.

The higher the
coulde.

Difference
betwene people of
one clime.
Ethiopia.

Note the cause of
difference.

Musical
instrumentes.

30

The violent course
of the water from
the Easte to the
Weste.

The goulfe cauled
Os Draconis.
A conflict betwene
the freshe water
and the salte.

A sea of fresh
water.

Marmasets and
monkeys.

frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornynge dewes beganne to ryfe, there proceeded manye sweete faouours. Twentie myles distant from hense, they chaunced into a hauen, verye apte to harborowe shippes, but it had no ryuer runninge into it. Saylinge on yet sumwhat further, he fownde at the lengthe a commodious hauen wherin he might repayre his shippes and make prouision of fresshe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Futa*. They fownd no houfes nere vnto the hauen: but innumerable steppes of certein wilde beastes feete, of the which they fownde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowyng, they fawe a Canoa commynge a farre of, hauinge in it. xxiii. younge men of godly corporature and high stature, al armed with targets, bowes and arowes. The heare of theyr heds, was longe and plaine, and cutte on the forheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priue partes were couered with filletes of gossampyne cotton, of fundry coloures enterlaced: And were beyde al ouer naked. Here the Admirall confideringe with hym felse the corporature of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaued the fame to bee soo much the nerer heauen then other Regions of the fame paralelle, and further remoued from the grosse vapours of the vales and marysshes, howe muche the hygheste toppes of the byggest mountaynes are distante from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiope: So greate difference is there betwene the nature of th[e]inhabitanes and of the soyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or paralelle: as is to see betwene the people and regions being in the firme lande of Ethiope, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the fame clime, hauinge the pole starre eleuate in the fame degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld more lyke wulle then heare. But these people of the Iland of *Putta* (beinge as I haue fayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are whyte, with longe heare, and of yelow colour. Wherefore it is apparente, the cause of this soo greate difference, to bee rather the disposition of the earthe, then constitucion of heauen. For wee knowe, that snowe fauleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall or burnte lyne, and the fame to endure there continually: We knowe lykewyfe that th[e]inhabitanes of the Regions farre distante frome that lyne towarde the northe, are molested with greate heate.

¶ The Admiral that he myght allure the younge men to him with gentelnes, shewed them lokyng glaffes, fayre and bright vesselles of copper, haukes belles, and fuche other thynges vnknownen to them. But the more they were cauled, so much the more they suspected crafte and deceate, and fledde backwarde. Yet dyd they with greate admiracion beholde owre men and theyr thynges, but styll hauinge their ores in theyr handes redy to flye. When the Admirall fawe that he coulde by no meanes allure them by gyftes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muscical instrumentes: and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greatest shippe, shulde play on theyr drummes and shalmes. But the younge men supposinge this to bee a token of battayle, lefte theyr ores, and in the twyn[k]lyng of an eye hadde put their arrowes in theyr bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus directinge their arrowes towarde owre men, floode in expectacion to knowe what this noyse myght meane. Owre men lykewife preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approached toward them by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals shippe, and trustinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came soo neare one of the lesse shippes, that one of theym plucked the cloke from the gouernour of that shippe, and as wel as they coulde by signes, requyred hym to coome alande, promysinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they fawe hym goo to the Admirals shippe whether he went to aske leaue that he might common with them, suspectinge hereby fume further deceate, they left immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as swyft as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherefore the Admirall thought it not conuenient to bestowe any longe tyme there, at this vyage. No greate space frome this Ilande, euer towarde the weste, the Admirall faith he fownde so owteragious a faule of water, runninge with fuch a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferioure to a myghty streame faulyng from hyghe mountaynes. He also confessed, that since the fyrst daye that euer he knewe what the sea mente, he was neuer in fuche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this daungerous vyage, he fownde certeyne goulfes of. viii. myles, as it had byn the[n]teraunce of fume greate hauen, into the which, the fayde violent streames dyd faule. These goulfes or streyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynste the fame, he named *Margarita*. Owte of these streyghtes, isshewed no lesse force of fresshe water: whiche encounteringe with the faulte, dyd stryue to passe foorth: Soo that betwene bothe the waters, was no smaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he fownde the water therof very fresshe and good to drynke. The Admirall hym felse, and they which were his companions in this vyage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in searchinge for these matters, towlde me yet of a greater thyng. That is, that for the space of. xxvi. leaques, amountynge to a hundreth and foure myles, he fayled euer by freshe water: In so muche, that the further he proceeded, especially towarde the west, he affirmeth the water to bee the fressher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely with moonkeys or marmasets on that part towarde the East. For that syde was rowgh with rockye and stony mountains: And therefore not inhabited with men. Yet they that went alande to searche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the sea, many fayre feldes well tyllid and fowen: But noo people, nor yet houfes or cotages. Parhappes they were

gone further into the countrey to sowe theyr corne and applye theyr husbandry, as wee often see owre husbände men to leaue theyr stations and vylages for the same purpose. In the weste syde of that mountayne, they espyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As soone as the inhabitantes had knowlege that a strange nation was arryued in theyr coastes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to see owre men. We vnderstode by theyr sygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In so muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weste, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, takyng into his shyppe foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleasauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they saw dayly more and more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thynges portended sum great matter: As in deede their opinion sayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The soonne not yet ryfen, but beginninge euen now to ryse, beinge one day allured by the pleasauntnes of the place and sweete fauours which breathed from the land to the shippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approched towarde them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to defyre the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowte feare, and that they and al theyrs shulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: hauyng for the most parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and braselettes on theyr armes of pearles of India: And that so commonlye, that owre women in playes and tryumphes haue not greater plentie of stones of glasse and crystall in theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyrements. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they poynted to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by certeyne scorneful giestures which they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng esteemed perles. Taking also baskettes in theyr handes, they made signes that the same might bee fylled with them in shorte space. But bycause the corne wherwith his shippes were laden to bee caryed into *Hispaniola*, had taken hurt by reason of the salte water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient tyme. Yet he sent to lande two of the shippe boates laden with men, to th[e] intent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for exchange of our thynges, and also sumwhat to searche the nature of the Region and disposition of the people. They entertheyned our men gentelly: and came flockyng to them by heapes, as it hadde byn to beholde fume straunge monsters. Fyrste there came to meete owre men, two men of grautie, whome the multitude folowed. One of these was well in age, and the other but younge. They thinke it was the father with his soonne whiche shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embrased the other, they brought owre men into a certeyne rownde howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate courte. Hether were brought many chayers and stooles made of a certeyne blacke woodde, and very cooninglye wrowght. After that owre men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men came in laden, fume with fundry delicate dyffhes, and fume with wyne. But theyr meate, was only fruite: and those of dyuers kyndes and vtterly vnknownen to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruite, and very pleasaunte in drynkyng. After this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge man brought them to his tabernacle or mancion place, where was a greate company bothe of men and women, but they floode deceauered the one from the other. They are whyte, euen as owre men are, sauynge fuche as are much conuersant in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humanitie towarde strangiers. They couer theyr pryue partes with gossampine cotton wrowght with fundry coloures: and are besyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not eyther a collar, a cheyne, or a braselette of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde, they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, seemyng with theyr countenance to dissuade owre men from goynge thither. For puttinge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynninge as though they bytte the same, styll poyntinge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there: But whether they mente by the Canibales, or wyld beastes owre men coulde not well perceauce. They tooke it excedinge greuouslye, that they coulde nother vnderstande owre men, nor owre men them. When they which were sente to lande, were returned to the shippes abowte three of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringinge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they loofed theyr ankers to departe, myndinge to coome ageyne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was preuented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his trauayle. He was also hyndered at this tyme by reason of the shalownes of the sea and violent course of the water, which with continual tossing, broofed the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungours of fuche shalowe places, and shelves, he euer sent one of the smaulest carauelles before, to try the way with foundinge: and the byggest shippes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of CCXXX. [two hundred and thirty] myles, are cauled of th[e] inhabitantes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapan*: from these regions distant three score leaques, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposyng styll that it had byn an Ilande, and doutyng that he

The fayre and large region of *paria*.

Temperate ayer and fruitful grounde.

Sweete sauours procedyng from the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and garlandes of gold and perles

31

Baskettes ful of pearles. I knowe who had bags ful.

Howe the Admirals men were entertheyned.

Cheyers and stoles of hebene.

Fruites and wyne.

Wyne of the lycour of fruite.

Whyte men nere the Equinoctial

Mountaynes are the matrices of golde.

Canibales

Shalownes of the sea.

The vse of carauelles or brigantines.

Cumana and Manacapan regions of the prouince of *Paria*. Curiana.

A ryuer of
maruelous depth
and bredth.

A sea of weedes.
Lentiscus.
Mastix.

32

The eleuation of
the pole at Paria.

Note a secreate
as concerning the
pole starre.

An experience

A maruelous
secreate.

That the earth is
not perfectly
rownde.

Paradise is in the
mountaynes of
paria.

Looke the ninth
booke seconde
decade.

Paria is part of
the firme lande of
india

Tyme reuealeth al
things

Paria more
southwarde then
hispaniola

might passe by the Weste to the Northe directlye to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of xxx. cubettes depthe, and of such breadth as hath not lyghtly byn harde of. For he affirmeth it to bee. xxviii. leaques. A lyttle further toward the Weste, yet sumwhat more fowthwarde as the bending of the shore requyred, he entered into a fea full of herbes or weedes. The seede of the herbes whiche fwymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastix*. They grewe foo thicke, that they sumetyme in maner slayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thorowghe owte all the yeare muche longer or shorter then an other: And that the Northe pole is here eleaute onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Hee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which becaufe they seeme contrarye to th[e] oppinions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a drye foote as fayth the prouerbe. But it is wel knowen (moste noble prince) that the starre which we caule the pole starre, or northe starre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Artyke vppon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proued, if when the starres fyrst appeare, yowe beeholde the pole starre through any narowe hole. For foo, applyinge yowre instrument therto in the morninge sumwhat before the daye spryng haue blemyshed theyr lyght, yf then yowe looke through the same hole, yowe shall perceauie it to bee moued from the place where yowe faueit fyrst. But howe it commeth to passe, that at the beginnyng of the euenyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the morninge twylyght to bee eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quadrante, I doo not vnderstande. Nor yet doo the reasons which he bringeth, in any poynt fatyfyfe me. For he fayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reysed thereon, much hygher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he faith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which possesseth the supereminente or hyghest parte thereof nerefte vnto heauen. In foo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradyse to bee situate in the toppes of those three hylles, which wee fayde beefore, that the wache man faue owte of the toppe castell of the shippe: And that the outragious streames of the freshe waters whiche foo violentlye iflhewe owte of the fayde goulfes and stryue foo with the falte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the fayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therefore returne to the historye from which we haue dygrefsed. When he perceaued hym selfe to bee thus inwrapped in foo greate a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, foo that he had now no hope to fynde any passage towarde the northe whereby he myght fayle directlye to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hispaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the East. They which afterwarde searched this lande more curiouslye, wyll it to bee parte of the continete or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admiral supposeth. For there are many which affirme that they haue fayled rownd about *Cuba*. But whether it bee fo or not, or whether enuyng the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasiõs of querelinge ageynste hym, I can not iudge: But tyme shall speake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falschod. But whether *Paria* be Continent or not, the Admirall dothe not muche contende. But he supposeth it to bee Continente. He also affirmeth that *Paria* is more southwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eyght hundreth sourescore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hispaniola* (to see his souldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yeare 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amonge his foo many prosperous, pleasaunte, and luckye affayres, fortune mengeled fume feedes of wormewoodde, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to the same Lodouike Cardinall. etc.



The spanyarde
rebell in the
Admirals absence

When the Admirall was nowe coome to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, he fownde all thynges confounded and owte of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee spake beefore) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trustinge to the multitude of such as were confethered with him. And not onely behaued hym selfe proudly ageynste the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenaunt sumtyme his maister, but also fente letters to his reproche to the kynge of Spayne, therein accusinge bothe the brethren, leying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, sent messengers to the kynge, which myght informe hym of theyr rebellion: Instantly defyringe his grace, to fende hym a newe supplye of men, wherby he myght suppress the licentiousnes and

punyshe them for theyr mischeuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to bee vniust men, cruel enemies and sheaders of the Spanyshe bludde: declarynge that vppon euery lyght occasion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleasure therein. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wylde beastes reioynginge in bludde, also the kynges enemyes. Affyrminge lykewyse that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vsurpe Th[e]m[pe]ire of the Ilandes: whiche thyng (they fayde) they suspected by a thousand coniectures. And especially in that they wolde permitte none to reforte to the golde mynes, but only fuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he defyred ayde of the kynge to infringe theyr infolencie, auouched that al those his accusers, which had deuifed fuche lyes ageynste hym, were nowghtye felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruffians aduouters and rauishers of women, faulfe periured vagabundes, and fuche as had byn eyther conuict in pryfons, or fledde for feare of Iudgment: foo escaping punyshement, but not leauinge vice wherin they flyll contynued and browght the fame with them to the Ilande, lyuinge there in lyke maner as before, in thefte, lechery, and all kyndes of myscheefe: And foo gyuen to Idlenes and sleepe, that wheras they were browght thither for myners, labourers, and scullyans, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houfes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto them whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miserable Ilande men, whom they handeled moste cruelly. For leaste theyr handes shulde difcontinewe from sheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr strength and manhod, they vsed nowe and then for theyr pastyme to fryue amonge them felues and proue who coulde most cleanly with his swoorde at one stroke fryke of the heade of an innocente. Soo that he which coulde with moste agilitie make the heade of one of those poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one froke, he was the best man and counted moste honorable. These thynges and many fuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kynge. Whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall fente his brother the lieuetenaut with an army of foure score and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsfemen, (with three thousande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with Kynge *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to owre men and fuche as fauoured theym. Therefore when the Lieuetenaut had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we fayd before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the sea, he fownde two scoutes of his enemyes lurkinge in certeyne buffhes: wherof the one, castyng hym selfe head longe into the sea, escaped: and by the mouthe of the ryuer swamme ouer to his coompanyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe fyxe thousande Ciguauians redy, vnwares to assayle owre men passyng bye. Wherfore the Lieuetenante syndyng a shalowe place where he myght passe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng owte of the wooddes with a terrible crye and moste horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathyrsi* of whom the poete virgile speaketh. For they were all paynted and spotted with fundry coloures, and especiall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne fruites nooryshed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them felues from the foreheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wretched and rowled after a thousande fashions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylles incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are foo lyke vnto helhounds. As owre men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them and hurled dartes foo thicke, that it almoste tooke the lyght of the sonne from owre men. In so much that if they had not borne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonne wronge with them. Yet at the length, many beinge wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer, which thyng when the enemies sawe, they fledde: whome owre men perfsuinge, slewe fume in the chase: but not many, by reason of theyr swyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they shotte at owre men more safely. For they beinge accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, passed through the buffhes and shrubbes as it had byn wylde bores or hartes: wheras owre men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherfore, when he had rested there all that nyght in vayne, and the daye folowyng sawe none sferinge in the wooddes, he went (by the councel and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thense, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe mansion place in the vylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name also, the kynges palaice was cauled, beinge in the same vylage. Thus marchyng forward with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the vylage of an other kynge, which th[e] inhabitants had forsaken for feare of owre men. Yet makyng diligent searsh, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thousand Ciguauians. At the Lieuetenantes fyrst approche, he durst not gyue them battayle vntyll he had sumwhat better searshed the Region: Yet did he in the meane tyme skyrmysh with them twyfe. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he fent furth scoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the country. Whom the Ciguauians espyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them felues

33

The Spanyardes accuse the Admirall.

The Admirales answer.

Insolencie and idelnes of libertie.

These had the custodies of the temples.

A cruel and deuelyshe pastyme.

Kynge Guarionexius is capitaine of. vi. thousand Ciguauians.

Picti Agathyrsi.

Naked men painted with the ioyce of certen fruites.

Heare made long and black by arte

The vse of targettes.

The Ciguauians are dryuen to flyght.

34

Kynge Maiobanexius

An army of viii. thousand Ciguauians.

A Larome.
The Ciguaiians
put to flyght
ageine

The Lieuenaunt
his ambassage
to kynge
Maiobanexius.

Kynge
Guarionexius.

Maiobanexius his
answere.
Natural hatred
of vyce.

The
Lieuenauntes
gentelnes toward
maiobanexius

35
A rare faythfulnes
in a barbarous
kynge.

The
Lieuenauntes
messengers are
slayne.

All the kirges are
dryuen to flyght.

to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, supposing that the Lieuenaunt with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowyng, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owte of the wooddes, they twyfe attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely affayling owre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye before they coude couer them with theyr targettes. Yet owre men put them to flyght, slewe many, and tooke many. The refydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them flyll as in their moste safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, and wyth hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieuenaunt brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynst yowe or yowre people: For he greatly defyreth yowre frendshippe. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath perswaded yowe to bee his ayde ageynste hym to the greate destruction of yowre people and vndoynge of yowre countrey, may haue dewe correction aswell for his difobedience towarde him, as also for rayfing tumultes amonge the people. Wherefore, he requyreth yowe and exorteth yowe, to delyuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The which thyng yf yowe shall performe, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admitte yowe to his frendshyppe, but also enlarge and defende yowre dominion. And if herein yowe refuse to accomplysse his requeste, it wyll folowe, that yowe shall shortelye repent yowe therof. For yowre kyngedome shall be wasted with swoorde and fyer, and yowe shall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowe haue had experience with fauour, as you shall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with stobernes yowe prouoke hym to shewe the vttermoste of his poure. When the messenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius* answered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therefore he thought hym worthy his ayde: especially in as muche as he fledde to hym for succoure, and that he had made him such promeffe, whom also he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that they were naughty men, violent and cruell, defyringe other mens gooddes, and suche as spared not to sheede innocentes bludde: In fyne, that he wolde not haue to doo with suche myscheuous men, nor yet enter into frendshippe with them. When these thynges came to the Lieuenauntes eare, he commaunded the vylage to be burnt where he hym selfe encamped, with many other vylages there abowte. And when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he sent messengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to fende fume one of his moste feythful frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Where vppon the kynge sent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentlemen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuenauntes presence, he frendly requyred hym to persuade his lord and master in his name, and earnestly to admonysse hym, not to suffer his floryshinge kyngedome to bee spoyled, or hym selfe to abyde the hafarde of warre for *Guarionexius* sake: And further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he wolde procure the destruction bothe of hym selfe, his people, and his countrey. When the messenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* assembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curse the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theyr quietnes. *Maiobanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, and had well defered of him, giuinge hym many princely presentes: And had also tawght both his wyfe and hym to synge and daunce, whiche thyng he dyd not lytle esteeme. And was therefore fully resolued in no case to forsake hym, or ageynste all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche fledde to hym for succoure: but rather to abyde al extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquye to flanderes to reporte that he had betrayed his geste whom he tooke into his house with warranties. Thus dismissinge the people fighinge and with sorowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before hym, promysinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of his fortune whyle lyfe lasted. In so muche that he thought it not beste to fende any further woorde to the Lieuenaunt: but appoynted hym whome before he sent to hym, to keepe the way with a garryson of men, to th[e] intent that if any messengers shulde be sent from the Lieuenaunt, to sleye them by the way, and admitte none to communication or further entretie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieuenaunt sent twoo, wherof the one was a captiue Ciguaiian, and the other an Ilande man of them which were frendes to owre men: They were bothe taken and slayne. The Lieuenaunt folowed them onely with ten footemen and foure horsemen. Fyndinge his messengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to wraathe, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maiobanexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man his way, and forfooke theyr capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who also with all his famelye, fledde to the rowgh mountaynes. Sum of the Ciguaiians, fought for *Guarionexius* to sleigh hym, for that he was the cause of all these troubles. But his feete faued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where he lurked in maner alone amonge the defolate rockes.

Whereas nowe the Lieuenauntes fouldiers were forweryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunger, (for it was nowe three moonethes fence the warres beganne) many defyred leaue to departe to the towre of Conception, where they had graneges and exercised tyllage. He gaue them theyr passeportes with allowance of vytayles, soo that only thyrtye remayned with hym. These three moonethes warre, they

continued very paynefull and myferablye: Soo that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Cazibi*: that is, fuche rootes whereof they make theyr breade, and that but fylsome to theyr fyll: Also *Vfias*, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke fume with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, sumtyme sweete, and sumtyme muddy fauringe of the marysshes. Emonge these delicats, that lyttle sleepe that they had, was euer for the moste parte abrode vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchemen, and in contynual remoouinge as the nature of warre requyreth. With these fewe therfore, the Lieuetaunt determined to searcho the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the fleppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vppon two of *Maiobanexius* familyers, whiche were sent to certeyne vylages of his, to make prouision of breade. These he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vsed the same also for guides to bringe owre men to the place. Twelue of owre men tooke this enterpryse in hand, painting them selues after the maner of the Ciguaians. Soo that by this stratageme or policie, they came sodenly vppon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym prifoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieuetaunt. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to coome owte of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearinge the Lieuetaunt, bewrayde to owre hunters. The Lieuetaunt beinge certified hereof, sent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambushe vntyll fuche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to intrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowte, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to an other kynge whose dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in al these aduerfities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayrest and moste bewetifull that euer nature browght forth in the Ilande. Whom, when the kynge her husbände who loued her moste ardently (as her bewetie deserued) harde faye that shee was taken prifoner he wandered vppe and downe the desertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or faye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieuetaunte, promysinge moste faythfully that he wold submitte hym selfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, soo that he wolde restore hym his wyfe. The Lieuetaunt accepted the condition and restored him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken prifoners before: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieuetaunt, bringyng with hym fyue thousande men without weapons, sauyng onely fuche instrumentes as they vse in tyllage of theyr grownde. He brought with hym also, feedes to fowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he caufed fuche plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in sundry places of the large vale whereof wee spake before, that shortly after, were seene manye fayre and fruitfull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieuetaunte with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguaians, it moued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vppon they came togyther to the Lieuetaunt with humble submissiō and faythful promesse euer after to bee vnder his obedience: defyring hym to restore vnto them theyr kynge, with his familye. At theyr requeste, the kynges wyfe and his householde was sette at Libertie, but he kepte sylly as a prifoner. These thynges dyd the Lieuetaunt in the Ilande, not yet knowinge what his aduersaries and accusers had layde to his charge before the kynge of Spayne: who beinge disquyeted with theyr querelinges and accusacions, and especially for that by reason of theyr discention, of soo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle browght into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which shuld see a redresse in these thynges: And eyther to punyshe fuche as were faultie, or elles to fende them to hym. What was fownde ageynste the Admirall and his brother, or ageynst his aduersaries whiche accused hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethrene are taken, browght, and cast in prifon, with their goodes confiscate. But as soone as the kynge vnderstoode that they were browght bounde to Cales, he sent messengers in poste, with commaundemente that they shulde bee loosed and coome freely to his presence: wherby he declared that he tooke theyr troubles greuously. It is also fayde, that the newe gouernoure sent letters to the kynge, wrytten with the Admiralles hande in straunge and vnknownen sypherings, to his brother the Lieuetaunt beinge absente, wyllyng hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and ayde hym if the Gouernoure shulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowleage (as he saythe) beinge also aduertified that the Lieuetaunt was gonne to his brother before the men which he had prepared were in a redynes, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moste trewe and prudent Iudge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Spanyardes
are painfull in the
warres.

A desperate
adventure with
xxx. men

A policie.
Kynge
Maiobanexius
is taken.

Guarionexius is
taken.

36
A Bewtifull
woman.

A kynge sendeth
the lieuetaunt
fyue thousand men
to tyll the grownde.

The kynges submit
themselves to the
Lieuetaunt

A newe gouernour
of the ilande.

An vnwoorthy
rewards for soo
greate paynes.

THE EYGHTH BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Cardinall Lodouike.



He greate, ryche, and plentiful Ocean fea, heretofore vnknown, and nowe fownde by *Christophorus Colonus* the Admyrall, by th[e]authoritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kynge, I haue presented vnto yowre honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnwoorkmanly wrought. But yowe shall nowe receaue a precious iewell to bee appendaunt therto. Therefore emonge fuche as were pylottes or gouernoures vnder the Admyrall, and had dyligently marked the courfes and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kynge to seeke further of theyr owne charges, vpon condicion to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyft parte. But bycaufe emonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonfus* (cauled *Nignus* by his surname) sayled towarde the Southe with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake sumwhat of his vyage. He therefore, with only one shippe, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte with commaundement in no cafe to caste anker paste fyftie leaques diftante from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, sayled fyrste to *Paria* where the Admyrall fownde bothe the men and women foo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and brafelettes of pearles, as wee haue fayde before. Coaflynge therfore alonge by the fame shore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*) he came to the Region which th[e]inhabitanes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he fownd a hauen (as he faythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cales*. In to the which enteringe, he fawe a farre of certeyne howfes on the shore, and perceaued when he drewe nere, that it was a vylage of onely eyght howfes. Proceadynge yet further for the fpace of three myles, he efpied an other vylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyftie naked men on a company hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who defyred *Alphonfus* to coome to theyr coafles. He brought with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, brafelettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet flones and glaffes, and fuch other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vneces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more ernestly defyred him to fayle to theyr coafles: Promyfyng hym that he shulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde defyre. He conde[f]cended to their requeste: And the daye folowyng, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multytude of people reforted to hym, instantly requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he confydered the innumerable multytude of people which was there affembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his company, he durste not commyt hym felfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the fhypp with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Iland caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the Ilandes: yet more rude, and not foo artificially as theyrs are. These they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therefore to the fhypp as fafte as they myght, brynginge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenoros*) exchaunginge the fame for owre marchaundies. He fownde this people to bee of gentyll nature, fimple and innocente, beinge conuerfant with them in theyr houfes, for the fpace of. xx. dayes. Theyr houfes are made of woodde, couered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moſte parte, is the shelfyffhes in the whiche pearles are engendred, wherof theyr fea coafles are ful. They haue alfo greate plentie of wylde beaftes, as hartes, wylde bores, and coonys lyke vnto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke doues alfo, and turtle doues. Lykewyfe geefe and duckes which they nooryshe in theyr houfes as wee doo. Peacockes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not diftinct with fundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke vnto the hennes. These people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceding cunning archers, foo that they wyll not lyghtly myffe any beaft or byrde that they shoote at. Owre men consumed certeyne dayes here very plefauntly. Duryng which tyme, who foo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the fame, foure pynnes. He that brought a pheafaut, had twoo: And for a flocke doue or turtle doue, one: And for a goofe, a fmail lookyng glaffe or a lyltle flonc of glaffe. Thus they bought and foulde with proferyng and byddyng, denyng and refufinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynnes were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But owre men fatiffied them with a craftie answere, declaring by tokens that they were very neceffary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thornes owte of theyr fleffhe. But aboue al thynges haukes belles were moſt eſteemed amonge them, for theyr fownde and faire coloure: And wolde therefore gyue much for one of them. Owre men lodginge in theyr houfes, harde in the nyght feafon horryble noyfes and rorynges of wylde beaftes in the wooddes which are full of excedinge greate and hygh trees of fundry kyndes. But the beaftes of these

The Ocean sea heretofore vnknown.

Shipmasters vnder the Admiral.

The fyft portion dewe to the kynge.

37

The nauigation of *Petrus Alphonfus*.
Paria.

Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana.

Pearles for tryfelles.

Great plentie of pearles.
Humayne people.

Shel fyshes in which pearles are engendred.
Beastes and foules.

Hunters and archers.

Theyr maner of baigening

The vse of pynnes.

Haukes bels in great estimation.

Roryng of wylde beastes

wooddes, are not noysome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with their bowes and arrowes: Yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn slayne of any wylde beaste. As many hartes or wylde bores as owre men wolde desyre them to brynge, they wolde kyl in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to brynge them. They lacke kyne, goates, and sheepe. Theyr breade is made of rootes, as is theirs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare, grosse and sumwhat curlede, yet longe also. They keepe their teeth very whyte: And for that purpose vse to cary a certeine herbe betwene their lypes for the most parte of the day, and to washe their mouthes when they cast it away. The women doo all theyr bufynes at home in theyr howses, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the grounde. But the men apply them felues to the warres and huntynge, to playe, fyinge and daunfing. They haue fundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinckinge cuppes made of earthe in other places about them and brought thether for exchaunge of other thynges: For they vse sayres and markettes for the same purpose: and are gretly desyrous of such thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a disposition to al men to desyre and bee dellyted with newe and strange thynges. Many of them, had hangynge at theyr pearles, the Images of certeine beastes and birdes very artificiously made of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from other places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natyue, and of much lyke finenes to that wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, inclose theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the fashon of a coddepiece: or els, couer the same with the shelle of a tortoyse, tyed abowte theyr loynes with laces of goffampine cotton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the synew within the sheethe therof, and bynde the skinne fast with a stringe. The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake before, and many other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes, testifie that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefeft coniecture wherby they argue the same, is, that by the coastes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weste, they sayled aboute three thousande myles, syndynge no signe or token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche sum caule *Curtana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde fuche plentie of golde, signified that it was brought them from a Region cauled *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, beinge distant from them fyxe foonnes, that is, fyxe dayes iourney westwarde: And that theyr Images of goulde, were made in the same Region. Where yppon owre men directed theyr vyage thither immediatly: and arryued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ a thousande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey resorted to them withoute feare, bryngynge with them of the golde which we sayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had also collers of pearles abowte theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchaunge any of those thynges whiche they had owte of other countreys: as nother the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles. Yet amonge the Canchietans, they fownde but little gold redy gathered. They toke with them from thense, certen very sayre marmafets or munkeys, and many poppingayes of fundry coloures. In the monethe of Nouember, the ayer was there most temperate, and nothyng coude. The guardens of the north pole, were owte of syght to bothe these people, they are soo nere to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accoumpte. These people, are wel disposed men, of honest condicions, and nothyng suspicious. For all most all the nyght longe, they resorted to the shippe with theyr boates, and went aboorde ship withoute feare, as dyd the Curians. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are sumwhat ielyous. For, when any straungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd them. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the goffampine trees growe of them felues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and salowes. And therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they couer theyr pryuie partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the same coastes, there came foorth ageynste them abowte twoo thousande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. These people were soo rude and saluage, that owre men coude by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owre men therefore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the same way they came: where they remayned with the Curians continually for the space of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me, not farre from my purpose, to declare what chaunced vnto them in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the fyght of the coaste of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee spake before) to meete with a nauie of xviii. Canoas of Canibales which went a rouyng to hunt for men. Who as foone as they had espyed owr men, assailed theyr shippe fiercely and without feare enclosed the same, disturbing owre men on euery fyde with theyr arrowes. But owre men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom owre menne folowynge with the shippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bownde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with giesture of his handes, eyes, and heade, signified that fyxe of his companyons had byn cruelly cutte in pecies and eaten of that myfcheuous nation: and that he shulde haue byn lykewyse handeled the day folowynge. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with

Hartes and wylde bores.

38

Blacke and curlede heare.

White teethe.

Earthen vessels.

Cominge artificers.

Base golde.

A strange maner of coueringe theyr priuities.

Tokens of the continent or firme lande.

The golden Region of Canchietans.

Temperate ayer in Nouember.

The Equinoctial lyne.

Humane people

Gossampine trees.

Chorlyshe people

Alphonsus returneth to *Paria*.Canibales in the goulfes of *Paria*.

39

Death for death.

Howe the
canibales fortifie
theyr campe

Haraia.

Salte engendred
of the water of
the sea.

Sprynge of salt
water.

The bodies of
princes dryed and
reserued

Threescore and
xvi. poundes
weight of perles
for. v. shillynges.
The course of the
sea toward the
veste.

Perles as common
as chaffe
Petrus Alphonfus
in prison.

Orient perles as
bygge as hasel
nuttes.

40

Curiana
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
The Iland of
Margarita.

The nauigation of
Vincentius and
Aries Pinzonus

Licence and
passeporte.

hande and foote, grinninge and fretinge as it had byn a wyld bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companyons, when he had beaten owte his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what forte the Canibales were woont to inuade other contreys, he answered that they euer vfed to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where foo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them felues within the coompaffe of the fame, to lye the more safely in the nyght seafon. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the doore of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the flanderde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraia*, in the whiche, greate plentie of falte is gathered after a strange forte. For the fea beinge there toffed with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the falte waters into a large playne by the fea fyde: where: afterward when the fea waxeth caulme, and the foonne begynnethe to shyne, the water is congeled into moste pure and whyte falte, wherewith innumerable shyppes might bee laden, if men doo reforte thether for the fame beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne meltethe it, and causeth it to synke into the fande, and foo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other fay, that the playne is not fylled from the fea, but of certeyne sprynges whose water is more sharpe and falt then the water of the fea. Th[e] inhabitants doo greatlye esteeme this bay of falte. Which they vse, not only for theyr owne commoditie, but also woorkinge the fame into a square forme lyke vnto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they stretche and drye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the same vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediren, with a gentell fyre vnder the fame, thus by lyttle and lyttle confuminge the flesshe and keepinge the skynne hole with the bones inclofed therein. These dryed carcafes, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr householde and famylier goddes. They say that in this place they sawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dryed and referued. When they departed from *Curiana*, the. viii. day of the Ides of February to returne to Spayne, they had three score and. xvi. poundes weight (after. viii. vneces to the pownde) of perles, which they bought for exchange of owre thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue shyllinges. Departinge therfore, they consumed three score dayes in theyr iourney (althowgh it were shorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reason of the contynuall course of the fea into the weste, whiche dyd not only greatlye stey the shippe, but also sumtymes dryue it backe. But at the length they came home foo laden with perles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shyppe, *Petrus Alphonfus*, beinge accused of his coompanyons that he had stowlen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kynge of his portion which was the fyue part, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate lerninge and experience and gouernour of *Gallecia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in pryson a longe tyme. But he styll denyethe that euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of these perles were as bygge as hasell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the Easte partes. Yet not of foo greate price, by reason that the holes therof are not foo perfecte. When I my selfe was presente with the ryght honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was bidden to dyner with hym, in the citie of Ciuile, they browght to hym aboue a hundreth and twentie vneces of perles to be fouldre: which surely did greatlye delyte me with their sayrenes and brightnes. Sum faye, that *Alphonfus* hadde not these perles in *Curiana* beinge distante from *Os Draconis* more then a hundreth and twentie leaques, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any perles fownde in *Curiana*. But fithe the matter is yet in controuerfie, we wyll passe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue whereby yowe maye coniecture what commoditie in tyme to come may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west Ocean, whereas at the fyrste discoueringe, they shewe such tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

THE. IX. BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Cardynall Lodouike.



Incentiagnus Pinzonus, and also *Aries Pinzonus*, his neuie, by his brothers fyde, which accompanied the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyrste vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee masters of two of the smaule shippes which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge mouued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the new landes, furnyshed of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the hauen of theyr owne countrey which the Spanyardes caule *Palos*, bortheringe on the weste Ocean. Hauynge therfore the kynges licence and passeporte to departe, they loofed from the hauen, abowte the Calendes of December, in the yeare 1499. This hauen

of *Palos* is three score and twelue myles distant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and three score and foure myles from *Ciuite*. All th[e] inhabitants of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to searching of the sea, and continually exercysed in fayling. They also directed theyr vyage fyrst to the Ilandes of Canarie by the Ilandes of *Hesperides*, nowe cauled *Cabouerde*, which fum caule *Gorgodes Meducias*. Saylinge therfore directly towarde the fouthre frome that Iland of the *Hesperides* which the Portugales (being possellers of the fame) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thense at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the southwest wynde, beinge in the myddeft betwene the south and the weste. When they supposed that they had fayled aboute three hundrethe leaques by the fame wynde, they say that they losse the fyght of the Northe starre: and were shortely after, tossed with excedinge tempestes bothe of wynde and fea, and vexed with intollerable heate. Yet fayled they on further (not without greate daunger) for the space of twoo hundrethe and fortie leaques, folowing yet the fame wynde by the lost pole. Wherefore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let these men and the owlde wryters, as wel Philofophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these men, affirme it to bee habitable, and maruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reason of the foone beames dependenge perpendicularly or directlye ouer the fame. Yet were there many of the owlde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners beinge demaunded, if they sawe the fouth pole, they answered that they knewe no starre there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be discerned aboute the poynte. But that they sawe an other order of starres, and a certeyne thicke myst rysynge from the horizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr fyght. They contende also, that there is a great heape or rysynge in the myddeft of the earth, which taketh away the fyght of the fouthre pole, vntyll they haue vtterly passed ouer the fame. But they verely beleue that they sawe other images of starres, muche differinge from the situation of the starres of owre hemispherie or halfe circle of heauen. Howe foo euer the matter bee, as they informe vs, wee certifie yowe. At the lengthe, the feuenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they espied lande a farre of. And feinge the water of the sea to bee troubelous, foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to bee. xvi. fathames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the space of twoo dayes, they departed bycause they saw no people steringe, althowghe they fownde certeyne steppes of men by the sea fyde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the stones nere vnto the shore, the kynges name and theirs, and the tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre from this station, folowynge the fyers on the lande by nyght, they founde a nation lyinge vnder the open fyrmamente after the maner of warre. Owre men thought it not beste to trowble them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the rysynge of the foone, fortie of owre men well armed, wente toward them: ageynst whom came furth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, slinges and dartes, euen redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the fame maner. Owre men affirme that they were of hygh stature then eyther the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde owre men with frownyng and threatenynge countenaunce. But owre men thought it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycause they wolde not dryue them to flight. Wherefore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes and rewardes. But they refused all kynde of gentelnes, and stode euer in a redines to feight, declaringe the same by signes and tokens. Thus owre men reforted to theyr shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busynes. The same nyght abowte mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Owre men suppose them to bee a vagabunde and wanderinge nacion lyke vnto the Scythians, withowte houfes or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldeyn folowinge them. Such as meafured their footesteppes in the fande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyr feete is almost as longe as twoo feete of owre men of the meane forte. Saylinge on yet further, they founde an other ryuer, but not of deapth sufficient to beare the carauels. They sent therfore the foure shippe boates to lande, ful of armed men to searche the country. They espied vpon a hyghe hyll nere vnto the sea fyde, a greate multitude of people, to whom owre coompanye sent furthe one man with certeyne of owre thynges to allure them to exchaunge. And when he had cast a haukes bell towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubette longe. The which as he slouped to take vppe, they foodenly inclosed hym, and caryed hym awaye. But he was shortly after rescued by his coompanyons, to fum of their paynes: for they slewe eyght of owre men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they encoompafed owre shippe boates within the ryuer, and came rasshelye within the reache of owre men, layinge houlde on the boates fydes, where they were thrust through and hewen in peeces as it had byn sheepe, by reason they were naked. Yet wolde they not for al this, gyue ouer: but tooke from owre men one of their boates, hauing noo men in it. For the gouernour therof beinge slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they lefte this fierce and warlyke people, saylinge towarde the northweste alonge by the fame coastes, with forowfull hartes for the death of theyr coompanyons. When they had fayled abowte. xl. leaques, they chaunced into a sea of fuche fresshe water, that they fylled theyr banelles and hogges heades therwith. Searching the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of ryuers discended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They say

Cales. Ciuite.

The Ilandes of Canarie
Cabouerde.

S. James Ilande.

The North pole
owte of syght.

Habitable Regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

An other order of
starres
A thicke mist
A rysynge in the
myddeft of the
earth.

41

People of hygh
stature.

A vagabunde
kynde of men

Giantes.

Desperate
bouldenes.

A sea of freshe
water.

Many fruitfull
Ilandes.
Humane people.

Mariatambal.
Camomorus.
Paricora.

Regions of Paria.
Golde and perles.
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapan.
Curiana.
The hole earth
largely taken,
maye bee cauled
an Ilande.

Maragnonus
a ryuer
of exceeding
breadth and full
of Ilandes looke
decade ii. liber. ix.

42

Boriostomea, and
Spiriostomea,
mouthes of the
ryuer of Danubius.

The commodities
of the Regions
and Ilandes about
Paria.
Brasile.

Mani fruitfull
Ilandes lefte
desolate.
Canibales.

Trees of Cassia
fistula.

Trees of maruelous
byggenes.
A monstrous
beaste.

Alteracion of ayer
and change of
meate

Cathay in India
beyond the
ryuer of Ganges
A shipwrake
by tempest.

also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabyted: And that th[e]inhabitantes of this tracte are men of meeke nature and suche as doo not refuse strangers: Yet lyttle profytable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyes for their purpose, as golde or precyous stones. For lacke wherof, they brought frome thense thyrtye captiues to sell for slaues. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this Region *Mariatambal*. The Region of the easte parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the mid lande wherof, th[e]inhabitantes signified that there is greate plentie of golde. For, folowynge this ryuer directly toward the Northe (as the bendynge of the shore requyred) they recouered ageyne the fyght of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst founde by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greate abundaunce of pearles. They saye that these coastes are adioynynge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also bortherynge vppon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapan*, *Curiana*, *Cauchieta*, and *Cuchibachoa*. Wherefore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*. For the greate and large compasse therof, dothe not permit that it shulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynte of that land where they lost the fight of the north pole, faylynge by a continuall tracke abowte three hundreth leaques towarde the weste syde of *Paria*, they say that almoste in the mydde way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonum*, which they affirme to bee of such exceedinge breadth, that it myght seeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not falte water where it diuided the lande, they answered, that the water therof was very freshe and sweete: And that the further it ranne, to bee soo muche the fresher: Also full of Ilandes and holfome fysh. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee more then thyrtye leaques. Yet if wee well weighe and confyder the largenes and wydenes of *Boriostomea* and *Spiriostomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Ister* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate or corrupte the falte water with their freshenes, wee shall ceafe to marueile, althowgh this other ryuer bee greater. For, who can dimynyssh the poure of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other bygger then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wherof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the discription of his vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further knowlege hereof. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the commodities of these Regions. They fownde in many Ilandes abowte *Paria*, great wooddes of brafile trees: And brought awaye with them, three thoufande poundes weight thereof. They say that the brafile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. From henese, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule *Norduest*, and the Italians *Graco*) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitfull, yet lefte desolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales. For they went alande in many places, and fownde the ruines of many destroyed howfes. Yet in sum places, they founde men, but those exceedinge fearefull, flynge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the sight of euery straunger or shippe, and wanderinge without houfes or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the Caniballes layinge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde thosse great trees which of them felues in dyuers places bringe furth the fruite or spice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Cassia fistula*: And that of noo leffe goodnes then that which the phisicians minister to such as bee diseased with the ague. But it was not ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of suche byggenes, that. xvi. men ioynynge handes togyther and standinge in compasse, can fearfully embrace sum of them. Emonge these trees is fownde that monstrous beaste with a snowte lyke a foxe, a tayle lyke a marmasette, eares lyke a batte, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearing her whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye much lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. The deade carkas of this beaste, you fawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yowre owne handes, marueylynge at that newe belly and wonderfull prouision of nature. They say it is knowen by experience, that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purse, except it bee eyther to play, or to fucke, vntyl suche tyme that they bee able to gette theyr lyuing by them felues. They tooke this beaste with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed shortly after in the shyppes. Yet the damme liued certeyne moonethes: But at the length, not beinge able to abyde soo greate alteration of ayer, and change of meate, shee dyed also in the way. But of this beaste, wee haue sayde enough. Let vs now therefore returne to the autoures of these thynges. These twoo *Pinzoni*, the vncle and the neue, fusteyned manye great trowbles and horrible tempestes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe sayled by the coastes of *Paria* abowte. vi. hundreth leaques, and (as they supposed) beyonde the cite of *Cathay* and the coastes of Easte India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*, there rose foodenly soo fierce a tempeste in the mooneth of Iuly, that, of the foure carauels which they had with them, twoo were drowned euen beefore theyr eyes: and the thyrde lyenge at anker, with lyke foodennes caryed owte of theyr fyght through the violence of the tempeste: The fourth also lyenge at anker, was soo shaken and broofed, that al the seames therof were almost loofed. Yet came they to lande owt of this lasse shyppe, but vtterlye despayrynge of the shyppe. Wherefore confultyng with them felues what was best to bee doone in soo extreeme a case, and how to prouide them a safe dwellinge place in those Regions beinge owt of al hope how to departe from thense, they determined

to fley all the inhabitantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leaste they with the other shulde conspire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune was better. For the carauell which the tempeste had caryed away, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was faued and repayred. With these two therefore, they tooke theyr vyage directly to Spaine And thus beinge tossed with tempestes and vexed with aduerfities, they returned to theyr natiue contrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and gynger: but not very good, bycause they were not there fully seafoned with the heate of the soone before they brought them from thense. They brought also, certeyne precious stones, whiche *Baptista Elysius*, that excellent philosopher and yowre lordeshippes phisitian, affirmeth to bee trewe Topases. After these mens returne, other of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better, lyke men of good corage, beinge nothinge discomforted by the harde fortune of theyr neighbours, knowinge that it often tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the fowthe by the coastes of *Paria*, folowynge the steppes of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrst discouered the same. They also brought with them greate plentie of *Cassia fistula*: And fownde that precious medicine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Animæ album*, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, mures, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage, as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to certifie yowe of. Wherfore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, bycause yow put me so often in remembrance of your departure. Yet to accomplysshe the Decade, I wyll declare sumwhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. Yowe shall nowe therefore vnderstand the illusions wherwith the people of the Ilande haue byn seduced after the errors of the owlde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blydenes of humane nature corrupted by the disobediens of owr fyrst parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased god by the lyght of his spirite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of renouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes receaueth fume clearenes as in a glasse, vntyll imperfection shalbe abolyshed. Owre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede any other thyng then the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuersante with them, and by vnderstandyng their language, drewe to a further familiaritie, they had knowlege that they vsed dyuers rytes and fuperfitions. I haue therefore gathered these fewe thynges folowynge, owte of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had leste with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian sayth. And bycause in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyll begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therefore apperente by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte seafons certeyne phantasies and illusions of euyll spirites, seducinge them into many fonde and folysshe errors. For they make certeyne Images of gossampine cotton foulded or wretched after theyr maner, and harde stopped within. These Images they make sytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of sprites and deuells which owr paynters are accustomed to paint vppon waules. But forasmuch as I my selfe sent yowe foure of these Images, yowe may better presently signifie vnto the kynges yowre vnele, what maner of thynges they are, and howe lyke vnto paynted deuells, then I can expresse the same by wrytynge. These Images, th[e] inhabitantes caule *Zemes*: wherof the leaste, made to the lyknes of younge deuells, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynst their enemies: And for that purpose haue they those strynges hangynge at them which yowe see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyse fayre wether. For they thinke that these *Zemes* are the mediatours and messengers of the greate god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuisible. Thus euery kynges hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honoureth. They caule the eternall god, by these twoo names, *Iocauna*, and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr prediceffours taught them. Affirminge that he hath a father cauled by these syue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Liella*, *Guimazoa*. Nowe shall yowe heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caumana*, wher they fayne that mankynde came fyrst owte of two caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest forte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the leaft forte owte of the leaste caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they caule *Cauta*. The greateft denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the leste *Amaiauna*. They say, that before it was lawful for men to come foorth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was keppe and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was *Machochaal*. This *Machochaal*, departinge sumwhat farre from the caue to th[e]intente to see what thynges were abrode, was foodenly taken of the soonne (whose sight he was forbydden) and was turned into a stone. They fayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went foorth in the nyghte seafon a fysshynge, so farre from the caue that they coude not returne before the ryfynge of the soone (the which it was not lawful for them to behold) they were transformed into myrobalane trees, which of them felues growe plentiffully in the Ilande. They faye furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, sent one furth of the caue to goo a fysshynge, who by lyke chance

Extreme remedie
in a desperat
case

43

Cinamome and
gynger

Topases.

Men of noble
corage.

A nother vyage

Animæ album.

The superstitions
of hispaniola.
The errors of the
owlde gentilitie.

The grace of
renouation.

Ramonus an
heremyte.
Idolatry and
Idoles.

Illusions of euyl
spirites.
Images of
gossampine cotton

Zemes.
Younge deuyls.

Mediatours.

Only one god
eternall.
The names of god.
The father of god.

The originall of
man kynde

Fables much lyke
Ouide his
transformations

44

The original of
Mirobalane trees.

The nightingale.	was turned into a nyghtyngale bycause the foonne was ryfen beefore he came ageyne to the caue : And that yearelye abowte the same tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moornyng fonge bewayle his myffortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister <i>Vagoniona</i> . And this they thynke to bee the caufe why that byrde singeth in the night seafon. But <i>Vagoniona</i> , beinge fore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his familer frende whom he loued soo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought foorth onely the
The Iland of Mathinino.	women with theyr suckyng chylde, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that traecte, cauled <i>Mathinino</i> , and caryed the chylde awaye with hym : which poore wretches oppressed with famine, fainted and remained
Children turned into frogges.	on the banke of a certeyne ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed <i>toa, toa</i> , that is, <i>mama, mama</i> , as chylde are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they fay it commeth that frogges vse to crye fo
A speciall grace.	pytifully in the spryng tyme of the yeare : And that men were scattered abroad in the caues of <i>Hispaniola</i> withowte the companie of women. They fay also, that whereas <i>Vagoniona</i> hym selfe, was accustomed to
Ho'y reliques	wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, descended to a certeyne fayre woman whom he fawe in the bottome of the sea, and receaued of her certeyne pibble stonnes of marble (whiche they
Women are slippery cattayle. Al wisdome goeth not by age.	caule <i>Cibas</i>) and also certeyne yelowe and bright plates of laton, whiche they caule <i>Guaninos</i> . These thynges to this day are had in greate estimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and most holy reliques. These
Here nedeth sum tropological interpretour.	men whiche we sayde before were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they fay) to washe them selues in a ponde of raine water and fawe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certeyne
Myrmidones	beastes in shape sumwhat lyke vnto women, creping as thicke as antes aboute the myrobalane trees : And that as they attempted to take these beastes, they slypped owte of their handes as they had byn yeles. Where vpon
Preachers for the deuyll.	they consulted, and determyned by th[e]advice of the elders, that al suche shulde bee sowght foorth amonge them, as were scabbyd and leprous, to th[e]intente that with theyr rowghe and harde handes, they myght th[e]-
A vengeable greate gourd.	efelyer take holde of them. These men, they caule <i>Caracaracoles</i> : And sente them foorth a huntinge to take these beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coulde keepe but only foure : The whiche as they wolde
The originall of the sea.	haue vsed for women, they fownde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore caulginge th[e]elders ageyne to counfayle, to consult what were beste to bee done in this case, theyr advice was that the byrde which wee caule
45	the <i>Pye</i> , shuld bee admitted with his byll to open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these men cauled <i>Caracaracoles</i> , shulde hould fast the womens thighes abroad with theyr rowgh handes. Full wyfely ther-
The originall of Ilandes.	fore was the <i>pye</i> put to this office, and opened the womens priuities, and hereof the women of the Ilande haue theyr original and offspringe. But nowe doo I cease to marueyle that the owlde Grekes dyd fable and wryte so
A holy cane.	many bookes of the people cauled <i>Myrmidones</i> , which they fayned to bee engendred of antes or pissemerres. These and suche lyke, the sagest and wyfest of the people, preache continually to the simple forte, and reherse
Images.	the same as moste holy oracles. But it is yet more chyldeyshe that they fable as touchinge th[e]originall of the sea. For they saye that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate power, whose name was <i>Iaia</i> : whose only
The originall of the soone and moone.	foonne beinge dead, he buried hym within a greate gourde. This <i>Iaia</i> , greuouflye takyng the death of his foonne, after a fewe monthes, came ageyne to the gourde : The which when he had opened, there isshewed
Pylgramage.	foorth many great whales and other monstres of the sea : where vpon he declared to suche as dwelt abowte hym, that the sea was enclosed in that gourde. By which report, foure brethren (borne of one woman
Walkyng sprytes.	who dyed in her traueil) beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many fysshes. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and espied <i>Iaia</i> comming, (who oftentimes reforted to the gourd
Incubi.	to viset the boones of his foonne) fearinge least he shulde suspecte them of theste and sacrileage, fodaynely let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes : which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwith brake owte at the
A remedye ageynst walkyng sprites	ryftes therof, and so fylled the vales, and ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche nowe conteyne the Ilandes which are seene in those coastes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyse men as concernyng th[e]originall of the sea. But nowe (most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt

by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmyng that the spirites of deade men may take vppon them al the members of mans body, fauinge only the nauell. If therefore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceauce that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediatly refolued. They beleue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and especially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the luyunge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee floute and owte of feare, the phantafye vanyffheth incontinentely. But yf anye feare, the phantafy or vyfion doth soo affaute hym and ftryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby afonyffhed and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Th[e]inhabytantes beinge demaunded of whom they had thofe vayne fuperfticions, they answered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by difcent of inheritance: And that they haue had the fame (before the memory of man) compofed in certeine rymes and fonges, which it was lawful for none to lerne but onely the kynges foonnes, who commytted the fame to memorye, bycaufe they hadde neuer any knoweledge of letters. Thefe they fynge beefore the people on certeyne folemne and feftiuall dayes, as moft religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne instrumente made of one hole peece of woodde fummwhat holowe lyke a tymbrill. Their preeftes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) instructe them in thefe fuperfticions. Thefe preeftes, are alfo phifitians, diuifinge a thoufande craftes and fubtylties howe to deceaue the fimple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they perfuade them that the *Zemes* vse to fpeak with theym familiarlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin ficke and are recouered, they make them beleue that they obteyned theyr healthe of the *Zemes*. Thefe *Boitii*, bynde them felues to muche fafinge and owtewarde clenlynes and pourenges: Efppecially when they take vppon them the cure of any Prince. For then they drynke the pouder of a certeyne herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furey: At whiche tyme (as they fay) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttinge fecreatly in theyr mouthes, eyther a ftone, or a bone, or a peece of flefhe, they coome to the ficke perfon, commaunding al to departe owte of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it fhall pleafe the ficke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym three or foure tymes, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lypes, and nofethrils with fundry fylthy giefures: blowyng, breathing, and fuckyng the forheade, temples, and necke of the pacient, wherby (they faye) they drawe the euyll ayer from hym, and fucke the difeafe owt of his veynes. Then rubbinge hym about the fhoulders, thyghes, and legges, and drawyng downe theyr handes clofe by his feete, holdinge them yet fafte togyther, they runne to the dore beinge open, where they vnclofe and fhake theyr handes, affirminge that they haue dryuen away the difeafe, and that the pacient fhall fhortely bee perfectly reflored to health. After this, commyng behynde hym, he conueygheth the peece of flefhe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and fheweth it to the ficke man, fayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you fhall nowe bee hole, bycaufe I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he perfuadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther bycaufe he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honored hym religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it soo chaunce that the ficke perfon dye, his kinnfolkes by wytchecrafte enforce the deade to confeffe whether he dyed by naturall deftenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boitius*, in that he had not fafted as he fhulde haue doone, or not myniftered a conuenient medicine for the difeafe. Soo that yf this phifitian bee founde fautie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the ftones or bones which thefe *Boitii* carye in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiously beleauinge them to bee greatly effectually to helpe women whiche trauayle with chyld: And therefore honoure them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th[e]inhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers fafhions. Some make them of woodde, as they were admonyfhed by certeyne vifions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Others, whiche haue receaued anfwere of them amonge the rockes, make them of fton and marble. Sum they make of rootes to the fimilitude of fuche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breade, as we haue fayde before. Thefe *Zemes*, they beleue to fend plentie and frutefulnes of thofe rootes, as the antiquitie beleued fuche fayries or spirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the fea, wooddes, and fprynges and fountaynes, affigninge to eury thyng, theyr peculier goddes. Euen soo doo th[e]inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to eury thyng, fuppofinge the fame to gyue eare to theyr inuocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynges afke counfaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increafe of fruites or fcarfnes, or health and fickenes, they enter into the houfe dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, fnyffinge vp into theyr nofethrils the pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furey) they fay that immediatly they fee the houfes turne topsy turaye, and men to walke with theyr heeles vpwarde: of fuche force is this pouder vtterly to take away all fenfe. As foone as this maddenes ceafeth, he embrafeth his knees with his armes, holdyng downe his heade. And when he hath remayned thus a whyle afonyffhed, he lyfeth vp his heade as one that came newe owt of fleepe: And thus lokyng vp towarde heauen, Fyrft he fumbleth certeyne confounded woordes with hym felfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common people are admytted to thefe myfteries) with lowde voyces gyue tokens of reioyfyng that he is returned to them from the fpeache of the *Zemes*, demaundyng of hym what he hathe feene. Then hee openinge his

Phantasies
proceedyng of
feare.
Al is not good that
is owlde

Syngyng and
playng

Preeftes and
diuines.
Phifitians.
Ignorance is
noryfhed with
fuperftition.

Fafyng and
outward clenlynes.

A pouder of
maruelous effecte.

Iuggelyng

A ftrange maner
of curing

46

Angery gods
They make the
deade to fpeake.

Diuers Idols of
fundry fhape.

Fayries or spirites
of the gentyles.

Peculier goddes.

They afke
counfaile of Idols

The pouder of the
herbe Cohobba.

Secreate myfteries.

Reuelations.	<p>47</p>	<p>mouthes, doateth that the <i>Zemes</i> spake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce: declaring that he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorye or destruction: famyne or plentie: health or sykenes, or what soo euer happeneth fyrst on his tooenge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of <i>Apollo</i> soo shakynge his Sibylles with extreme furie? Yowe had thought that the superstitious antiquitie hadde peryshed. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus much of the <i>Zemes</i> in generall, I thought it not good to lette passe what is fayde of them in particuler. They faye therefore, that a certeyne kynge cauled <i>Guamarctus</i>, had a <i>Zemes</i> whose name was <i>Corochotum</i>: who (they say) was often tymes woonte to descende from the hygheste place of the house where <i>Guamarctus</i> kepte hym faste bounde. They affirme, that the cause of this his breakynge of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo seeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that sumtymes beinge offended, that the kynge <i>Guamarctus</i> had byn negligent and flacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye hyd for certeyne dayes. They fay also that in the kynges vylage there are sumtyme chyldren borne hauing twoo crownes which they suppose to bee the children of <i>Corochotum</i> the <i>Zemes</i>. They fayne lykewyse, that <i>Guamarctus</i> beinge ouercome of his enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palaice consumed with fyer, <i>Corochotus</i> brake his bandes and was afterwarde founde a furlonge of, faye and withowte hurte. He hath also an other <i>Zemes</i> cauled <i>Epileguanita</i>, made of woodde, in shape lyke a foure footed beaste: who also is fayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As soone as they perceaue him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather togyther to seeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue fownde hym, brynge hym home religiously on theyr shulders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that fence the comynge of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde neuer fence bee founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr country. They honoured an other <i>Zemes</i> in the lyknes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were minifers to her. One of these, executed th[e]office of a mediatour to the other <i>Zemes</i> which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayse wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundemente a messenger to the other <i>Zemes</i> whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleys, that beinge loofed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the country if the people doo not gyue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thyng woorthy to bee noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knowen, and yet freshe in memory amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was sumtyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of <i>Guarionexius</i> of whom we made mention before) which were woont to absteyne fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe sumwhat of theyr <i>Zemes</i> of thynges to coome: And that for this fastynge beinge acceptable to theyr <i>Zemes</i>, they receaued answere of them, that within fewe yeares, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and cyther slei all theyr chyldren, or brynge them into ferutide. The common fort of the people, vnderfloode this oracle to bee mente of the Canibales. And therefore when they had any knowleage of theyr comynge, they euer fledde, and were fully determynd neuer more [to] aduenture the battayle with them. But when they fawe that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, consultinge amonge them felucs of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by th[e]oracle. Wherin, theyr opinion deceaued them not. For they are nowe all subiecte to the Christians, all fuche beinge slayne as stoobernelly resisted. Nor yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr <i>Zemes</i>: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illusions of euyl spirites and Idoles, the which yowe yowre selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felte when I was presente with yowe. I let passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowe take yowre iorney towarde yowre country, to brynge home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowe accompanyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge Frederyke yowre vncle. Wherfore I byd yowe farewell for this tyme, desyrynge yowe to remember yowre <i>Martyr</i>, whome yowe haue compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vncle, to gather these fewe thynges owte of a large feelde of hyfloryes.</p>
The spirite of Apollo. The Sibilles		
I haue harde the lyke of other in Englande.		
Hungery and lecherous gods.		
Children with two crownes		
Wanderinge Images.		
Mediatours.		
A woman zemes of great poure.		
Fyue dayes fastinge.		
A maruelous illusion of the deuyl. The deuyl sumtyme telleth truth.		
The Idols abolysed.		

THE TENTH AND LASTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
as a conclusion of the former bookes:

Wrytten to Inacus Iopez Mendocius, countie of Tendilla, and viceroye of Granata.



THE fyrst begynnyng and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vppon hym th[e] enterpryse to searck the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and requyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte fuche thynges as shoulde happen. For they whyspered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greatly desyrous of the same. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Afcanius* (his brother Lodouike beinge cast owt of Mylayne by the frenchmen) whose autoritie wold not suffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. To hym I wryte the two fyrst bookes of this decade, befyde many other of my hyd commentaries whiche yowe shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse withdrawe my mynde frome wrytynge, then disturbe *Afcanius* from power. As he was toffed with contrary stormes and ceased to persuaide me, euen soo slacked my feruentnes to enquiry any further, vntyl the yeaere of Christe. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowe are viceroye: At which time Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neuie to kynge Frederike by his brothers fyde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopca* the syster of owre catholike kynge) browght me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyshe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epytell bookes, which I wryte to *Afcanius*. For they both acknowledged that they hadde the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall *Afcanius*. And albeit that euen then I was ficke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vppon me, and applyed my selfe to wrytynge. I haue therefore chofen these fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of fuche as seemed to me most woorthy to bee noted amonge the large wrytynge of the autoures and searckers of the fame. Wherefore, forasmuch as yowe haue endeouored to wreste owt of my handes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the fame to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a breefe reherfall of those thynges which were done from that yeaere of a thowfande and fyue hundreth, euen vnto this yeaere which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wryte more largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the Ilande, supposinge therwith to haue accomplished the hole Decade consistynge of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenthe as a perpendiculer lyne, and as it were a backe guyde or rereward to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrst tenthe, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenthe to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wryte ouer the hole woorke, or fende yowe the fame defaced with blottes and interlynyng. But nowe let vs coome to owre purpose. The shippe masters and maryners ranne ouer many coastes duryng these tenne yeaeres: But euer folowed fuche as were fyrste fownde by *Colonus*. For rasinge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, fume of theym chaunced vppon certeyne newe landes towarde the easte, and fume towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe goulde and frankensence. For they browght from thense many iewels and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankensence, whiche they had of the people of those countreys, partely for exchange of fume of owre thynges, and partely by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in fume places, althowgh they bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and slewe hole armyes. For they are excedinge fierce, and vse venemous arrowes, and longe staues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer. They fownde many beastes, both creeping and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of fundrye shapen innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in fundrye Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: Noo not foo much as one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withoute hurte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mans fleffhe. There are also dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places bates of fuch bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doues. These bates, haue often tymes assauted men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo bytten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoste dryuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue byn compelled to flye from such places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them slepte in the nyght seafon on the sandes by the sea fyde, a monster commynge owte of the sea, came vppon one of them fecreatly and caryed hym away by the myddeste owte of the fight of his felowes to whome he cryed in vayne for helpe vntyll the beaste lepte into the sea with her praye.

The Lawe of nature.

Milayne in the hands of the frenchmen

48

Epistel bookes

The historye folowing, conteyneth the actes of ten yeaere

Paria, part of the firme land of East India

Golde and frankensence.

The fiercenes of the naked people. Innumerable beastes vnlyke vnto owres.

Nothing hurtfull in the Ilandes.

Bates as bygge as turtle doues.

A man deuoured of a monster of the sea

The Spanyardes
profer their selues
to subdue the
newe landes.

Note the largenes
of the newe landes.

Commendacion of
the Spaniardes.

49

Antipodes.

The autours
excuse.

Hispaniola.

The nature of the
place, altereth
the formes and
qualities of
thynges.

Wheate.

Herbes.

Catayle.

Hogges.

Plentie of beastes
and foule.

Cuba, is an
Ilande.

The description
of Cuba.

The Iland of
Parichema or
S. Iohannis.
Golde mynes

The order of
woorkyng in the
golde mynes.

The kynges
bryng theyr
subiectes
to woork in
the golde mynes.

Tyllage.

50

They abhorre
laboure
They are docible.

The kynges
chylde.

It was the kynges pleasure that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buylde townes and fortresses. Where vnto they were foo wel wyllyng, that dyuers profered them felues to take vpon them the subduing of the lande, making great sute to the kyng that they might bee appoynted therto. The coaste of this tracte is exceedyng greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of these Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thryfe as bygge as al Europe, befyde those landes that the Portugales haue fownde southwarde, whiche are also exceedyng large. Therefore doubtlesse Spayne hath deferred greate prayse in these owre dayes, in that it hath made knowne vnto us foo many thowfandes of *Antipodes* which leye hyd before and vnknowne to owre forefathers: And hath thereby mynystrd so large matter to wryte of, to siche lerned wyttes as are desyrous to sette furthe knowlege to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I gathered these thynges rudely to gyther as yowe see: The which, neuerthelesse I trust yowe wyll take in good parte, aswell for that I can not adourne my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke penne in hande to wryte lyke an historiographer, but only by epistels scribeld in haste, to satisfie theym, from whose commaundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefore returne to *Hispaniola*. Owre men haue founde by experience, that the breade of the Iland is of smaule strenght to siche as haue byn vsed to owre breade made of wheate: And that theyr stren[g]thes were much decayed by vsyng of the same. Wherefore the king hath of late commaunded that wheate shulde bee sowne there in diuers places and at fundry tymes of the yeare. It groweth into holowe reedes, with fewe cares, but those verye bygge and frutefull. They fynde the lyke softenes or delicatenes to bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattall, becoome of bygger stature and exceedyng fat, but theyr fleshe is more vnfaury, and theyr bones (as they say) eyther withowte marye, or the same to bee verye waterysfe. But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarye, that they are more holfoome and of better taste, by reason of certeyne wyld frutes whiche they eate, beinge of muche better nooryshment then mast. There is almost none other kynd of fleshe commonly fownde in the market. The multitude of hogges, are exceedingly encreased, and becoome wyld as soone as they are owte of the swynehardes keepyng. They haue siche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall hereafter haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Th[e]increase of all beastes, growe bygger then the broode they came of, by reason of the rankenes of the pasture, althowgh theyr feadyng bee only of grasse, withowte eyther barley or other grayne. But wee haue fayde enowgh of *Hispaniola*. They haue nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thought to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Ilande. Yet is it noo maruell that th[e]inhabitanes them felues towlde owre men when they searched the length therof, that it was withowte ende. For this nacion being naked and contente with a lyttle, and with the limittes of theyr owne contrey, is not greatly curyous to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr dominion. Nor yet knewe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, befyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. *Cuba*, is frome the Easte into the Weste, muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, muche lesse then theyr supposed at the fyrst: for it is verie narrowe in respecte to the length: And is for the mooste parte, very frutefull and pleasaunt, Eastwarde not farre from *Hispaniola*, there lyethe an Ilande, lesse then *Hispaniola* more then by the halfe, which owre men cauled *Sancti Iohannis*, beinge in maner square. In this they founde exceedynge ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of *Hispaniola*, they haue not yet sent labourers into that Iland. But the plentie and reuenewe of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to *Hispaniola*, where they gyue them felues in maner to none other thyng then to gather golde, of which woork this order is appoynted. To euery siche wyttie and skylfull man as is put in truste to bee a furuoier or ouerfeer of these woorkes, there is assigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr subiectes. These kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the yeare, and reforte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is assigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or mynyng tooles deliuered them: And euery kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde allowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to fowyng of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaste theyr foode shulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a ierken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleasure in these thynges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they vse the helpe and laboure of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as though they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of feruitude with an euyl wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kyng doth not suffer that they shulde bee vsed as bondemen: And onely at his pleasure they are sette at libertie or appoynted to woork. At siche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woork (as fouldiers or pioners are assembled of theyr centurians) many of them flele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkyng, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wyld frutes, rather then to take the paynes to laboure. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowe vtterly forgotten theyr owlde supersticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memory siche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Theyr kynges children are brought vp with the chiefe of owre

men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they fende them home to theyr countreys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better fet foorth the Christian Religion, and keepe theyr subiectes in loue and obedience. By reafon whereof, they coome nowe by fayre meanes and gentell perfuasions to the mynes which lye in two Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles distante frome the cite of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *Sancti Christophori*: And the other being distante aboute foure score and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are fownd fumtyme euen in the vpper crust of the earth and fumtyme amonge the stoncs, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, fumtyme of smaule quantitie, and in sum places of great weyght: In so muche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of three hundreth pounde weyght, and one of three thousande, three hundreth and tenne pounde weyght: The whiche (as yowe harde) was fente hole to the kyng in that shypp in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shypp with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reafon it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thowefande persons whiche fawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounde, I doo not meane the common pounde, but the fumme of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parte of a pounde, whiche they caule *Pefus*. The fum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*. Al the golde that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Porte Regale*, is caryed to the towre of Conception, where shoppes with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnysshed to fyne it, melte it, and caste it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and soo restore to euery man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour. But the golde whiche is fownde in faynt Christophers myne and the Region there aboute, is caryed to the shoppes whiche are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these two shoppes, is molten yerely, aboue three hundreth thousand pounde weight of golde. If any man bee knowen deccatefully to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kynges officers pryue, he forsiteth the fame for a fyne. There chaunce amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuerfies, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the Ilande doo fynyshe, the case is remoued by appellation to the hyghe counfayle of the courte, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appele in all the dominions of Castyle. But lette vs nowe returne to the newe landes frome whenfe we haue digreffed. They are innumerable, dyuers, and exceedyng fortunate. Wherefore the Spanyardes in these owre dayes, and theyr noble enterpryses, doo not gyue place eyther to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memorie which were canonized amonge the goddes cauled *Heroes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, and bringinge the fame to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God: howe large and farre shal owre posteritie see the Christian Religion extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in, whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by vertue, wyll attempte eyther to deferue lyke prayfe amonge men, or reputacion of well doinge before god. What I conceaue in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tonge. I wyll nowe therefore soo make an ende of this perpendicular conclusion of the hole Decade, as myndinge hereafter to searche and gather euery thyng particularlye, that I maye at further leasure wryte the fame more at large. For *Colonus* the Admiral with foure shyppes, and a hundreth threescore and tenne men appoynted by the kyng, discouered in the yeare of Christe. 1502. the lande ouer ageynste the weste corner of *Cuba*, distante from the fame aboute a hundreth and thirtie leaques: In the mydde of which tracte, lyeth an Ilande cauled *Guanassa*. From henfe he directed his vyage backwarde towarde the Easte by the shore of that coast, supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*: but it chaunced otherwyfe. It is fayd also that *Vincentius Agnes* (of whom we haue spoken before) and one *Iohannes Diaz* (with dyuers other of whose vyages I haue as yet no certeyne knowlege) haue ouer runne those coastes. But if God graunt me life, I trust to know the truthe hereof and to aduertise yowe of the fame. Thus fare ye well.

The two chiefe golde mynes of hispaniola

Golde founde in the vpper part of the earth.

A piece of golde weighinge three thousande three hundreth and ten pounds.

A coastly ship wrake.

Pesus.

The fynnyng and distribution of golde.

Three hundreth thousand weyght of gold molten yerely in hispaniola.

Controuerfes

The newe landes.

The Spanyardes noble enterpryses are not inferior to the actes of Hercules or Saturnus. etc.

Enlarging of the Christian Religion. The originall of trewe nobilitie.

51

The Ilande of Guanassa

The vyage of Iohannes Diaz



¶ The seconde Decade foloweth.

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
TO LEO BYSSHOP OF ROME, THE TENTHE OF THAT NAME,
Of the fupposed Continent or firme lande.



West Antipodes.

The increase of
the Christian
congregation.

*Christophorus
Colonus.*
Of landes distant
from the
Equinoctiall from
fyue degrees to
ten.
The death of
Colonus.
A generall lycence.

The nauigation of
Alphonfus Fogeda.

52

*Portus
Carthaginis.*

The Region of
Caramairi.
People of goodly
stature

Apples whiche
turne into
wormes

SENSE the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of Bononie, and *Iohannes Curfius* of Florence (moste holye father) came to the catholyke kyng of Spayne, the one, of yowre holynes ambafage, and th[e]other for th[e]affaires of his common welth, I was euer for the moste parte in theyr coompanie, and for theyr vertues and wyfedoome, had theym in greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to studeye, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers autours, they chaunced vppon certeyne bookes negligently let slyppe owte of my handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions hetherto lyinge hyd, and almost west *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the Spanyardes. Yet beinge allured and delited with the newenes and strangenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned, they commended the fame: Therwith earnestly desyryng me in theyr owne names, and requyryng me in the name of yowr holynes, to adde here vnto all fuche thynges as were fownde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to sende to yowre holynes, that yowe myght therby vnderstande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced to the progenye of mankynde, as also increafe of the militante congregation in these owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as rafed or vnpaynted tables, are apte to receaue what formes soo euer are fyrst drawn thereon by the hande of the paynter, euen soo these naked and simple people, doo soone receaue the customes of owre Religion, and by conuerfation with owre men, shake of theyr fierce and natie barbaroufnes. I haue thought it good therefore to satisfie the request of these wyse men, especially vfyng th[e]authoritie of yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shulde esteeme my selfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherse in order, what hyd coastes the Spanyardes ouerranne, who were the autours thereof, where they rested, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what great thynges those tractes of landes doo promesse in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe printed and disperfed throwhowte Christendome vnwares to me, I deseribed howe *Christophorus Colonus* fownde those Ilandes wherof we haue spoken, and that turnyng from thense towarde the lefte hande southwarde, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large feas, diftant from the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he fownde brode ryuers and exceedinge hygh mountaynes couered with snowe and harde by the sea bankes, where were many commodious and quyet hauens. But *Colonus* being now departed owte of this lyfe, the kyng beganne to take care, howe those landes myght be inhabited with Christian men to th[e]increafe of owre fayth: Where vppon he gaue licence by his letters patentes to al fuch as wolde take the matter in hand, and especially to twoo, wherof *Diego Nicuesa* was one, and the other was *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Wherefore about the Ides of December, *Alphonfus* departinge fyrst with three hundreth fouldiers from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* (in the which wee fayde the Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitacion) and faylyng in maner full southe, he came to one of the hauens fownde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycaufe of the Ilande standyng ageynste the course of the streame, and also that by reason of the largenes of the place and bendyng fydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. Th[e]inhabitanes caule the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombria*. This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*: In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rownde by theyr eares, but the women were it longe. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Owre men fownde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of sweete apples, but hurteful, for they turne into wormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree, is contagious,

for fuche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes fwolne and lose theyr fight. But if they fleepe but a whyle, theyr fyght commeth ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dyflant foure hundreth fyftie and fyxe myles from that parte of *Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also they furnyssheth them felues when they prepare anye vyage to seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he inuaded, flewe, and spoyled the people, whome he founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycaufe they hadde bin before tyme cruel ageynst the Chriflians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pure. They make of it, certeyne brest plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyles, vsinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a vyllage twelue myles distante frome the sea fyde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrst inuaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, shieldes, longe swordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyer. As soone as they had espyed owre men, they with their gestes whom they had receaued, assayled them with desperate myndes, beinge therto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto theym, by the violence doone to theyr women and chyldren, in the spoyle and slawghter. In this conflicte owre men had the ouerthrowe: In the which, one *Iohannes de Lacoffa* (beinge in autoritie nexte vnto *Fogeda* the capitayne, and also the fyrste that gathered golde in the sandes of *Vraba*) was slayne with fyftie fouldiers. For these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* beinge difcomfited, fledde to the shyppes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago* forowfull and penyue for the losse of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*, (whom they leste in *Hispaniola*, prepanyng hym selfe towarde the vyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to them with fyue shippes and feuen hundreth foure score and fyfteene menne. For the greater number of fouldyers, folowed *Nicuesa*, both bycaufe free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of the capytaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age, he was of greater autoritie: But especially bycaufe the rumoure was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission appoynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assigned to *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Therefore, at the arryual of *Nicuesa*, they consulted what was beste to bee doone: And determyned fyrste to reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settinge their battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde them whiche flewe *Coffa* with his coompanyons. Thus stealyng on them vnwares in the last wathe of the nyght, and encompasinge the vyllage where they laye, consistyng of a hundreth howses and more, hauyng also in it thryse as many of theyr neyghbours as of them felues, they fet it on fyer, with diligent wathe that none myght escape. And thus in shorte tyme they brought them and theyr howses to ashes, and made them pay the raunfome of bludde with bludde. For of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onely fyxe chyldren, al other being destroyed with fyer or sword except fewe which escaped priuilye. They lerned by the referued chyldren, that *Coffa* and his felowes were cutte in pieces and eaten of them that flewe them. By reason wherof, they supposeth that these people of *Caramairi* tooke their originall of the *Caribes* otherwyse cauled *Canibales*. Here they founde fume golde amonge the ashes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo lesse encorage owr men to aduenture these perels and labours then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thynges thus synffhed, and the death of *Coffa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrst, fyrst lykewyse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*, commytted to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*. In to the which descendinge, he fownde it to bee an Ilande of the Canibales, brynginge with hym frome thense two men and feuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he fownde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundreth foure score and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dyuers formes. Saylyng forwarde from henre, he came to the East coastes of *Vraba*, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Caribana*, from whenre the Caribes or Canibales of the Ilandes are sayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to buylde a fortesse, and a vyllage nere vnto the same, therein intendinge to place theyr fyrst habitacion. Shortly after, beinge instructed by certeyne captiues that there was aboute twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne vyllage cauled *Tirufi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to destroye the vylage. To the which when he came, he fownde th[e] inhabitants redye to defende theyr ryght: And that soo floutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulsd with shame and domage. For these people also, vse bowes and venomous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enforced for lacke of vytayles to inuade an other vyllage, he hym selfe was stryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Some of his felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of th[e] inhabitants whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They say also that he had first frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for redemyng of his wyfe, and had appoynted a day to bryng a portion of golde for her raunfome: And that he came at the daye assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confetherate with hym, whiche had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to them first at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the vyllage. In

A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

Fogeda his autoritie confirmed by the kynges letters patentes.

Warlyke people.

The Spanyardes haue the ouerthrowe.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of Diego Nicuesa.

The regi-ns of Vraba and Beragua.

The Spanyardes reuenge the death of their companyons.

A greate slawghter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.
53

The Ilande Fortis

Wrought gold

Caribana.

A gold myne.
The Spanyardes are repulsd.

Fogeda is wounded.

Ransome.

reunge wherof they had desperatly consecrated them selues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his coompanyons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* also through the malicioufnes of the veneme, consumed and was dryed vp by lyttle and lyttle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they espyed *Nicuesa* the other capitayne to whom *Beragua* the region of the weste fyde of *Vraba*, was assigned to inhabite. He gaue wynde to his fayles to take his vyage towarde *Beragua*, the day after that *Fogeda* departed owte of the hauen of *Carthago*. He with his army which he brought with hym, coasted euer alonge by the shore vntyll he came to the goulfe *Coiba*, whose kynges name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to bee in maner nothyng lyke vnto that of *Hispaniola* or of the hauen of *Carthago*: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are many languages differinge from theyr owne botherers. *Nicuesa* departinge frome *Coiba*, wente to the prouince or Lieuetenantsshippe of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes after he hym selfe enteringe into one of those marchaunt shippes whiche the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, commaunded that the bygger vessels, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke with hym two smaule shippes commenly cauled bergantines or brygantynes. I haue thought it good in all the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of thinges, bicause I had rather bee playne then curious: especially sofarasmuche as there doo dayly aryse manye newe thynges vnknewen to the antiquitie, wherof they haue leste noo trewe names. After the departure of *Nicuesa*, there came a shyppe from *Hispaniola* to *Fogeda*, the capitayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Calauera*, who had floune the fame from *Hispaniola* with three score men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this shippe brought they refreshed theym selues and sumewhat recovered theyr strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, *Fogeda* his companyons whyspered and muttered ageynste hym daylye more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope. For he had towlde them that he left *Ancifus* in *Hispaniola* (whom he chose by the kynges commission to bee a Iudge in causes, bycause he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him with a shippe laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled that he was not coome many dayes fense. And herein he faid nothinge but trewth. For when he departed, he leste *Ancifus* halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposinge that all that he fayde of *Ancifus* had byn fayned, sume of them determyned priuilie to fleale away the two brigantynes frome *Fogeda*, and to returne to *Hispaniola*. But *Fogeda* hauing knowleage hereof, preuented theyr diuise. For leauynge the custodie of the fortresse with a certeyne noble gentelman cauled *Francisco Pizarro*, he hym selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the shyppe wherof we spake before, and sayled directly to *Hispaniola*, both to heale the wound of his thygh if any remedy myght bee found, and also to knowe what was the cause of *Ancifus* taryinge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe brought from three hundreth to three score, partly by fame and partly by warre) that he wolde returne within the space of. xv. dayes: preferibynge also a condition to *Pizarro* and his companions, that it shulde not bee imputed to them for treason to departe from thense if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with vytayles and a newe supply of men. These. xv. dayes beinge nowe paste, whereas they coulde yet heare nothyng of *Fogeda*, and were dayly more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entered into the two brigantynes which were leste, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe faylynge on the mayne sea towarde *Hispaniola*, a tempeste foodeynly arylynge, swalowed one of the brygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely sawe a fysh of houghe greatenes swymmyng abowte the brygantyne (for those seas brynge furthe greate monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, she broke the rudder of the shyppe in peeces: which faylynge, the brigantine beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempest, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge betwene the coastes of the hauen *Carthago* and *Vraba*. As they of the other brygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceedynge therefore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with *Ancifus* betweene the hauen of *Carthago*, and the Region of *Cuchibacoa* in the mouthe of the ryuer whiche the Spanyardes caule *Boium gatti*, that is, the house of the catte, bycause they sawe a catte first in that place: and *Boium*, in the toonge of *Hispaniola*, is a house. *Ancifus* came wyth a shyppe laden with all thynges necessarye, bothe for meate and drynke, and apparell, bryngynge also with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whose comming the capitayne *Fogeda* looked for soo longe. He loofed anker from *Hispaniola* in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes caule *Serra Neuata*, when *Colonus* the fyrst synder of those Regions passed by the same. The fyfte daye, he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche were in the brygantyne, towlde *Ancifus* that *Fogeda* was returned to *Hispaniola*. But *Ancifus* supposinge that they had fayned that tale, commaunded them by th[e]authoritie of his commission to turne backe ageyne. The brigantiners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble sute vnto hym that he wolde graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo ageyne to *Hispaniola*, or that he hym selfe wolde brynge theim to *Nicuesa*: And that they wolde for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with two thousande drammes of golde. For they were

Fogeda consumeth
by force of the
[veneme.]

Beragua and
Vraba.
Nicuesa.

The goulfe Coiba.
Dyuers languages.

Bergantynes or
brigantynes.

Barnardino de
Calauera.

Ancifus.

54

Fogeda returneth
to hispaniola.

Faynyne

A brigantine
drowned with the
stroke of a fysh.

The Ilande Fortis.

Ancifus.
The Region of
Cuchibacoa.
Boium gatti.

Mountaynes
couered with
snowe.
Serra Neuata.
Os Draconis.

ryche in golde, but poore in breade. But *Ancifus* assented to neyther of theyr requestes: affirmynge that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to *Fogeda*. Where vppon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his vyage directly toward *Vraba*. But nowe let it not seme tedious to yowre holynes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced to this Licuetenaunt *Ancifus* as he came thether. For he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramairi* whiche wee sayde to bee famous by reason of the hauen of *Carthago*: and of the goodly stature, strength, and beawty of both men and women beinge in the same. Here he sent certeyne to goo alande on the shore, both to fetche fresshe water, and also to repaire the shippe boate which was fore broofed. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the cuntry armed after theyr maner, came aboute owre men as they were occupied abowte theyr busynes, and floode in a redynes to feight, for the space of three dayes continually: duryng whiche tyme, neyther durst they set vppon owre men, nor owre men assayle them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, floode fyll three hole dayes the one gasyng on the other. Yet all this tyme owre men applyed theyr woorke, placinge the shippwrightes in the myddeste of theyr armye. As they floode thus amafed, twoo of owre coompanye wente to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where foodenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which inclosed them, and with terrible countenance bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but shotte theym not of. One of owre men fledde: but the other remayned, caulynge his felowe ageyne and rebukynge hym for his fearefulnes. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuerfant with the captiues that were caryed from thense longe before. They marueylynge to here a straunger speake in their natie tonge, put of theyr fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, demaunding who were the capitaynes of that coompanye whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were strangers passyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold attempte to dryue them from theyr coastes and disturbe theyr shippes: arguinge them of follye and crueltie, and further threatinge their ruine and destruction, except they woold vse them selues more frendely towarde them. For hee aduertised them that there wolde shortly come into theyr lande armed men, in nomber lyke to the sandes of the sea: And that to theyr viter destruction, not only if they refysted them not, but also excepte they receaued them and enterteined them honorably. In the meane tyme *Ancifus* was enformed that his men were deteyned. Wherefore suspectinge sume deceate, he brought furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: And fettinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which fleyed his men. But he which communed with the barbarians, gyinge him a signe with his hande to procede noo further, he fleyed. And caulng to hym the other, he knewe that all was safe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycause they were not they whom they suspected them to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicufsa*, who had spoyled the vyllage standinge there by the sea fyde, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt an other vyllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of theyr comminge thether, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by any meanes they coulde. Yet that they woold not exercyse theyr weapons ageynste the innocente. For they sayde it was vngodly to feyght ageynst any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they enterteined owre men gently, and gaue them great plentie of salted fyssh and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr vessels with syder made of theyr contrey frutes and feedes, not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancifus* hauinge entered into frendshyp and made a league of peace with th[e] inhabitants of *Caramairi* whiche were before fore prouoked by other capitaynes, he lanced from that lande, and directed his course to *Vraba* by the Ilande *Fortis*, hauinge in his shippe a hundreth and fyftie fresshe men whiche were substitute in the place of fuche as were deade. Also twelue mares, and manye swine, and other beastes both males and females for increafe. Lykewyse, fyftie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multytude of targettes, swordes, iaelyns, and fuche other weapons for the warres. But all this with euyl speede and in an euyll houre. For as they were euen nowe enteringe into the hauen, the gouernour of the shippe which fatte at the helme, stroke the shippe vppon the sandes, where it was soo fast enclosed, and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the myddeste, and al lost that was therein. A thyng surely miserable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had, they faued onely twelue barels of meale, with a fewe chiefes, and a lyttle bysket breade. For al the beastes were drowned: And they them selues scaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe of the brigantine and ship boate, caryeng with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, beinge nowe more carefull fo rtheyr lyues then for golde. Yet beinge brought alyue and in health to that land which they soo greatly desyred, they coulde doo noo lesse then to prouide for the susteynyng of theyr bodyes, bycause they coulde not lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne fayled, they must needes lyue by other mens. Yet amonge these soo many aduerfities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them. For they founde, not farre from the sea fyde, a groue of date trees, amonge the which, and also amonge the reke or weedes of the maryshes, they espyed a multitude of wylde bores, with whose fleshe they fed them selues wel certeine dayes. These they say to bee lesse then owres: And with soo shorte tayles, that they thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer also from owres in theyr feete: for theyr hynder feete are hole vndiuided, and also withowte any

Riche in gold and pore in breade.

The Region of Caramairi

Feare on both partes.

Ship wryghtes.

55

The vse of targettes agest venemous arrowes.

The barbarians haue respect to iustice

Salted fishe.

Wyne of frutes and seedes.

Vraba.

Artilerie.

Ancisus ship wracke.

Meale, cheeses, and bysket.

A groue of date trees.

Wylde bores.

56	<p>houfe. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience theyr flefthe to bee of better taste and more holfoome then owres. Durynge this tyme, they fedde alfo of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate likewyfe in Ciuile and <i>Granata</i> where they caule them <i>Palmitos</i>, of the leaues wherof they make biefomes in Rome. Sumetymes alfo, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the taste of prunes, and haue alfo stoncs in them, and are but lyttle and of redde coloure. I fuppose them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the citie of <i>Alexandria</i> in Egypt in the moneth of Aprell: The trees wherof, the Iewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyfes, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare owlde fruites and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne sweetnes myxte with a gentell sharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled <i>Sorbes</i>. Th[e]inhabitanes plant these trees in their orchyardes and garedens, and nooryshe them with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quynfes. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunkes, is verye lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frute cauled <i>Zizipha</i>, which the Apothecaries caule <i>Iuiuba</i>. But wheras now the wylde bores beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to confulte and prouyde for the tyme to coome. Where vppon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are moſte experte archers. <i>Ancifus</i> had in his company, a hundreth men. They mette by the way with only three men of th[e]inhabitanes, naked, and armed with bowes and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, assayled ovr men fiercely, wounded manye, and flewe manye: And when they had emptied theyr quyers, fledde as swyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are excedyng swyfte of foote by reafon of theyr loofe goinge frome theyr chyldes age. They affirme that they lette flyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in wayne. Owre men therefore returned the same waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and confulted amonge them felues to leaue that lande: especyally becaufe th[e]inhabitanes had ouerthrowne the fortresse which <i>Fogeda</i> buylded, and had burnte thirtie houfes of the vyllage, as soone as <i>Pizarrus</i> and his company leste of <i>Fogeda</i>, had forsaken the lande. By this occaſion therefore, beinge dryuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the weste fyde of that goulfe of <i>Vraba</i>, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigantine, and leste the other nere to the sea fyde on the easte part. This goulfe, is. xxiiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is soo muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of <i>Vraba</i>, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they say) more fortunate then the ryuer of <i>Nilus</i> in Egypte. This ryuer is cauled <i>Darien</i>, vppon the bankes whereof, beinge verye frutefull of trees and grasse, they entended to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But th[e]inhabitanes maruelyng at the brygantyne beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and specially at the fayles therof, fyrst sente away theyr chyldren and weakest forte of theyr people with theyr baggage and houfholde stufte, and assembled all suche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they stooode in a redynes to feight, and taryed the comminge of owre men vppon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take th[e]aduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundreth in number. Then <i>Ancifus</i> the capitayne of owre men, and Lieuetenant in the steede of <i>Fogeda</i>, settinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole company kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a vowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuile, by the name of <i>Santa Maria Antiqua</i>, promynginge to sende her manye golden gyftes and a straunger of that contrey: alfo to name the vyllage <i>Santa Maria Antiqua</i> after her name: lykewyfe to erecte a temple cauled by the same name: or at the leaste to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vse, if it shulde please her to assiste them in this daungerous enterpryse. This doone, al the souldiers tooke an othe, that noo man shulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redynes with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumpeter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assayled theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flyght, with theyr kynge and capitayne <i>Cemaccus</i>. Owre men entered into the vyllage, where they fownde plentie of meate suche as the people of the contrey vse, sufficiente to assuage theyr present hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeyne fruites vnlyke vnto owres, whiche they referue for store as wee doo chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked: but the women from the nauell downewarde, are couered with a fyne clothe made of goffampine cotton. This Region is vtterly withowte any sharpenes of wynter. For the mouthe of this ryuer of <i>Darien</i>, is only eyght degrees distante from the <i>Equinoctiall</i> lyne: So that the commone forte of owre men, scarsely perceaue anye difference in lengthe betwene the day and nyght all the hole yeare. But bycaufe they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceaue noo smaule difference. Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree do differ sum what from theyr opinion, for asmuiche as the difference can not bee greate. The day after that they arryued at the lande, they sayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate thicket of reedes continuinge for the space of a myle in length supposing (as it chaunced in dedde) that the bortherers there aboute which had fledde, had cyther lyne lurkyng there, or els to haue hyd theyr stufte amonge those reedes: Where vppon, armynginge them felues with theyr targettes, for feare of the people lyinge in ambuffhe. they searched the thicket dilygently,</p>
Apples of a strange kynd	
Ceders of Libane.	
Sorbes are cauled in french Cornier they grow not in Englande. The frute cauled zizipha or Iuiuba	
Canibales. Men of desperat boldnes.	
The goulfe of Vraba.	
The great ryuer of Darien, fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.	
Prayer and voves.	
The souldiers make an othe.	
The barbarians are dryuen to flight.	
57	
Chestnuttes.	
The ryuer of Darien, but viii. degrees from the Equinoctial.	
Golde founde in a thicket of reedes.	

and founde it withowte men, but replenyfhed with householde stufte and golde. They fownde also a great multitude of sheetes, made of the fylke or cotton of the goffampine tree. Lykewyfe dyuers kyndes of vessels and tooles made of woodde, and many of earth: Also many breste plates of gold and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the fum of a hundreth and two pounce weight. For they also take pleafure in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They haue it owte of other Regions for exchange of fuch thynges as theyr contrey bringeth furthe. For fuche Regions as haue plentie of breade and goffampine, lacke golde: And fuche as brynge furth golde, are for the most parte rowght with montaynes and rockes, and therefore baren. And thus they exercife marchandies withowte the vse of money. Reioyng therefore with double gladdenes, aswell in that they fawe greate lykenes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them soo fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whom they hadde lefte before in the easte fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. Yet fume faye that the ayer is there vnholfome, bycaufe that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and maryffhes.

Sheetes of
gossampine.

Breste plates of
golde.

The golden
Regions, are for
the moste parte
baren.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
Of the supposed continete.



Haue described to yowre holynes where *Fogeda* with his company (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nowe therefore leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returne ageyne to *Nicuesa* to whom the gouernance and Lieuetenauteshippe of the moste large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weste fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa* departinge with one carauell and two brigantines frome *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his course westwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger shippes fume what behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke this diuise in an euyl howe. For he bothe losse his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chiefly fowght. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernoure of one of the greate shippes, had the conducte of one of the brigantines. He comynge behynde, lerned of th[e] inhabitants which was the way Eastwarde to the goulfe of *Beragua* ouer passed and lefte behynde of *Nicuesa*. *Olanus* therefore directinge his course towarde the Easte, mette with the other brigantine which had also wandered owte of the way by reason of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they consulted what was best to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his vyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* could no more lacke fum to put him in remembraunce of *Beragua*, then they them selues were myndful therof, hopynge also to fynde hym there. They fayled therefore towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within. xvi. myles dystant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, bycaufe it noorythethe greate lyfardes whiche in the Spanyffhe toonge are cauled *Lagartos*. These lyfertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaste, and in shape muche lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companyons and felowes of theyr erreure lyinge at anker with the greate shippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assembl[i]e beinge carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours erreure, after consultacion, by th[e] aduise of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had rafed nere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they fayled directly thether. *Beragua*, in the language of th[e] inhabitants of the same prouince, is as much to faye, as the golden ryuer. The region it selfe is also cauled by the same name, takyng name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed al theyr vytailes and other necessaries to lande with theyr shippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the steede of *Nicuesa* whom they had losse. By th[e] aduise therefore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the fouldiers which they had nowe brought thether, and to make them the more wyllinge to inhabite that land, they vtterly forfooke and caste of those shyppes beinge nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and broofed of the furies of the sea. Yet of theyr foundeste planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they fay to be excedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel shortly after, whiche they myght vse to ferue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate destenie of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwardenes to attempte thynges (in whiche fumetyme fortune wyll beare a stroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym th[e] aduenture to searche the shore to th[e] intent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beste coome alande. For this purpose, he chose

Fogeda, the
Lieutenaut of
Vraba.

Nicuesa the
Lieutenaut of
Beragua.

Nicuesa losse his
felowes in the
nyght.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vmbria

The capitaynes
consulte where to
find theyr lost
gouernour.

The ryuer
Lagartos.

58

The golden ryuer
of *Beragua*.

The enterprise
and death of
Petrus de Vmbria.

The daungerous
place of Scylla in
the sea of Sicilia

Swymminge

The fyssher boate
of Nicuesa his
carauele.

The miserable
case of Nicuesa.

59

The Region of
Gratia Dei or
Cerabaro.
The ryuer of
Sancti Matthei.

The rigorousnes
of Nicuesa.

Corne waxeth
rype euery fourth
month

The commendation
of a younge man
brought vp with
Colonus.

Portus Bellus.
Weakenes of
hunger.

Caf, Marmor.

hym twelue maryners, and wente aboorde the shippe boate whiche ferued the greateste shyppes. The flowinge of the fea, raged and rored there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the daungerous place of *Scylla* in the fea of Sicilia, by reafon of the houghe and ragged rockes reachyng into the fea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noyfe and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or reflowinge, the Spanyardes caule *Refacca*. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wrefteled a while. But in shorte space, a waue of the fea almoſte as bygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate and deuoured the fame with the men, euen in the fight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one eſcaped by reafon he was experte in ſwymmyng. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and fuſteynyng the rage of the fea vntyll the nexte daye when it waxed caulme, and the ſhore was drye by the faule of the water, he eſcaped and reforted to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caſte away. The reſydue of the coompany, durſt not commite them felues to the ſhippe boates, but went alande with theyr brigantines. Where remaynyng a fewe dayes, and faylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e] inhabitants, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortrefſe, and to fowe feedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grownde, bicauſe in other places the region is baren. As theſe thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragua*, one of their coompanye ſtandyng vppon the toppe of a hyghe rocke of eſpeciall, and lyftyng his eyes towarde the Weſte, beganne to crye, *Lynnyn fayles, lynnyn fayles*. And the nerer it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a ſhypp boate comminge with a lyttle fayle. Yet receaued they it with muche reioyng: for it was the fyſſher boate of *Nicueſa* his carauele, and of capacitie to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, which had ſtolne it from *Nicueſa* bycauſe he refuſed to gyue credit to them that he had paſſed *Beragua*, and leſte it behynde hym Eaſtwarde. For they feinge *Nicueſa* and his felowes to confume dayely by famynne, thowght they wolde proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was. Debatinge therefore with theyr felowes, of theſe matters, they declared howe *Nicueſa* erred and loſte the carauele by tempeſt, and that he was nowe wanderyng amonge the maryſſhes of vnknowne coaſtes, full of myferie and in extreeme penurie of all thynges, hauinge nowe lyued for the ſpace of three ſcore and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and fyldoome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes faylyng, bycauſe he was inflant to trauaile weſtwarde by foote, ſuppoſing by that meanes to come to *Beragua*. *Colonus* the fyrſt fynder of this mayne lande, had coaſted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitants caule it *Cerabaro*. Throwghe this Region, there runneth a ryuer which owre men named *Sancti Matthei*, diſtante from the weſte ſyde of *Beragua* aboute a hundrethe and thirtie myles. Here I lette paſſe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which th[e] inhabitants vſe, bycauſe owre men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductor of one of the ſhippes of *Nicueſa*, and nowe alſo vice Leauetenaunt in his ſleede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, fente thether a brigantine vnder theyr gudyng, theſe maryners therefore, which came in the fyſſher boate, founde *Nicueſa*, and browght hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his comyng he caſte in pryſon, and accuſed hym of treaſon bycauſe he vſurped th[e] autoritie of the Lieuetauntſhippe, and that for the deſyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errors: alſo that he behaued hym ſelſe negligently: demaunding further more of hym, what was the cauſe of his foo longe delay. Lykewyſe he ſpake to al the vnder officers ſharplye and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to truſſe vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They deſyred hym to quyēt hym ſelſe, and to forbear them a while vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had fowne, which wolde ſhortly bee rype. For all kynd of corne waxeth rype there euery fourth moonethe after it is fowne. But he vtterlye denyed to tarye any whytte: but that he wolde foorthwith departe from that vnfortunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was browght into the goulfe of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to directe theyr courſe towarde the Eaſte. After they had fayled aboute the ſpace of. xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whoſe name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a chyld browght vp with *Colonus*, cauled to remembrance that there was a hauen not farre frome thenſe: And to proue his fayng trewe, he gauē his felowes theſe tokens: that is, that they ſhulde fynde vppon the ſhore, an anker of a loſte ſhypp halfe couered with ſande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the hauen, a ſpryng of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the ſpryng, and commended the wytte and memorye of the younge man, that he only amonge many of the maryne[r]s whiche had ſearched thoſe coaſtes with *Colonus*, bore the thyng foo well in mynde. This hauen, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*. Whereas in thiſ vyage for lacke of vytayles they were ſometymes enforced to goo alande, they were euē entreated of the inhabitants. By reafon wherof, theyr ſtrengthes were foo weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre ageynſt naked men, or ſcarfely to beare theyr harnes on their backs. And therefore owre men loſte twentie of theyr coompany, which were ſlayne with venemous arrowes. They conſulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicueſa* tooke with hym towarde the Eaſte: where abowte twentie and eyght myles from *Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortrefſe harde by the fea ſyde vppon the poynte or cape which in tyme paſte *Colonus* named *Marmor*.

But they were soo feeble by reafon of longe hunger, that theyr strength ferued them not to fufleyne fuche labour. Yet he erected a lyttle towre able to refyft the fyrft affaute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*. From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iorney amonge the fandie playnes, then alfo for hunger whyle he buylded the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he lofte twoo hundreth. And thus by lyttle and lyttle, the multitude of feuen hundreth foure fcore and fyue men, was nowe browght to fcarfely one hundreth. Whyle *Nicuefa* lyued with thefe fewe miferable men, there arofe a contention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concerninge the Lieuetenantfhippe. For one *Vafchus Nunnez*, by the iudgemente of all men, truftyng more to his ftrenge then wytte, floured vp certeyne lyght felowes ageynft *Ancifus*, fayinge that *Ancifus* had not the kynges letters patentes for that office: And that it was not fufficient that he was autorifed by *Fogeda*, And therefore forbodde that he fhulde execute the office of the Lieuetenauntefhippe: And wylled theym to chufe certeyne of theyr owne coompanye, by whofe counfayle and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.

Thus beinge diuided into factions by reafon that *Fogeda*, their capitayne came not ageyne, whom they fupposed to bee nowe deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it were beft to fubftitute *Nicuefa* in his place. The wyfeste forte fuche as were famylier with *Nicuefa*, and coulde not beare th[e]infolencie of *Vafchus Nunnez*, thought it good that *Nicuefa* fhuld bee fowght owt through owt all thofe coaftes. For they had knoweledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycaufe of the barrenes of the grounde: And that by th[e]xemple of *Ancifus*, and fuche other as had made fhippewracke, it were poffible that he might wander in fume feccrate place: And that they coulde not be quiete in their myndes vntyll they knewe the certentie, whether he with his felowes were alyue or deade. But *Vafchus Nunnez*, fearinge leaſte at the comyng of *Nicuefa* he fhulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, fayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicuefa* lyued: And although he were alyue, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as *Nicuefa*. While they were thus reafonyng too and froo, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arryued in thofe coaftes with two greate fhippes hauinge in theym three fcore freffhe men, with greate plentie of vitales and apparel. Of the navigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to fpeake fumewhat more. He therefore departed from the hauen of *Hifpaniola* cauled *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyffhe theym felues whiche make any viage into thefe landes) aboute the Ides of October in the yere. 1510: And landed the. ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago* and the Region of *Cuchibachoa*. In this viage what by the rowghnes of the fea and fiercenes of the barbarians, he fuffered many incommodities. For when his freffhe water fayled, he fayled to the mouthe of a certeyne riuer which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue fhippes. This ryuer had his courfe from the toppe of an excedinge hyghe mountayne couered with fnowe, hygher then the which, all the coompanyons of this capitayne *Rodericus*, faye that they neuer fawe. And that by good reafon, yf it were couered wyth fnowe in that Region which is not paſt ten degrees diftante from the *Equinoctial* lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their fhippeboate, a certeyne Kyng made towarde theym appareled with veftures of goſſampine cotton, hauinge twentie noble men in his coompanye appareled alfo: Whyche thinge feemed ftraunge to owre men, and not feene before in thofe parties. The Kinges apparell, hunge loofe from his fhoulders to his elbows: And from the gerdle downwarde, it was muche like a womans kerte, reachinge euen to his heeles. As he drewe neere towarde owre men, he feemed frendly to admonyffhe theym to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee vnholſome for men: And fhewed theym that not farre from thenſe, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to coome nere the ſhore, they were dryuen backe by tempeſte. Alſo the burbulinge of the fande, declared the fea to bee but ſhalowe there. They were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrſte ryuer where they myght fafely caſt anker. This Kinge layde wayte for owre men. For as they were fyllinge their barrells, he fet on them with abowt feuen hundreth men (as owre men iudged) armed after their maner, although they were naked. For only the kyng and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the fhippeboate, and brooke it in maner to chips: ſoo fiercely affaylyng owre menne with their venemous arrowes, that they flewe of them fortie and feuen beefore they coulde couer them felues with their targettes. For that poyſon is of fuch force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynſte this kynde of poyſon, as they after lerned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Hifpaniola*. For this Ilande bringeth forth an herbe which quenchech and mortifieth the violent poyſon of the herbe wherewith their arrowes are infected, ſoo that it bee miniſtred in tyme. Yet of owre coompany whiche went for water, feuen eſcaped that conflicte, and hyd them felues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght. Yet eſcaped they not the handes of theyr enemyes. For the fhippe departed from thenſe in the nyght feafon and lefte them there, fuppoſinge that they had byn flayne. Thus by manye fuche perels and daungers (which I lyghtly ouerpaffe bicaufe I wyl not bee tedious to yowre holynes) he arryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and caſt anker at the eaſte fyde therof, from whenſe not longe before, owre men departed to the weſt fyde by reafon of the barrenes of that foyle. When he had

Nomen Dei.
Nicuesa his men
consumed

Contencion
about the
lieutenanſhip
of Vraba.
Vafchus Nunnez
moueth ſedition.
Ancifus
lieutenanſt for
Fogeda.

60

Nicuesa.

*Rodericus
Colmenaris.*
The nauigation
of Rodericus
Colmenaris.

Cuchibachoa.

The ryuer Gaira.

An exceding hygh
mountayne
couered with
ſnowe.

Appareled men.

Seuen and forty
Spanyades are
ſlaine with
venemous arrowes.
Ierna.

A remedie agenſte
venemous arrows

Seuen men left
bchynde.

The hauen of
Vraba.

61

The goulfe of
Vraba.
Dariena.

Famen.

What became of
the contention of
Vraba

contynued a whyle in the hauen, and sawe noo man flouryng, marueylinge at the silence of the places (for he supposed there to haue fownde his felowes) he coulde not coniecture what this shulde meane: and there vppon beganne to suspecte that eyther they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hereof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other fmaile gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And fyers to bee made in the nyght vppon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, althowghe it were. xxiiii. myles distante: for soo brode is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they aunswered them ageyne with mutual fyers. Wherefore, by the folowyng of these fyers, *Colmenaris* brought his shippes to the West syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena* which nowe thorough famen and feeblenes helde theyr wery fowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reafon of the calamities which beefell vnto them after *Ancifus* shippewracke, lyfyinge vp theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and forowe, embrased *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kynde of reioyng as their presente necessitie feemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte vytayles and almoste naked, he brought them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It reflethe nowe (moste holy father) to declare what came of the diffention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernyng the gouernaunce after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the supposed continent.

Beragua.Nicuesa is sought
foorthNicuesa is founde
in a miserable
case.Insolencie of to
much felicitie.

62

Nicuesa fanleth
from one miserie
into an other.

LI the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counfayle, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght owte if by any meanes he coulde bee founde. Where vppon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusyng the commyng of *Nicuesa*, a brygantyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnez*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght foorth to take away the stryfe as touchyng the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllyng hym to make diligent search for *Nicuesa* in those coastes where they supposed he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfrutefull grounde. They gaue hym therefore commaundement to bryng *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good seruice to coome thether, in takyng away th[e] occasion of theyr feditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thyng vppon hym the more gladly bycause *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposyng that his commyng with vytayles shulde bee noo lesse thankefull to *Nicuesa* and his coompanie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnysshynge therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he brought with hym and also the brigantyne taken frome *Ancifus*, he frayghted the same with part of the vytayles and other necessaries which he brought with hym before from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courfyng alonge by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte called *Marmor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of all lyuyng men most infortunate, in maner dryed vppe with extreeme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely three score men in his company, leste alyue of feuen hundreth. They al feemed to hym soo miserable, that he noo lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* comforted his frende *Nicuesa*: and embrasyng hym with teares and cherefull wordes, relyued his spirites, and further encoraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declaryng also that his commyng was looked for and greatelye desyred of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autoritie, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee synnyshed. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such forte as his calamitie requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and sayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vnconflant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth owte of vse, becommeth insolente and vnmmyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa*, after thus many teares and weepynges, after dyuers bewaylynges of his infortunate desteny, after so many thanks geuyng, ye after that he had faulen downe to the grounde and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his fauioure, he beganne to quarel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprobuinge hym and them all for th[e] alteration of the state of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirmyng that none of them owght to haue layde hande of any golde with owte the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When these sayynges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they soo floured vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieuetenaunte for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnez*, of the contrary parte, ageynste *Nicuesa*,

that shortly after his arryuall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe from thense. But this pleased not the better fort. Yet fearynge leaft tumult shulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaschus Nunnez* had fered to factions, the best parte was fayne to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therfore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thruste into the brigantyne whiche he hym selfe browght: and with hym only feuentene men, of his three score which remainyed alyue. He tooke shyppes in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare. 1511. intendynge to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the raffhenes of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer seene after. They suppose that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therin. And thus vnhappy *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miserye into an other, ended his lyfe more myserablye then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus vylely reiected, and al theyr vytayles consumed which *Colmenaris* browght them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woolues feakyng they praye, to inuade fuche as dwelte abowte theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, theyr newe capitayne of theyr owne election, assembling togyther a hundreth and thirtie men, and settinge them in order of battell after his swoordeplayers fasshion, puffed vppe with pryde, placed his souldiers as pleased hym in the forwarde and rereward, and fume as pertifens abowt his owne person. Thus associatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to spoyle the kynges which were bortherers there abowte, and came fyrst to a Region abowte that coaste, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiously and with cruel countenance commaunding the kyng of the region whose name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them vytayles. But *Careta* denyed that he coulde giue them any at that tyme: alleagynge that he had oftentimes ayded the Christians as they passed by those coastes: by reason wherof his store was nowe consumed: Also that by the meanes of the contynuall warre which he kepte euer from his chyldes age with a kyng whose name is *Poncha*, bortheringe vppon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate scarfenes of all thynges. But *Vaschus* wolde admytte none of these excuses: And thervppon tooke *Careta* prisoner, spoyled his vyllage, and browght hym bound with his twoo wyues and chyldren and all his famelie to *Dariena*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Beragua*, fearynge punysshment for theyr euyl desertes stoule away from the shyppes lyinge at anker: And when the nauie departed, commytted them selues to the mercie of *Careta*, who enterteined them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there. xviii. moonethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of th[e] inhabitants seemed vnto them delicate diffhes and princely fare: especially bycause they enioyed the same withowte any stryfe for myne and thyne, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to such harde shyftes and miseries, that in luying they seeme not to lyue. Yet desyred they to returne to theyr owlde cares, of fuche force is education and natural effectiōe towarde them with whom we haue byn browght vp. The vytayles whiche *Vaschus* browght from the vyllage of *Careta* to his felowes leste in *Dariena*, was rather fumewhat to assuage theyr present hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr necessitie. But as touchinge *Ancifus* beinge Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda*, whether it were before these thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am sure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were fought agens *Ancifus* by *Vaschus* and his factionaries. Howe soo euer it was, *Ancifus* was taken, and cast in pryson, and his goodes confiscate. The cause hereof was, (as *Vaschus* alleaged) that *Ancifus* hadde his commissiōe of the Lieuetenauntshippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they sayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he wolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym selfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the graueste forte, he was fumewhat pacified, and delt more gentelly with hym, hauinge fum compassiōe of his calamities. And thervppon commaunded hym to bee loofed. *Ancifus* beinge at libertie, tooke shyppes to departe from thense to *Hispaniola*. But beefore he had hoyfed vppe his sayle, all the wyfest forte reforted to hym, humbly desyryng hym to returne ageyne: promysynge that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaschus* beinge reconciled, he myght bee restored to his full autoritie of the Lieuetenauntshippe. But *Ancifus* refused to consent to theyr request and soo departed. Yet fume there were that murmured that god and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, bycause *Nicuesa* was reiected through his counfayle. Howe soo euer it bee, the searchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, consuminge them selues with ciuile discorde, not weighinge soo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beste endeouere aboute the same as the woorthynes of the thyng requyred. In this meane tyme, they determyned all with one agremente, to sende messengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the synder of these landes, and to the other gouernoures of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto them what flate they stooode in, and in what necessitie they lyued: also what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thynges if they were furnyshed with plentie of vytayles and other necessaries. For this purpose they elected at the assignement of *Vaschus*, one *Valdiuia*, beinge one of his faction, and instructed by hym agens *Ancifus*. And to bee assistant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian: So that commaunde-

The greatest part
ouercommeth the
best

The death of
Nicuesa.

Famen enforseth
them to faule to
spoylyng.

Vaschus vsurpeth
th[e] autoritie of the
Lieutenantsshippe.

Careta, kinge of
Coiba.

Kyng *Careta* is
taken and spoyled.

Hunger is the best
sauce.
Myne and thine
the seedes of al
mischefe.

Ancifus,
lieutenant for
Fogeda is cast in
prison.

Ancifus taketh
his vyage to
hispaniola.
63

The reueng[e] of
God.

The
inconueniences of
discorde.

The sonne and
heyre of *Colonus*,
is Admirall and
Viceroy of
hispaniola.

Valdiuia.

Zamudius and Ancisus, take their vyage to Spayne

Kynge Poncha.

Swoordes of woodde.

Kynge Careta conspireth with the Spanyardes agenst kynge Poncha.

Wrought gold

The region of Comogra, distant from Dariena. xxx. leaques.

Kynge Comogrus.

The kynges palaice.

64

Wyne and syder

Blacke wine.

The bodies of deade kynges religiously honoured.

Penates.

The carcasses of men dried

The kynges sonne a yonge man of excellent wytte.

Four thousandeces of wrought golde.

ment was gyuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hispaniola* with vytayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into Spayne to the kynge. They tooke shippe togyther with *Ancisus*, hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge howe thynges were handeled there, muche otherwyfe then *Zamudius* information. I my selfe spake with both *Ancisus* and *Zamudius* at their comynge to the courte. Whyle they were occupied aboute these matters, those wretched men of *Dariena* loosed *Carcta* the kynge of *Coiba* vpon condicion that he shulde ayde them in their warres ageynst his enemy and theirs, kynge *Poncha* bortheringe vpon his dominions. *Carcta* made a league with them, promysinge that as they passed by his kyngedome, he wolde gyue them all thynges necessarrie, and meete them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agenst *Poncha*. Their weapons are nother bowes nor venemed arrowes, as we sayde th[e] inhabitants to haue which dwel eastwarde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therefore at hande, with longe swordes (which they caule *Macanas*) made of wood bycause they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe staues lyke iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer, or typte with bone. Also certeyne flynges and darts. Thus after the league made with *Carcta*, bothe he and owre men had certeyne dayes appoynted them to tyll their grounde and fowe theyr feedes. This doone, by the ayde of *Carcta* and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palaice of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr comynge. They spoyled his vyllage and mytigated theyr hunger with such vytayles as they founde there. Yet coude they not helpe their felowes therwith by reason of the farre distance of the place, althowghe they had greate plentie. For the vyllage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundreth myles distant from *Dariena*: wheras was also none other remedy but that the same shulde haue byn caryed on mens backes to the sea fyde beinge farre of, where they left theyr shyppes in the which they came to the vyllage of *Carcta*. Here they founde certeyne powndes weyght of gold, grauen and wrought into fundrye ouches. After the sacking of this vyllage they reforted toward the ships intendinge to leaue the kynges of the inland vntouched at this tyme, and to inuade onely them which dwelt by the sea coastes. Not farre from *Coiba*, in the same tracte, there is a Region named *Comogra*, and the Kynge thereof, cauled *Comogrus* after the same name. To this Kynge they came fyrst next after the subvertion of *Poncha*: And founde his palaice situate in a frutefull playne of twelue leaques in bredthe, at the rootes of the further fyde of the nexte mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte a certeyne noble man of nere confanguinitie to Kynge *Carcta*, whiche had fledde to *Comogrus* by reason of certeyne diffention whiche was betwene *Carcta* and hym. These noble men, they caule *Iura*. This *Iura* therefore of *Coiba*, mette owre men by the way, and conciled *Comogrus* to them, bycause he was well knowen to owr men from the time that *Nicuesa* passed fyrst by those coastes. Owre men therefore went quietlye to the palaice of *Comogrus* beinge distante from *Dariena* thirtie leaques by a plaine waye abowte the mountaynes, This Kynge *Comogrus*, had feuen sonnes, younge men of comelye forme and stature, whiche he had by fundry wyues. His palaice was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened togyther after a straunge forte, and of foo stronge bylding, that it is of no lesse strenght then waules of stone. They which measured the length of the floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fyftie pases, and in breadthe, foure score foote: beinge roofed and paued with maruelous arte. They founde his flore house, furnysshed with abundance of delicate vitales after the maner of theyr countrey: And his wyne celler replenished with great vesselles of earth and also of woodde fylled with theyr kynde of wyne and fyder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make theyr breade of those three kyndes of rootes cauled *Iucca*, *agis*, and *Maizium*, (whereof we spake in the fyrste decade) Soo make they theyr wyne of the frutes of date trees, and fyder of other frutes and feedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynges, Englyfhe men, and owre Spanyardes whych inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vascons and Asturians: likewise in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Heluetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and apples. They say also that with *Comogrus*, they droonk wynes of fundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow shall heare of a thyng more monstros too behoulde. Enterynge therfor into the inner partes of the palaice, they were brought into a chamber hanged aboute with the carkefes of men, tyed with ropes of goffampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were the carkefes of the father, graundefather, and great graundfather with the other auncestours of theyr Kyng *Comogrus*. Declaringe that they had the same in greate reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thyng to honour them religiously: And therefore appareled euery of the same sumptuouslye with golde and precious stonnes accordyng vnto theyr estate. After this forte dyd the antiquitie honour theyr *Penates*, whiche they thought had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they drye these carkefes vpon certeyne instrumentes made of wood, like vnto hurdels, with a softe fyer vnder the same, so that onely the skynne remaineth to houlde the bones together, we haue described in the former decade. Of *Comogrus* his feuen sonnes, the eldest had an excellent naturall wytte. He therefore thought it good to flatter and please thys wandryng kynde of men (owr men I meane) lyuyng onely by shiftes and spoyle, least beinge offended and feekyng occasions ageynst hym and his familie, they shuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche fowght noo meanes howe to gratifie theym. Wherefore, he gaue *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* foure thousandeces of golde artificially wrought, and also fyftie staues whiche he had taken in the warres. For suche, eyther they fell for exchaunce of other thynges, or

otherwise vse them as theym lysteth: For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owre men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to separte the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges eschecker. For it is decreed that the fyft parte of both golde, perles, and precious stones, shulde be assigned to the Kinges treasourers: And the resydue, to bee diuided emooonge them selues by composition. Here as brabblyng and contention arose emonge owr men about the diuiding of gold, this eldeste foonne of Kyng *Comogrus* beinge presente, whome we prayfed for his wyfedome, commynge fume what wyth an angry countenance towarde hym whiche helde the balences, he strooke them wyth his fyfte, and scatered all the golde that was therein, abowte the porche, sharply rebukynge them with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Christian men, that yow soo greatly esteeme soo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these sayre ouches and to melte the same into a rude masse. If yowre hunger of goulde bee soo insatiable that onely for the desyre yowe haue therto, yowe disquiete soo many nations, and yow yowre selues also susteyne soo many calamit[ies] and incommodities, luyng like banished men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyll shewe yowe a Region floweing with goulde, where yowe may satisfie yowr raueninge appetites. But yowe muste attempte the thyng with a greater poure: For it standeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puiffaunce, and rigorous defenders of theyr dominions. For besyde other, the greate kinge *Tumanama* will coome soorth ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is mooste ryche with golde, and distante from hense onely fix foonnes: that is, fix dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thether, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canybales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesshe, luyng withowte lawes, wanderinge, and withowte empire. For they also, beinge desyrous of golde, haue subdewed them vnder theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsyng their laboure in dygginge and workynge theyr golde in plates and fundry Images lyke vnto these whiche yowe see here. For we doo no more esteeme rude golde vnwrought, then we doo cloddes of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the worke-man to the similitude eyther of fume vessell necessarie for owre vse, or fume ouch bewetifull to be worne. These thynges doo wee receaue of them for exchange of other of owre thynges, as of prisioners taken in warre, whiche they bye to eate, or for sheetes and other thynges perteynyng to the furnytur of householde, fuche as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iorney therefore, must bee made open by force of men. And when yowe are passinge ouer these mountaynes (poynting with his synger towarde the fouth mountaynes) yowe shal see an other sea, where they fayle with shyppes as bygge as yowres (meanyng the caraeles) vsyng both fayles and ores as yowe doo, althowghe the men bee naked as wee are. All the waye that the water runnethe frome the mountaynes, and all that fyde luyng towarde the Southe, bryngeth soorth golde abundantly. As he fayde these woordes, he poynted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to ferue theyr meate, affirmyng that kyng *Tumanama*, and all the other kynges beyonde the mountaynes, had fuche and al their other householde stufte of golde: And that there was noo lesse plentie of golde amonge those people of the Southe, then of Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wherof owre swordes and other weapons were made. Owre capitaynes marueylng at the oration of the naked younge man (for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had byn before a yere and a halfe conuerfant in the court of kyng *Carata*) pondered in theyr myndes, and earnestly considered his sayings. Soo that his rasshenes in scatteringe the golde owte of the balences, they turned to myrth and vrbaniety, commendynge his dooing and sayinge therein. Then they asked hym frendely, vpon what certeyne knoweledge he spake those thynges: Or what he thowght beste herein to bee doone yf they shulde bryng a greater supplye of men. To this, younge *Comogrus*, slayinge a whyle with hym selfe as it were an oratour preparinge him selfe to speake of fume graue matter, and disposyng his bodye to a giesture meete to persuaue, spake thus in his mother tonge. Gyue care vnto me o yowe Chrystians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of golde hathe not yet vexed vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reason of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springeth mortall hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe owre destruction. Owre prediceffours kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogrus* my father with princes beinge bortherers abowte hym. In the which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, so haue wee byn ouercoome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of owre enemies, of the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fiftie. Lykewyse at an other tyme, owre aduerfaries hauinge th[e]upper hande agenste vs, ledde away manye of vs captiue. For fuche is the chaunce of warre. Also, amonge owre familiers (wherof a great number haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kyng beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome is fuche abundance of golde. Of hym, and fuche other innumerable, and lykewyse by the refort of free men on theyr fyde comminge to vs, and ageyne of owre men resortinge to them by safe conduct, these thynges haue byn euer as well knowen vnto vs, as owre owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee the better assured hereof, and bee owte of all suspection that yowe

The distribution of golde.

Young Comogrus his oration.

The hunger of golde.

A region floweing wyth golde.

Kyng Tumanama.

Canibales.

65

The golde mynes of the mountaynes

Vnwrought golde not esteemed.

Exchange.

Abundance of golde.

Householde stufte of gold

Naked people tormented with ambition.

A vehement persuasion.

shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this viage, byndyng me fast and keepyng me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my faynges in any point vntrewe. Folowe my counfayle therefore, and fend for a thousande Christian men apte for the warres, by whose power we may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed after owre maner, inuade the dominions of owre enemyes: where, bothe yowe may bee satisfiied with golde, and we for owre conductinge and aydyng yowe in this enterpryse, shall thynke owre felues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of owre enemies. After these woordes, this prudente younge *Comogrus* helde his peace. And owre men moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to swalowe downe theyr spettle.

66

A token of hunger

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.

Kynge Comogrus
is baptised with
his famely.Valdiuia returneth
from hispaniola.

After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes and baptised *Comogrus* with all his fameli, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thousande fouldyers, which his sonne requyred to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus enteringe into the vyllage which they had chofen to inhabite, they had knowlege that *Valdiuia* was returned, within fyxe moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycause he brought but a smaule shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of vytayles with a newe supply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowleged that hetherto they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposed that *Ancifus* the Lieuetenant had safely arryued there with his shippe laden with vatayles: wyllyng them from henfesoorth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lacke nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shippe wherby they myght sende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The vytayles therefore which he brought, ferued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present necessitie, then to satisfie theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarcnes: especially for asmuch as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, brought with it suche a fludde, that it partely caryed away and partly drowned all the corne and feedes whiche they had sowne in the moonethe of September in a frutesfull grounde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The feedes which they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* caule *Hobba*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which also wee fayde to bee rype thryfe euery yeare, bycause those Regions are not bytten with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nerenes to the Equinoctial lyne. It is also agreable to the principles of naturall philofophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shulde bee more holfome for th[e] inhabitants of those contreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of eafyer digestion. For wheras coule is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dryuen frome the owtwarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, whereby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therefore thus frustrate of the increase of theyr feedes, and the kynges nere abowte them spoyled of both vytayles and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meate further of: And therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great necessitie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernyng the Regions towarde the Southe: wyllyng them in consideration therof to aduertise the kynge to sende them a thousande fouldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye throwghe the mountaynes diuidyng the sea on bothe fydes, if they coule not bryng the same to passe quietly. The same *Valdiuia* was also sent on this message, caryng with hym to the kynges treasourers (hauinge theyr office of recepte in *Hispaniola*) three hundreth poundes weyght of golde after eyght ounces to the pounce, for the fyfte portion dewe to the kynges eschequer. This pounce of. viii. vnces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyfite pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Castilians, caule a pound *Pesum*. We conclude therefore, that the sume hereof, was. xv. thousande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus is it apparente by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thousande and fyue hundreth poundes of eyght ounces to the pounce. All the whiche they founde redy wrought in sundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, brafelers, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr brestes, and also at theyr eares, and nosethryls. *Valdiuia* therefore tooke shypinge in the same carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also beefore the thyrd day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeare of Christ M. D. XI. What chanced to hym in this vyage, we wyl declare in place conuenient. But let vs nowe returne to them which

Horrible thunder
and lightnyng in
the moneth of
Nouember.Bread of Maizius
and hobbaDigestion
strengthened by
outwarde colde.

Hunger.

A newe supply of
a thousande
souldyers.*Marcha*.*Pesum*.A thousande and
fyue hundreth
poundes weyght
of wrought gold

67

remained in *Vraba*. After the dismissing of *Valdiuia*, beinge pricked forward with outrageous hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in sundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant from the enterance therof, aboute foure score myles. This angle or corner, the Spaniardes caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynte with a hundreth men, coastynge alonge by the goulfe with one brygantine and certeyne of the boates of those regions, which the Vrabians caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche th[e] inhabitants of *Hispaniola* caule *Canoas*. From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the East into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariena* which also fauleth into the same. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they caule it nyne leaques) and sumwhat inclynynge towarde the ryght hande southwarde, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e] inhabitants, the Kyngdom whereof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Owre men also were certified before, that *Cemachus* the kyng of *Dariena* whom they put to flight in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the commynge of owre men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thought that he was admonished by *Cemachus*, that he shulde not abyde the brunte of owre men. He folowed his counsaile: forfooke his vyllages, and lefte all thynges desolate. Yet owre men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much household stuffe and many fysshynge boates. But those maryshe groundes were neyther apte for sowinge of seedes or planting of trees. By reason wherof, they founde there fewe suche thynges as they desired: that is, plentie of vytayles. For th[e] inhabitants of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other contreys nere aboute them by exchange for theyr fyfsh, only to serue theyr owne necessitie. Yet founde they in the houses of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountynge to the fume of feuen thousande of those pieces whiche we sayde to bee cauled *Castellani*: Also certeyne canoas: of the which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of theyr household stuffe, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They saye, that from the maryshes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne bates in the nyght seafon, as bygge as turtle dooues, inuadyng men and bytinge them with a deadly wounde, as fume of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the same. I my selfe communing with *Ancifus* the Lieutenant whom they reiected, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytinge of these bates, he toulde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote linge vncouered in the nyght by reason of the heate in sommer seafon: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other saye, that the bytinge of fume of them is venemous: Yet that the same is healed incontinently, if it be waffhed with water of the sea. *Ancifus* toulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by waffhynge with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitales. In this their returne, there arose soo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to cast into the sea, all the household stuffe whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche lyued onely by fysshynge. The sea also swalowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from them, wherewith the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnez* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the southe, euen then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the easte, with thre scor[e] men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distante from the mouthe of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leaques) he founde certeyne vilages situate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kyng, they caule *Turui*. With this kyng dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariena*, saylyng by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreshynge theyr hole company with the vitales of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togyther. Other fortie myles from hense, the ryuer encompafeth an Iland inhabited with fyfsher men. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it, threescore vilages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right syde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose chanell is of depth sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer they cauled *Riuus Niger*: from the mouthe wherof about. xv. myles distante they founde a towne of fyue hundreth houses seuered: whose *Chebi*, (that is,) kyng, was cauled *Abenamachei*. They all forfooke theyr houses as soone as they harde of owre mennes commynge. But when they sawe that owre men pursued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them with desperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne possessions. Theyr wepons, are swordes of wod, and long staues like iaculens, hardened at the ende with fyer: But they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of th[e] inhabitants of the weste syde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were easely dryuen to flight with owre weapons. As owre men folowed them in the chase, they tooke the kyng *Abenamachei* and certeyne of his noble men. A common souldier of owres whom the kyng had wounded, commynge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his sward. But this was doone vnto the capitaynes. The number of the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundreth and fiftie: the one halfe whereof, the capytaynes lefte here, and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of those Regions, whiche they caule. *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canoas*, as we haue sayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Iland of *Cannafistula*,

The goulfe of Vraba.

Culata.

Vaschus searcheth the goulfe of Vraba.

A maruelous great ryuer, faulyng into the goulfe of Vraba.

Kyngdom Dabaiba and Chemachus, are dryuen to flight.

Maryshe grounde

Wrought gold wheyghynge vii thousand Castellanes.

Bates as bygge as turtle doues

Ancifus bytten of a batte

Remedies ageynst venemous arrows

A tempest.

Colmenaris taketh his viage towarde the mountaynes

Kyngdom Turui.

The Iland of Cannafistula.

68

The ryuer of Riuus Niger. A towne of v. hundreth houses.

Th[e] inhabitants of the weste syde of the goulfe.

Kyngdom Abenamachei, is taken and his arme cut of.

Many other ryuers faulging into Riuis Niger

Kyng abibeiba dwellethe in a tree.

Abundance of moyster and heat is cause of byggenes.

The rysyng of the Ocean sea.

Trees of maruelous height

Plinie.

Frutefull grounde.

Cellers in the grounde.

Abibeiba, the kyng of the tree, yeldethe to Vaschus.

69

Gold no more esteemed then stones.

Canibales

for the space of threefcore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande and on the lefte many riuers faulging into it bigger then it felfe, they entred into one by the conductyng of one of the naked inhabitantes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouth of the same, there was a kyng cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the Region was full of marysshes, had his palaice buylded in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldyng and feldome feene. But that lande beareth trees of fuche exceeding heig[h]th, that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houfes: As wee reede the like in diuers autours howe in many Regions where the ocean sea ryfethe and ouerflowethe the lande, the people were accustomed to flye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fyfthe lefte on the lande. This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames croffe ouer the branches of the trees, faste bownde togyther, and there vppon to rayse theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and wether. Owre men suppose that they buylde theyr houfes in trees, by reason of the greate fluddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of fuche heighth, that the strength of no manes arme is able to hurle a stone to the houfes buylded therein. And therefore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other autours whiche wrytte that the trees in fume places in *India* are foo high by reason of the frutefulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thought that there is noo frutfuller ground vnder the soonne, then this is whereof wee nowe entreate. Owr men meafuringe manye of these trees, founde theym to bee of fuche biggnes, that feuen men, ye sumtymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes streached furthe, were fearfully able too fathme them aboute. Yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenysshed with such wynes wherof wee haue spoken beefore. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houfes, or to breeke the branches of the trees, yet are they tossed therewith, and swaye sumwhat from fyde to fyde, by reason wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troubeled with moouinge. All other necessayre thinges, they haue with them in the trees. When the kyng or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wynes are brought theym from the celleres by theyr seruantes, whyche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celeritie to runne vppe and downe the fleares adherente to the tree, then doo owre waytyng boyes vppon the playne grounde, fetche vs what wee caule for from the cobbarde byfyde owr dynyng table. Owre men therefore, came to the tree of kyng *Abibeiba*, and by th[e]interpretoures cauled hym foorth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he wolde coomme owte of his house: Defyryng them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashon. But owre men fell from fayre woordes to threatenege, that excepte he wolde descende with all his famelic, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles fet it on fyer. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewing the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* seeing the chippes faule from the tree on euery fyde, chaunged his purpose, and came downe with only two of his soones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were instante vppon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yowe foo greatly defyre golde, I will seeke for fume in the nexte mountaynes, and bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in those mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the daye appoynted. They departed therefore from thense well refreshed with his vitales and wyne, but not with goulde as they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and his ditionaries as concernyng the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they harde beefore of kyng *Comogrus*. Saylyng yet further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne cotages of the Canibales: But vtterly voyde with owte men or stufte. For when they had knowledge that owre men wandered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they reforted to the mountaynes, caryng al theyr goodes and stufte wyth them.

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the supposed continent.



IN the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doone along by the shores or bankes of the ryuer, a certeyne Decurian, that is a capytayne ouer tenne, of the coompanye of those which *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a garryson in *Riuo Nigro* in the dominion of kyng *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fataule dayes was nowe coome, he attempted with his fouldiers to searche the countreys nere there about, and entered into the vyllage of a kyng cauled *Abraiba*. This capytaynes name was *Raia*: whom *Abraiba* slewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the refydue fledde. Within a fewe dayes

Kyng Abraiba

after, *Abraiba* hauinge compassion of the calamitie of his kynfeman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius* being dryuen from his owne possession (whose arme also we fayd before that one of the fouldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro* and nowe remaynyng with *Abraiba* to whome he fledde by stelth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* th[e] inhabitour of the tree, who had nowe lykewyse forsaken his contrey for feare of owre men, and wandered in the defolate mountaynes and wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he spake to him in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*: or what nation is this that soo tormenteth vs that wee can not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I fay shall wee suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppreffions as yow, as *Abenamacheius* owre kynfeman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Poncha*, as I and other princes of owr order doo fusteyne? Canne any thinge bee more intollerable then to see owre wyues, owre chylde[n], and owre subiectes, to bee ledde awaye captiues, and owre goodes to be spoyled euen before owre faces.

I take the goddes to wytnes, that I speake not soo much for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whose case I lament. For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuertheless, by the example of other, I owght to thynke that my destruction is not farre of. Let vs therfore (yf wee bee men) trye owre strengthe and proue owre fortune ageynst them whiche haue delte thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his contrey. Let vs fet on them with all owre poure, and vtterly destroy them And yf wee can not sleie them al, yet shall wee make them afrayde eyther to assaile vs ageyne, or at the least dimynyshe theyr poure. For what soo euer shall befaule, nothyng can chaunce woorse vnto vs then that which we now suffer. When *Abibeiba* harde these wordes and such other like, he conde[f]cended to doo in al thinges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre: Where vpon they appoynted a day to bryng their conspiracie to passe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to their desyre. For of those whiche wee sayde to haue passed to the Canibales, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger* the nyght before the day appoynted to worke their feate, thirtie men to the ayde of theym whiche were lefte there yf anye sedition shulde ryse as they suspected. Therefore at the daunying of the day, the confetherate kynges with fyue hundred of their ditionaries armed after theyr maner, befeaged the vyllage with a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne which came thether the same nyght. Here owre target men came forth ageynst them, and fyrst assayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laste with theyr swoordes: But the naked feely fowles, perceauinge a greater number of theyr aduerfaries then they looked for, were soone dryuen to flyght, and slayne for the most parte lyke scaterynge sheepe. The kynges escaped, they slewe manye, and tooke many captiues whiche they sente to *Dariena* where they vse them for labourers to tyll and sowe theyr grounde. These thynges thus happely atchyued, and that prouince quyeted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge their thyrtye men for a garryson vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a capitayne. This *Furatado* therfore, sente from *Riuo Nigro* where he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes and one woman, with. xxiii. captiues to *Vaschus* and his company, in one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came forth foodenly ouerthwarte the ryuer ageynst them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew theyr boate and slewe as many of them as they coude come by, bycause they were vnprepared suspecting noo such thinge. Owre men were all drowned and slayne execepte twoo, which hyd them selues amonge certeyne fagottes that swamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkyng, and soo escaped to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduertysed hereof, beganne to caste theyr wyttes what this thyng might meane: beinge no lesse sollicitate for them selues, then meditatynge in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*, execepte by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were sente to them, had come to the vyllage the nyght before the conspiracie shulde haue byn wrought. Confultinge therefore what was best to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dylygent searchoyng they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacchus* dryuen from his vyllage whiche owre menne nowe possessed, *Abraiba* also and *Abenamacheius*, kynfemen, with *Dabaiba* the king of the fysher men inhabytinge the corner of the goulfe whiche we cauled *Culata*, were all assembled to conspire the Christian mens destruction at a day assigned. Which thyng had surely come to passe, if it had not byn otherwyse hyndered by gods prouidence. It is therfore ascrybed to a myracle: And trewly not vnwoorthely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counsayle of these kynges. And bycause it is worthy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe wordes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therfore, who rather by poure then by election, vsurped the gouernance in *Dariena*, beinge a master of fence, and rather a rashe royfster then politike capitayne (althowgh fortune suntyme fauoureth fooles) amonge many women which in dyuers of these regions he had taken captiue, had one whiche in fauoure and bewtie excelled all other. To this woman her owne brother often tymes reforted, who was also dryuen owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemacchus*, with whom he was very familer and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other communication which he had with his fyfster whom he loued entierly, he vttered these wordes. My deare and welbeloued fyfster, gyue eare to my faynges, and keepe moste secreatlye that whiche I wyll declare vnto yowe, yf yowe desyre yowre owne weulth and myne, and the prosperitie of owre contrey and kynfefolkes. The infolenie and crueltie of these menne

Abraiba causeth the kynges to rebel.

Men good enough yf they had iren

The kynges are are dryuen to flyght.

70
Captiues.

A garryson of xxx. men.

xviii. Spanyardes slayne and drowned

The kynges which conspired the death of the Christians.

A strange chaunce

Vaschus.

Women can keepe no counsayle.

whiche haue dryuen vs owte of owre possessiones, is soo intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo longer to fusteyne theyr oppreSSIONS.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kynges (which he named in order) they haue prepared a hundreth greate *Canoas*, with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with vitales also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to maintayne such an army. Declaringe further, that the kynges by agremente, had diuided emonge them the goodes and headdes of owre men: And therefore admonyshed her, at the daye appoynted by fume occasion to conueigh her selfe owte of the way, lest shee shuld bee slayne in the confusion of the bataile. For the fouldier victourer, is not woonte to spare any that commethe in his rase. And thus shewing his fyfter the daye assigned to the slawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the swoord that women feare and obserue more then the grauitie of *Cato*;) whether it were for the loue or feare that shee had to *Vaschus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynnsfolkes, her countrey and all her frendes, ye and all the kynges into whose throtes *Vaschus*, had thruste his swoorde shee opened all the matter vnto hym, and conceled none of those thinges whiche her vndiferete broother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had hard the matter, he caused *Fuluia*, (for soo had they named her) to fende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumstances of the matter. Where vpon, he playnely confessed that kyng *Cemacchus* hys lorde and maister, sente those foure canoas to the destruction of owre men, and that these newe conspiracies were attempted by his confaile. Likewise that *Cemacchus* sowght the destruction of *Vaschus* hym selfe when he sent hym fortie men vnder pretence of frendshippe to tyll and sowe his grownd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to sleye *Vaschus* at *Marris*, whyther he reforted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbandes. Yet durste they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundement vpon hym, bycause *Vaschus* came neuer emonge them asoote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to them in harnes with a iauelen in his hande and a swoorde by his syde. Wherefore *Cemacchus* beinge frustrate of his particuler confaile, tooke this laste thing in hande to his owne destruction and his neighbours. For the conspiracie beinge detected, *Vaschus* cauled threescore and tenne fouldiers, commaundinge them to folowe him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee entended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrste towarde *Cemacchus* which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowleage that he was fledde to *Dabaiba* the kyng of the marishes of *Culata*. Yet searchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and also his kinsfeman, whome he tooke prifoner with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he fette forwarde to seeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggeste *Canoas* and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in the which we sayd all their vitales to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore, sacked the village, and possessed all their vitayles and wyne of fundry colours: likewise tooke the gouernoure thereof prifoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym selfe, commaundinge hym too bee shotte through with arrowes in the sight of th[e]inhabitanes, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the exemple of other rebelles. This punysshmente thus executed vpon the conspiratours, strooke the hartes of all th[e]inhabitanes of the prouince wyth suche feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare floore his finger ageynst the wraethe of owre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kynges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer liue in subiection, with lesse offence bearinge the yoke whyche they can by noo meanes shake of.

An army of C
[hundred] canoas
and fyue. M.
[thousand] men.
Tryumphe before
victory

Affection
corrupteth trew
iudgement.

71

The conspiracie
of the kynges is
detected.

Kyng Cemacchus,
conspyareth the
deth of Vaschus.

Vaschus pursuweth
the kynges with
three score and
ten men.

Colmenaris
sicketh the
village of Tichiri.

Fyue rulers
hanged and shot
through with
arrowes.

The golden
regions on the
south side the
mountaynes.

The death of
Valdiuia and
Zamudius.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



Hese thynges, thus synysshed, assemblinge all their company together they determined with one consente, that a messynger shulde soorth with bee sente to *Hispaniola* (from whence they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all these affayres, fyrste to the admirall and gouernoure of the Ilande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to persuaide hym to fende those thousand men which younge *Comogrus* said to bee expediente to passe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vaschus* him selfe dyd greatly affecte this embafage: But neyther wolde the resydewe of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries suffer hym to departe: Aswell for that therby they thought they shulde bee left desolate, as also that they murmured that if *Vaschus* shulde once goo from them, he wolde neuer returne to suche turmoyles and calamities, by th[e]example of *Valdiuia* and *Zamudius*, who had byn now absente fence

the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thought they wolde neuer comme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were perished. At the length after many scrutines, they elected one Iohn *Quicodus*, a graue man well in yeares, and treafurer of the kings eschequer in those prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicodus* that all thynges shulde bee well brought to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wyfilome, as also that they were in good hop[e] of his returne, bycause he had brought his wiffe with hym to those regions, whome he leste with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicodus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioine with hym for assistance: Affirminge that it were a daungerous thinge to committe soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicodus*, but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, especially to theym hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the *Equinoctiall*, if they shulde bee compelled to returne to the North with alteration of ayer and dyet. They thought it therefore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicodus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayl the other might remayne: And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe consultation therefore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whom we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had traauayled ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchemen: Of whose returne also, they had noo smaule hope bycause he had many fermes and hadde tyllid and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by th[e] increafe wherof he might get much gold by fellyng the fame to his felowes. He leste therefore the charge of al his affaires in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonfus Nunez*, a Iudge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chofen procuratoure of this vyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put them in remembrance that he had a wyfe at *Matritis*: fearyng leaft beinge ouercome with her teares, he wolde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie being affociate assistant with *Quicodus* they tooke shyping together in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ. 1512. In this vyage, beinge tossed with fundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vpon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrste Decade we cauled *Cuba*, supposed to haue byn fyrme lande. They were sore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes fence they departed from theyr felowes. By reason whereof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amonge the inhabitantes. Their chaunce therefore, was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen alande by tempest. But oh yowe wretched men of *Dariena*? Tary for *Valdiuia* whom yowe sent to prouide to helpe yowre necessities? Prouyde for yowre selues rather and trust not to them whose fortune yowe knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, th[e] inhabitantes slewe him with al his felowes, and leste the carauell wherin they were caried, torne in pieces and halfe couered with fande on the shore: where *Quicodus* and *Colmenaris* syndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their felowes myffortune. But they founde none of theyr carkeses: supposinge that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentymes make incurfions into that Ilande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowledge of *Valdiuia* his destruction: And that th[e] inhabitantes the more greedely attempted the fame, for that they had harde by the bablynge of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they forme artificially into fundry ouches. Thus owre men sryken with penyuenes for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes, and in vayne seekyng reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from those couetous naked barbarians with more forowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousande myffortunes: and had intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereabout, leadyng a myferable lyfe, tossed and turmoyled with tempestes and vexed with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thense almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all consumed with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his venemous wound which he had receaued in *Fraba* as we haue said before. But *Ancifus* elected Lieuetenant, fayled by all those coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe toulde me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was well enterteyned of th[e] inhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this specially in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Commendator*. For wheras he desyred of the Christian men whiche passed by, to bee baptised, demaundyng the name of the gouernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beinge a noble man and a knyght of th[e] order of *Calatraua* of which order al are cauled *Commendatores*, this kynges desyre was to bee named after hym. Kynge *Commendator* therefore, frendely receaued *Ancifus*, and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But what *Ancifus* lerned of theyr religion duryng the tyme of his remaynyng there, I haue thought good to aduertise yowre holynes. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of owre men saylinge by the coastes of *Cuba*, leste with kynge *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diseafed. Who in shorte space recoueringe his health, and hauynge nowe sumwhat lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great estimation with the kynge and his subiectes, in soo muche that he was oftentymes

Iohannes
Quicodus is sent
to Spain

72

Change of the
ayer is daungerous.

Rodericus
Colmenaris,
assistant with
Quicodus.

A wyfe is a
hynderance

Cuba.

Three moonethes
from Dariena to
Cuba, by reason
of tempests

The death of
Valdiuia.

Hurt of Ianyshenes
of the tonge.

The calamitie and
death of Fogeda.

Maladies and
famen.

The prosperous
vyage of Ancifus

A kyng of *Cuba*
baptised by the
name of
Commendator.

Ancifus

73

A marnelous
historic howe God
wrought miracles
by the simple fayth
of a maryner.

Be not rashe in
iudgement

Zemes.

A chapel builded
to the picture of
the virgin Mary

God respecteth
the infancie of
faith for zeles
sake

One Religion
turned into an
other, holdeth styl
many thinges of
the fyrst.

A strange fantasie.

The effect of
godly zeale.

A miracle in the
tyme of the
battayle

The virgin Mary,
is present at the
battayle.

74

A maruelus
experience of
fayth

Muche lyke vnto
this, is redde iii.
Reg. xviii.

the kynges Lieuetenaunt in his warres ageynst other princes his bortherers. This mans fortune was soo good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowledge, and dyd religiously honoure the blessed virgin, bearyng euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper and fowd in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyng vnto the kyng, that this holynes was the caufe of al his victories: perfuadyng hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the fymilitudes of euyl spirites, moste cruell enemyes and deuourers of owre fowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patronesse if he defyred all his affayres awell in warre as in peace to succeed prosperously. Also that the blessed virgin woolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they woolde with deuoute hartes caule vpon her name. The maryner had foone perfluaded the naked nation: And there vpon gaue the kyng (who demaunded the fame) his pycure of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of goffampine cotton to the similitudes of sprytes walkyng in the nyght which they ostentymes fee, and speake with them familiarly, wee haue spoken sufficiently in the nyth booke of the fyrste Decade. Furthermore, accordyng to the institucion of this maryner, when the foonne draweth towarde the faule, this kyng *Commendator* with all his famely bothe men and women, reforte daylye to the fayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneelyng on theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdyng theyr handes ioyned togyther, they salute th[e] image of the virgin with these woordes: *Aue Maria, Aue Maria*. For fewe of them can rehearse any more woordes of this prayer. At *Anafus* his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioyfyng, faying that they woolde shewe them maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin al to beset and hanged abowte with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled fum with fundry meates, and fume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For these thynges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde supersticion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leaste the image shulde lacke meate if perhaps it shuld be a hungerd. For they most certainly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confesse that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thyng woorthy to be harde, and most assuredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of owre men, there is such feruent godly loue and zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynst theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may soo terme it) compel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr necessities: For such is the goodnes of god, that he hath leste vnto men in maner a pryce wherby wee may purchase hym with his holy angels and fayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie and zeale. Howe therefore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent from them which cal for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? *Commendator* him felse, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enemies turned their backes and trembeled in the prefence of the virgins Image and in the syght of them all. For euery of them bryng theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hopyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they say further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they sawe not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, aydyng them ageynst theyr enemies: whiche thyng also the enemyes them selues acknowleaged, confessyng that on the contrarye parte shee appeared to them, shakynge a septer in her hande with threatenynge countenaunce, whiche caused theyr hartes to shake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a shypp of certeyne Christians passyng by those coastes, *Commendator* declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institucions: In soo muche that beinge at contention with another prince, which of theyr *Zemes* were moste holy and of greateste poure, the matter grewe to fuche extremitie that they tryed it with hande strokes: And that in all these attempts, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer prefente in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue hym easye victorie with a fmaule poure of men, ageynst a mayne armye of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assayled theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Marye helpe vs: And this also in the Spanyshe tonge. For he had leste these woordes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murdered and destroyed them selues thus on bothe fydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne chofen for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any slyght or policie, but that two younge men shulde bee chofen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde fast behynde them in the playne felde, bothe parties beinge sworne to acknowleage that *Zemes* to bee the better, which fyrst loofed the bandes of the younge man whiche floode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidyng them selues, and placeyng the fayde younge men before them in the syght of them al, with theyr handes fast bounde by theyr enemyes, the

contrary parte cauled fyrst on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyll to whose similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lyknes aboute the younge man that floode bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

But as foone as *Commendator* with his coompanye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in whyte, at whose presence the deuell vanquiffhed immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, and putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that floode for *Commendator*, his handes were loofed immediatly in the fyght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that floode for the other partie, in somuch that they them selues fownde hym dowble bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies fatiffyed: querelinge that this thyng was doone by fum flyght or diuise of man, and not by the poure of the better *Zemes*. And there vppon requyred for th[e]aduoydyng of all suspection, that there myght bee eyght graue and fage men appoynted, for eche fyde foure, whiche shulde bynde the men in the fyght of them all, and also gyue iudgemente whether the thyng were doone withoute crafte or gyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: Oh golden and blessed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiers, doubted not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeste with lyke faythe wherwith the diseafed woman obteyned healtre of the fluxe of her bludde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the fyght of his master Christe. These younge men therefore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lyfles in the fyght of bothe parties. Thus vppon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr *Zemes*, there appered in the fyght of them all, a deuyll with a longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, refemblyng the similitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyll attempted to loofe the bandes of his cliente, the blessed virgin was immediatly presente as before at the caule of *Commendator* and his subiectes, and with her rodde loofed the bandes of her suppliant, which were ageyne lykewyse founde fast tyed aboute the handes of hym that floode for the contrarye parte. The enemies therefore of *Commendator*, beinge slyrken with greate feare and amased by reason of this greate miracle, confessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then their *Zemes*. For the better prose wherof, these pagans beinge bortherers to *Commendator*, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowlege that *Ancifus* was arryued in those coastes, they fente ambafadoures vnto hym, to desyre hym to fend them preestes of whom they might bee baptifed: Where vppon he sent them twoo which hee had with hym there at that present. They baptifed in one day a hundreth and thirtie of th[e]inhabitanes, sumtyme enemyes to *Commendator*, but now his frendes and ioyned with him in alianee. All suche as came to bee baptifed, gaue the preestes of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet skyl how to carue theyr cocke chykens to make them capons. Also certeyne falted fyffhes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the preestes reforted to the shippes, fyxe of these newe baptyfed men accompanied theym laden with vitailles, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before faynte *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Daricna*, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of *Cuba* nere vnto the Easte fyde of *Hispaniola*. At the requeste of *Commendator*, *Ancifus* lefte with hym one of his coompanye, to th[e]intente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth other his bortherers, the salutation of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them selues to be foo much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus *Ancifus* takinge his leaue of kyng *Commendator*, directed his course to *Hispaniola*, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoletto* to the kyng, to whom he made greuous complaint of the infolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, in so muche that by his procuremente, the Kyng gaue sentence ageynste hym. Thus muche haue I thowght good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertise yowr holynes as concernyng the religion of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of *Ancifus* (wyth whom I was dayly conuerfante in the court and vsed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autoritie, to th[e]intente that yowre excellencie may vnlerstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embrace our religion. But this can not bee doone foodenlye. Yet we haue greate caufe to hope that in shorte tyme they wiibe all drawn by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Christe, to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernyng the affayres of *Daricna*.

The deuill
appeareth in his
lyknes

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuill
appereth agein.

The virgin Mary
ouercommeth the
deuyll

Infidels conuerted
by miracle, and
baptised.

75

The preestes
rewards.

Aue Maria.

Ancifus vyage to
Spain

Ancifus
complayneth of
Vaschus.

The harvest is
great, but the
labourers are fewe.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE
Of the supposed continente.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii. dayes saylyng.



The procuratours of Dariena, are honorably receaued at the courte.

Their complexion is altered

Of whom the autour had information

76

The greate master of the kynges ships

Petrus arias is elected gouernour of Dariena.

Th[e] oracion of the byshop, of Burges in the defence of Petrus arias.

The warres of Aphrica.

From *Dariena* to *Hispaniola* is eyghte dayes failinge and funtymes lesse with a prosperous wynde. Yet *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reason of tempestes and contrary wyndes, could scarcely faile it in a hundrethe dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hispaniola*, and had declared the cause of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge redye furnysshed, which were also accustomed to faile too and froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we sayde before) the fourthe day of the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512, and came not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare folowinge beinge the yeare of Christe. 1513. At th[e]yr comyng to the courte, *Iohannes Fonseca* (to whom at the begynnyng the charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for his faithful seruice toward the kinge, yowre holynes created generall commissarie in the warres ageynste the moores) receaued them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world, from naked nations, and landes vnknown to other menne.

By the preferment therefore of the bysshope of *Burges*, *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the king, and declared theyr legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They also fuiorned with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of *Dariena*. For they are yelowe lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe gaundies: And also swolne. But they ascrybe the cause hereof, to the hunger which they susteyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduertised of th[e] affayres of this newe woorld, not onely by these procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Ancifus*, and *Zamulius*, but also by conference with *Baccia* the lawier, who ranne ouer a greate parte of those coastes. Likewyse by relation of *Vincentius Annes* the patrone of the shippes, and *Alfonfus Nignus*, both being men of greate experience and wel traauyled in those parties, beside many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places. For there came neuer any from thense to the court, but tooke greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde of mouth or by wrytyng. Of many thynges therfore which I lerned of them, I haue gathered suche as to my Iudgement seeme moste worthy to satisfie them that take delyte in hystories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the comminge of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therefore, before theyr arryuall there was a rumoure spreade in the courte, that the chiefe gouernours and Lieutenantes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, also *Iohannes De la Coffa* (a man of such reputacion that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the greate master of the kynges shippes) were all perysshed by mischaunce: And that those fewe which yet remayned alyue in *Dariena*, were at contencion and discorde amonge them selues: So that they neyther endeuoured theyr diligence to allure those simple nations to owre faythe, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those Regions. In consideration wherof, the kyng was determynd to fende a newe capitayne thither whiche shulde restore and set all thynges in good order, and put them owte of autoritie whiche hadde vsurped th[e] empire of those prouinces withoute the kynges special commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* assigned, a man of greate prowes and a citisen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena* had published in the courte howe greate a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take the office owte of his handes. But the bysshop of *Burges* beinge the kinges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commissioners appoynted by hym in these matters, beinge aduertised hereof, came immediatly to the kyng, and spake to hym in this effect. May it please yowre hyghnes to vnderstand (moste catholyke Prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente corage and greate seruice, hath offered hym selfe to aduenture his lyfe in yowre maiesties affayres, vnder vncerteyue hope of gayne and moste certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandinge sum other haue ambiciouly maliced his felicitie and preferment labouringe for th[e] office whereto he is elected: It maye please yowre grace herein soo to shewe hym yowr fauour and permit hym to enioye his fayde office, as yowre maiestie doo knowe hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the fame, hauyng in tyme paste had greate experience of his prowesse and valiantnesse, aswell in behauinge hym selfe as orderinge his souldiers, as yowr hyghnes may the better consyder if it shal please yowe to caule to remembrance his doinges in the warres of Aphrica, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyse Capitayne, and valient souldier. As concerninge his maners and vsages other wayes, they are not vnknown to yowre maiestie, vnder whose wyng he hath of a chylde byn browght vp in the courte, and euer founde faythfull toward yowre hyghnesse. Wherfore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a

commiffioner in thefe affayres) I think it were vngodly that he fhuld bee put from his office at the fute of any other, efppecially beinge thereto moued by ambition and conetoufnes: who perchance woold proue them felues to be the fame men in the office if they fhuld obteyne it, as they nowe fhewe them felues in the ambitious defiryng of the fame. When the byffhoppe hade fayde thefe wordes, the kynge confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in more ample maner then before: wyllynge the byffhoppe to appoynt hym a thoufande and two hundreth fouldiers at his charges, makynge hym a warrante to th[e] officers of his efchequer to delyuer hym money in prefte for the fame purpofe. *Petrus Arias* therefore beinge thus put in office and authoryed by the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode feale, chofe a greate number of his fouldiers in the court, and foo departed frome *Valladoleta* aboute the calendes of October in the yeare 1513: And fayled fyrft to Ciuile beinge a verye ryche citie and well replenyfhed with people: where by the kynges magiftrates he was furnyfhed with men and vytayles and other neceffaries perteynyng to foo greate a matter. For the king hath in this citie erected a houfe feruinge only for th[e] affayres of the Ocean, to the which al they that goo or come from the newe landes and Ilandes, reforte to gyue accomptes afwell what they cary thither as what they bryng from thence, that the kynge may bee truly answered of his custome of the fyfte part bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue fayde before. This houfe, they caule the houfe of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuile aboute twoo thoufand younge men which made great fute to goo with hym: lykewyfe noo fmall number of couetous owlde men: of the whiche, many offered them felues to goo with him of theyr owne charges without the kynges flipende. But lefte the fhippes fhulde bee pestered with to great a multitude, or leaft vytayles fhulde fayle them, the libertie of free paffage was refraynt. It was alfo decreed that noo ftranger might paffe without the kynges licence. Wherefore I doo not a lyttle maruaile at *Aloifius Cadamufus* a venetian and wyrtier of the Portugales vyages, that he was not a fhamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went: we fawe: we dyd. Whereas he neuer went, nor any Venetian fawe. But he ftoule certeyne annotacions owte of the three firft bookes of my fyrft Decade wrytten to Cardinal *Ascanius* and *Arcimboldus*, fupposinge that I woold neuer haue publyfhed the fame. It myght alfo happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of fum ambafadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the fame to other. Howe fo euer it bee, this honefte man *Aloifius Cadamufus* feared not to challenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans labour. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which furely are wonderfull) whether he haue wrytten that whiche he hath feene (as he fayth) or lykewife bereaued other men of the iufte commendations of theyr trauayles, I wyll not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Emonge the company of thefe fouldiers, there were none embarked but fuche as were licenced by the kynge, except a fewe Italians, Genues, who by frendfhippe and fute were admitted for the Admirals fake younge *Colonus*, fonne and heyre to *Chriftophorus Colonus* the fyrft fynder of thofe landes. *Petrus Arias* therefore tooke fhippyng in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalqueuir*) runnyng by the citie of Ciuile, aboute the begynnyng of the yeare of Chrift. 1514. But he loofed anker in an euyll houre. For fuche a tempefte folowed fhortly after his departure, that it rent in pieces two of his fhippes, and foo tofled the other that they were enforced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr vytayles to lyghten them. All fuch as efaped, fayled backe ageyne to the coaftes of Spayne: where, beinge newly furnyfhed and refreshed, by the kynges officers, they went forwarde on theyr viage. The mafter pylot of the gouernoures fhypp, was *Iohannes Vefputius* a Florentine, the neuie of *Americus Vefputius*, who left hym as it were by difcente of inheritance, th[e] experience of the mariners facultie, and knowlege of the fea, carde and compaffe. But wee were aduertifed of late by certeyne which came from *Hifpaniola*, that they had paffed the Ocean with more prosperous wynde. For this marchaunt fhypp commynge from *Hifpaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Galeaceus Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Curfius*, men ftudious by al meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceafed not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, and taryed onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes thefe my fayre *Nercides* althowgh rudely decked, leaſte I fhulde beflow muche tyme in vayne, I haue let paffe many thynges, and wyll reherfe onely fuch as feeme in my iudgement moſte woorthye memory, althowgh fumwhat difordered as occaſion hath ferued. So it is therefore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helifabeth a Boadilla*, beinge niefe by the broothers fyde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to Fernando and Helifabeth princes of Spayne at fuch tyme as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Caſtile: by reaſon wherof they were encoraged fyrſte to refyſte, and then with open warre to affayle and expulſe the Portugales for the greate treſure which kynge Henry brother to queene Helifabeth hadde gathered togyther there. This marqueſſe whyle ſhee lyued, dyd euer ſhewe a manly and ſtoute mynde, bothe in peace and warre, ſo that by her counſayle manye noble thynges were brought to good effecte in Caſtile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niefe by her brothers fyde. Shee folowyng the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceaninge her huſbande nowe furnyſhyng hym ſelfe to depart to the vnknowne coaſtes of the newe woorld, and thofe large tractes of lande and ſea, ſpake theſe wordes vnto hym. My moſte deare and welbeloued huſbande, we owght not nowe to forget that from owre younge

Petrus Arias
Lieutenante of
Darien.
Petrus Arias hath
a thousand and
twoo hundreth
men appoynted at
the kynges
charges.

A houſe in Ciuile
appointed to the
affayres of India.

Perularia.

77
Many profer
them ſelues to go
of theyr owne
charges.
Aloifius
Cadamuſtus is
reproued.

The Portugales
inuentions.

The nauigation of
Petrus Arias.

A ſhipwacke

Americus
Vefputius.

A notable exemple
of a valient woman.

Kynge Henry.

The wyfe of
Petrus Arias

78

yeares we haue byn ioyned togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to th[e]intente that wee shulde foo lyue togyther and not a sunder duryng the tyme of owre naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection hercin, yowe shall vnderstande, that whyther so euer yowre fatal destenye shall dryue yowe, eyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll surely beare yowe company. There can no perell chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from yowe. It were muche better for me to dye, and cyther to bee cast into the sea to bee deuoured of the fysshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deathe and dye lyuinge, whyle I consume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor presentely excogitate, nor conceaued by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberation and good aduifement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these twoo yowe wyll assente: Eyther to thruſte yowre swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyldren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of owr inseperable loue, (for they had foure sonnes and as many dowghters) shal not flay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them suche gooddes and possessions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorschipful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fynished these woordes, her husbände feinge the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accordynge to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louinge peticion: but embrasinge her in his armes, commended her intente and consented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therefore as dyd *Ippocratea* her *Mithriulates* with her heare hangeinge loofe aboute her shulders. For shee loueth her husbände as dyd *Halicarnax* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Mausolus*: We haue also had aduertisement fence their departure that she (beinge browght vp as it were amonge soft fetters) hath with no lesse stoute corage susteyned the rorings and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husband or any of the maryners brought vp euen amonge the scourges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shal suffice. Let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse woorthy memorie. Therefore, whereas in the fyrste Decade we haue made mencion of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonus*, ye shal vnderstande that he accompanied *Christophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyrst vyage, and afterwarde made an other vyage of his owne charges with onely one shyppe. Ageyne, the fyrste yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer those coastes of *Hispaniola*, and searched all the fouthe syde of *Cuba* from the Easte to the weste, and sayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, althowgh some other say that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therefore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, sayled on further, and found other landes westward from *Cuba*, but such as the Admirall had fyrst touched. Wherefore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his course towarde the lefte hande, and rasing the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassinge also the mouthes of the goulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibachoa*, he arryued at the Region which in the fyrst Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulfe of fresshe water, which *Colonus* discovered, beinge replenished with great abundance of fyssh, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lyinge in the same, beinge distant Eastwarde from *Curiana* aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapan*, whiche also in the syxte booke of the fyrst Decade we sayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the greteſte plentie of the beste pearles, and not in *Curiana*. The kinges of these regions (whom they caul *Chiacones*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, sente certeyne spyes to enquire what newe nation was arryued in theyr coastes, what they browght, and what they wolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnysshed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle astonished to beholde owre shippes with the sayles spreade, wheras they vse no sayles, nor can vse but smaule ons if they wolde, by reason of the narownes of theyr canoas. Swarmynge therefore aboute the shippe with theyr canoas (which we may well caule *Monoxyla*, bycause they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to shute at owr men beinge yet within their ships and keepinge theym selues vnder the hatches as safely as yf they had byn defended with stone waules. But when owre men had shotte of certeyne pieces of ordinance ageynſt theym they were soo discomfited with the noyse and slawghter therof that they droue them selues to flight. Beinge thus disparceled, owr men chased them with the shippe bote, tooke many, and slewe many. When the kynges harde the noyse of the gunnes, and were certyfyed of the losse of their men, they sent ambafadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, fearinge the spoyle of theyr goodes and destruction of theyr people, if owre men shulde coomme alande in theyr wrathe and furye. They desyred peace therefore, as could bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges. For owre men vnderstoode not one woorde of theyr language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented owre men with three thousand of those weights of gold that the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Iesum*. Also a greate barell of woodde full of moste excellente masculine frankensence, weighing about two thousande and syxe hundreth poundes weight after eight ounces to the pounce: Whereby they knewe that that lande

The thyerde nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus.

Cuba

Beragua.
Vraba.
Cuchibacoa.
Paria.
Os Draconis
Curiana.
Cumana.
Manacapan.

Plentie of Pearles.

Monoxyla.
The Barbarians assayle owre men beinge in theyr shippes.
The vse of gunnes.

79

Great abundance of gold and frankensence.
Olibanum,

brought furthe greate plentie of frankenfence. For there is noo entercoure of marchaundies betwene th[e]inhabitantes of *Paria* and the fabeans beinge foo farre distante, whereas also the[y] of *Paria* knowe nothyng withowte theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankenfence whiche the[y] presented to owre men, they gaue them also a greate multitude of theyr peacockes, bothe cockes and hennes, deade and alyue, aswell to fatiffie theyr present necessitie, as also to cary with theym into Spayne for encrease. Lykewyfe certeyne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of goffampine filke fynely wrought after a straunge diuise with plesante and variable colours, hauing golden belles and fuche other spangles and pendauntes as the Italians caule *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaules*, hanging at the purfles therof. They gaue them furthermore speakinge popingiais of fundry colours as many as they wolde aske. For in *Paria*, there is no lesse plentie of popingiais, then with vs of dooues or sparous. Th[e]inhabitantes of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vestures made of goffampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The fasshion of theyr apparell, is fymple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes. But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autoritie is noo lesse emonge the people both in peace and warre, then is th[e]autoritie of other kynges in those Regions. Theyr villages are buylded in coompasse, along by the bankes of all that greate goulfe. Fyue of theyr princes came to owre men wyth theyr presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put in this historie in remembrance of foo notable a thinge *Chiaconus Chiauccha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauccha*, for they caule princes or kinges *Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polomus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goulfe beinge fyrste founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule, *Baia Natiuitatis*, bycause he entered into the fame in the day of the natiuitie of Christe: But at that tyme he only passed by it withowte anye further searhing, and *Baia* in the Spanyfsh tong, signifieth a goulfe. When *Vincentius* had thus made a league with these Princes, folowinge his appoynted course, he founde many regions towarde the East, desolate by reason of diuers fluddes and ouerflowynges of waters: also many standyng pooles in dyuers places, and thofe of excedyng largenes. He ceafed not to folowe this tracte vntyll he came to the poynte or cape of that moste longe lande. This poynte semethe as though it wolde inuade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphrike*. For it prospectethe towarde that parte of *Aphrike*, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bonæ Sperantiæ*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and saluage nere vnto the fea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, gatherethe thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled the pole antartike: But that poynte, onely feuen degrees. I suppose this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wryters of Cosmographie to bee cauled the greate Iland Atlantike, withowt any further declaringe eyther of the fyuation, or of the nature therof.

Sabea, is a contrey in Arabie, which bringeth forth frankenfence

Paria. Peacockes which wee caule Turkye cockes. Carpets and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popyngayes.

Th[e]apparell of the inhabitants of *paria*

Rulers for one yeare.

The greate goulfe of *Paria*.

Baia Natiuitatis the gret goulfe of *Paria*.

Vincentius maketh a league with v. princes. of *Paria*.

Mount *Atlas* in *aphrike*.

The great Iland *atlantike*

THE EIGHT BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



When Iohan the king of portugale lyued which was prediceffoure to hym that nowe reigneth, there arose a great contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concerninge the dominion of these newe founde landes. The Portugales, bycause they were the firste that durst attempte to searche the Ocean fea fence the memorie of man, affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, owght to pertyne to theym onely. The Castilians argued on the contrarie parte, that what so euer god by the ministracion of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common emong men: And that it is therefore lawfull to euery man to possesse fuche landes as are voyd of Christian inhabitours. Whyle the matter was thus vncerteynly debated, bothe parties agreed that the controuersie shulde bee decerned by the bysshope of Rome, and plighted faith to stande to his arbitrimente. The kyngedome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that great Queene *Hclifabeth* with her husbände: for the roialme of Castile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of Portugale, were cosyn germaynes of two systers: by reason wherof the dissention was more easely pacified. By th[e]assent therfore of both parties, Alexander the bysshop [of] Rome, the. vi. of that name, by th[e]autoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right line from the North to the South a hundreth leaques westwarde withowte the paralelles of those Ilandes whiche are cauled *Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*, Within the compase of this lyne (although foomme denye it) faulethe the poynte of this lande wherof we haue spoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Augustini*, otherwyfe cauled *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, faynt Augustines cape or poynte. And therefore it is not lawfull for the Castilians to fasten foote in the begynnyng of that lande. *Vincentius Annez* therefore, departed from thense, beinge aduertised of th[e]inhabitantes, that on the other fyde of the hyghe mountaynes towarde the

Contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales for the newe landes

80

The bysshop of Rome diuideth the land

Cabouerde loke decade i. lib. iii

The golden region
of Ciamba.

The Iland of S.
Iohannes

Fyue byshoppes
of the Iland[s]
made by the
bysshop of Rome

The Canibales of
the Iland of
Sancta Crux.

81

Beragua and
Vraba.

The ryuers of
Vraba.

South, lying before his eyes, there was a Region cauled *Ciamba*, which brought fourth greate plentie of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe of *Paria* (which certainly perteyneth to the dominion of Castile) he brought fume with hym to *Hispaniola*, and lefte them with the younge Admirall to lerne owre language. But he hym selfe, repayred to the courte to make earnest sute to the kynge that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyfe cauled *Burichena*, beinge distante from *Hispaniola* onely. xxv. leaques) bycause he was the fyrst fynder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made sute for this office, one Don Christopher a Portugale, the foone of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernoure of the Ilande: whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes slewe, with all the Christian men that were in the fame, excepte the byshop and his familiars, which fledde and shyfted for them felues, forfakynge the church and all the ornaments thereof. For yowre holynes hath consecrated fyue byshoppes in these Ilandes at the request of the most catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* beinge the chiefe cite of *Hispaniola*, *Garfia de Padilla*, a reguler fryer of the order of faynt Fraunces, is byfshop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of faynte Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alfonfus Mansfus* a licenciante, beinge bothe obseruantes of th[e] institution of faynt Peter. The fourth, is fryer Barnarde of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, and byfshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Iohannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoynted mynister of Christ, to teache the Christian faithe amonge the inhabitantes of *Dariona*. The Canibales shall shortly repent them, and the bludde of owre men shalbe reuenged: And that the fooner, bycause that shortly after they had committed this abhominable slaughter of owre men, they came ageyne from theyr owne Ilande of *Sancta Crux* (otherwyfe cauled *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*. and slewe a kynge whiche was a frende to owre men, and ate hym and all his famely, vtterly subuertinge his vyllage, vpon this occasion that violatinge the lawe of hostage, he had slayne feuen Canibales whiche were lefte with hym by composition to make certeyne canoas, bicause the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees and apter for that purpose, then doth the Ilande of *Sancta Crux* the chiefe habitation of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaynyng in the Ilande, certeyne of owre men sayling from *Hispaniola*, chaunced vpon them. The thyng beinge vnderstode by th[e] interpretoures, owre men quarelyng with theym and caulynge them to accompte for that mischeuous deede, they immediatly directed theyr bowes and venomous arrowes ageynst them, and with cruell countenaunces threatened them to bee quyet, leaft it shulde repent them of theyr comyng thyther. Owre men fearyng thei venomous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Beinge demaunded why they destroyed the vyllage, and where the kynge was with his famelye, they answered that they rased the vyllage and cutte the kynge with his famelye in peeces and ate them in the reuenge of theyr feuen workemen: And that they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary them to the wyues and chyl dren of theyr slayne woorkemen, in wytnesse that the bodyes of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not vnreunged: and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to owre men: who beinge astonysed at theyr fierces and crueltie, were enforced to diffimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelyng noo further with them at that tyme. These and suche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let passe leaft I shulde offende the cares of yowr holynes with suche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee sufficiently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefe foundations of owre purpose. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreate fumewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Also declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bryng forth: lykewise of the greatnes of the lande from the Easte to the West, and of the bredth therof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet vnknownen in the fame. Wee wyll therefore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces fence they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.

Beragua, cauled
Castella aurifera,
and Vraba,
Andaluzia noua.
Sum caule Peru,
Noua Castilia.
Beragua and
Vraba, regions of
Paria.
The frutesfulnes
of Vraba



Beragua therefore, they cauled *Castella Aurea*, that is golden Castile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andaluzia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they subdued, they choose *Hispaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitacion, soo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or bydyng place in the twoo regions *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all suche as attempte any vyages in those coastes, may reforte to them as to safe portes to bee refreshed when they are wery or dryuen to necessitie. All owre feedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelously encrease in *Vraba*. Lykewise blades, fettes, flippes, graffes, fuger canes, and

fuche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules as we haue sayde before. O maruelous frutesfulnes. Twentie dayes after the seede is sowne, they gather ripe cucumers, and such lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letufe, Borage are ripe within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pom-pones, within the space of. xxviii. dayes. *Dariena* hathe many natieue trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with fundry tastes, and holfome for the vse of men: of the which I haue thought it good to descrybe certeyne of the best. They nooryfthe a tree which they caule *Guaiana*, that beareth a frute much refemblynge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste sumwhat sharpe myxt with swetenes. They haue also abundance of nuttes of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyr to much sowernes. Wylde and baren date trees, growe of them selues in fundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biefommes, and eate also the buddes of the same. *Guarauana*, being higher and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

Ther is an other tree much lyke to a chesnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger fort of sygs, beinge holfome and of plefant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth foorthe frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferioure to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute lesse then any of the other, but of sweete faouure lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but sumwhat bygger. They are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe soo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with maste amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadyng so well, that when these frutes wax ripe, the wyneherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reason wherof, a greate multytude of them are become wylde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes fleshe is of much better taste and more holfome then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender fundry tastes and qualities in fuche as are noryshed therewith. The moste puiffaunte prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute brought from those landes, beinge full of scales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste exceedyng all garden frutes. For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*. The kynge hym selfe, gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes. For of a great number which they brought from thense, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other beinge putrified by reason of the longe vyage. All fuche as haue eaten of theym newly gathered in theyr natyue foyle, doo maruelously commende theyr swetenes and plefaunt taste. They dygge also owte of the ground certeyne rootes growyng of them selues, whiche they caule *Botatas*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Mylayne, or the greate puffes or musheroms of the earth. Howe soo euer they bee dressed, eyther fryed or fodde, they gyue place to noo such kynde of meate in plefant tendernes. The skyn is sumwhat towgher then eyther of nauies or mussheroms, and of earthy coloure: But the inner meate therof, is verye whyte. These are nooryshed in gardens, as we sayde of *Iucca* in the fyrste Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chesnuttes, but are sumwhat sweeter. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. We wyll nowe therefore entreate of thynges fencitiue. The laundes and desolate pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and such other monsters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn descrybed of owlde autours in tyme past. But there is especially one beast engendered here, in which nature hath endeuoured to shewe her cunningg. This beast is as bygge as an oxe, armed with a longe snoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an oxe and yet noo oxe. With the houfe of a horfe, and yet noo horfe. With eares also much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not soo open nor soo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder then the eares of any other beast. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her seconde belly as in a purse (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wryters) I haue spoken in the fyrst Decade which I doubt not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth of the fluddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Dariena* fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narowe chanel, scarily able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and runneth by the vyllage where they chose theyr dwellyng place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we sayde that *Vaschus* passed by, they found to bee. xxiiii. furlonges in bredth (which they caule a league) and of exceedynge depthe, as of two hundredre cubettes, faulyng into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They say that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Ifler* (otherwyfe cauled *Danubius*, and *Danowe*) fauleth into the sea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte: wherfore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche also they affirme to nooryfthe many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wryters testifie of *Nilus*, and especially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge sayled vp and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was sent ambafadoure to the Soldane of Alcayr at the commaundement of the moste eatholyke Kyng. What I may therefore gather owte of the wrytynges of so many lerned autours as concerninge the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they say that nature hath gyuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to spryng owte of the mountaynes of the moone

The frutesfulnes of Dariena.

Dyuers holsomy frutes of trees.

Guaiana,

Pine trees.
Date trees.

Guarauana

Mameis.

Guananala.

Houos.

Mirobalani.

Hogges fed with mirobalanes

Swynes fleshe of better tast and more holsom then mutton.

82

Frutes putrified on the sea.

Botatas.

Lions and Tygers.

A straunge beast.

The ryuers of Vraba.

The ryuer of Darien fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

A league is xxiiii. furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or Rio grandis.

A crocodile is much lyke an ente, but of exceedyng bignes.

The autoure of this booke was in Egypt

The riuer Nilus
in Egypte
Montes Lunæ.

The Portugales
nauigacions.

The ryuer Senega,
another channell
of the ryuer of
Nilus.
Crocodiles.
The thyerde and
fourth Nilus.
Delagartos.

83

The ryuers
springe owt of the
mountaynes.

Crocodiles
engendred on
other ryuers
besyde Nilus in
Egypte.
Byrdes and foules.

Popingayes.

A philosophical
discourse as
concerning
th[e]original of
springes and
ryuers.
The breadth of
the lande at
Vraba, from the
North Ocean to
the South sea.

A ryuer of
maruelous
byggenes loke the
first decade the
ix. boke.

The great ryuer
Maragonum. liber.
iv. decade. i.
Mariatambal.
Camamorus.
Paricora.

Paradise.
Loke. vi. boke
fyrst decade.

The sea.

The land enclosed
with two seas.

or the foonne, or owte of the toppes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the fame to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the Northe, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee fay in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubt. The Portugales also whiche sayle by the coastes of the Ethiopians cauled *Nigrita*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* passinge vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amonge theyr maruelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and ernestly affirme the fame to bee also deriued from the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other chanell of *Nilus*, bycause it bryngeth foorth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer noorysshed Crocodyles faunge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth through the Region of the *Nigritas*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north shore: but on the southe syde sandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then say of this thyerde: ye I may wel fay the fourth. For I suppose them also to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his company founde armed with scales as harde as shelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos* wherof wee haue made mention before. Shall wee say that these ryuers also of *Darien* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall frome the mountaynes of the moone, wheras they sprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and can by noo meanes haue the fame originall with *Nilus* in Egypte, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whence foo euer they are deryued. Whereas these other (as we haue fayde) springe owt of the next mountaines whiche deuyde an other fouth fea with noo greate dislaunce from the North Ocean. Wherefore it appeareth by experience of such as haue trauayled the worlde in owre time, that other waters besyde the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, maye lykewyse brynge foorth Crocodiles. In the marysshes also and fennes of the Regions of *Dariona*, are founde greate plentie of Phefauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules vnylke vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleafaunt noyfe. But owre Spanyardes, bycause they are ignorant in foulunge, take but fewe. Also innumerable poppingayes of fundry kindes are found chattering in the groues of those fenny places. Of these there are fume equall to Capons in byggenes, and fume as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuerfite of poppingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the fyrst Decade. For in the rafe of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe browght and sent to the courte a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly browght in lyke maner. There remayneth yet one thyng mooste woorthy to bee put in hyflorye: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Linie*, then into myne. For the thyng is foo marueylous in my estimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangled in the description hereof, then is fayde of the henne when shee feeth her younge chekyn inwrapped in towe or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the fouth sea is only fyxe dayes iourney by relation of th[e]inhabitanes. The multitude therefore and greatnes of the ryuers on the one side and on the other syde the narowenes of the lande, brynge me into fuche doubt howe it can coome to passe, that in foo little a space of three dayes iourney, meafuryng from the hygh toppes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe foo many and foo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north sea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde th[e]inhabitanes of the fouth. These ryuers of *Vraba* are but smaule, in comparifon of many other in those coastes. For the Spanyardes say, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulunge into the sea, they affirme to bee lyttle lesse then a hundreth myles in the fyrste coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue fayde elsewhere. For they saye that it fauleth from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes with foo swyfte and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnes therof, it dryueth backe the sea althrough it bee rowghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo fower or falte water, but that all the water was fresshe, sweete, and apte to bee dronke. Th[e]inhabitanes caule this ryuer *Maragonum*: And the regions adiacent to the fame, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Besyde those ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabaiba*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, and *Gaira*, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefore with my selfe, from whence these mountaynes beinge foo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe sydes, haue such great holowe caues or dennes of fuche capacite, and from whence they are fylled to caill foorth such abundance of water, hereof also askyng them the opinions of the inhabitanes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgements herein: Alleagyng fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cause, whiche they say to bee very hygh, which thyng also *Colonus* the first fynder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Addinge there vnto that the Paradise of pleasure is in the toppes of those mountaines whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, as he is fully persuaded. They agree therefore that there is greate caues within these mountaynes: but it resteth to consyder from whence they are fylled. If therefore all the ryuers of fresshe waters by th[e]oppinion of manye, do foo flowe owte of the sea as dryuen and compelled through the passages or pores of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake furth of the sprynges and directe their course to the sea ageyne, then the thyng is lesse to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo such seas haue enuironed any lande with foo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right syde, the great Ocean where the sonne goeth downe on the lefte hande: And an other

on the other fyde where the fonte ryfeth, nothyng inferioure to the fyrst in greatenes, for they suppose it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the sea of East India.

This lande therefore being burdened with so great a weight on the one fyde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to swalowe vp such deuoured waters, and ageyne to cast foorth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or sprynges are engendered of the conuerfion or turnyng of ayer into water distilling within the holowe places of the montaynes (as the most part thinke) we wyll gyue place rather to th[e] autoritie of them whiche stycke to those reasons, then that owre sense is satisfied of the full truth therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my selfe haue seene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner showers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth send furth certeyne ryuers by the fydes of the mountaynes, wherwith all suche trees as are planted on the steepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and suche other, are watered. And this especially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moste obsequious to your holynes, and twoo other byshoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebyshopp (whose name and tittle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For when wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately deliuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for owre pastyme to certeyne pleasaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyle Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym selfe in shutyng at byrdes whiche were in the bushes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other twoo byshoppes determined to clime the mountaynes to searche th[e] originall and springe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowyng therefore the course of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a shoure of rayne: the water wherof, faulyng into a trenche made with mans hand, encreaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the fydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is also seene in this famous towne of *Valladoleta* (where we nowe liuorne) in a certeyne greene close, not past a furlonge distant from the waules of the towne. I graunte therefore that in certeyne places by conuerfion of the ayrie dewe into water within the caues of suche mountaynes, many sprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I suppose that nature was not sollicitate to bryng furthe suche greate fluds by this so smaule industry. Twoo reasons therefore, do found beste to my iudgement: wherof the one is, the often faule of rayne: The other, the continuall autumne or spryng tyme which is in those regions beinge soo nere vnto the Equinoctial that the common people can perceauie no difference betwene the length of the day and the night through out al the yeare whereas these two seasons are more apte to engender abundance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent summer. An other reason in effect much lyke vnto the fyrst, is this: If the sea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge opened by the Southe windes, wee shal consent that vapours are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this lande must needes bee moisted with moo shoures then anye other, yf it bee as narowe as they saye, and enuironed with twoo mayne seas collaterally beateinge on the same. Howe so euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of such worthy men as haue recourse to those regions: And can noo lesse then declare the same albeit it may seeme incredible to some ignorant persons not knowyng the poure of nature to whome Plinie was persuaded that nothyng was impossible. Wee haue therefore thought it good to make this discourse by the way of argument, least on the one fyde, men of good lernyng and iudgement, and on the other fyde, suche as are studious to fynde occasions of quarelyng in other mens wrytynges, shulde iudge vs to bee so vndescrete lightly to gyue creditte to euery tale not beinge consonant to reason. But of the force and greate violence of those freshe waters, which repulginge the sea make so greate a goulfe (as wee haue sayde) I thinke the cause therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ryuers, whiche beinge gathered together, make so great a poole: and not one ryuer as they suppose. And for as muche as the mountaynes are excedyng hyghe and steepe, I thinke the violence of the faule of the waters to be of such force, that this conflicte betwene the waters, is caused by th[e] impulsio[n] of the poole that the salte water can not enter into the goulfe. But here perhappes some wyll marueyle at me why I shulde marueyle soo muche hereat, speakyng vnto me scornefully after this maner. Why dothe he soo marueyle at the greate ryuers of these Regions? Hath not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the owlde wryters? Haue not other regions also the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are sayde soo to ouercoome the sea, that freshe water may be drawne fortie myles within the same. These menne I wolde satisfie with this answer. The famous ryuer of *Padus*, in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Greekes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuidinge Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie from Italye, lyng at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moysture: And with a longe tracte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the sea Adriatike. The lyke is also to bee vnderstode of the other. But these ryuers (as owre men were enformed by the kynges) faul into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And some there are which affirme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narowe here. There commeth also to my remembrance an other cause: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wryte it.

84

Conuersion of ayer into water in the caues of mountaynes.

Showers of rayne in the caues of mountaynes

The often fal of rayne and continuall spryng tyme.
The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the sea and the South wynd.

Nothing impossible to the poure of nature.

The cause of the greatnes and force of the goulfe.

Hygh and steepe hylles

85

The fludde Eridanus.
Tanais.
Ganges.
Danubius.
Padus.
Alpes.

Ticinum.

The sea Adriatike: some caule the goulfe of Venes

An other reason

The ryuer
Alpheus.

Arethusa

Longe caues in
the mountaynes.

Perhappes therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Easte to the weste, if it bee narowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passethe through the holowe places vnder the sea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh forth at the fountayne or spryng *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, so is it possible that these mountaynes may haue suche longe caues perteynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beinge farre distante: And that the same waters comyng by soo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatlye encreafed by the conuerfion of ayer into water, as wee haue sayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permittege bothe to them whiche doo frendely enterprete other mens doinges, and also to the malicious scorners, to take the thyng euen as them lysteth. For hetherto I can make no further declaration hereof. But when the truth shalbe better knowen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the same to wryting. Nowe therefore, sofarre as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entend to deseribe the length and forme of the same.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, *Of the supposed Continent.*

The length and
forme of the Iland
Cap. S. Augusti.
Eyght tymes
bygger then Italy
besyde that part
whiche the
portugales
possesse. Italy
is in length a
thousand and two
hundreth myles,
and in breadth
four hundred
and ten.

Cardes of the sea

The carde of
Americus
Vesputius.

The carde of
Colonus.

The carde of
Iohannes de la
Cossa.

86

The carde of
Andreas moralis.

The maner of
measuring the
cardes.

Loke decade i.
liber. iii.
The Iland of
Cabouerde.

Maragnonum
Os Draconis

A league.
Cuchibacoo.

Caramairi.
Carthago.
The Iland *Fortis.*
Vraba.
Beragua.



That lande reacheth forth into the sea euen as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a Pigmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that part therof which the Spaniardes haue ouer runne from the sayde Easte poynt which reacheth towarde the sea Atlantike (the ende not beinge yet founde towarde the Weste) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italye. And by what reafon I am moued to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shal vnderstande. From the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye their requestes who wylled me fyrste in yowre name to wryte these thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeuoure that all thinges myght coome forth with dewe tryall and experience. Wherupon I repayred to the byshoppe of *Burges* beinge the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore feerety together in one chamber, we had many instrumetes perteynyng to these affayres as globes and manye of those mappes which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawn by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Vesputius* is sayde to haue put to his hande, beinge a man mozte experte in this facultie and a Florentyne borne: who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, hadde sayled towarde the fourth pole many degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrst front of this land to bee brooder then the kynges of *Vraba* had perswaded owre men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, *Colonus* the Admiral whyle he yet lyued and seached those places had gyuen the beginnyng with his owne handes: Wherunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieutenant had addid his iudgement, for he also, had sayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyse, as many as thought them selues to haue any knowledge what perteyned to meafure the lande and the sea, drewe eerteyne cardes in parchement as concernyng these nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which *Iohannes de la Coffa* the coompanion of *Fogeda* (whom wee sayde to bee slayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the hauen *Carthago*;) and an other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had fet forth. And this aswell for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom these tractes were as wel known as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Cosmographie which teacheth the deseriptioun and meafuringe of the sea. Conferinge therefore all these cardes togyther, in euery of the whiche was drawn a lyne expreffinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke owre compases and beganne to meafure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we sayde to bee included within the lyne perteynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawn by the paralelles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundreth leagues further towarde the weste (which they haue nowe also seached on euery syde) we founde three hundreth leagues to the enterance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thense to *Os Draconis*, feuen hundreth leagues: but sumwhat lesse in the deseriptioun of fume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyardes wyl that a league conteyne foure myles by sea and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoo*, which beinge passed, there is a goulfe on the left hande, we meafured three hundreth leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoo*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the hauen *Carthago* (which sum caule *Carthagena*) we found about a hundreth and feuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues. From thense to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the vyllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyardes haue apoynted theyr habitacion, only. xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Daricna* to the ryuer of *Beragua*

where *Nicuesa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundreth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer whiche wee fayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Matthei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loosinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owre cardes, onely a hundreth and fortie leagues: Yet many other which of late tyme haue come from these partes, haue deferybed many moo leagues in this tracte from the ryuer of *Sancti Matthei*: In which also, they place dyuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba* lyinge before it, whose kynges name is *Facies combusta*. Lykewife an other ryuer cauled *Zobroba*: after that, *Vrida*: and then *Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, foo cauled of th[e] inhabitants. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre these numbers togyther, yowe shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand fye hundreth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fyue thousande and feuen hundreth myles from the poynt of *Sancti Matthei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of the losse men. But we may not leaue here. For after this, one *Astur Ouetenses*, otherwyse named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebriffa* (which bringeth fourth many lerned men) faylinge frome this ryuer towarde the weste, ouer ranne manye coastes and leagues: But the myddeste of that shore, bendethe towarde the North: And it is therfore directly placed in order with the other. Yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about three hundreth leagues. Hereby maye yowe gather what is the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhappes wee shall hereafter haue further knowleage. Let vs nowe speake fumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starres. This lande therfore, although it reache fourth from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hathe the poynt bendyng to toward the fouth, that it loseth the sight of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne feuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the poynt herof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we haue fayde. Leauinge this poynt and faylinge toward *Paria* the north starre is feene ageyne, and is so much the more lyfted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more towarde the Weste. The Spanyars therfore, haue dyuers degrees of eleuations, vntyl they come to *Dariena* beinge their chiefe station and dwellynge place in those landes. For they haue forfaken *Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees. But from hense the lande doth foo muche bende towarde the North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of the strayghtes of Hercules pylers: especially yf wee measure certeyne landes founde by them towarde the Northe fyde of *Hispaniola*. Emonge the which, there is an Ilande, about three hundreth and. xxv. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche haue seached the same, named *Boiuca* or *Agnanco*, in the which is a continual spryng of runnyng water of such maruelous vertue, that the water therof beinge dronk, perhappes with fume dyete, maketh owld men younge ageyne. And here must I make protestacion to yowre holynes, not to thynke this to bee fayde lightly or rashely. For they haue foo spredde this rumour for a truth throwghout all the courte, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wifedome or fortune hath diuided from the common fort, thinke it to be true. But if yowe shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that I wyll not attribute so greate poure to nature: but that god hath noo lesse referued this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to searche the hartes of men, or to gyue substance to priuation, (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shall beleue the fable of *Colchis* of *Eson* renouate, to bee as trewe as the wrytinges of *Sibylla Erythrea*. Albeit perhappes the scoles of phisicians and naturall philosphers wyll not muche stycke to affirme that by th[e] use of certeyne secrete medecines and dyete, the accidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and deferred, which they wyll to bee vnderstoode, by the renouation of age. And to haue fayde thus much of the length and breadthe of these Regions, and of the rowghe and hugious mountaynes with their watery caues, also of the dyuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men amonge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chyld, mee thought my bowelles grated and that my spirites were maruelouflye troublede for verye pitie, when I readde in the poet Virgyl howe *Achemenides* was lefte of *Vlyffes* vpon the sea bankes amonge the gigantes cauled *Cyclopes* where for the space of many dayes from the departinge of *Vlyffes* vntyll the commyng of *Eneas* he ate none other meate but only berryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyards whiche folowed *Nicuesa* to inhabite *Beragua*, wolde haue estemed hawes and berryes for greate delicates. What shulde I heare speake of the heade of an affe bowght for a greate price, and of such other extremities as men haue suffered in townes befeaged? After that *Nicuesa* hadde determyned to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennes of the foyle, he attempted to searche *Portum Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poynt cauled *Marmor*, if he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his fouldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them aswell for their defence as for huntynge (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges stode them in greate steade) nor yet fumtymes from the flayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any frutefull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the fouldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almoste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pesos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreinge of the

R. Sancti Matthei.

R. Aburema Scutum Cateba R. Zobroba. Vrida. Duraba. Cerabaro. Hiebra.

Note.
R. d. los perdidos
The nauigation of Iohannes Dias.

The eleuation of the pole.

The iurisdiction of the Portugales.
Paria.

Dariena. Beragua.

Hercules pylers.

87
The Ilande Boiuca or Agnanco.
A water of maruelous vertue.
The renouation of age.

The accidentes of age may bee hydden.

Achemenides. Vlysses. Eneas.
Extreme hunger.

This was at the siege of hierusalem.

Portus Bellus Marmor.

Mangy dogs eaten.

A mangy dog dere sold.

Broth of a mangy
dogs skynne.
Toades eaten

A deade man
eaten.

83

Note.

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyarsd caule
Pediarias.

price, they fleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangyng therto, amonge the bushes. The day folowyng, a certeyne footeman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and stynkyng. He brought it home with hym, fodde it, and eate it. Many reforted to hym with theyr dyffhes for the brothe of the fodde skynne, proferinge hym for euerye dyffhesfull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo toades and fodde them which a ficke man bought of hym for twoo fyne shertes curiously wrought of lymen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderyng abowte to seeke for vytayles, founde in a pathway in the myddeft of a fyelde, a deade man of th[e]inhabitanes whiche had byn slayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and stynkyng. They drewe hym a fyde, dismemberde hym secreatly, rosted hym and eate hym, therewith affwagyng theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheafauntes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght seafon, went a fyshyng amonge the reedes of the marysshes, lyued only with slyme or mudde for the space of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepinge and almoste deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of *Beragua* vexed with these and suche other a[f]flictions, were browgh[t]e from the number of seuen hundreth threcore and ten souldiers, scarcely to fortie, beinge nowe also added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were slayne of th[e]inhabitanes. But the refydewe consumed by famen, breathed owt theyr wery fowles, openyng a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeafinge the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. Consyderinge therefore after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respecte to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goo to bryde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared ageynst their commyng. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe suppley of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce herafter I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnderstande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes. Thus I byd yowe hartely farewell: from the courte of the mooste Catholyke kyng, the daye beefore the nones of December, in the yeaere of Christe, M. D. XIII.



THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE,
TO THE BYSSHOPPE OF ROME LEO THE TENTH.



Was determynd (moſte holye father) to haue elofed vp the gates to this newe worlde, ſuppoſinge that I had wandered farre enough in the coaſtes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me from thence, which cauſed me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from certeyne of myne acquaintance there, but alſo frome *Vaſchus Nunnez* whome we ſayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confetherates, to haue vſurped the gouernance of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicueſa* and *Anciſus*, Lieuetenantes. By his letter wrytten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderſtand that he hath paſſed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knowen to vs, from the other mayne ſea on the ſouth ſyde of this lande hetherto vnknown. His epiſtelle is greater then that cauled *Capreensis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely ſuche thynges as we thought moſte woorthy to bee noted. *Vaſchus* ſoo behaued hym ſelfe in theſe affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges

diſpleaſure conceaued ageynſt hym, but alſo made hym fo fauorable and gracious good lorde towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his coompanions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attemptes. Wherefore I deſyre yowre holynes to inclyne yowre attentiu eares, and to conſyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue brought to paſſe in theſe great enterpryſes. For this valiante nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers ſubdued to the Chriſtian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but alſo myriades of men. *Vaſchus Nunnez* therefore, whether it were that he was impacient of Idlenes (for a valiente mynde can not reſt in one place or bee vnoccupied) or leaſte any other ſhulde preuent hym in ſoo great a matter (ſuſpecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both theſe cauſes, and eſpecially for that the kyng had taken diſpleaſure with hym for ſuch thynges as he had doone before, toke th[e] aduenture vpon hym with a fewe men to brynge that to paſſe which the ſonne of kyng *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue byn doone with the ayde of a thouſande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the ſame purpoſe. Aſſemblyng therfore certeyne of the owlde ſouldiers of *Dariena*, and many of thoſe whiche came lately from *Hiſpaniola*, allured by the ſame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armye of a hundreth foureſcore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnyſhed and redie to take his vyage by ſea, whyle the wynde ſerued hym, he departed from *Dariena* with one brygantine and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule Canoas as wee haue ſayde. Fyrſt therfore arryuyng in the dominion of *Careta* kyng of *Coiba* and frende to the Chriſtians, and leauyng his ſhyppes and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therwith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he fyrſt entered into the region of kyng *Poncha*, who ſtedde at his comyng as he had doone before. But *Vaſchus* ſent meſſengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promyſyng hym frendſhip and defence ageynſt his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entyfed with the fayre ſpeache and frendely profers bothe of owre men and of the Caretans, came to owr men gladly and wyllyngely makyng a league of frendſhippe with them. *Vaſchus* enterteined hym very frendely, and perſuaded him neuer thereafter to ſtande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embraced, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaſchus* a hundreth and ten poundes weyght of golde. of that pounce which the Spanyardes caule *Pefum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reaſon he was ſpoyled the yeare before as we haue ſayde. *Vaſchus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of owre thynges, as counterfet rynges, Chriſtal ſtones, copper cheynes and braſelettes, haukes belles, lokyng glaſſes, and ſuche other fyne ſtuſſe. Theſe thynges they ſet much by and greatly eſteeme. For ſuche thynges as are ſtraunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue alſo to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte,

Vaſchus Nunnez,
gouernor of
Dariena.

The newe ſouth
Ocean.

Commendation of
the Spanyardes.

A valient mynd
can not bee ydle.

A deſperate
aduenture

Vaſchus his vyage
toward the golden
mountaynes.

Careta kyng of
Coiba

Kyng *Poncha*

89

A hundreth and x.
poundes weyght
of golde.

Strange thynges
are counted
precious.

Lacke of iren	<p>bycaufe they lacke Iren and all other metals except golde: by reafon wherof they are enforced with greate labour to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houfes, and efpecially to make theyr boates holowe withoute instrumentes of Iren, with certeyne sharpe ftones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus <i>Vafchus</i> leauynge all thynges in fafetie behynde hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne guydes and labourers which <i>Poncha</i> had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as alfo to cary his baggages and open the ftraightes through the defolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beaftes. For there is felddoome entercourfe or byinge and fellynge betwene thefe naked people, bycaufe they ftand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vfe of money. But yf at any tyme they exercife any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchanginge golde for houfholde fluffe with theyr confines whiche fumewhat efteeme the fame for ornamente when it is wrought. Other fuperfluities they vtterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr fweete libertie, forafmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this caufe, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much worne with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyr fcoutes certeyne priuie markes whereby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and fpoyle and infefte them felues on bothe fydes with mutual incurfions priuillie in the nyght feafon. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with owre carpenters, he paffed ouer the horrible mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyinge in the way, ouer the which he made brydges eyther with pyles or trunkes of trees. And here doo I let paffe manye thynges whiche they fuffered for lacke of neceffaries, beinge alfo in maner ouercome with extreme labour, leaffe I fhulde bee tedious in reherfinge thynges of fmaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omitte fuche doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled <i>Quarequa</i>, and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the fame name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed fwordes made of wodde, longe ftuaes hardened at the endes with fyer, dartes alfo and flynges. He came proudly and cruelly ageynft owre men, and fent meffengers to them to byd theym ftande and procede no further: demaundyng whyther they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came foorth and fhewed hym felfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approching towarde owre men, he thretened them with a lions countenance to depart from thenfe except they wolde bee flayne euery mothers fonne. When owre men denyed that they wolde goo backe, he affayled them fiercely. But the battayle was fone fynnyfhed. For as foone as they harde the noyfe of the hargabufies, they beleued that owre menne caryed thunder and lyghtenyng about with them. Many alfo beinge flayne and fore wounded with quarels of croffebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Owre men folowyng them in the chafe, hewed them in piefes as the butchers doo fleffhe in the shamwelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a fhulder, and from fume the necke from the bodye at one ftroke. Thus, fyxe hundreth of them with theyr kyng, were flayne lyke brute beaftes. <i>Vafchus</i> founde the houfe of this kyng infected with moft abhominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, fmoth and effeminately decked, which by the report of fuch as dwelte abowte hym, he abufed with prepofterous venus. Of thefe abowte the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges. For (as we haue fayd) the Spaniardes vfe [t]he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynft the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wylde boares or bartes. In foo muche that owre Spaniardes haue founde theyr dogges noo leffe faythful to them in all daungious and enterpryfes, then dyd the Colophonians or Caftabalenfes which intituted hole armies of dogges foo made to ferue in the warres, that beinge accuftomed to place them in the fore froonte of the battayles, they neuer fhrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the feure punyffhement which owr men had executed vppon that fylthy kynde of men, they reforted to them as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them al fuch as they knewe to bee infected with that peffilence, fpettyng in their faces and cryng owte to owre men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owte of the worlde from amonge men as contagious beaftes. This flinkyng abomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exercifed onely by the noble men and gentelmen. But the people lyftinge vp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuoufly offended with fuch vyle deedes. Affirmyng this to bee the caufe of theyr foo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempeftes wherwith they are foo often troubeled: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr fets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers difeafes infue, as they fimplie and faythfully beleue, althowgh they knowe none other god then the foonne, whom onely they honoure, thinkyng that it dooth bothe gyue and take awaye as it is pleaed or offended. Yet are they very docible, and eafye to bee allured to owre cuftomes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleafunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may bee wrytten with latin letters as wee fayde of th[e] inhabitants of <i>Ilyfpaniola</i>. It is a warylke nation, and hath byn euer hetherto moleftous to theyr bortherers. But the region is not fortunate with frutful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge fumewhat colde by reafon of theyr heyght. And</p>
A ftone in the ftecte of Iren.	
Superfluities hynder libertie.	
Carpente.s.	
Brydges.	
The region of Quarequa.	
Kinge Quarequa is dryuen to flyght.	
Hargabusies.	
Croffebowes	
vi. C. [fix hundred] Barbarians are slaine vnnaturall lechery.	
90	
The vfe of dogges in the warre ageynft the naked Barbarians.	
Naturall hatred of vnnaturall finne.	
<i>Palatini</i> . I wolde all men were of this opinion.	
The haruest is great and the woorkemen but fewe.	
Warrylyke people.	
The hygher the coulder.	

therefore the noble men and gentelmen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from *Quarequa*, in which they founde only blacke Moores: and those excedyng fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne blacke mores fayled thether owte of *Aethiopia* to robbe: and that by shippewrackle or fume other chaunce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. Th[e]inhabitanes of *Quarequa* lyue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Here *Vaschus* leauinge in *Quarequa* many of his fouldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauayles and hunger, fell into dyuers difeases) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palaice of kynge *Poncha*, to the prospect of the other fouth sea, is only fyxe dayes iorney: the which neuerthelesse by reason of many hynderances and chaunces, and especially for lacke of vytayles, he coulde accomplyshe in noo leffe then. xxv. dayes. But at the length, the feuenth daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the guydes of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght see the other sea soo longe looked for, and neuer seene before of any man commynge owte of owre worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to fley, and went him selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrst possession therof. Where, faulynge prostrate vpon the grounde, and rayfinge hym selfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lyftyng vppe his eyes and handes toward heauen, and directyng his face toward the newe founde fouth sea, he poored forth his humble and deuout prayers before almyghtie God as a spirituall sacrifice with thankes gyuing, that it had pleafed his diuine maiestie to referue vnto that day the victorie and praife of so greate a thyng vnto hym, beinge a man but of smaule witte and knowlege, of lyttle experience and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his coompanions to coome to hym, shewyng them the greate mayne tea heretofore vnknown to th[e]inhabitanes of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: defyring almyghtie God and the blessed virgin to fauour his beginnynges, and to gyue hym good successe to subdue those landes to the glorie of his holy name and encrease of his trewe religion. All his coompanions dyd lykewyse, and prayed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no leffe manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage shewed his fouldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hartes, and to behoulde the lande euen nowe vnder theyr feete, and the sea before theyr eyes, whiche shulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great laboures and trauayles nowe ouerpassed. When he had fayde these woordes, he commaunded them to raise certeine heapes of stones in the steede of alters for a token of possession. Then descendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, leaft such as might come after hym shulde argue hym of lyinge or falshod, he wrote the kynge of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayfed heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nexte kynge toward the fouth whose name was *Chiapes*. This kynge came forth the ageynste hym with a greate multitude of men: threateninge and forbyddyng him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Herevpon, *Vaschus* fet his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to assaile theyr enemies, and to esteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they shulde bee shortly. Placeinge therefore the hargabufiers and maslies in the forefroonte, they saluted kynge *Chiapes* and his men with such a larome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, fawe the flames of fyer, and smelte the fauour of brymstone (for the wynde blew toward them) they droue them selues to flyght with fuche feare leaste thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed them, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom owre men purfuinge, fyrst keepinge theyr order, and after breakyng theyr array, slewe but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacifie those Regions as quietlye as they myght. Enteringe therefore into the palaice of kynge *Chiapes*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee loofed: wyllyng them to searce owte theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in soo doinge, he wolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, besyde many other benefites. But if he refused to coome, it shulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vtter subuerfion of his contrey. And that they myght the more assuredly do this meffage to *Chiapes* he sent with them certeyne of the guydes whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*.

Thus *Chiapes* beinge perswaded awel by the Quareqans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter wolde coome by th[e] experience whiche they had seene in them selues and theyr kynge, as also by the reasons of his owne men to whome *Vaschus* hadde made soo frendely promyses in his behalfe, came forth the of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submytted hym selfe to *Vaschus*, who accepted hym frendelye. They ioyned handes, embrased the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendeshippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe fydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaschus* foure hundreth poundes weyght of wrought goulde of those poundes whiche they caule *Pefos*: And *Vaschus* recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynges. Thus beinge made freendes, they remayned togyther a fewe dayes vntyll *Vaschus* fouldiers were coome which he lefte behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then caulinge vnto hym the guydes and labourers which came with hym from thense he

A region of black moores

Diseases of change of ayer and dyet.

The south sea.

Vaschus is coome to the syght of the newe south sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth the poore from the dungehyl

91

Hanniball of Carthage.

Vaschus taketh possession of the mountaynes

Kynge Chiapes.

A battayle.

Chiapes is dryuen to flyght.

Vaschus sendeth for king Chiapes.

Chiapes submitteth hymselfe to Vaschus.

iiii. C. [four hundred] poundes weyght of wrought gold

Vaschus addiceth
the newe land
and sea, to the
dominion of
Castile.

Kynge Coquera
is dryuen to flyght.
Vaschus vseth
both gentelnes
and rigour.

92

vi. C. [six
hundred] and
l. [fifty] poundes
weyght of wrought
gold

A goulfe of
threescore myles.
Saynt Michaels
goulfe

The manly corage
and godly zeale
of Vaschus

Ryches are the
synewes of warre
The faythfulnes of
kynge Chiapes.

A tempest on the
sea.

The increasing of
the South sea.

The Northe
Ocean.

Hard shyft in
necessitie.

93

The Region
Tumacca.

rewarded them liberallye and difmissed theym with thanks. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym selfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where affemblynge al his men together with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his souldiers with *Chiapes* that he myght th[e]efelie seache thofe coastes. And takyng with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hole tree (which they caule *Culchas* as th[e] inhabitants of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canoas*) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeyne of *Chiapes* men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to refyfte owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercoome and put to flyght. But *Vaschus* who entended to wynne hym with gentelnes, sente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to such as submit them selues, also cruell and feure to such as obstinately withstande them. Promynginge hym furthermore, that by the frendshippe of owre men, he myght bee well assured by th[e] example of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietness hym selfe, but also to bee reuenged of th[e] iniuries of his enemies. Wylling hym in conclusion foo to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentelnes profered vnto hym by foo greate a victourer, he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feelyng to repent him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing. *Coquera* with these woordes and exemples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bryngyng with him syxe hundred and l. [fifty] *Pesos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym lykewise as we sayd before of *Poncha*. *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palaice of *Chiapes*. Where, visitinge theyr companions, and restyng there a whyle, *Vaschus* determyned to seach the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachyng therof into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enterance of the mayne sea, they faye to bee threescore myles. This they named faynt Michaels goulfe, which they faye to bee full of inhabited llandes and hugious rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hauinge also with hym the same coompanye of fourescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly dissuaded by *Chiapes*, who earnestly desyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be foo tempestuous and stormy three moonethes in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had seene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepoles euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible *Vaschus*, impaciente of idlenes, and voyde of all feare in goddes cause, aunswered that god and his holy fayntes wolde prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenance wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ryches and treasure as the synewes of war ageynste the enemies of the faythe. Thus vnginge also th[e] office both of an oratoure and preacher, and hauinge persuaded his coompanyons, he lanced from the lande. But *Chiapes*, least *Vaschus* shulde any thyng doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered himselfe to goo with hym whither foo euer he went: And wolde by noo meanes assent that *Vaschus* shulde depart from his palaice, but that he wolde brynginge hym on the waye and take part of his fortune. Therefore as soone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such fourses and conflictes of water arose ageynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to reste. Thus beinge tossed and amafed with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vncherefull countenances. But especially *Chiapes* and his coompany, who had before tyme with theyr eyes seene th[e] experience of thofe ieopardies, were greatly discomforted. Yet (as god wolde) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte llande: Where makyng faste theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water foo encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the lland. They faye also that that south sea doth foo in maner boyle and swelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule therof, are seene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all suche as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyee, that hit scarfely riseth at any tyme a cubet aboue the bankes as they also confesse which inhabite the llande of *Hispaniola* and other llandes situate in the same. The llande therefore beinge nowe drye by the faule of the water, they reforted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and fume fore brused, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brused, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with slippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with grasse accordyng to the presente necessitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome shippewracke, beinge almost consumed with hunger, bycause theyr vytayles were vtterly destroyed by tempeste. Th[e] inhabitants declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynge of the sea amonge thofe llandes as often as it rysethe or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moste boyll[r]ious as *Chiapes* towlde *Vaschus* before: Meanynginge (as they coulde coniecture by his woordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the twoo moones folowyng, countyng the moonethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refresshynginge hym selfe and his souldiers a whyle, and passyng by one vnprofitable kyng, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that fyde

of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came fourth ageynste owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouercoome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He hym selfe was also fore wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certeyne messengers of the Chiapeans to hym to returne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nether by promyffes nor threatenings. Yet when the messengers were instant, and ceased not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vtter defolation of his kyngedome if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length, he sent his sonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably enterteyninge, apparelinge hym gorgeously and gyuing hym many gyftes, sent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to persuade hym of the puiffaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of owre men. *Tumaccus* beinge moued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrde day, bryngyng nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that owre men defyred golde and pearles, he sent for fyxe hundreth and. xiiii. *Pefos* of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the biggest and fayrest perles besyde a great number of the smaulest forte. Owre men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these perles although they were not perfectly whyte bycause they take theym not owte of the sea muscels excepte they fyrst rost them, that they may th[e]felyer open them selfe, and also that the fyfthe maye haue the better taste, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dyshe, and fet more thereby then by the perles them selues. Of these thynges I was informed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* eoompanions whom he sent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of those sea muscels. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that owre men soo greatly regarded the bewtie of the perles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them selues to goo a fysshynge for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringyng with them twelue pounce weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounce. Thus reioyfyng on bothe parties, they embrased and made a league of continuall frendshippe. *Tumaccus* thought him selfe happie that he had presented owre men with such thankful gyftes and was admitted to theyr frendshippe: and owre men thinkyng them selues happie and blessed that they had founde suche tokens of great ryches, swalowed downe theyr spettle for thyrselfe. At all these doinges, kyng *Chiapes* was present as a wytne and eoompanion. He also reioyfed not a lyttle, aswell that by his conductyng he sawe that owre men shulde be satisfied of theyr desyre, as also that by this meanes he had declared to the next kyng his bortherer and enemie, what frendes he had of owre men, by whose ayde he myght lyue in quietnes and bee reuenged of his aduerfarie if neede shulde soo requyre. For (as wee haue fayde) these naked kynges infeste them selues with greuous warres onely for ambition and desyre to rule. *Vaschus* bofeth in his epistell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous secreates of *Tumaccus* hym selfe as concernyng the greate ryches of this lande: wherof (as he fayth) he woold vtter nothyng at this presente, for asmuche as *Tumaccus* toulde it him in his eare. But he was informed of bothe the kynges, that there is an Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one kyng, and hym of soo great poure, that at suche tymes of the yeare as the sea is caulme, he inuadethe theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchas*, spoyling and caryng a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland is distant from these coastes, onely twentie myles: Soo that the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the sea, may bee seene from the hylles of this Continent. In the sea nere about this Ilande, sea muscels are engendred of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers. In these are perles founde (beinge the hartes of those shell fyshes) often tymes as bygge as beanes, sumtymes bygger then olyues and such as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue desyred. Although this Ilande bee soo nere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng therof in the mayne sea without the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with this ryche communication, fantasyinge nowe in maner nothing but princes treasures, beganne to speake fierce and cruell woordes ageynst the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng hereby too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a nearer bonde of frendship. Yet therefore raylyng further on hym with spytefull and opprobrious woordes, he swore great othes that he woold furthwith inuade the Ilande, spoylyng, destroyng, burnyng, drownyng, and hangyng, sparinge neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therewith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the two kynges *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterpryse vntyll a more quiete season, bycause that sea was not nauigable withoute greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnyng of Nouember. Wherin the kynges seemed to faye trewe. For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wryteth, great roryng of the sea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reason of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers also descending from the toppes of the mountaynes the same time of the yeare, and ouerflowyng theyr bankes, dryuyng downe with theyr vyolence greate rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the same season, dyd greatly moleste them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were vexed in the night with could: and in the day tyme, the heate of the sonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, forasmuche as they were nere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the eleuation of the pole. For in such regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the soone and other hotte planettes, doo chiefly exercise theyr influence: Although the antiquitie were of an other

Kyng *Tumaccus* is driuen to flyght.

Golde and perles.

Muscels of the sea.

Fysshing for perles. xii pounce weyght of perles.

The thyrst of golde.

Ambition amonge naked men.

This Ilande is cauled *Margarita* *Dives*, or *Dites*. A kyng of greate poure.

Bigge perles.

Cleopatra, queene of Egypt resolued a pearle in vineger and drunke it, price. v. thousande pounce of owr mony.

The fiercenes of *Vaschus*.

94

Great ryuers faulyng from mountaynes.

Thunder and lyghtnyng in Nouember.

Colde in the nyght nere the Equinoctiall.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

The natiuitations
[? nauigations] of
the Portugales
towards the southe
pole.

Antipodes.
He meaneth S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.

The starres about
the southe pole.

Lactea via.

A simylitude
declarynge
Antipodes.

opinion, supposinge the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and defolate by reason of the heate of the foonne hauinge his course perpendiculerly or directly ouer the same: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they faile yearely to th[e]inhabitanes of the fouth pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath byn men of singular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is most certeyne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euen they also were men: whose propertie is to erre and bee deceaued in many thynges. Neuerthelesse, the Portugales of owre tyme haue fayled to the fyue and fystie degree of the fouth pole: Where, coompassinge abowte the poynt thereof, they myght see throughowte al the heauen about the same, certeyne shynnyng whyte cloudes here and there amonge the starres, lyke vnto theym whiche are feene in the tracte of the heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They say, there is noo notable starre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of owres which the common people thynke to bee the pole it selfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the same fauleth benethe the Ocean. When the fonne descendeth from the myddeste of the exiltree of the woorld from vs, it ryfethe to them, as a payre of balances whose weyght inclynnyng from the equall poyse in the myddeste towards eyther of the fydes, causeth the one ende to ryse as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is spryng tyme with them: And summer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it sufficeth to haue fayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therfore returne to the hystorie and to owre men.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Aschus by th[e]aduice of kynge *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, determyned to deferre his vyage to the fayde Ilande vntyll the nexte spryng or summer, at which tyme *Chiapes* offered hym selfe to accompany owre men and ayde them therein all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaschus* had knowlege that these kynges had nettes and fysshynge places in certeyne stations of that sea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fysh for sea muscels in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpose they had certeyne dyuers or fysshers exercised frome theyr youthe in swymmyng vnder the water. But they doo this onely at

certeyne tymes when the sea is calme, that they may th[e]selfe come to the place where these shell fyshes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, foo much ly they the deaper and nerer to the bottome. But the lesfer, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the bryme of the water. Lykewyfe the lease of all, as it were their nieses, are yet nearer to the superficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeste forte whiche lye loweste, the fysshers descende the depthe of three mens heyght, and sumtyme foure. But to the dowghters or nieses as their successon, they descend onely to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes also, after that the sea hathe byn disquyeted with vehemente tempestes, they fynde a greate multytude of these fysshes on the sandes, beyng dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water. The perles of these whiche are founde on the sande, are but lytle. The fishe it selfe, is more pleasaunte in eatyng then are owre oylers as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the sweete faufe of all meates, caufed owre men foo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of sea muscels (as Aristotell supposed) or the byrthe or spaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleaue continually to the rockes, or wander by coompanies in the sea by the guydinge of th[e]eldeste: Whether euerye fyfthe bryng foorth the one perle or more, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Also whether theye bee fylled frome the rockes wherunto theye cleaue, or maye bee easlye pulled awaye, or otherwyse faule of by them selues when theye are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyfe whether perles bee harde within the shelle or softe, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truste or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Also, as foone as I shall bee aduerted of the arryual of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre men, I wyll desyre hym by my letters to make diligent searche for these thynges, and certifye me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee slacke or omytte any thyng herein. For he is my verye frende: and one that taketh greate pleasure in confyderyng the woorkes of nature. And surelye it seemeth vnto me vndecente, that wee shoulde with fylence ouerslyppe so greate a thyng whiche aswell in the owlde tyme as in owre dayes, hathe, and yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to emmoderate desyre of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shalbe able hereafter with perles to fatiffie the gredye appetite of suche as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Asopus*. So that frome hensforth we shal neyther enue nor

The maner of
fysshynge for
perles.

The kindes of
perles.

95

Dyuers questions
as concernyng
perles

Petrus arias

Wanton and
superfluous
pleasures.
Cleopatra.
Asopus.

reuerence the nyse frutefulness of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea. But lette vs nowe returne to owre purpose. *Vaschus* therefore determined with the fysshers of *Chiapes* to proue what myght bee doone in his fyfhe pooles or stations of sea muscules. *Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obediente to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boyst[r]yous, coomnaunded thirtye of his fysshers to prepare them selves and to reforte to the fysshinge places. *Vaschus* fente onelye fyxe of his men with them to beeholde them frome the sea bankes, but not to coommitte them felues to the daunger of the sea. The fysshinge place was distante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durste not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reason of the furye of the sea. Yet of the muscules whiche lye hygher, and of fuche as were dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water, theye broughte fyxe greate farthels in the space of a fewe dayes. The perles of these were but lyttle, aboute the bygnes of fmaule fytches: yet verye fayre and bewtyfull, by reason theye were taken newlye owte of the fyfthe, beinge yet rawe. And that they shulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bignes of these sea musculs, they fente many of them into Spayne to the kynge with the perles, the fyfthe beyng taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. These shelle fyfthes therefore beyng thus founde here in soo manye places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doo argue the ryche treafurye of nature too bee hyd in those coastes, forasmuche as fuche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle synger of a gigantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the hole hande of the gyante (for hetherto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the confynes of *Vraba*) when theye shall haue thorowly searched all the coastes and secreates of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with these synges and ioyfull of his good successe in these enterprifes, determined by an other waye to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the village. He gaue therefore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Confailyng hym to continue faythfull to the christian kynge his lorde and maister. Thus embrasinge the one the other, and ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he bore to owre men. *Vaschus* leauing his sicke men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the refydue, hauinge also with him for guydes three of *Chiapes* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeyne kynge cauled *Teaocha*: who beinge aduertised of the coommyng of owre men, of whose famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye gladde therof and enterteyned them honorably: So that for a token of his frendely affection towarde them, he gaue *Vaschus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eyght ounces to the pounde: Also twoo hundreth bigge perles: but not fayre, by reason theye were taken owt of the musculs after they had byn sodden. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaschus* recompensed hym with certeyne of owre thynges. Lykewise rewardyng his guydes the seruantes of *Chiapes*, he dismissed them with commendations to theyr lord. Kyng *Teaocha* at the departure of owr men from his palaiace, dyd not onely appoint them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certeyne slaues in the steepe of beastes to cary theyr vytayles, bycause they shulde passe through many desertes, baren and rowgh mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, ladyng them with salted and dried fyfhe, and breade of those regions, made of the rootes of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He also commaunded his sonne not to depart from owr men vntyl he were licenced by *Vaschus*. By theyr conductinge therefore, *Vaschus* came to the dominion of an other kyng whose name was *Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bortherers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran, whether it were that his giltye conscience for his mischeuous actes, put him in feare that owre menne wolde reuenge the fame, or that he thought hym selfe inferior to resist them, fled at theyr commyng. *Vaschus* wryteth that in these regions in the mooneth of Nouember he was fore afflicted with greate heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that fyde of the mountaynes hath lyttle water: In soo muche that they were in daunger to haue perished but that certeyne of th[e] inhabitants shewed them of a spryng which was in the secrete place of a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all speade sent twoo quycke and stronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gourdes and fuche water vesselles as *Teaocha* his men broughte with them. Of th[e] inhabitantes, there durst none depart from there coompany bycause the wyld beastes doo foone inuade naked men. For in those mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the springe, they faye that theye are sumtymes taken owte of there houfes in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doores bee well sparde. It shall not bee frome my purpose here to declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in this matter. Theye faye therefore that the laste yere the regyon of *Dariena* was noo lesse infested and trowbeled with a fierse tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paste with a wyld bore, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they affyrme that for the space of fyxe hole moonethes there passed not one nyghte withowte summe hurte doone: soo that it kyled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, sumtymes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owre men haue nowe greate heardes of cattayle in those regions. They say also that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doores, bycause shee spared not men if shee mette fyrst with them. But at the length, necessitye enforced them to inuente a policye howe they myght bee reuenged of fuche bludshed. Searchyng therefore dilygently her footestepes, and folowyng the pathe wherbye shee was accustomed in the

Stoidum.
Taprobana.

The fysshing place
of king Chiapes.

Golde in maner in
euery house.
The ryche
treasure of
nature.

The golde mynes
of Dariena.

96

Kynge Teaocha
enterteyneth
Vaschus frendelye.
Twentie pounde
weyght of wrought
golde.

Desertes full of
wyld beastes.

Dried fyfthe

Kynge Pacra
a tyranne.

Greate heate in
the moneth of
Nouember.

Hurte by wyld
beastes.

A tyger.
Calidonia is a
foreste in
Scotlande.
Nemea is a wodde
in Greece.
Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egyprians
take Crocodiles.

The dogge tyger taken. The roynge of the tyger.	<p>nyght feafon to wander owte of her denne to feeke her praye, theye made a greate trenshe or pytte in her walke, coueringe the fame with hurdels whervppon they caste parte of the earthe and disperfed the refydue. The dogge tyger chaunfed fyrfte into this pitfaul, and fel vppon the poyntes of sharpe flakes and fuche other ingens as were of purpofe fixd in the bottome of the trenshe. Beynge thus wounded, he rored foo terryibly, that it grated the bowels of fuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and montaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyse of the horryble crye. When they perceaued that he was layde fafte, they reforted to the trenshe and flewe hym with ftones, dartes, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the dartes into a thoufande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all fuche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he wolde haue doone beynge alyue and loofe. One <i>Iohannes Ledifma</i> of Ciuile, a nere frynde to <i>Vafchus</i> and one of his coompanyons of his trauayles, toulde me that he hym felfe dyd eate of the fleshe of that tiger: and that it was nothinge inferyor to biefe in goodnes. Beynge demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger forafmuche as none of them had euer feene a tyger, they answered that they knewe hit by the fottes, fiercenes, agilyte, and fuche other markes and token wherby the anciente writers haue defcribed the tiger. For fume of them, had before tyme feene other spotted wilde beaftes, as lybardes and panthers. The dogge tiger beynge thus kylled, theye folowyng the trafe of his fteppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo younge fuckyng whelpes. But fhee was not in the denne at there coomynge. Theye fyrfte caryed awaye the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearynge leaſte they ſhulde dye bycauſe theye were very younge, entendynge when they were bygger to fende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboute there neckes, and caryed them agayne to there denne: whither returnynge within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye fuppofe that the damme in her furye tore them in pyeces and caryed them awaye, leſte anye ſhulde haue the fruition of them. For theye playnly affirme that it was not poſſible that they ſhulde bee loofed frome the chaynes alyue. The ſkynne of the deade tyger ſtuffed with drye herbes and ſtrawe, they fente to <i>Iiſpaniola</i> to the admyrall and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there lawes and fuccoure. It ſhall at this tyme ſuffyce to haue written thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe fuſteyned damage by there rauenyng, and alſo handeled the ſkynne of that whiche was ſlayne. Let vs nowe therefore returne to kynge <i>Pacra</i> frome whome wee haue digreffed. When <i>Vafchus</i> had entred into the houſes forſaken of <i>Pacra</i>, he fente meſſengiers to reconcyle hym as he had doone the other kynges. At the firſt he refuſed to coomme. But after threatenynge, he came with three other kynges in his coompanye. <i>Vafchus</i> writethe that he neuer fawe a more monſtrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath onely gyuen hym humane ſhape, and otherwyſe to bee worſe then a brute beaſte, with maners accordynge to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abuſed with moſte abhominable lechery the doughters of foure kynges his bortherers frome whome hee had taken them by vyolence. Of the fylthye behaoure of <i>Pacra</i>, of his crueltye and iniuries doone by hym, many of the other kynges made greuouſ coomplayntes to <i>Vafchus</i> as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuſte reuenger: Moſte humblye beſechnyng hym to fee fuche thynges punyſhed, forafmuche as theye tooke hym for a man fente of god for that purpoſe. Herevppon <i>Vafchus</i> afwell to wynde their good wylles, as alſo too ſhewe an exemple of terroure to fuche as vſed lyke faſhions, coommaunded that this monſtrous beaſte with the other three kynges whiche were ſubiecte to hym and of lyke conditions, ſhulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges, and their torne carkeſes to bee burned. Of theſe dogges whiche theye vſe in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges. For theye faye that theye runne vppon th[e] inhabitants armed after there maner, with noo leſſe fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynte towarde them with their fyngers: In foo muche that oftentymes they haue had no neede too dryue their enemyes too flyght with ſwoordes or arrowes: But haue doone the fame onely with dogges placed in the forefronte of their battayle, and lettynge them ſlyppe with their wache woorde and priuie token. Wheruppon the barbaryans ſtryken with feare by reaſon of the cruell countenaunces of the maſties, with their deſperate bouldenes and vnaccuſtomed houlyrge and barkynge, haue diſparceled at the fyrſte onſette and broke their arraye. Yet it chaunfeth otherwyſe when theye haue anye conflicte agaynſt the Canibales and the people of <i>Caramairi</i>. For theſe are fyerſer, and more warrelyke men: Alſo ſo experte arche[r]s, that theye can moſte certenlye direct their venemouſ arrowes agaynſt the dogges with fuche celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes: By reaſon wherof, theye ſumtymes kyl many of them. Th[e] inhabitants of theſe montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vſe onelye <i>Machanis</i>, that is certayne longe and broude ſwoordes made of woodde: Alſo flynges, longe pykes and dartes hardened at the endes with fyere. Whyle kynge <i>Pacra</i> yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by fayne meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his houſe. For owre men founde in his iewel houſe fyftye poundes weyght of golde. Beynge therefore demaunded where he had it, he answered that they whiche gathered the fame in thoſe montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all deade: And that ſenſe he was a chylde, he neuer eſteemed golde more then ſtoones. More then this, theye coulde not gette of hym. By this feure punyſhment executed vppon <i>Pacra</i>, <i>Vafchus</i> concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that prouynce. And</p>	
Tigers fleſh eaten. 97		
The bitche tyger.		
Tigers whelpes.		
A ſtraunge thyng.		
Kynge <i>Pacra</i>		
Naturall hatred of vyce.		
Foure kynges deuoured of dogges.		
The vſe of dogges in warre ageiſt naked men.		
The Canibales are experte archers.		
Swoordes of woodde.		
Fiftye pounde weyght of golde. 98		

by this meanes it came too paffe, that when he fente for the fycke men whiche he lefte behynde hym with kynge *Chiapes*, an other kynge whiche was in the mydde waye (whose name was *Bononiama*) enterteined them gentellye, and gaued them. xx. pounce weyght of pure wrought golde, besyde great plentye of vyttayles. And not this onely, but also accompanied them hym selfe vntyll he had brought them safelye frome his palaice into the domynion of *Pucra*: Where takynge eche of them by the ryghte handes, he delyuered them to *Vaschus* hym selfe, as a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and therewith spake to *Vaschus* in this effecte. Moofle myghtye and valyaunte vycourer, beholde I here delyuer vnto yowe, yowre coompanions in fuche plight as I receaued them: wiffhyng that I had byn afwell able to gyue them health, as they were hertely welcoume to fuche pore enterteinment as I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse whiche I haue founde bothe in yowe and them, he shall rewarde yowe whiche fendeth thunderynge and lyghtelyng to the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye giueth vnto good men plentie of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in dewe seafon. As he spake these woordes, he lyfted vpe his handes and eyes towarde the foonne whome they honoure for god. Then he spake further to *Vaschus*, sayinge: In that yowe haue destroyed and flaine owre vyolent and proude enemies, yowe haue browght peace and quyetnesse to vs and owre famelyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowe. Yowe haue foo ouercoome and tamed wyld monsters, that wee thynke yowe to bee fente from heauen for the punysshment of euyll men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of yowre myghtye swoorde, wee maye hereafter leade owre lyues withowte feare, and with more quietnesse gyue thanks to the giuer of all good thynges for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When th[e]interpretoure had toulde *Vaschus* that kyng *Bononiama* had sayde these woordes, and fuche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thanks for his humanitye declared towarde owre men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentilnesse. *Vaschus* wryteth that he lerned manye thynges of this kynge as concernynge the greate rycheffe of these regions: But that he wolde at this present speake nothyng therof: And reherfethe the fame as thynges lyke to haue good successe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduancement meaneth, I doo not well vnderstande. But he playnely feemeth hereby to promysse manye greate thynges. And surelye it is to be thought that accordynge to his hope, great riches maye bee looked for. For they came in maner into none of th[e]inhabytauntes houses, but that they found in them, eyther bresteplates or cures of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therefore thus by a symilitude of owre houfes: If amonge vs any man of great poure were moued with the defyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and wolde enter into Italye with a mayne force as dyd the Gothes in tyme paste, what abudaunce of Iron shoulde he haue in their houfes: where as he shulde fynde in one place a fryngpan, in an other a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a spytte, and these in maner in euery pore mannes houfe, with fuche other innumerable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iren is plentifully engendred in fuche regions where they haue foo greate vse therof. Owre men also perceaued that th[e]inhabytantes of these regions do no more esteeme golde then we do Iren: nor yet foo muche after they sawe to what vse Iren ferued vs. Thus muche haue I thoughte good to write too yowre holynesse of fuche thynges as I haue gathered owte of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouthe of such as were his companyons in these affayres. As wee receyue them, so wee gyue them vnto yowe. Tyme which reueleth all secretes, shall hereafter mynyster larger argument of wrytynge. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate thyng in searchof the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundreth fourescore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* broughte with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threescore and ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayde he nowe vsed in these daungerous aduentures, leauynge euer the crafed men behynd hym in the kynges houfes all the waye that he went. But they moofle especiallye fell into fundrye diseases, whiche came latelye from *Hispaniola*. For they were not able to abyde fuche calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of those regions, and wyld herbes without salte, drinkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lackinge or vnwholfome, where as before their stomakes had byn vsed to good meates. But the owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all forowes, and exceedynge tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, and watchynge: In so muche that merilye they make their boofte that they haue obserued a longer and sharper lent then euer yowre holynesse inioyned. For they saye that for the space of foure hole yeares, they eate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fyfhe, and verye feldoomes fleshe: yea, and that sumtime for lacke of al these, they haue not abhorred from mangye dogges and fylthy toades as wee haue fayde before. The owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, I caule those whiche fyrste folowed the capytaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lyuynge. But lette vs nowe omytte these thynges, and retourne to *Vaschus* the vycourer of the montaynes.

Kynge
Bononiama. frende
to the christians.
Wroughte golde.

The oration of
kynge Bononiama

The sparke of the
lawe of nature, is
the lawe written
in the hartes of
men.

Hiperbole.

Great plentye of
golde.

A symilitude for
the profe of
plentye of golde.

Iren more
estemed then
golde.

99
Change of dyet
is daungerous.

Owlde souldiers.

A longe lent.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



When *Vaschus* had remained thirtye dayes in the palayce of kynge *Pacra*, concilynge vnto hym the myndes of th[e]inhabitanes and prouidinge thynges necessarye for his coompanions, he departed from thense by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Teaocha* his men, and came too the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the same name. He founde the fydes of these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was nothinge apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleasante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabyted this infortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* ouerpasse with al speede for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them bothe with hym to guyde hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Teaocha* his men with vytayles and rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deserte wooddes, craggie mountaynes, and muddy marysshes full of fuche quamyres that men are oftentymes swalowed vp in them if they looke not the more warelye to their fiete. Also through places not frequented with refoerte of men, and fuche as nature had not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as th[e]inhabitanes haue feldoom entercourse betwene them, but onely by fundrye incurtions, the one to spoyle and deftroie the other: Beynge otherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withowte worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures. Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorye of another kynge whose name was *Buchebuca*, they founde all thynges voyde and in silence: For the kynge and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to fetche hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrste submytte hym selfe, but also promysse his ayde with all that he myghte make: Proteflynge furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that owre men wolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym selfe for verye shame and grieue of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorablye accordyng vnto their dignitey, bycause his store of vitayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendshyppe, he sent owre men many vesselles of golde, desyryng them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abilytye were greater. By whiche woordes the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his bortherers. By reason wherof, owre men were enforced to departe from thense more hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfore, they espyed certeine naked men coomminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* commaunded his armye to slaye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what theye wold haue. Then one of them to whom the other seemed to gyue reuerence, spake in this effect. Owre lorde and kinge *Chiorifus*, greeteth yowe well: Wyllyng vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puiffaunce and vertue wherby yowe haue subdued euell men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes. For the whiche yowre noble factes and iustyce, as he doothe honour yowre fame, soo wolde he thinke him selfe moste happye if he myght receiue yowe into his palaice. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beynge owte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpasse hym, he hath sent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and fryndshyppe towarde yowe. And with these woordes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirtye dishes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to coomme to their kynge, he shulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kynge whyche was their bortherer and mortall enemye, was verye ryche in golde: And that in subduyng of hym they shulde bothe obtaine greate rycheffe, and also delyuer them from dayly vexations: whiche thinge myght easilye be doone by their helpe bycause they knewe the countrey. *Vaschus* put them in good coomforte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more esteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lyttell neede of golde, hauyng not th[e]use of pestiferous money. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym selfe rycher then euer was *Craffus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarye for a thousande vses: And confesse that golde is desyred onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconuenience. For owre gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pride and wantonnes of owre tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignominye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men maye leade a free and happy life without tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyens, and towels, with fuche other innumerable wherof they haue no vse, excepte perhappes the kynges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dryue awaye hunger with a pyece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broylde fische or

Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

Desertes.

Kynge *Buchebuca*
submytteth him
selfe

Vessels of golde.

Kynge *Chiorifus*
sendeth *Vaschus*
xxx. dysshes of
pure golde.

100

Axes of Iren more
esteemed then any
gold

Superfluous and
effeminate
pleasures

An example of the
lyfe of owre fyrst
parentes.

summe kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but feldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wpe them eyther on the foules of their feete, or on their thyghes, ye and fumtymes on the skynnes of their priuye members in the fleede of a nappekynne. And for this cause doo they often tymes washe them felues in the ryuers. Owre men therfore wente forwarde laden with golde, but fore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kyng *Pocchorrofa* who fledde at their coomynge. Here for the space of thirte dayes they fylled their emptye bellies with breade of the rootes of *Maizium*. In the meane tyme *Vaschus* sente for *Pocchorrofa*: who beyng allured with promisses and fayre woordes, came and submytted hym felse brynginge with hym for a present. xv. poundes weighte of wrought golde, and a fewe slaues. *Vaschus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertised that he shulde passe through the dominion of a certayne kyng whose name was *Tumanama*. This is hee whome the soonne of kyng *Comogrus* declared to bee of foo great poure and fearefull to all his bortherers, and with whom many of *Comogrus* familyers had byn captiue. But owre men nowe perceiued that they measured his poure by their owne. For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes, in respecte to the poure and pollicye of owre men. Owre men were also enformed by fuche as dwelte neare aboute *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as they supposed: Nor yet fo ryche in golde as younge *Comogrus* had declared. Yet consulted they of his subduyng: whiche they thoughte they myght th[e]asflyer bryng to passe bycause *Pocchorrofa* was his mortall enemye, who moste gladly promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therefore, leauynge his sycke men in the vyllage of *Pocchorrofa*, tooke with hym threcore of his moste valiante souldiers, and declared vnto them howe kyng *Tumanama* had oftentimes spoken proude and threatnyng woordes ageynste them: Lykewise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitye to passe through his dominion: And that he thought is beste to fette vppon hym vnwares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to gyue th[e]aduenture, promysinge that they wolde folowe hym whether fo euer he wente. They determined therfore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tumanama* not knowynge of their fooden comyng, myght haue no leasure to assemble an armye. The thyng came to passe euen as they had deuyfed. For in the fyrste watche of the nyght, owre men with the *Pocchorrosians*, inuaded the vyllage and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prisoner suspectyng nothinge lesse. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abused vnnaturally: Also fourcore women which he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykewise a greate number of his gentelmen and subiectes were taken stragelynge in other vyllages neare aboute his palaice. For their houfes are not adherent together as owres bee, bycause they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whirlewyndes by reason of the sudden chaunges and motions of the ayre caused by the influence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughowte all the yeare, forasmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue sayde before. Their houfes are made of trees, couered and after their maner thetched with the stalkes of certayne towghe herbes. To the palayce of *Tumanama*, was onely one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the palayce it felse. Eyther of these houfes were in length a hundreth and twentie pases, and in bredth fyftie pases as owre men measured them. In these two houfes the kyng was accustomed to muster his men as often as he prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therfore, was thus taken captiue with all his Sardanapanicall famelye, the *Pocchorrosians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde, that he shulde shortly bee hanged. The other kynges also his bortherers, reioyfed at his myffortune. Wherby owre men perceaued that *Tumanama* was no lesse troublesome to his neighbours, then was *Paera* to the kinges of the southe fyde of the montaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threatned hym greuoufly: But in deede entended no euell toward him. He spake therfore sharpely vnto hym with these woordes: Thou shalte nowe suffer punyishment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryde and abhominations. Thou shalte knowe of what poure the christians are whom thou haste foo contemned and threate[n]ed to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haste often tymes made thy vaunte emonge thy naked slaues. But thou thy felse shalte fyrste feele that whiche thou haste prepared for other: And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe. Neuerthelesse guynge a priuye token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappye *Tumanama*, fearyng and beleuyng that *Vaschus* had mente in erneste as he commaunded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares desyred pardon: Protestyng that he neuer spake any fuche woordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their droonkenesse had so abused their toonges whiche he coulde not rule. For their wynes although they bee not made of grapes yet are they of force to make men droonken. He declared furthermore that the other kynges his bortherers had of malice surmyfed fuche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycause he was of greater poure then they. Moste humbly desyryng *Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a iuste vycetourer, foo to gyue no credytte vnto their vniuste and malycious complaintes. Addyng herevnto that if it wolde please hym to pardon hym not hauinge offended, he wolde bringe him great plentie of gold. Thus layng his ryght hande on his breaft, he swore by the sonne, that he euer loued and feared the chrystians fence he fyrste harde of their fame and vycories: Especially when he harde faye that they had *Machanas*, that is, swoordes sharper then

Plentie of gold
and scarcenesse
of meate.

King *Pocchorrosa*
submytteth
hymselfe.
xv. pounde
weyghte of
wroughte golde.

Kyng *Tumanama*
looke decad. ii.
lib. iiii.

A good pollicye.

101

Kyng *Tumanama*
is taken prisoner.

The cause of
vehemente wyndes
nere the
Equinoctiall.

Kyng *Tumanama*
his palaice.

Vaschus his
woordes to kyng
Tumanama.

*Oderunt quem
nietuunt.*

Kyng *Tumanama*
his woordes.

Tumanama is
pardoned.

xxx pounde
weyghte of
wroughte golde.
lx. pounde
weyght of go'de.
102

They abhorre
labour.

The coloure of the
golden earthe and
a tryall of the
same.

Tokens of great
plentie of golde.

Vaschus fauleth
sicke.
Feeblenes of
hunger and
watchinge.

Kynge Comogrus
friendly to the
Christians.

The large and
fruitful plain of
Zauana.
The ryuer
Comogrus. 103

theafse, and such as cutte in pieces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directyng his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his swoorde in his hand, he spake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte) dare lyfte vppe his hande ageynste this swoorde of yowres wherwith yowe are able with one strooke to cleaue a man from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perswade yowe (o moste myghtye victourer) that euer suche woordes proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumanama* with trembeling spake these woordes, therwith swalowyng downe the knot of deathe, *Vaschus* seemed by his teares to bee moued to compassion: And speakyng to hym with chearefull countenance commaunded hym to bee loofed. This doone, he sente immediatly to his palaice for. xxx. pounde weyght of pure gold artificially wrought into fundry ouches whiche his wyues and concubynes vsed to weare. Also the thyrde daye folowyng, his noble men and gentrymen sent threcore pounde weight of golde for their fyne and raunsumme. *Tumanama* beyng demaunded wher they had that gold, answered that it was not gathered in his dominions But that it was brought his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the fouth. But the *Pocchorrofsians* and other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmyng that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certayne smaule graines of golde, to the gatheryng wherof, he neuer had any regarde, bycause they coulde not gette it without great and longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the fycke myne whiche *Vaschus* had left in the village of *Pocchorrofa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary in the yeare of Christe. M. D. XIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the fouth with fundrye instrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus passyng ouer the day of the natiuities of Christ without bodely labour, vppon fainte Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the fyde of a hyll not farre dystante from the palaice of *Tumanama*, where (as he faith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to bryng furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and syfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne smaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell feedes, amountyng to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of affaye before a notarie and wytnesse that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreable to the report of the bortherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by noo meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the fame. They suppose that he nothyng esteemed so smaule a portion. But other saye that he denyed his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, lease by reason therof the desyre of golde, myght intyse owre men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in deede the feely kynge was a prophet in soo thinkyng. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrofa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde townes in them bothe, if it shulde so please the kynge of Castyle: Aswell that they myght bee baytinge places and vytailyng houtes for suche as shulde iorney towarde the fouth, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendyng nowe therfore to departe from thense, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the grounde with certayne shynyng stoncs, seemed to bee a token of golde. Where causyng a smaule pitte to bee dygged lyttell beneath th[e]upper cruste of the earthe, he founde so muche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Castellanum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pefus*, but not in one grayne. Reioyfyng at these tookenes in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumanama* to be of good coomforte, promisyng hym that he wolde bee his frende and defender, soo that he troubeled not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Christians. He also perswaded hym to gather plentye of golde. Summe saye that he ledde awaye all *Tumanama* his women, and spoyled him lease he shuld rebell. Yet he delyuered his soonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte vppe with owre men, to learne their language and relygyon, that he myght thereafter the better vse his helpe aswell in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with owre men, as also more polytykely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger: In somuche that departyng from thense, he was fayne too bee borne vppon mennes backes in shietes of goffampyne cotton. Lykewyse also many of his fouldiers whiche were soo weake that they coulde nother go nor stonde. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of th[e]inhabytantes, who shewed them felues in al thynges wyllyng and obedyente. Also summe of them whiche were sumwhat feeble and not able to trauallye, although not greuoufly sycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domynion of kynge *Commogrus* a greate frende to the Christyans, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* commyng thether, he founde that the owlde kynge was deade, and his soonne (whome we so prayfed for his wisedome) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptised by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a stiepe hyll well cultured. Hauyng towarde the fouth a playne of twelue leages in breadth and veary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyonde this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two seas wherof we haue spoken before. Owte of the styepe hylles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth throwghe the fayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, receauyng into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ryuers, and so fauleth into the fouth sea. It is dystante from *Daricna*, aboute threcore and tenne leages

towarde the weste. As owre men therfore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus* (otherwyse cauled Charles by his christian name) mette them ioyfully and entertayned them honorably, gyuyng them their fyll of pleasaunte meates and drynkes. He gaue also to *Vaschus*, twenty pounce weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* recompensed him with thinges which he esteemed muche more: As axes and fundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a fouldiours cloke, and a faire sherte wrought with needle woork. By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a god amonge his bortherers. *Vaschus* at his departyng from hence, earnestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to remayne faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile, if they desyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse: And that they shulde hereafter more diligently applye them selues to the gatheringe of golde to bee sente to the great christian *Tiba* (that is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld bothe gette them and their posterity a patrone and defender ageinst their enemyes, and also obtayne great abundaunce of owre thinges. These affayres thus happily achiued, he wente forwarde on his vyage to the palaice of kyng *Poncha*, where he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena* to certifye hym that there were certayne shyppes coomme from *Hispaniola* laden wyth vyttayles and other necessaries. Wherefore takyng with him twentie of his moste lusty fouldiers, he made haste to *Dariena* with longe iorneyes: leauinge the refydue behynd him to folow at their leasure. He writeth that he came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many fore conflictes, and that he was yet neyther wounded, or loste any of his men in the battaile. And therfore in al his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuyng to almyghty god for his deluyery and preferuation from so many imminent perels. He attempted no enterpryse or tooke in hande any viage without th[e]inuocation of god and his holy faintes. Thus was *Vaschus Balboa* of a vyolente Goliath, tourned into *Helifeus*: And from *Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monsters. Beyng therefore thus tourned from a raffe royster to a polytyke and discrete capitayne, he was iudged woorthy to bee aduanced to greate honoure. By reason whereof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therevpon created the generall or Lieuetenant of the kynges army in those Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythfull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of suche as came lately frome thence. If yowre holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by suche thynges as I haue seene, I beleue these thynges to bee trewe, euen so th[e] order and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his coompanions warrellyke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therfore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynyng the earth with intollerable labour to breake the bones of owre mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in funder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the courte of infernall *Pluto*, to bryng from thence wycked golde the feede of innumerable mischeues, withowte the whiche notwithstandinge we may nowe scarsely leade a happy lyfe sith iniquitie hath so preuayled and made vs slaues to that wherof we are lords by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles and difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shal fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper crust of the earth, or in the sandes of ryuers dried vpe by the heate of sommer, onely wasshyng the earth softlye frome the same: And shall with lyke facilitate gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Cosmographers assent) obteyned not soo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowlege hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owte of owre knowen worlde to these vnknown nations: At the leaste, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwyse nothyng can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered defenders of their patrimonyes, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admittinge them otherwyse then by conquest: especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylde hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercyse but onely to manhunyng and tyllage after their maner. At the comyng therfore of owre men into their regions, they loke as fuerly to haue them faule into their snares as if they were hartes or wylde bores: and with no lesse confydence licke their lippes secreately in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eatte them greedely: If they mystruste them selues to bee the weaker parte, they truste to theyr feete, and flye swyfter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the matter bee tryed on the water, aswell the women as men can dyue and swimme, as though they had byn euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the large tracte of these regions haue byn hitherto vnknown. But nowe sith it hath pleased God to discouer the same in owre tyme, it shall becoome vs to shewe owre naturall loue to mankynde and dewtie to God, to endeuoure owre selues to bryng them to ciuilitie and trewe religion, to th[e]increase of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father who delytethe in owre destruction as he hath doone frome the begynnyng. By the good successe of these fyrst frutes, owre hope is, that the Christian religion shall streache soorth her armes very farre. Which thyng shulde the sooner coome to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially Christian Princes to whom it chiefly perteyneth) wolde put theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The haruest fuerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we haue sayde at the begynnyng, yowre holynes shall hereafter noorysne many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre wynges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of *Beragua* beinge the weste syde

xx. pounce weyght
of wrought goldVaschus returneth
to Dariena.The good fortune
of Vaschus.Vaschus was
turned from
Goliath to Elisius.O flaterynge
fortune, look his
death in the booke
of the I[er]emie[s]
lately founde.The earthe is owre
general niether.The courte of
infernall Pluto.There is a better
waye then this.The Spanyardes
conquestes.

Manhunters

104

The fieresnesse of
the Canibales.Owre duty to god,
and naturall loue
to mankynde.Th[e]offyce of
Christyan prynces
The haruest is
great. etc.*Beragua*.

Nicuesa.

of *Vraba*, and fyrst founde by *Colonus* the Admirall, then vnfortunately gouerned by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe leste in maner defolate: with the other large regions of those prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beastly iudenes to ciuilitie and trewe religion.

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Was determyned (moste holy father) to haue proceded no further herein, but that one fierye sparke yet remainynge in my mynde, wolde not suffer me to cease. Wheras I haue therfore declared howe *Beragua* was fyrste fownde by *Colonus*, my thincke I shulde commytte a heynous cryme if I shuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and fynally of the daungeours and perels, whiche he susteyned in that nauigation. Therefore in the yeare of Christe. 1502. in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoysed vppe his sayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iiii. shippes of fystie or.

iii. score tunne a peece, with a hundreth threscore and tenne men, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canarie* within fye daies folowinge, from thense arryuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he sayled from *Dominica* to *Hispaniola* in fye other daies. Thus within the space of the. xxvi. daies, with prosperous wynde and by the swyfte faule of the *Ocean* from the Easte to the west, he sayled from Spaine to *Hispaniola*: Which course is counted of the mariners to bee no lesse then a thousande and two hundrethe leaques. He taryed but a whyle in *Hispaniola*, whether it were wyllingly, or that he were so admonished of the viceroye. Directing therfore his vyage from thense towarde the weste, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Jamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the northe, he wryteth that he chaunfed vppon an Ilande more southwarde then *Jamaica*, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Guanassa*, so florysshinge and frutefull that it myghte seeme an earthlye Paradyse. Coaslyng alonge by the shores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slaues ageynst the streame. In these boates, was caryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The slaues fecynge owre men a lande, made signes to them with proude countenance in their maisters name, to stande owte of the waye, and threatned them if they wolde not gyue place. Their sympelnes is suche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatnes and straungenes of owre shippes. They thought that owre men wolde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligence at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the marte from other coastes of the Ilande. For they exceryse byyng and fellyng by exchaunge with their conynies. He had also with him good floore of suche ware as they stande in neede of or take pleasure in: as laton belles, rasers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne sharpe yelowe bryght stone, with handles of a stronge kynd of woodde. Also many other necessary instrumentes with kychen stuffe and vesselles for all necessary vses. Lykwise sheetes of gossampine cotton wrought of fundrye colours. Owre men tooke hym prysoner with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee losed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goodes to bee restored to wyne his fryndeshippe. Beinge here instructed of a lande lyeing further towarde the southe, he tooke his vyage thether. Therefore lytle more then tenne myles distant from hense, he founde a large lande whiche th[e] inhabitants cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and commaunded his chaplaine to faye masse on the sea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitantes flocked thither symplye and without feare, bringynge with them plenty of meate and freshe water, marueylyng at owre men as they had byn summe straunge miracle. When they had presented their giftes, they went sumwhat backwarde and made lowe curtesy after their maner bowinge their heades and bodyes reuerently. He recompensed their gentylnes rewardinge them with other of owre thynges, as counters, bralletes and garlandes of glasse and counterfecte stoones, lookyng glasse, nedelles, and pynnes, with suche other trashe, whiche seemed vnto them precious marchaundies. In this great tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Taia* and the other *Maia*. He writeth that all that lande is very fayre and holfome by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayer: And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground beinge partely full of montaines, and partely large playnes: Also replenyshed with many goodly trees, holfome herbes, and frutes, continuyng greene and floryshyng all the hole yeare. It beareth also verye many holy trees and pyne aple trees. Also. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof summe are frutefull and summe baren. It bringeth furth lykwysse of it selfe *Pelgoras* and wilde vynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He saythe furthermore that there is suche abundaunce of other pleasaunte and profitable frutes, that they passe not of vynes. Of one of those kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode

The fourth
nauigation of
Colonus the
Admirall.

From Spaine to
Hispaniola a
thousand and two
hundreth leaques

The florysshing
Ilande of
Guanassa.

Simple people.

A greate
marchaunt.

105

The regyon of
Quiriquetana or
Ciamba.

Gentle people.

The regyons of
Taia and Maia.

Seuen kyndes of
date trees.
Wylde vynes.

fwoordes and dartes. These regyons beare also goffampyne trees here and there commonly in the wooddes. Lykewife *Mirobalanes* of fundry kyndes, as those which the phisitians caule *Embllicos* and *Chebulos*, *Maizium* also. *Inca*, *Ages*, and *Battatus*, lyke vnto those whiche we haue fayde before to bee founde in other regions in these coastes. The fame nooryssheth also lyons, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewyfe fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: Emonge the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, whiche are in colour, bygnen, and taste, muche lyke vnto owre pehennes. He faith that th[e]inhabitanes are of high and goodly stature, well lymmed and proportioned both men and women: Couerynge their priuue partes with fyne breeches of goffampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may seeme the more cumlye and bewtiful (as they take it) they paynte their bodyes redde and blacke with the iuce of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for the fame purpose. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies: summe but parte: and other summe drawe the portitures, of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth beste to his owne phantasye. Their language differeth vtterlye from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ranne with as full course towarde the weste, as if it had byn the faule of a swyfte riuier. Neuerthelesse he determined to searche the Easte partes of this lande, reuolyunge in his mynde that the regions of *Paria* and *Os Draconis* with other coastes founde before toward the Easte, shulde bee neare theraboute as in deede they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quiriquetana* the. xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had failed thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer, without the mouth wherof he drewe freshe water in the sea. Where also the shoore was so cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptely caste anker. He writeth that the swifte course of the *Ocean* was so vehement and contrarye, that in the space of fortye dayes he coulde scarcelye sayle threscore and tenne leaques, and that with muche diffycultie with many fetches and compasynges, fyndyng him selfe to bee sumtimes repulsd and dryuen farre backe by the vyolente course of the sea when he wolde haue taken lande towarde the euenyng, leaste perhappes wanderynge in vnknown coastes in the darckeneffe of the nyght, he myghte bee in daunger of shypwracke: He writeth that in the space of eyght leaques, he found three great and fayre ryuers vppon the banckes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In these ryuers was also greate plentye of fysh and great tortoyfes: Lykewife in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lyng in the fande, and yanyng to take the heate of the soonne: Befyde dyuers other kyndes of beastes whervnto he gaue no names. He fayth also that the soyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beyng sumwhere stonye and full of rough and craggie promontories or poyntes reachyng into the sea. And in other places as frutfull as maye bee. They haue also diuers kynges and rulers. In summe places they caule a kyng *Cacicus*: in other places they caule hym *Quebi*, and sumwhere *Tiba*. Suche as haue behaued them selues valiantly in the warres ageynste their enemies, and haue their faces full of scarres, they caule *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddes whiche they cauled *Heroes*, supposed to bee the foules of fuche men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people, they caule *Chiuu*: and a man, they caule *Homem*. When they saye in their language, take man, they say *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare great shypptes: Before the mouthe wherof, leye foure smaule Ilandes full of florissing and frutfull trees. These Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From hense saylyng towarde the Easte for the space of. xiii. leaques flyll ageynste the vyolent course of the water, he founde twelue other smaule Ilandes. In the whiche bycause he founde a newe kynde of frutes muche like vnto owre lemondess, he cauled them *Limonares*. Wanderynge yet further the same waye for the space of. xii. leaques, he founde a great hauen enteryng into the land after the maner of a goulfe the space of three leaques, and in maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was *Nicuesa* losse afterwarde when he soughte *Beragua*: By reason wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the losse men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further contynuyng his course ageynste the furye of the sea, founde manye hyghe montaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the whiche (as he faythe) proceded sweete fauers greatly recreatyng and comfortyng nature. In so muche that in all this longe tracte there was not one of his men defeased vntyll he came to a region whiche th[e]inhabitanes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the hauen cauled *Cariyai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admyrall bycause the *Mirobalane* trees are natiue in the region therabout. In this hauen of *Cariyai*, there came about two hundredth of th[e]inhabitanes to the sea fyde with euerye of them three or foure dartes in their handes: Yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not refusyng straungers. Their commyng was for none other purpose then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what they broughte with them. When owre men had gyuen them sygnes of peace, they came swimmyng to the shypptes and desyred to barter with them by exchange. The admyrall to allure them to frendshippe, gaue them many of owre thinges: But they refused them, suspectyng summe disceate thereby bycause he wolde not receyue theirs. They wroughte all by sygnes: for one vnderfloode not a woorde of the others language. Suche gyftes as were sente them, they leste on the shore and wolde take no part therof. They are of fuche ciuilitye and humanitye, that they esteeme it more honorable to gyue then to take. They sente owre men two younge women beinge vyrgines, of commendable fauour and goodly stature,

Mirobalanes

Dyrdes and foules

People of goodly stature

They paynt their bodyes

The swyfte course of the sea from the East to the West.

Paria.

Freshe water in the sea.

Fetches and compasynges

106

Faire ryuers.

Great reedes

Great tortoyfes.

Dyuers languages.

Heroes.*Quatuor tempora*.Twelue Ilandes named *Limonares*.*Rio de los perdidos*.The region of *Quicuri*.The hauen of *Cariyai* or *Mirobalanus*

Ciuite and humane people

107 [Trees grow by the sea] syde.	fygnifyinge vnto them that they myghte take them awaye with them if it were their pleasure. These women after the maner of their cuntrye, were couered from their ancles sumwhat aboute their priuie partes with a certeyne clothe made of goffampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women vse to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore parte. Their longe heare, they binde yppe with fylletes, and winde it in sundry rowles as owre maydes are accustomed to do. The virgins which were sente to the Admirall he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gyftes, and sente them home ageyne. But lykewise all these rewardes and apparel they left vppon the shore bycaufe owre men had refused their gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and those very wyllngly) that by lernyng the Spanysh tonge, he might afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubeled with vehement motions or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre frome the shore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng also other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer searched thof: coastes, declaring that the sea rifeth and fauleth but lyttle there aboute. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospecte of this lande, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes of theyr branches into the grounde: which embrasing them causeth other branches to sprynge owt of the same, and take roote in the earth, bringynge fourth trees in theyr kynde successefully as dyd the fyrst roote from whence they had theyr originall, as do also the fettes of vines when onely bothe the endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his natural historie maketh mention of suche trees, describyng them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The Admirall wryteth also that the lyke beastes are engendered in the coastes of <i>Cariái</i> , as in other prouinces of these regions, and such as we haue spoken of before. Yet that there is one founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This beaste is of the byggenes of a greate moonkeye, but with a tayle much longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangynge by the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, and gatheryng strength by fwayinge her bodye twyfe or thryfe too and fro, she casteth her selfe from branche to branche and so from tree to tree as though she flew. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who perceauinge her selfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely fet on hym which gaue her the wounde, in so muche that he was fayne to defende hym selfe with his swoorde. And thus by chaunce cutting of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with muche a doo brought her to the ships where within a whyle, shee waxed tame. Whyle shee was thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of our hunters hadde chased a wyld bore owt of the maryshes nere vnto the sea syde. For hunger and desyre of fleshe, caused them to take double pleasure in huntynge. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the shippes, goinge a lande to recreate them selues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as soone as shee had espied the bore, fet vp her brystels and made towarde her. The bore lykewyse shooke his bristels and whette his teethe. The moonkey furiously inuaded the bore, wrapynge her tayle about his body, and with her arme referued of her victourer, helde hym so fast aboute the throte, that he was suffocate. These people of <i>Cariái</i> , vse to drye the deade bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and so referue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from <i>Cariái</i> , he founde a goulfe of such largenes that it conteyned. xii. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes so nere togyther, that they made a safe haven to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the haven which we sayde before to be cauled <i>Cerabaro</i> of th[e] inhabitants. But they haue nowe lerned that only the lande of the one syde therof, lyeinge on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte syde, is cauled <i>Aburema</i> . He saythe that all this goulfe is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenyshed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the sea to bee verie cleane without rockes, and commodious to cast anker: Lykewyse the sea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fysh: and the lande of both the fydes to bee inferior to none in frutfulness. At his fyrst arryuyng, he espied two of th[e] inhabitants hauynge cheynes about theyr neckes, made of onches (which they caule <i>Guanines</i>), of base golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beastes and foules. Of the two <i>Cariáians</i> whiche he brought with hym from <i>Cariái</i> , he was enformed that the regions of <i>Cerabaro</i> and <i>Aburema</i> were ryche in golde: And that the people of <i>Cariái</i> haue all theyr golde frome thense for exchange of other of theyr thynges. They towlde hym also, that in the same regions there are fyue vyllages not farre from the sea syde, whose inhabitants apply them selues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of these vyllages are these: <i>Chirara</i> , <i>Puren</i> , <i>Chitaza</i> , <i>Iurche</i> , <i>Atamea</i> . All the men of the prouince of <i>Cerabaro</i> , go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleasure in wearynge garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr priuie partes with a fyllet of goffampine cotton. Departinge from henre and coastynge styll by the same shore for the space of. xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he espied aboute three hundreth naked men in a company. When they sawe the shippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed owt aloude, with cruell countenaunces shakynge theyr wooden swoordes and hurlyng dartes, takynge also water in theyr mouthes and
Trees growynge in the sea after a straunge sort.	
Plinie.	
A straunge kynde of moonkeys.	
A moonkey feyghteth with a man.	
A conflict betwene a monkey and a wyld bore.	
The bodyes of kynges dryed and reserued	
<i>Cerabaro</i> .	
<i>Aburema</i> .	
Cheynes of golde.	
Plentie of golde. Fyue vyllages ryche in gold.	
Crownes of beastes clawes	
108	

spoutyng the fame ageynst our men: wherby they seemed to inſinuate that they wolde receaue no condition of peace or haue owght to doo with them. Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordinaunce to be ſhot toward them: Yet ſo to ouerſhute them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and peaceably with theſe newe nations. At the noyſe therfore of the gunnes and fyght of the flyer, they fell downe to the grounde, and deſyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendſhippe, they exchaunged their cheynes and ouches of golde for glaſſes and haukes belles and ſuch other marchandies. They vſe drummes or tymbrels made of the ſhelles of certeyne ſea fyſhes, wherewith they encourage them ſelues in the warres. In this tract are theſe ſeuē ryuers, *Acateba*, *Quareba*, *Zobroba*, *Aiaguitin*, *Vrida*, *Durriba*, *Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them ſelues ageynſte rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the ſeade of clokes. Departinge from henſe, he ſearched the coaſtes of *Ebetere* and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of *Zohoran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceaſeth the plentie and fruteſulnes of golde, in the tracte of fifty leagues or there about. From henſe onely three leagues diſtant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunate diſcourſe of *Nicueſa* we ſayde was cauled of owre men *Pignonem*. But of th[e] inhabitants the Region is cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte alſo aboute ſyxe leagues frome thenſe, is the hauen which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue ſpoken before) in the region whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Xaguaguara*. This region is very peopulous: but they go all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kyng and ſeuē of his noble men, had euery of them a lyttle plate of golde hangyng at their noſethrilles downe vnto theyr lypes. And this they take for a cumly ornamente. The menne incloſe theyr priuie members in a ſhell: And the women couer theyr with a fyllet of goſſampine cotton tyed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens they nooryſſhe a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue ſayde in an other place) groweth on a ſhrubbe muche lyke vnto an archichoke: But the frute is muche ſofter, and meate for a kyng. Alſo certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue ſpoken before. This tree, they caule *Hibuero*. In theſe coaſtes they mette ſumtymes with Crocodiles lyeing on the ſandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very ſweete fauour behynde them ſweete then muſke or *Caſtorcum*. When I was ſente ambaffadour for the catholike king of Caſtile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayer in Egipte, th[e] inhabitants nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* toulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermore that the fatte or fewette of them is equall in ſweetnes with the pleaſaunte gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of neceſſytie to departe from henſe, aſwell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarye and vyolente courſe of the water, as alſo that his ſhyppes were daily more and more putrified and eaten through with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of the water in all thoſe tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line. The Venetians caule theſe woormes *Biffas*. The fame are alſo engendred in two hauens of the cite of *Alexandria* in Egipt, and deſtroye the ſhyppes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubet in length, and ſumwhat more: not paſſyng the quantitie of a fynger in bygneſſe. The Spanyſhe mariner cauleth this peſtilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom before the great monſters of the ſea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Broma*, beyng alſo foore vexed with the contrary faule of the ſea, directed his courſe with the *Ocean* towarde the weſt, and came firſt to the ryuer *Hiebra*, diſtant onely two leaques from the ryuer of *Beragua*, bycauſe that was commodious to harborowe great ſhippes. This region is named after the riuer, and is called *Beragua* the leſſe: Bycauſe bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunfed vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he ſent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetaunte of *Hiſpaniola*, with the ſhyppes boates and threſcore and viii. men to the ryuer of *Beragua*, where the king of the region beinge naked and painted after the maner of the countrey, came towarde them with a great multitude of men waytyng on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuinge alſo ſynges of peace. When he approached nerer, and entered communication with owre men, certeyne of his gentlemen neareſte aboute his perſon, rememberinge the maieſtie of a king, and that it floode not with his honour to bargaen ſtondyng, tooke a greate floone owte of the ryuer, waſſhyng and rubbyng it veyry decently, and ſo put it vnder hym with humble reuerence. The kyng thus fyttyng, ſeemed with ſynges and tokens to inſinuate that it ſhuld be lawful for owre men to ſearche and viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherefore, the vi. day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certeyne of his company, he wente by lande a foote from the bankes of *Beragua* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whiche he affirmeth to be richer in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In ſo muche that emonge the rootes of the trees growyng by the bankes of the ryuers, and amonge the ſtones left of the water, and alſo where ſo euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde not paſte the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde the earthe taken owte therof, myxte with golde: Where vppon he determyned to faſten his foote there and to inhabyte. Whiche thyng the people of the countrey perceauyng and ſmellyng what inconuenyence and myſchiefe myght thereof enſewe to their countrey if they ſhulde permitte ſtraungers to plante their habitation there, aſſembled a great army, and with horrible owte crye aſſayled owre

Spytefull people.

Guns make peace.

Seuen golden ryuers

Note, where the plentie of golde endeth

Pignonem.*Vibba*.*Portus Bellus*.

Paynted people.

A ſtrange ſyght.

A ſhel in the ſteede of a copiece.

Crocodiles of ſweete ſauour. Alcayr or Babilon in Egipt

Shippes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egipte.

Broma.*Hiebra*.*Beragua*.

109

How the king of Beragua entertheyned the lyeuetenaunte.

Their reuerence to the kyng.

Golde in the ryuer Duraba.

Great plenty of golde.

Slynges and dartes.

Liberty more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyardes are dryuen to fight.
The Ilande of Iamaica.

A myserable case.

110

Necessitie hath no lawe howe farre lyfe is to bee esteemed.

A dangerous enterpryse.

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes found by Colonus.

Temperate regions and holsome aier

Cerabaro.
Hiibra.
Beragua.
Experte myners.

A gylly nature in golde.

Golden haruest.

men (who had nowe begoonne to buylde houses) soo desperately that they were scarcely able to abyde the fyrste brunte. These naked barbarians at their fyrst approche, vsed onely slynges and dartes: But when they came nearer to hande strookes, they foughte with their wooden swoordes whiche they caule *Machanas*, as wee haue sayd before. A man wolde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kyndeled in their hartes ageinst owre men: And with what desperate myndes they fought for the defenfe of their lybertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe or rycheffe. For they were nowe so voyde of all feare, and contemnyng death, that they neyther feared longe bowes or crossebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueyled) were any thyng discouraged at the terryble noyse of the gunnes shotte of from the shyppes. They retyred once. But shortly after encreafynge their noubber, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrste. They wolde haue byn contented to haue receyued owre men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instante that owre men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bortherers flocked togyther dayly, disturbyng them both nyght and daye sumtymes on the one syde and sumtymes on the other. The shypps lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much diffyculty and danger, they came to the Ilande of *Iamaica* lyenge on the south syde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, with their shyppes as full of holes as sieues, and so eaten with woormes, as though they had byn bored through with wimbles. The water entered so faste at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynefull labour of their handes emptied the same as faste, they were lyke to haue perysshed. Where as yet by this meanes they arryued at *Iamaica*, although in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceased not here. For as fast as their shyppes leaked, their strengthe dimynished so that they were no longer able to keepe theym from synkyng. By reason wherof, faulyng into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenne monthes among the naked people more myserably then euer dyd *Achemenides* emonge the gyantes cauled *Ciclopes*: rather lyuing then beinge eyther contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at such tymes as pleased the barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one ageinst an other, made greatly with owre men. For at suche tymes as they attempted warre ageinst their bortherers they woold sumtymes gyue owre men parte of theyr breade to ayde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by beggyng, yowre holyneffe maye easlye coniecture: Especially where all other accustomed foode is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleshe, butter, chiefe, and milke, wherwith the stomakes of our people of Europe haue euer byn noorished euen from their cradelles. Therefore as necessity is subiecte to no lawe, so doothe it enforce men to attempte desperate aduentures. And those the foner, which by a certeyne nobyltie of nature do no further esteeme lyfe then it is ioyned with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* therefore, intendynge rather to proue what god wolde do with hym and his companyons in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with promysfes of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter into one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*. Beyng thus tossed on the sea two and fro from rocke too rocke by reason of the shorteneffe and narrownes of the canoa, they arryued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispaniola*, beyng distant from *Iamaica* fortie leagues. Here his guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for the rewardes which he had promyfed them. But *Diegus Mendez* wente on forward a foote vntyll he came to the citie cauled *Sanctus Dominicus* beyng the chiefe and heade citie of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beinge enformed of the matter, appoynted hym two shyppes wherwith he returned to his maister and coompanyons. As he founde them, soo came they to *Hispaniola*, verry feeble and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Lette vs nowe therefore leaue these particulers, and speake sumwhat more of generals. In al those tractes whiche we sayde here before to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompanyons of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frutes, are floryshing and greene all the hole yeare, and the ayer so temperate and holsome, that of all his coompanye there neuer fell one man fycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme coulde or heate for the space of fyftie leagues from the great hauen of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiibra* and *Beragua*. Th[e] inhabitants of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxte that and the sayde ryuers, applye not them selues to the gatheryng of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the yeare: And are verry experte and cunning herein, as are owre myners of syluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experience in what places golde is mooste abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and suche as faule from the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stoncs. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer gather it excepte they vse certeyne religious expiations or pourgyng, as to absteyn from women, and all kyndes of plesures and delycate meates and drinckes, during all the tyme that their golden haruest lastethe. They suppoze that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thyng as god. Yet doo they praye to the soonne, and honour it when it ryfeth. But lette vs nowe speake of the montaines and situation of these landes.

From all the sea bankes of these regyons, exceeding great and hyghe mountaynes are seene towarde the Southe, yet reachynge by a continuall tracte from the Easte into the weste. By reason wherof I suppose that the two greate seas (wherof I haue spoken larg[e]ly before) are deuided with these montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Tyrrhenum*, from the sea Adriatyke, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of Venes.

For whiche waye soo euer they sayled from the poynt cauled *Promontorium*, *S. Augustini* (whiche perteyneth to the Portugales and prospecteth ageynste the sea Atlantike) euen vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hitherto westwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in syghte both nere hande and farre of, in all that longe rafe. These mountaynes were in fume place, smooth, pleasaunt and frutfull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwhere, hygh, rowgh, ful of rockes, and baren, as chaunfeth in the famous mountaynes of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and fuche other of lyke byggenesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleis. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the clowdes, in so much that (as they faye) the tops of them can feldome bee seene for the multitude of thicke clowdes which are beneath the fame. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrste fynder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaynes of *Beragua* are more then fiftie myles in heygth. He sayth furthermore that in the same region at the rotes of the mountaynes the way is open to the fouth sea, and compareth it as it were betwene Venice and *Genua*, or *Ianua* as the Genues wyll haue it cauled, whiche fable that theyr citie was buylded of *Ianus*. He affirmeth also that this lande reacheth soorth towarde the fouth: And that from hense it taketh the begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owte of the narowe thygh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanye, and Pannonye, to the Sarmatians and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of Riphea and the frozen sea, and embrase therwith as with a continuall bonde, all T[h]racia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea* and *Hellefpontus* southwarde, and the sea *Euxinus* and the marysshes of *Maotis* in *Scythia* northwarde. The Admirall supposede, that on the lefte hande in saylynge towarde the weste, this lande is ioyned to *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the frofen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that fouth sea which we fayde to bee founde by *Vaschus*, and owre Ocean) shulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that lande: And that the waters of these seas doo not onely inclose and compasse the fame without diuision as Europe is inclosed with the seas of *Hellefpontus* and *Tanais*, with the frofen Ocean and owre sea of *Tyrrhenum* with the Spanyshe seas. But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth signifie and lette that the fayde two seas shulde not so ioyne together: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Northe, as we haue sayde before. It shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therefore speake sumwhat of the breadth of the fame. We haue made mention before howe the fouth sea is diuided by narowe lymettes from owre Ocean, as it was proued by th[e] experience of *Vaschus Nunnez* and his coompanions which fyrst made open the way thither. ¹ But as dyuersly as the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are sumwhere narowe and in fume place brode, euen so by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in fume parte reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narowe lymettes from sea to sea, with valleis also in fume places, wherby men maye passe from the one syde to the other. ¹ Where we haue descrybed the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to bee situate, these seas are diuided by smaule distaunce. Yet owght we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to bee very large if we shall graunt *Maragnonum* to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the fame owght to persuaade vs. For in fuche narowe caues of the earth, there can bee no swalowing goulfes of such byggenesse as to receaue or nooryshe so great abundance of water. The lyke is also to bee supposed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba* which we fayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* in fume place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie: Also three myles in breadth, and so to faule into the sea. We must needs graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whiche the ryuer passeth from the hyghe mountaynes of *Dabaiba* from the Easte and not from the west. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers faulynge from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Owre men caule this ryuer *Flumen. S. Iohannis*. They say also that from hense it fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* by seuen mouthes as doothe the ryuer of *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte. Lykewyse that in the same region of *Vraba* there are in fume places narowe streyghtes not passynge systene leaques: and the same to bee saluage and without any passage by reason of dyuers marysshes and desolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*: But the Spanyardes accordynge to their varietie, caule them *Tremadales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zahondaderos*. But before we passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from owr purpose to declare from whense these mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theyr name accordynge vnto th[e] antiquities of th[e] inhabitantes. They faye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of greate magnanimitie and wyfedome emonge theyr prediceffours in owlde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all th[e] inhabitantes of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade gaue her diuine honour and

Hyghe and greate
mountaynes.

Tyrrhenum is
nowe cauled
Tuscane
Cap. S. Augustini.
Vraba.
Cerabaro.
Frutful
mountaynes.
Apennini are
mountaynes
which diuide
Italy into. ii.
partes
Beragua
The mountaynes
of *Beragua* higher
then the clowdes.
Mountaynes of
fiftie miles heygth.
111

Ianus otherwyse
cauled Iaphet, the
son of Noe.

Italy is lyke vnto
a legge in the
sea, and the
mountaynes of the
alpes, are in the
thyghe thereof

Colonus his
opinion of the
supposed
Continent.
By this coniecture,
the way shuld be
open to Cathay by
the hiperboreans

Looke the
nauigation of
Cabote. deca[de].
iii. lib. vi.

The breadth of
the lande

The regions of
Vraba and
Beragua.

The greate ryuer
Maragnonus.

The greate riuer
Dabaiba, or sancty
Iohannis.

The ryers haue
theyr increase
from the sprynges
of the mountaynes.

The ryuer of *Nilus*
in Egypte.

Marisshes and
desolate wayes.
A superstitious
opinion of
th[e] originall of
mountaines of
Dabaiba.

112 named the region after her name, beleuynge that shee fendeth thunder and lyghtnyng to destroy the frutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to fend plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hathe byn perswaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of religion to th[e]intent that they might enioye suche gyftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the maryshes of the narowe lande wherof we haue spoken, brynge forth greate plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, bates, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towarde the fouth, they go owte of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fennes or maryshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lyinge that way that the ryuer runneth which owre men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicausa* and his company) and not far distant from the hauen *Cerabaro* whiche diuideth those mountaynes towarde the fouth. But let vs nowe fynishe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They say therefore that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Dariena*, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Beinge demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thense, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to laboure, but for the moste parte brought vp in the warres. This lande seemeth also to promesse many precious stones. For besyde those which I sayde to bee founde neare vnto *Cariai* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had trauallyed those coastes with *Iohannes de la Coffa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diamonde which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell fynger, and as bygge as the fyrst ioynte of the thumme: beinge also paynted on euery syde, consistyng of eyght squares perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuilles and hammers, and brake the teethe of fyles, the stone remaynyng vnperysshed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore this stone aboute his necke emonge other ouches, and foulded it to *Andreas Moralis* for fyue of our counterfect stones made of glasse of dyuers colours wherwith the ignorant younge man was greatly delyled. They founde also certeyne topases on the shore. But th[e]estimation of golde was so farre entered into the heades of owre men, that they had no regarde to stonnes. Also the most part of the Spanyardes, do laugh them to scorne which vse to weare many stonnes: specially such as are common: Iudginge it to bee an effeminate thyng, and more meete for women then men. The noble men onely when they celebrate solemne mariages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheynes of gold byfet with precious stonnes, and vse fayre apparell of fylke embrothered with golde intermixt with pearles and precious stonnes: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate for men to smell of the sweete fauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with fum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smell the fauour of muske or *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee frutfull, and by one fysh taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that fysh is ingendered in the same, euen so, by a lyttel gold, and by one stone, we owght to consyder that this lande bringeth forth the greate plentie of golde and precious stonnes. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Cariai* when the hole nauye passed therby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus Arias* and his company with certeyne other of the kynges offycers, I haue sufficiently declared in his place. To be shorte therefore, all thynges do so florysshe, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the laste are euer better then the fyrste. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what so euer hath heretofore byn discovered by the famous trauallyes of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with such other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, seemeth but lyttell and obscure if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorious laboures. Thus I byd yowre holynes fare well, desyryng yowe to certifye me howe yowe lyke these fyrst frutes of the *Ocean*, that beinge encouraged with yowre exhortations, I maye the gladlyer and with lesse tediousnesse write suche thynges as shal chaunce hereafter.

Dragons and crocodiles in the marishes

The hauen Cerabaro.

Twentie golden ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious diamonde of exceedyng bygnes.

Topases.

The Spanyardes contemne effeminate plesures

Sweete sauours.

A similitude prouing greate plentie of golde and precious stonnes.

The hauen of Sancta Martha. *Cariai*.

The heroical factes of the Spanyardes.

113

THE FYFT BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



L suche lyuynge creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forth any thyng, are accustomed by th[e]instincte of nature as soone as they are delyuered of their byrthe, cyther to clofe vpp the matrice, or at the leaste to bee quyete for a space. But owre mooste frutefull Ocean and newe woorld, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of greate wytt, and especially suche as are studyous of newe and meruelous thynges, may haue sumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynesse do aske to what purpose is al this, ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarcely synysshed the historye of suche thynges as chaunced to *Vaschus Nuñez* and his companye in their vyage to the fouth sea, when suddenly there came

newe letters from *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour whom the kyng had appoynted the yere before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to fayle to these newe landes. He fynifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and company, arryued all safelye. Furthermore, *Iohannes Cabedus* (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the moste catholyke kyng had created byflhoppe of that prouynce of *Dariena*) and three other of the chiefe offycers ioined in commiffion to be his affyftance, as *Alfonfus de Ponte*, *Diegus Marques*, and *Iohannes de Tauira*, conformed the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauyigation therfore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yere of Chrifte. 1514. he hoysed vppe his fayles in the towne of faincte *Lucar de Barrameda*, fyuate in the mouthe of the ryuer *Bætis*, whiche the Spaniardes nowe caule *Guadalchebir*. The feuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about foure hundreth myles distant from the place where this riuer fauleth into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the owlde writers did caule the fortunate Ilandes. But other thynke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere fyrste in fyght, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortifueniura*. On the backehalfe of these, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyond that is *Tenerife*: and *Gomera* sumwhat toward the nortne frome that. *Palma* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyghte daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xvii. shippes and a. M. [thousand] and fyue hundreth men, although there were onely a thousand and two hundreth affygned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermore that he lefte behynd hym more then two thousande verye penyue and fyghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferyng them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to th[e]intente to make prouyfyon of fuell and freshe water: But chiefly to repayre his shippes beyng fore brofed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shippe whiche had losse the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious restinge place for all fuche as intende to attempte any nauygations in that mayne sea. Departyng from hense in the nones of Maye, he fawe no more lande vntyll the thirde daye of Iune, at the whiche he arriued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboute eyght hundreth leaques. Here he remayned foure dayes, makinge newe prouision of freshe water and fuell, duryng whiche tyme he fawe no man nor yet any steppes of men: But founde plentie of sea crabbes and greate lyfartes. From hense he fayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyse cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwyse cauled *Galana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also through the sea of herbes or weedes, continuyng a long tracte. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the Admyrall (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and fayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reason howe these weedes shoulde coome. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyng loosed, to ascende to the vppermooste parte of the water, as wee see oftentymes chaunce in certeyne stonyng pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the vyolence of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter in dowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they flycke faste and gyue place to the shippes, or wander loose vpon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyse they shulde bee dryuen togyther on heapes by th[e]mpulsyon of the shippes euen as a beafome gathereth the swepynges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the shippes. The fourth day after that he departed from *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They faye that there the seas runne as swyftelye toward the weste, as it were a ryuer faulyng from the toppes of hyghe montaynes: Although they fayled not directly toward the west, but inclined sumwhat to the south. From these montaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the slaughter of owre men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde before. Lykewyse many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the same montaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, also the regyon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which owre men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, th[e]inhabitant caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*: for it is at the rootes of the same montaynes. But the hauen of *Carthago*, is more westwarde aboute fyftie leaques. He writeth marueylous thynges of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thense: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whom *Americus Vesputius* his vncl (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre with all that pertaineth therto. This younge *Vesputius* was affygned by the kyng to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shippe, bicause he was cuninge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadrante. For the charge of gouernyng the rudder, was chieflye commytted to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentymes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my verye familiar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whose company I take great pleasure, and therefore vse hym oftentymes for my gette. He hath also made many vyages into these coastes, and

The bysshop of Dariena.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of Canarie.

Prouision of freshe water and fuell.

The Iland of Dominica.

Guadalupa, otherwyse cauled Carucueria, or Queraquiera.

The sea of herbes.

114

These mountaynes are cauled Montes Niuales or Serra Neuata, decade ii. liber. i. and ii.

The swyfte course of the sea toward the west.

The ryuer Gaira.

Caramairi.*Carthago*.*Saturma*.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Americus Vesputius.

The stoutnes of the Barbarians.	diligently noted suche things as he hath seene. <i>Petrus Arias</i> therefore writeth, and he confirmeth the same, that th[e] inhabitants of these regyons tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they oftentimes shewed to owre men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallie engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to affayle owre hole nauy and to forbyd them to coome a land. They feyght with venemous arrowes as we haue fayde before. Perceauynge that owre men contempned their threatnynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vppe to the breastes, nothyng fearyng eyther the bygnes or multitude of owre shyppes, but ceafed not continually beinge thus in the water, to cast dartes and shute their venemous arrowes as thicke as hayle: In so much that owre men had bynne in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages or pauilles of the shyppes and their targettes. Yet were two of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this conflycte continued so sharpe, that at the length owre men were enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce with hayleshotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the barbarians beyng fore discomfited and shaken with feare, thynkyng the fame to be thunder and lyghtnyng, tourned their backs and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder bycause these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghtnyng by reason of the hyghe montaynes and nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such fierie tempestes are engendered which the philosphers caule <i>Meteora</i> . And all be it that owre men had nowe dryuen their enemyes to flyght, and sawe them disparced and owte of order, yet dowted they and were of dyuers opinions whether they shulde pursue them or not. On the one partie, shame pricked them forward, and on the other syde feare caused them to caste many perelles, especially confyderyng the venemous arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely. To departe from them with a drye foote (as faithe the prouerbe) with so great a nauye and suche an armye, they reputed it as a thyng greatly foundyng to their reproche and dishonour. At the length therefore shame ouercommyng feare, they pursued them and came to land with their shippe boates. The gouernoure of the nauie, and also <i>Vesputius</i> doo wryte, that the hauen is no lesse then three leagues in compass, beinge also safe without rockes, and the water therof so clere, that a man may see pybble stonnes in the bottome twentie cubettes deape. They saye lykewyse that there fauleth twoo sayre ryuers of freshe water into the hauen: but the same to bee meeter to beare the canoas of these prouinces then anye bygger vessels. It is a delectable thyng to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleasaunt taft of the fysshes awfel of these riuers as of the sea there about. By reason wherof they founde here many fyssher boates and nettes wonderfully wrought of the stalkes of certeyne herbes or weedes dried and tawed and wrethed with cordes of spunne gossampine cotton. For the people of <i>Caramairi</i> , <i>Gaira</i> , and <i>Saturma</i> , are very cunnyng in fysshynge, and vse to sell fyfhe to theyr bortherers for exchaunge of suche thynges as they lacke. When owre men had thus chased the Barbaryans from the sea coastes, and hadde nowe entered into theyr houses, they assayed them with newe skymushes, especially when they sawe them faule to sackynge and spoylyng, and theyr wyues and chylidren taken captiue. Their householde stuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the sea bankes and the stalkes of certeyne herbes beaten and afterward made harde. The floures therof were strewed with herbes of fundry coloures; And the wauls hanged with a kynde of tap[er]stry artificially made of gossampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The doores of theyr houses and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of shelles hangynge loose by smaule cordes, that beinge shaken by the wynde they myght make a certeyne rattelyng and also a whytelyng noyse by gatheryng the wynde in theyr holowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue shewed me many wonderfull thynges of these regions: Especially one <i>Gonzalus Fernandez Outedus</i> beinge one of the maiefrates appointed in that office which the Spanyardes caule <i>Vecador</i> , who hath also hetherto entered further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth that he chaunced vpon the fragmente of a saphire bygger then the egge of a goose. And that in certeyne hylles where he trauallyed with thirtie men, he founde many of the precious stonnes cauled Smaragdes, calcidones, and Iaspers, besyde great pieces of amber of the montaines. He also with dyuers other doo affirme that in the houses of some of the Canibales of these regions, they founde the lyke precious stonnes set in golde and inclosed in the tap[er]stry or arras (if it may soo bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houses. The same lande bryngeth forth also many wooddes of brasile trees and great plentie of golde: In so much that in maner in al places they founde on the sea bankes and on the shoores, certeyne marchasites in token of golde: <i>Fernandus Outedus</i> declareth furthermore that in a certeyne region cauled <i>Zenu</i> , lyinge foure score and tenne myles from <i>Dariena</i> Eastwarde, they exerceyse a straunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houses of the inhabitantes, they founde greate chestes and baskets made of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that purpose, beinge all full of greffehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or crefysshes: snayles also, and locustes whiche destrowe the fieldes of corne, all well dried and salted. Beinge demaunded why they referued such a multitude of these beastes, they answered that they kepte them to bee fowle to theyr bortherers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the exchange of these precious byrdes and salted fysshes, they receaued of them certeyne strange thynges wherin partely they take pleasure, and partly vse them for
The Canibales feyght in the water.	
The vse of gunnes.	
The generacion of thunder and lyghtnyng. <i>Meteora.</i>	
Venemous arrowes	
115	
Plentie of fysshe.	
Cunnyng fysshers.	
Theyr householde stuffe.	
Tap[er]stry.	
A straunge phantasy.	
This is he whom Cardanus praiseth.	
Precious stonnes The Smaragde is the trew emerde Another kind of amber is founde in whales. Gold and brasile.	
Marchasites are flowers of metals, by the colours wherof, the kyndes of metals are knowen.	
These locustes burne the corne with toching and deuoure the residue they are in India of. iii. foote length.	

theyr necessary affayers. These people dwel not togyther, but scattered here and there. Th[e]inhabitan-
Caramairi, seeme to dwel in an earthly Paradyse, theyr region is so fayre and frutefull, without owtragious heate
 or sharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of the length of day and nyght throwhowt all the yeaere. After that
 owre men had thus dryuen the barbarians to flyght, they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth and
 three in length, extendynge to certeyne frutful mountaynes ful of graffe, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof,
 lye twoo other valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throwgh eyther of the which runneth a fayre ryuer,
 whereof the ryuer of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo name. In these valleys they
 founde manye fayre gardeyns and pleafaunte fyeldes watered with trenshes distrybuted in marueylous order,
 with no lesse arte then owre Insulrians and Hetrurians vse to water theyr fyeldes. Theyr common meate,
 is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with suche other rootes and frutes of trees, and also suche fyssh as they vse in
 the Ilandes and other regions of these prouinces. They eate mans fleshe but seldome, bycause they meete not
 oftentymes with strangiers, except they goo forth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne armye of purpose to
 hunt for men, when theyr rauenyng appetite pricketh them forward. For they absteyne from them felues, and
 eate none but suche as they take in the warres or otherwyse by chaunce. But fuerly it is a miserable thyng to
 heare howe many myriades of men these sylthy and vnnatural deuourers of mans fleshe haue confumed, and
 lesse thousandes of moste fayre and frutfull Ilandes and regions desolate withowte menne: By reason wherof
 owre men founde so many Ilandes whiche for theyr fayrenes and frutefulness myght seeme to bee certeyne earthly
 Paradyfes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre holynesse may consider howe pernicious a kynde
 of men this is. We haue sayde before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which th[e]inhabitan-
Burichena) is nexte to *Hispaniola*. It is sayde that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other Ilandes nere
 about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Sancta Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwise cauled *Queraqueiera*,
 or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme vyolently taken owte of the fayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then syue
 thousande men to bee eaten. But let it suffice thus much to haue wandered by these monstrous bludfuckers.
 We wyll nowe therfore speake sumewhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr breade, forasmuch as the same
 shall hereafter bee foode to Christian men in steede of breade made of wheate, and in the steede of radyssh with
 such other rootes as they haue byn accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes sayde before that *Iucca*
 is a roote whereof the beste and moste delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of these regions, and
 also in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyllid or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I
 haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knee
 deape, and rayse a heape of the earth taken owte of the same, fashionynge it lyke a square bedde of nyne foote
 breadth on euerye syde, settinge twelue trunkes of these rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a pice)
 in euery of the sayd beddes conteynge three rootes of a syde, so layde a slope, that the endes of them ioyn-
 in maner togyther in the center or myddest of the bedde within the grounde. Owt of the ioyntes of the rootes
 and spaces betwene the same, sprynge the toppes and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encrea-
 syng, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in the brawne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh:
 So that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earthe of the heape, is conuerted into rootes. But
 they say that these rootes are not ripe in lesse tyme then a yeaere and a halfe: And that the longer they are
 suffered to growe euen vntyll twoo yeaeres complete, they are so muche the better and more perfecte to make
 breade therof. When they are taken foorthe of the earth, they scrape them and slyfe them with certeyne sharpe
 stonnes seruyng for the same purpose: And thus layinge them betwene two great stonnes, or puttyng them in a
 sacke made of the stalkes of certeyne towgh herbes and smaule reedes, they presse them (as we do cheese or
 crabbes to drawe owte the iuse thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iuse or
 lyquoure, they cast away: for (as we haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. Yet is the iuse of suche
 growe in the firme lande, holsome if it bee fodde, as is the whey of owre mylke. They saye that there are manye
 kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof some are more pleafaunte and delycate then the other, and are therefore referued
 as it were to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the gentelmen eate of the meaner forte, and
 the common people of the basest. The fynest they caule *Cazabbi*, which they make rounde lyke cakes in
 certeyne presses before they seeth it or bake it. They saye furthermore that there are lykewyse dyuers kyndes
 of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vse these rather as frutes and dysshes of seruice, then to make
 breade therof, as we vse rapes, radysshes, mussheroms, nauies, perfenepes, and such lyke. In this case, they
 mooste especially esteeme the best kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleasant tast and tendernes farre exceedeth owre
 musheromes. It shal suffice to haue sayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe speake therfore of an other
 kynde of theyr breade. We declared before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulse muche lyke vnto
Panicum, but with sumwhat bygger graines, which they beate into meale vppon certeyne greate hollowe stonnes
 with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade.
 It is fowen thrife a yeaere, so that the frutefulness of the grounde may beare it by reason of the equalitie of the
 tyme, whereof wee haue spoken sufficiently before. In these regyons they founde also the graine of *Maizium*,

The fayre region
of Caramairi.Fruteful
mountaynes.Gardens.
Insulrians are
nowe cauled
Lumbardes, and
hetrusci, Tuscans
116Many countreys
lesse desolate by
the fiercenes of
the Canibales.One myriade is
ten thousande.A miserable
hearyng.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of
planting the
roote Iucca.Earth turned into
rootes.How breade is
made of rootes.A straunge
thyng.*Cazabbi*.*Ages* and *Battata*.Panicum is a
grayne somewhat
lyke mil. The
Italians caule it
Melica.

117

He meaneth the
equall length of
day and night
which is
continually vnder
the Equinoctial
lyne.

Maizium

Earth of dyuers
colours.

Golde in ryuers.

Hartes and bores.
Foules.

Holsome ayer

Gossampine
cotton.
Fethers.

Bowes and
arrowes.
Deade bodies
reserued

Ouches of laton.
Gonzalus Quiedus,
sayth that they
gilt maruelously
with the iuse of a
certeyne herbe.
Whyte marb'le.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus.
This ioyneth with
the myghty ryuer
cau'ed Flumen
Aniazonum, found
of late.

Clokes of fethers.
118

The swyfte course
of the water.

xl. leaques in one
nyght.

and fundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The way betwene the regions of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorthe. They founde here also fundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe feteche and keepe freshe water. Lykewife fundrye kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dyffhes, and platters artfycially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that th[e]inhabitantes shulde eyther obey the Christian kyng and embrace owre relygion, or elles to depart owte of their countrey, they answered with venomous arrowes. In this skyrmyshe, owre men tooke summe of them: whereof clothyng the moste parte in faire apparell, they fente them ageyne to their owne company: But leadyng the resydue to the shyppes to th[e]intent to shewe them the poure and magnyfycence of the christians that they myght declare the fame to their coompanions, therby to wynne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyse and fente them after their felowes. They affyrme that in all the ryuers of these coastes, theye fawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of hartes fleshe and bores fleshe wherwith they fedde them selues dilycately. They also, haue greate plentie of fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they bryng vpe many in their houfes, summe for necessarye foode, and other for daynty dyffhes as we do hennes and partriches. Owre men hereby coniecture that the ayer of these regions is veary holsome, for as muche as sleapyng all nyghte vnder the firmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reafon of any noysome humoure or vapoure procedyng from the earthe, ayer, or water. Owre men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of goffampyne cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them selues cresles and plumes after the maner of owre men of armes: also certeyne clokes whiche they esteeme as moste cumly ornamentes. They founde lykewyse an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Th[e]inhabitantes also of these regions, in summe places vse to burne the carkefes of their prynces when theye are deade, and to referue their bones buried with spyces in certeyne hylles. In other places, they onely drye theym and imbaume them with spyces and sweete gummes, and soo referue them in sepulchers in their owne houfes. Sumwhere also, they drye them, spyce them, adourne them with precyous iewells and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certeyne tabernacles made for the fame purpose in their owne palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellets, braslettes, collers, and fuche other ouches (whiche they caule *Guanines*) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of golde: wherby they suppose that they haue vsed to exchange their ware with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte them those counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde. For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vntyll they came to the meltyng. Furthermore, certayne of owre buylders wanderyng a lyttell way from the sea coastes, chaunced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they thynke that in tyme paste summe straungers haue coome too those landes, whiche haue dygged marble owte of the mountaines, and leste those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descendeth from the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuata*: And the fame to bee encreased by many other ryuers whiche faule into it throughowte all the lowe and wate[r]lye regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from the sayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the cause of the greatnesse therof. These thynges beyng thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe a retraite: Whervpon they whiche were fente to lande (beyng fyue hundreth in noubmer) makyng a great shoute for ioye of their victory, fette them selues in order of battayle, and so keping their array, returned to the shippes laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shynyng in souldiers clokes of fethers, with faire plumes and cresles of variable colours. In this meane tyme hauyng repaired their shyppes and furnysshed the same with all necessaries, they loofed anker the. xvi. daye of the Calendes of Iuly, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagera*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lyeing in the waye, accordyng as they were commaunded by the kyng. But the swifte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shyppe, and all the other, although they made their bofte that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they affyrme that in one night they were caried forty leaques beyonde their estimation.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Ere muste we sumwhat digresse from cosmography, and make a philosophicall discours to searche the secreate causes of nature. For wheras they al affyrme with one consent, that the sea runneth there from the Easte to the weste as swyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to lette so great a matter slyppe vntouched. The whiche while I confyder, I am drawen into no smaule ambyguitie and doute, whether those waters haue their course whiche flowe with so contynuall a tracte in circuite from the Easte, as thowghe they fledde to the west neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weste therby any whitte the more fylled, nor the Easte emptied. If we shall saye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and assigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as summe affyrme) what centre shall we appointe to bee able to receaue so great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference shal be founde weate? They whiche haue searched those coastes, haue yet founde no lykely reason to be trewe. Manye thynke that there shulde bee certeyne large straightes or enterances in the corner of that greate lande whiche we described to bee eyght tymes bygger then Italye, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they suppose that summe strayghtes shulde passe through the same lyinge on the weste fyde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the fayde straightes shuld swalowe vp those waters, and so conuey the same into the weste and from thense ageyn into owre Easte Ocean, or north seas as summe thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great lande bee clofed vppe: and the lande to reach farre towarde the northe on the backe fyde of *Cuba*: so that it embrace the northe landes whiche the frofen sea encompasseth vnder the northe pole: And that all the lande of those coastes, shoulde ioyne together as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture that those waters shulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or refystaunce of that lande so bendynge towarde the north, as we see the waters tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they also whiche haue searched the frozen sea, and fayled from thense into the weste, do lykewyse affyrme that those northe seas flowe contynually towarde the weste, although nothing so swyftly. These northe seas haue byn searched by one Sebastian Cabot a Venetian borne, whom beinge yet but in maner an infante, his parentes caryed with them into Englande hauyng occasion to resorte thether for trade of marchandies, as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the worlde vnsearched to obteyne richeffe. He therfore furnished two shippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrst with three hundred men, directed his course so farre toward the northe pole, that euen in the mooneth of Iuly he founde monstrous heapes of Ise swimming on the sea, and in maner continuall day lyght. Yet sawe he the lande in that tracte, free from Ise, whiche had byn molten by heate of the sunne. Thus seyng fuche heapes of Ise before hym he was enforced to tourne his sayles and folowe the weste, so coastynge flyll by the shore, that he was thereby broughte so farre into the southe by reason of the lande bendynge so muche southward that it was there almoste equall in latitude with the sea cauled *Fretum Herculeum*, hauyng the north pole eleuate in maner in the same degree. He fayled lykewise in this tracte so farre towarde the weste, that he had the Ilande of *Cuba* [on] his lefte hande in maner in the same degree of longitude. As he traueyled by the coastes of this greate lande (whiche he named *Baccallaos*) he sayth that he found the like course of the waters toward the west, but the same to runne more softely and gentelly then the swifte waters whiche the Spanyardes found in their nauigations southward.

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bee trewe, but ought also of necessitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hetherto vnknown, there shulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters shulde thus continually passe from the East into the weste: which waters I suppose to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vncessaunt mouynge and impulsion of the heauens: and not to bee swalowed vp and cast owt ageyne by the breathynge of *Demogorgon* as summe haue imagined bycause they see the seas by increase and decrease, to flowe and reflowe. Sebastian *Cabot* him selfe, named those landes *Baccallaos*, bycause that in the seas therabout he founde so great multitudes of certeyne bigge fysshes much lyke vnto tunies (which th[e]inhabitant caule *Baccallaos*) that they sumtymes stayed his shippes. He founde also the people of those regions couered with beastes skynnes: Yet not without th[e]use of reason.

He saythe also that there is greate plentie of beares in those regions, whiche vse to eate fyfhe. For plungeinge theym selues into the water where they perceue a multitude of these fysshes to lye, they fasten theyr clawes in theyr scales, and so drawe them to lande and eate them. So that (as he faith) the beares beinge thus satysfied with fyfhe, are not noysom to men. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he

Sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft course from the East into the west.

Th[e]equinoctiall lyne. Why all waters moue towarde the southe or Equinoctiall, reade *Cavdanus de subtilit. liber. ii. de Elementis*. Strayghtes.

As by the strayght of Magellanus.

The north landes.

The frozen sea.

Sebastian. Cabot.

The Venetians.

The viage of Sebastian Cabot from Englande to the frozen sea. Frost in the month of Iuly.

Fretum Herculeum, diuideth Spayne and the Moores and is nowe cauled the strayghtes of Marrok. *Baccallaos, or Terra Baccallearnum*.

119

The mouyng of heuen causeth the sea to moue. *Demogorgon* is the spirite of the earth.

People couered with beastes skins

Howe beares take and eate fysshes of the sea.

Perhappes this
laton is copper
which holdeth
gold. For laton
hath no myne, and
is an artificiall
metal and not
natural.
Cabot cauled owt
of Englande into
Spayne.
The Second viage
of Cabot.

The Ilandes of
the Canybales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte

A straunge thyng.

How Petrus Arias
with the kynges
nauy arriued at
Dariena.

Howe Vaschus
receaued the new
gouernour.

Whye these
regions are cauled
prouinces.

120

Barrelles of meale.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

Where the newe
gouernour planted
his habitation

The viage of
Iohannes Aiora
The hauen of
Comogrus

Sainte Mychaels
goulfe

The hauen (of)
Pocchorrosa.

fawe great plentie of laton amonge th[e]inhabitanes. *Cabot* is my very frende, whom I vse famylierly, and delyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne houe. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kyng of Castile after the deathe of Henry kyng of Englande the feuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counsaile and assystance as touchyng the affayres of the newe Indies, lookyng dayely for shippes to bee furnysshed for hym to discouer this hyd secreate of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowyng, beinge the yeare of Chryst M.D.XVI. What shall succede, yowre holynes shalbe aduertified by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Some of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Baccallaos*: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue fayde thus much of the goulfes and strayghtes, and of *Sebastian Cabot*. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the Spanyardes. At this tyme, they let passe the hauen of *Carthago* vntouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboute, whiche they named *Infulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leauyng also behynde theyr backes, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reason of a fooden tempeste, they were caste vpon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftie leagues distante from the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houfes of th[e]inhabitanes, many baskets made of certeyne greate fea reedes, ful of falte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly falte bayes: by reason whereof they haue greate plentie of falte which they sell to other nations for such thynges as they stande in neede of. Not farre from henfe, a great curlewe as bygge as a storke came flyng to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to bee eafely taken: which beinge caryed about amonge all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after. They fawe also a great multytude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of.

The gouernour his shyppe whiche we fayde to haue losse the rudder beinge nowe fore broofed and in maner vnprofytable, they lefte behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arriued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernour his shippe (beinge voyde of men) was dryuen a lande in the same coastes within foure dayes after. The Spanyardes whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieutenant *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention before) beinge certified of th[e] arriuall of *Petrus Arias* and his coompanye, wente foorth the three myles to meete him, and receaued him honorably and religiously with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuinge thankes to god by whose fawe conducte they were brought so prosperously thether to al theyr confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houfes builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may well caule these regions, Prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are ouercome farre of, forasmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge eicted. They enterteined them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Maizium*. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of theyr owne flore whiche they brought with theym in theyr shyppes, as powdered fleshe, salted fyffe, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Here maye yowre holynes not without iuste cause of admiration beholde a kynges nauie and great multytude of Christians, inhabytyng not onely the regions situate vnder the cirele of heauen cauled *Tropicus Canceri*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to th[e] opinion of the owlde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they determyned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arriued, there assembled a coompany of the Spanyardes th[e]inhabitoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundreth and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his coompany, conferred with them bothe priuilly and openlye of certeyne arteies wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde enquire: And most especially as concernyng such thynges wherof *Vaschus* the fyrst fynder and Admirall of the Southe sea, made mention in his large letter sent from *Dariena* to Spayne. In this inquisition they founde all thynges to bee trewe, wherof *Vaschus* had certified the kyng by his letters: And therevpon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrosa*, and *Tumanama*, at th[e] assignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortresses shuld bee erected foorthwith to th[e] intente there to plant theyr colonie or habitacion. To the better accomplyshmente hereof, they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentelman of *Corduba* and vnder Lieutenant, with foure hundreth men and foure carauelles and one other lyttle shippe. Thus departinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the hauen of *Comogrus*, dystant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr last letters. Frome henfe, he is appoynted to fende a hundreth and fyftie of his foure hundreth, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they say) it is not paste. xxvi. leagues from the palaice of kyng *Comogrus* to the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The residewe of the foure hundreth, shall remayne there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall iorney to and fro. Those hundreth and fiftie which are assigned to go southwarde, take with them for interpretours certeine of owre men which had lerned the sootherne language of the bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne those regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them selues which had nowe lerned the Spanyssh tonge. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrosa*, is onely feuen leagues distante frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrosa*, he is assigned to leaue fyftie men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a

passinger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippe, in shorte space certifie the Lieutenaut and th[e]inhabitours of *Dariena* of fuche thynges as shall chaunce. They entende also to buylde houfes in the region of *Tumanama*. The palaice of kynge *Tumanama*, is distant from *Pocchorrofa* about twentie leaques. Of these foure hundreth men, beinge of the owlde fouldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experience, fyftie weare appoynted to bee as it were Decurians to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus fette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therewith to certifie hym that in those prouinces there is a kynge named *Dabaiba* whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the fame to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kingedome ioyneth to the seconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche fauleth into the sea owt of the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common reporte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kynge *Dabaiba* is fyfty leaques distante from *Dariena*. Th[e]inhabitantes faye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borthers on euery fyde. Albeit, owre men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, euen within three leaques of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: Yet doo theye affyrme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the bookes of owre fyrste frutes wrytten to yowre holynesse, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherin owre men were deceaued and mystooke the matter. For where they founde the fysher men of kynge *Dabaiba* in the marysshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therefore to fende to kynge *Dabaiba*, three hundreth choyse younge men to be chofen owte of the hole army as mozte apte to the warres, and well furnysshed with all kyndes of armoure and artillery, to th[e]intent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruition of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and dryue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often tymes repete this for an argument of great rycheffe to coome, that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but founde the earthe myxte with sparkes and finaule graynes of golde. They haue also aduertified the kynge that it shalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Saturma*, that it maye bee a place of refuge for them that fayle from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whiche (as they faye) it is but foure or fyue dayes faylyng to that hauen of the regyon of *Saturma*: And from the hauen, but thre dayes faylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee vnderstode in goynge and not in returnyng. For the returnyng from thense is so laborious and difficulte by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe montaynes and stryue ageynste the poure of *Neptunus*. This swyfte course of the sea towarde the Weste, is not so violente to theym whiche retourne to Spayne frome the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they also do laboure ageynste the faule of the Ocean: The cause wherof is, that the sea is here verye large, so the waters haue their full scoope. But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are confrayned together by the bendynge fydes of that great lande, and by the multytude of Ilandes lyinge ageynste it, as the lyke is feene in the straighes or narowe seas of Sicilie where the violent course of the waters cause the daungerous places of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*, by reason of those narowe seas whiche containe *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these regyons, hath lefte in wrytyng, that faylyng from the Ilande of *Guanassa*, and the prouynces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, beyng regyons of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde the course of the water so vehemente and furious ageynste the fore parte of his shippe whyle he failed from those coastes towarde the Easte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the grounde with his foundynge plummet, but that the contrary vyolence of the water wolde beare it vppe from the bottome. He affyrmeth also, that he coulde neuer in one hole daye with a meately good wynde, wynne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentymes enforced to fayle fyrste by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they retourne to Spaine, that the Northe wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not brynge to passe by a directe course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffyce. Let vs now therefore reherse what they write of *Dariena*, and of their habitation there, which they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is more pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanysh inhabitours, are all pale and yelowe, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe giaundydes. Whiche neuerthelesse commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the felse fame degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the fame eleuation, they fynd holsome and temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth bryngeth forth fayre sprynges of water, or where holsome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but mozte especyally where they inhabyte the fydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery fyde with hyghe hylles: By reason wherof, it receaueth the foonne beames at noonetyde directly perperpendicular ouer their heades, and are therefore fore vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the fydes. For it is the reflection of the foonne beames whiche causeth feruente heate, and not their accesse or nereness to the earth. Forasmuche as

A passynger
shyppe.

Kyng Tumanama.

Decurians are
officers deuided
into tennes. etc.

The gold mynes
Kyng Dabaiba.

The pallaice of
kyng Dabaiba.

The gold mynes
of Dariena.

An erreure.

Expedition ageinst
kyng Dabaiba.

121

Great plentie of
golde.

The regyon of
Saturma
The Ilande of
Dominica.
Dariena.

Difficulte saylyng
ageynst the course
of the sea.

The daungerous
straighes of *Scylla*
and *Charybdis*.

Guanassa.
Iaia.
Maia.
Cerabaro.
Beragua.

The vehement
course of the sea
from the east to
the west.

The northe wynde.

Sancta Maria
Antiqua, the fyrst
habitation of the
spaniards in the
fyrme lande.

Sardus the Ilande
of *Sardinia*.

The variety of
regyons lyinge
vnder one paralel.

By what meanes
the sonne beames
are cause of
feruent heate.

The pernicious ayer of Dariena.	<p>they are not passible in them felues as dothe manifestly appeare by the snowe lying continually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holynesse knoweth ryghte well. The foonne beames therefore faulynge on the montaynes, are reflected downewarde into the valley by reason of th[e] objecte of the declynynge fydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde floone rowlde frome the toppē of a montayne. The valley therefore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly theron, and also those whiche are reflected downwarde from euery fyde of the montaynes. Their habitation therefore in <i>Dariena</i>, is pernicious and vnholysome onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the fyuation of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen or nere to the foonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the foyle, by reason it is compafed aboute with muddy and stynkyng maryshes, th[e] infection wherof is not a lyttle encreased by the heate. The vyllage it selfe, is in a maryshe, and in maner a standynge puddle, where, of the droppes faulynge from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houfes, toades are engendered immediately, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the foomer seafon. Furthermore, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there springeth owte vnholysome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe and muddy chanel of the valley, and so fauleth into the sea. Now therefore they consulte of remouynge their habytation. Necessytye caused them fyrst to fasten their foote heare, bycause that they whiche fyrst arryued in those landes, were oppressed with fyrst vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to change the place although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the foyle and heate of the foonne, beyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reason of venemous vapours and exhalations ryfynge from the same. An other greate incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious hauen, beyng three leaques distante from the mouthe of the goulfe. The waye is also roughe and diffyculte to brynge vyttayles and other necessaries from the sea. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche chaufed. Therefore shortly after that they weare arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisyion of Ciuile, whome partely th[e] authoritye of the byshoppe of <i>Dariena</i>, and partely the desyre of golde had allured to those landes, was so feared with lyghtnyng in the nyghte seafon lying in bedde with his wyfe, that the house and all the stufte therin beyng fette on fyer and burnt, he and his wyfe bothe foore scorched, ranne foorth cryng and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of deathe. At an other tyme, as certayne of them floode on the shoore, a great Crocodyle fodenly caryed awaye a mayle of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte shulde haue snatched vpe a chicken: And this euen in the presence of theym all, where the myserable dogge cryed in vayne for the helpe of his mayster. In the nyghte seafon they were tormented with the bytynge of bates whiche are there fooyfome that if they byte any man in his sleape, they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawynge of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, faulynge as it were into a consumption through the malyciousefnesse of the venemous wounde. If these bates chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abrode in the nyght seafon, they byte them by the combes and so kyll them. They also whiche wente laste into these regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that they haue nowe deuised artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyfe that in the houfes of their felowes, they founde the hydes and cafes of fuche Lyons and Tygers as they had kyled. They wryte furthermore, that by reason of the rankenesse and frutefulnessse of the grounde, kyne, swyne, and horses, doo maruelously increase in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche weare of the first broode. Of the excedynge hyghnesse of the trees with their fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and feedes whiche owre men broughte from Spayne and fowed and fet the fame in these regyons, lykewyfe of the hertes and other foure footed beastes bothe tame and wylde, also of dyuers kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fyshes, they write euen as we haue declared in the decades before. <i>Careta</i> the kynge of the regyon of <i>Cioba</i>, was with them for the space of three dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteined and shewed hym the fecrate places of their shyppes, their horses also with their trappars, bardes, and other furnimentes, beyde many other things whiche seemed straunge to hym, and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rewardes, they dysmyffed hym halfe amased with to muche admyration. He fygnified vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce, of the planckes wherof, if shyppes were made, they shoulde bee safe from the woormes of the sea whiche they caule <i>Bromas</i>. Howe these woormes knawe and corrode the shyppes, wee haue declared before. Owre shyppes are greatly troubeled with this plage if they lye longe in the hauens of these regyons. But they affyrme that the woodde of this tree is fooytter, that the woormes wyll not taste therof. There is also an other tree peculyar to these landes: whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body, they cause greate blysters, and those fooyalycious that excepte the same bee foorthwith healed with salte water or fastynge spyttle, they doo incontynently engender deadely paynes. They faye lykewyfe, that the fauour of the woodde is presente poyson: And that it can noo whither bee caryed without daunger of lyfe. When th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande of <i>Hispaniola</i> had oftentimes attempted to shake of the yoke of feruytude, and coulde neuer brynge the same to passe neyther by open warre nor yet by priuie conspiraces,</p>
122	
Toades and flees engendered of droppes of water.	
Necessytye hath no lawe	
A house sette on fyer with lyghtnyng.	
A dogge deuoured of a crocodyle, <i>Tanquam canis e Nilo.</i> The bytynge of bates.	
Lyons and tygers.	
Beastes wax bygger in their kynde.	
How the gouernour enterteined kyng <i>Careta</i> .	
Note.	
Broma or Bissa, are wormes whiche destroy shyppes.	
123	
A venemous tree.	
Perhappes theyr venemous arrows are made of this woodde or. &c.	

they were determyned in the nyghte feason to haue kylled owre men in their sleepe with the smoke of this woodde. But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse their intente, and punysshed the chiefe autours of the deuyfe. They haue also a certayne herbe with the fauour wherof they are preferued from the hurte of this venemous woodde so that they maye beare it safely. Of these fmaule thynges it shall suffyce too haue fayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater thynges to certyfy vs of from the Ilandes of the fouth sea. For at fuche tyme as the messenger whiche broughte owre letters departed from thenfe, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the fouth se, beyng also lefte vntouched of *Vaschus* by reason that the sea was at that tyme of the yeare fore troubeled with tempestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaschus* his vyage to the fouth. Wee looke therefore dayly for greater thynges then are hetherto paste. For they haue nowe taken in hand to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppoose too bee eyther verye ryche, or to brynge furthe summe straunge woorkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solistus* of *Nebriſſa* (of whome we haue made mention before) is fente by the frootte of the cape or poynte of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth feuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to th[e]intent to ouer runne the fouth syde from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuquibacoa*, with the hauens of *Carthago* and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* also and *Beragua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was fente foorth with three shyppes to destroye the Canibales bothe in the lande and Ilandes there aboute: afwell that the nations of the more humane and innocente people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and rycheſſe of those regions. Many other lykewife were fente dyuers and fundry wayes: as *Gaffer Badaocius* too searche West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to fayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or enteraunce therof to the Easte coastes of the goulfe to searche the secretes of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his companye had of late begunne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortresse and a vyllage. *Badaocius* departed fyrste from *Dariena* with foure score souldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyfthe:

To *Bezerra* were also fourescore affygned, and three score and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose prouydence ruleth all: For as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of things after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therefore coome to other matters.

THE SEVENTHE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Petrus Arias the gouernour of the supposed continente, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*. But I was aduertified that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentimes ouer runne the coastes of these new seas and the Ilandes of the fame, was coome to the courte to fell fuche marchaundies as he broughte with hym frome thenfe. This man had dyligently searched the tracte of the supposed continente, and especyally th[e]inner regyons of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the

order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycaufe he was a wytty man and more apte to searche fuche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of fuche regyons as hee discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of fuche as haue fenſe had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credyt emongest the best forte. He therefore resorted to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of things heretofore vnknown, I wyll nowe declare. The beginnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marte of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousande and againe a thousande fayre, pleasaunt, bewtiful, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery syde, adourmyng this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronyng her aboute, and attendyng vpon her as their queene and patronesse. But of these *Nereiades* (that is to faye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare sumwhat of the Ilande whiche owre men named *Margaritea Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knownen, and lyyng in the fouth se in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) fainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath presently brought to owre knowledge many straunge and wonderfull thynges and promyſſeth no fmaule

A preseruatue ageynst poyson.

The Ilands of the south sea. The ryche Iland cauled Dites.

Cap[e], sancti Augustini. Of the euyl successe of these viages, reade decad. iii. Liber. ix. An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Fogeda.

Looke. decad. iii. Lib. ix.

The nauigations of Andreas Moralis.

124

A particular description of the Ilande of hispaniola

Nereides are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth Ilandes.

Tethis the wyfe of Neptunus and goddesse of the sea.

The Ilande of Margaritea Diues. Saincte Michaels goulfe

Great perles

Hispaniola lyke
vnto the earthly
paradyse.The fyrst
inhabitours of
hispaniola*Dardanus.*
Teucus.
Troianum.
Tirians, Sidonians.*Eneas.*
*Latium.*Hierusalem
*Mecha.*The Ilandes of
Canarie.Betanchor, a
frenchman. 125The fyrst names
of hispaniola.*Pan.*The roughnesse
of hispaniola.The maner of
lernynge.Ballets and
rhymes.

hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, cheynes, and braslettes. Of the shellyffshes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat more in th[e]nde of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hispaniola* moſte lyke vnto the earthly paradyſe. In the deſcription hereof, we wyll begynne of the impoſytion of deuierſe names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayer and benefyciall heauen: And fynally of the deuifyon of the regyons. Therefore for the ryghter pronunſyation of the names, yowre holyneſſe muſte vnderſtande that they are pronouced with th[e]accent, as yowe may know by the verge fette ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinind*, where the accente is in the laſt vowell, and the lyke to be vnderſtoode in all other names. They ſaye therefore, that the fyrſte inhabitours of the Iland were tranſported in their *Canoas* (that is boates made of one hole pyece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyſſhed men dryuen from thenſe by reaſon of certayne contrary factions and diuifyons emonge them felues, lyke as wee reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucus* from *Creta* into Aſia, and that the regyon where they placed their habitacion, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the Tirians and Sidonians arryued with their nauye in *Lybia* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. Theſe Matinians in like maner beyng banyſſhed from their owne countrey, planted their fyrſte habytation in that parte of the Iland of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cahonao*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnynge of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of Troye aryued in the region of Italy cauled *Latium* vpon the banks of the ryuer of Tiber. Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is ſayde that th[e]inhabitauntes buylded their fyrſte howſe whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howſe they conſecrated ſhortely after, and honoured the ſame reuerently with continuall gyfts and monumentes, euen vntyl the comynge of owre men, lyke as the Chriſtians haue euer relygyouſly honoured Ieruſalem the fountayne and oryginall of owre faythe: As alſo the Turkes attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in Araby, and th[e]inhabytantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of Canarye) to *Tyrma* buylded vpon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and fonges to caſt them felues downe headlonge, beyng perſuaded by their prieſtes that the foules of all fuche as ſo dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, ſhulde therby enioye eternall felycity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in that ſuperſtition, euen vntyll owre tyme: Nor yet is the memory of their ſacrifyces vtterly worne awaye: The rocke alſo referueth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue alſo learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande ſumme of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frenſhe man and fyrſte that broughte the Ilandes to good culture and ciuillitie beyng therto lycenced by the kynge of Caſtile as I haue ſayde before. Theſe doo yet (for the moſte parte) obſerue bothe the language and maners of the Frenſhemen, although the heres and ſuccedours of *Betanchor*, had ſoulede the two ſubdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Caſtile. Yet th[e]inhabitours whiche ſucceded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houſes and encreaſed their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleaſauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the ſharpe coulde of Fraunce. But lette vs nowe returne to th[e]inhabitauntes of *Matinino* and *Hispaniola*. The Ilande of *Hispaniola* was fyrſte named by the fyrſte inhabitours, *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chaunce, or at the pleaſure of fuche as diuifed theſe names, but of credulitie and belefe of ſumme great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to ſaye as a great thinge: And that ſo great that none maye bee greater. They interprete alſo, that *Quizqueia* ſygnifyeth, large, vniuerſall, or al, in like ſignification as the Greekes named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycauſe that for the greatnes therof, theſe ſymple foules ſuppoſed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the ſoonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the ſame: And ther vpon thoughte it moſt woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greateſt of all other knowne to them. *Haiti* is as muche to ſaye by interpretation, as roughe, ſharpe, or craggie. But by a figuratiue ſpeache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) roughe: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rough by reaſon of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe valleys enuyroned with great and hyghe montaynes, although it bee in manye other places exceadyng bewtiful and floryſhyng. Here muſte wee ſumwhat digreſſe from th[e]order we are entered into. Perhappes your holyneſſe wyll maruell by what meanes theſe ſymple men ſhoulde of ſoo longe contynuaunce beare in minde fuche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginnynge, their princes haue euer byn accuſtomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wiſe men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie fuche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them felues chieflye to two thynges: As generally to lerne th[e]original and ſuccesse of thynges: And particularlye to reherſe the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and aunceſtours aſwell in peace as in warre. Theſe two thynges they haue of owlde tyme compoſed in certeyne meters and ballettes in their language. Theſe rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Arceitos*. And as owre mynſtrelles are accuſtomed too ſynge to the harpe or lute, ſo doo they in lyke maner ſynge theſe fonges and daunce to the ſame, playng on tymbrelles made of ſhels of certen

fyfshes. Thefe tymbrels they caule *Magui*. They haue alfo fonges and ballettes of loue: And other of lamentations and moornyng: Summe alfo to encourage them to the warres, with euery of them their tewnes agreable to the matter. They exercyse them felues muche in daunceinge, wherin they are verye actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reason they gyue them felues to nothing fo muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is alfo the caufe of their fwifteneffe of foote. In their ballettes lefte them of their auncestours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. Thefe they fyng with moornyng and as it were with gronyng, bewaile the losse of their lybertie and feruitude. For thefe prophecies make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Maguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with fuche swoordes as shulde cutte a man in funder at one stroke: vnder whose yoke their posteritie shulde bee subdued. And here I do not maruell that their predicesours coulde prophecye of the feruitude and bondage of their successyon, if it bee trewe that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirites whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largely made mention in the nynth booke of the first decade, where alfo wee haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they saye that fence thefe Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the spirites haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe this to the sygne of the crosse wherwith they defende them felues from fuche spirites. For they are nowe all clenfed and sanctified by the water of baptis[m]e wherby they haue renounced the deuel and are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuerfally studious to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdomes: And especially their *Mitaini* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not vtterly ignorant in the furueyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of fettyng, fowyng, and plantyng. They are mooste experte fyfshers, by reason that throughowte the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to plounge them felues in the ryuers, fo that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are alfo giuen to huntyng. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue twoo kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is lyttle cunnes cauled *Vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste pleasaunte taste, and luyng on the lande. All the Ilandes nooryshe innumerable byrdes and foules: As stocke doues, duckes, geefe, hearons, byfyde no lesse number of poppingiais then sparowes with vs. Euery kyng hath his subiectes diuided to fundrye affaires: As summe to huntyng, other to fysshynge, and other summe to husbandrye. But let vs now returne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quizquicia* and *Haiti* were the oulde names of this Ilande. The hole Ilande was alfo cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundyng with golde: Lyke as owre anciente poetes cauled all Italye *Latium* of parte therof. Therefore as they cauled *Aufonia* and *Hesperia*, Italie, euen soo by the names of *Quizquicia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderstode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Owre men dyd fyrste name it *Ifabella* of queene Helisabeth whiche in the Spanishe tongue is cauled *Ifabella*: And fo named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the Northe syde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrst decade. But of the names, this shall suffyce. Lette vs nowe therefore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chestnutte tree, with a goulfe towards the west syde, luyng open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte shyppemayster *Andreas Moralis* broughte me the forme therof sumwhat differyng from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the Easte angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great goulfes, and the corners to reache foorthe verye farre: and placeth manye large and safe hauens in the great goulfe on the East syde. But I trust shortlye soo to trauallye further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular description of *Hispaniola* maye bee sente vnto yowre holyneffe. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall description therof in cardes, euen as yowre holyneffe hath seene the forme and sytuacion of Spayne and Italye with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therefore without shamfastnesse compare the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to Italie, sumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee confyder the quantitie, it shalbee founde lyttle lesse, and muche more frutefull. It reacheth from the Easte into the West, fyue hundreth and fortye myles accordyng to the computation of the later searchers: Although the Admyrall sumwhat increafed this number as wee haue sayde in the fyrst decade. It is in breadth summe where, almoste three hundreth myles: And in summe places narrower where the corners are extended. But it is fuerlye muche more blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beyng for the mooste parte therof so temperate and florysshynge, that it is neyther vexed with sharpe coulde, nor afflycted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the steynges and conuerfions of the foonne (cauled *Solstitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lyttle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyghte throughout all the yeare. For on the south syde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wyfe. But the dyfference is more on the northe syde. Yet are there summe regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coulde is of sum force. But yowre holyneffe muste vnderstode this to bee incident by reason of the obiecte or nearnesse of the mountaines, as wee wyl more largely declare hereafter. Yet is not this coulde so pearcyng and sharpe, that th[e] inhabitants are molested with snowe or bytyng froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and

Singing and daunceing. Soonges of loue and moornyng.

Prophecies.

Note

Theyr familiaritie w[ith] spirites

The deuyll is dryuen awaye by baptisme

126

Surueyers.

They lyue as much in the water as on the lande

Serpentes

A Crocodile is much lyke to owre ewte or Lyserte Byrdes and foules Poppingayes

Cipanga.

Italye cauled Latium

Isabella

The forme of the Ilande of hispaniola

A particular carde of hispaniola.

Hispaniola compared to Italie.

The temperature of Hispaniola.

The equinoctiall.

Couldeaccidentall, and not by the sytuacion of the region. Perpetuall springe and soomer.

Maruelous
frutfulness

127

Beastes

Oxen and swyne
of excedyng
bygnesse.Swyne fed with
Myrobalanes

Vines

Wheate

An eare of wheate
as byg as a mans
arme in the brawne
The bread of the
Ilande.

Golde.

Great plentie of
cattayle.

Brasile.

Mastix.

Gossampine

*Electrum.*Incommodities of
intemperat regionsHolsome ayer
and water

Golde euery where

The description
of the inner partes
of the Ilande.

The cite of s.

Dominicke

The mountaynes
of HaitiThe mountaynes
of Cibaua

128

The Ilande of

Calini

Of prouinces
diuided into
regionsOf theyr
aspirations

is fortunate with contynuall foomer and harueft. The trees floryshe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are excedyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, soo that within the spaoe of fyxtene dayes after the feede is sowne, al herbes of finaule steames, as letteffe, borage, radyshe, and fuche other, coome to their full rypenesse: And also howe herbes of the bygger forte, as gourdes, melones, cucumers, pompons, citrons, and fuche other, coome to their perfection in the spaoe of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine thether, wee haue fayde howe they growe too a muche greater kynde: In so muche that when they faule into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to elephantes, and fwyne to mules: But this fumwhat by an exceffiyue kynde of speache. We haue also made mention how their fwyne fleshe is more fauourye and farre better and more pleasaunte taste and more holfome then owres, by reason they are fedde with the frutes of Myrobalane trees, and other pleasaunte and nurysshynge fruites of that contrey, whiche growe there of them felues, as do with vs beeches, holly, and okes. Vynes wolde also prosper there with maruelous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof. The lyke encrease commeth of wheate if it be fowen vppon the mountaynes where the colde is of fume strenght: but not in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a spanne in length, bearynge also more then a thousande graynes as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestly affirme the same with othes. Yet they say the bread of the Ilande (cauled) *Cazabbi* made of the roote of *Iucca*, to bee more holfome, because it is of easyer digestion, and is cultured with lesse labour and greater encrease. The residue of the tyme which they spende not in fettyng and plantyng, they bestowe in gathering of golde. They haue nowe fuche plentie of foure footed beasts, that horses and oxen hydes with sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought from thense into Spayne: So that nowe the daughter in many thynges helpeth and succureth her mother. Of the trees of brasile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shinyng redde, mastix, gossampine cotton, the precious metall cauled *Electrum*, and such other commodities of this Ilande, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore can chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to bee dryuen to close chaumbers with sharpe coulde or fayntyng heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shinnes with continual fytyng at the fyre, which thynges make men oulde in short tyme by resoluinge the natural heate, wherof a thousande diseases insue. They also affirme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no lesse holfome, as they whiche haue their continuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are vtterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length coome to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed Ilande. We haue before declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers descendyng frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the East, is cauled *Iunna*, as that towarde the West is named *Attibunicus*: The thyrd is *Naiba* or *Haiba* which runneth Southwarde: The fourth is cauled *Iache*, and fauleth towarde the North. But this shippe maister, hath brought an other description obserued of th[e] inhabitants from the begynnyng. Let vs therefore diuide the hole Ilande into foue partes, caulynge the regions of euery prouince by theyr owlde names: and fynally make mention of fuche thynges as are woorthye memory in euery of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on the East fyde, is conteyned in the prouince named *Caizcimu*: so named for that in theyr language *Cimu*, signifieth the front or begynnyng of any thyng. After this, foloweth the prouince of *Huhabo*, and then *Caihabo*. The fourth is *Bainoa*. *Guacciarima* conteyneth the west corner. But the last faue one, *Bainoa* is of larger boundes then the three other. *Caizcimu* reacheth from the fyrst fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer *Hozama*, whiche runneth by the cite of faynt Dominicke. But towarde the North fyde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. *Huhabo*, is included within the mountaynes *Haiti* and the ryuer *Iaciga*. *Car[h]abo* the thyrd prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene *Cuhabo* and *Dahatio*, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and ascendeth to the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, where the greatest plentie of golde is founde: Owte of the which also the ryuer *Demahus* springeth: and ioynyng with the springes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Ilande towarde the south sea) fauleth to an other banke of the ryuer of faynt Dominicke. *Bainoa*, begynneth at the confines of *Caiabi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of *Calini* which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the north fyde of the Ilande where wee fayde that they erected the fyrst colonic or habitacion. The prouince of *Guacciarima*, occupieth the remanent towarde the west. This they named *Guacciarima*, bycause it is the extreme or vttermost parte of the Ilande. For *Iarima* in theyr language signifieth the taylor ende of any thyng: And *Gua*, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of theyr kynges: as *Guarionexius*, and *Guaccanarillus*. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, are these regions: *Higuci*, *Guanama*, *Reyre*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Hazoa*, *Macorix*, *Caiacoa*, *Guaiaagua*, *Baguanimaho* and the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. Here let vs speake fume what of theyr aspirations which they vse otherwyse then the Latins doo.

It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr vowels, which hath not th[e]effecte of a conforant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations more vehemently then wee do the conforant. f. Ye, all fuche woordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is. f. fauing that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to th[e]uppermost teethe. With open mouthes and shakynge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, hu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyrs. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those woordes whiche they haue receaued of the Moores and Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these woordes: *Almohadda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almohaza*, that is, a horse combe: with dyuers such other woordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherse these thynges, bycause amonge the Latines it often tymes foo chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the woorde: as *hora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this woorde *os*, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occido* I faule. Euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many thynges to bee obserued. But let vs nowe returne to the description. In the prouince of *Huhabo*, are these regions: *Xamana*, *Canabacoa*, *Cuhabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Caihabo*, conteyneth these regions: *Magua*, and *Cacacubana*. Th[e]inhabitantes of this region, haue a peculyar language much differinge from the common language of the Iland, and are cauled *Macoryxes*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubana*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyse the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon*, *Cybah*, and *Manabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runnethe the ryuer *Nizaus*: And the montaynes cauled *Mahaitin*, *Hazua*, and *Neibaymao*, confine with the same. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Maguana*, *Iagohaiucho*, *Bauruco*, *Dabiagua*, and *Attibuni*, so named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa*, *Buiaici*, *Dahabonici*, *Maiaguariti*, *Atici*, *Maccazina*, *Guahabba*, *Anniuici*, *Marien*, *Guaricco*, *Amaguei*, *Xaragua*, *Yaguana*, *Azzuci*, *Iacchi*, *Honorucco*, *Diaguo*, *Camaie*, and *Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* the last prouince, these regions are conteyned: *Mauicarao*, *Guahagua*, *Taquenazabo*, *Nimaca*, *Bainoa* the lesse, *Cahaymi*, *Jamaizi*, *Manabaxao*, *Zauana*, *Habacoa*, and *Ayqueroa*. But let vs entreate sumwhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great goulfe of the beginnyng, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the sea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnlyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnynge many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shyp maister, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to searche the caue with the smaulest vessels. He sayth that by certeyne priuie wayes, manye ryuers haue concourse to this caue as it were to a finke or chanel. After th[e]experience hereof, they ceafed to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne whiche comynge fourefcore and tenne myles, were swalowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the sea by any knowne wayes. Nowe therefore they suppose that ryuers swalowed vp by the holowe places of that stony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the shipmaister entered into the caue his shippe was almost swalowed. For he faith that there are many whirlepooles and ryfinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conflicte and horrible rorynge one encounteringe the other. Also many huge holes and holowe places: So that what on the one syde with the whirle pooles, and on the other side with the boyling of the water, his shyp was long in maner toffed vp and downe lyke a baule. It greatly repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how to come forth. He now wandered in darkeness, as wel for the obscurenesse of the caue into the which he was farre entered, as also that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moist vapours proceeding of the conflicte of the waters whiche continually faule with great violence into the caue on euery syde. He compareth the noyse of these waters, to the faule of the famous ryuer of *Nilus* from the montaines of Ethyope. They were al so deafe, that one could not here what an other said. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came forth of the caue as it had byn owte of hel. Aboute three score miles distante from the chiefe cite of saincte Dominicke, there are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a lake or standynge poole inaccessible, neuer yet seene of them whiche came latelye to the Ilande, bothe by reason of the roughnesse of the montaines, and also for that there is noo pathe or open waye to the toppes of the same. But at the length the shyppe maister beinge conducted thether by one of kynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came to the poole. Hee faith that the coulde is there of sum force. And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble busshes, whiche two, growe onely in coulde regions. These montaynes, they caule *Ymizui Hibahaino*. This poole is of freshe water three myles in compasse, and wel replenysht with diuerse kindes of fyfshes. Many smaule riuers or brookes faule into it. It hath no passage owte, bycause it is on euery syde enclosed with the toppes of montaynes. But lette vs nowe speake of an other poole whiche may well bee cauled a sea in the mydlande, and bee compared to the Caspian or Hircanian sea in the fyrme lande of *Asia*: with certeyne other lakes and pooles of freshe water.

The pronunciation of the Hebrewes and Arabians

The Moores and Arabians possessed Spayne

Howe the aspiration changeth the signification of wordes

Dyuers languages in the Ilande

A greate caue in the rocke of a mountayne.

A daungerous enterprise

Riuers deuoured of caues.

129

Whirlepooles and conflicte of waters.

Cloudes in the caue.

The Cataractes of Nilus

A standynge poole in the toppes of a hygh mountayne.

Ferne and bramble busshes, growe only in coulde regions.

The Caspian and Hircanian sea.

THE EYGHTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



He prouynce of *Bainoa* beyng thrife as bygge as the three fyrst, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caihabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of falte, soure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the sea cauled *Caspium*, lying in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therfore named it *Caspium*, although it not bee in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye swalowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the sea springeth into it, and also fuche as faule into it from the mountaines, are swalowed vppe.

They thyncke that the caues therof, are so large and deepe, that great fysshes of the sea passe by the fame into the lake. Emonge these fysshes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in funder by the myddeft at one snappe with his teethe, and deuoureth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnyng by the chiefe cite of fayncte Dominicke, these *Tiburoni* do sumtymes come from the sea and deuoure manye of th[e] inhabitants: Especially fuche as do dayly ploonge them selues in the water to th[e] intent to keepe their bodyes verye cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe fyde, *Guaniticabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccoci*: from the Easte, *Guannabo*: And from the West, *Occoa*. They faye that these ryuers are great and continuall: And that besyde these, there are. xx. other smaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe fyde within a furlonge of the lake, there are aboute twoo hundreth springes, occupyinge lykewise aboute a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coude in foomer, freshe also, and holsome to bee droonke. These springes make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynge with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muste wee staye a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe praying in a chapel builded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to satisfie his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproued hym, and put hym in remembrance to haue respecte to the holye place. The woordes whiche shee spake to hym, were these: *Teitoca*, *Teitoca*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie. *Guamechyna*, fignifyeth god, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the husbände halyng her by the arme, fayde: *Guaibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with these woordes as he profered her violence, foodenlye he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle beyng stricken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe: In so muche that from thense forth hee wolde neuer suffer the chappell to bee swepte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the fame myracle, manye of th[e] inhabitants and all the Christians beyng moued, reforted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Lette vs nowe retourne to *Caspium*. That falte lake is toffed with stormes and tempestes: And ostentymes drowneth smaule shyppes or fyssher boates, and swaloweth them vppe with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by shyppewracke, euer ploonged vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodyes of fuche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*. This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myddeft hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they reforte when they go a fysshynge: But it is not cultured. There is in the same playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose water is myxte of falte and freshe: And is therfore nother apte to bee droonke, nor yet to bee refused in vrgente necessitye. This conteineth in length. xxv. miles, and in breadth eight myles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no passage owte of the fame, but are swalowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, whiche is the cause that it is so commyxte. In the same prouynce towarde the Weste fyde, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distante from *Caspium*. This th[e] inhabitants caule *Iainagua*. The fame falte lake, hath on the North fyde therof, an other named *Guaccaa*. This is but lyttle: as not past three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee droonke. On the fouthe fyde of the falte lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbarco*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freshe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage owte nor yet anye swalowinge goulfes, conueyeth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be encreased with the streames whiche faule sumtymes more abundantly from the mountaines. This is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Guaniba*, lying betwene the East and the South nere vnto the fyde of *Caspium*. This is ten myles in length and almoste rounde. There are furthermore many other smaule standyng pooles or lakes disparfed here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyl lette passe lest I shulde bee tedious in remainyng to longe

A great lake of soure and salte water.

Swalowinge goulfes.

Sea fysshes in lakes of the midlande
The deuourynge fysshe cauled *Tiburonus*.

The ryuers that faule into the lake *Caspium*.

CC. [two hundred] springes within the space of a furlonge.

A myracle.

The Indian language.

130

A kyng stricken dumme and lame by a myracle.

Such as are drowned in the lake are not cast vp ageyne.

The Ilande *Guarizacca* in the myddeft of the poole.

A lake of salt and freshe water.

A lake of freshe water

A lake of ten myles in length

in one thyng. I wyll therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all these, great plentie of fyfhe and foule is nouryshed. All these lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the East reacheth into the West a hundreth and twentie myles: beyng of breadth. xviii. myles where it is narrowest, and. xxv. where it is largest. Looking toward the West, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiguani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines of *Caigua*, so cauled of the name of the vale it felse. At the rootes of the montaines of *Caigua* toward the North fyde, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named. For it containeth in length, almoste two hundreth myles: And in bredth. xxx. wher it is largest, and about. xx. wher it is narrowest. This vale in summe parte therof, is cauled *Maguana*: In an other place, *Iguamu*, and elles where, *Hathathiei*. And forafnuce as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll sumwhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thinge so straunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleasure in fysshinge. Into his nettes chanced a younge fyfhe of the kynde of those huge monsters of the sea whiche th[e]inhabitours caule *Manati*, not founde I suppose in owre seas nor knowen to owre men before this tyme. This fyfhe is foure footed, and in shape lyke vnto a tortoyse although shee be not covered with a shel, but with scales: And those of such hardnesse and couched in such order, that no arrowe can hurte her. Her scales are byset and defend with a thousand knobbes. Her backe is playne, and her heade vtterly lyke the heade of an oxe. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is slowe of mouyng: of condition meeke, gentell, affocycable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous fence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king norified this fyfhe certeine daies at home with the breade of the countrye, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with such other rootes as men are accustomed to eate. For when shee was yet but younge, he cast her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake also receaueth waters and casteth not the same forth ageine. It was in tyme paste cauled *Guaurobo*: But is nowe cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fyfhe whiche wandered safelye in the fame for the space of. xxv. yeares, and grewe excedyng byg. What so euer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this fyfhe: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Therefore when so euer any of the kynges familyers, especiallye such as are knowen to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum*, *Matum*, then she (as myndefull of such benefites as she hath receaued of men) lystethe vp her heade and commeth to the place whither she is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of such as feede her. If any desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of theyr intente, she boweth her felse to them, therewith as it were gently inuitynge them to amount vpon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer. It hath byn seene that this monstrous fyfhe hath at one tyme safely caryed ouer tenne men singinge and playinge. But if by chance when she lysteed vp her heade she espyed any of the Christian men, she wolde immediatly plouge downe ageyne into the water and refuse to obey, bycause she had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amonge the Christians, who hadde caste a sharpe darte at her, although she were not hurte by reason of the hardenes of her skynne beinge roughe and ful of scales and knobbes as we haue sayde. Yet dyd she beare in memorie th[e]iniurie she susteyned, with so gentell a reuenge requitynge th[e]ingratitude of hym which had delte with her so vngentelly. From that day when so euer she was cauled by any of her familyers, she wolde fyrst looke circumspectly about her, least any were present appaeled after the maner of the Christians. She wolde oftentimes play and wrestle vpon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And especially with a younge man whom the kyng faouered well, beinge also accustomed to feede her. Shee wolde bee sumetymes as pleasaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey or marmaset: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and solace to the hole Ilande. For no smaule confluence aswell of the Christians as of th[e]inhabitantes, had dayly concourse to beholde so straunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation wherof was no lesse pleasaunt then wonderfull. They say that the meate of this kynde of fyfhe, is of good taste: And that many of them are engendered in the seas therabout. But at the length, this pleasaunt playfelowe was losse, and caryed into the sea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced so terrible a tempest of wind, and rayne, with such fluds enfewing that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reason of this tempest, the ryuer *Attibunicus* so ouerflowed the bankes, that it fylled the hole vale and myxt it felse with all the other lakes. At which tyme also, this gentell *Matum* and pleasaunte companion, folowyng the vehemente course and faule of the fluddes, was thereby restored to his oulde moother and natyue waters, and fence that tyme neuer seene ageyne. Thus hauyng digressed sufficiently, let vs nowe come to the situation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam* which brynge it to the South sea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* toward the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycause that before the memorie of man, the prediceffours and auncestours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is descended by right of inheritance, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of this kyng, we haue spoken largely in the fyrst narration of the Ilande in the fyrst Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundreth and fourefcore myles: And of

A playne of a hundreth and twentie miles

A playne of two hundreth myles in length.

The maruelous fysshe Manati.

131

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyfhe caryeth men ouer the lake

A maruelous thyng.

The ryuer *Attibunicus*.

The situation of the great vale.

The mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam*.

The greate vale of *Guarionexius*.

132

Mountaynes.
Vales.
Hylles.
Playnes.
Ryuers.
Golde in all
mountaynes, and
golde and fysshe
in all ryuers.
Salte bayes.

Howe the Ilande
is diuided with
mountaynes.

Golde.
The ryuers haue
theyr increase
from the caues of
the mountaynes
No hurtful or
raueninge beast
in the Ilande.

The autours
excuse.

By what meanes
the people of the
Iland are grety
consumed.

The pleasures of
Hispaniola.

The region of
Cotohi, situate in
the Clowdes.

A playne in the
toppes of
mountaynes

The hygher, the
coulder.

Moderate coulede
in the mountaynes.

Ferne of
maruelous bignes

Golde.

133

Th[e]inhabitant
of Hispaniola can
abyde no labour
nor coulede.

The Iland of
Creta or Candie,
vnder the
dominion of the
Venetians.

breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is brodeste. It begynneth from the region *Canabocoa* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Mariena*. It lyeth in the myddeft betwene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* and *Cazacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maifestie of mountaynes, frutefulness of vales, pleasauntneffe of hylles, and delectableness of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the fame. There are no fides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyffhes, except only one ryuer which from th[e] originall therof, with the sprynges of the same breakyng foorth of the mountaynes, commeth owt falte and so contynueth vntyll it peryshe. This ryuer is cauled *Bahuan*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe away vnder the grounde by fume passages of playster or falte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable falte bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers and fyue prouinces. There is also an other particion, whiche is this. The hole Ilande confysteth of the toppes of foure mountaynes which diuide it by the myddeft from the East to the weste. In all these is abundance of nooryshyng moysture and greate plentie of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lykewyse in them horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of ston. There was neuer any noysome beaste founde in it: Nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beaste. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring wolues. All thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr Zemes and Images of deuylles being reiected and vtterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to repeate one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desyre yowre holynes therewith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these things, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verye ioy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the same ageyne: Especially when I confyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet amonge these so many blessed and fortunate thynges, this one greueth me not a lyttle: That these simple poore men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryshe with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are therby brought to fuche desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chylde. In so much that women with chylde, perceauyng that they shall bryng foorth such as shalbe slaues to the Christians, vse medecines to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they shulde bee fet at lybertie, yet are they constrained to ferue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is wonderfully extenuate. They were once rekened to bee aboute twelue hundreth thousande heades: But what they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyl therefore let this passe: and returne to the pleasures of *Hispaniola*. In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddeft of the Ilande in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotohi*, situate in the clowdes, enuironed with the toppes of hyghe mountaynes, and well inhabited. It consisteth of a playne of. xxv. myles in length, and. xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yeare: as the Spryng, Soomer, Autumne, and wynter. Here the herbes waxe wythered, the trees loofe theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The foyle of this playne bryngeth foorth ferne and bramble bushes bearyng blacke berries or wylde raspes, which two are tokens of coulede regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the coulede therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it afflicte th[e] inhabitants with froste or snowe. They argue the frutefulness of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a spere or iauelen. The fydes of those mountaynes are ryche in golde. Yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the same, bycause it shalbe needefull to haue apparelled myners, and such as are vsed to labour. For th[e] inhabitants luyng contented with lyttle, are but tender: And can not therefore away with labour or abyde any coulede. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named *Comoiayxa*, whose course is towarde the West, and fauleth into the chanell of *Naiba*. The other is cauled *Tircotus*: which runnyng towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna*. In the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypte, the Venetians toulde me that there laye fuche a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more frutefull of wheate corne then any other region of the Iland. But forasmuch as once the Cretenses rebelled agens the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narowe way to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes against th[e] auctoritie of the Senate, and at the length beinge forweryed with warres, rendered the fame, the Senate commaunded that it shulde bee lefte deserte, and the strenghtes of th[e] enter-

ances to bee stopped, leste any shulde ascende to the region without their permissyon. Yet in the yeare of Christe M. D. ii. lycence was graunted to the husband men to tyll and manure the region, on siche condition that no siche as were apte to the warres, myght enter into the same. There is also an other region in *Hispaniola* named *Cotohy* after the same name. This diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vhabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines. But bycause it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it richest in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold, beginneth here: In so muche that it is not gathered in smaule graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole, masse, and pure, emonge certayne softe stonnes and in the vaines of rockes, by breakynge the stonnes wherof, they folowe the vaynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the wayne of golde is a luyng tree: And that the same by all wayes that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and passages of the yearth, putteth foorth branches euen vnto the vppermost part of the earth, and ceaseth not vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time, it sheweth foorth certayne bewtifull colours in the steede of floures, rounde stonnes of golden earth in the steede of frutes, and thynne plates in steede of leaues. These are they whiche are disparcelled throughout the hole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the springes owte of the montaines, and violent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especially on the dry land: but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth and there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deeper that they dygge, they fynd the trunks therof to be so muche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the montaines. Of the branches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a threde, and other as bygge as a mannes synger accordynge to the largenesse or straightnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sumetimes chaunced vpon holl caues fusteyned and borne vp as it were with golden pyllars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches ascende: The whiche beyng fylled with the substaunce of the truncke creapyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encounterynge with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes noorished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But now perhappes yowe will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thense. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande that onely owte of *Hispaniola*, the sum of foure hundred and sumtymes fyue hundred thousande ducates of gold is brought yearely into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion dewe to the kynges Exchequer, which amounteth to the sum of a hundred and fourscore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Santi Iohannis* (otherwise cauled *Burichena*) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue fayde thus muche of golde, it shall suffice. We wyll nowe therefore speake sumwhat of salte wherwith wee may season and reserue siche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the montaynes of *Daiaguo*, about twelue myles distant from the salte lake cauled *Caspius*, there are salte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stonnes, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykewyse siche salte baies whiche growe wondrously in *Laletania* (now cauled *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona* the chiefe ruler in that region. But siche as knowe theym bothe, affyrme that these of *Bainoa* are moste notable. They saye also that this can not be clefte without wedges and beatelles of Iron. But that of *Laletania*, maye easlye bee broken as I my selfe haue proued. They therefore compare this to siche stonnes as may easlye bee broken: And the other to marble. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariagua*, there are springes whose waters are of maruelous nature, beyng in the superfyttal or vppermooste parte, freshe: In the myddeft, myxte of salte and freshe: And in the lowest parte, salte and sower. They thincke that the salte water of the sea, issheweth owte softely, and the freshe, to springe owte of the montaines. The one fauleth downe and the other ryfeth: and are not therefore so vniuersally myxt wherby the one may vtterly corrupt th[e] other. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of these springes, he shal perceaue the ground there to bee so hollowe, that the reboundyng noyse of a horsfeman comminge may be harde for the space of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In the laste region toward the fouth named *Guacciarima*, in the lordshyp of *Zauana*, they say there are certeyne wyld men whiche lyue in the caues and dennes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde frutes. These men neuer vsed the companye of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becomme tame. They lyue without any certayne dwellyng places, and with owte tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in ould tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are withoute any certayne language. They are sumtymes feene. But owre men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they come to the fyght of men, and perceyue any makyng toward them, they flye swifter then a harte. Ye they affyrme them to bee swifter then grehowndes. What one of these folytarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that owr men hauyng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of them repaired thither in the mooneth of September in the yeare. M. D. xiiii. In the meane tyme, one of these wyld men came leapyng owte of the woodde. And approachyng sumwhat toward them with smylyng countenance, foodenly snatched vpe a childe of therfe beyng the foonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the

Pure and massie golde in the region of Cotoy.

The vaine of golde, is a luyng tree.

These colers or floures are cauled Marchasites, Pyrites.

The roote of the golden tree.

The branches of the golden tree.

Caues susteyned with pyllers of golde.

The stonnes of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yerely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the mountaynes, very hard and cleare.

134

Salt as hard as stonnes.

Springes of salt, freshe and sower water.

Hollwe caues in the grounde

Certeyne wyld men lyuing in caues and dennes

Men without a certeyne language

Men as swift as greihounds
A wyld man runneth away with a chylde

Pitche of the
rocke.

Pitche of two
kyndes of trees.
The pine tree.
The tree *Copeia*.

The leafe of a tree
in the steede of
paper.

They beleue that
leaues do speake.
A pretie storie.

135

Ignorance causeth
admiration.

The leafe wherin
they wryte.

A stronge colour
of the iuise of an
apple.

An Herbe whose
smoke is poyson.

Ilande. He ranne away with the childe, and made fygnes to owre men to folowe hym. Many folowed aswel of owre men as of the naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleafaunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceased to pursue hym, he lefte the childe in a crosse waye by the whiche the swyneheardes were accustomed to dryue the swyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a swynehearde founde the chyld and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym selfe for forowe, supposynge that wyld man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his soonne was nowe deuowred. In the same Ilande they gather pytche whiche sweateth owte of the rockes, beynge muche harder and sourer then the pitche of the tree: and is therefore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes ageynste the woormes cauled *Bromas*, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This Ilande also bryngeth fourth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not speake of the pyne tree, bycause it is engendered and knowen in maner euery where. Lette vs therefore speake sumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyse gathered of it as of the pyne tree: although the summe fayeth that it is gathered by distylling or droppynge of the woode when it is burnt. It is a straunge thyng to here of the leafe thereof: and how necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Chaldeans (beyng the fyrste fynders of letters) expressed their myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a spanne in breadth and almost round. Owre men write in them with pynnes or nedles or any suche instruments made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to be lawghed at what owre men haue perfwaded the people of the Ilande as towchynge this leafe. The fymple foules beleue that at the comandement of owre men, leaues do speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of owre men dwellynge in the cite of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, deliuered to his seruante (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne rosted connies, (whiche they caule *Vtias* beyng no bygger then myse) wyllynge hym to carie the same to his frende whiche dwelte further within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were that he was therto constrayned through hunger, or entyfed by appetite, deuoured thre of the counnies by the waye. He to whome they were sente, writ to his frynde in a leafe howe manye he receaued. When the mayster had looked a whyle on the leafe in the presence of the seruante, he sayde thus vnto hym. Ah soonne, where is thy faythe? Coude thy gredye appetyte preuayle so muche with the as to cause the to eate the connies commytted to thy fydelitye? The poore wretche trembelynge and greatlye amafed, confessed his faute: And therewith desyred his mayster to tell hym howe he knewe the treweth therof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou browghest me, hath toulde me all. Then hee further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his commyng to his frende, and lykewyse of his departynge when hee returned. And thus they meryly deceaue these feely foules and keepe them vnder obedyence: In so muche that they take owre men for goddes, at whose commaundement leaues doo disclose suche thynges as they thyncke mooste hyd and secrete. Bothe the fydes of the leafe receaueth the formes of letters euen as dooeth owre paper. It is thicke then double parchement, and meruelous tough. While it is yet florysshynge and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters waxe yelowe. It dooeth not corrupte or putrifye: nor yet loofeth the letters though it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte it bee burnt. There is an other tree named *Xagua*: the iuise of whose soure apple beyng of a darke redde coloure, slayneth and coloureth what soo euer is touched therwith: And that soo fyrmely, that noo waffhyng canne take it awaye for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuise loofeth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is also an herbe whose smoke (as we haue reherfed the like before of a certen woodde) is deadly poison. On a tyme when the kynges assembled together and conspired the destruction of owre men, whereas they durste not attempte th[e]nterprise by open warre, theyr diuise was, priuilye to lay many bundels of those herbes in a certeyne house, whiche shortly after they intended to fet on fyre, to th[e]intent that owre men makynge haste to quenshe the same, myght take theyr death with the smoke therof. But theyr purposed practyse beyng bewrayed, th[e]autours of the diuise were punysshed accordyngly. Nowe (moste holy father) for as much as yowre holynesse wryteth that what soo euer we haue written of the newe worlde, dooth please yowe ryght well, wee wyll reherse certeyne thynges owte of order, but not greatly from owre purpose. Of the fettyng the rootes of *Maizium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other beinge theyr common foode, and of th[e]use of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyrste applyed to the commoditie of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to entreate sumwhat hereof.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



THEY saye that the fyrste inhabitours lyued contented with the rootes of dates, and Magueans, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or Orpin. Also the rootes of Guaiegans, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffes of the earth or muffheromes. They did lykewife eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto perfeneppes: *Cibaios* lyke nuttes, *Cabaioes* and Macoanes, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other fuche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a certeyne *Boition*, that is, a wyfe oulde man, sawe vppon the bankes fyde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplantyng the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by nooryshynge it in gardens. This was the begynnyng of *Iucca*, which at the fyrste was deadlye poyson to all fuche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleasaunte taste, they determyned many wayes to proue the vse therof: And at the length founde by experience that beinge sodde or fryed, it was lesse hurtefull: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyyng hyd in the iufe of the roote. Thus by dryyng, saltynge, seafonyng, and otherwyse temperyng it, they brought it to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycause it is of easyer digestiō. The same is to bee vnderstoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue chofen for their chiefe meate amonge the feedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with fuche other corne as are nowe most in vse amonge men) in Egypte of certeyne graynes taken owt of the mudde dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by th[e] increase of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at such tyme as *Nilus* reforted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrst norished and increafed such chofen feedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is known by theyr leaues and floures. One kynde of these, is cauled *Guanaguax*. This is whyte boothe within and without. An other named *Guaragueti* is of vyolet colour without and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caul *Zazaueios*. These are redde without and whyte within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is all together of vyolet colour. *Hobos* is yelowe booth of skynne and inner substance. There is an other named *Atibunieix*: The skynne of this is of violet colour, and the substance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his skynne also of vyolet colour, and is whyte within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a whyte skynne, and the substance of vyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearfall of these, I shal prouoke the spurres of malicious persons ageynst me which wyll scorne these our doinges for that we haue wrytten of many such smaule thinges to a prince occupied in fuche weyghty affayres, as vnto yowre holynes vppon whose shulders resteth the burthen of the hole Christian worlde. But I wolde aske of these malycious enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether Plinie and such other famous wryters, when they dyrected and dedicated such thinges to kynges and princes, entended only to profyte them to whom they consecrated the frute of their knowledge. They sumtymes intermyxte famous thynges with obscure thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with smaule, that by the foortheraunce of princes, theyr vniuerfall posteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowledge of thynges. At other tymes also, beinge intent about particular thinges, and desyrous of newe thynges, they occupied them selues iu the searchyng of particular tractes and coastes, with fuche thynges as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to coome the better to more absolute and vniuerfal knowledge. Let theym therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to scorne, not theyr ignoraunce and slothfulnes, but pernicious curiosnes: And therewith hauynge pitie of theyr frowarde dispositiōs, wyll commit them to the venemous serpentes of whom enuie tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that these thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowe doo not dispise owre simple vestures wherwith we haue only weaued togyther and not adourned, gathered and not described such maruelous thynges in the garnysshynge wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnyng. Owre desyre is none other but herein for yowre sake to doo owre endeuoure that these thynges maye not peryshe. Let every man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or bullocke fould in the market, nothyng remayneth in the eucynge, bycause the shulder pleafeth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, fume haue most phantafie to the bowels, and fume to the feete. Thus hauynge enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpose and declare with what wordes they salute the kynges chyldren when they are fyrst borne: or howe they apply the begynnyng of theyr lyues to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therefore when the kyng hath a sonne borne, such as dwel neare about his pallaice or vyllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where

The kyndes of frutes wherwith the[e] inhabitants lyued fyrst.

Necessitie the moother of all artes.

136

The fine breade *Cazabbi*, made of the rootes of *Iucca*.

Howe *Ceres* fyrst founde wheate and barley in Egypte.

The rootes of ages.

The autours excuse.

Plinie.

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

The names and tytles of the Romane Emperours.

137

Howe they make theyr testamentes

So dyd grea[t] Alexander

The kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with hym.

They burie their iewels with them. A dreame of an other lyfe after this. Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much.

Variable motions of the elementes. The colonies and vyllages which the Spanyardes haue buylded

The other Ilandes about hispaniola.

The Ilande Arethusa.

A sprynge runnyng vnder the sea frome hispaniola to Arethusa.

138

The Iland of Sancti Iohannis

The Ilande of Cuba.

one saluteth the newe borne chylde with one name, and an other with an other name. God faue the thowe shynyng lampe fayth one: An other cauleth him bryght and cleare. Sume name him the victourer of his enemies: and other fume, the puiffaunt conquerour descended of bludde royall, and bryghter then gold, with dyuers other fuche wayne names. Therfore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus Dacicus*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, accordyng to the titles of theyr parentes and auncestours, euen so by th[e] imposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beuchicus Anaca[u]choa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whome and of the wyfe woman *Anachaona* his syster, we haue spoken largely in the fyrste Decade) was cauled by all these names folowyng: *Tureigua Hobin*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, a kyng shynyng as bryght as laton. *Starei*, that is, bryghte: *Huiho*, hyghneffe: *Duihcynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other fuche, dooeth kyng *Beuchius* magnifye hym felse as often as he commaundeth any thyng to be doone or caufeth any proclamation to be made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to founde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them felues in makynge their testamentes, we wyl nowe declare. They leaue th[e] inheritaunce of their kyngedomes to th[e] eldest soones of their eldest systers. If shee fayle, to th[e] eldest of the seconde syster and so of the thirde if the second also faile. For they are owte of doubt that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to be not legitimate. If there remaine none of their systers children, they leaue th[e] inheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne soones. Laste of all, if al these faile, they affygne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiectes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to be buryed with hym. *Anachaona* the syster of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of fuche wifedome and cunnyng that in makynge of rhymes and balettes shee was counted a prophetisse emonge the beste, commaunded, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanahattabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee wolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if shee had not byn otherwise perfwaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of saincte Fraunces order whiche chaunced then to be presente. They faye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her iewelles and twentie of her best ornamentes. Their custome is, to place besyde euery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Cazabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the regyon of this kyng *Beuchius*, and in *Hazua*, parte of the regyon of *Caiabo*, also in the fayre vale of false and freshe lakes, and lykewise in the region of *Yaquino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regyons are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no lesse arte then doo th[e] inhabitants of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcin* in *Spartaria* for the seldome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guacciarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named saincte Dominike are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dyuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue spoken suffycientely beefore. They haue fence that tyme buylded these vyllages: *Portus Plate*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Saluaterra*. Hauynge fayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and ladye of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the moste bewtiful wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of her Nymphes and faire *Nercides* whiche waite vpon her and adourne her on euery fyde. Wee wyl therfore begynne at the nearest cauled the newe *Arethusa*, soo named of the fontayne *Arethusa* in the Ilande of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a sprynge: but otherwyse vnprofytable. Owre men named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onely two trees groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountaine that commeth from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* through the fecreate passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh foorth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the sea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh foorth in the Ilande of Sicilie in the fountayne *Arethusa*. That the fountayne of this newe *Arethusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest hereby, that the water ishwynge owte of the fountayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They faye that the fountayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in the region of *Guacciarima* confynyng with the land of *Zauana*. This Ilande is not paste a myle in circuite, and commodious for fyfsher men. Directly towarde the Easte (as it were the porter keyng the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely beefore. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitfull soile, is equall with her mother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them felues to gatherynge of golde. Towarde the west on the Northe fyde, great *Cuba* (for the longeneffe therof, longe

supposed to be the continent or fyrme lande) wardeth owre *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the Easte to the Weste, is diuided in the myddeft with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lyinge on the South syde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the fayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee vnhabitable and desert by reason of the feruent heate of the foonne in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion They affyrme that rycher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They faye also that euen nowe while I wryte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the melting, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundreth and fourescore thousande Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great rycheffe. *Iamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitefull Ilande, of foyle apte for corne, grasses, and fettes, it confysteth of onely one mountayne. Th[e] inhabitants are warrellyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to Sicilie in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactly, faye that it is fumulde leffe: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious stoones, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrste named *Caraqueira*) lyinge on the Southe syde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as wee reade of great Britanye nowe cauled Englande, and Caledonia nowe cauled Scotlande) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anima Album*, whose fume is holsome ageynst reumes and heauynesse of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne sweete meale. As owre husbnde men are accustomed to referue chestenuttes and fuche other harde frutes all the wynter, soo do they the dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, Pyne trees of the beste kynde, and fuche other deyntie dyffhes of nature, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. Ye, they thyncke that th[e] inhabitants of other Ilandes, had their feedes of soo many pleasaunt frutes from hense. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnyng all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleshe, were accustomed to bryng home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profytable in any place. They are intractable, and wyl admytte no straungiers. It shall therefore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vse to inueneme their arrowes. When the men go foortlie of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageynst fuche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue fayde in the fyrste decade. This Ilande hath also frutefull mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nouryssheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. Aboute. xviii. myles Easteward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which owr men named *Defiderata*, beyng. xx. myles in circuite and verye fayre. Also aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beyng thirtie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neatenesse and bewtifulnes therof. Nyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are syxe smaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: Yet necessarye to bee knowne to fuche as vse to trauayle the seas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea*. xxxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monferratus*, conteynyng in circuite fortye myles, hauynge also in it a mountayne of notable heygth. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, distante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the foonne and heyre of *Christopher Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he lefte in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte syde of *Hispaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the hauen *Beata*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboute this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyfes. For they faye that they are bygger then greate rounde targettes. At fuche tyme as the heate of nature moueth theym too generation, they coome foorthe of the sea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the sande, they laye three or foure hundreth egges therin. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the sande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffyce to couer the egges: And soo reforte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their successyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these beastes, they creapeth owte a multitude of tortoyfes, as it were pyffemares swarmynge owte of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the foonne withoute any helpe of their parentes. They faye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geese egges. They also compare the fleshe of these tortoyfes, to be equall with veale in taste. There are beyde these, innumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: nor yet is it greatly necessarye to fyfte this meale so fynely. It maye suffyce to vnderstond that there are large landes and many regyons whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tounge, and maners: and therwith embrace owre relygion. The Troyans dydde not foodenly replenyfhe Asia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phoenices Spayne.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of Iamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

England and Scotlande. The gumme cauled Anima album. Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Hony in trees and rockes.

The Ilande desiderata. The Ilande Galanta.

The Ilandes of Todos Sanctos or Barbata.

The Ilande monferratus.

139

The Ilande Antiqua.

The Ilande Portus Bellus. Great Tortoyfes. The generation of Tortoyfes.

The egges of Tortoyfes.

Innumerable Ilandes.

Troians. Tyrians. Greekes. Phenitians.

The North
Ilandes.

The Ilandes of
the south sea.
The Iland of
pearles.

Wylde beasts
must be tamed
with the rod.

As touchyng the Ilandes which lye on the north fyde of *Hifpaniola*; I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and fysshynge, yet are they leste of the Spanyardes as poore and of smaule value. We wyll nowe therefore take owre leaue of this owlde *Tethis* with her moyft and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewetifull ladye of the South sea rychely crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I fente vnto yowre holynes this last yeare, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the daungerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by report that in the prospect of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greatest forte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infestyng with warres the other kynges his bortherers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was leste vntouched by reason of the ragynge tempestes whiche troubled that South sea three moonethes in the yeare. But it is nowe better knowen to owre men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kynge to humanitie; and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctified with the water of baptisme with all his famelie and kyngedome. It shall not therefore bee from owre purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes these thynges were so happily atchyued.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE THYERDE DECADE.

An expedition to
the Ilande of
Dites in the south
sea

The Iland of
Margaritea.

Os Draconis.
Paria.

140

A conflict.

The kynge of the
Ilande of *Dites*
submitteth
himselfe.
The kynges
pallaice.

A hundreth and
ten pounce weight
of pearles.



At the arryual of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaspar Moralis* shuld take in hande th[e] expedition to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therefore tooke his vyage fyrst to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* beefore had concyled and left fryndes to the Christians. They frendely and magnifically entertheyned our men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margaritea*. For the fyrst cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which also is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaspar* brought with hym onely threescore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulde conuey ouer no greater number by reason of the smaulesnes and narownes of theyr boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole piece of tymbre as we haue fayde before. The kynge of the Ilande came foorth ageinst them fiercely with cruell and threatenynge countenance, and with a great bande of armed men cryng in maner of a larome and in token of the battayle, *Guazzauara, Guazzauara*, which is as much to faye as, battayle ageynst the enemye: And is as it weare a watch worde to giue th[e] onset, wherwith also they threwe theyr dartes. For they haue not th[e] use of bowes. They were so obstinate and desperate that they assayled owre men with foure *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles. At the length owre men with certeyne of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being eoulde enemies to this kynge of the Ilande) gotte the vpper hande by reason they assayled the kynge foodenly and vnwares. Yet was he determyned to assemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyse perfuaded by the kynges his bortherers which counfayled him to gyue ouer and submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by th[e] exemple of them selues and other threatenynge the destruction of his flooryshynge kyngedome: And otherwhyles declaryng vnto hym the humanitie and gentelnes of owre men, by whose frendship he might obteyne honoure and quyetes to hym and his: wyllyng hym furthermore to consider what chaunced vnto them which the yeare before refysted and aduentured the hasarde of the battayle as dyd these kynges, *Poncha, Pocchorrofa, Quarequa, Chiapes*, and *Tumacchus* with such other. By these perfuasions, the king submytted hym selfe and came frendely to owre men whom he conducted to his pallaice which they fay to be maruelously adorned and princelyke. As foone as they entered into the pallaice, he brought foorth a basket of curious woorkemanshpy and full of pearles which he gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundreth and ten poundes after. viii. vnces to the pounce. Beinge ageyne rewarded of owre men with such tryfles as they brought with them of purpose, as garlandes of Christall and glasse and other counterfet stonnes of dyuers colours, with lookyng glasse also and laton belles, and especially two or three Iren hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of golde) he thought hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe owre men to scorne that they wyll departe with so great and necessarie a thyng for any summe of golde: affyrmyng an axe or hatchet to bee profytable for manye vses of men: and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessary. Beynge therefore ioyfull and gladd of the frendeshpye of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand and brought

him with certeine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palaice, from whence they myght prospecte the mayne sea. Then castyng his eyes about hym on euery side, and lookyng towards the East, he sayde vnto them. Beholde here lyeth open before yowe the infynite sea extended beyond the soonne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the Southe and Weste, he sygnified vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the toppes of whose great montaynes they myght see, was exceedyng large. Then coomynge sumwhat nearer, he sayde: Beholde these Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and blessed, if yowe caule those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and perle[s]. Wee haue in this Ilande lyttle plentie of golde: But the deepe places of all the seas aboute these Ilandes, are full of perles: wherof yowe shall receaue of me as many as yow wyll requyre, so that ye perfyse in the bonde of frendeshyppe whiche yowe haue begunne. I greatly desyre yowre frendeshyppe, and wolde gladly haue the fruition of yowre thynges, whiche I sette muche more by then myllyons of perles. Yowe shall therefore haue no cause to doubt of any vnfaithfulnesse or breache of frendeshyppe on my behalfe. Owre men gaue hym lyke frendly woordes: and encouraged hym with many fayre promysse to doo as he had sayde. When owre men were nowe in a redynesse to departe, they couenaunted with hym to paye yearely to the greate kynge of Castyle a hundreth pounce weyghte of perles. He gladly agreed to their request, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought hym selfe any whittle the more to become tributarie. With this kynge they founde suche plentie of hartes and conies, that owre men stodyng in their houses myght kyl as many as them lyst with their arrowes. They lyue heare verye pleasauntly, hauyng greates plentie of al thynges necessary. This Ilande is scarsely syxe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade made of rootes and the graine of *Maizium*, and wyne made of feedes and frutes, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places aswell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande. This kynge is nowe baptised with all his familie and subiectes. His desyre was at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the gouernour. When owre men departed, he accompanied them to the sea syde and furnysshed them with boates to retourne to the continent. Owre men diided the perles emonge them, referuyng the fyfte portion to be deliuered to th[e] officers of the kynges Exchequer in those partes. They saye that these perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and exceedyng bygge: In so muche that they broughte manye with theym bygger then hafell nuttes. Of what price and value they myghte bee, I confyde by one perle the which *Paulus* predicessour to yowre holines, bowght at the second hand of a marchant of Venyce for foure and forty thousande ducates. Yet emonge those whiche were brought from this Ilande, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a thousande and two hundreth Castelans of golde. This was almost as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernour, who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wyfe, of whose maner of departure with her husbnde, wee haue made mention before. Wee muste then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght so deare emonge suche a multitude of perles where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought that the Venecian marchaunte boughte his for no great sum of mony in the East partes. But he fould it the dearer for that he chaunced to lyue in those lasciuious and wanton dayes when men were gyuen to suche nyse and superfluous pleasures, and mette with a marchaunt for his purpose. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of the shellfysshes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknown to yowre holynesse, that Aristotell, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernyng the generation of perles. But these Indians and owre men, rest onely in one assertion, not assentyng to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the sea, or that they moue at any tyme after they are borne. They wyll therefore that there bee certayne greene places as it were medowes in the bottome of the sea, bryngyng foorth an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme that they haue seene the same: And that they are engendered, norysshed, and growe therein, as wee see th[e] increase and succession of oysters to growe aboute them selues. Also that these fysshes delyteth not in the conuersation or companye of the sea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one, twoo, or three, or at the moste foure pearles: Affyrmyng that in the fysshynge places of the kynge of this Ilande, there was founde a hundreth pearles in one fysh, the whiche *Gasparr Moralis* the capitayne hym selfe, and his coompanions, diligently numbered. For it pleased the kynge at their beyng there and in their presence, to commaund his diuers to go a fysshynge for those kynde of fysshes. They compare the matrices of these fysshes, to the places of conception in hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great multitudes and clusters: And beleue that these fysshes bryng foorth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wherof, they saye that they founde certayne pearles coomynge foorth of their matrees, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme of their full rypenesse, and moued by nature to coome owte of their mootheres wombe openyng it selfe in tyme conuenient. Lykewise that within a while after, they sawe other succede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they sawe sum coomynge foorth, and other summe yet abyding the tyme of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they also became loofe and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to bee inclosed in the mydde of their bellies, there to be norysshed and increase as an infante suckyng his mootheres pappes within her wombe,

The kynges woordes.

Ilandes ryche in golde and pearles.

C. [hundred] pounce weyght of perles, yerely for a tribute.
Plentie of hartes and conies.

141

Wyne of frutes and sedes
The kynge is baptised.

The fyft part of perles due to the kynge.
Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of great price.

Nyse and superfluous pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of pearles.

Herbes in the bottome of the sea.

A hundreth perles in one shell fyssh.

The matrice of the perle fyssh.

The byrth of perles.

<p>142</p> <p>Where the byggest, meane, and least pearles are engendred</p> <p>Sea crabbes</p> <p>The sea muscles wherein pearles are engendred.</p> <p>The regions of the East syde of the goulfe of Vraba.</p> <p>The region of Caribana. The originall of the Canibales.</p> <p>The vylages of Caribana.</p> <p>Manhunters.</p>	<p>before hee moue to coome foorth of her priuie places. And if it chaunce any of these shellyffhes to be founde scatered in the fande of the fea (as I my selfe haue feene oysters disparceld on the shores in diuers places of the Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the fea by force of tempestes, and not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they becoome white by the clearenesse of the mornynge dewe, or waxe yelowc in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they seeme to reioyce in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary wyse to bee as it were astonished and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with fuche oter, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occafyon ferueth. Yet do they affyrme by th[e]xperience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane forte hygher, and the least hyghest of all and nearer to the brymme of the water. And fayc therfore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourysshed, and increase in the deepest places of the fea, whether fewe, dyuers, and that but feeldome dare aduenture to diue so deepe to gather them, afwel for feare of the sea crabbes whiche wander emonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also lest their brethe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they fayc to bee the cause why the owldest and therfore byggest fea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whense they are not lightly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cause, there are fewer founde of the byggest forte. They thyncke also, that when they fyrste faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, bycause they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smaulest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulder muscles cleaueth fast to the shel: But that it is a warte, whiche beyngc rafed from the shell with a fyle, is rounde and bryght but onely of one fyde, and not precious, beyngc rather of the nature of the fysh it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue feene certayne of these muscles cleauynge on rockes: Yet these but fewe, and nothyngc woorthc. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde fea, or Taprobana, are ruled in fuche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, forasmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the ferchyngc of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken suffyciently of these fea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde nyfenes and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Lette vs therfore entreate sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche are coome to owre knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely described the mouthes of the goulfe of <i>Vraba</i>, with fundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that fea. But as concernynge the West coastes in the whiche owre men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the bankes of <i>Dariena</i>, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They fayc that the vnyuersal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachynge into the fea, and from the extreame or vtter mozte mouthe of the same receauynge the waters of the fea whiche faule into it, euen vnto <i>Os Draconis</i> and <i>Paria</i>, is by one generall name cauled <i>Caribana</i>, of the <i>Caribes</i> or Canibales whiche are founde in euery regyon in this tracte. But from whense they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their natiue soyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, we wyl nowe declare. Therfore from the fyrste fronte reachynge fourth into the fea (in whose tracte we said that <i>Fogeda</i> fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles distant, there lyeth a vyllage of <i>Caribana</i> named <i>Futeraca</i>. Three myles distant from this, is the vyllage of <i>Vraba</i>, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, bycause this vyllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyxe myles from this, is <i>Feti</i>. Nyne myles from <i>Feti</i>, is <i>Zerema</i>: And about twelue myles from this, <i>Sorache</i>. Owre men founde all these vyllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntyngc. In so muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exerise crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther sleye one the other, or elles dryue the vanquysshed to flyghte. Whereby it is apparante that by these their continuall warres, and dryuynge the one the other owte of their countreis, this infection hath gonne so farre not onely on the fyrme lande, but also into the Ilandes. I was also aduertised of an other thyngc the whiche to my iudgement, seemeth woorthye to bee putte in memorye.</p>
<p>143</p> <p>Hookes. Loke in the begynnyng of the booke of the landes lately founde.</p>	<p>One <i>Corrales</i> a iudge in causes of lawe amonge the Spaniardes of <i>Dariena</i>, sayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugityue which had fledde from the great landes lyyngc farre toward the weste, and remayned here with a Kynge wyth whom he was enterteined. When this man perceaued the lawier lookynge on his booke, marueilyngc thereat, he came runningc vnto him, and by interpretours of the kynge whom he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowe also bookes wherin yowe may referue thynges in perpetual memorye? And letters wherby yowe maye declare yowe mynde to fuche as are absent? And herewith desyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne country. But when he sawe them vnlyke, he fayde further that in his</p>

country there were cities fortified with waules and gouerned by lawes: and that the people also vfed apparell. But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had owre men knowleage both by the woordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circumcised. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (most holy father) Or what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme shall subdue al these vnder yowre throne? Let vs nowe entermyngle certeyne smaule thynges amonge these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to *Iohannes Solysius*, who, to searche the South fyde of the supposed continent, departed with three shippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre distante from the Ilandes of *Gades* or *Cales* in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September in the yeaere. M. D. xv. Or what successe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to vanquishe and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans fleshe. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, wiche were sent fourth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Badaicius*, *Franciscus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*. *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the matter in hande in an euylle houre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of faynt Augustine, (which they caule *Cabo. S. Augustini*) toward the South fyde of the supposed continent beyonde the Equinoctiall lynes. For (as we haue fayde before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the seuenth degree of the South pole cauled the Antartike. He proceeded in that viage syxe hundreth leagues: And founde the lande from the poynte to extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctiall, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forward, hauynge nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paria* lyinge northwarde frome hym, and prospectynge towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthye Canibales. For these craftie foxes feemed to make signes of peace, when in their mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espying their enemies a farre of, beganne to swalowe theyr spetle as their mouthes watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappye *Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shippe, foodenly a great multytude of th[e]inhabitates burst forth vppon them, and slew them euery man with clubbes, euen in the fyght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it al to fytters. Not one man escaped. Theyr furye not thus satisfied, they cutte the flayne men in pieces euen vppon the shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stryken with feare through this exemple, durst not coome foorth of theyr shippes, or diuise howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyons. They departed therefore from these vnfortunate coastes: And by the waye ladynge theyr shippes with braffell returned home ageyne with losse and heauie chere. Of these thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shal haue more particular knowleage hereafter. *Iohannes Pontius* was also repulsd by the Canibales in the Ilande of *Guadalupea* beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitacion. For when they sawe owre men a farre of on the sea, they ley in ambushe foodenly to inuade them when they shulde coome alande. Owre men sent foorth a fewe foote men and with them theyr laundresses to wasshe theyr shertes and sheetes. For from the Ilande of *Ferrea* beinge one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Ilande, for the space of foure thousande and twoo hundreth myles) they had seene no lande where they myght fynde any freshe water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales assayled them, caried awaye the women, and put the men to fuche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reason wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durste not inuade the Canibales, fearynge theyr venemed arrowes which these naked manhunters can direct most certainly. Thus good *Pontius* faylyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the Canibales, whome (beinge safe and vnder the house roufe) he threatened to vanquyshe and destroy. Whether he went from thense, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowleage. By these myffortunes, *Solysius* losse his lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeaere. *Iohannes Aiora* borne in the cite of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Lieutenant (as we haue fayde) more couetous of golde then carefull of his charge or desyrous of prayse for well deseruyng, fought occasions of querelyng ageynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extortynge golde of them ageynst ryght and equitie: And further handeled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies: In so much that they ceafed not with desperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to slei owre men openly or priuilye. By reason wherof it is coome to passe, that where before they bartered quyetyly exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayd) he fledde priuilye and tooke away a shyppe with him by stelth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hetherto haue we hard whyther he went or where he is arryued. Sum suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour shulde consente to his departure bycause this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Gonzalus Aiora* the kynges historiographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the discipline of warre: and so much the gouernours frend, that these two amonge a fewe, may be counted exemples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enioyed theyr frendshippe. Yet shal I desyre them bothe to pardone me in declaryng my phantafie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean,

Circumcised
people.

What chaunced to
the Capitaines
wiche the
gouernour sent
dyuers wayes.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The vyage of
Iohannes Solisius.
Cap. S. Augustini

Iohn Solysius is
slaine of the
Canibales.
The fiercenes of
the Canibales.

Brasell.

Iohannes Pontius
is repulsd by the
Canibales.

144

The vyage of
Iohannes Aiora.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The lewde
behauour of Iohn
Aiora.

The variable
fortune
of Gonsalus
Badaiocius.

Cerabaro. Decade.
iii. li(b). iii

The South sea.

A leaque
conteyneth foure
myles by sea and
but three by lande.
The golden region
of Coiba Dytes.

Sande myxte with
golde.

Howe theyr
slaues are marked
in the face.

145

Golde.

A fruteful region
left desolate by
ciuile discorde.

Kynge Periquete.

S. Michael.

Kynge Totonoga.

Six thousand
Castellans of
golde.

Kyng Taracuru.

viii. thousand
pesos of gold
Kynge Pananome

Kyng Tabor.

Kynge Cheru.
iiii. thousande
pesos of gold
Salte.

Kyng Anata.
xv. thousande
pesos of gold

Theyr maner of
warre.

nothyng hath so muche displeas'd me as the couetousnes of this man who hath so disturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge these troubelous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Gonsalus Badaiocius* and his felowes, whose prosperous begynnynge, ended with vnfortunate successe. *Gonsalus* therefore in the moneth of May in the yere of Chrifte M. D. xv. departed from *Dariena* with fourescore armed men, directynge his vyage towarde the Southe, and reflyng in no place vntyll he came to the region of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, distant from *Dariena* about a hundreth and fourescore myles: for they caule it threescore leaques. He spent certeyne dayes here in Idelnesse: for he coulde neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, allure the kynge of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye thus idelly, there came to hym other fyftie men sente frome *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercado* who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to th[e] intent to searce th[e] inner partes of those regyons. When they mette together, they determyned after consultation, to passe ouer the montaynes lyinge towarde the Southe, euen vnto the Southe sea latelye founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thyng: That in a lande of fuche maruelous longitude in other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyftie myles distant to the Southe sea: for they counte it. xvii. leaques. as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not by myles. Yet saye they that a leaque confysteth of three myles by lande and foure by sea as wee haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turnynge of the waters, they founde a kynge named *Iuana*, whose kyngedome is also named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kynge *Careta*, of whome we haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the regyon of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, wherfoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande whiche they caste forth, myxte with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the commynge of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne. They spoyled all the countrey neare aboute his palayce. Yet had they but litle golde: for hee had caryed all his stuffe with hym. Here they founde certeyne slaues marked in the faces after a straunge forte. For with a sharpe prycke made eyther of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in their faces: and forthwith sprinkelyng a powder thereon, they moiste the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde iuife, whose substauce is of fuche tenacitie and clammineffe, that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought these slaues away with them. They saye that this iuife is of such sharpnesse and putteth them to fuche payne, that for extreeme doloure they haue no stomacke to their meate certayne dayes after. The kynges whiche take these slaues in their warres, vse their helpe in seekyng for golde and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as do owre men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*, folowynge the course of the water aboute tenne myles towarde the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other kynge, whome owre men named the oulde man, bycause hee was oulde, not passynge of his other name. In the regyon of this kynge also, they founde golde in all places bothe on the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verye fayre and frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departynge from hense, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande lefte desolate. They suppose that this was destroyed by ciuile discorde for as muche as it is for the mooste parte fruteful, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they sawe two men commynge a farre of. These were laden with breade of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on their shulders in sakes. Owre men tooke them: and vnderflooded by them that there were two kynges in that tract: The one was named *Periquete*, whoe dwelte neare vnto the sea. The others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The two men whiche they mette, were the fyfshers of *Totonoga*, whome he had sente with certayne fardelles of fyfhe to *Periquete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchange. For thus do they communicate their commodities one with an other by exchange, without th[e] use of wycked money. By the conductynge of these two men, they came to kynge *Totonoga* dwellyng on the Weste syde of fayncte Michaelles goulfe in the Southe sea. They had of this kynge, the sum of fyxe thousande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artificially wrought. Emonge those groumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyghte of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentiful rychenesse of the ground. Folowynge the same coastes by the sea syde toward the West, they came to a kynge whose name was *Taracuru*, of whome they had golde amountynge to the weyght of eight thousand *Pesos*. Wee haue sayde before that *Pesos* is the weyghte of a Castellane not coynd. From hense they wente to the dominion of this kynges brother named *Pananome*, who fledde at their commynge, and appered no more afterwarde. They saye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They spoyled his pallaice in his absence. Syxe leaques from hense, they came to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From thense they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly enterteined owre men, and gaue them foure thousande *Pesos* of golde. He hathe in his dominion many goodly salte bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from hense, they came to another kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had. xv. thousande *Pesos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his bortherers whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this golde was in rude forme bycause it was molten when he fet the kynges houses on fyre whom he spoyled. For they robbe and sleigh the one the other, sackynge and fryng their villages, and wastynge their countreys. They keepe warre barbarously and to vtter destruction, executynge extreeme crueltie ageynst them that haue

the ouerthrowe. *Gonfalus Badaiocius* with his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kinges. For, what in braffettes, collers, earinges, breste plates, helmettes, and certeine barres wherwith women beare vppe their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the fum of fourefcore thoufande Castellans, whiche they had obteyned partly by exchange for owre thinges where they founde the kinges their frendes, and otherwife by forceible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty flaues whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their vitales and bagagies in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden, and also to relieue fuche as were fycke and forweried by reason of their longe iorneyes and hunger. After these prosperous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to the palaice of a kyng named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no fuch thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and affayled them straggelyng and vnwares, in fuche forte that they had no leasure to put on their armure. He slewe and wounded about fyftie, and put the refydue to flyght. They made fuche hast, that they had no respect eyther to the gold they had gathered, or to their flaues: but leste all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyfe men as concernynge the varyable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al thinges shuld haue happened vnto them prosperously. For fuch is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted: and taketh plefure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who soo wyll applye hym felse to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete with swete lyquereffe, and other whiles with foure cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe sleape in rest. The gouernour him felse was of late determined with three hundreth and fyftie choise fouldiers to reuenge the death of owr men: But where as he by chaunce fell fycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieutenant *Gaspar Spinosa*, a Iudge in cafes of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same time other were sent forth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal succede, tyme will bring to owre knowlege. The other two, attempted th[e] inhabitants beyonde the goulfe, *Franciscus Bezerra* passyng ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundreth and fyftie fouldiers well appointed, went to make warre vppon the Canibales euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefeft dominion, toward the vyllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with them diuers engens of warre: as three pieces of ordinaunce whose shot were bygger then egges: Likewife forty archers, and. xxv. hagbutters to th[e] intent to reache the Caniballes a farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we haue yet no perfecte knowlege. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* stode in great feare least they also were tolled with fum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the fore parte of the goulfe. But he passed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the three score and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee leste fortye and eyght flaine emonge the Canibales. These are the newes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.

There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeare. M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) and one *Franciscus Delapuenta*. This *Franciscus*, was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe capitaine was *Gonfalus Badaiocius* who hardly escaped the handes of kyng *Pariza*. These twoo capitaines therfore, *Rodericus* and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the misfortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do both affirme, the one that he hath harde, the other that he hath feene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Ilandes lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and fainte Michaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nourished which bring forth the fame aromaticall fruites, as doth the region of *Collocutea*. This lande of *Collocutea*, wirth the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whence the Portugales haue their spices. And hereby do they coniecture that the land where the frutfulnesse of spyce begynneth, shulde not be farre from thense. In fo much that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do onely desyre that leaue may be graunted them to searche further, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and furnishe shippes and aduenture the viage to searche those Ilandes and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes shulde bee made and prepared, euen in fainte Michaels goulfe: And not to attempte this vyage by fainte Augustines point, which waye were both longe and diffyculte, and ful of a thoufande daungers, and is saide to reache beyonde the forty degree of the pole Antartike. The fame *Franciscus*, being partener of the trauailes and daungiers of *Gonfalus*, faithe that in ouer runninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and wylde bores: and that he toke many of them by an arte which th[e] inhabitants taught him: whiche was to make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to cover the same with bouwes. By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and foure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same maner that we do: As stocke doues with an other tame stocke doue brought vp in their houfes. These they tye by a strynge, and suffer them to flye a lyttle emong the trees. To

Fourescore thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng Scoria.
Kyng Pariza.

Gonfalus Badaiocius hath the ouerthrow and is spoyled of great ryches of golde.

146

The Inconstancie of fortune.

The expedition of Fraunces Bezerra ageynst the Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valeius repulsed of the Canibales.

The landes of the south sea. In this sea ly[e] the landes of Molucca, most frutefull of spices. *Collocutea*. *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, from whence the Portugales haue theyr spyces.

He meaneth by the streight of Magellanus.

Howe they take hartes and wylde bores.

Stocke dones

147
Theyr maner of
foulynge.

Popingiayes are
easely taken.

A straunge kynde
of foulynge.

Fysshes and
wormes
engendered of
slime
Foules.
Gourdes of the
tree.

Later opinions of
the swift course
of the Ocean
towards the West.

The continent or
firme land.

148

The vyages of
Diegus Colonus.

The vyage from
the new landes to
Spayne.

the which as other birdes of their kind refort, they kil them with their arrowes. Otherwyfe they take them with nettes in a bare place poured from trees and bushes: and scaterynge certeyne feedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they desyre to take. In lyke maner do they take popingiayes and other foules. But they say that popingiayes are fo simple, that a great multitude of them wyll flye euen into the tree in whose bouwes the fouler fytteth: and swarme about the tame chatterynge popingiaye, fufferynge them felues to bee easely taken. For they are fo without feare of the fyght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, thoughte they see hym drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is an other kynde of foulynge, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleasaunt to confyder. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hispaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or standyng pooles. In fume of these (beinge no deaper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multytudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by reflection and preferued by moyster, there are engendered of the flymines of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable lyttle fyffhes, with a thousande fundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, flies and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geese, swannes, feemewes, gulles, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardes they noryshe a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes therefore well stopped leaste any water shulde enter in at theyr ryftes and cause them to finke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles: where, by theyr continuall wanderynge and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules owte of suspection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, disguyfinge hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neare about his eyes, his face and hole heade besyde beinge couered therwith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie exercised in swymmynge and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkyng this gourde to be one of the other that swymme vpon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place wher he seeth the greatest flocke of foules: And with waggyng his heade, counterfectinge the mouing of the wauerynge gourdes, drawethe nere to the foules: where softly puttyng foorth his ryght hande, he foodenly snatcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he putteth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to seke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this cause entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntynge and foulyng, that by these more pleasaunt narrations I may somewhat mytigate and asswage the horroure conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehearfall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfore speake somewhat ageyne of the newe and later opinions as concernynge the swyfte course of the sea towards the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quyet and peaceable thynges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therwith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therefore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouidus* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayred to me, at my house in the towne of Matrite, As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of Castile, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embrase as one hole firme lande and continent al the mayne lande lyinge on the north fyde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge also northweft both from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*. Yet as touchynge the course of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyll that this vyolent course of water bee receaued in the lappe of the supposed continente which bendeth fo much and extendeth fo farre towards the North, as we haue said: And that by the obiect or resistance of the lande fo bendynge and crookyng, the water shulde as it were rebounde in coompasse, and by force therof be dryuen about the north fyde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*, where the largenes of the sea maye receaue the waters faulyng frome the narowe streames, and therby represseth that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptely then to the swyfte streame commyng foorth of a mylle and faulyng into the myl poole. For in al suche places where waters runne with a vyolent faule through narowe chanelles, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are foodenly dispareled and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they seemed of such force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, some and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these landes (who had nowe in commyng and goinge, foure tymes passed through these seas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in faylyng too and fro, answered that there was muche difficultie in returnynge the same way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrst take the waye by the mayne

sea towarde the North before they directe theyr courfe to Spayne, he faythe that in that tract, he felt the shippe fymtymes a lyttle dryuen backe by the contrary courfe of the water. Yet fupposeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the fea: And the fame not to be enforced by the circumflection or courfe of the water reboundynge in compaffe as we haue fayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or fupposed continent, fhulde fowhere bee open: And that the fayde open place, fhoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or freyght, diuydyng the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which alfo, the Ocean runnyng towarde the Weft, may by the rotation or impulſion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the hole earth. *Quicquid* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and cloſenes of the fayde continente. Yet neyther that the waters fhulde fo beate ageynſt the bendynge backe of the Weft lande, or bee in fuche forte repulſed and dryuen into the mayne fea. But faith that he hath diligently confydered, that the waters runne from the deepeſt and myddeſt of the maine fea, towarde the Weft. Alfo that faylinge nere vnto the ſhore with fmaule veſſelles, he founde the fame waters to returne ageine towarde the Eaſt. So that in the fame place, they runne together with contrary courfe, as we oftentimes ſee the lyke to chaunce in riuers wher by the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryſe in the water. By reaſon wherof, if any chaffe, ſtrawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght ſubſtance be caſte in any fuche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al ſuch as runne with the water in the myddeſt of the chanell, procede well forward: But fuche as faule into the bendynge goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwarte the chanell, and fo wander about vntyll they meete with the ful and directe courfe of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowe partener of fuche thinges as they haue gyuen vs, and writen their dyuers opinions. We wyll then gyue more certeyne reaſon, when more certeyne truth ſhalbe knowen. We muſt in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntil the day coome appointed of god to reueale this ſecrete of nature, with the perfecte knowlege of the pointe of the pole ſtarre. Hauyng fayd thus muche of the courfe of the Ocean, a brieſe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, ſhall cloſe vpe owre Decades and make an ende of owre trauayles. Wee haue fayde, that nyne myles diſtante from *Dariena*, are the fydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the drye lande, and alfo on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therfore to al ſuch as are wyllynge to gather golde, there is of ordinarie cuſtome appointed to euery man by the furuoiers of the mynes, a ſquare plotte of grounde conteyning twelue pafes, at the arbitrimēt of the choofer, ſo that it bee not grounde already occupied, or leſte of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus choſen (as it were aſſygned of the augures to buylde a temple) they incloſe their ſlaues within the fame, whoſe helpe the Chriſtians uſe in tyllynge of their grounde and gatherynge of golde, as we haue faide. Theſe places appointed vnto them, they keepe as longe as them lyſte. And if they perceaue tokens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plotte of ground of twelue pafes to be aſſygned them, leauyng the firſt in comen. And this is th[e] order which the Spaniardes inhabitinge *Dariena* obſerue in gatherynge of golde. I ſuppoſe alſo that they uſe the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired ſo farre. It hath byn proued that theſe twelue pafes of grounde, haue yelded to their chooſers, the ſumme of foureſcore Caſtellans of gold. And thus leade they their lyues in fulfyllynge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they ſyll their handes with ſyndynge, the more increaſeth their couetous deſyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyer, the more furiously rageth the flame. Vnfaciable couetouſneſſe is no more diminifhed with increaſe of rycheſſe, then is the drineſſe of the dropſye fatiffyed with drinke. I lette paſſe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I ſhall in the meane ſeaſon vnderſtande theſe to be acceptable vnto yowre holyneſſe: my dewtie and obſeruaunce to whoſe autoritie, hath cauſed me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt yowre holyneſſe man; prosperous yeares.

The contrary
course of waters.

The poynt of the
pole ſtar.

The golde mynes
of *Dariena*, and
the maner of
gatherynge golde.

149

Owre incloſiers
woolde leaue no
ſuch comens.
Auri ſacra Fames

The dropſie of
couetouſneſſe.



THE LASTE BOOKE OF PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA,
OF THE LANDES AND ILANDES LATELY FOUNDE:
AND OF THE MANERS OF THE INHABITAVNTES OF THE SAME.



Loke Decade iii.
Liber. x

Cities fortified
with waules.

The Iland of Cuba
or Fernandina.

The Spanyards of
Cuba attempt new
vyages.

The west angle of
Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of
Iucatana.
A great citie well
buylded.
Temples.
Humane people.

150

Cunnyng
artificers.

Appareled people.

Haue partli declared before in mi decades how certeine fugitiues which came owt of the large West landes arriued in the confynes of *Dariena*: And howe that marueylinge at the bookes of owre men, they declared that they sumtyme dwelte in regions whose inhabitautes vsed fuche instrumentes and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire pallaces with streates well paved, and common places whyther marchautes resort as to the burse or streate. These landes, owre men haue nowe founde. Therefore who were th[e]autours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desireth to know with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of *Cuba* (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, lyyng nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the west syde, and yet sumwhat so bendyng towarde the Northe that the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri* deuideth it in the myddeste, wher as *Hispaniola* is distante from the Tropike and declinyng certen degrees toward the Equinoctial line) we haue spoken sumwhat before. In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe fyxe townes erected. Wherof, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of saynt Iames the patrone of the Spanyardes. In this, there is natiue golde, found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reason wherof they are dayly occupied in gathering and digging the same. But shortely after that I had finished my fayde bookes, thre Spanyardes that were the most auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, and *Christophorus Morantes*, determined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spanyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enterprifes. They furnyshed at their owne charges, thre of those shyppes whiche they caule Carauels. And hauyng fyrste lycence of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundreth and ten men from the West angle of *Cuba*. For this angle is moste commodious to relieue shyppes and to make prouision for freshe water and fuell. Thus they sayled continually fyxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the West and the South, contented onely with the syght of the heauen and the water: duryng whiche tyme, they supposse that they sayled not past threescore and fyxe myles. For they ley at anker all nyght where so euer the faulyng of the soonne tooke the day light from them, leaste by wanderyng in vnknown seas, they myght chaunce to be cast vppon rockes or sandes. But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande named *Iucatana*, whose beginnyng th[e]inhabitautes caule *Eccampi*. Owre men went to the citie stondyng on the sea syde, the whiche for the bygnes therof, they named *Cayrus* or Alcair. Th[e]inhabitautes entertained them very frendly. When they were entered into the citie, they marueyled to behold the houses buylded lyke towres, magnifycall temples, streates well paved, and great exercise of bying and sellyng by exchange of ware for ware. Their houses are eyther bylte of stone, or of bricke and lyme, and artificioally wrought. To the fyrste porches of their houses and fyrst habitations, they ascend by ten or twelue scares. They are couered eyther with tyles, slates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owre men many brooches and ieweltes of golde, verry fayre and of cunnyng woorkmanshyppes. Owre men recompensed them with vestures of sylke and woolle, counterfecte stones, of coloured glasse and cristfall, haukes belles of laton, and fuche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungenes of the same. They fette nowght by lookyng glasses, bycause they haue certeyne stoones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thousande fasshyons with vestures made of goslampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers coloures. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele hauyng dyuers fasshions of vayles aboute their heades and brestes, with great cautele leaft any parte of their legges or feete bee seene. They resorte muche

to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houfes. They are Idolatours and circuncifed. They occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with muche fydeltie. They vse to adourne the heares of their heades. Being demanded by th[e]interpretours of whom they receaued their circuncifyon, they answered that there once passed an exceedyng fayre man by their costes, who lefte them that in token to remember hym. Other faye that a manne brighter then the soone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they seemed to bee molestous to th[e]inhabitanes accordyng to the common fayinge. The longer a geste tarieth, the woofe is his enterteynement. The whiche thyng owre men perceauyng, they made the more haft awaye. Beynge therefore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke their vyage directly towarde the west by the prouince whiche th[e]inhabitanes caule *Comi* and *Maiam*. They ouer passed these regions takyng onely freshe water and fuel in the same. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the sea fyde, astonyshted greatly to behold the huge bygnesse of the shyppes. Owre men marueyled in maner no lesse to viewe their buyldynges and especially their temples sytuate neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towers. Thus at the length hauyng sayled about a hundreth and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anker in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne confysteth of three thousande houfes. Th[e]inhabitanes came swymmyng to the shyppes: marueilyng exceedyngly at the maner of faylinge, and at the fayles and other tackelynges. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the smoke, and smelte the fauour of brimstone and fyer, they supposed that thunderboltes and lyghtnynges had byn fente from god. The kyng receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallyce: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accustomed to eate fleshe, and haue great plentie of beastes and foules: as peacockes, and other whiche they francke and feede in their houfes: Also dyuers kyndes of wylde foules of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewise partriches, quails, turtle dooues, duckes, and geefe. Of beastes, they haue connies, woolues, lyons, tigers, foxes, wylde boores, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kyng with his traine and famylie brought owre men into a brode crosse way where many freates do meete. In this, they shewed them as it were a great and highe aluter buylded foure square of marble compacte together partly with the toughe cleye of Babilon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with smaule stoones. It had on euery fyde foure steares. Vppon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beastes of vnknowne shape, whiche seemed as though they wolde with yanyng mouthes haue torne in funder the bealy of the mannes Image. On the other fyde stode a great ferpent compacte of the fayde toughe cleye and smaule stoones. This ferpent beyng in length. xlviij. foote, and of the bygnesse of a large oxe, seemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by sparckled with freshe bludde. Harde by the altare, were thre postes fastned in the ground, the which three other trauerfed and were susteined with stones. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes steined with bludde, sum scatered, sum lyeing on heapes, and sum broken: Also a great number of mennes bones lying in a court or yarde nere vnto this funestall place. Their houfes are here also builded of lime and stone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicause they arriued at this lande on faint *Lazarus* day. Departing from henfe and directing theyr course syl toward the West for the space of. xv. myles, they came to a prouince named *Aquanil*, whose chiefe towne is cauled *Mosco*, and the kyng thereof, *Cupoton*. He behelde owre men with a frowarde countenance, and fought occasion to doo them sume priuie mischiefe whyle they fought for freshe water. For he made signes vnto them that on the further fyde of the nexte hyll, they shulde fynde sprynges of water, intyndyng to haue assayed them in that narowe passage. But by the colouryng of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr warres) and by the bearyng of theyr bowes and other weapons, owre men perceaued theyr wylnes, and refused to go any further. Yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayed theym vnwares and vnprepared. By reason wherof, they were put to flyght, and dyuers of them slayne in the chafe. Many that fledde towarde the shippes, were entangled in the mudde and maryshes nere vnto the shore. Twentie and two, were slayne with arrowes, and the reydewe for the most parte, wounded. *Franciscus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this conflicte three and thirtie woundes. And in maner none escaped without hurt. If they had gonne to the hylles whiche were appoynted them, they had byn slayne euery man. They therefore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* frome whense they came, where they were receaued of theyr felows with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyshed a newe nauie of foure Carauales with three hundreth men. Of this nauie he appoynted John Grifalua his neuie, to be the gouernour: And assigned for vnder capitaynes, Alphons[o] Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluarado. For the pylot he assigned Antonie Alamino who had the regiment of the fyrst nauie. They attempted the same vyage ageyne, but declyned somewhat more towarde the South about threcore and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they espyed a towre a farre of, by the viewe wherof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they smelte sweete

Circuncised
Idolaters.*Comi.*
*Maiam.**Campechium.*
A towne of three
thousand howses.Plentie of beastes
and foules.Theyr Idoles and
Idolatory.Houses of lyme
and stone.
151The prouince
Aquinall.
*Mosco.*The Spanyardes
are put to flyght
and many slayneAn other
expedition.The Ilande of
Cozumella.

[* Eden points out later on that William Powell, the printer, had wrongly carried the headline, *The thyrd Decade*, over this, a perfectly distinct book.—(See p. 342.) We have therefore also inserted the true headline within brackets.—E. A.]

Sweete sauours.
 A frutefull Ilande.

Towres and
 temples.

Cozumella named
 Sancta Crux.

Idoles lyke beares.
 Idolatry.

Gentell people.

Iucatana but fyue
 myles from
 Cozumella.

152

The Barbarians
 make resistaunce.

A conflicte.

The length of
 Iucatana.

The region of
 Caluacam, or
 Oloan.

The ryuer
 Grifalua.
 Targets and brest
 plates of golde.

fauours proceadyng with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the space of three myles. They founde the Ilande to be fortie and fve myles in circuite. It is playne and of maruelous frutefull foyle. There is also golde in it, but it is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regions. It aboundeth with hony, frutes, and herbes: And hath also great plentie of foules and foure footed beastes. Their order and maner of luyng, is in al thynges lyke unto theyrs of *Iucatana*. Lykewyfe theyr howfes, temples, streates, and apparell. In many of theyr houfes, are great postes of marble after the maner of owre buyldyng. They founde there, the foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinate: And one especially with. xviii. steares ascendyng to it, after the maner of solemne temples. They marueyled greatly at owre shippes and maner of faylyng. At the fyrst, they wolde admyt no straungers: but shortly after, receaued them gentelly. Their chiefe ruler (whom owre men supposed to bee a preefte) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Castyle, namyng it *Sancta Crux*, bycause they entered into the fame in the nones of Maye beinge then the feaste of the holye crosse. They faye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellaus*, whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre, they founde many chambers furnyshed with Images, made bothe of earthe and marble to the fimyltude of beares. These they caule vppon with a houlyng and lamentable songe, perfumyng them with sweete odours, and otherwyfe honouryng them as theyr domefticall goddes. They were also circumcised. The kynge was in fayre apparel made of goffampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on the one foote by reason that as he once exercysed hym selfe in swymmyng, a deuouryng fysh cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owre men very frendly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre dayes, they departed. And faylyng styll towarde the Weste, they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drewe neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucatana* beinge distant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directyng therefore theyr course towarde the southe fyde of *Iucatana*, they compased it on that fyde which lyeth nearest to the supposed continent: Yet coulde they not sayle rounde about it by reason of the multitude of rockes, shalowe places, and shelves of sandes. Then Alaminus the pylot turned his sailes to the North side wherof he had better knowlege. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium* and kynge *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrst vyage the yeare before. At the fyrst, they were gentelly receaued, and requyred to resort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stones cast from the towne, and to proceade no further. When owre men defyred that they myght make prouision for freshe water before theyr departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had lefte behynde them. Declaryng further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Owre men rested that nyght in the fyelde adioynyng to the well. The which thynge the Barbarians suspectinge, assembled an army of three thousande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe partes passed awaye the nyght without sleepe. They fearyng leaste owre menne shulde breake into the towne: And owre men, leaft the Barbarians shulde inuade them foodenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other fyde with the noyse of timbrels kept them styll wakyng that were disposed to sleepe. At the spryng of the day, the Barbarians approched to owre mens campe and cauled for th[e]interpretours of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreable vnto theyrs. They had diuised to lyghte a torche of frankensence and to place the same betwene bothe th[e]armies to th[e]intent that if owre men dyd not depart before the torche were consumed, to stande to theyr perell. The torch was wasted and the matter came to hand strokes. They flewe onely one of owre men with an arrowe bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflicte, owre men resorted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne. Owre men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue pursued them, but that Grifalua the gouernour wolde not suffer them. From thense they proceaded to the last ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundreth myles frome the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious hauen and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they sayled to other landes, and came to the region nexte to *Iucatana* Westwarde, whiche they doubtte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annex to the continent. In this there is a goulfe which they suppose to be incompased with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie. Th[e]inhabitanes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwise *Oloan*. They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violente course and faule, driueth freshe water two myles into the sea. This they cauled *Grifalua* after the name of the gouernoure. The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greatnesse and mouyng of owre shyppes, came swarmyng the bankes on bothe fydes the ryuer, to the number of fyxe thousande men armed with targettes and brest plates of gold, bowes and arrowes, brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer: Thus stonyng in battayle raye to defende their coostes, and with proude countenaunces forbyddinge owre men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owr men espyed about a hundreth Canoas (whiche we haue faide to be their boates) full of armed men. Here also the

language of th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* agreed well enowghe with thers. When they had admitted the peace profered them by th[e]interpretours, al the Canoas staid excepte one whiche approached toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa, demaunded of owre men what they fought in other mennes landes. They answered, gold. And that, for permutation of other ware, and not of gift or vyolently. The *Canoa* returned and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladly to the shippes. When he had saluted the gouernour, he cauled his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundyng him to bringe his armure and other ornamentes of golde wherwith he armed *Grifalua* from the toppe of the heade to the soule of the foote: In so muche that, what so euer any man of armes armed at all partes, is emong vs accustomed to weare of Iren or fleele when he commeth in to the felde, all siche kynde of furnitures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with vestures of fy[l]cke, clothe, lymen, and other of owre thinges. In the beginning of this *Iucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vppon a *Canoa* of fyfther men to the number of nyne, fyfshyng with hookes of golde. They tooke them all prifoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who promysed the daye folowyng to fende the gouernour as muche golde for his raunfome as the man hym selfe waied. But the gouernour denyed that he could release hym withoute the consent of his felowes: And therefore kept hym styll to proue what he could further knowe of hym. Departing from henfe and saylynge styll westwarde, they founde a great goulfe in the which three smaule Ilandes were fyuate. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyshe impietie? Let every godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be disturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Emonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauynge a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable sacryfyce, that it maye from thense runne downe into a syncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacryfyce the bludde of these pore wretches. They cutte not their throtes, but open the very brestes of these felye soules and take owte their hartes yet pantynge, with the hotte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lypes of their Idoles, and suffer the resydue to faule into the synke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposynge the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowynge downe his heade and lookynge toward the synke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the slayne sacryfyce. They eat the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especially when they sacryfyce an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as though it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpose, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They fawe also innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodies thus manged, besyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeine mattes. All the tractes of these regions abounde with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderynge in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabafter artificially wrought and full of lytle stones of dyuers colours. They saye also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousand Castilans of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of sacryfyce. Th[e]inhabitauntes are circumeised. There are also other Ilandes sytuate about this *Col[I]uacana* or *Caluacam*, the whiche are inhabited onely with women luyng without the coompanye of men after the maner of the *Amazons*. But they that ponder the matter more wifely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue vowed chaflytie and professed a folytarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Vestales* or *Bona Dea*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the yeare, men of the other Ilandes reforte vnto them. But not for th[e]intent of generation, but moued with pitie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewise that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men reforte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children lest it shuld hinder their shootyng. Also that they kepe onely the women children and fende awaye the men children. Owr men therefore drewe nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quyetly exercised marchaundies with th[e]inhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also braslattes, chaynes, brouches, with many other iewelles, and al of gold. Owre men ageyne on the other parte satysfied him with such fluffe as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they gruged not a lytle. The houfes and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath also. xv. great townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue feene sum consisting of more then. xx. thousande houfes, not ioynng together, but defeuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and freates well paued. Likewise fornaces and ouens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermore al fortes of handy craftes men and very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: and the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, containeth. xv. thousand houfes. When they receaue any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them felues bludde in the toonge, hande, arme, or sum other parte of the body: And this euen in the syght of them whom they admitte to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to shedde

Armure of golde.

Experte artificers

Fyshe hookes of golde.
153The Ilandes of Sacrifice.
Chyl dren sacrificed to Idoles.
Their Idoles of marble.

Gold and precious stones.

A stone of great price.

Ilandes of women.

Golde.

Houses lyke towres.
xv. greate townes in the prouynce of Colluacana.
Townes of xx. thousande houses.

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendshyp.

Preestes.	154	their bludde in their fryndes caufes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmariéd. What it is to haue to do with women, no man knoweth before he be mariéd. Fornication and adultery (which feldome chaunce emonge them) they counte abhominacion. The women are of maruelous chastitie. Eucry noble man after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lysteth. But a mariéd woman taken in adulterie, is foulded of her husbande. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynsefolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for fuche as are not mariéd, to fytté at the same table with them that are mariéd, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and September, they absteine. xxxv. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fysh and al other thynges that lyue by bludde: And duryng these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yere. Owre men consumed certeyne dayes here verye pleasauntly. When they departed, coastyngé styll by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom they named <i>Ouandus</i> . When he had intellygence that owre men desired golde, he brought forth certeyne plates of molten gold. But when the gouernour signified vnto him by th[e]interpretors that he desired great plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Also a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domesticall goddes of curious woorkemanshyppé. Likewyse garlandes of stonés of fundry colours, with many breste plattes, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamentes, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore aboundaunce of delycate meates well salted and poudred with spices. When he had required owre men to coome alande, he commaunded his seruantes with all speede to prepare a great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vpon owre men to his pallayce. As they went thus in order, sun behynde and sun before on bothe fydes, they feared so to shadowe owre men with the bouwes as thoughte they had gonne in a continuall arbour. The kyngé hym selfe hauyngé a septer in his hand, dyd sette them in their arraye, and sumtyme strike fuche as were negligent in bearyng their bouwes. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenaunce, humbled them selues to receaue his stripes. When he was demaunded where he had fuche plentie of golde, he pointed with his synger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers descendyng from the same. They are so accustomed to the riuers and exercised in swymming, that it is al one to them to liue in the water and on the lande. When they desire to gather golde, they plunge theym selues in the ryuers and bryngé from the bottome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche syftyngé from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of twoo houres, they fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes synger. Of the sweete fauours of these landes, many thynges myght be spoken, the whiche bycause they make rather to th[e]effeminyngé of the myndes of men, then for any necessarye purpose, I haue thought best to omytte them. The kyngé also gaue the gouernour a younge virgine of twelue yeres of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stonés whiche he had of this kyngé, one was valued at twoo thousande Castellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyngé, laden with golde and precious stonés. <i>Grifalua</i> the gouernour, sente one of the Carauelles to his vnclé <i>Diego Velasquen</i> gouernour of the Ilande of <i>Cuba</i> , with messengers to delyuer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamentes. The refydue in the meane tyme styll followed the tracte toward the West. One of them in the whiche Francis Montegius the vnder gouernour was caryed, sayled harde by the shore: and the other twoo kept aloofe within prospecte of the land. Th[e]inhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lesse marueyllyngé at the shippes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas to Montegius, desyryngé hym by th[e]interpretours to coome alande, promysyngé in the name of their kyngé, that hee shoulde be honorably enterteined. But Montegious answered that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his coompanions were so farre from hym. Yet dyd he gyue them certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thanks for their gentylnesse. Shortly after espyngé a great towne they directed their course thither. Th[e]inhabitauntes prohibyted them to coome alande, and came forthé ageynst them with bowes and quyuers ful of arrowes, brode swoordes made of heauy woode, and Iauelens hardned at the ende with fier. They shotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men discharged certeyne pieces of ordinaunce ageynst them. The Barbarians astonysshed at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and desired peace. Here owre mens vytayles began to fayle them, and theyr shippes were broofed with longe vyages. Hauyngé therefore founde and doone these thynges whereof we haue spoken, <i>Grifalua</i> returned to the Ilande of <i>Fernandina</i> well contented, but so were not his coompanions. We muste nowe diuerte sumwhat from this matter, and speake of an other nauigation. And from thense wyll we retourne to these landes which owre men haue founde. So it is therefore, that <i>Diegus Velasquen</i> the gouernour of the Iland of <i>Fernandina</i> , about the same tyme that he had sent forth this nauie of foure Carauelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell and one brygantine with fortie and fyue men. These exercised vyolent handes ageynst th[e]inhabitauntes of those regions where they arryued, thynkyngé that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggyngé of golde bycause they were Caffranite Idolaters and circumcised. There are at the sea fyde not farre from the supposed continent, many litle Ilandes of moste fortunate and frutesfull soyle, whereof three are thus named: <i>Guanapan</i> , <i>Guangan</i> , and <i>Quitilla</i> . Owte of one of these (which they named <i>Santa Marina</i>) they
Chastitie.		
The punyshment of adulterie.		
Marriage is honoured.		
Fastyngé.		
Kyngé Ouandus.		
Idoles, iewel, and ouches of gold.		
Gold in mountaynes and ryuers		
Theyr maner of gatheryng golde.		
Sweete sauours.		
A stone of great price.		
155		
Other viages from Cuba or Fernandina.		
Many Ilands betwene Cuba and the firme lande.		

violently caried away three hundreth men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the brigantine with. xxv. of theyr felowes to th[e]intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyrste arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe citie of *Sanctiago*, two hundreth and fyftie myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri* as we haue fayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune fought the reuenge of these pore wretches. Therefore as theyr keepers went aland and few remained in the Carauel, they perceuing occasion ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, foodeynely snatched vp ovr mens weapons and slewe fyxe of them which yet remayned in the Carauel, whyle the residue lepte into the sea. And by this meanes the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had foone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they fayled fyrste to the nexte Ilande where they burnt the Carauell and caried away the weapons with them. From hense they conueyed them felues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie assayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and slewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine where they bewayled theyr felowes deathes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they fet vp a crosse, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldaricci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposed continent. The gouernour therfore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnyshed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wyse to late. Yet folowyng the viewe of the crosse, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durste not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from hense with despayre, they fayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they caryed away by violence fyue hundreth men and women, supposyng lykewyse that they myght lawfully so doo bycause they were Idolaters and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espyinge oportunitie, sette vpon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and slewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castyng them felues into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assayled the carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shulde obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verye fiercely, aswell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spanyardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experte in handelyng of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercoome, lepte into the sea: but the Spanyardes tooke theym ageyne with the shippe boates. About a hundreth of the Barbarians perysshed, beinge partly drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spanyardes. These thynges thus pacified, the residue of the Barbarians were caryed to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to laboure in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owte a newe vyage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owre sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here owre men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day whiche the Spanyardes caule the floryshyng day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they sawe. xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpasse: And the same so to lye aboute *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natie golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. Th[e]inhabitantes also weare many iewels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylted. Francis Cheregatus browght one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certeyne yelowe stoness cleare and transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they shaue and carue as though they were made of fine steele. When the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of syne deuise, which were to longe to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from whense we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatana*, *Colluacana* or *Olloa*, beinge al landes lately founde, and so rich, fruteful and pleasaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therefore, after that it was knowen to owre men of howe greate momente these tractes were, the Spanyardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anunctus beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnyshed a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundreth menne, with two smaule brigantines, as it weare in the steade of lyght horsemen or forerunners whose ayde they myght vse as scoutes to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelves. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses and. xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their generall gouernour and Admiral of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Sanctiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed Alfons *Portucarerius*, Francis Montegius, Alfons

Sanctiago the chiefe citie of Cuba.

The Barbarians sley the Spaniardes with their owne weapons.

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spanyardes are slayne ageyne with their owne weapons.

The barbarians are slaine and put to flight.

156

Another vyage. *Archipelagus*. A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola and Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Landes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of x. Carauels and v. hundreth men.

Horses and mares

Fernando Cortesius.

The Iland of Cozumella.	<p>Anila, Alucrado Spatenfe, Iohn <i>Velasquen</i> and <i>Diegus Ordaffus</i>. They styll folowed the same wynde from the last angle of <i>Cuba</i> toward the west. As foone as Frauncis Fernandes of Corduba, and then Iohn Grifalua came within prospecte of the Ilande of Saerifyces (wherof we haue made mention before) foodenly a tempest of contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande and droue them backwarde to <i>Cozumella</i> lyinge on the East fyde of <i>Iucatana</i>. This Ilande hath onely one hauen named sainte Iohns porte. And hath in it, onely fyxe townes. Also none other water then in welles and cefterns, bycause it lacketh riuers and springes by reason it is plaine, conteynyng onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the coomynge of owre men, th[e]inhabitautes fledde to the thicke woods, and forfoke their townes for feare. Owre men entered into their houfes where they founde plentie of vyttayles and many ornamentes perteynyng to the furnyshynge of their houfes, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of gossampine cotton (whiche they caule <i>Amaccas</i>) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with many other thinges fente to owre newe Emperour, we wyll speake more largely hereafter. The fouldiers wandered about the Iland and viewe[d] al thynges diligently, kepyng them felues styll in battell raye least they myght be fodenly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of th[e]inhabitautes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By th[e]interpretours of <i>Cuba</i> and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrst from <i>Iucatana</i>, they perswaded the woman to caule the kynges that were absente. They came gladly and made a leage of frendshyp with owre men, wherby they were restored to their houfes and a great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolaters, and saerifyce children of bothe kyndes to their <i>Zemes</i>, which are the Images of their familiar and domestically spirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of <i>Alaminus</i> the pilote, also of Frances Montegius and <i>Portucarerius</i>, from whense they had the children they offered in saerifyce, they answered that they bowght them in the Ilandes thereabout by exchange for golde and other of their trafycke. For in al this so large a space of land, the deuelyshe anxietie for the defyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed th[e]inhabitautes. They faye the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, wherof two are named <i>Destam</i> and <i>Sestam</i>, whose inhabitautes go naked: and for scarceness of children, saerifice dogges whiche they nourishe, aswell for that purpose as also to eate as wee do connies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauynge snowtes lyke vnto foxes. Suche as they destinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they waxe very fat in the space of foure monethes. They referue al the bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. Owre men diswaded them from these superstitions, declaryng how they were abhominable and detested of god. They were soone perswaded and desyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Owre men therfore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen and earth, the geuer of al good thynges, beyng of one incomprehenfible substauce vnder triplicitie of perfon. As foone as they harde these woordes, they broke their <i>Zemes</i>, and pared, seraped, and washed the pauementes and waules of their temples. Owre men gaue them a painted picture of the blessed vyrgine which they placed reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a crosse to be honored in the remembraunce of god and man and the saluation of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of woodde in the toppe of the temple, whyther they ostentymes reforte together to honour the Image of the vyrgine. Th[e]inhabitautes signified by th[e]interpretours that in the Iland of <i>Iucatana</i> not far from them, there were feuen Christians captiues which in tyme past were dryuen thither by tempeste. The Ilande of <i>Cozumella</i>, is onely fyue miles distant from <i>Iucatana</i>. The gouernour <i>Cortefius</i> being aduertised herof, furnyshed. ii. Carauels with fyftie men, wyllng them incontinent to direct their viage thither and to make ferch for these men. They toke with them thre interpretours of <i>Cozumella</i> (whose language agreeth with theirs) with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto them howe goodly a matter they shulde bringe to passe if they coulde bringe away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he shuld be fully certified of the commodities of all those tractes, and the maners of th[e]inhabitautes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the space of fyxe dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no woorde of their Cozumellane interpretours whome they had sent alande with the message and letters, owre men returned to <i>Cozumella</i> without them, suspecyng that they were other flaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from <i>Cozumella</i> but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they fodenly espied towarde the weste a Canoa coomynge from <i>Iucatana</i>, and in it, one of the Christian captiues (named <i>Hieronimus Aquillaris</i>) who had lyued feuen yeares in that Ilande. With what ioye they embrased the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no lesse defyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myfffortune whiche befell to hym and his coompanions. And here it shal not bee greatly from my purpose breiefely to rehearse how the thyng chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named <i>Valdiuia</i>, whome the Spaniardes whiche inhabited <i>Dariena</i> in the supposed continente of the goulfe of <i>Vraba</i>, sent to the Iland of <i>Hispaniola</i> to <i>Colonus</i> the Admiral and viceroy with the residue of the Senate and counfel there (to whom perteyneth the redresse and orderynge of all thinges in these newe landes) to signifye vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Vnhappy <i>Valdiuia</i> therfore, takynge this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a fudden and vyolent whirlewinde</p>
Carpets and sheetes. Innumerable bookes.	
Circumcised Idolaters.	
They Sacrifice Chylidren	
157	
The Ilandes of Distam and Sestam. Sacrifice of dogges.	
They are soone perswaded to owre religion.	
The picture of the blessed Virgine	
An other vyage	
Aquillaris, vii. yeares captiue in the Iland of Iucatana.	
<i>Valdiuia</i> .	
The shipwracke of <i>Valdiuia</i> .	

dryuen vpon certayne quickefandes in the prospecte of the Ilande of *Jamaica*, lyinge in the Southe fyde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*. These blind and fwalowynge fandes, the Spaniardes caule vipers: And that by good reason, bycause in them many shyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implycate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carauell thus wresteled with the water, it was so bruste in funder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes, coulde scarcefyly with muche difficultie descende into the shyppe boate: where, without oers, and without fayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue faid before in owre Decades) the seas do runne there continually with a vyolent course towarde the West. They wandered thus. xiii. dayes not knowyng whyther they went nor yet syndynge any thyng to eate. Famen consumed feuen of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fyshes. The resydue lykewise in maner consumed by famen and faulynge from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Iucatana* and fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who slewe *Valdiuia* the gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had fyrst sacrficyed them to his *Zemes*, shortly after he eate them with his frindes of that conspiracie. For they eate onely their enemyes and straungiers: And doo otherwise absteine from mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris* with fyxe of his felowes were referued to be sacrficyed the thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the handes of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kynge beyng his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bondemen. It is a fraunge thinge to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*. For as foone as she harde that her foonne was faulen into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe, shee fell madde incontinent: So that when so euer after, shee sawe any meate rostyng at the fyre, or onely ready fpytted to laye to the fyre, shee ceased not to crye out in this maner. O me moste wretched moother: Behold the members of my son. But to returne to owre purpose. When *Aquillaris* had now receaued the gouernours letter sente by the Cozumellane messengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayster (whose name was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore they were sent: vfyng in the meane tyme many large discourfes in expreffynge the great poure and magnificence of their kynge who had of late arrined in those coastes. Also of their humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frindes and fuche as submytted them felues to them, and againe their rygour and fiercenesse ageynst fuche as floobernly eyther contemned them or denyed their requestes. With these woordes he broughte *Taxmarus* into fuche feare, that the maister was now fayne to desyre his feruaunt so to handell the matter that they myght quyetyly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as his enemyes. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld not onely coome in peace, but also to ayde hym ageynst his enemyes if neede shulde so require. Whervpon hee dismissed *Aquillaris* and with hym three of his familiers and coompanions. Thus they fayled together from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana* to the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrste vyage thither by the gouernance of Alaminus the pilot. They found the mouthe of the ryuer flopped with fande, as wee reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egipte when the wyndes (cauled *Eteji*) blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. Therefore where as they coulde not enter into the ryuer with the biggeste vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receaue great shyppes) the gouernour caused two hundreth men to be fette alande with the brigantynes and shyppe boates: wyllynge *Aquillaris* to offer peace to th[e] inhabitants. They demaunded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* answered, promysynge to bryng them vyttayles thither the daye folowynge. Owre men wente and they came accordynge to their promisse and brought with them eyght of their hennes beyng as bygge as peacockes, of brownysh colour, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleafaunte tast. They brought also as muche bread made of *Maizium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnlyke vnto panyke) as wolde scarcely ferue tenne hungry men: And here with desyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that owre men made no hast away, immediately there came a great coompanye of armed men towarde theym demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Owre men made anfwere by *Aquillaris*, that they desyred peace, vyttayles, and golde for exchange of other thinges. They answered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with them. But threatned them to auoyde the lande excepte they wolde bee distroyed euery manne. Owre men fayde that they woulde not departe withowte suffyciente vyttayles to mayntayne their fouldyers.

They appoynted the day folowynge to bryng them more vyttayles: but they brooke promesse. Yet perceauing the second day that owre men were encamped on the fande and had repofed there that nyght, they brought them as much more vyttayles, and commaunded them in the name of their kynge to departe. Owre men fayde that they were desyrous to see the towne, and to haue yet more flore of vyttayles. The Barbarians denyed theyr request, and therwith departed whispyrnyng and mutterynge amonge them felues. In the meane tyme owre men were styll so oppressed with hunger that they were enforced to seeke for meate. The gouernoure therefore sent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundreth and fyftie men. As they went disperfed in dyuers companyes about the vyllages of the cuntry, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyse of theyr alarome,

The quickesandes
cauled vipers.The course of the
sea towarde the
west.

158

Valdiuia is
sacrificed to
Idoles.Howe Aquillaris
escaped

Kynge Taxmarus.

The mouth of a
ryuer stopped with
sande.

Turky hens

159

A conflict.

The Barbarians
are put to flight.

The great towne of
Potanchana or
Victoria.
A towne of xxv.
thousand houses.

Gunnes and horses.

The man and the
horse, thought to
be one beast.
Centaurus.

Palaces of
maruelous bygnes
and wel buylded.

They receue owre
religion.

160

A towne of a
thousand and fyue
hundred houses.

they came with all possible haste to their rescue. The gouernour on the other syde, placing his ordinance in the brygantines and shippe boates, approched to the shore with the residue of his souldiers. The Barbarians lykewise, beinge redy furnyshed to the battayle, came runnyng to the sea syde to disturbe them that they shulde not coome alande: And with their arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure discharged aboute. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynste them: With the slaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of fyer and smel of brimstone, they were so astonished and put to such feare, that they fled and disparcelled lyke wyld beasts: whom owre men persuinge, entered the towne which th[e] inhabitants forooke in maner for feare of theyr owne men whom they sawe so difmayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But *Alaminus* the pylot, sayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundred myles, and that it consisteth of. xxv. thousande houses. Some make it sumwhat lesse: But they all agree that it is exceadyng great and notable. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and stone verye artificially and of cunnyng woorkemanshippe. To their haules, chambers, parlors, or other places of habitation, they ascende by tenne or twelue steares: And haue certeyne spaces betwene euery house: so that it is not lawful for any to lade his neighbours waules with rafters or beames. Their houses are separate one from an other by the space of three houses: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And many also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues confessed that they were that day fortie thousande men at the battayle, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the newe and vnknown kynde of feyght with gunnes and horses. For the gouernour had vnbarcked. xvi. horses which were also at the battayle, and so fiercely assayed the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake their array and scattered them as it had byn flockes of sheepe, ouerthrowing, woundyng, and kyllyng them on euery syde. Whiche thyng the feely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie their wepons. For wheras before they had neuer seene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beast, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Oure men possessed the towne. xxii. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assayle owre men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where sume keppe continuall watche (least the Barbarians shulde suddenly inuade them) whyle other gaue them selues to reste and sleepe. Th[e] inhabitants caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owre men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thyng to consider the greatenes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the which they reforte sumtymes for their solace and pastyme. These are curiously buylded with many pleasaunt diuises, as galleries, solars, turrets, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owre waynscotte and well flowred. Foure of our Spanyardes went into one of them of such greatnes, that they wandered in the same for the space of foure houres before they coulde fynde the waye out. At the length by th[e] interpretours and certeyne captiues owre men sent for the kynge and fuche rulers as were nexte vnder hym in autoritie, wyllyng them to submyt them selues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Gyuinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in their so doinge, they wolde commen with them as concernyng conditions of peace, and restore them their towne. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne house vpon condition that they shulde euer thereafter absteyne from such cerimonies and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whose Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr myndes to Christe owre god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered death on the crosse for the redemption of mankynde. And fynally to professe them selues subiectes to the great Christian kynge of Spayne. They promysed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortenes of tyme wolde permitte. Beinge thus restored, they recompensed owre men with many rewardes: Suppoyng suche men to be sent from heauen, which being so fewe in number, durst attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue owre men also certeyne golde and twentie slaues. Departing therefore from hense, and coastyng styll alonge by the same shore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Grifalua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Iohns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spayne tonge signifieth a goulfe. Here th[e] inhabitants reforted to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the shore, was a towne of a thousande and fyue hundred houses situate vpon a hyll. They profered owre men halfe the towne if they wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearyng th[e] exemple of th[e] inhabitants of *Potanchana*, the same wherof myght haue coome to their cares, or els hoppyng that vnder the shadowe of fuche valiant menne, they myght obteyne ayde and succour ageynst theyr enemies and bortherers. For (as I haue sayde before) they dystroye one another with continuall warre for the desyre to inlarge theyr dominions. Oure men refused perpetuall habitation, and accepted theyr frendely profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euery syde with boues in theyr handes which they helde ouer owre mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continual arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue left in the shippes, shulde in the meane tyme waxe slothefull with Idlenes,

the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and Francis Montegius to search the west partes of that lande, whyle he reliqued the wried fouldiers and healed fuche as were wounded. To them that went forward on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fiftie men. Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had fayled a lyttle further towarde the Weste, they founde the fea runnyng with so swift a course as if it were a great ryuer faulynge from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme it caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they fawe on their left hand a large playne fea which mette with the course of the other waters faulynge from the weste. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conflycte where they meete, so feemed the waters commyng from the Southe to refyfl these waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or posseffyon of an other. On the contrary parte, they fawe the lande reachynge farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so toffed on bothe fydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wrestled with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnynge the stemmes or forpartes of their shyppes ageynst the streame from whense they came, and labourynge al that they myght with their oers and fayles, they coulede scarcely ouercoome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght fayled two myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles. Yet at the length with goddes helpe, they ouercame this dangerous conflycte. They spent. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were nowe returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adiudged to be parte of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they fawe a farre of before their fawe, they supposed eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalaos*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the vyage of Sebaftian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee truste it shall once bee better knowen. While *Alaminus* and Montegius searched these secreates, the kynge of the prouince (whose name was *Mulloxumam*) sent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (beynge also his Lieuetenaunt of the fayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stoones, fette and wroughte after a marueylous straunge deuysse and with no lesse cunningge woorkemanshyp. Here they determined to sende messengiers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withowte th[e]aduise of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba Fernandina*, who fyrst sente them forth with commaundement to returne ageyne after they had searched these regions and obteyned plentie of golde. While they consulted hereof, they were of dyuers opinions. But the moste part alleaged that in this case it was not requisite to make the gouernour of their counfaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a higher Iudge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they were thus agreed, they receaued vyttayles of the gentle kyng of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue myles from the fayde towne, in a fruteful and holsome foyle. For their generall gouernour, they elected *Cortesijs* the gouernour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum faye. For other magistrates to gouerne the citie which they intended to build he choose *Portucarerius* and Montegius of whome we haue made mention before. They chose also certeyne messengiers to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot. Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered them selues wyllyngly to go with owre men into Spaine to th[e] intent to see owre landes and that kyng whose poure is soo great and whose auctoritie reacheth so farre. They brought lykewise two women with them, which serued and obeied them in all thinges after the maner of their country. The people of this nation is of broune or yelowyshe colour. Bothe the men and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious stoness hanginge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether lypes full of holes from the vppermoste parte of the lyppe euen vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned to a smaule and thynne plate lyng within betwene the lippe and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the mydde of the lip, there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the coyne cauled a *Corolyne*, and as thicke as a mannes fynger. I do not remember that euer I fawe any thyng that seemed more fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndnesse. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They that are pouled, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be shauen. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reason perfwadeth, men runne after vanities: And euery prouince is ruled by their owne sense, as writeth faint Ierome. From whense they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But as owre men marueyled where they had their syluer, they shewed them certayne hygh mountaynes whiche are continually couered with snowe fauyng that at certeyne tymes of the yeare, the onely toppes are feene bare bicause the snow is there molten by reason of the thicke and warme cloudes. The playnes therfore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunt mountaynes seeme to bryng forth golde: And the rough craggie mountaynes with their coulede valleyes, are the places where syluer

Another vyage of two brigantines and fiftie men.

Where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.
A conflict betwene the waters commyng from the west and from the south.

A dangerous and painefull vyage.

The land of Colluacana.

The land of Baccalaos or Baccalarum
Rych presentes of golde and precious stoness.

161

A newe colonie.

This Cortesijs hath written a booke of these thinges

They weare rynges and plates at their lypes.

The dyuers phantasies of men.

Syluer

Note where gold and syluer are engendered.

I thinke this laton to be sum kynde of pure copper, or els copper that holdeth golde. For laton is an artificial metal, and hath no naturall myne. Theyr bokes

162

Theyr letters

What is conteyned in their bookes.

Temples rychly adourned.

Prayer.

They sacryfice chyldren and captiues.

A wronge way to heauen

Bluddy gods

Villa Ricca.

Siuilla Noua.

The force of an owlde error.

Theyr priests lyue chast.

Faggots of bones.

is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof they make such maces and hammers as are vsed in the warres. Dyggyng mattookes also, and spades: for they haue nother Iren nor steele. But lette vs now speake of the presentes fente into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrste of the bokes. These procuratours therfore of the newe colonic of the prouynce of *Colluacana*, among other their presentes, brought also a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of the inner ryndes or barks of trees, thinner then eyther that of the elme or of the falowe. These they finere or annoint with the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be softe, extend them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coulde and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is to bee thoughte that they beate the playster into fine floure, and so temperynge it with sum byndynge moister, to make a cruste therwith vppon the leaues, wheron they wryte with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with a sponge or sum fuche other thyng, as marchaunt men and noble mens stewardes are accustomed to do with their wrytynge tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues of their bokes are not fet in order after the maner of owres, but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loofe, but so bounde together with the toughe and flexible cley cauled *Bitumen*, that they seeme lyke wooden tables whiche had byn vnder the handes of cunning bokebynders. Which way so euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues seene and two fydes written, with as many linge hyd vnder them, excepte the booke be vnsoulded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned togyther. The formes of their letters are nothyng lyke vnto owres. But are muche more crooked and entangeled, lyke vnto fyrthehookes, knottes, snares, starres, dife, fyles, and fuche other muche lyke vnto the Egiptian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto owres. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapes of men and dyuers beastes: And especially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in fuche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned as wee see the lyke emonge vs howe owre printers expresse the summe of histories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye fuche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artificially wrought and paynted. When they are shutte, they seeme to differre nothyng from owres in forme. In these bookes are furthermore comprehended their lawes, rytes of ceremonies and sacryfyces, annotations of Astronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffynge, fowyng, and other thynges pertainyng to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the feuen starres cauled *Vergilia* or *Pleiades*: And counte their monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in their language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the foonnes. Therfore as many daies as they name, they faye, so many foonnes. The foonne in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They distribute the yeare (without any reason why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornamentes of golde and fyluer with precious stones intermixte. At the springe of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their praier before they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For th[e] inhabitants of all these tractes also, doo sacryfice children to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue fayde before. At fuche tyme as the feedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe forth the eare, they destinate to their *Zemes* fuche bondmen as they haue bought, or fuche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacryfice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Also before they sacryfice these poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reuerently, affyrmyng that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the companye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they lette them selues bludde, eyther in the tonge, lyps, eares, legges, thyghes, or brest, which they take in their handes and hurle it vppe towarde heauen, soo that with the faule therof the pauement of the temple is all sparckled with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newe colonic (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of. xv. thoufande houfes, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kyng of this towne had fyue men whiche he referued to be sacryficed. Whom when owre men wold haue delyuered, the kyng made humble request to them, sayinge that if they tooke awaye fuche men as he had consecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde bryng vtter destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacryfyces (fayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take fuche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woormes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blasted with lyghtnyng. Owre men perceauynge his earnestnesse herein, thought it beste to chose the least euell, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to disquyet their myndes, and therfore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonies. And although the priestes promysse them immortal glorie, eternall felicity, and perpetuall conuersation with the goddes after the storny dayes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenances giue eare to their promisses, and had rather be fette at lybertie. Their priestes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the syngular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make faggots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres,

and hange vppe the fame at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. To thefe they adde certayne titles and fuperfcriptions as testimonies of the fame. This is ftraunge and woorthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeare oulde, the prieftes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmurynge woordes, poure water in forme of a croffe vpon their heades with a cruert, wherby they feeme to baptife them. Neyther do they as the Iewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a ftraunge relygion bee prefent at their facrifices and other folemnyties. Wee haue nowe fpoken fuffycientely of their bookes, temples, and fuperflitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other prefentes which were brought to the kynge. Emonge thefe, there were two broode and rounde plates (whiche fumme haue named the Images of the foonne and moone) the one of filuer and the other of gold in largeneffe and roundneffe muche lyke to the ftones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one of circumference, that is. xxviii. fpannes in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of three thoufande and. viii. hundreth Castellans, where as wee haue fayde before that a Castellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more than a Ducate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounce. In the center of this, was the Image of a kynge of halfe a cubette longe, fyttinge in a t[h]rone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumette, with fuch countenance as owre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or fprites. About the Image, were the fshapes of trees and floures, fo that it feemed to fytte as though it had byn in a felde. The other of fyluer, was made to the fame fimilitude, beinge alfo in maner of the fame weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyfe certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, fuche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fytches or the pulfe cauled lintels in token of plentie of natieue golde. Alfo two cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned. viii. lynkes in the whiche were fet two hundreth threefcore and two fayre and cleare redde ftones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundrethe fourefcore and threë greene ftones, and yet no emerodes. Neuertheleffe, thefe are in lyke eftimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange. xxvii. golden belles, hauynge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious ftones inclofed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne fpangels of golde. The other cheyne confifteth onely of foure golden lynkes, befet rounde about with a hundreth and two redde ftones, and a hundreth threefcore and twelue greene ftones, with. xxvi. golden belles curiously wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddeft of the cheyne, are ten great precious ftones inclofed in golde, at the whiche alfo hange a hundrethe golden pendauntes of cunnynge woorkemanfhippe. They brought furthermore twelue paire of lether bufkynnes of diuers colours, fumme imbrothered with gold and fumme with fyluer, with plates and ieweltes of golde and precious ftones inclofed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Alfo certeyne myters befette with precious ftoonnes of dyuerfe colours, emonge the whiche fume are blewe like vnto faphires. Of creftes, gerdles, and fannes made of fethers, I wotte not what I fhulde faye. But fuerly if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deferued honoure or commendacion in fuche artes, thefe feeme moft woorthy to bee had in admiracion. I do not maruaile at golde and precious ftones. But am in maner aftyonifhed to fee the woorkemanfhippe excell the fubftance. For I haue with woonderynge eyes behelde a thoufande formes and fimilitudes, of the which I am not able to wryte. And in my iudgement, I neuer fawe any thing whose bewtie myght fo allure the eyes of men. As they marueyled at the naturall bewtie of the fethers of owre peacockes and pheafantes, fo dyd we no leffe maruel at the artificial bewtie of fuche thinges as they make of fethers and quilles impaled with golde. For I fawe in manye of their woorkes, all maner of natieue colours euen in the quilles wherof they make fuche inftrumentes. They brought alfo two helmettes garnyffhed with precious ftones of a whitte blewe colour. One of thefe is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, befide the ftones wherwith it is couered, is lykewyfe edged with. xxv. golden belles and knobbes: and hath on the creft, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Alfo foure fpeares muche lyke vnto troute fpeares or yele fpeares, the woodde wherof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours marueiloufly wrethed with golden wyers and plates intermyxte. Euery of thefe fpeares haue three pikes, whose edges or teeth are all of precious ftones made fafte with wyers of golde. Of like workmanfhip they brought a great fcepter byfet with precious ftoonnes and belles of gold, alfo a braset of gold, and fhowes made of a hartes fkyne, fowed and imbrothered with golden wyers, with a white fole beneth. Furthermore a glaffe of a bryght blewe ftone, and another of white, both enclofed in golde. Likewife a precious ftone of the kynde of them that are cauled *Sphinges*, inclofed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lyfarde, two great fhelles, two duckes, the fshapes of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fyffhes, and all of mafie golde. Furthermore. xxiii. rounde and fquare targettes, fhieldes, and buckelers of golde, and fyue of fyluer. Alfo a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueyloufly wreathed with quilles and fethers of diuers colours, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like croffes of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beaftes, as lyons, tygers, woulues, and fuch other. They brought alfo the fimilitudes of certeyne beaftes made fumme of rodde or twygges, and fum of woodde with the beaftes owne

163

A fygure of
baptisme.The prefentes sent
into Spayne to the
kynge.Two Images of
gold and fyluer.Two cheines of
gold marueloufly
byset with precious
stones and iewels.

Buskyns.

Myters.

How can we then
caul them beaftly
or Barbarous.If they had
changed their
gold for owre Iren,
they had not so
soone byn subdued.

Quylles.

Helmets.

A byrde.

Speares.

A fcepter.
A braset.
Shooes.

164

Glasses.

Byrdes, foules, and
fyffhes of gold.Targettes, etc. of
gold.

A crowne of golde

Crosses.

Images of beastes.
Shiutes.

Cloth of arras.
A souldyers clooke.

Registers of the
th[e]ffayres of
India.

Th[e]auctoritie of
the Lieutenaut.

The Spaniardes
of Dariena.

*Santa Maria
Antiqua.*

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spaniardes name
Pedrarias.
This sea the
spaniardes caule
Mar del sur.

165

Contention
betwene Vaschus
and Petrus Arias.

Petrus Arias
commandeth that
Vaschus be put
to death.

Vaschus is
accused.

Vaschus is put
to death.

fkynnes theron, and garnysshed with collers of laton belles. Lykewife diuers shiutes weaued of goffampyne cotton of fundry colours, wherof two are rychely frynged with golde and precious stoncs, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyxte with goffampine cotton of fundrye colours and chekered lyke the panes of a cheste borde. Sum are on the one syde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other syde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddeft intermyxte with shynyng fethers and sparkes of golde lyke starres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous workmanshynpe. Likewife a souldiers cloke suche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne priuie coates of fence, and fundrye tirementes perteynyng to their heades, with also many suche other thynges more bewtifull to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to entreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then profytable. I lette passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the trauailes and daungers whiche they susteyned in the same, with the monstres and feccreates of nature they sawe: whiche are all conteyned in the registers of owre Senate of th[e]ffayres of India, owte of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, suche as seemed to me mooste meete to bee publiffhed. Notwithstandyng these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also *Cortefus* the gouernour of the nauye and autour of erectinge their newe colonie in those remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doen ageinst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withoute th[e]advice of the gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba* who sente them sooth by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thynges beyde their commysfyon, ye although they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowyng his pleasure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieuetenaut in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theeues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed suffycient obedience in appealyng to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commiffion and the kinges letters pattentes that they myght be headed for their disobediencie ageinst hym whom they knewe to be autorised by the kyng. They ageine replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauails. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoulde bee harde. Leete vs nowe therefore coome to the Spaniardes of *Dariena*, th[e]inhabitours of the goulfe of *Vraba* in the supposed Continent. We haue sayde before that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnyng towards the Weste syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted theyr fyrst colonie or habitation after they had vanquiffhed kyng *Chemaccus*. This colonie they named *Santa Maria Antiqua*, by reason of a vowe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynst *Chemaccus*. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of owre decades) was *Petrus Arias* sente with a thousande and two hundreth men at the request of *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa*, who was then the gouernour of *Dariena*, and the fyrst that found and discouered the large South sea heretofore vnkknown. Wee haue also declared how at the arriual of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundrethes, whom hee sent forth dyuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wyll absolue in fewe wordes, bycause all are horrible and vnpleasaunte. For fence we fynysshed owre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllynge, fleyinge, murtherynge and accusinge. The kyng made *Vaschus* gouernour but duryng his pleasure. His courage was such, and his factes so notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, theyr faulyng owte and discord confounded al thynges. John Cacedus the pulpitte fryer of the order of saynt Frances, dyd his vttermooste endeour to make them frendes, promysyng vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to such extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* syndyng occasion of querelyng ageynst *Vaschus*, sent proceffe to the maiestrates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and syue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: Alleagyng that they and their confetherates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that *Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished foure shippes to searck the south coastes of the supposed continent: Also that to his three hundreth souldiers and companions which he had with hym, he shulde speake wordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe shall we be subiecte to the commaundement of other, fythe wee haue bydden the brunt and ouercumme th[e]nterprise for the whiche this newe gouernour was sent with so great a multitude? Who can any longer abyde his pryde and insolencie? Lette vs therefore folowe these coastes: whyther so euer fortune shall dryue vs: And among these so many pleasaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let us chose one in the whiche wee maye with libertie spende that portion of owre lyues which yet remayneth. Who can fynde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs vyolence? When these or the lyke wordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he sente to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wyllynge hym by the vertue of his commiffion to repayre to him soorthwith. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his commyng was caste in pryson: yet constantly denyng that euer he entended any suche thyng. Wytneffes were brought ageynst hym, and his wordes rehearsed from the begynnyng. To conclude, he was iudged woorthly death, and was put to

execution. And this is the rewarde wherwith the blynde goddesse oftentimes recompenseth such as haue fusteyned great traunayles and daungions to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his wyfe in *Darien*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vaschus*, to th[e]intent to searche those coastes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knoweledge. He hath also his fortune. Yet is there an other gouernour assigned, whose name is *Lupus Sofa*, the viceroye of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym woorthy glorie. Some thynke that he was at the begynnyng so slacke and negligent in his office, and not feure in correctynge errours and misorders. But we wyll leaue him and rehearse sumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchynge the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnes and largenes therof, owre men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in owre Decades. This riuier fauleth into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by feuen portes or mowthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade in owre Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about this ryuer, are rych in golde, we haue learned by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitauntes, of whom we made diligent inquisition. *Vaschus*, and besyde hym other gouernoures and Lieuetenauntes, haue foure tymes entered into this ryuer with theyr armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes fyrste for the space of fortie myles, then fyftie, and at the last fourescore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh shamefull chaunce and detestable couwardenes of owre men. A naked nation encounteryng with them that had apparell, the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in maner in all conflictes, and were other all slayne or wounded. They vse inuenemed arrowes, and are fuche experte archers, that if they espye any place of theyr enemye bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lightly fayle to slyke him there. They vse also many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the fonne from theyr enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewife brode and longe swoordes made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande. *Vaschus* hym selfe receaued many woundes in encounteryng with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet lefte vnsearched. We wil nowe speake sumwhat more of the Iland of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we entended to wryte. In it the Senate is now restored, and syue Iudges assigned to giue lawes to all the inhabitauntes of those traetes. But in shorte tyme, they shall cease gatheryng of golde although there bee greates plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and myners, forasmuch as th[e]inhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many more by famen that yere that they dygged vp the rootes wherof they made theyr beste breade, and leste of fowynge theyr grayne of *Maizium* which is theyr common foode, supposinge hereby to haue dryuen owre men owte of the Ilande, who had vytayles fente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yere of Christe a thousande syue hundreth and. xviii. consumed theym lyke rotton sheepe.

And (to faye the truth) owre mens vnfacible desyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes as daunfynge, fysshinge, foulyng, and huntynge of lyttle connies, that many of them perished euen for verye anguyse of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynges of them felues suffyeient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them felues onely to increafe, and tyllage of the ground: And that onely such as are bought or taken owte of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffyce to haue fayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therefore to speake of other matters: It is a marueylous thyng to consyder howe all thynges increafe and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. fuger presses wherwith great plentie of fuger is made. The canes or reedes wherin the fuger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and higher then the stature of a man, by the halfe. This is more woonderfull, that where as in Valentia in Spaine (where a great quantite of fuger is made yearely) where so euer they applye them felues to the great increafe therof, yet doth euery roote bring forth the not paste syue, or syxe, or at the moste feuen of those reedes: wheras in *Hispaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentimes thirtie. Foure footed bestes and cattayle, are marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenyng hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered owre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plentie of wheate, whiche prospereth so wel that it yealdeth sumtyme a hundreth fould: And this especially on the hylles or rydges of the mountaynes prospectynge towarde the North. Vines do also increafe here with no lesse frutesfulnesse. What shuld I speake of the trees that beare *Cafsia fistula*, brought first into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the supposed Continent, as we haue noted in owre decades? There is nowe fuche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeres we shall haue a pounce of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce. Of the bresyle and mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully giuen to this blessed Iland, we haue spoken sufficiently

*Petrus Arias.**Lupus Sofa*The great ryuer of
Dabaiba or
*Grandis*The goulfe of
Vraba.The ryche
mountaynes of
Dabaiba.Fierce and warlyke
people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of
heauie wood.
166*Hispaniola*.
Quiedus wryteth
that ther are nowe
v. monasteries.Newe and strange
diseases.The suger of
Hispaniola.

Suger of Valentia

A token of
marueylous
frutesfulnes.

Cattayle.

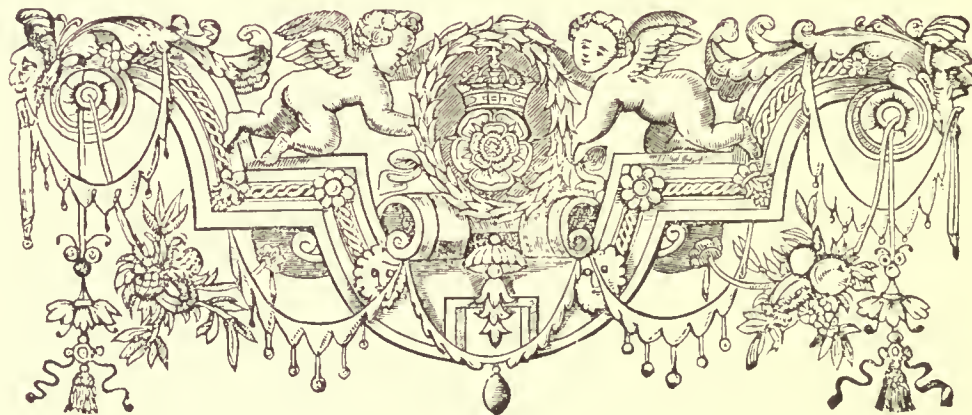
Wheate.

Vines.

Cassia fistula.Brasyle.
Myrobalanes

in ovr decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate part of the same, bycause I think that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weyght of great affaires, to the recordation of such pleasaunt thynges. And yet do not siche thynges as are fauery, engender tedy-ousnesse, for that a precious matter bee adourned with a precious vesture.

FINIS.



167 EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS

Alexander eius nominis sextus, con-
cessit et donauit Castellæ regibus
et suis successoribus, regiones
et Insulas noui orbis in
Oceano occidentali His-
panorum nauigationi-
bus repertas.:



ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS, seruus
seruorum Dei, Charissimo in Christo
filio Ferdinando Regi, et Charissi-
mæ in Christo filiae Elizabeth Re-
ginæ Castellæ, Legionis, Aragonum,
Siciliæ, et Granatæ, illustribus, salu-
tem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera
et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissimum
existit vt fides catholica et Christiana religio nostris
præsertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet ampliatur
ac dilatetur, animarumque salus procuretur, ac barbaræ
nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipsam reducantur.
Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Petri fedem Diuina fauente
clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fueremus,
cognoscentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et
principes: quales semper fuisse nouimus, et a vobis
præclare gesta, toti pene orbi notissima demonstrant,
nedum id exoptare, sed omni conatu, studio, et dili-
gentia, nullis laboribus, nullis impensis, nullisque par-
cendo periculis, etiam proprium sanguinem effundendo
efficere, ac omnem animum vestrum, omnesque conatus
ad hoc iam dudum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuper-
ato regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodie-
nis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis
gloria facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito,
et debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter
concedere, per quæ huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile
ab immortali deo acceptum propositum, indies seruen-
tiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Chris-
tiani propagationem, profequi valeatis. Sane accipi-
mus quod vos qui dudum animum propofueratis aliquas

171 THE COPPIE OF THE BULL
OR DONATION, BY TH[E]AU-
TORITIE WHEROF, POPE

Alexander the fyxte of that name,
gaue and graunted to the kynges of
Castyle and theyr successours the
Regions and Ilandes founde in
the Weste Ocean sea by
the nauigations of the
Spanyardes.



Alexander byshoppe, the seruante of
the seruantes of God: To owre moste
deare beloued sonne in Christ Kyng
Ferdinande, And to owre deare be-
loued doughter in Chryste Elyzabeth
Queene of Castyle, Legion, Aragon,
Sicilie, and Granata, most noble

Princes, Grettyng and Apostolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine
maiestie and accordyng to owre hartes desyre, this
certainely is the chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and
Christian religion, specially in this owre tyme may in
all places bee exalted, amplified, and enlarged, wherby
the health of foules may be procured, and the Barbarous
nations subdued and brought to the fayth. And there-
fore wheras by the fauoure of gods clemencie (although
not with equall desertes) we are cauled to this holy
feate of Peter, and vnderstandyng you to bee trewe
Catholyke Princes as we haue euer knowen you, and
as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in
maner to the hole worlde in that with all your studie,
diligence, and industrie, you haue spared no trauayles,
charges, or perels, aduenturyng euen the shedyng of
your owne bludde, with applyng yowre hole myndes
and endeuours here vnto, as your noble expeditions
achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome of Granata from
the tyrannie of the Sarracens in these our dayes, doo
playnely declare your factes with so great glorye of the
diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woor-
thy, so owght we of owre owne free wyl fauorably to
graunt all thynges whereby you maye dayely with more
seruent myndes to the honoure of god and enlargyng
the Christian empire, profecute your deuoute and laud-

insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios hætenus non repertas, quærere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, hætenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatæ plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuistis: Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Col-
 onum virum vtique dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad familia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi hætenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios hætenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viu-
 entes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nuncij vestri posunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Insulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, fatis apti videntur: Spesque habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et insulis prædictis facile induceretur. Ac præfatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Insulis prædictis, iam vnam turrinam munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et insulas prædictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis.

Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamur vos quamplurimum in domino, et per

able purpose most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed that wheras of late you were determined to seeke and fynde certeyne Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and vnknown (and not heretofore found by any other) to th[e]intent to bringe th[e]inhabitauntes of the same to honoure owre redemer and to professe the catholyke sayth, you haue hetherto byn much occupied in th[e]expugnation and recouerie of the kyngedome of Granata, by reason whereof yowe coulde not brynge yowre sayde laudable purpose to th[e]ende defyred. Neuerthelesse as it hath pleased almyghty god, the foresayde kyngedome beinge recovered, wylling t[o]accomplyshe your sayde desyre, you haue, not without great labour, perelles, and charges, appoynted owre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other necessaries, to seeke (with the sea where hetherto no manne hath sayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and hitherto vnknown. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilandes and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by any other. In the which (as is sayde) many nations inhabite lyuinge peaceably and goinge naked, not accustomed to eate fleshe. And as farre as yowre messengers can coniecture, the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and Ilandes, beleue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and seeme apte to be brought to th[e]imbracinge of the catholyke saythe and to be imbued with good maners: by reason whereof, we may hope that if they well be instructed, they may easely bee induced to receaue the name of owre sauour Iesu Christ. We are further aduertised that the forenamed Christopher hathe nowe builded and erected a fortresse with good munition in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath placed a garrison of certeyne of the Christian men that wente thither with him: aswell to th[e]intent to defende the same, as also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and yet vnknown. We also vnderstande, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of sundry kyndes and qualities. Therefore al thynges diligently considered (especially th[e]amplifyng and enlargyng of the catholyke sayth, as it behoueth catholyke Princes folowyng th[e]examples of yowre noble progenitours of famous memorie) wheras yowe are determined by the fauour of almightie god to subdue and brynge to
 the catholyke sayth th[e]inhabitauntes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lorde, and desirous to haue the same brought to a dewe ende, and the name of owre sauoure to be knowne in those partes, doo exhorte yowe in owre Lorde and by the reccauynge of yowre holy baptysme wherby yowe are bounde to

fieri lauari susceptionem, qua mandatis Apostolicis obligati estis, et per viscera misericordiae Domini nostri Iesu Christi attente requirimus, ut cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino proficere et assumere prona mente orthodoxae fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Insulis et terris degentes, ad Christianam religionem suscipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores villo vnquam tempore vos deterreant, firma spe fiduciaque conceptis quod Deus omnipotens conatus vestros feliciter proficiatur. Et ut tanti negotij prouintiam Apostolicae gratiae largitate donati, liberius et audacius assumatis, motu proprio non ad vestram vel
 169 alterius pro vobis super hoc nobis oblatæ petitionis instantiam, sed de nostra mera liberalitate, et ex certa scientia, ac de Apostolica potestatis plenitudine, omnes Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo vnâ lineam a polo Arctico, scilicet Septentrione, ad polum Antarcticum, scilicet Meridiem, siue terræ firmæ et insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem.

Itaque omnes Insulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et reperiendæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea versus Occidentem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Christianum non fuerint actualiter possessæ vsque ad diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præfatus Millefimus Quadringentesimus Nonagesimus tertius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos vestros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum Insularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro concessa, ac vicariatus Iesu Christi qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illatum dominijs, ciuitatibus, castris, locis, et villis, iuribusque et iurisdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuersis, vobis hereditibusque et successoribus vestris (Castellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præsentium donamus, concedimus, et assignamus: Vosque et hæredes ac successores præfatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda potestate, autoritate, et iurisdictione, facimus, constituimus, et deputamus. Decernentes nihilominus per huiusmodi donationem, concessionem, et assignationem nostram, nullo Christiano Principi quia actualiter præfatas Insulas et terras firmas possederit vsque ad prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi usque quantum, sublatum intelligi posse aut auferri debere.

Et insuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ sanctæ obedi-

Apostolicall obedience, and earnestly require you by the bowels of mercy of our Lorde Iesu Christ, that when you intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to profecute the sayde expedition to reduce the people of the foresayde landes and Ilandes to the Christian religion, you shall spare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceaunge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good successe to youre godly attemptes. And that beinge autorysed by the priuilege of the Apostolycall grace, you may the more freely and bouldly take vpon youe th[e] enterpryse of so greate a matter, we of our owne motion, and not eyther at youre request or at the instant petition of any other person, but of our owne mere liberalitie and certeyne science, and by the fulnesse of Apostolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and assigne to youe, youre heyres and successours, al the firme landes and Ilandes found or to be found, discouered or to be discouered toward the West and South, drawyng a line from the pole Arctike to the pole Antartike (that is) from the north to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what so euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde *India*, or towarde any other parte what so euer it bee, beinge distant from, or without the foresayd lyne drawn a hundreth leaques towarde the Weste and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*.

All the Ilandes therefore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, discouered and to be discouered from the sayde lyne towarde the West and South, such as haue not actually bin heretofore possessed by any other Christian kyng or prynce vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of our Lorde Iesu Chryste laste paste, from the which begynneth this present yeare beinge the yeare of our Lorde. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. when so euer any such shalbe founde by your messengers and captaynes, Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs in saynt Peter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the steede of Iesu Christe, doo for euer by the tenoure of these presentes, gyue, graunte, assigne, vnto youe, youre heyres, and successours (the kynges of Castyle and Legion) all those landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, castels, towres, places, and vyllages, with all the ryght, and iurisdictiones therunto perteynyng: constitutyng, assignyng, and deputyng, youe, youre heyres, and successours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iurisdiction. Decreeinge neuerthelesse by this our donation, graunt, and assignation, that from no Christian Prince whiche actually hath possessed the foresayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the daye of the natiuitie of our lorde before sayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderstoode hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde youe in the vertue

entia (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et habitatores præfatos in fide Catholica et bonis moribus imbuendum, destinare debeatis, omnem debitam diligentiam in præmissis adhibentes.

A quibuscumque personis, cuiuscumque dignitatis, etiam imperialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, sub excommunicationis læ sententiæ poena quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurrant, districtius inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, suæ terræ firmæ et Insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamecunque partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quavis alia causa accedere præsumat absque vestra ac hæredum et successorum vestrorum prædictorum licentia speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisque quibuscumque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigente Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum prosequamini, breui tempore cum felicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani, vestri labores et conatus exitum felicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præsentis literas ad singula quæque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, quod illarum transumptis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo alicuius personæ in ecclesiastica dignitate constitutæ, seu curiæ ecclesiasticæ munitis, ea prorsus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur, quæ præsentibus adhiberetur si essent adhibitæ vel ostensæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostræ commendationis, hortationis, requisitionis, donationis, concessionis, assignationis, constitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei ausu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præsumperit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum eius, se noverit incursum.*

Datum Romæ apud sanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis Dominicæ. 1493. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus nostri anno primo.*

of holy obedience (as yowe haue promysed, and as wee doubt not you wyll doo vppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to fende to the sayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and lerned men, fuche as feare God, and are able to instructe th[e] inhabitants in the Catholyke fayth and good maners, applyinge all theyr possible diligence in the premisses.

We furthermore strenghtly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the peyne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre yf they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciall lycence of yowe, yowre heyres, and successours, to trauallye for marchaundies or for any other cause, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, discovered, or to bee discovered, toward the west and fouth, drawing a line from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands and Ilandes found and to be found, be situate toward *India* or towarde any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawn a hundreth leagues towarde the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstandynge constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinaunces what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trustlynge that almyghtie god directynge yowre enterprises, yf yowe folowe yowre 173 godly and laudable attemptes, yowre laboures and traualyles herein, shall in shorte tyme obteyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Christian people. But forasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great difficultie these letters to bee caryed to all fuche places as shuld bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowlege doo decree that whyther so euer the same shalbe sent, or wher so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a common notarie therunto requyred, with the seale of any person constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or fuche as are autoryfed by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same fayth and credite to bee gyuen therunto in iudgement or els where, as shulde bee exhibyted to these presentes.

It shall therefore bee lawefull for no man to infringe or rashely to contrarie this letter of owre commendation, exhortacion, requeste, donation, graunt, assignation, constitution, deputation, decree, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And yf any shall presume to attempte the same, he owght to knowe that he shall thereby incurre the indignation of almyghtie God and his holye Apostles Peter and Paule. (·) (·) (·)

¶ Gyuen at Rome at saynt Peters: In the yeare of th[e] incarnation of owre Lord M. CCCC. LXXXIII. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the fyrste yeare of owre feate. () () ()

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION II.

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés.

The Natural History of the West Indies.

First printed in 1526.]

TO THE READER.



Although amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philosophical discourfes the secrete causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchyng the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woorkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better knowen and seached, and dyuers fuche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wryters, emonge the number of whom *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus*, (whom lerned *Cardanus* compareth to the ancient writers) is doubtles the chiefe, I haue therefore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intitiled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hystorie of the West Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the fame in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Th[e]mperou[r]s maiestie, as maye appeare by the epyftell folowyng.

¶ TO THE MOST HYGH AND MYGHTIE
PRINCE CHARLES THE FYFTE OF THAT NAME:

EMPEROUR OF ROME, KYNGE OF SPAYNE, AND OF THE TWOO SICILIES,

of bothe the sydes of the streyght of *Faro*, Kyng of Hierufalem

and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders,

Lord and inheritoure of the firme lande and Ilandes

of the Weste Ocean, etc. *Gonzalus Ferdinan-*

dus Ouiedus his most humble seruant

wysheth health and per-

petual felicitie.



174

He thynges whiche principally preferue and mayntayne the woorkes of nature in the memories of men, are hystories and bookes composed of the fame. Amonge the whiche certes those are esteemed moſte trewe and autentyke which haue byn wrytten by wyttie and expert men well trauayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytnesses of ſuche thynges as they haue partely ſeene and byn partely informed by credible perſons. Of this mynde and opinion was Plinie, who better then any other autoure hathe wrytten in xxxvii. bookes al that perteyneth to the naturall hystorie, conteyned al in one volume dedicated to Veſpaſian Th[e]mperour. Wherein, as a prudente hystoriographer, he declareth ſuche thynges as he had harde: Attributyng the ſeconde autoritie to ſuche as he had redde in autoures that wrote before hym: And thyrdeley ioyned to the ſame hystorie, ſuch thynges as he hym ſelfe had ſeene as moſte certeyne teſtimonie. Whoſe exemple I ſolowyng, wyl in this my breefe ſummarie reduce and repreſent to yowre maieſties memorie ſuche thynges as I haue ſeene in yowre Empyre of the Weſt Indies aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean ſea, where I haue ſerued nowe more then twelue yeares in the place of ſuruoyer of the golde mynes by the commaundement of the Catholyke kyng *Don Fernando* the fyſte of that name and graundfather vnto yowre maieſtie, to whom god gaue great fame and glorie. Senſe whoſe death alſo I haue lykewies ſerued and truſt whyle the reſt of my lyfe yet remayneth, to ſerue yowre maieſtie as ſhall pleaſe yowe to commaunde. As touchyng which thynges and ſuch other lyke, I haue more largely wrytten in a hystorie begunne as ſone as my age was ripe to take ſuche matters in hande. Wherein furthermore I haue made mention of ſuche thynges

as haue chaunced in Spaine, from the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto fuche thynges woorthy memorie as I haue obserued in other realmes and prouinces where I haue trauallyed. And haue likewise particularly wrytten the lyues and woorthy actes of the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fruition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted fuche thynges as haue chaunced in yowre most fortunate succeffion. Not omittynge particularly to wryte a large booke of such thynges as haue seemed moste woorthy to bee noted as touchynge yowre maiesties Indies. But for asmuche as that volume remaineth in the cite of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* where I dwell and am placed in housholde with wyfe, chyldren, and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my wrytynge then I beare in memorie. Determynynge notwithstandinge for yowre maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehearfall of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely entreated in my sayde general historie, and such as may seeme moste woorthy to bee redde of yowre maiestie. Of the which, although a great parte haue byn wrytten by other who haue also seene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all that trauallye into these Indies haue greater respecte to laker and gaynes then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature wherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue therfore with all possible endeuour applyed myne eyes and intelligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherein (as I haue sayde) I haue more amplye declared these thynges: but shal onely more breesely expresse th[e] effect therof vntyl such tyme as Godde shal restore me to myne owne house, where I may accomplyshe and fynishe my sayd general hystorie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyrst principle, I say that Don Christopher Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrste Admyrall of this India, discouered the same in the dayes of the Catholyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the lady Elyzabeth his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maiestie: In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare 1492. with the fyrst Indians and other shewes and profes of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire. The whiche gyfte and benefyte was fuche, that it is vnto this daye, one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde. And to saye the trewth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodious and profytable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe not recognise the same. And (as I haue sayde before) forasmuch as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely intreated of these thynges, I intend at this present only briefly to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche fuerly are verye fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee sayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therefore I wyl speake sumwhat of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generation of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with their rytes, customes, and cerimonies. Also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woormes, fysshes, seas, ryuers, sprynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered boothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of th[e] order and company of them that are appointed to returne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therefore the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promised to performe in my greater woork, I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte herevnto, but rather to confyder the noueltie of fuche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to wryte. Protestyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of fuche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wherof not onely I my selfe can testifye, but also diuers other woorthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte. And thus it shal suffice to haue saide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a proheime vnto this present worke which I most humbly desyre yowre maiestie as thankfully t[o] accept, as I haue wrytten it faithfully.

175

¶ Of the ordinary nauyigation from Spayne to the Weste Indies.



The nauyigation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Siuile, where yowre maiestie haue yowre house of contractation for those partes, with also yowre officers thervnto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrones of suche shyppes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke theym selues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadachiber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from hense they folowe their course toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these feuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the shyppes are furnysshed with freshe water, suell, cheese, biese, and suche other thynges whiche may seeme requisyte to be added to suche as they brynge with them owte of Spayne. From Spayne to these Ilandes, is commonly eyght dayes saylinge, or lyttle more or lesse. And when they are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyftie leaques, whiche make a thousande myles, accomptyng foure myles to a leaque as is their maner to reckon by sea. Departynge

from the sayde Ilandes to folowe their course, the shippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse, before they see the fyrste lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyrste seene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Deseada* (otherwise cauled *Desyderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christoual*, or summe other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lyinge aboute these aforesaide. Yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the shippes passe withowte the syght of any of the sayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that course vntyll they coome to the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* or *Hispaniola*, or *Jamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouerpasse all these likewyse, vntyll they faule vpon the coastes of the fyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practised in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makynge this viage with experte maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyrste Ilandes shall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyrste of these, the distaunce is nyne hundreth leaques by saylinge, or more. And from hense to the cite of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is a hundreth and fyftie leaques: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousand and three hundreth leaques. Yet forasmuche as sumtymes the nauigation procedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander on the one syde or on the other, wee may well saye that they haue nowe sayled a thousande and fyue hundreth leaques and more. And if the nauigation be slowe by reason of summe hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be synished in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moste parte, not accomptyng the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or of them that arryue in verye shorte tyme. For wee owghte to confyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not synished without longer tyme, as in the space of. l. [fifty] dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse.

176 Neuerthelesse in this present yeare of. 1525. there came foure shyps from the Iland of *San Dominico* to saint *Luca* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue sayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth seldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is very safe and much vsed, euen vnto the sayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the shyppes trauerse diuers wayes for the space of fiue, syxe, or feuen dayes saylinge, or more, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the sayde firme lande is verye great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the same. Yet to the firme land whiche is nearest to this Iland, and lyeth directly ageynst *San Dominico*, the passage is synished in the tyme aforesayde. But it shalbe muche better to remytte all this to the carde of these nauigations and the new Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to Ptolomie or any other of the owlde wrytters.

¶ Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheffe brought from thense into Spayne.



After my vniuersall description of the historie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembrance two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng th[e]mpire of this West Indies perteynyng to the dominion of yowre maiestye. And these befyde the other particulars wherof I haue suffyciently spoken, are to be consydered as thynges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shortenesse of the way and with what expedition yowr maiesties shypes maye passe beyonde the mayne fyrme lande of these Indies into the newe Southe sea cauled *Mare del Sur* lyyng beyond the same. And this to th[e]intent to coome to the llandes where the spices growe, besyde the other innumerable rycheffe of the kingedomes and signiories whiche confine with the sayde fea where are so many people and nations of dyuers toonges and maners. The other thyng, is to consyder howe innumerable treasures are entered into Spayne by these Indies, aswell that whiche commeth dayly from thense as also that is continually to bee looked for, bothe of golde and perle and other marchaunties which are first brought into this yowre realme of Spayne before they are seene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly enriched, but also the benefyte therof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare thervnto. A testimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maiestie haue caused to bee coyned, and are disparfed throughowte the hole worlde. But after they are once passed owt of this yowre realme, they neuer returne agein bycause they are the best curraunt money of the world. And therefore if after they haue byn in the handes of straungers they chaunce to be returned ageyne into Spayne, they coome disguised in an other habite, and are diminished of the goodnesse of their golde, with the flampe of yowre maiestye chaunged: So that if it were not for their suche defacynges in other realmes for the cause afore sayde, there shulde not bee founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maiesties. And the cause of all this, are yowre Indies.

¶ Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym.



This particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted: And I maye muche better speake hereof then any other man, forasmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paste sense I serued in the place of the surueier of the meltyng shoppes perteynyng to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued longe in the same roome in the name of yowr maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to knowe howe golde is founde and wrought owte of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this lande is exceedyng ryche: hauyng by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and slaues, gathered and fyned a great portion of the same: and may therefore the better affyrme this by testimonye of fyght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilia del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise cauled *Beragua*) no man coulede aske me of the mynes of golde, but that I durste haue bounde my selfe to haue discouered them in the space of ten leagues of the countrey where it shulde haue byn demaunded me, and the same to bee verye ryche. For I was alowed all maner of charges to make searche for the same. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet ought wee not in euery place to bestowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycause it is of lesse quantitie and goodnesse in sum place then in sum. And the myne or veyne whiche owght to be folowed, ought to bee in a place whiche may stande to faue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administracion of other necessary thynges that the charges may bee recompensed with gaynes. For there is no doubt but that golde shalbe founde more or lesse in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verye good, and of xxii. caraces or better in fynesse. Furthermore, besyde this great quantitie of golde whiche I haue sayde to be founde in the mynes, there is also from day to day found or otherwise gotten, great treasure of suche wrought gold as hath byn in the custodie of the subdued Indians and their kynges, aswell of suche as they haue gyuen for their fyne and raunsome, or otherwise as frendes to the Christians, besyde that whiche hath byn vyolently taken from the rebelles. But the greateste parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth sumwhat of

copper. Of this they make braffettes and chaines and in the same they close their iewels which their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the richesse of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of fuche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to saye in the plaines and riuers of the champian countrey being without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without. Or of fuche as is sumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, so that to coome by the same, it shalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of water, or elles in the earth, I wyll shewe howe it is founde in bothe these places, and howe it is seperate and poured. Therefore when the myne or veine is discouered, this chaunceth by ferchyng and proung in fuche places as by certeyne fynges and tooke do appeare to skylfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue sayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrst they make the place verye cleane where they intende to dygge. Then they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a spanne or two, or more as shal seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally. Then they washe all the earthe whiche they haue taken owte of the sayde place. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before. And if then also, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggyng and washyng the earth as before vntill they come to the hard rocke or stone. And if in fyne they fynd no golde there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderstode, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the same measure in leuell and deapth vntill they haue made an ende of all the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to consyft of certen feete or pases in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne orders determined. And within that compasse of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrst founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a staffe to assygne hym felse a place by the syde of the same, inclosyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mynes of *Zauana* (that is such as are found in the playne) owght euer to bee soughte nere to sum ryuer or brooke or springe of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to th[e]nde that the golde maye be washed, for the whiche purpose they vse the labour of certeyne Indians as they doo other in dygginge of the myne. And when they haue dygged owte the myne, they fyl certeyne trais with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carye those trayes of earth to the water where it maye bee washed. Yet do not they that bryng it, washe it, but delyuer it to other, puttyng it owte of their owne trayes into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. These washers for the moste parte, are the Indian women, bycause this woorke is of lesse paine and trauaile then any other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to sytte by the waters syde, with their legges in the water euen vpe to the knees or lesse as the place serueth their purpose. And thus holdyng the trays with earth in their handes by the handles therof, and puttyng the same into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of syftyng, with a certeyne aptenesse in fuche sorte that there entreth no more water into the trais then serueth their turne: And with the felse same apte mouyng of their trais in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one syde of the vessell, and receaue in cleane water on the other side therof. So that by this meanes by little and lyttle, the water wassheth the earth as the lyghter substaunce owte of the trais, and the golde as the heauier matter resteth in the bottome of the same, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddest lyke vnto a barbars basen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the traye, they putte it aparte, and returne to take more earth, whiche they washe continually as before. And thus they that labour in this woorke, do gather dayly fuche portion of golde as shal please god to graunt to the patrones of these Indians and fuche other as trauaile in the same. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euery two Indians that washe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bryng earthe from the myne, and other twoo to breake the same smaule and fylle their trais therewith. Also befyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there bee other people in the place where they woorke and reste in the nyghte. These are fuche as make their breade, and prouyde for vyttayles and other necessaryes. So that to conclude, there are in all, fyue persons ordinarily assigned to euery traye of washers.

There is an other maner of woorkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in auoydyng the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are drye and vtterlye emptied, they fynde golde emonge the breaches, cliftes, and ryftes of stoness, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuer runneth of greatest force. So that it chaunceth sum tyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therefore your maiestie ought to vnderstande for a generail rule, as it appereth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hyghest places of the montaines: And in continuance of time is by lyttle and lyttle browght downe to the vales and plaines by showres of rayne, and the faules of sprynges, ryuers, and brookes hauyng their originall in the mountaynes and descendyng from the same, notwithstanding it bee oftentimes founde in the plaines farre

from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moste parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in these two maners is it commonly founde moste abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great tooke therof whiche causeth me to beleue it for certeine. And this is to confyder that coles neuer putrifie nor corrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of stronge woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the fydes, and breakyng a myne in the earthe where it had not byn broken before, and hauyng nowe dygged one or two or three poles in measure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they found gold. And this I faye in the earth whiche was taken for a vyrgine: that is to faye, such as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the superficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by fum occasion of fyre, and that they fastned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lyttle and lyttle couered with the earth which the often showers of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeares the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the fayde leuell and measure whiche had before tyme byn the superficial part of the earthe where the coles and golde were founde togyther: whereby it maye appeare that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the faules of waters as we haue fayde: forasmuche as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and besyde this, I say that in how much more the gold is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is so muche the more purified and fyned and of a better caracte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is so muche the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and caracte, and dothe wast so much the more in meltyng, and remayneth more brickle. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboute the earth and sumtymes also vnder the earth. And the greatesse of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loste in the sea aboute the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed three thousande and two hundredth Castellans of golde, which are in value foure thousand a hundredth, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which waye one *Arroua* and seuen pounce, or. xxxii. pounce. after. xii. ounces to the pounce, whiche make threescore and foure markes of golde. And I fawe in the year. 1515. in the handes of Mychel Passamonte treasurer to yowre maiestie, two graines of the which one wayde seuen poundes, which are. xiiii. markes, and are in value aboute threescore and fyue ducades of golde euery marke. The other was of. x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of. xxii. caractes and better. There are also founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto these in byggenes. And forasmuche as I haue spoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare sumewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte fuche vesselles of copper and base golde as they make. For they can gyue them so fayre and floryshyng a coloure, that all the masse whiche they gylte, appeareth as though it were golde of. xxii. caractes and better. This colour they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were wrought by the arte of any goldefmyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold of them bee esteemed as a thyng of greate ryches, and a secrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue spoken sufficiently of the myne of golde, I wyll nowe speake sumwhat of copper bycause I haue made mention thereof. This metall is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and also in the firme lande: And is founde dayely in greate quantitie holdyng sumwhat of golde. But for the desyre that owre men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profitte be had therby, and also by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte syluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche, bycause I haue more particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystorie of India.

179

A marke, is a pounce of viii. ounces: summa. xlii. li. [forty-two pounds] weyght viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the li. [pound].

¶ Of the maner of fysshynge for perles.



He Indians exercise this kynde of fysshynge for the moste parte in the coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of them which dwell in the houses of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, resort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, fyxe, or seuen, or more in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes erly in the mornyng to some place in the sea there about where it appeareth vnto them that there shulde bee greate plentie of those shell fyshes (which some caule muscles and some oysters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plunge

180

them felues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, fauynge one that remayneth in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth flyll in one place as neare as he can, lookynge for theyr returne owte of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryfeth vp and commeth fwymmyng to the boate, enterynge into the fame, and leauynge there all the oysters whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in these, are the perles founde. And when he hath there rested hym felse a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remayneth as longe as he can endure, and then ryfeth ageyne, and fwimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all moſte experte fwymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houſes, and prefente all the oysters to the maſter or ſtewarde of the houſe of theyr lorde who hath the charge of the fayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them ſumwhat to eate, he layeth vp the oysters in faſe cuſtodie vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then hee cauſeth the ſame fyſſher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of them pearles other great or ſmaul, two or three or foure, and ſumtymes ſiue and fyxe, and many ſmaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They faue the pearles bothe ſmaule and great whiche they haue founde: And eyther eate the oysters if they wyl, or caſte them away, hauynge ſo great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. Theſe oysters are of hard fleſhe, and not ſo plefaunt in eatyng as are owres of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyſhing is exerciſed, is in the Northe coaſte, and is no bygger then the Iland of *Zelande*. Oftentymes the ſea encreaſeth greatly, and muche more then the fyſhers for pearles wold, bycauſe where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally reſt at the bottome by reaſon of the aboundaunce of aery ſubſtaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For althoughe he may by vyolence and force deſcende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp ageyne ſo that he can continue no tyme there. And therefore where the ſea is verye deepe, theſe Indian fyſſhers vſe to tye two great ſtoones aboute them with a corde, on euery ſyde one, by the weyght wherof they deſcend to the bottome and remayne there vntyl them lyſteth to ryſe ageine: At which tyme they vnloſe the ſtones, and ryſe vpe at their pleaſure. But this their apteneſſe and agilitie in ſwimming, is not the thyng that cauſeth men moſte to maraile: But rather to conſyder how many of them can ſtande in the bottome of the water for the ſpace of one hole houre, and ſumme more or leſſe, accordyng as one is more apte hereunto then an other. An other thyng there is whiche ſeemeth to me very ſtraunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of ſumme of theſe lordes of the Indians, if the place where they accuſtomed to fyſhe for pearles beyng but lyttle and narrowe, wyl not in ſhorte tyme bee vtterly without oysters if they conſume them ſo faſte, they al answered me, that althoughe they bee conſumed in one parte, yet if they go a fyſſhyng in an other parte or an other coaſte of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fyſhing there alſo vntyll the oysters be lykewyſe conſumed, and then returne ageyne to the fyrſte place, or any other place where they fyſſhed before and emptied the fame in lyke maner, they find them ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin fyſſhed. Wherby we may iudge that theſe oysters eyther remoue from one place to an other as do other fyſſhes, or elles that they are engendered and encreaſe in certeyne ordinarie places. This Ilande of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fyſhe for theſe perles, is in the twelſe degree of the part of the ſaide coaſte which inclineth toward the North. Lykewiſe pearles are founde and gathered in the South ſea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this ſea are verye bygge. Yet not ſo bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians caule *Terarequi*, lying in the gouſe of ſaincte Michael, where greater pearles are founde and of greater price then in any other coaſte of the Northe ſea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I ſpeake this as a trewe teſtimonie of fyght, hauyng byn longe in that South ſea, and makyng curious inquisition to bee certainly informed of al that perteyneth to the fyſſhyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Tararequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faſſhyon of a peare, wayinge. xxxi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amonge a thouſande and ſoo many poundes weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaſpar Morales (before *Petrus Arias*) paſſed to the ſaide Ilande in the yeare. 1515. whiche pearle was of great priſe. From the ſaide Ilande alſo, came a great and verye rounde pearle, whiche I brought owte of the ſea. This was as bygge as a ſmaule pellet of a ſtone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes. I boughte it in the citie of *Panama* in the ſea of *Sur*: And paide for it fyxe hundreth and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeares in my cuſtodie: and after my returne into Spaine, ſoulde it to th[e]rle of *Nanfao*, Marqueſſe of *Zenete*, great chamberleyne to yowre maieſtie, who gaue it to the Marqueſſe his wyfe, the ladye *Mentia* of *Mendoza*. I thynke verely that this pearle was the greateſt, fayreſt, and roundeſt that hath byn ſeene in thoſe partes. For yowre maieſtie owght to vnderſtande that in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundreth great pearles rounde after the faſſhyon of a peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Chriſtians caule the Ilande of pearles, and other caule it the Ilande of floures, is founde in the eyght degree on the fouthe ſyde of the firme lande in the prouynce of golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*. And theſe are the coaſtes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderſtande alſo that there are perles founde in the prouynce and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And ſence yowr maieſtie appoynted me a gouernour and

Of this reade more largely in the decades.

By the computation of venice. iiii. graines make a carotte.

181

capytayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertified that pearles are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Codego* which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caul *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North fyde in the tenth degree of the coastes of the firme lande.

¶ *Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome.*



When the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequinas*, whiche in theyr tonge is as muche to faye as maisters. Notwithstandyng that they caule euery man that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name, as fysshers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they caule the maisters of theyr aunsweres bycause they speake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyll, and bryng them aunswere what he saythe, eyther as touchyng suche thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day folowyng, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyll beinge so auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and feeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe theym beleue that they come so to passe by his ordynance, as though he were the lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: caufeth tempest and ruleth the statyons of tymes, gyuyng lyfe or takyng awaye lyfe at his pleasure. By reafon wherof, the Indians beinge deceaued of hym, and feing also such effectes to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, beleue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with sacrfyces of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous spices. And when god dispofeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he caufeth the *Tequinas* to perswade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and sentence for summe of their synnes, or deuifeth summe suche lye as lyketh hym beste, beyng a skylfull maister in suche subtile and craftie deuifes to deceyue the symple and ignorant people whiche hath smaule defence agaynst so mighty and craftie an aduerfarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, so doo they in many places caule the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them therby, as in deede it is a name very feete and agreable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng more lyke dragons then men amonge these symple people.

Before th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receaued the Christian faithe there was amonge them a secte of men whiche liued solytarily in the desertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in sylence and abstinence more straightly then euer dyd the phylosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with suche frutes, herbes, and rootes as the desertes and wooddes mynistred vnto them to eat. The professours of this secte were cauled *Piacas*. They gaue them selues to the knowledge of naturall thynges, and vsed certeine secrete magicall operations and superstitions wherby they had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr owne bodyes at suche tymes as they wolde take vpon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome was to fende them a portion of their fyne breade of *Cazabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble requeste and sute to desyre them to tell them of suche thynges as they wolde demaunde. After the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Piacas* cometh with twoo of his disciples waytyng on hym, wherof the one bryngeth with hym a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a lyttle syluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he fyteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose. Where hauyng his disciples the one standyng on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the presence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common people are not admtyted to these misteries) and turnyng his face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntment and cauleth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which no man vnderstandeth but he and his disciples. After he hath dooen thus a while, if the spirite yet deferre his commyng, he drinketh of the fayde water, and therwith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntment, and letteth hym selfe bludde with a thorne, marueilously turmoilyng hym selfe as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not ceasyng vntyl the spirite bee coome: who at his commyng entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it weare a grehounde shulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he seemeth to lye as though he were in great payne or in a rapte, wonderfully tormentyng hym selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the syluer bell

continually. Thus when the agonie is paste and he lyeth quietly (yet withowte any fence or feelyng) the kyng or fumme other in his steade, demaundeth of hym what he desyreth to knowe, and the spirite answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces* with a directe and perfecte answer to all poyntes. In so muche that on a tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng present at these mysteries with one of the kynges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shyppes whiche they looked for owte of Spayne, the spirite answered in the Indian tounge, and toulde them what daye and houre the shyppes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought withowt faylyng in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the foonne or moone (whiche they greatly feare and abhorre) he geueth a perfecte answer, and the lyke of tempestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and fuche other thinges. When all the demaundes are fynnyshed, his disciples caule hym aloude, rynging the fyluer bell at his eare and blowyng a certeyne poudre into his nosethrilles wherby he is rayfed as it weare from a deade sleape beinge yet sumewhat heauy headed and faynt a good whyle after. Thus beinge ageyne rewarded of the kyng with more breade, he departeth ageyne to the desertes with his disciples. But fence the Christian fayth hath byn disparfed throwghe owte the Ilande, these deuyllsye practises haue ceased, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Chryste by baptisime forfakynge the deuyll and his workes, with the vaine curiositie of desyre of knowlege of thynges to coome, wherof for the most part it is better to be ignorant then with vexation to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his houholde seruantes, aswell women as men which haue continually serued hym, kyl them selues, beleauyng as they are taught by the deuyll *Tuyra*, that they which kyl them selues when the kyng dyeth, go with hym to heauen and serue hym in the same place and office as they dyd before on the earth whyle he lyued. And that all that refuse so to doo, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwyfe, they foules to dye with theyr bodyes and to bee dissolved into ayer and become nothyng as do the foules of hogges, byrdes, or fyshes or other brute beastes. And that only the other may enjoy the priuileage of immortalitie for euer to serue the kyng in heauen. And of this false opinion commeth it that they which fowe corne or fet rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the same, are accustomed to kyl them selues that they may enjoy this priuileage in heauen. And for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of *Maizium* and a bundle of *Iucca* (wherof they breade is made) to bee buried with them in theyr graues that the same maye serue them in heauen if perchappes there shuld lacke feedes to fowe. And therefore they take this with them to begyn with all, vntyl *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promisses) prouyde them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe sene in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauyng in pryson the kyng of that prouince (who rebelled from th[e] obedience of yowe maieslie) and demaundyng of hym to whom perteyned those sepultures or graues whiche I sawe in his house, he answered that they were of certeyne Indians whiche slewe them selues at the death of his father. And bycause they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of wrought golde with them, I caused twoo graues to bee opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue sayde. And demaunding the cause hereof of the kyng and the other Indians, they answered that they that were buried there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylful in fowynge of feedes and makynge of breade, and seruantes to the kynges father. And to th[e]ende that theyr foules shoulde not dye with theyr bodyes, they slewe them selues at the deathe of the kyng their master to lyue with hym in heauen. And to th[e]intent that they myght serue him there in the same office they referued that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to fowe it in heauen. Whereunto I answered them in this maner. Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceaueth yowe? And howe all that he teacheth yow is false? Yowe see how in so long a tyme fence they are deade, they haue not yet taken away this *Maizium* and *Iucca* which is nowe putrified and woorth nothyng, and not lyke to bee fowen in heauen. To this the kyng replied, sayinge. In that they haue not yet taken it away nor fowen it in heauen, the cause is that they chaunced to fynde enowgh there, by reason wherof they had no neade of this. To this erreure manye thynges were sayde which seemed of lyttle force to remoue hym from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occupied of the deuyll, whom they paynt of the selfe same forme and coloure as he appereth vnto theym in dyuers shapes and formes. They make also Images of golde, copper, and woodde, to the same similitudes in terrible shapes and so variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of faynte Mychaell th[e]archangell or in anye other place where they paynt them of most horrible port[er]iture. Lykewyfe when the deuyll greatly intendeth to feare theym, he threteneth to fende them great tempestes which they caule *Furacanas* or *Haurachanas*, and are so vehement that they ouerthrowe many howfes and great trees. And I haue sene in montaynes full of many and greate trees, that for the space of three quarters of a league the mountayne hathe byn subuerted and the trees ouerthrowen and plucked owte of the earth with the rootes: a thyng doubtelesse so fearefull and terrible to behold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the deuell. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in al places where the holy sacrament is referued, the fayd tempestes are no more so outragious, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

¶ Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled
Torrída zona or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons
of the yeare.



He landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwyfe temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therefore fuche fleshe or fyshe as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preferued from putrefaction except it be roasted, foddren, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in deede. And therefore not without cause the auncient autours were of opinion that the burnt lyne or *Torrída zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shulde be vnhabitable by reason the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remainyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficiall parte therof to the depth of a mans heyght, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and spreade their rootes, and no dieper. Extendyng the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do their braunches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the gronde then I haue sayde, bycause that beneth the depth of the said space of a mans heyght, the earth is verry hotte, the vpper parte beinge temperate and verry moyste aswell by reafon of th[e]aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vppon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seasons of the yeare, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, sprynges and marysshes, wherby the myghtie and supreme lorde which made these landes, hath moste prudently prouyded for the perferuation of the same.

R. E. As touchyng this poynnt whiche was vnknownen to the owlde wryters, and without confideration wherof reafon can not perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, I haue thought good for the better manifestyng of this secrete woork of nature, to note owte of Cardanus his booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theyr course toward the South as to the lowest part of the earth. He wryteth therefore as foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantitie then the earth and only in maner in the superficiall parte therof, that place might bee lefte for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his couldnesse myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And bicause this generation of luyng creatures, was only necessary on the superficiall partes of the earth in comparifon to the hole, therefore was the water made to occupie onely the superficiall parte, in the which, metals, plantes, beastes, and fyfshes shulde bee nuryshed. And bycause there was great perell least it shulde be to much consumed by the ayer and heate of the soonne, continuall mouing was ioyned to it, wherby it gathereth couldnes and is preferued from fodeyne resolution. For fuche waters as do not moue, doo soone putrifie, and are easely resolued into ayer. By reafon wherof nature prouyded for the generation of water in coulde places, as vnder the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the Equinoctiall shulde otherwise for lacke of moyster haue bin to much burned and scorched, nature also prouyded that that parte of the earth shulde bee lowest, by reafon whereof all waters haue theyr course towarde the South to mitigate with moyster th[e]extremite of heate which otherwise shulde haue byn intollerable in that clyme. And by this reafon, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte. albeit it haue his originall and sprynge, owte of the mountaynes of the mone cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet runnyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall cyrcle, it disparteth through owte the burnt line of *Torrída zona*, and by the same vyolent course fauleth into owre sea nere vnto the cite of Alexandria. It was necessary therfore that the greatest parte of the coulde and moyst element shulde haue recourse thither and confyst there, whereas was the greatest necessitie therof to temper the heate of the soonne by moystynge and coolynge the earthe and the ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most prudent nature prouyded for the securitie and preferuation of the places lyeing betwene bothe th[e]extremities of heate and colde, as betwene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowyng euer one wayes and keyng one course, no regions can be drowned by fluddes: which thyng they well obserue that delyuer fieldes from inundations or ouerflowynges, and that take in hande to drye vp marysshes. If therfore waters had not theyr course and faul towarde places lowe or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee ouerflowne as a marrysshe. And that the most declynyng parte shulde bee towarde the South, and sumwhat hygher about the poles, the cause is aswell the consumyng heate of the soonne in the Southe partes, as the preferuyng coulde of the hygh mountaynes nere to the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate consumeth and wasteth as coulde gathereth and preferueth. And for this cause that parte of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the middest furthest from the poles. And therfore it was not conuenient that the soonne shuld haue his course on euery fyde, neither to the poles. For if it weare caryed alyke to euery parte throughowt the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equall: and by that reafon shulde it euer bee altogether dryed, or elles all ouerflowed with water. But where as this coulde not suffice to the free course of ryuers for the often intercoure of higher places lyeing in the waye, whereby ouerflowynges and stayes of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouydent nature hath gyuen this priuileage to water that it maye so much ascende as it hath descended: that by this meanes passyng ouer mountaynes and hylles, it maye at the length bee caryed into the sea. etc. Hytherto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie.

There are also many roughe and hygh mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleafaunt, cleare and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient wryters hauyng no certeyne knowlege, affirmed

184

185

the said burnt lyne or *Torrída zcna*, or Equinoctial to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of fyght and feelyng as by most certeine fenfes, hauyng liued many yeares in these regions, by reason wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to fuche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the sytuacion of these regyons, yowe shall vnderstande that the coaste of the Northe sea, beyng in the gyxte degree and a halfe, and in the feuenth, and from fyxe and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a smaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth moste towarde the East, is the cape of saincte Augustine which is in the eight degree. So that the said goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundreth and twentie to a hundreth and thirtie leaques and three quarters of a leaque after th[e]acompte of. xvii. leaques and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lyttle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forsayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any dyfference betwene them by reason of this smaule distance from the Equinoctial, it is so lyttle, that in. xxiiii. houres makynge a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men and fuche as vnderstande the sphere. From henfe the North starre is seene very lowe And when the starres which are cauled the wardens of the north starre, are vnder the chariotte, it can not bee seene, bycaufe it is vnder the horifontal. And whereas I haue sayde beefore that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deede. For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateste coulde of froste and rayne is in December and January: And the greateste heate of fommer aboute saynt Iohannes daye at mydfommer or in the moneth of Iuly. But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the fommer and tyme of greatest drowght and withowt rayne, is at Chrystmas and a moneth before and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth most, is about midfommer and a moneth before and a moneth after. And this seafon whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Christmas then at other seafons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the foonne is hyd from theyr fyghtes by reason of cloudes and rayne more then at other tymes. Yet forasmuch as for the moste parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they sumwhat shynke and feele a lyttle coulde duryng the tyme of the said moist and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the least fuche coulde as hath any sensible sharpenes.

¶ *Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. etc.*



Any other thynges myght be sayde, and much differyng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of fuche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste woorthy to be noted, I wyll fyrste speake of certeyne lyttle and troubelous beastes whiche maye seeme to bee engendered of nature to molest and vexe menne, to shewe them and gyue them to vnderstand howe smaule and vyle a thyng may offende and disquiete them, to th[e]ende that they maye remember the pryncipall ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr saluation by the waye whiche is open to all Christian men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnderstandyng. And although the thynges wherof wee entende nowe to speake may seeme vyle and lyttle to bee esteemed, yet are they woorthy to bee noted and confydered to vnderstand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therefore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the which a swell the Christians as Indians doo trauel, there are such maryshes and waters in the way that they are sayne to go without breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reason wherof, certeyne smaule beastes or woormes (which they caule *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue fast to theyr legges. These wormes are as little as the pouder of beaten salt: And cleaue so fast that they can by no meanes be taken away except the place bee noynted with oyle. And after that the legges bee noynted awchyle with oyle, or the other partes where these lyttle tykes are fastened, they serape the place with a knyfe and fo take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them and burne them with fyer, and abyde great peynes in takynge them away by this meanes. Of other lyttle beastes which trouble men and are

engende[red] in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I saye that the Christian men which trauell into these partes, haue them but seldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this also very seldome. For passynge by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse makethe difference of faylynge by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magistral*, (that is south west) which is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a lyttle way folowing owre vyage by the west, but that all the lyfe which the Christians cary with them, or are engendered in theyr heades or other places of theyr bodies, dye and vtterlye consume by lyttle and lyttle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lyttle chyldren in those partes aswel amonge the chyldren of the Christians which are borne there, as also amonge the natural Indians who haue theym commonly in theyr heades and sumtymes in other partes of theyr bodies, and especially they of the prouince of *Cueua*, which is a region conteynyng more then a hundreth leaques in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dreffe and clense one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the moste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that owre men can not lightly atteyne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to bee confydered. And this is how the Christian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthynes of India, aswell in theyr heades as the reste of theyr bodies, yet when they returne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee sayde before that the lyfe dyed and forfoke them, suddenly in theyr repassynge by the same clyme (as though the lyfe had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde theym for the space of certeyne dayes although they change theyr shertes two or three tymes in a day. These lyfe are at the fyrste as lyttle as nyttes, and growe by lyttle and lyttle vntyl they bee of the byggenesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauynge nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this vyage.

186

Befyde these woormes and vermyn wherof we haue spoken, there is another lyttle mischeuous woorme, whiche we may number amonge the kyndes of fleas. This pestilence the Indians caule *Nigua*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perfeth the fleshe of a man, and so launfeth or cutteth the same (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee seene nor taken) that frome fume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fiere vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynte the place with oyle and scrape it with a rasoure.

Nigua.

In the firme lande in golden Castyle or *Beragua*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are bytten of them, dye in short space. For fewe lyue to the fourth daye except present remedy. Of these, some are of a lesse kind then other: And haue theyr tayle sumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to assaile men. And for this cause, some caule this kynde of vipers *Tyro*. Theyr bytyng is most venomous, and for the moste parte incurable. One of theym chaunced to byte an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whome I caused the surgians to mynister theyr ordinarye cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelowe water, so that shee died the thyrday for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of th[e]age of. xiiii. yeares and spoke the Spanysh toonge as yf shee had byn borne in Castyle. Shee sayde that the vyper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two spannes longe or lyttle lesse. And that to byte her shee lepte in the ayer for the space of more then fyxe spaces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible persons.

Vipers.

I haue also seene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very smaule and of feuen or eyght foote longe. These are so redde that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnynge cooles, and in the day seeme as redde as bludde. These are also venomous, but not so much as the vipers. There are other much lesse and shorter and blacker. These coome owt of the ryuers and wander sumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykwyse venomous. There are also other adders of a russet coloure. These are sumwhat bygger then the vipers, and are hurtful and venomous. There are lykewyse an other sorte of manye coloures and very longe. Of these I sawe one in the yeare of Christ 1515. in the Iland of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the sea costes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was slayne, I measured her and founde her to be more then. xx. foote longe, and sumwhat more then a mans fyft in byggenes. And although she hadde three or foure deadely woundes with a sworde, yet dyed shee not nor stoonke the same daye, in so much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are also in the maryshes and desertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyfertes, dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of serpentis wherof I entende not here to speake much, bycause I haue more particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the Weste Indydes.

Adders.

There are also spiders of marueylous bygnesse. And I haue seene summe with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended euery waye. And I ones sawe one of suche bygnesse, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a sparowe, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke russet coloure, with eyes greater then the eies of a sparow. They are venomous and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also scorpions and dyuers other suche venomous woormes. Wherby we maye see, that where as natural causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuitie, they cease not to engender and brynge forth the bothe good and badde accordynge to the disposytion of the matter, whiche they also doo partlye dispose as the phylosophers affyrme.

Dragons.

Spiders.

187

Furthermore in the fyrme lande, there are manye toades beynge very noyous and hurteful by reason of their great multitude. They are not venemous. They are feene in greate aboundance in *Dariena* where they are fo bygge that when they dye in the tyme of drouth, the bones of fum of them (and especially the rybbes) are of fuche greatnesse that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of fumme other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters dyminishe and the moysture confumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue fayde) they also confume therwith vntyll the yeare nexte folowing when the rayne and moysture increafe, at whiche tyme they are feene ageyne. Neuerthelesse, at this present, there is no fuch quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reason that as the land is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and shrubbes as also by the pasture of kine, horses, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson diminissheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh more holsome and pleafaunt. These toades synge after three or foure fortes. For fumme of them synge pleafauntly: other, lyke owres of Spayne. Summe also whistle: and other fumme make an other maner of noyfe. They are lykewyse of dyuers colours: as fumme greene, fumme ruffette or grey, and fumme almost blacke. But of all fortes, they are great, and fylthye, and noyous by reason of their great multitude: yet are they not venemous as I haue fayde.

Crabbes.

There are also a straunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome fourth of certeyne holes of the earth that they them felues make. The head and bodye of these, make one rounde thing muche lyke vnto the hooche of a fawkon: hauynge foure feete comyng owt of the one fyde and as many owt of the other. They haue also two mouthes like vnto a paire of finaule pinfers, the one bygger then the other, wherwith they byte, but do no great hurte bycaufe they are not venemous. Their skyn and bodye is finoothe and thynne as is the skynne of a man, fauyng that it is sumwhat harder. Their colour is ruffette or white, or blewe, and walke fydelonge. They are very good to bee eaten: In so muche that the Christians traauyng by the fyrme lande, haue byn greatly nurysshed by them bycaufe they are founde in maner euery where. In shape and forme, they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the synge Cancer, and like vnto those which are found in Spaine in *Andalusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber* where it entereth into the sea, and in the sea coastes therabout, fauyng that these are of the water and the other of the lande. They are sumtymes hurtefull, so that they that cate of them dye. But this chaunceth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibale archers poyson their arrowes wherof I wyll speake hereafter. And for this cause the Christians take hede howe they eate of these crabbes if they synde them neare vnto the fayd apple trees.

Serpentes cauled
Iuanni.

Furthermore in these Indies, aswell in the fyrme lande as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of ferpentes, which they caule. Y. V. *anas*, which fumme caule *Iuannas*. These are terrible and fearefull to fyght, and yet not hurtefull. They are very delicate to bee eaten, and it is not yet knowen whether they be beastes of the lande or fyshes, bycaufe they lyue in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande. They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then connies and in fumme places bygger then otters, with tayles lyke lifartes or eutes. Their skynne is spotted, and of the same kynd of smothnesse or barenesse, although of dyuers colours. Vpon the ridge of their backes, they haue many long prickes. Theyr teethe are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth. Their throtes are longe and large, reachynge from their beardes to their breastes, of the lyke skynne to the resydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue no voyce or make any noyfe or crye although they bee kept tyde to the foote of a cheste or any other thyng for the space of. xx. or. xxv. dayes without any thyng to eate or drynke, excepte they gyue them nowe and then a lyttle of the breade of *Cazabbi*, or fumme fuch other thyng. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans synger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and fuche as can not grauple or take holde of any thyng. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of their horrible shape excepte fuche as haue byn accustomed to the beastes of these regyons, whiche are more horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleshe is of much better taste then the fleshe of connyes and more holsome. For it hurteth none but onely fuch as haue had the frenshe poxe. In so much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmitie, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of these *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by experience.

188

Byrdes.

There are founde in the fyrme lande certeyne byrdes so lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest synger of a mans hande: and yet is the bare body without the fethers not passe halfe so bygge. This byrde, befyde her lyttlenes, is of fuch velocitie and swyftnes in flying that who so feeth her sleing in the ayer, can not se her flap or beate her winges after any other fort then do the dorres or humble bees or betels: so that there is no man that feeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other then a dorre. They make their nestes accordyng to the proportion of their bignes. And I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more then. ii. *Tomini*, which are in poise. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which she shulde haue wayed sumwhat lesse. And doubt lesse when I consider the fynnesse of the clawes and feete of these birdes, I knowe not whervnto I may

A very lyttle
byrde.

better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lymmers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of churche bookes and other bookes of deuine fernice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yelowe and greene beside other variable colours. Their beake is verye longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a sowyng nedle. They are very hardye: so that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nestes, they flye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, comnyng, goynge, and retournynge with such swyftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not seene it. And certainly these byrdes are so lyttle, that I durst not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue seene them as wel as I, can beare witness of my saying. They make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotten wherof there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr purpose. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beastes of these Indies, bycause they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to speake muche heare, bycause I haue spoken more largely hereof in my generall hystorye of the Indydes.

There is an other kynde of beastes seene in the firme land which seemed very straunge and marueilous to the Chrystian men to beholde, and muche differynge from all other beastes which haue byn seene in other partes of the worlde. These beastes are cauled *Bardati*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the rest of theyr bodies couered onely with a skyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horse or the chekered skynne of a lyfarte or Crocodyle, of coloure betwene whyte and ruffet, inclynnyng somewhat more to whyte. This beast, is of forme and shap much lyke to a barbed horse with his barbes and flankettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke forte as in a barbed courser. They are of the bygnes of one of these common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens very deepe and the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verye excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and sum also killed with crofbowes. They are lykewise taken often tymes when the husband men burne the stubble in sowyng time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beastes. I haue often times eaten of their fleshe which semeth to me of better tast then kyddes fleshe, and holsome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer byn seene in these partes of the woorld where the first barbed horses had their original, no man wold iudge but that the forme and fasshion of the coperture of horses furnished for the warres was fyrste deuysed by the fyght of these beastes.

There is also in the firme lande an other beaste cauled *Orso Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beaste in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the same makyng faue that he hath a much longer snout and is of euyll fyght. They are often tymes taken only with staues without any other weapon, and are not hurtful. They are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally armed although they byte somewhat. They are founde for the moste parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundaunce of antes. For in these regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lyttle and blacke, in the fyeldes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by th[e] instinct of nature these antes separate them selues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of these beares: The whiche bycause they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to fiede of these antes, cause them to coomme owt of the wooddes to hunte for them. These antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heyght of a man, or somewhat more or lesse, and as bygge as a great chest, and sumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard as a stone: So that they seeme as though they were stones set vp to lymytte th[e] endes and confines of certeyne landes. Within these hyllockes made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lyttle antes, the which may bee gathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when it is sumtymes moysted by rayne and then dryed ageyne by the heate of the soonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smaule rytes as lyttle and subtile as the edge of a knyfe. And it semeth that nature hath gyuen sence to these Antes to fynde such a matter of earth wherwith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pauement made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and caused sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of suche hardenes as if I had not seene I could not haue beleued: In so muche that they could scarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So stronge fortresses doo these lyttle beastes make for theyr sauegarde ageynst theyr aduerfarie the beare, who is chiefly nuryshed by them, and gyuen them as an enemye, accordyng to the common prouerbe which sayth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimanchi il suo Bargello*: That is, there is no man so free that hath not his persecutour or pryue enemye. And here when I consyder the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such lyttle beastes, he sayth thus. Why doo we maruayle at the towrebearyng shoulers of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many fences and suche industry in suche lyttle boddies? where is hearyng, finellyng, seeinge, and feelyng, ye, where are the vaynes and arteries (without which no beaste can lyue or moue) in these so lyttle boddies whereof sume are so smaule that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be seene of our

Beastes.

Bardati.

189

Beares.

Antes.

190

A strange beast
whiche seemeth a
kynd of
Chameleon.

eyes, what shall we then faye of the partes of the fame? Yet euen amonge these are there many of such fagacitie and industrye as the lyke is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, etc. But to returne to the hystorie. This enimie which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle beastes, vfeth this maner to assayle them. When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortresse, he putteth his toonge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue spoken being as subtyle as the edge of a swoorde, and there with continuall lyckynge, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continual lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in such fort by lyttle and lyttle, that at the length he easely putteth in his toonge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much disproportionate to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free passage for his toonge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and owt at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it reste a good space vntyl a great quantitie of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moyster) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse thereof: at which tyme he suddely draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the same practife immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as many as hym lysteth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge. The fleshe of this beaste, is fylthy and vnfaury. But by reason of th[e] extreme shyftes and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst comynge into these partes, they were enforced to proue al thynges and so fel to th[e] eatyng of these beastes. But when they had founde more delicate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue th[e] apperaunce of the place of their enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at so lyttle a hole that it could hardely be founde yf certeyne of them were not seene to passe in and owt. But by this way the beares coude haue no such poure to hurte them as aboue at the fayde ryftes as I haue fayde. There is an other strange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the sloweste beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouynge that it canne scarfely go fyftie pases in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very straunge to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are abowte two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse. But when they are very younge, they are sumewhat more grosse then longe. They haue foure subtyle fiete, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. Yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiete able to fusteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reason wherof and by the heauynesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellyes on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streyght and all equal lyke the pestle of a mortar, which is altogyther equall euen vnto the toppe without makinge any proportion or similitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verye rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche maketh theyr faces seeme sumwhat more longe then large. They haue smaule eyes and rounde: And nostrylles lyke vnto munkeys. They haue lyttle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one fyde to an other as though they were astonysshed. Theyr chiefe desyre and delyte is to cleaue and flycke faste vnto trees or some other thyng whereby they may clyme alofte. And therefore for the moste parte, these beastes are founde vpon trees wherunto cleauynge fast, they mounte vp by lyttle and lyttle, sleynge them selues by theyr longe clawes. The coloure of theyr heare, is betwene ruffet and whyte, and of the proper coloure of the heare of a wefell. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much dyfferynge frome other beastes: for they syng onely in the nyght: And that continually frome tyme to tyme syngynge euer syxe notes one hygher then an other, so faulyng with the same that the fyrste note is the hyghest and the other in a baser tewne as yf a man shuld say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt*. So this beaft sayth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha*. And doubtelesse, it seemeth vnto me, that as I haue fayde in the chapter of the beaste cauled *Bardati*, that those beastes might bee th[e] originall and document to imbarbe horses, euen so the fyrste inuenture of musycke myght seeme by the hearynge of this beaft to haue the fyrst principles of that scyence rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But nowe to returne to the hystorie: I fay that in a shorte space after this beaste hath foonge and hath paused a whyle, she returneth ageyne to the selfe same songe, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reason wherof and also bycause of her euyll fyght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaste and the frende of darkenesse. Sumtymes the Christian menne fynde these beastes and brynge theym home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all abowte with theyr naturall slownesse, in so much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyll moue any faster then theyr natural and accustomed pafe. And yf they fynde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mounte to the toppe of the hyghest braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my selfe haue kepte theym in my house, I coude neuer perceaue other but that they lyue onely of ayer. And of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, bycause they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth most: whereby may bee confydered that they take moste pleasure in the ayer. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauyng very lyttle mouthes. They are not venomous or noyous any way: but altogyther brutishe and vtterly vnprofitable and without commoditie yet knowen to

men, fauyng onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate th[e] infinite poure of god, who delyteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wifedome and maiestie so farre to excede the capacitie of mans vnderstandyng.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much bygger then geefe. The greatest parte of theyr fethers are of ruffet coloure, and in some partes yelowe. Their bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length and verye large neare to the heade, and growyng smaule towards the poynte. They haue greate and large throtes: And are much lyke to a foule which I sawe in Flaunders in Bruffelles in yowre maiesties pallaice which the Flemynge caule Haina. And I remember that when yowr maiestie dynd one day in yowre great haule there was brought to yowre maiesties prefence a chauderne of water with certeyne fyshes alyue, which the sayde foule did eate vp hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule of the sea bycause shee had fiere lyke foules of the water as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are likewyse foules of the sea: and of such greatnesse that I haue seene a hole cote of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama* in the yeare 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there passeth and flyeth a greate multitude of these *Alcatrazi* beinge a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Yowre maiestie shall therefore vnderstande that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* ryseth and fauleth two leagues and more from fyxe houres to fyxe houres: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryueth so neare to the houfes of *Panama* as doth owre sea (cauled *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona or in Naples. And when the sayd increasyng of the sea commeth, there commeth also therewith such a multitude of the smaule fyshes cauled fardynes, that it is so marueylous a thyng to beholde, that no man wolde beleue it that hath not seene it. In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kyng of that land at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was commaunded by yowre maiesties gouernour, to bryng ordynaryly three canoas or barkes full of the sayde fardynes and to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were afterwarde by the ruler of the citie diuyded amonge the Christian men without any coste or charge to any of them. In so much that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this presente in *Toledo* or more, and had none other thyng to lyue by, they myght haue byn sufficiently susteyned by these fardynes, byfyde th[e]ouerplus which shulde haue remayned. But to returne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the fardynes with the same, euen so lykewyse coome the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith: and flye continually ouer it in suche a multytude, that they appeare to couer th[e]upper parte or floure of the water. And thus continue in mountyng and faulyng from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer duryng all the tyme of theyr fyshyng. And as soone as they haue taken any of these fardynes, they flye about the water and eate them incontinently, and suddelynly returne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without ceasyng. In lyke maner when the sea fauleth, they folowe there fyshyng as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Coda inforcata*, (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before. And as soone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the fardynes, suddelynly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so persecuteth her, that shee causeth her to let faule the fardynes which shee hath in her mouth. The which as soone as they are faulne, and before they yet touch the water, the *Coda inforcata* catcheth them euen in the faule, in suche sorte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is such, that the Chrystian menne are accustomed to send to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama*, with their boates or barkes to take these *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with flaes as they wyll, vntyll they haue therewith laden their barkes or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not bee eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greafe for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it seemeth that the number of them that fysh for fardynes doo dayly increase.

There are other foules cauled *Passere sempie*: that is, simple sparowes. These are sumwhat lesse then femewes: and haue theyr fiere lyke vnto great malardes: And stande in the water sumtymes. And when the shyppes sayle fyftie or a hundred leagues abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdyng the shyppes commyng towards them, breake their flyght and faule downe vpon the sayle yarges, mastes, and cables therof. And are so simple and folysh that they tary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therefore cauled of the maryners simple sparowes. They are blacke, and vppon their blacke, haue theyr heade and shoulders of fethers of a darke ruffet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, although the mariners haue sumtimes bin enforced to eate them.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyrme lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, bycause they haue very great beakes in respecte of the lyttlenesse of theyr boddies: For theyr beakes are very heauy and waye

191
Foules, and byrdes.
Alcatraz.

Panama.

Passere sempie.
192

Picuti.

more then they hole boddies byfyde. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater busshment of fethers, in so much that they fethers are more then their boddies. Their fethers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Their beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe toward the earthe, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the heade. Their tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a great hyffynge. They make holes in trees with their beakes, in the which they make their nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue seene, aswel for their toonges (which are quilles as I haue sayde) as also for the strangeness of their fyght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of their boddies. There are no byrdes founde that proude better for the safegarde of their younge in the tyme of their breedynge to bee withoute daunger of wylde cattes that they enter not into their nestes to destroye their egges or younge. And this aswell by the straunge maner of buyldyng their nestes, as also by their owne defence. And therefore when they perceau that the cattes approche toward them, they enter into their nestes: and holdyng their beakes toward the th[e]nterance of the same, stande at their defence, and so vex the cattes that they cause them to leaue their enterpryse.

Folysse
sparowes.

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is foolles. Wheras neuerthelesse there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and crafte in defendyng her younge from perell. These byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then owre thruffhes. They haue certeyne whyte fethers in their neckes, and the lyke fagacitie or sharpenes of fenfe as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzuole*. They seldome tymes light vpon the earth. They make their nestes in trees separated from other, bycause the wylde cattes (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendyng to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrste to coome downe to drynke at suche tymes as they are sure not to bee molested. And for this cause doo not these byrdes make their nestes but in trees farre diuyded from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lyttle sackes, large at the bottome, and growyng narrower and narrower toward the mouth whereby they are fastened: hauyng the hole wher at they enter into the sacke, of such byggenes as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to th[e]ende that the cattes maye not deuoure their younge yf they chaunce to mounte vpon the trees where they haue their nestes, they vse an other crafte, which is, to make their nestes in thicke braunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and stronge thorns implicate and fet in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattes can by no meanes put their legges into the hole of the neste to take owte younge byrdes, aswel for the sharpenes of the thornes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge byrdes rest without daunger of their enemye. For sum of their nestes beyng three or foure spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vse also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of their nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of their owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, and reioyse in the company of their owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule stares, or elles to th[e]intent that yf it shoulde so chaunce that the cattes shulde clyme the trees where they make their nestes, they might bee a greater company to resyste and molest the cattes, at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wherby the cattes are put to flyght.

193

Gazzuole.

Furthermore, in the firme land, and in the Ilandes, there are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gazzuole*, somewhat lyke vnto those which we caule woodwauls, or woodpeckes, beinge lesse then owrs of Spayne. These are altogether blacke, and go hoppyng and leapyng. Their beakes are also blacke and of the same fasshyon as are the poppingiays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are somewhat bygger then stares.

Pintadelli

There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italyans caule *Fringuelli*: and are of feuen coloures. These byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer woonte to make their nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers or the sea, where the braunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a lyttle weyght they maye bowe downe to the water. Their nestes are made so neare the toppes of the braunches that when the cattes coome theron, the braunches bende toward the water, and the cattes turne backe ageyne for feare of faulyng. For althrough no beaste in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the moste parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swimme, this catte hath no maner of apteness thereunto, and is therefore soone drowned or strangeled in the water, and by a pryue sense of nature feareth the daunger which he can not escape. These byrdes make their nestes in suche forte, that althrough they bee weete and fylled with water, yet doo they so suddenly ryse vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby hurte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whiche synge maruelously with great melodie and dyfference in syngyng. These byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are altogether yelowe, and sum other of so excellent, delectable, and hyghe a coloure as it weare a rubye. Other are also of dyuers and variable coloures: sum of fewe coloures, and other sume all of one coloure: beinge all so

fayre and bewtifull, that in bryghtnesse and shynynge they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and sprynges of dyuers fortes.

Dyuers other fortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles, and fuche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of fuche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to descrybe them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requysite to make any further mention of the fame.

Great foules.

¶ Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the self fame greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* grow owte of the trunckes of the tree as doo the fyngers owte of the hande, wreathyng them felues one within an other and so spreadynge abrode. These trees are hygh: and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chimán*. These date trees brynge furth a frute after this forte. Beinge altogyther vnite as it groweth on the

Cocus.

tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And from the superficiall parte to the myddeft which is the frute, it is inuolued and couered with many webbes much lyke vnto those hyrdes of towe whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towe or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure fortes, and cordes for the sayles of shyppes. But in these Indies of yowr maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that may be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the gossampine trees. The frute which is in the myddeft of the sayde towe, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans fyfle, and sumtymes twyfe as bygge and more. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thyng sumwhat more longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleaueth faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of coornel, of the thyckenesse of halfe a fynger or of the least fynger of the hande: And is verry whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasaunt. When this frute is chewed, there remayne certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. Yet if it bee swalowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For although that after the iewfe or moysture bee gonne downe the throte before the sayde crummes bee swalowed, the reste whiche is eaten seeme sumwhat sharpe or sower, yet doth it not so greatly offende the taste so as to bee caste away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the sayde carnositie and frute: But fyrste beatynge it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substaunce: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it aswell satysfied as thowghe it had byn delyted with many delycate dysshes. But to proceade further, yowre maiestie shall vnderstand, that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddeft of the sayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a moste cleare and excellent water, in such quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or lesse accordynge to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*. The which water fuerly, is the moste substantiall, excellent and precious to be droonke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it seemeth that frume the sole of the foote to the crowne of the headde, there is no parte of the boddie but that feelethe great comfort therby: as it is doubtlesse one of the most excellent thynges that may be tasted vpon the earth, and fuche as I am not able by wrytynge or toonge to expresse. And to proceade yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell therof, the vessell remayneth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynynge towarde blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no lesse delicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne trowbeled with the disease cauled the fretinge of the guttes, say that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that disease: And that it breakethe the stone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboute them two other naturall holes, which altogyther, doo represente the giesture and fygure of the cattes cauled *Mammone*, that is, monkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to heale fretyng of the guttes, that Plinie descrybeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

194

I haue seene one of these fruites opened, the whiche when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was harde shogge therein as it were in a bottle: but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled into a salte substaunce.

Great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of fuche byggenesse that I dare not speake therof but in place where I haue so many wytnesses which haue seene the same as wel as I. I say therefore, that a leaque from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, there passeth a ryuer very large and diepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree so trauerfinge the same that it was in the fleade of a brydge, the which I my selfe with dyuers other that are at this present in yowre maiesties courte, haue often tymes passed ouer. And forasmuch as the sayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was so shronke downewarde and partely covered with water that none could passe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. th[e] official of Iustice in that citie at yowre maiesties appoyntemente, caused an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauerfed the ryuer and reached more then fyftie foote ouer the further syde. This tree was exceedynge greate, and rested aboute the water more then twoo cubytes. In the faule, it cast downe all fuche other trees as were within the reache therof: And discouered certeyne vynes whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunte taste, that they satiffyed more then fyftie persons whiche ate theyr fylle therof. This tree in the thyckest parte therof, was more then syxtene spannes thicke: And was neuerthelesse but lyttle in respect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates therof (which they caule *Canoas*,) of such byggenesse, beinge all of one hole tree, that fume conteyne a hundreth men, fume a hundreth and thirtie, and fume more, hauynge neuerthelesse fuche voyde space within the same, that there is lefte sufficiente roome to passe to and fro through owte all the *Canoa*. Sum of these are so large byfyde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with twoo sayles as with the master sayle and the trinkette which they make of verye good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kynge wherof rebellynge from th[e] obedience of yowre maiestie, was persued by me and taken prysoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboute the earth in forme of a tryangle or triuette: so that betwene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of twentie foote betwene euery foote. And this of such heygth aboute the earthe, that a laden carte of those wherewith they are accustomed to brynge home corne in the tyme of haruest in the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue passed through euery of those particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunk of the tree, the open places of the dyuisions betwene these three feete, were of such heygth from the grounde, that a footeman with a iauelyn was not able to reache to the place where the sayde feete ioyned togyther in the trunk or body of the tree which grewe of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it spredde in branches, which it did not before it exceeded in heygth the towre of saynt Romane in the citie of Toledo: from whiche heygth and vpwarde, it sprede very greate and stronge branches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my selfe was one. And when I was ascended to the place where it begunne to sprede the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate cuntrye of fuche trees towarde the prouince of *Abrayme*. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certeyne *Befuchi* (wherof I haue spoken before) which grewe wreathed aboute the tree in such forte that they seemed to make a scalyng ladder. Euery of the foresayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thyckenesse. And where they ioyned al togyther aboute in the trunk or boddye of the tree, the principall trunk was more then fortie and fyue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue now declared, was seene of all the company that was there with me when (as I haue sayde before) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* prysoner in the yeare 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee spoken as touchynge this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers fortes and dyfference, as sweete Ceder trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which sum are so heauy that they can not flote aboute the water but synke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchynge all whiche thynges I haue wrytten more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

195

A maruelous tree.

Kyndlyng of fyre without fyre.

And forasmuch as at this present I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I passe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde, and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a piece of woodde of two spannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leasle fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a stronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpose. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other pieces of woodde of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast togyther one with an other as close as two fyngers ioyned. In the myddest or betwene these, they put the poynt of the fyrste lyttle staffe made of harde and stronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two pieces of woodde which lye bounde togyther vppon the earthe, which by that vncessant rubbyng and chafynge, are in short space kyndeled and take fyre.

I haue also thought good here to speake sumwhat of such thynges as coomme to my remembraunce of

certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and fumetyme also the lyke haue bynne seene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrified tronkes which haue lyne so longe rottyng on the earth that they are verye whyte and shyne in the nyght lyke burnyng fyre brandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince when case so requyreth that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in fuche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche gudgethe the waye, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, taketh a lyttle flarre of the sayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangynge behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other flarre behynde hym, by the shynynge whereof the thyrde foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this meanes none are losse or stragle owte of the way. And forasmuche as this lyght is not seene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Chrystians bycause they are not thereby disclofed before they inuade theyr enemies.

Furthermore as touchynge the natures of trees, one particular thyng seemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hystorie where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which contynewe euer greene and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the baye tree, the Ceder, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with such other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not paste fyue or fyxe. To this purpose, I saye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde two trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme. For although I haue diligently searched to knowe the trewth hereof, yet haue I not seene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of theym which we haue brought owt of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Cassia*, which loseth his leaues and hath a greater thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India sprede theyr rootes no dieper in the earthe then the depth of a mans heyght or sumewhat more, not descending any further into the ground by reason of the greate heate which is found beneth that depth, yet dooth *Cassia* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Phylosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radycall moyster to fuche thynges as drawe theyr nuryshment therof, as fat and vnctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast and firme moysture to fuche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that fuche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and wateryshthe moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte which is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plante in all these parties.

Putrified woodde
shynynge in the
nyght.

196

*Plinie.*Trees which
continue euer
greene.*Cassia.*

A secrete thyng.

Radycall
moysture.

¶ Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before to speake of that whereof I intende nowe to entreate of, reedes or canes, to th[e]intente that I wolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of them selues woorthy to bee particularly obserued. So it is therefore, that in the firme land there are many fortes of reedes, so that in many places they make theyr howses therof, couerynge them with the toppes of the same, and makynge their wauls of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde before. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one so greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and three spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in so much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lyttle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyners for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde which fuerly is marueylous, beyng lyttle bygger then a Iauelen, the canes whereof are longer then twoo spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie pases, and fumetymes also twoo or three leaques. They growe in maner in all prouynces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees wherunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbrase and descende ageyne downe to the earth. Their canes are full of moste cleare water without any maner of taft or fauoure eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And fuche as yf it were taken owte of the fressheste sprynge in the worlde. Nor yet is it knowen that euer it hurte any that droonke therof. For it hath ostentymes so chaunced that as the Chrysten men haue trauayled in these regions in desolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger to dye for thyrste, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the sayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue droonke a great quantitie without any hurte thereof enfewynge. Therefore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and cary as many of them ful of water as may suffice for one dayes iornay. And sumtyme they cary so many, that they take for euery man two or three quartes of water which may serue them for many dayes bycause it doth not corrupte, but remayneth styll fresshe and good.

197

Platani.

There are also certeine plantes which the Christians caul *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunke as the knee of a man or more. Frome the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then three spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remayneth hole in the myddefl. In the myddefle of this plant in the hygheft parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with fortie or fyftie Platans abowt it, euery of them beinge a spanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the smaule, or more or lesse accordynge to the goodnesse of the foyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thicke, and easy to bee broken: being within altogether full of a substaunce lyke vnto the marye of the bone of an oxe as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the same. This cluster owght to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the Platans begynne to appere yelow. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houfes where all the cluster waxeth ripe with his Platans. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beyng roasted or stewed in an ouen in a clofe pot or fum fuche other thyng, are of pleasaunte taste muche lyke the conferue of hony. They putrisie not on the sea so foone as some other frutes do: but continue fyfteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered sumwhat greene. They seeme more delycate on the sea then on the lande, not for that they any thinge increase in goodnesse on the sea, but bycause that whereas on the sea other thynges are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, those meates seeme of beste taste which satisfie present necessitie. This troonke or sprygge whiche bryngeth foorth the fayde cluster is a hole yeare in growyng and bryngyng foorth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put foorth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue sprygges as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in bryngyng foorth of clusters with frutes lykewyse at theyr tyme, and also in bryngyng foorth other and many sprygges as is fayde befoore. From the which sprygges or trunkes, as foone as the cluster of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to drye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyt. They are so many and doo so maruelously increate and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceedyng moyste. In so much that when they are plucked vp from the place where they grow, there issheweth forth a great quantitie of water as well owte of the plante as owte of the place where it grewe: In such sorte that all the moysture of the earth farre abowte, myght seeme to bee gathered togyther abowte the trunke or blocke of the fayde plante: with the frutes whereof, the antes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it sumetyme so chaunceth that men are inforced to take away the Platans frome theyr possession. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

Figges.

Tunas.

There is also an other kynd of wyld plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not seene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, although they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. These they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thistle full of thornes, and bryng foorth a frute muche lyke vnto great fygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hyghe coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a fygge. They are of good taste: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woorke a straunge effecte in suche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cause his vrine to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thyng chaunced once to my selfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and sawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great suspition of my lyfe, beinge so astonysht for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to me vpon sum other cause. In so muche that surely my imagination myght haue doone me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd comforte me immediatly, declaryng the cause therof as they knewe by experience beinge auncient inhabitours in those regions.

198

Bihaos.

There groweth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bihaos*. This putteth forth certeyne streight branches and very brode leaues which the Indians vse for dyuers purposes. For in sum places they couer theyr houfes with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of thetche, wherunto it serueth very well. Sumtymes also when it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades to defende them from the water. They make also certeyne chestes whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaved after a straunge forte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bihaos*. These chestes are wrought in such sort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not such thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the braunches of the fayde *Bihaos* with the leaues weaved togyther therwith. In these they keepe salte and other subtyle thynges. They vse theym also for an other purpose, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarfenesse of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of these plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it selfe in that parte where it is moste tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulrush.

Hauas.

Dying of cotton.

And forasmuch as wee are nowe comme to th[e]end of this narration, it commeth to my remembrance to make mention of an other thyng which is not farre from my purpose. And this is howe the Indians do stayne or dye cloth of bombage cotton, or any other thyng which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blewe, yelow, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees,

whiche they knowe by experience to bee good for this practife. And by this arte they make colours in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee diuyfed. But this feemeth a fraunge thyng, that they doo all this in one felfe fame vessell: So that when they haue caufed the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togyther, they make in the fame vessell without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many colours as them lyfeth. Whiche thyng I suppose to coomme to passe by the disposition of the coloure whiche they haue fyrste gyuen to the thyng that they intende to drye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to coloure.

A strange thyng.

¶ Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes.



He apples wherwith the Indian Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euyl frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete faouore. These trees for the moste parte, growe euer by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleasaunte faour, that there is no man that seeeth them but wyll desyre to cate therof.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yet growyng on the earth, I wolde faye that this was the vnhappy frute wherof owre fyrste parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the greate antes whose bytyng caufeth swellyng (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the eutes or lyfartes, and vipers, and such other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyefe archers amonge the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherwith they kyll all that they wounde.

Note.

Canibales archiers.

These venemes they mengle togyther and make thereof a blacke masse or composition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caufed a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leaques and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were referued. This was in the yere. 1514. at suche tyme as th[e] army arriued there with capitayne *Pedrarias da villa* at the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hystory. These apples (as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for suche as are wounded with these arrowes, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much wasshed therwith, by which means sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to faye the trewth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne cauflike qualitie ageynst poyson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fiftie that haue byn wounded, three haue recouered. But that your maiestie may the better confyder the force of the veneme of these trees, yowe shall further vnderstande that yf a man doo but repose hym felfe to sleepe a lyttle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swolne when he ryfeth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the sayde tree to faule into the eye, it vtterly destroyeth the fyght. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towarde the North coast on the Weste and Easte syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so greate a stynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reason it caufeth so great a peyne in the headde.

Wherwith they inuenym the[ir] arrowes

199
Petrus Arias.

The water of the sea.

The goulfe of Vraba.

Xagua.

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xagua*, wherof there is great plentie. They are very hygh and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and iauelyns of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene ruffette and whyte. This tree bryngeth forth a greate frute as bygge as Papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Owte of this they gette a very cleare water wherwith they wasshe theyr legges and fumetymes all theyr boddies when they feele theyr flesshe werye, faynt, or loofe. The which water, byfyde that it hath a byndyng qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it steyneth it blacke by lyttle and lyttle vntyll it bee as blacke as giette, which coloure can not be taken away in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therwith, it is so steyned that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it eyther faule of, or growe owte and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my felfe haue oftentimes seene by experience.

There is another kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*. These are very great and fayre, and caufe holsome ayer where they growe and a pleasaunt shadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good,

Hobi.
Sum thynke these to be mirbalanes.

and of good tast and fauoure, and much lyke vnto certeyne damsons or prunes beinge lyttle and yelowe. But theyr stone is very great: by reason wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rynde boyled in water, maketh a holfome bathe for the legges, bycause it bindeth and sleiyeth the loofeneffe of the fleshe so fencibly that it is a marueyle to consyder. It is fuerly a holfome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the beste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it caufeth no heauinesse of the headde as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thyng I speake bycause the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therefore a common practife amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherin they sleepe.

Date trees.

There are also a kynde of hyghe date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is moste excellent: beinge very blacke, and shynnyng, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swimme aboue the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also iauelyns, speares, and pykes. And I faye pykes, bycause that in the coastes of the sea of *Sur*, beyonde *Esquegua* and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykewyse they make clubbes and swoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also vesselles and housholde stufte of dyuers fortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers muscicall instrumentes, as clarifimbals, lutes, gyterns, and fuche other, the whiche byfyde theyr fayre shynnyng coloure lyke vnto giete, are also of a good founde and very durable by reason of the hardnesse of the woodde.

The inhabitants of the sea of Sur.

200

An herb that beareth the cordes.

After that I haue faye thus much of trees and plantes, I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. You shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelowe lyllic, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes or laces, as the lyke is partly seene in the herbe which we caule lased faury. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and so stronge that they tye theyr hangyng beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue spoken elswhere. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing sauynge that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substauce as it were line: And the other is groffer lyke the wycke or twyste of hempe, and is imperfecte in comparifon to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelowe lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moste subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians fawe in funder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to faw or cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that fawe, puttyng euer nowe and then a portion of fyne fande vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iren where they continue rubbyng the fayde threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continewe in theyr worke as before vntyl they haue cutte in funder the iren although it bee neuer so bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thyng and easye to bee fawne.

Cabuia and *Henequen*.

A straung[e] thyng.

Leaues.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here speake sumwhat of the qualite of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plante that seemeth more wylde and deformed: so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees or plantes. They haue certeyne braunches full of large and deformed leaues, which braunches were fyrste leaues lyke vnto the other. As the braunches made of these leaues growe foorth in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a dyfficult thyng to descrybe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the tooonge fayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that being well beaten and spreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyftene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the fleshe that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the fore and wrought his operation, it loofeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience.

A leafe of great vertue.

¶ Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge.



N the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and fundry kyndes of fysshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyll I make mention of sum. And fyrst to begynne at fardynes, yowe shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fysshes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fyssh. The beste kyndes of other fysshes are these: *Moxarre*, *Diahace*, Brettes, *Dahaos*, Thornbackes, and Salmons. All these and dyuers other which I do not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyse taken very good creuyffhes. There

are also founde in the sea, certeyne other fysshes: as soles, mackerelles, turbuttes, *Palamite, Lizze, Polpi, Chieppe, Xaibas*, Locustes, Oysters, excadynge great Tortoyfes, and Tiburoni of maruelous byggenesse: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fysshes which haue no names in oure language. And these of such diuersitie and quantitie as can not bee expressed without large wrytynge and longe tyme. But to let passe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fysshes, I intende to speake chiefly and sumwhat largely of three fortes of moste notable fysshes: wherof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyfes, the seconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrste, I saye that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are founde great Tortoyfes (which are certeyne shell fysshes) of such byggenesse that tenne or fyfteene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them owt of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible persons dwellynge in the same Ilande. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie that in the firme lande in the vyllage of *Acla* there are of this forte sum taken and kylled of suche byggenes that fixe men with much difficultie coulde scarcely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the leaft fort of them are as much as two men may cary at a burden. That which I sawe listyd vp by fyxe men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth more then fyue yardes. The maner of takynge them, is this. It sumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche they caule shoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Tortoyfes of the common forte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the sea and bringe soorth theyr egges and go togyther by coompanies from the sea to seade on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes whiche they fynde in the sande, and soone ouertake them bycause they are very heauy and slowe in goynge, although they make all the haste they can to returne to the sea as soone as they espie any boddie. When they that pursewe them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or flaffe vnder theyr legges and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, so that they can go no further nor yet ryfe ageyne or turne. And thus they suffer them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the reste which they ouerturne in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very manye at suche tymes as they coome furth of the sea as I haue sayde. This fysshe is very excellent and holsome to be eaten, and of good taste. The seconde of the three fysshes wherof I haue spoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fysshe and very quicke and swifte in the water, and a cruell deuourer. These are often tymes taken, aswell when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at any other time, and especially the leaft kynd of these fysshes. When the shippes are vnder sayle, the biggest forte are taken after this maner. When the Tiburon feeth the shippe failinge he foloweth it swymmyng behynde. The which thinge the mariners seeinge, caste furthe all the fylthe of the shippe into the sea for the fysshe to eate, who neuerthelesse foloweth them with equal pafe although they make neuer such haste wyth full wynd and failes, and waloweth on euery fyde and about the shyppe: And thus foloweth it sumtyme for the space of a hundreth and fyftie leaques and more. And when the mariners are disposed to take them, they cast downe by the sterne of the shippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of a mans hande of three spannes in lengthe and crooked like a fysshooke with beardes accordinge to the bignesse thereof, and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or fyxe linkes neare vnto th[e]nde, and from thense tyed with a greate rope, fastening also on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of sum fysshe, or hogges flessh, or sum other flesshe, or the bouelles and intralles of an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may casely bee doone, for I haue seene nyne taken in one day. And if they wolde haue taken more, they myght also. Thus when the Tiburon hath pleasauntly folowed the ship a longe viage, at the lengthe he swaloweth the baite with the hooke. And aswell by his stryuinge to flye or escape, as also by the swifte passage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fysshe when it is taken, it is of suche huge byggenesse that twelue or fyfeteene men are scarcely able to drawe it owt of the water and lifte it into the shyppe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle vntil he haue slaine it. They are sumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, fyxe, or seuen spannes in breadth where they are brodest. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the proportion of the reste of theyr boddies, and haue two rowes of teethe the one sumewhat separate from the other, of cruell shape and standing very thicke. When they haue slayne this fysshe, they cutte the boddy therof in smaule piefes, and put it to drye, hangynge it three or four dayes at the cordes of the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it. It is doubtlesse a good fysshe and of great commoditie to serue the shippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaft of these fysshes are moste holsome and tender. It hath a skinne much like to the skynne of a sole, whervnto the sayde Tuberon is lyke in shape. Which I saye bycause Plinie hath made mention of none of these three fysshes among the number of them whereof he wryteth in his natural hystorie. These Tiburons coomme furth of the sea and enter into the ryuers, where they are no lesse perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wherof I haue spoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine, and horses, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very daungerous in certeyne wasshyng places or pooles by the ryuers fydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fysshes both greate and smaule, of fundry tortes and kyndes are accustomed to folowe the shyppes goynge vnder sayle, of the which I wyl speake sumwhat when I haue wrytten of Manate which is the thyrde of the three whereof I haue promysed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fysshe of the sea, of the byggest forte,

Tiburons.
Manates

Great Tortoy ses.

201

Tiburons.

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

202

Manates.

and muche greater then the Tiburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyshe and vyle, so that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of those great vesselles made of goates skynnes wherin they vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Areualo*. The headde of this beaſt is lyke the head of an oxe, with also lyke eyes. And hath in the place of armes, two great flumpes wherwith he fwymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaſte: And commeth oftentymes owt of the water to the next shore: where if he find [a]ny herbes or graſſe, he feedeth therof. Owre men are accustomed to kyl many of these and dyuers other good fyſſhes with theyr croſſebowes, purfuinge them in barkes or Canoas, bycauſe they fwymme in maner aboute the water. The whiche thyng when they ſee, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at a ſmaule corde, but ſumwhat ſtronge. As the fyſſhe flyeth away, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyttle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a picce of lyght woodde. And when the fyſſhe is goone a lyttle way, and hath coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym ſelfe to faynt and drawe towarde th[e]nde of his lyfe, he refortethe to the ſhore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde: wherof whyle there yet remaine fixe or eyght fathams or ſum what more or leſſe, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fyſſhe therewith by little and lyttle as the waues of the ſea helpe hym to doo it the more eaſely. Then with the helpe of ſuch bygneſſe that to conuey it from thenſe to the cite, it ſhalbe requiſite to haue a carte with a good yoke of oxen, and ſumtymes more, accordyng as theſe fyſſhes are of byggenefſe, ſum being much greater then other ſum in the ſame kynde as is ſeene of other beaſtes. Sumtymes they lyft theſe fyſſhes into the Canoa or barke, withowt drawyng them to the lande as before. For as ſoone as they are ſlayne, they flote aboute the water. And I beleue verely that this fyſſhe is one of the beſt in the world to the taſte, and the lykeſt vnto fleſſhe. Eſpecially ſo lyke vnto biefe, that who ſo hath not ſeene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he feethe it in pieces then verye biefe or veale. And is certeynly ſo lyke vnto fleſhe, that all the men in the worlde may herin bee deceaued. The taſte lykewyſe, is lyke vnto the taſt of very good veale, and laſteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in ſine, the baſe of theſe parties, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This Manate, hath a certeine ſtone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualitie greatly appropriate ageynſt the diſeaſe of the ſtone, if it bee burnt and grounde into ſmaule pouder, and taken faſtyng in the mornyng when the payne is felte, in ſuch quantitie as maye lye vppon a peny with a drawght of good whyte wyne. For beyng thus taken three or foure mornynges, it acquieteth the greſe as dyuers haue toulde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my ſelfe by teſtimonie of fight, doo wytnefſe that I haue ſeene this ſtone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The fyſſhe
Manate.
A remedy ageynſt
the ſtone.

There are alſo dyuers other fyſſhes as bygge as this Manate: Emonge the which there is one cauled *Vihuella*. This fyſhe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a ſwoorde beinge on euery ſyde full of many ſharpe teeth. This ſwoorde is naturally very harde and ſtronge, of foure or fyue ſpannes in length and of proportion accordyng to the ſame byggenes. And for this cauſe is this fyſhe cauled *Spada*: that is the ſwoord fyſhe. Of this kynde ſum are found as lyttle as fardines: and other ſo greate, that two yokes of oxen are ſcarfely able to drawe them on a carte. But whereas before, I haue promyſed to ſpeake of other fyſſhes which are taken in theſe ſeas whyle the ſhyppes are vnder ſayle, I wyl not forget to ſpeake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fyſſhe, and is oftentymes taken and kylde with troute ſpeares and hookeſ caſte in the water when they play and fwymme aboute the ſhyppes. In lyke maner alſo are taken many turbutts which are very good fyſſhes as are lyghtly in all the ſea.

The ſwoorde
fyſſhe.

Tunnye.

Turbut.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean ſea, there is a ſtraunge thyng to bee conſidered, whiche all that haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee trewe. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are ſum prouinces fertile and frutfull, and ſum barren, euen ſo dooth the lyke chaunce in the ſea: So that at ſum wyndes the ſhyppes ſayle fiftie or a hundreth, or two hundreth leaques and more, withowt takyng or feinge of one fyſſhe. And ageyne in the ſelfe ſame Ocean, in ſum places, all the water is ſeene tremble by the mouyng of the fyſſhes, where they are taken abundantly.

203

Note.

It commeth further to my remembraunce to ſpeak ſumwhat of the flyyng of fyſſhes, which is doubtleſſe a ſtraunge thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the ſhyppes ſayle by the greate Ocean folowyng theyr vyage, there ryfeth ſumtymes on the one ſyde or on the other, many coompanies of certeyne lyttle fyſſhes, of the which the byggeſt is no greater then a fardyne: and ſoo diminiffhe leſſe and leſſe from that quantitie that ſum of them are very lyttle. Theſe are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyyng fyſſhes. They ryfe by great coompanies and flockes in ſuch multitudes that it is an aſtonyſſhement to beholde them. Sumtymes they ryfe but lyttle from the water: and (as it chaunceth) continew one flyght for the ſpace of a hundreth pafes and ſumtymes more or leſſe before they faule ageyne into the ſea. Sumtymes alſo they faule into the ſhyppes. And I remember that on an euenyng when all the company in the ſhippe were on theyr knees ſyngyng *Salue regina* in the highest parte of the Caſtel of the poope, and ſayled with a full wynde, there paſſed by vs a flocke of theſe flyyng fyſſhes: and came ſo neare vs that many of them fell into the ſhyppes, amonge the which, two or three fell hard

Flyyng fyſſhes.

by me which I tooke alyue in my hande: fo that I myght well perceauē that they were as bigge as fardynes and of the fame quantitie, hauynge two wynges or quylles growyng owt of theyr fynnes, lyke vnto those wherwith all the fyffhes swimme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fyffhes theym selues. As longe as they wynges are moyste, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as foone as they are drye, they can continewe theyr flyght no further then as I haue fayde before, but faule immediatly into the fea, and fo ryfe ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

In the yeare. A thousand fyue hundreth fiftene. when I came fyrst to informe your maiestye of the state of the thynges in Indya, and was the yeare folowyng in Flanders in the tyme of youre moste fortunate successe in thes your kyngedomes of Aragonie and Castyle, wheras at that vyage I fayled about the Iland *Bermuda* otherwyse cauled *Garza*, beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arryuyng there at the deapthe of eight yeades of water, and dysfant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynaunce, I determined to fende fume of the shyppe to lande as well to make searche of suche thynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increafe. But the tyme not feruyng my purpose by reason of contrarye wynde, I could bryng my shypes no nearer the Ilande beyng twelue leaques in lengthe and fyxe in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrtye and thre degre of the northe fyde. Whyle I remayned here, I sawe a stryfe and combatte betwene these flyinge fyshes and the fyshes named gylte heades, and the foules cauled seamewes and cormorautes, whych fuerlye feemed vnto me a thyng of as greate pleasure and folace as coulde bee deuoyed, whyle the gylte heades swamme on the brymme of the water and fymtymes lyfted theyr sholders about the fame to rayse the swimmyng fyshes owt of the water to dryue them to flyght, and folowe them swimming to the place where they faule to take and eate them fodaynlye. Agayne on the other fyde, the seamewes and cormorantes, take manye of these flyinge fyshes: fo that by thys meanes theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe fame perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne securytye nether in hygh estate nor in lowe. Which thyng fuerlye ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe restyng place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acquyete and fynyshe the trauayles of thys troubelous worlde wherin are so manye daungyours, and bryng them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securytye and reste. But to returne to the hystorye: these byrdes and foules whych I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda* nere vnto the whych I sawe these flyinge fyshes. For they coulde bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre from the coastes where they are bredde.

The Iland of Bermuda.

Not to hie for the pye, nor to lowe for the crowe.

204

¶ Of th[e] increase and decrease, (that is) rysyng and faullyng of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of Sur.



Wyll nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Prouynce, or at the leaste in the citie of golden Castyle otherwyse cauled *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea and of the South sea cauled the sea of *Sur*. Not omittyng to note one synguler and meruelous thyng which I haue confydered of the Ocean sea, wherof hytherto no cosmographer, pylote or maryner or any other haue fatysfied me.

I say therefore as it is well known to your maiestye and all such as haue knowlege of the Ocean sea, that this greate Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe of the strayght of *Gibilterra*: in the which the water from th[e] end and furthest parte of that fea, euen vnto the mouth of the fayde strayght, eyther in the East towarde the coaste commonlye cauled *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the fayde sea *Mediterraneum*, the fea doothe not so faule nor increafe as reason wolde iudge for so greate a fea. But increfethe verye lyttle and a smaule space. Neuerthelesse, withoute the mouthe of the straight in the mayne Ocean, it increafeth and fauleth verye muche and a great space of grounde from fyxe houres to fyxe houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britannye, Flanders, Germanye, and England. The selfe fame Ocean fea in the fyrme lande newlye founde, in the coastes of the fame lynnge towarde the Northe, dothe neyther ryse nor faule, nor lykewise in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other Ilandes of the fame fea lyinge towarde the northe, for the space of thre thousande leaques, but onelye in lyke maner as doothe the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italye: whiche is in maner nothyng in respecte to that increafe and decrease whiche the fayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe fame Ocean in the coastes of the fayde fyrme lande lyinge towarde the Southe in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coaste of that lande whiche lyethe towarde the Easte and Weste frome that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margaritea* whiche the Indians caule *Tarrarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and

Beragua.

The west Ocean.

The sea Mediterraneum.

Hispaniola.
Cuba.

The South sea.

The power and
wisdom of god is
sene in his
creatures.

in all other Ilandes of the fouth sea of *Sur*, the water ryfeth and fauleth so much, that when it fauleth it go[e]th in maner owf of fyghte, which thynge I my selfe haue seene oftentimes.

And here youre maiestie may note an other thynge, that from the northe sea to the fouth sea beyng of fuche dyfference the one from the other in ryfyng and faulyng, yet is the lande that deuydeth them not paste eyghtene or twentye leaques in breadthe frome coaste to coaste. So that bothe the fayde seas beyng all one Ocean this straunge effecte is a thynge worthy greatly to bee considered of al fuche as haue inclination and defyre to knowe the secrete woorkes of nature wherin the infinite powre and wyfedome of god is seene to bee such as may allure all good natures to reuerence and loue so diuine a maiestie. And wheras by the demonstrations of lerned men I am not fatiffyed of the natural cause hereof, I content my selfe to knowe and beleue that he which hath made these thynge, dooth knowe this and many other whiche he hath not granted to the reason of man to comprehend, much lesse to so base a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderstandyng, shall searche the cause hereof, for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the matter in question as a wytnesse that haue seene th[e] experience of the thynge.

¶ *Of the strayght or narowe passage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South sea, by the whiche spycies may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of Molucca into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India.*

205

Esquegua and
Vrraca.*Nomen Dei.*
*Panama.*The ryuer of
Chagre.

It hath byn an opinion amonge the Cosmographers and Pylottes of late tyme, and other which haue had practyse in thynge touchyng the sea, that there shulde bee a strayght of water passyng from the North sea of the firme, into the South sea of *Sur*, whiche neuerthelesse hath not byn seene nor founde to this daye. And fuerlye yf there be any fuche strayght, we that inhabite those partes do thynke the same shulde bee rather of lande then of water. For the firme lande in sum partes therof is so strayght and narrowe that the Indyans saye that frome the mountaynes of the prouynce of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one sea and the other) If a man assend to the toppe of the mountaynes and looke towarde the Northe, he maye see the water of the North sea of the Prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne lookyng the contrarye waye, may on the other fyde towarde the Southe, see the sea of *Sur* and the prouynces whyche confyne with it, as doo the territoryes of the twoo Lordes or kynges of the fayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleue that if it bee as the Indyans saye, of al that is hetherto knowen, this is the narrowest strayght of the firme lande, whiche fume affyrme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet doo I not take it for a better waye, or so shorte as is that whyche is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in the Northe sea) vnto the newe citey of *Panama* beyng in the coaste and on the banke of the sea of *Sur*. Whiche waye is likewyse very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaines, ryuers, valleys, and verrye diffyculte to passe through, and can not bee doone without greate laboure and trauallye. Sum measure this waye in this part, to bee from sea to sea. xviii. leaques, whych I suppose to bee rather. xx. not for that it is any more by measure, but bicause it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue sayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauyng nowe twyfe passed that way by foote: countyng from the porte and vyllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga* otherwyfe cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And frome thense to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other. viii. leaques. So that at this ryuer beinge. xvi. leaques from the fayde porte, endeth the roughnesse of the way. Then from henre to the maruelous brydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other twoo vnto the port of *Panama*: So that all togyther in my iudgmente, make xx. leaques. And if therfore this nauigation may bee founde in the South sea for the trade of spices (as we trust in God) to bee brought from thense to the fayde porte of *Panama* (as is possible enough) they may afterwarde easly passe to the Northe sea notwithstandinge the difficultie of the waye of the. xx. leaques afore sayde. Whiche thynge I affyrme as a man well trauallyed in these regions, hauyng twyfe on my feate passed ouer this strayght in the yere. 1521. as I haue sayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderstode, that it is a maruelous facilitie to bryng spices by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leaques of good and fayre way by the which cartes may passe at pleasure by reason that the mountaynes are but fewe and lyttle, and that the greateste parte of these foure leaques is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the fayde ryuer, the spices may be caryed in barkes and pinneses. For this ryuer entereth into the

North sea fyue or. vi leaques lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Your maiestie may now therfore confyder howe great a thyng and what commoditie it may bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leaques from the South sea, contineweth his course and emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greate, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought or desyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leaques beyonde the fayd ryuer, and other two leaques on this fyde the porte of *Panama*, so lyeinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such fort that none which passe by this viage see any such bridge or thynke that there is any such buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the brydge, lookyng towarde the ryght hande, they see a lyttle ryuer vnder them which hath his chanell distante from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passyng the depth of a mans legge to the knee: and is in breadth betwene thyrtye and fortie pases: and faulethe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this brydge, there is nothyng seene but great trees. The largenesse of the brydge, conteyneth. xv. pases: and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore pases. The arche is so made of moste harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent creatour of all thynges. But to returne to speake sumwhat more of the conueying of spices, I say that when it shal please almyghty god that this nauigation aforefayde shal bee founde by the good fortune of yowre maiestie, and that the spices of the Ilandes of the South sea (which may also bee otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe browght to the fayd coaste and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thense (as we haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thense into this owr other sea of the North, from whense they may afterward bee browght into Spayne, I say that by this meanes the vyage shall bee shortened more then feuen thousande leaques, with muche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vsed by the way of Commendator of Aysa capitayne vnder yowre maiestie, who this present yeare attempted a vyage to the place of the sayde spices. And not only the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of the tyme is abbreuiate. To conclude therfore, if any had hetherto attempted this vyage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke the Ilandes of spices, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue byn founde longe fence, as doubtelesse they maye bee by the reafons of Cosmographie.

The Ilande Bastimento.

The maruelous bridge.

206

The Ilandes of Molucca. The commoditie of this viage.

¶ *Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place where they are engendred or growe. And of the beastes cauled Tygers.*



IN the firme lande are fownde many terryble beastes which sum thinke to be Tygers. Which thyng neuerthelesse, I dare not affirme, confyderyng what auctoures doo wryte of the lyghtnes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas this beast beyng other wyse in shape very like vnto a Tyger, is notwithstandinge very slowe. Yet trewe it is, that accordyng to the maruayles of the worlde and differences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen and dyuers constellations of the same vnder the whiche they are created, wee see that sum suche plantes and herbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and holsome in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnfaury that they may not bee eaten. Men likewyse which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Euen so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they wryte, and maye neuerthelesse bee slowe and heauy in these Indies of yowr maiestie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towarde theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Men in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyshe. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpose, are easy to bee proued and worthy to bee beleued of suche as haue redde of the lyke in autours or trauayled the worlde, whereby theyr owne syght may teache theym th[e]xperience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Iucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadely poyson yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hathe it no suche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times and found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venemous.

Tigers.

Plantes and herbes. Birdes. Men.

Sheepe. Bulles.

Iucca.

Battes.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

207

The huntynge of tigers.

A rewarde for kyllynge of tigers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.
The pillers of Hercules.The straights of Gibilterra.
Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

Howe farre Th[e]mperours maiestie excelleth Hercules.

A tiger made tame.

208

But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thynges bee fayde that tyme shall not suffice to wryte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beast may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of such lyghtnesse and swiftnesse as are they wherof Plinie and other autours speake, discrybynge it to bee one of the swyfteste beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swift course therof was cauled by that name. The first Spaniardes which sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd fo name it. Of the kynde of these was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall sent yowre maiestie owte of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lionesses, but greater. The reste of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere vnto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour shewing as it were a fayre woorke and correspondent picture. About theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spots byggest: and lesse and lesse towarde theyr bellies, legges, and headdes. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lyttle, and by my estimation, of th[e]age of three yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue seene sum of three spannes in heyght, and more then fyue in length. They are beastes of greate force, with stronge legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are so fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggest sorte is so stronge or fierce. Of these, there are many founde in the firme lande whiche deuour many of the Indians and do much hurte otherwyse. But fyns the comming of the Christians, many haue byn kylde with Crossebowes after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of these Tygers, he goeth searchof theyr trafe with his crossebowe and with a lyttle hounde or bewgle and not with a grechounde, bycause this beast wolde soone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approacheth so neare hym snappyng and grynnyng with so quicke flyng and returnyng, that he hereby so molesteth this fierce beast that he dryueth hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remayneth flyl bayng and the Tyger grynnyng and shewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiiii. pases of, fryketh hym with the querel of his crossebowe in the breste, and flyeth incontinent, leauynge the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatyng earth for fiercenesse. Then within the space of twoo or three houres or the day folowynge, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyeth deade.

In the yeare. 1522. I with the other rulers and magistrates of the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in our counsaile, A rewarde of foure or fyue peeces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kylde any of these Tygers: by reason wherof many were kylde in shorte space both with crossebowes and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obstynately stand in opinyon whether these beastes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other such beastes of spotted heare, or also peraduenture sum other newe beast vnknewen to the owlde wryters as were many other wherof I haue spoken in this booke. Of which thyng, I doo not greatly meruayle, For asmuche as vnto owre tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknewen to the antiquitie: In so muche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his *Cosmographie*, or any other sence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the fyrst Admyrall Don Chrystopher Colonus discouered the same. A thyng doutelesse without comparyson muche greater then that whyche is fayd of Hercules, that he fyrste gaue th[e]nterance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doo before hym. And herof rysethe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are directly one agaynst an other in the strayght of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Affryke) were ioyned together before they were opened by Hercules, who erected those hys pyllers whiche your maiestie gyue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryses with lykewyse these hys wordes *PLVS VLTRA*: wordes doutelesse worthy for so greate an[d] vnyuerfall an Emperoure, and not conuenient for any other Prynce. Forasmuche as your holy Catholyke Maiestie haue spredde them in so straunge and remote regyons, so manye thousande leaques further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynlye fyr, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayse and fame of *Colonus*, He had as well deserued it as any of those men to whom for theyr noble enterpryse the antiquytie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to returne to the matter whereof I began to speake: I neede fay no more of the forme of thys beast, for as muche as your Maiestie haue seene that whych is yet alyue in Tolledo. And fuerly the keeper of your Maiesties lyons, who hath taken vpon hym the charge to tame this beast, myght better haue bestowed his paynes in an other thyng that myght haue bynne more profitable for the safegarde of his lyfe bycause this Tyger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee stronger and fiercer and increase in malice. The Indians (and especially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Castyle) caule this beast *Ochi*. This thyng is straunge that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention before, wolde haue kylde his keeper that then kept hym in a cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame that he ledde her tyed only with a smaule corde and playde with her so familiarly that I maruayled greatly to see it, yet not without certeyne belefe that this frendshyp wyll not laste longe without daunger of lyfe to the keeper, forasmuch as fuerly these beastes are not meete to bee amonge men for theyr fiercenes and cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

☛ *Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande,
and of theyr women.*



The maners and customes of these Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take as many wyues as them lyst, and other lyue with one wyfe whome they forsake not without consent of both parties, which chauncethe especially when they haue no chylde. The nobilitie aswel men as women, repute it infamous to ioine with any of base parentage or strangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men by reason of theyr valientnes, although they put a difference betwene the common sorte and the other to whom they shewe obedience, countynge it for a great matter and an honorable thyng yf they be beloued of any of them. In so much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe theyr fayth to hym, so that he bee not longe absent farre from them. For theyr intent is not to bee widowes or to lyue chaste lyke religious women. Many of theym haue this custome, that when they perceau that they are with chylde, they take an herbe wherwith they destroy that is conceaued. For they say that only wel aged women shulde beare chylde, and that they wyl not forbear their pleasures and deforme theyr boddies with bearynge of chylde, wherby theyr teates becoome loose and hangynge which thyng they greatly disprays. When they are deliuered of theyr chylde they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, theyr bludde and purgation ceafeth immediatly. And when after this they haue a few days absteyned from the company of men, they becomme so frayght as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite. They also whiche neuer had chylde, are euer as vyrgins. In sum partes they weare certeyne lyttle apernes rounde about them before and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherwith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie byfyde. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a holowe pype of golde: but the common sorte haue theym inclosed in the shelles of certeyne great welkes, and are byfyde vtterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue theyr coddess feene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go vtterly naked without any such couerture at all. In the prouince of *Cueua* they caule a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owres.

These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his most stronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abroad for his pleasure. Two of them cary hym syttyng vpon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyng pafe with hym on theyr shulders. When the twoo that cary hym are wery, other twoo coomme in theyr places without any disturbance or stey. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the space of. xv. or. xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moste parte slaues or *Naboriti*, that is, such as are bounde to continuall seruice.

I haue also noted that when the Indians perceau that theyr felues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette theym felues blud in the calves of theyr legges and brawnes of theyr armes. This doo they with a very sharpe stone, and sumtymes with the smaule toothe of a vyper, or with a sharpe reede or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In so much that it is in maner a maruayle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had also his wyfe in suche places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherwith the Moors paynt them felues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are paynted specially on theyr vyfage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyse the principall Indians vse these payntynges on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr vyfages, bycause amonge them the slaues are so marked. When the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (especially the Caniball archers) they cary certeyne shelles of greate welkes of the sea which they blowe and make therwith great founde muche lyke the noyse of hornes. They carye also certeyne tymbrels which they vse in the sleade of drummes. Also very fayre plumes of fethers, and certeyne armure of golde: especially great and rounde pieces on theyr brestes, and splintes on there armes. Lykewyse other pieces whiche they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodies. For they esteeme nothyng so much as to appeare galante in the war[re]s, and to go in most coomely order that they can deuyse, glysterynge with precious stones, iewelless, golde, and fethers. Of the leaste of these welkes or perewincles, they make certeyne lyttle

The Indian women.

The men of India.

The kyng is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte theyr bodies.

209

The Canibales.

Armure of golde.

Their galantes in the warres.

Their Iuells

beades of diuers fortes and colours. They make also little brasselets whiche they mengle with gaudies of golde. These they rowle about there armes frome the elbowe to the wreste of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges from the knee to the foles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accusfomed to weare such Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therwith. These beades and Iewels and such other trynkettes, they caule *Caquiras*. Bifyde these also, they weare certeyne rynges of golde at theyr cares and nostrelles which they bore ful of holes on both sides, so that the ringes hange vpon theyr lyppecs. Sum of these Indians, are poulde and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare longe heare, which the women weare to the myddeft of theyr shulders and cut it equally, especially about theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde stones which they keepe for the fame purpose. The principall women when theyr teates faule or becoome loofe, beare them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a halfe, wel wrought, and of such byggenesse that sum of them way more then two hundreth Castilians or ducades of golde. These barres haue holes at both th[e]endes, wherewith they tye two fmaul cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres. One of these cordes go[e]th ouer the shulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye togyther, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Sum of these chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbandes, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute th[e]office of generall capitaynes, and caufe them selues to bee caryed on mens backes in lyke maner as doo the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before.

Howe the women beare vp their teates, wyth barres of golde.

The stature and coloure of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati. The Ilande of gigantes. *Iucatos*.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the fame stature and coloure as are they of the Ilandes. They are for the most part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggenesse then otherwyfe. And especially they that are cauled *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Ilande of gigantes whiche are on the fourth fyde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyfe certeyne other whiche they caule *Yucatos* which are on the north fyde. All which chiefly, although they bee no gigantes, yet are they doubtelesse the byggeste of the Indyans that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynges: and especially many of them afwell women as men, are of very hyghe stature, and are all archiers bothe men and women. These *Coronati* inhabite thirtie leaques in length by these coastes from the poynt of *Canoa* to the greate ryuer which they caule *Guadalchibir* nere vnto *Sancta Maria de gratia*. As I trauerfed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of freshe water of that ryuer fyxe leaques in the sea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the sea. They are cauled *Coronati* (that is crowned) bycause theyr heare is cutte round by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compase abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of faynt Augustines order. And bycause I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here commeth to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thycker and much stronger then owes. So that in comyng to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heades with swoordes. For so haue many swoordes bynne broken on theyr heades with lyttle hurt doone. And to haue fayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, bycause I haue more largely intreated herof in my generall hystorie of the Indies. Yet haue I nother there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne wherof the Ilande of *Iucatana* is part) forasmuche as Ferdinando Cortese hath wrytten a large booke thereof.

The sculles of the Indians heades.

210

New Spaine.

The houses of the Christians in India

Of the houses of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficiently elsewhere. Yet haue I thought good to informe your maiestie of the buyldyng and houses which the Christians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two folars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with stronge tymber and very fayre bordes. In suche forte that any noble man maye wel and pleafauntly bee lodged in sum of them. And amonge other, I my selfe caused one to bee builded in the cite of *Sancta Maria Antigua* in *Dariena* whiche coste me more then a thousande and fyue hundreth Castilians: being of such fort that I may well interteyne and commodiously lodge any Lorde or noble man, refermyng also a parte for my selfe and my famelie. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both aboue and benethe. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and fowre: Ceders also, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houfes of the Chryfians. On one fyde of the gardeyne, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleafaunte, with a good and holfome ayer, and a fayre prospecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, owre truste is that in fewe yeares al thynges in these regions shall growe to a better state accordyng to the holy intention of your maiestie.

Dariena.

Gardens.

Of the chiefe Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chrystyans not so many as they ought to bee soforasmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gonne to other Ilandes and to the fyrme lande. For beyng for the moste parte younge men vnmarried, and desirous dayly to see newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willinge to continewe longe in on[e] place: especially feelinge daillie other newe landes discovered where they thought theye might sooner fylle there purfes by beinge present at the firste spoyle. Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceaued many of them, and especially suche as had houses and habitations in thys Ilande. For I certeynly beleue, confyrmyng my selfe herein with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one Prynce had no more signiores then only this Ilande, it shuld in shorte tyme bee suche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englande: whereas euen at this present there is nothyng wherefore it shulde malice their prosperitie not beinge inferioure to them in any filicite that in maner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore suche as maye inriche many prouinces and kyngedomes by reason of manye riche golde mynes that are in it of the beste golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantitie. In this Ilande, nature of her selfe bringeth furthe suche abundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there shuld be more and better then in any parte of the world. There is so greate plentie of excellent *Cassia* that a greate quantitie is brought from thense into Spayne: from whense it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increafeth so muche that it is a meruelous thyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes wher suger is wrought: and that of such perfectenes and goodnes, and in suche quantitie that shippes come laden therwith yearly into Spayne. All suche fedes, fettes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becomm muche better, bygger, and of greater increafe then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyse that sumetymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they whiche shulde tyll and husband the grounde, and sowe and plant in dewe seafons, haue no respect hereunto, beinge impacient whyle the wheate and vynes waxe ripe, beinge gyuen to wanderyng and other affayres of present gaynes (as I haue sayde) as searchoyng the gold mines, fysshing for pearles, and occupyng marchaundies, with such other trades, for the greedy folowyng wherof, they neglecte and contempne both sowyng and plantyng. Suche frutes as are brought owt of Spayne, into this Ilande, prosper maruelously and waxe ripe all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all fortes very good and pleafaunt to bee eaten. Also many pomegranates of the best kynde, and oranges bothe sweete and fower. Lykewyse many fayre Lymones and ceders: and a greate quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, sowre, and bytter taste. There are also many fygge trees whiche bryng furth theyr frute all the hole yeare. Lykewyse thofe kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thither.

Beastes doo also increafe in lyke abundaunce: and especially the hearde of kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many patrones of cattayle that haue more then two thousand heades of neate: and sum three or foure thousande, and sum more. Byfyde thefe, there are very many that haue hearde of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Iland hath better pasture for such cattayle then any other cuntry in the worlde: also holfome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reason whereof the hearde of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then owres in Spayne bycause of the ranke pasture whose moysture is better digested in the herbe or grasse by the continuall and temperate heate of the soonne, wherby beinge made more fatte and vntuous, it is of better and more stedfast nuryshment. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moysture owt of the earth to the nuryshment of such thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth also by moderation preferue the same from refolution and putrefaction, digestyng also and condensatyng or thyckenyng the sayde moyste nuryshmente into a gummie and vntuous substaunce as is feene in all suche thynges as growe in those regions. And this is the only naturall cause aswell that certeyne great beastes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with such other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaues of such trees as growe there, do not wyther or faule, vntyll they bee thruste owt by other, accordyng to the verse of the poete which sayth: *Et nata pira piris, et ficus in ficubus extant.* That is in effecte: peares growyng vppon peares, and fygges vppon fygges. Plinie also wryteth, that suche trees are neuer infected with the diseafe of trees that the Latines caule *Caries*, which we may caule the worme or canker, beinge but a certeyne putrefaction by reason of a wateryshe nuryshment not well consolidate. The same thyng hath bynne the cause that certeyne Phylosophers consideryng aswell that man is the hottest and moyflest beast that is (which is the best complexion) as also that men lyue longeste in certeyne partes of India nere the Equinoctiall (where

Men are desirous of newe thynges.

The commodities of Hispaniola

Englande and Sicilie.

Golde mines. Cotton.

Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes

Greate thynges hindered by respecte of presente gaynes.

211

Oranges. Pomegranates. Fygges at the yeare. Dates.

Beastes.

Greate hearde of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of continuall and moderate heate.

The cause of fatte nuryshmente.

Beastes of longe lyfe in regions aboute the Equinoctiall line
Trees whos leaues doo not wyther

The cancar of the tree

Longe lyuide men in India. Paradise neare the equinoctial line	yet to this daye fumme liue to th[e]age of a hundreth and fiftie yeares) were of opinion that yf mankynde had any begynnyng on the earthe, that place owght by good reafon to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall lyne for the caufes aforefayde. Sum of the diuines alfo vppon lyke confideration haue thought it agreable that theyr Paradyfe fhulde bee about the fame within the precincte of thofe ryuers which are named in the booke of Genfis. But to lette paffe thefe thynges and to returne to the hystorie.
Shepe and hogges	In this Ilande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great number of hogges: of the which (as alfo of the kyne) manye are becoome wyld: And lykewyfe many dogges and cattes of thofe which were brought owt of Spayne. Thefe (and efppecially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by reafon of the negligence of the hearde men.
Dogges and cattes becom[e] wyld	There are alfo many horfes, mares, and mules, and fuche other beaftes as ferue th[e]ufe of men in Spayne, and are much greater then they of the fyrft brode brought thether owt of Spayne. Sum places of the Ilande are inhabyted, although not fo many as were requifite: Of the whiche I wyll faye no more but that all the regions of the Ilande are fo well fituate that in the courfe of tyme all thynges fhall coomme to greater perfection by reafon of the rychneffe and pleafantneffe of the countrey and fertilitie of the foile.
The fituation of Hispaniola.	But nowe to fpeake fumwhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, which is the citie of <i>San Domenico</i> : I faye that as touchyng the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine fo muche for fo muche (no not <i>Barfalona</i> whiche I haue oftentimes feene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye. For the houfes of <i>San Domenico</i> , are for the moft parte of ftone as are they of <i>Barfalona</i> : or of fo ftonge and well wrought earth that it maketh a finguler and ftonge byndyng. The fituation is muche better then that of <i>Barfalona</i> by reafon that the ftreates are much larger and playner, and without comparyfon more directe and freyght furth.
The citie of san Domenico	For beinge buylded nowe in owr tyme, byfyde the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the ftreates were alfo directed with corde, compafe and meafure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue fene. It hath the fea fo nere, that of one fyde there is no more fpace between the fea and the citie then the waules. And this is about fyftie pafes where it is furtheft of. On this fyde, the waters of the fea beate vppon the naturall ftones and fayre coafte. On the other parte, harde by the fyde and at the foote of the houfes, paffeth the ryuer <i>Ozama</i> whiche is a marueylous porte wherin laden fhyppes ryfe very nere to the lande and in maner vnder the houfe wyndowes, and no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the fea, then is frome the foote of the hyll of <i>Monyuye</i> to the monaftery of faynt Frances or to the lodge of <i>Barfalona</i> . In the myddeft of this fpace in the citie, is the fortrefse and caftle, vnder the which and twentie pafes diftant from the fame, paffe the fhippes to aryfe fumwhat further in the fame ryuer. From the enterance of the fhyppes vntyll they caft anker, they fayle no further from the houfes of the citie then thyrtye or fortie pafes, bicaufe of this fyde of the citie the habitacion is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen alfo, is fo fayre and commodious to defraight or vnlade fhyppes, as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymineis that are in this citie, are about fyxe hundreth in number, and fuch houfes as I haue fpoken of before: Of the which fum are fo fayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lorde or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and famelie. And efppecially that which Don Diego Colon viceroy vnder your maieftie hath in this citie, is fuche that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodneffe confydeyng all the commodities of the fame. Lykewyfe the fituation thereof, as beinge aboue the fayde porte and altogyther of ftone and hauyng many faire and large roomes with as goodly a profpect of the lande and fea as may be deuysed, feemeth vnto me fo magnificall and princelyke that your maieftie maye bee as well lodged therin as in any of the moofte exquisite builded houfes of Spayne. There is alfo a Cathedrall church buylded of late where afwell the byfhop accordyng to his dignitie, as alfo the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of ftone and lyme, and of good woorkemanshyppes. There are furthermore three monafteries bearyng the name of faynt Dominike, faynt Frances, and faynt Marie of Mercedes: The whiche are all well buylded although not fo curiouslye as they of Spayne. But fpeakyng without preiudice of any other religious monafterie, your maieftie maye bee well affured that in thefe three monafteries, god is as well ferued as in any other religious houfe with men of holy luyng and vertuous exemple. There is alfo a very good hofpitall for the ayde and fuccour of pore people, whiche was founde by Michaell Paffament threasurer to your maieftie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increafeth in welth and good order, afwel for that the fayde Admyrall and viceroy with the lorde Chaunceloure and counfayle appoynted there by your maieftie, haue theyr continuall abydyng here, as alfo that the rycheft men of the Ilande refort hyther for theyr moft commodious habitacion and trade of fuch marchaundies as are eyther brought owt of Spayne or fent thither from this Iland which nowe fo abundeth in many thynges that it ferueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vfury requityng fuch benefites as it fyrft receaued from thenfe.
212	The riuer Ozama
The hauen	The people of this Ilande are commonlye of fumewhat leffe ftature then are the Spanyardes, and of a fhynyng or cleare browne coloure. They haue wyues of theyr owne, and abfteyne from theyr dowghters, fyfters, and mothers. They haue large forheades, longe blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in any other
A cathedrall church and monasteris in Hispaniola.	An hofpitale.
An hofpitale.	The people

parts of theyr bodies afwel men as women, excepte very fewe as perhaps scarsely one amonge a thousand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honellie bee seene, they weare a certeyne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse is not kepte clofe with fuche diligence but that fومتymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hydde.

In this Iland are certeyne glo wormes that shyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneyes in the nyght, they beare summe of these woormes made fast abowt theyr fiete and beade, in fuche forte that he that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wolde bee greatly astonysed therat. By the lyght of these also, the women woorke in theyr houfes in the night. These woormes they caule *Cicuas*. Theyr lyght lasteth for the space of three dayes, and diminisheth as they begynne to drye vp.

There is also a kynde of crows whose breath flynketh in the mornyng and is sweete at after noone. The excremente which they auoyde, is a luyng worme.

As touchyng other thynges of this Ilande whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeate the fame ageyne owte of this hystorie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only fuche thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martyr or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owt of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

¶ Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.



F the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis* and *Iamaica*, the fame maye be sayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hispaniola* although not so largely. Yet in lesse quantitie doo they bryng forth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fysshes, and such other of the which wee haue spoken there.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of Partyches beinge verye little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle dooues: but are of muche better tasle to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wylde into the houfes, they becoome as tame within the space of three or foure dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becoomme exceedyng fatte in short space, and are doubtlesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee sayde, and to speake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynyng two or three leaques in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stones of fuche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pelletes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactlye polysshed. Of these, sum are as smaule as pelletes for handegunnes: and other so increasyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may ferue for all fortes of artyllerie although they bee of byggeneffe to receaue one or two or more quintales of poudere, euery quintale conteynyng one hundreth weyght: or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pelletes are founde through owte al the valley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take owte such as they neede of all fortes.

The other marueylous thinge of this Iland is this: That farre from the sea, there issheweth owt of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cley of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkyng of shyppes. This fauleth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in fuche abundaunce that it is seene flotyng aboute the water on euery side of the sea there abowt as it is dryuen frome place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Cursius wryteth in his hystorie, that great Alexander came to the cite of *Memi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a spryng or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such fort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stones of the walles of Babilon myght bee layde therwith accordyng as the fayde auctoure wryteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Iland of Cuba, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was found of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of Cuba, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of shyppes.

Glo wormes

213

Crows stynkyng and sweete.

Saynt Iohn his Ilande. *Iamaica*.

Partriches.

Pelletes for gunnes wrought by nature.

A fountayne of the pytche of Bitumen.

Quintus Cursius

Bitumen of Babilon.

Panuco.

¶ Of the lande of Bacoaleos cauled Terra Baccalearum, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.

Baccaleos.

214

Indians.

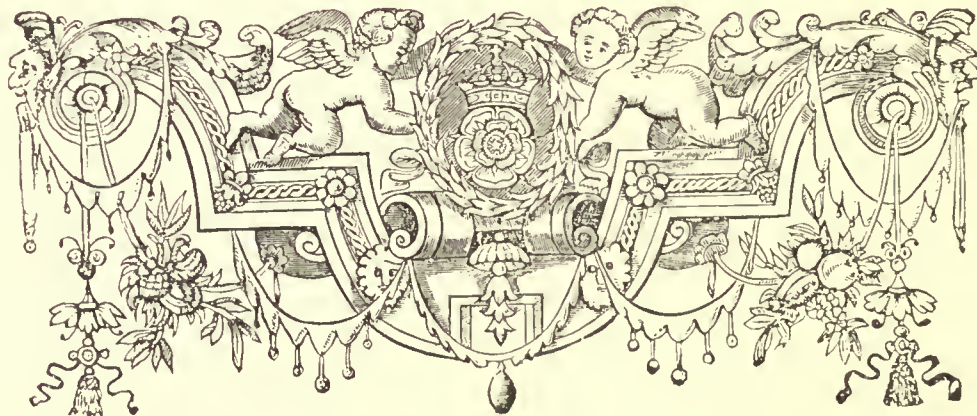
Ryche fures and syluer.

Idolaters.



Shortly after that your Maiestie came to the citie of Toledo, there arryued in the moneth of Nouember, Steuen Gomes the pylot who the year before of 1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie fayled to the Northe partes and founde a greate parte of lande continuat from that which is cauled *Baccaleos* discourfyng towards the West to the xl. and. xli. degree, from whense he brought certeyne Indians (for so caule wee all the nations of the new founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thense who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke th[e]other of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of dyuers beastes both wyld and tame. In this lande are many excellent fures, as martens, fables, and such other ryche fures of the which the fayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honoure the soonne and moone, and are feduced with suche superstitions and errors as are they of the firme.

And to haue wrytten thus muche, it maye suffice of suche things as haue semed to me most woorthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus* wrytten to Th[e]emperours maiestie



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION III.

Antonio Pigafetta.

*The first Circumnavigation of the Globe, by Fernam de
Magalhaens's Expedition, in 1519-22.*

First printed in 1526.]

OF OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES GATHERED OWTE OF DYUERS AUTOURS:

AND FYRSTE OF THE VNIVERSAL CARDE AND NEWE WORLDE.



The hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuyded by the auncient wryters into three partes, as *Europa*, *Affrica*, and *Asia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude. 180. degrees, begynnyng the fyrst degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude towarde the North. 63. degrees, begynnyng the fyrst degree frome the Equinoctiall: And. 10. degrees towarde the South. All the reste of the longitude which conteyneth other. 180. degrees, is discovered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autoures had any knowelege or made any mention therof. All that

therfore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptyng these. 180. degrees towarde the East discovered in owlde tyme, with the other. 180. degrees discovered of late dayes, they make, 360. degrees, which is all the circle of the Equinoctiall in the spher. Also the part aboue the. 63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Grutlande with many other prouinces. Lykewise the part more south then. 10. degrees of latitude, was discovered of late dayes, althoughe Ariane and Plinie fay that it was knowen in owlde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

West India the
newe worlde.

The circumference
of the Equinoctiall
lyne.

The North
regions.

The South
regions.

A DISCOURSE OF THE VYAGE
MADE BY THE SPANYARDES
ROVND E ABOWTE THE WORLDE.



Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked

A day lost in three
years and one
month.

215

Antonie Pigafetta.

Jacobus Faber.

The vyage made by the Spanyardes rownde about the worlde is one of the greateſt and moſte marueylous thynges that hath bynne knowen to owre tyme. And althoughe in many thynges we excell owre aunciente prediceffours, in this eſpeciallye wee fo farre exceade all theyr inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn knowen to this day. This viage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counfayle of Th[e]emperours Indies, to whom alſo was commytted the wrytyng of the hystorie and examination of al fuche as returned from thenſe into Spayne to the citie of Siuile, in the yere. M. D. xxii. But ſendynge it to Rome to bee prynted in that miſerable tyme when the citie was ſacked it was loſte and not founde to this day or any memory remaynyng therof, ſauynge fuche as ſum that redde the ſame haue borne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym wrytten as touchynge that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyardes hauynge ſayled about three yeres and one moneth, and the moſt of them notynge the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that ſayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had loſte one daye: So that at theyr arryuall at the porte of Siuile beinge the ſeuenth day of September, was by theyr accompt but the ſixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the ſtrange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellent man who for his ſinguler lernynge was greatly aduanced to honoure in his common welthe and made Th[e]emperours ambafadoure, this woorthy gentelman who was alſo a greate Philoſopher and Aſtronomer, answered that it coulde not otherwyſe chaunce vnto them hauynge ſayled three yeres continually, euer folowynge the ſoonne towarde the Weſt. And ſayde furthermore that they of owlde tyme obſerued that all fuche as ſayled behinde the ſoonne towarde the Weſt, dyd greatly lengthen the day. And albeit that the ſayde booke of Peter Martyr is peryſhed, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of ſo woorthy and marueylous an enterpryſe ſhulde vtterly bee extincte: forasmuch as a certeyne noble gentleman of the cytie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled maſter Antonie Pigafetta (who beinge one of the companie of that vyage and after his returne into Spayne in the ſhypp Victoria, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke therof which he gaue to Th[e]emperours Maieſtie, and ſente a copie of the ſame into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent philoſopher cauled maſter *Jacobus Faber*, hauynge longe ſtudyed in Italy, wyllynge him to translate it

into the Frenche toonge. This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche toonge and then in the Italien, with also an epistle to the Cardinall of Salfepurge as touchynge the same viage, written by Maximiliane Transiluane secretarie to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, in the yeare. 1522. And doubtelesse amonge al the cities of Italie, the cite of Vicenza may herein much glorie, that beside the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath browght furth aswell in learnynge as discipline of warre, it hath also had so woorthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the sayde master Antonie Pigafetta, who hauing compased abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his so noble and woonderfull an enterpryse so happily atchiued, if the same had byn doone in the owlde tyme when th[e]empyre of the Grekes and Romans florysshed, he shulde doubtelesse haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erected in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a singlar exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may we bouldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such knowlege of the worlde whiche the soonne coompaseth abowte in. xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this presente by th[e]industrye of men of this owre age. But before I speake any thyng of the viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the Epistle of Maximilian Transiluane which he wrote to the Cardinall of Salfepurge as a preface to his sayde booke.

Maximilian
Transiluane

The rewarde of
noble enterpryses.

The antiquitie had
no suche knowlege
of the worlde as
we haue.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF MAXIMILIAN TRANSILVANE,
SECRETARIE TO THE EMPEROVRS MAIESTIE:
wrytten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde,
the lorde Cardinall of Salfepurge, of the maruey-
lous and woonderfull nauigation made by the
Spanyardes rounde about the worlde in
the yeare of Christ. M. D. xix.



IN these daies my most honorable and reuerend lorde, returned one of those fve shippes which the yeare before Th[e]emperours beinge at Saragosa in Spayne, were at his maiesties commaundement sent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknown vnto vs, to seeke the Ilandes of spices. For albeit the Portugales brynge vs great quantitie of spycyces from that parte of Easte India whiche in owlde tyme was cauled *Aurea Chersonesus* (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche cite of *Malaccha*) yet in Easte India growe none of those spices excepte pepper. For other spices, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mafe, (whiche is the huske that couereth the shell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre con-

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

*Aurea
Chersonesus.
Malaccha.*

Spycyces.

treys and from Ilandes scarcely knowen by their names. From the whiche Ilandes they are brought in shyps or barkes made without any iren tooles, and tyed together with

cordes of date trees: with rounde sayles lykewife made of the fmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaued togyther. These barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and sayles they make theyr vyages with onely one wynde in the stearne or contrarywyfe.

Neyther yet is it a thyng greatly to bee marueyled at that these Ilandes where the spyces growe haue byn vnknowen fo many worldes past vnto owre tyme, forasmuch as all such thynges as vnto this day haue byn wrytten of owld autours of the places where spices growe, are all fabulous and false: In so muche that the countreys where they affirme theym to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettynge passe many other thynges that are wrytten, I wyll speake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwise a famous auctour) affirmeth that Sinamome, is founde in the toppes of the nestes of certeyne byrdes and foules that brynge it frome farre countreys, and especially the Phenyx, the which I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But Plinie who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reason that before his tyme many thynges were knowen and discouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, fayth that Sinamome groweth in that parte of Ethiope whiche the people inhabite cauled *Trogloditi*. Neuerthelesse it is nowe founde that Sinamome groweth very farre from all Ethiope and muche further frome the *Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to owre men which are nowe returned from those partes and the Ilandes of spices, hauynge also good knowlege of Ethiope, it was necessarie to passe farre beyonde Ethiope beefore they coome to these Ilandes, and to compasse abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most marueylous thyng that euer was doone by man vppon the earth fence the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to yowre honorable lordshippe and to declare the hole successe therof. As touchynge which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trewth aswell by relation of the Capitayne of that shyppe as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaue the self same information both to Th[e]mperours maiestie and dyuers other: And this with such faythfulnesse and sinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby also gyuen vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath hytherto byn sayde or written of owld autours as touchynge these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such fiete whose shadowe couereth theyr bodies? Or men of a cubite heygth, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then men? Of the which, neyther the Spanyardes who in owre tyme saylyng by the Ocean sea, haue discouered al the coastes of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales who compassyng about al Affryke haue passed by all the Easte and lykewyse discouered all those coastes vnto the great goulfe cauled *Sinus Magnus*, nor yet the Spanyardes in this theyr laste nauigation, in the which they compassed about the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wryte of such monsters: which doubtelesse they wold not haue omytted if they myght haue had certeyne knowelege therof. But nowe intendynge to speake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my preface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

The Ilandes of
Spices vnknowen
in owld tyme.

216

Herodotus.
Sinamome.
The Phenyx.

Plinie

The nauigations of
greate Alexander.
Ethiope.

Trogloditi.

The nauigation
abowte the worlde.

The owld
autours reproped.

Monsters.
The vyages of the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Sinus Magnus.

✦ A BRIEFE DECLARATION OF THE VYAGE
OR NAVIGATION MADE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

GATHERED OWT OF A LARGE BOOKE WRYTTEN HEREOF BY

MASTER ANTONIE PYGAFETTA VINCENTINE, KNYGHT OF THE RHODES

and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which,

Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom

sum caule *Magellanus*) was generall

Capitayne of the nauie.



Although Sebastian Munster in his vniuerfall Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowte two yeares fence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declarynge therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the Easte, faylyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compased the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a breefe repeticion of thys vyage, addyng hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munster, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of Antonie Pigafetta and Transiluanus wrytten of the same vyage. For albeit in deede it was a straunge

and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compased the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it more marueylous that the same was doone with one shippe and one coompanye of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepyng their continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the Easte. A thyng doubtlesse so much more woonderfull and strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted beefore, beyde the thousande daungious and perylles whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, aswell by wanderyng in vnknown coastes as also by faulyng into the handes of the Portugales by whose dominions in the Easte, they shulde needes passe of necessitie, not trustyng to theyr gentelnesse for the controuersie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyll therefore (as I haue sayde) make a breefe rehearfall of thys vyage from the begynnyng to the endyng: Omyttinge neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are more largely described in the bookes of *Maximilianus Transiluanus* and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

Sebastian Munster

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

217

Controuersie
betwene the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Ferdinando
Magalianes.

The Cape of saynt
Vincent

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Water engendered
of a clowde.

The Iland of saynt
Thomas.

Capo verde.

Guinea in
Ethyope.
Serralliona.

Fysshes and
monsters of the
sea.

The fyers of saynts
Helene and S.
Nicolas.
A tempest.

The naturall cause
of such fyers as
faule in the shyps.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes of
fyers engendered
of exhalations.

Trewe fyer and
false fyer.

218

Castor and Pollux.
The lyghtes of
saynt Peter and
saynte Nycolas.

They lost the
syght of the North
starre.

The lande of
Bresile.

The South pole.

Sugat.

The tenth day of August, in the yeare of owre lorde M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalianes departed from the porte of Siuile in Spayne with a nauie of fyue shyppes and two hundreth thirtie and feuen men, wel furnysshed with all thynges necessarie. And faylunge fyrste downe by the ryuer of *Guadalehiber* which runneth from the fayde porte into the sea, they came fyrste to a place named *Giouan Dulfaraz* where are manye vyllages of the Moores: And from thense arryued at a castel of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the sea and to the cape faynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and frome the fayde port. x. leaques, and is from thense to Siuile betwene xvii. and. xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouision of such thynges as they lacked.

Departynge from henfe the. xx. daye of September, they arryued the. xxvi. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes Canarie cauled *Tenerife*, beinge. xxv. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyde as though it descended from heauen and compafeth abowt a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and faulethe in streames from the roote of the same into certeine trenches and cesternes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficiently all th[e] inhabitants and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thyng is also seene in the Iland of faynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The thyrde day of October abowt mydnyght, the capytayne commaunded them to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoys vp theyr sayles directynge theyr courfe towarde the South, faylunge betwene *Capo Verde* of Affryke and the Ilandes lyinge abowt the same, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiiii. degrees and a halfe. They sayled thus, manye dayes in the fyght of the coaste of *Guinea*, of Ethiope, where is the mountayne cauled *Serra Liona* beinge. viii. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynds but a great calme and fayre wether for the space of threecore and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. In thys vyage they sawe many straunge fysshes and monsters of the sea beyde an other straunge thyng whiche appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr shyppes certeyne flames of fyre burnynge verye cleare, which they caul faynt Helen and faynt Nicolas. These appeared as though they had byn vpon the mast of the shyppes, in such clearnesse that they tooke away theyr fyght for the space of a quarter of an houre: by reason wherof, they fo wandered owte of theyr courfe and were dysparfed in funder, that they in maner dyspayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to theyr determyned courfe.

And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue here thought good to faye sumewhat of these straunge fyers, which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or fuche other phantasies wheras they are but natural thynges proceadyng of natural causes and engendered of certeyne exhalations. Of these therefore, the greate Philosopher of owre tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus* in his seconde booke *de Subtilitate*, wryteth in this maner.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That which is hurtful, is fyer in deede, engendered of malicious and venemous vapours which in successe of time take fyer as apt matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trewe fyer, but lyke the matter that is in such owld putrifed wod as giueth the shynynge of fyer without the substauce or qualitie therof. Of the kynde of trewe fyer, is the fyer baule or starre commonly cauled faynt Helen which is sumtyme seene abowt the mastes of shyppes, beinge of fuche fyery nature that it sumtyme melteth brafen vesselles, and is a token of drownynge, forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dryuen togyther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grose vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therefore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyers cauled in owlde tyme *Castor* and *Pollux* and now named the two lyghtes of faynt Peter and faynt Nycolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shyppes, leapyng from one to an other with a certeyne flutterynge noyse lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie and of the tempeste ouerpasse. For they are but vapoures cleauynge to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyer passynge from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securitie bycause they are lyttle, nor slowe or grosse, wherby they myght haue ioyned altogether in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, wheras beinge many and but lyttle, they are the sooner consumed.

Hetherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

When they had sayled paste the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the fyght of the north starre, and sayled by fouthweste vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bressil* whiche sum caule *Brafilia*, beinge. xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the fouth pole or pole Antartyke. This lande is continuate and one firme lande with the cape of faynte Augustine whiche is. viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreshed with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good fugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on faynt Lucies

day: where the fonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of *Brafile* is very large and great: and bygger then all *Spayne*, *Portugale*, *Fraunce*, and *Italie*: and is moſte abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by th[e]inſtincte of nature, and to th[e]age of. C. xx. [one hundred and twenty] and. C. xl. [one hundred and forty] yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houſes. They are very docible, and foone allured to the Chryſtian fayth.

Therteene dayes after that they arryued at the fayd port, they departed from this lande and fayled to the xxxiii. degree and a halfe toward the pole *Antartike* where they found a great ryuer of freſſhe water and certeyne *Canibales*. Of theſe they ſawe one owt of theyr ſhyppes, of ſtature as bigge as a gigante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Owre men purſued them, but they were ſo fwyfte of foote that they coulde not ouertake them. Abowt the mouth of this ryuer, are feuen Ilandes, in the byggeſt wherof, they founde certeyne precious ſtones, and cauled it the cape of faynt *Marie*. The *Spanyarde*s thought that by this ryuer they might haue paſſed into the fourth ſea. But they were deceaued in theyr opinion. For there was none other paſſage then by the ryuer which is. xvii. leaques large in the mouth.

Thus folowynge this coaſte by the tracte of the lande toward the pole *Antartyke*, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenyſhed with giefe and woolues of the ſea which ſum thynke to bee thoſe fyſhes that wee caule pikes. Theſe were in ſuch number that in an houre all the fyue ſhippes myght haue byn lade with giefe beinge all of blacke coloure, and ſuch as can not flye. They lyue of fyſſhe and are ſo fatte that they coulde ſcarſely fle theym. They haue noo fethers but a certeyne downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls. Theſe woolues of the ſea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggenesse of calues, with theyr heades of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungiour by tempeſt. But as foone as the three fyers cauled faynte *Helen*, faynte *Nycolas*, and faynt *Clare*, appered vpon the cabels of the ſhyppes, ſuddeynely the tempeſte and furye of the wyndes ceaſed.

Departynge frome henſe, they fayled to the 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole *Antartyke*: where beinge wyntered, they were inforced to remaine there for the ſpace of two monethes, all which tyme they ſawe no man except that one daye by chaunce they ſpyed a man of the ſtature of a gigante, who came to the hauen daunſyng and ſyngynge, and ſhortly after ſeemed to caſt duſt ouer his head. The capitayne fente one of his men to the ſhore with the ſhypp boate, who made the lyke ſigne of peace. The which thyng the gigante feinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitaynes ſeruaunte to his preſence into a lyttle Ilande. When he ſawe the capitayne with certeyne of his coompany abowte hym, he was greatly amafed and made ſignes holdynge vppe his hande to heauen, ſignifynge therby that owre men came from thenſe. This gigante was ſo bygge, that the head of one of owr men of a meane ſtature, came but to his waſte. He was of good corporature and well made in all the partes of his bodie, with a large vyſage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the moſt parte yelowe. Vppon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles abowt his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the ſkynne of a beaſte fowde togyther. This beaſte (as ſeemed vnto them) had a large head and great eares lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and tayle of a horſe. The feete of the giant were foulded in the ſkynne after the maner of ſhoos. He had in his hande, a bygge and ſhorte bowe, the ſtrynge whereof was made of a fynewe of that beaſte. He had alſo a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes fethered after the maner of owrs, typte with ſharpe ſtones in the ſteade of iren heades. The Capitayne cauled him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookynge glaſſe: In the which as foone as he ſawe his owne likeneſſe, was ſuddeynely afrayde and ſtarted backe with ſuch violence that he ouerthrewe two that ſtoode neareſt abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus gyuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with alſo a lookynge glaſſe, a combe, and a payre of beades of glaſſe, he fente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they ſawe an other giaunte of ſumewhat greater ſtature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande, As he drewe neare vnto owre menne, he layde his hande on his head and poynted vp toward heauen, and owr men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne fente his ſhypp boate to brynge him to a lyttle Ilande beinge in the hauen. This gigante was very tractable and pleaſaunt. He ſoonge and daunfed: and in his daunſynge lefte the printe of his feete on the grownde. He remayned longe with owre men who named hym *Iohan*. He coulde wel ſpeake and playnely pronounce theſe wordes: *Ieſus: Aue Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doo, but with a bygger voyce. The capitayne gaue hym a ſhert of linnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Alſo a cappe, a combe, a lookynge glaſſe, with dyuers ſuche other thynges, and ſo fente hym to his coompany. The day folowynge, he reforted ageyne to the ſhyppes, and brought with hym one of thoſe greate beaſtes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer ſawe hym more, ſuppoſynge hym to bee ſlayne of his owne coompany for the conuerſation he had with owre men.

After other. xv. dayes were paſte, there came foure other gigantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne buſſhes. The capitayne retheyned two of theſe whiche were youngeſt and

The greateneſſe of the land of *Braſile*.

Canibales.
Giantes.

Insula gemmarum.
Cap[e] *S. Marie*.

The pole
Antartike.
Geese.
Sea woolues

The. xlix. degree of the ſouth pole.

Giantes

219
The bygnes of the giants.

An other gigante.

Foure other gigantes.

Two gigantes are taken by a pollicie.

The deuyl Setebos.

Deuyls appere to the gigantes when they dye.

Patagoni.

220

The gigantes feedynge.

They conspire ageynst theyr Capitayne.

Confession.

The straight of Magellanus.
The South sea.

Mare pacificum.

The gigantes died for heat.

Capo Desiderato

Short nighte in the moneth of October.

Flying fyshes

The gigantes language.

The gyant is baptised.

Three monethes saylyng without the syght of lande.
Extreme famen.

beste made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyuynge them knyues, sheares, lookynge glaffes, belles, beades of crystall, and fuche other tryfels, he fo fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no more. Then caufed two payre of shackels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makyngne signes that he wold also gyue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel by cause they were made of bryght and shynynge metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycause theyr handes were full, the other gigantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not suffer them. When they felte the shackels faste abowte theyr legges, they begunne to doubt: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comferte and badde them stande styll. In fine when they sawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vppon theyr greate deuyl *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seperate and put in fundry shyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two. Yet was one of them with much difficulte ouerthrowne by nyne of owre men, and his handes bownde: but he suddely loofed hym selfe and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theyr flying, they shot of theyr arrowes and flewe one of owre men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere. x. or. xii. deuyls leapyng and daunfynge about the bodye of the deade, and seeme to haue theyr boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one seene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioyfynge. This greate deuyl they caule *Setebos*, and caule the lesse *Cheleule*. One of these gigantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had seene deuyls with two hornes aboute theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they cast furth fyre at theyr throtes both before and behynde. The Capitayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most part of them weare the skynnes of fuche beastes wherof I haue spoken before: And haue no houses of continuance, but maketh certeyne cotages whiche they couer with the sayde skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of raw fleshe and a certeyne sweete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of these which they had in theyr shippes, dyd eate at one meale a basket of byskette, and drunke a bowle of water at a draughte.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of saint Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspyrnyng the death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the treasurer Luigo of Mendoza was one. Certeyne of the other conspiratours, he left in the fayd land of *Patagoni*

Departynge from henfe to the. 52. degree toward the pole Antartike lackynge a thyrd parte, where they founde a ryuer of fresshe water and good fyfthe. Theyr shyppes were here in great daungour. They remayned twoo monethes in this porte where they made newe prouision of fresshe water, fuell, and fyfthe. Here the Capitayne caused all his men to bee confessed.

Approchynge to the. 52. degrees, they founde the straight nowe cauled the straight of Magellanus, beinge in sum place. C. x. [one hundred and ten] leaques in length: and in breadth sumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a leaque in bredth. On both the fydes of this strayght, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the enterance into the sea of *Sur*. This enterance the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the shyppes stole away priuily and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the gigantes who dyed as foone as he felt the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.

When the Capitayne *Magalianes* was past the straight and sawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so gladde therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whense he fyrst sawe that sea, *Capo Desiderato*.

Supposing that the shyp which stole away had byn loste, they erected a crosse vppon the top of a hyghe hyll to directe their course in the straight yf it were theyr chaunce to coome that way. They founde that in this strayght in the moneth of October the nyght was not past foure houres longe. They found in this strayght at euery three myles, a safe hauen and excellent water to drynke: woodde also and fyfthe, and greate plentie of good herbes. They thynke that there is not a fayrer strayght in the worlde. Here also they sawe certeyne flyinge fyfthes.

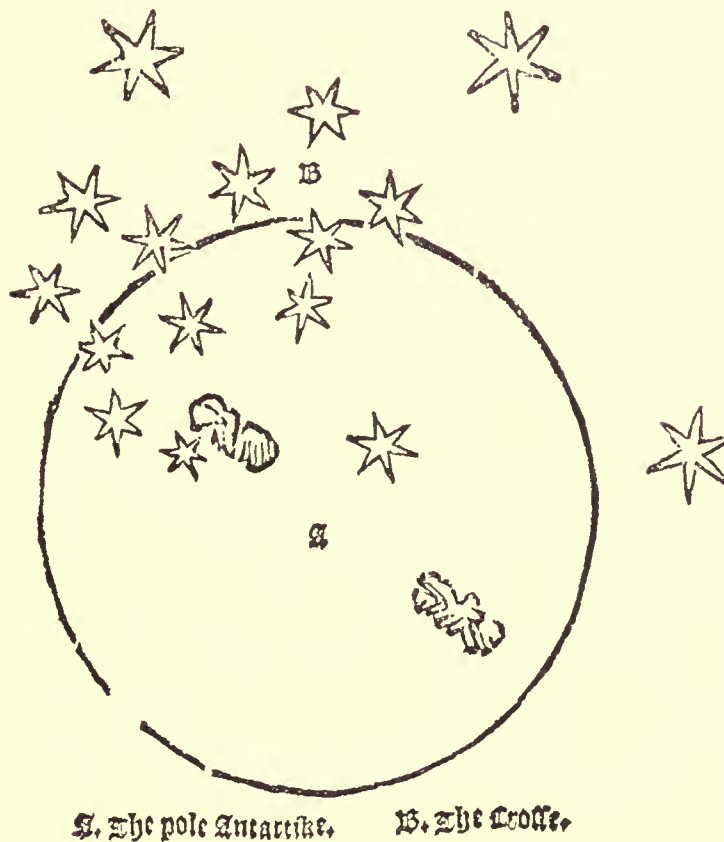
The other giante which remayned with them in the shyp, named breade *Capar*: water, Oli: redde clothe, *Cherecai*: red colour, *Cheiche*: blacke colour, *Amel*: And spoke al his wordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him and kyssed it, shewynge it vnto hym, he suddely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by signes that if they made any more crosses, *Setebos* wold enter into his body and make him bruff. But when in fine he sawe no hurte coome thereof, he tooke the crosse and imbraced and kyssed it oftentimes, desyryng that he myght bee a Chrystian before his death. He was therefore baptysed and named Paule.

Departynge owt of this strayght into the sea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the. xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they sayled three moonethes and. xx. dayes before they sawe any lande. And hauynge in this tyme consumed all theyr bysket and other vyttayles, they fell into fuche necessitie that they were inforced to eate the poudre that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woormes and stynkynge lyke pyffe by reason of the false water. Theyr fresshe water was also putryfied and become yelowe. They dyd eate skynnes and pieces of lether which were fouled about certeyne great ropes of the shypps. But these skynnes beinge made verye harde by reason of the soonne, rayne and wynde, they hunge them by a corde in the sea for the space of foure

or five dayes to mollifie them, and fodde them and eate them. By reason of this famen and vnclene feedyng, summe of theyr gummies grewe so ouer theyr teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyled. xix. men, and also the gigante with an Indian of the lande of Brafile otherwyfe cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of popingiayes. Befyde these that dyed. xxv. or. xxx. were so sicke that they were not able to doo any seruice with theyr handes or armes for feeblenesse: So that there was in maner none without sum disease. In these three monethes and. xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leaques in one goulfe by the sayle sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well bee so cauled forasmuch as in all this tyme hauyng no fyght of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. Duryng this tyme also, they discouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym infortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundreth leaques distante. The firste of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other fyue. Their failinge was in suche forte that they failed daily betweene. l. [fifty] lx. [sixty] to. lxx. [seuenty] leaques. So that in fine, if god of his mercy had not gyuen them good wether, it was necessary that in this foo greate a sea they shuld all haue dyed for hunger. Whiche neuerthelesse they escaped foo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with so good successe.

They confydered in this nauigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable starre after the forte of the pole Artike. But they sawe many starres gathered together, whyche are like two clowdes one separate a little from an other, and sum what darke in the myddest. Betweene these, are two starres not very bigge, nor muche shynninge, whiche moue a little: And these two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compassse varied sumwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole Artike. Neuerthelesse, had no suche force as when it is in these partes of the pole Artike. In so muche that it was necessarie to helpe the needle with the lode stone (commonly cauled the adamant) before they could faile therwith, bycause it moued not as it doothe when it is in these owre partes. When they were in the myddest of the goulfe, they sawe a croffe of five cleare starres directly toward the Weste, and of equall distance the one from the other.

The order of the starres about the pole Antartike, summe haue figured in this maner.



In these dayes they sayled betwene the West and South so farre that they approched to the Equinoctiall line, and were in longitude from the place from whense they fyrst departed, a hundreth and twentie degrees. In this course they sayled by two Ilandes of exceedyng height, wherof the one named *Cipanghu*, is. xx. degrees from the pole Antartike: And the other named *Sumbdit*. xv. degrees. When they were past the Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the West and Southwest at the quarter of the West towarde the Southwest more then a hundreth leaques, changinge theyr sayles to the quarter of the Southwest vntyll they came to the. xiii. degrees about the Equinoctial towarde the pole Artyke, intending as much as were possible, to approche to the cape cauled of the owld wryters *Cattigara*: The whiche is not founde as the owld Cosmographers haue described it, but is towarde the north about. xii. degrees as they afterwarde vnderstode.

When they had thus sayled. lxx. [seuenty] leaques of this

Diseases of famen.

221

Vnfortunate Ilandes.

What they sayled dayly

The starres about the south pole.

The needle of the coompass.

The lode stone.

222

The Equinoctial line.

The Ilandes of Cipanghu and Sumbdit

	<p>vyage in the. xii. degree about the Equinoctial, and. C.xlvi. [one hundred and forty-six] degrees of longitude (as I haue sayde) the fyxte day of March they discouered a lyttle Ilande towarde the north-west, and two other towarde the fouthweste: but the one was hygher and bygger then the two other. In the byggest of these, the generall capitayne wolde haue rested hym selfe a while: but he coulde not by reason the people of these Ilands resorted continually to the shippes with their canoas, and stole nowe one thyng and nowe an other, in such forte that our men could take no reste, and therefore demaunded of the capitayne that they myght slyke theyr sayles to brynge the shippes to land. But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande with fortie armed men, and burnt about fiftie of theyr houfes with many of theyr Canoas: And flewe also about seuen men, and recouered a shyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had stolne, and so departed folowyng his vyage. The Capitayne named these Ilands <i>Insulae Latronum</i>, that is, the Ilands of theeues. When our men had so wounded summe of theym with arrowes that they were slyken throughe bothe sydes, they pulled furth the arrowes not ceasyng to marueyle at them tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other fo depart, but styll folowed the shippes with more then two hundreth of theyr boates, approchyng as nere to the shippes as they coulde, and proferyng owre men certeyne fysshes. As the shippes passed with full sayle in the myddeste of theyr boates, they sawe in sum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearyng theyr heare, which owre men thought they did for the death of theyr husbandes. As farre as they could perceau, these people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouernour. They go naked and haue blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr wastes. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke vnto an olyue. Their women are well faoured with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachyng to the grownde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they esteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of <i>Cocus</i>. Their boates are sum all blacke, sum whyte, and sum redde, and haue sayles made of the broade leaues of date trees fowd togyther. In the steade of a rudder, they vse a certeyne brode boorde with a staffe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They sayle so swyftely that they seeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns swymmyng about the water.</p>
<p><i>Insulae Latronum</i></p>	<p>The tenth day of March, in the yeare. 1521. they wente alande vpon a lyttle Ilande named <i>Zamal</i>. xxx. leaques dystant from the Ilande of theeues. Bycause this Ilande was not inhabyted, they rested here a while, where the capitayne caused a pavilion to bee pyched for the sicke and crafed men, and a hogge to bee kylde.</p>
<p>People with longe heare They colour their teethe.</p>	<p>The. xviii. day of Marche, they sawe a boate with nyne men commyng towarde them shewyng them felues ioyfull and reioyfyng of theyr commyng. They brought many presentes with them, and seemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capitayne a great fysh, and a great vessel of the wyne of those date trees whiche beare the frute <i>Cocus</i>. They made also signes that within the space of foure dayes, they wolde bryng ryffe and dyuers foules and beasts as they dyd in deede.</p>
<p>The Ilande of Zamall</p>	<p>This <i>Cocus</i> is a frute of certeyne date trees whereof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, and hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which droppeth a sweete licour from the tree lyke vnto newe whyte wine sumwhat tart, and let the reede continewe there from mornyng tyll euenyng, and from euenyng to mornyng. The frute of this tree cauled <i>Cocus</i>, is as bygge as the head of a man or more. The fyrste rynde of this, is greene and of the thykenesse of two fyngers, hauyng in it certeyne threedes wherof they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Vnder this rynde, there is a thicke shell whiche they burne and make powder therof and vse it as a remedie for certeyne diseases. Vnder this shell, is a whyte substaunce lyke the carnell of a nutte being a fynger in thickenesse, which they eate with flesshe and fyssh as wee doo breade. It hath the taste of an almonde, and is vsed in the steade of breade when it is dried. In the myddeste of this carnell, is a cleare and sweete water, beinge very holfome and cordiale. This water sumtyme congeleth and lyeth within the shell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they suffer only the water to putrifie and then fet it to the foonne where it becommeth vineger lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddeste of the frute, and strayne it thorowe a cloth, they make a mylke therof lyke vnto goates mylke. These date trees are lyke vnto them that beare dates, but are not so full of knottes. With the iuife of two of these date trees, a hole famelie of tenne persons may bee maynteyned with wyne vsyng one. viii. dayes, and the other, other. viii. dayes: for they shulde els bee dried and wythered. These trees continue for the space of a hundreth yeares. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentell people, is cauled <i>Zuluan</i>, and is not verie bygge. About this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and therefore named this sea <i>Archipelago di San Lazarus</i>, that is, the great sea of saynte Lazarus, beinge tenne degrees about the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole, and. C. lxi. [one hundred and sixty-one] from the place from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are <i>Caphranita</i> that is gentyles. They go naked fauyng that they couer theyr priuie partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a certeyne tree. The</p>
<p>Wyne of date trees.</p>	<p>223</p>
<p>The maruelous frute <i>Cocus</i>.</p>	
<p>The Iland of Zuluan. The sea cauled Archipelago di san Lazarus. Gentyles.</p>	

chiefeft men, haue abowte theyr heades a fylken cloth of needle woorke. They are groffe and brode fet and of the coloure of an oliue. They annoynte theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus* to defend them ageynft the heate of the foonne and dryneffe of the wynde. The. xxv. day of Marche, they departed from henfe and directed their courfe betwene the Weſte and fouthweſt, and fayled betwene foure Ilandes named *Cenalo*, *Huinanghan*, *Hibuffon*, and *Abarien*. etc.

The. xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan* where they were honorably interteyned of the Kynge and the Prince his foonne who gaue them muche golde and fpices. The capitayne gaue the kynge a veſture of red clothe and an other of yelow made after the Turkyſſhe faſſhyon, and alſo a red cappe. And gaue likewiſe to other that came with hym, certeyne knyues, glaſſes, and beades of criſtalle: After that, the capitayne had ſhewed the Kynge the ſecretes of his ſhippe and fuche marchaundies as he had therin, he cauſed a piece of ordinaunce ſuddenly to bee ſhote of, whereat the kyng was greatly amaſed vntil the capitayne comforted hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be armed from the heade to the foote, and cauſed three other to ſtrike hym with theyr ſwoordes, whereat the Kynge maruayled greatly, and fayde to th[e]interpretoure (who was a ſlaue borne in Malacha) that one of thoſe armed men was able to encounter with a hundreth of his men. But he maruayled muche more when the capitaine tould hym by th[e]interpretoure howe he founde the ſtraight by the compaſſe and lode ſtone, and howe many dayes they were without fight of any lande. Then aſkyng licence to departe, the capitayne ſente two of his men with him, of the whiche Antonie Pigafetta was one. When the kynge ſawe Antonie Pigafetta write the names of many thinges, and afterwarde rehearſe them ageyne, he maruayled yet more, makinge ſyngnes that fuche men deſcended from heauen. The Kynge brought them firſte to his pallaice where he interteyned them honorably and gaue them manye gyftes, as dyd alſo the Prince in his pallaice beyng in an other Ilande named *Caleghan*.

As they fyfted a certeyne myne of earthe in the Kynges Ilande, they founde pieces of golde, ſum as bigge as nuttes and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges veſſelles were of golde, and his houſe well furnyſhed. In all the hole nation there was no man of coomlier perſonage then the kinge. He had his heare long downe to his ſhoulders, and very blake, with a vaile of filke rowled abowte his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had abowte hys myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and filke impaled wyth golde, and reacheinge downe to his knees. On his one fyde, he had a long dager with a haſte of golde, and the ſhete of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, three ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of ſtorax and Benjamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue: And all his bodie byfyde paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Raia Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Raia Siagu.

The laſte day of Marche neare vnto Eaſter, the capitaine cauſed his preeſte to fay maſſe, and ſente to the kinge by th[e]interpretoure, that his comyng a lande at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare maſſe. The Capitayne came alande with fyftie of his men in theyr beſt apparelle withoute weapons or harniffe, and all the reſydue well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he cauſed fixe pieces of ordinaunce to be ſhote of in token of peace, and ſo came aland, where the two kinges embraced hym, and accompanied hym to the place appoynted for maſſe to be fayde not farre frome the ſea fyde. Sumwhat before the beginnyng of maſſe, the Capitayne ſprinkled the Kynges with damaſke water. When the preeſte was at mid maſſe at the offitorie, the kings profered them felues to go to kyſſe the croſſe with the capytayne, but offered nothyng. At the tyme of facringe when the preeſte liſted vppe the bodie of Chriſt, and the Chriſtians kneeled downe and helde vppe their handes ioyned togiſther, the kynges dyd the like alſo wyth greate reuerence. In the meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Chriſtians were at the communion, a handegunne was ſhote of to ſignifie vnto theym that were in the ſhyppes, to diſcharge all theyr ordinaunce. When maſſe was ſynyſhed, the Capitaine cauſed certeyne of his men to put on theyr harniffe and to make a combat with theyr naked ſwoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great pleaſure. This doone, the Capitaine cauſed a croſſe to be brought furth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyuynge commaundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and ſignifyinge to the kynges by th[e]interpretour that that banner was gyuen hym by Th[e]emperoure his lorde and maſter, with commaundement to leaue the ſame in al places where he came to the great commoditie and profite of all ſuch as wolde reuerendly receaue it as an aſſured token of frendſhip: And that he wold therfore leaue it there aſwel to accompliſhe his lords commaundement, as alſo that if at any tyme any ſhyppes of Chriſtians ſhulde chaunce to coome that way, ſhulde by ſeing that croſſe perceaue that owre men had byn well enterteined there, and wolde therfore not onely abſteyne from doing them any hurte or diſpleaſure, but alſo helpe to ayde them ageynſte theyr enemies. And that therfore it ſhulde bee requiſite to erecte that croſſe vppon the toppe of the hygheſte mountayne that myght bee ſeene from the ſea on euery fyde. Alſo to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in ſo doinge, they ſhulde not bee hurte with thunder, lyghtnyng, or tempeſtes. When the kynges harde theſe woordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thankes, promyſinge gladly to obſerue and fulfyll all fuche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answered that

Foure Ilandes

The Iland of Buthuan.

The Iland of Caleghan.

Plentie of golde.

224

The kynge of Buthuan.

Maſſe.

A combatte.
The Croſſe and
crowne of thornesMoores and
gentyles

Many Ilandes

The Ilande of
Messana.Battes as bygge as
Eagles.
Fowles with
hornes.

225

Egges hatched in
sand.The Ilande of
Zubut.The kyng of
Zubut.A shyp laden with
gold and slaues.Calicut.
Malacha.

they had none other kynde of religion, but that lystynge vppe theyr handes ioyned togyther and theyr faces toward heauen, they cauled vppon theyr god *Abba*, whiche answere lyked the Capitayne very well, bycaufe the gentyles are fooner perswaded to owre fayth then the Moores. etc.

Departynge from henfe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zeilon*, *Zubuth*, *Meffana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the fayde kynges. Of these, *Zubuth* is the beste, and hath the trade of beste trafique. In the Ilande of *Meffana*, they founde dogges, cattes, hogges, hennes, goates, ryfe, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barlye, fygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole. ix. degrees two thyrd partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whenfe they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the space of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the northweft, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, *Zeilon*, *Bohol*, *Canghu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*. In this Ilande of *Catighan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also flocke dooues, turtle dooues, popping-iaies, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. These foules haue lyttle hornes, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubet depthe in the fande, by the heate whereof and vertue of the foonne, they are hatched, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the fande by them felues. From the Ilande of *Meffana* to *Catighan* are. xx. leaques faylynge towarde the West. And bycaufe the kyng of *Meffana* coulde not folowe the shyppes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Pozon*, where the Capitayne tooke hym into his shippe with certeyne of his principall men, and so folowed theyr vyage towarde the Ilande of *Zubut*, whiche is aboute fiftie leaques distante from *Catighan*.

The. vii. day of Apryll aboute noone, they entered into the porte of *Zubut*: And passynge by many vyllages and habitacions in trees, they came to the cite, where the Capitayne gaue commaundement to the maryners to slyrke theyr fayles and to fet them felues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing all the ordinaunce to bee shotte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne sent an ambassadoure with th[e]interpretoure to the kyng of *Zubut*. When they approached nere to the cite, they founde the kyng with a great company of men fore astonysed at the noyse of the gunnes. But th[e]interpretour aduertifed them that it was the custome of owre men in al suche places where they coome, to discharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendeshyppe and to honour the lorde of the cite. With which woordes the kyng and his coompany were well quieted. After this, th[e]interpretour declared that his master was the Capitayne of the ships of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they wente to discouer the Ilandes of Molucca: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the reporte of the kyng of *Meffana*, they determyned to visite hym and to haue vyttayles for exchange of theyr marchaundies. The kyng answered that he was well contented therewith, and that they were hartely welcoome. Neuerthelesse, that it was a custome in that place, that all such shyppes as entered into that hauen, shuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes paste, fence a shyppe laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchauntes of that coompany whiche yet remayned with hym. To this th[e]interpretour answered, that forasmuch as his lorde was the Capitayne of so myghtie a Prince, he neuer payde tribute to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. Wyllynge hym to take this for a resolute answere, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enioy it, And if he rather desyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. When th[e]interpretour had fayde these woordes, one of the fayde marchauntes (who was a Moore) spake to the kyng in this maner. *CATACAIA Chita*: that is. Take hede fyr. For these men are they that haue conquered Calicut, Malaca, and all the greater India: and are of suche poure that yf yowe intreate them otherwyfe then well, yowe may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at Calicut and Malaca. When th[e]interpretoure harde these woordes, he fayde that the kyng his lorde was of much greater puiffaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more shyppes then was the kyng of Portugale: declarynge further that he was kyng of Spayne and Emperour of all Christendome. Addynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter sende thyther suche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his contrey. The Moore conferred all these woordes with the kyng, who fayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counfayle, and gyue them a full answere the daye folowynge. In the meane tyme he sente them certeyne vyttayles and wyne. When all these thynges were declared to the kyng of *Meffana* who was the chiefe there aboute nexte vnto hym, and lorde of many Ilandes, he wente alande and repayred to the kyng of *Zubut* and declared vnto hym the great humanitie and curtesie of the generall Capitayne. Shortely after, the Capitayne sente certeyne of his men with th[e]interpretour to the kyng of *Zubut* to knowe his pleasure and what aunswere he wolde make them. As they wente towarde the courte, they mette the kyng commynge in the streete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He caused owr men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Capitayne in theyr coompany: And whether it were theyr requeste that he shulde pay tribute to Th[e]emperour. They answered that they desyred none other thyng but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng

made answere that he was well content therwith: wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendshippe to fende him a little of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmyng that he wold do the lyke. etc.

After this the kynge of Messana with the kynge of *Zubut* his neuie (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylnen, came to the shyppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly presentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perswaded them to the Christian fayth, which they gladly embraced, and tooke siche pleasure in hearynge the articles of owre beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptifed, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothyng more precious then drynkyng glaffes of Venice worke.

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng in his pallaice fittyng vppon a floure or fluorie made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparell but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangyng before his priue partes. On his heade, he had a vayle of needle worke: and abowte his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde wherein were inclosed many precious stoncs. He was but of smaule stature, but sumewhat grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof sum were lyke vnto flamyng fyre. Before hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellana*, with foddren egges. Also four vessels of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure doughters verie well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He caused them to daunce all naked, and therwith to syng, and play on certeyne tymbrelles made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the shyppes. And when certeyne of theyr coompanye desyred the kynge to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and master, how much more ought the grounde fo to be.

They greatly marueyled at the cerimonies perteynyng to the maner of owre funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were set at bothe th[e]ndes [of] the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vse waightes and measures. Theyr houfes are made of Timber and sawne boordes: and are so buylded aboue the grownde vppon proppes and pyles, that they ascende to the same by certeyne staires. Vnder theyr houfes, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

When they came to barteryng, they gaue golde, ryffe, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for sume of owre tryfels of smaule value. They gaue tenne *Pesos* of golde for. xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One *pesus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The Sunday folowyng, the kynge was baptifed with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonysht him before not to bee afrayde at the shootyng of of the ordinaunce, bycause it was theyr custome so to doo at such solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caused theym to breake all theyr Idoles, and to fet vppe the crosse in dyuers places, prayyng to the same bothe mornyng and euenyng kneelyng on theyr knees and holdyng vp theyr handes ioyned togyther. The kyng in his baptifme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the Prince, Ferdinando after the name of his maiesties brother. The kynge of Messana was named Iohn, and the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue such names as are commonly vsed in Christendome. And thus beefore masse was begunne, were fye hundreth men baptifed. When masse was synyshted, the Capitayne inuited the kynge to dyne with hym in his shypp, and at his comyng, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptifed with fortie of her gentlewomen, and her daughter the Princes wife. The queene was very younge and fayre, hauyng her body couered with a white cloth. Her lypes were redde, and she had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes. This crowne and the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of. viii. dayes, th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande were baptifed excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wolde not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Wheryppon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his men thither, who burnt the towne and erected a crosse in that place bycause the people of the vyllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is Machumetistes) they wold haue erected a pyller of stone, bycause the Moores are more flooberne and harder to bee conuerted then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where shee shuld heare masse, shee came furth with great pompe and solemnitie, hauyng goyng before her three younge damofelles and three men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee folowed apparelled in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of fyke vppon her heade fringed abowte with golde, whiche couered her hatte and hunge downe to her shoulders. Shee had also a great trayne of women folowyng her, beinge all barefooted and naked, excepte that vppon theyr heades and priue partes, they wore certeyne vayles of silke, and hadde theyr heare spredde.

Before the kynge of *Zubut* was baptifed, he was named Raia Humabuon. When the Capitayne demanded of hym why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng to his promesse, he answered that they esteemed them no more as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Princes brother who was very sycke,

Sheddyng of
bludde is a token
of frendshyppe

226

The kynge of
Zubut is baptifed

The kynge of
Zubut his apparell

Well fauoured
women.

Barteryng
Pesus what.

They breake theyr
Idoles and erecte
the crosse.

Fye hundreth
men baptifed.

The queene of
Zubut.

227

The queenes
apparell

A miracle.	and as noble and wyttie a man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if he wolde burne al his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Christ, and bee baptised, he shulde be immediatly restored to health, and that he wolde els gyue them leaue to stryke of his heade. By these woordes and persuasions of the Capitayne, he conceaued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he felt no more greefe of his diseafe. And this was a manifest myracle wrought in owre tyme wherby dyuers infidels were conuerted to owr fayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also theyr altares ouerthrowen on the whiche they were accustomed to eate the sacrificed fleshe. The people of the Ilande pay the kynge a portion of vittayles for their tribute by all their cities and vyllages.
The Iland of Mathan.	Not farre from this Ilande of <i>Zubut</i> , is the Iland of <i>Mathan</i> , whose inhabitants vse maruelous ceremonies in their sacrifices to the foonne and burying the deade. They were rynges of golde about their priuie members. The Ilande is gouerned by two Princes wherof the one is named <i>Zula</i> , and the other <i>Cilapulapu</i> . And wheras this <i>Cilapulapu</i> refused to pay tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne went ageynst hym in his owne person with. lx. of his menne armed with coates of mayle and helmettes. <i>Cilapulapu</i> diuided his army into three battayles, hauynge in euery battaile two thousand and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and iauelins hardened at the poyntes with fyer. This continued longe and sharpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and prefynge hym felse in the brunte of the battayle, was fore wounded and slayne, forasmuch as the moste of the Barbarians directed all theyr force ageynst hym. Besyde the Capitayne, were slayne of owre men about. viii. or. ix. Of the Barbarians, were. xv. slayne and many fore wounded. After the death of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the which one was <i>Odoardo Barbeffa</i> a Portugale, and the other <i>Iohn Serrano</i> who was shortly after betrayde by th[e] interpretour and taken prisoner with dyuers other.
The capitaine Magellanus is slayne.	Certeyne dayes before the Capitaynes death, they hadde knowleage of the Ilandes of Molucca whiche they chiefly fought. Departynge therfore from the Ilande of <i>Mathan</i> , they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Iland named <i>Bohol</i> . In the mydde of this mayne sea (whiche they named <i>Archipelagus</i>) they consulted to burne the shyppe named <i>Conception</i> , bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyshe the other two shyppes with th[e] artillerie therof. Thus directynge theyr course towarde Southewest, they came to an other Ilande named <i>Pauiloghon</i> , where they founde blacke men lyke vnto the <i>Sarafins</i> . Shortly after, they arriued at an other great Iland, whose kyng named <i>Raia Calauar</i> , intreated them very frendly in all thynges as dyd the kyng of <i>Messana</i> . This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of ryffe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other thynges. It is named <i>Chippit</i> , and is. viii. degrees aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde owr pole: And in longitude from the place from whense they first departed. 170. degrees: And about. 50. leaques from <i>Zubut</i> .
The Iland of Bohol. They burnt one of theyr shyppes.	Departynge frome henfe they came to an other Iland named <i>Caghaian</i> being. 40. leaques from <i>Chippit</i> as they sayled betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Ilande is very greate, and in maner vnhabited. The people are moores, and were banysshed owt of the Ilande of <i>Burnei</i> whiche sum caule <i>Porne</i> .
Blacke men.	Frome this Ilande aboute. xxv. leaques betwene the west and northeweste, they founde a maruelous frute-full Ilande named <i>Pulaoan</i> , beinge towarde owr pole aboute the Equinoctiall. ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C.lxxix. [one hundred and seventy-nine] degrees and a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.
The Iland of Chippit.	Frome this Ilande. x. leaques towarde the South weste, they fawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounte as they sayled by the coastes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boyfious and darke tempeste which ceased as soone as the fiers of the three fayntes (wherof we haue spoken before) appeared vpon the cabells. Frome the beginnynge of this Ilande to the porte, are syue leaques. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth. xxv. thousande houfes. The kynge interteyned owre men very frendlye, and sent them bysyde many other presentes, two elephantes trapped with silke to bring them to his pallaice that brought the presentes which the Capytaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named <i>Raia Siripada</i> . He is a kynge of greate poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of <i>Burnei</i> is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole syue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departynge. C. lxxvi. [one hundred and seventy-six] degrees and two thirde partes.
The Iland of Caghaian.	Departynge frome <i>Burnei</i> , they came to an Ilande cauled <i>Cimbubon</i> , beinge. viii. degrees aboute the Equinoctiall lyne. Here they remayned. xl. days to calke theyr shyppes and furnyshe them with fresshe water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and traualle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shooes and in maner theyr other apparell beinge worne by reason of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leaues as soone as they faule on the grounde, doo flurre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leaues of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery syde as it were two short and blunt fiets. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde seene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddelye moue and flarte away. <i>Antonie Pigafetta</i> kepte one of them in a platter for the space of. viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde about the platter. He supposeth that they liue only by ayer.
The Iland of Pulaoan. 228	
The Iland of Burnei or Porne.	
A great citie.	
Elephantes	
The Iland of Cimbubon.	
Leaues of trees which seeme to liue.	

Departynge from henfe, they directed theyr courfe by the Weſte quarter towarde the Southeaſte, to fynde the Ilandes of Molucca, and fayled not farre from certeyne mountaynes where they founde the ſea full of great weedes and herbes.

From henfe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Taghima*, in the which are founde perles of exceadyng biggenefſe.

Folowyng theyr courſe toward the north Eaſt, they came to a great citie named *Mangdando*, lyinge aboue the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where they tooke a canoa of certeyne of th[e] inhabitants: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte theyr courſe towarde the north Eaſte, and folowed the South eaſte nere vnto a cape of the Iland of *Buthuan*, they were aduertifed for certentie that on the bankes of a certeyne ryuer, there dwelte men ouergrown with heare, and of high ſtature.

Folowyng ſtill theyr courſe by the fouth eaſte, and paſſyng by many ſmaule Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca* the fyfte daye of Nouember and the xxvii. monethe after theyr departure owt of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioyfull and gyuyng thankes vnto god, they diſcharged all theyr ordynaunce. In the coaſte of all theſe Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of Molucca, foundyng with theyr plummet, they founde the deapthe of the ſea to bee no leſſe then a hundreth and two yardes, which is contrary to the faying of the Portugales who affyrme that no ſhypp can paſſe that way without great daungiore by reaſon of the ſhalownes and rockes or ſhelues: and for the darkeneſſe which the clowdes caufe in the heauen. All which thyngs they fayned to th[e] intent that none other ſhulde haue knoweledge of theyr vyagies.

The viii. day of Nouember in the yere. 1521. before the ryfinge of the foonne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca, where they were honorably interteyned of the kynge who declared that he had longe before ſeene a fygne in heauen that certeyne ſhyppes ſhuld comme from a farre contrey to the Ilandes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat therof he conſydered the ſtations of the moone, he ſawe therein the comyng of owre ſhyppes, and that we were the men whome he ſeemed to ſee in the ſame. Wherupon he profered hym ſelfe to enter into leaque of frendſhippe with the kynge of Spayne, and to accepte owre men as his brotherne and chyldren: wylyng them to come alande as into theyr owne houſes. Alſo that for theyr comyng, that Ilande ſhulde no more bee cauled *Tidore*, but Caſtile for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kynge whom he reputed as his lorde and maſter. This kynge is a Moore, and is named Raia Sultan Mauzor.

The Ilandes of Molucca are ſiue in number, and are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of theſe, *Tarenate* is the chiefeſt.

Directly ageynſte the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyxe hundreth chyldren, and the other fixe hundreth and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not ſo many women as doo the Moores nor yet lyue in fuche ſuperſtitious. They praye to the fyrſte thyng that they meete in the mornynge when they go furth of theyr houſes, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the fayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are reedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holfome to bee drunke.

The xii. daye of Nouember, the kynge of *Tidore* appoynted owre men a ware houſe in the citie where they might ſell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this fort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to foure Cantari and fyxe pounce weight: And one Cantar is a hundreth pounce weight. For xv. yardes of cloth ſumwhat woofe then the other, they receaued in Cambie, one Bahar. For xxxv. drynkynge cuppes of glaſſe, they had one Bahar. For xvii. Cathyls of quicke fyluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the ſhyppes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, fygges of a ſpanne longe, alſo the frute cauled *Cocus*, with dyuers other kyndes of vyttayles in fuch quantitie that it was a marueylous thyng to beholde. They furnyſhed alſo theyr ſhyppes with freſſhe water which is hotte as it iſſheweth owt of the ſprynge, but is very coulde when it hath ſtoode a while in an other place. It ſpryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They ſawe a cloude ryfe in maner dayly, which compafeth about the fayde mountaynes.

The kynge of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, ſente the kynge of Spayne two deade byrdes of ſtraunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle dooues, with lyttle heades and longe bylles: alſo longe and ſmaule legges and no wynges, but in the ſteade therof certeyne longe fethers of diuers colours, and tayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other fethers are of one coloure much lyke vnto tawny, except thoſe of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. Theſe Moores are of opinion that theſe byrdes comme from the heauenlye Paradyſe, and therefore caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byrdes of god.

When they were determynd to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they refreſhed theyr ſhyppes with freſhe water and fueell. The kynges ſent Th[e]emperours maieſtie many preſentes: and embraſyng owre menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And owre men for theyr laſte farewell, ſhotte

A ſea full of weedes.

Perles.

Men ouergrown with heare.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The Portugales are reproued.

Tidore one of the Ilandes of Molucca.

A viſion in the planettes

229

The ſiue Ilandes of molucca.

Tarenate.

The Iland of

Gilolo.

Moores and

gentyles.

Golde.

Water in reedes.

Theyr maner of bartering.

Water of a ſtraunge qualitie

Byrdes of a ſtraunge forme.

They leaue one of
theyr shyppes
behynd them.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
Hony of flyes.

Popingiayes

The Iland of
Tidore.

Ternate.
Mutir.
Macchian.

230

Bacchian.

Many Ilands

The Iland of
Mallua.
Pepper.

Tytte men with
longe eares.

The Iland of
Timor.
Whyte sanders
and ginger.

The deuyl
appeareth.
Saynt Iob his
disease.

Cinamome
The Ilandes of
Giava.
Malaccha.

The greate goulfe
of China.

The cape of
Malaccha.

The names of
many regions.

Reubarbe.

The greate kyng
of China.

of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr shyppes leaked and toke water very fore: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But feinge that they coule fynde no remedie for the fame but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuyng order that if afterwarde it coule bee repayred, they shuld returne into Spayne as well as they coule.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, breade of the roote of Sagu, ryfe, goates, sheepe, hennes, fygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and fowre, oranges, lemondres, and hony which is made of certeyne flyes leffe then antes: Also canes of fuger, oyle of Cocus, mellons, gourdes, and a marueilous coule frute which they name *Camulicai* and dyuers other frutes. Furthermore whyte and redde poppingiayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paffe fiftie yeares fence the moores fyrste inhabited anye of these Ilands, which were before inhabited only with gentyles.

The Ilande of Tidore, is aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde owre pole, abowt. 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whense they departed. 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Iland of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theeues. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of fouth fouthwest, and north northeast. *Ternate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line foure minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line. *Macchian* is. xv. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and *Bacchian* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke foure sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The byggest of all these, is *Bacchian*.

Departyng from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng their course towarde the fouthwest, with onely. xlvi. men in theyr shyppes and. xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of Chacouan, Lagoma, Sico, Gioghi, Caphi, Sulacho, Lumatola, Tenetum, Buru, Ambon, Budia, Celaruri, Benaia, Ambalao, Bandan, Zorobua, Zolot, Noceumam, Galian, and Mallua, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smaule, of Moores, Gentyles, and Canibales. Owre men remayned xv. dayes in the Ilande of Mallua to repayre theyr shyppes in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and. 40. minutes.

The pilote which owre men brought owt of the Ilandes of Molucca, toulde them that not farre from thense, was an Iland named Arucetto in the which are men and women not past a cubite in height, hauyng eares of fuch byggenesse that they lye vpon one and couer them with the other. But owr men wolde not sayle thither, bothe bycause the wynde and course of the sea was ageynste theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The. xxv. day of Ianuary in the yeare. 1522. they departed from Mallua, and the day folowyng, arryued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fve leaques distante from Mallua betwene the fouth and fouthwest. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also fundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of vyttayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giava*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, refort to this Ilande for sanders. Th[e] inhabitants are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyl appeareth to them in dyuers formes and asketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the disease of saynt Iob (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and northwest they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe the plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde manye Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behynde an other, euen vnto the Ilande of the greater *Giava*, named *Giava maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in East India. *Giava* the lesse, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a leaque distante from *Giava maior*. Here they were informed that aboute *Giava maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *China*, in the which are trees of exceedyng byggenesse, inhabyted with foules of fuche greatenes that they cary great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as bygge as cucummers.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde the pole Artike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by these names, *Cingaporla* which is the cape. Also *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braalin*, *Benau*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the cite in the which dwelleth the kyng of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Theyr cities are builded as owres are, and subiecte to the kyng of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Jamgoma* and *Campaa* where Reubarbe groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, some supposyng it to bee a roote, and other a putryfied tree, affirmyng that yf it were not putryfied, it shulde not haue so great a fauour. They caule it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whose kyng is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they lerned by th[e] information of a Moore that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the fayde kyng hathe the threecore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hathe a porte in the sea named *Canthan*: And two principal cities named *Nauchin* and *Connulaha* where he remayneth hym selfe, and hath euer foure of

his chiefe princes lying abowt his pallaice on euery fyde, towarde the Easte, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dylygente attendaunce what is doone in euerye of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*,) and of that wherof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kynge. And in token that they are trewe subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middest of theyr cities, the beste cauled *Linx*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges fignette, whiche all suche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them sealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr safe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the hauen.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are difobedient, he caufeth them to be flene, and falted and dried at the foone: Then to bee stuffed with chaffe, and fette vppe on fum hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe freate of the cite where al the people may see it. He neuer suffereth his owne perfon to bee openly seene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are defyrour to see hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche pauylyon accompanied with fyxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vestures as is he hym selfe. All thys way he is not seene by reafon of the pauylyon. When he hath passed through the pauylyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagha*, being the most marueylous and ryche woork of the worlde, and placed in the greateft courte of the pallaice. When the kynge entereth into this with the women, to th[e]intent that he may not be knowen among them, he caufeth the fayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breste of the serpente, where they see the kynge amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneth in mariage with hys systre that the blud royall bee not myxt with any other. His pallaice is enuironed with feuen large walles, the one being farre dystante from the other. And hath in euery such circuite tenne thowfande men for the garryfon of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them course by course with fresshe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that serue the kynge hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyfycence. He that wolde see all the pallaice, shulde spend a hole day therin. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where sumtymes the kynge gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of these, one is couered both aboue and beneth with metall, an other all ouer with fyluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious stones. These people of *China*, are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the crosse in fum eflimation, but knowe not the cause whye. Beyonde the coaste of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearles and cynamon are founde. Also the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kynge of Mien, hauyng vnder hym. xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is also founde the great cite of CATHAY in the East, and dyuers other nations in the fayd firme land, of the which sum are brutyshe and bestiall which vse to kyll and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking therby that they shall reuyue in them. All these people are gentyles.

The. xi. day of February in the yere. 1522. they departed from the Iland of *Timor* and were ingulfed by chance in the great fea cauled *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr course betwene the weste and south weste, leauyng the northe coastes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng least if they shuld fayle toward the firm land, they myght bee feene of the portugales who are of great power in *Malacca*: and therefore dyrected theyr cours without the Iland of *Sumatra* cauled in owld tyme *Taprobana*: Leauyng also on theyr ryght hand vpon the fyrm land, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambaia*, the goulfe of the Ilande of *Ormus*, and all the coastes of the greater India. And more safely to passe the cape of *Buona Speranza* being aboue Affrike, they sayled about. xlii. degrees toward the pole Antartike, and remayned feuen weekes abowte that cape with many fetches compassyng the wynd with theyr fayles contynually alofte, because they had a west and north weste wynd in the proos of theyr shyppe which wolde not suffer them to passe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole Antartik beneth the Equinoctiall line. xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and. 1600. leaques from the cape of *Malacca*: And is the greateste and moste daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in al the worlde.

When they had by these perels ouerpassed thys cape, certeyne of them aswell for lacke of vytayles as also by reafon of fyckeness, were mynded to fayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Mouzambique* aboue Affryke. But the other answered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr course therefore faylyng toward the Southwest two monethes continually without touchyng at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed abowte. xxi. of theyr company, whom they cast into the fea. And fuerly if god of his infinite mercie had not preferued the residue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famen.

In fine, beinge inforced of necessitie, and halfe of theyr companie deade, they sayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde* cauled *Insula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, faynte Iames Ilande, parteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as foone as they arryued, they sent certeyne alande in the shippe boate for vyttayles, declaryng to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what necessitie they were dryuen to and what miseris and trauayles they had susteyned, informyng them further of theyr marueylous viage and suche thynges as they

The greater India

231

The beast cauled linx.

The punishement of rebelles.

The kynge is net seene but at a glasse.

A thyng of strange workmanshype.

The kynge maryeth his systre His pallaice. A marueylous garde.

Women serue the kynge.

Foure maruelous haules

The people of China. The Crosse.

The greate kyng of mien CATHAY.

The sea of Lantchidol.

Malacca.

The Iland of Sumetra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambaia.

Ormus.

East India.

Cap[er] de Buona Speranza.

Speranza.

The port of Mouzambique.

232

Famen.

Capo Verde.

S. Iames Ilande.

The ingrati[t]ude
of the Portugales.

The port of saynt
Lucar nere vnto
Siuile.

What became of
the other shyppe.

Dariona

The cape of
Cattigara.
Ptolome.

The vyage hardly
performed.

They bye slaues
for lacke of helpe

Maryners woorthy
immortal fame.

Argonauti.

The vyage of Iason
to wyn the golden
fleese.

The shyppe more
woorthy fame then
owide Argo of
Grecia.

The vyage

hadde seene in both the East and West India, with such other gentel woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne meafures of rife. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theym returned for more ryse, they were deteyned: Whereuppon the reste whiche remayned in the shippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full sayles, and the. vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the hauen of *San Lucar* nere vnto Siuile, where dischargynge all their ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the greate churche in theyr shertes and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thanks to almyghtie god who had brought them safe to theyr owne country, and restored them to theyr wyues and chyl dren.

As touchynge th[e]nde of this viage, Transiluanus wryteth sumwhat more largely as foloweth.

The other shyppe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforefayde and by the great sea to the coastes of the firme of the west India, and arryued at a region of the same being ageynst *Dariona*, where the South sea of *Sur* is separate but by a lyttle space of lande from the Weste Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other shyppe which returned into Spayne by compasing about the whole bowle of the worlde by the coastes of East India and Affrike, departynge from the Iland of *Tidore*, and faylynge euer on this syde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboue Asia, and (by the description of Ptolome) rechyng many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge sayled many dayes by the mayne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thense to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge soore broosed by reason of the longe viage, leaked and tooke water, in fuche forte that the mariners beinge nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reason of longe sickeneffe and hunger, were not able both to drye the poope continually and otherwyse gouerne the shippe: and were therfore of necessitie inforced to goo alande at the Ilande of faynte Iames to bye theym certeyne slaues to helpe them. But beinge deflitute of mony, according to the custome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr slaues. The which thynge when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Capitayne of that Ilande, he cast. xiii. of them in prison. Wherby the residue that remayned in the shippe (beinge nowe but. xviii. in number) were put in such feare that they departed immediatly without rescuing theyr felowes, and sayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of Affrike, and came in fine to Spayne the. vi. day of September in the yeare. 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto Siuile the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the Ilande of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtlesse more woorthy to bee celebrate with eternal memorie then they whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that sayled with Iafon to win the golden fleese in the region of *Cholchis* and the riuier of Phafis in the greate sea of *Pontus*. And the shyppe it selfe, more woorthy to bee placed amonge the starres then that owlde Argo which departynge owt of Grecia, sayled to th[e]nde of that great sea. For this owre marueylous shyppe, takyng her vyage from the straighes of Gibilterra and faylynge by the greate Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnynge from thense to the Weste, folowed that course so farre that passynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, shee came into the Easte, and frome thense ageyne into the Weste, not by returnynge backwarde, but styll faylynge forwarde, so compasyng about the baule of the world vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntyll shee were myraculouly restored to her natiue region of Spayne and houfe of Siuile.



OF THE PRICES OF PRECIOVS STONES AND SPICES,
WITH THEYR WEIGHTES AND MEASVRES

233

as they are accustomed to bee foulde bothe of the
Moores and the gentyles: And of the
places where they growe.



Orasmuch as in dyuers places of this historie, men-
tion is made of precious stones, I haue thought
good to declare sumewhat aswell of theyr prices
as of the places of theyr generation, that wee may
not vtterly bee ignorant of the thinges which we
fo grately esteeme and bye so deare.

Of the Rubie.



He Rubies growe in India: and are founde
for the most parte in a ryuer named Pegu.
These are of the beste kind and fineste,
whiche they of the lande of Malabor caule
Nunpu clo, and are well foulde if they bee
fayre and cleane without spottes. The
Indians to knowe theyr fineneffe, put them

vppon theyr toonges, coumptynge that to bee best that is couldest and most harde. And to see theyr fineneffe, they take them vp with a piece of waxe by the sharpest poynt: and lookynge ageynst the lyght, espie in them euery fmaule spot or flake. They are also founde in certeyne diepe fosses or pittes which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the said ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for this purpose fende them to dyuers other contreys, and especially to Paleacate, Narfinga, Calicut, and the region of Malabar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gyue yow intelligence of the value of these stones, ye shall vnderstande that this woorde Fanan, signifieth a weight sumwhat more then two of owre carattes: And. xi. Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And. vi. Mitigales and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of money which is in value, one ryale of fyluer. And therefore after this accompte I fay that

One caratte is iiii.
graines

Eight fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in all, about two carattes) are in value.	Fanan *x.	One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters	Fanan cccl.
Foure Rubies that wey one fanan, are worth	Fanan xx.	Of three fanans	Fanan cccc.
Two that wey one fanan	Fanan xl.	Of three and a quarter	Fanan D.
One that weyth three quarters of one fanan	Fanan xxx.	Of three and a halfe	Fanan D l.
One that weyth one fanan	Fanan l.	Of three and three quarters	Fanan D c.
One that weyth one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan lxx.	Of three and three quarters and a halfe	Fanan D cxxx.
One that weyth one fanan and a halfe	Fanan C.	Of foure fanans	Fanan D clx.
One that weyth one fanan and three quarters	Fanan Cl.	Of foure and a quarter	Fanan D cc.
One that weyth two fanans.	Fanan CC.	Of foure and a halfe	Fanan D cccc.
One that weyth two fanans and a quarter	Fanan CC l.	Of fyue fanans	Fanan M.
One that weyth two fanans and a halfe	Fanan. ccc.	Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan M cc.
		Of fyxe fanans, which are about. xii. carattes. Fanan M D. which make. 150. crownes of golde.	

{*Which is one
crown of golde

And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But suche as are not perfecte, and haue any spottes in them, or are not of good coloure, are of lesse prise accordynge to the arbitrimt and estimation of the byer.

¶ *Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.*



IN the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manecas*, the greatest parte wherof do not arriue to the perfection of the other aforesayde in colour, bycause they are redde as though they were wasshed, and of a fleshye colour. Yet are they very coulede and harde. The perfecteste of them are greatly esteemed amonge the people of the Ilande, and referued only for the kynge hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his iewelers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the beste kynde, they put it in fyre for the space of certeyne houres. Which if it coomme owt of the fyre vncorrupte, it becommeth of the colour of a burnynge cole, and was therefore cauled of the Greekes, Anthrax, which signifieth a burnyng cole. The same that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *Carbunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of Narsinga can get any of them, he causeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermost part of them to the myddest: And suffereth none of them to passe owt of his realme: especially if they haue byn tried by the sayde profe. These are of greater value then the other of Pegu, if they bee in theyr naturall perfection and cleaneneffe.

234

Of these, one that weith a caratte
(whiche is halfe a fanan) is worth
in Calecut.

Fanan *xxx.

One of two carattes

Fanan lxxv.

Of three carattes.

Fanan cl.

Of three carattes and a halfe

Fanan cc.

Of foure carattes

Fanan ccc.

Of foure carattes and a halfe

Fanan cccl.

Of fyue carattes

Fanan cccc.

Of fyue carattes and a halfe

Fanan ccccl.

Of fyxe carattes

Fanan Dxxx.

Of sixe carattes and a halfe

Fanan Dlx.

Of feuen carattes

Fanan Dcxxx.

Of feuen carattes and a halfe

Fanan Dclx.

One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne

wel proued in the fier, is worth

Fanan Dccc.

Of. viiii. carattes and a halfe

Fanan Dcccc.

One such of tenne carattes

Fanan Mccc.

One of. x. carattes and a halfe

Fanan MDc.

Of. xii. carattes

Fanan MM.

Of. xiiii. carattes

Fanan MMM.

Of. xvi. carattes

Fanan 6000.

*Which are iii. }
crow[n]es of golde

¶ *Of the kynde of Rubies cauled Spinelle.*



Here is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which wee caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe in the selfe same countrey of Pegu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper crust or floure of the earth. These are not so fine nor of so good colour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue sumwhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. Yet of these fuche as are perfecte in theyr colour, are of value halfe lesse then trewe Rubies.

¶ *Of the Rubies cauled Balassi.*



Balassi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumwhat lyke a rose, and sum are in maner whyte. They growe in Balassia, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboute Pegu and Bengala: And are brought from thense by marchauntes of the Moores to Calecut where they are wrought and pollyshed: And are fould of the same price that are Spinelle.

¶ *Of the Diamundes of the owlde myne.*



These Diamundes are founde in the fyrste India in a kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whense they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamundes whiche are not so good, but sumewhat whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngdome of Narsinga. They of the owlde myne, are not pollyshed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyfe in India, other false Diamundes of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to bee fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, fayinge that they haue losse theyr

naturall colour. Of these, fumme are founde that haue halfe the colour of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other also of the colour of a Topafe. Other haue all these coloures mengled togyther. They bore a fine hole in these throughe the myddeft, wherby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whyttest, they make many smaule diamundes whiche can not bee knowen from the trewe, fauynge by touchinge of such as are skylfull in that practife. They are foulded by a poyfe or weight which they caule Mangiar, which wayeth two Tarre, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes or thirde partes of one caratte. For foure Tarres, wey one fanan whiche is abowt two carattes.

Viii. Diamundes that wey one mangiar (which is two third partes of a caratte) are in value.	Fanan xxx.	Of two mangiars and a quarter	Fanan cclcx.
which are three crownes of golde.		Of two mangiars and a halfe	Fanan ccclxxx.
235 vi. Diamundes that wey one mangiar	Fanan xl.	Of two mangiars and three quarters ful perfect	Fanan 420
Foure that wey one mangiar	Fanan lx.	Of three mangiars of lyke perfection	Fanan cccl.
Two that wey one mangiar	Fanan lxxx.	Of three mangiars and a halfe	Fanan ccclxxx.
One that weith one mangiar	Fanan C.	Of foure mangiars	Fanan Dl.
One of one mangiar and a quarter	Fanan clxv.	Of fyue mangiars	Fanan Dccl.
One of one mangiar and a halfe	Fanan clxxx.	Of fyxe mangiars	Fanan Dccc.
Of one mangiar and three quarters	Fanan ccxx.	Of feuen mangiars.	Fanan Mcc.
Of two mangiars	Fanan cccxx.	Of eyght mangiars	Fanan Mcccc.

And thus they procede, increafynge the price as they increafe in weight.

¶ Of Saphires.



IN the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the beste and moſte trewe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the colour of azure. They are of price as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte is of value Fanan ii. which are abowt two marcells of fyluer.

One of the weight of two carattes	Fanan v.
Of three carattes	Fanan x.
Of foure carattes	Fanan xv.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan xviii.

A marcell is a syluer coine of Venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fine, wherof ten make an vn[c]e

Of fyxe carattes	Fanan xxviii.	Of xiiii. carattes	Fanan Clx.
Of feuen carattes	Fanan xxxv.	Of xv. carattes	Fanan Clxxx.
Of eyght carattes	Fanan l.	Of xvi. carattes	Fanan CC.
Of nine carattes	Fanan lxv.	Of xviii. carattes	Fanan CCl.
Of tenne carattes	Fanan l.	One that weith a mitigal, which is. vi.	
Of xi. carattes	Fanan lxv.	fanans and a quarter that is abowt	
Of xii. carattes	Fanan lxxv.	xxiii. carattes	Fanan CCCl.
Of xiii. carattes in all perfection of colour	Fanan Cxv.		

Lykewyfe in the Ilande of Zeilam, is founde an other forte of Saphires which they caule *Quinigelinam*. These are not so stronge, of darker colour and of much lesse value then are the other of the best kynde, wherof one is worth. xiii. of these of equall poise. Also in the kyngedome of Narfinga, in a mountayne about Bacanor and Mangalor, is founde an other fort of Saphires more tender and of woofe colour, whiche they caule Cinganolam. These are somewhat whyte and of smaule value: So that the most perfect of this kynde, weyinge. xx. carattes, is not worth one ducate. Theyr colour is inclynge somewhat to yelowe. There is lykewyfe founde an other kynde of Saphires vppon the sea coastes of the kyngedome of Calicut, in a place named Capucar. These the Indians caule *Carahatonilam*. They are of a darke asure colour not shynge but in the cleare ayer. They are also tender and brickle, and of smaule estimation amonge the Indians. They seeme on the one fyde lyke glasse.

¶ Of Topafies.



THE natural Topafies, growe in the Ilande of Zeilam, and are named of the Indians *Purceragua*.

It is a harde and fine stone: and of equall estimation with the Rubie and the Saphire, bycause all these three are of one kynde. The perfecte colour of this, is yelowe lyke vnto fine beaten golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greate or lyttle, it is worth in Calicut as much fine gold as it weyeth. But if it bee not perfect, it is worth the weight of gold the fanan, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it bee in maner whyte, it is worth much lesse. And of these, are smaule diamundes counterfecte.

¶ Of Turqueffes.

236



Turqueffes are founde in Exer a place of Siech Ifmael. Theyr mine is a drye earth that is founde vpon a blacke stone, which the Moores take of in fmaule pieces, and carye them to the Iland of Ormus, from whence they are brought to dyers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Perofe*. They are soft stones, of fmaule weight and not much coule. And to knowe that they are good and trewe, in the day they shall appere of the verye colour of the Turqueffe: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, do not so change their colour to the sight. If these stones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vndermeth in the bottome, a blacke stone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lyttle vayne ryse vpon the sayde stone, it shalbe the better. And to knowe more certeynely that they are trewe Turqueffes, they put on the toppes of them a lyttle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte, is worth in Malabar.	Fanan. xv.	Of. viii. carattes	Fanan CC.
One of two carattes	Fanan xl.	Of x. carattes	Fanan CCC.
Of foure carattes	Fanan xc.	Of. xii. carattes	Fanan CCCCl.
Of. vi. carattes	Fanan Cl.	Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan Dl.

Of greater then these they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. These of the byggest forte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzerath.

¶ Of Iacinthies.



Iacinthies growe in the Ilande of Zeilam. They are tender stones and yelowe. They are best that are of diepeste colour. The greatest part of these, haue in them certeine pimples or burbuls, whiche diminishe theyr sayreneffe. And they that are in theyr perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuerthelesse of fmaule value. For in Calicut where they are polysshed, they that wey one fanan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of xviii. fanans, are not worth. xvi. fanans.

There are also founde other stones lyke vnto cattles eyes, as Chriofolites, and Amethistes, whiche they doo not muche esteeme bycause they are of fmaule value, as also the stones cauled *Giagonze*.

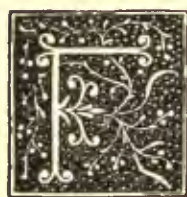
¶ Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.



Smaragdes growe in the cuntrye of Babilon, where the Indians caule the sea *Dieguan*. They grow also in other partes of India. They are stones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of these stones, many are conterfecte. But looking on them curiously towarde the lyght, the conterfectes shewe certeyne burbuls, as dooth glasse. But in the trewe, there is no such seene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour shynynge lyke the beames of the foonne. And beinge rubbed vpon the touche stone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this forte is the best and most trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as muche as a diamunde and fumwhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greateneffe, bycause the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. Ther is lykewyse founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene stones, but not so much esteemed. Neuerthelesse, the Indians referue these to fet them forth with other precious stones. They leaue not any greene coloure vpon the touche.

¶ OF DYVERS KYNDES OF SPICES, WHERE THEY GROW,
WHAT THEY ARE WOORTH IN CALICUT, AND WHITHER
THEY ARE CARIED FROM THENSE.

¶ *Of Pepper.*



Yrste in all the kyngedome of Malabor and Calicut pepper groweth: and is fould in Calicut by euery. CC. [two hundred] Bahars, fine, for. CCxxx. [two hundred and thirty] fanans, euery fanan (as I haue fayde) beinge in value, one ryall of plate of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of fyluer in Venice. Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weight of Portugale, by the whiche they sell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venece. Cxii. [one hundred and twelue] ponde weyght of the grofe ponde (beinge. xviii. vnecs) and of the fubtyl ponde. C. lxxviii. [one hundred and feuentie-eight] So that the fayde. 712. poundes of Venece subtile, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the ponde. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans euery Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to brynge them to Cambaia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thense to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. Maruedies the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. Maruedies are Spanysh coynes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycause there arryueth no more so greate diuersitie of marchantes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the fayde kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, and the Moores, and marchauntes of the countrey of Malabar.

Much pepper groweth lykewyse in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is fayrer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not so good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and fumme parte to Mecha, priuilie and by stelth, vnwares to the Portugales which wolde not otherwyse suffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. [four hundred] vnto. vii. C. [seuen hundred] maruedis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weight. And frome the newe to the owld weight in Portugale, the difference is, two vnecs in the ponde weight. For the owld ponde consisteth of. xiiii. vnecs, and the newe ponde of. xvi. vnecs.

¶ *Of Cloues.*



Cloues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whence they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut euery bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the fubtyl ponde of Venece) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowte fyftie frenche crownes,) which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the ponde weight. And beinge cleane from stalkes and huskes are in value 700 fanans. To cary theym frome thense into other regions, they paye for pasporte. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades accordynge to the rate and custome of the marchauntes.

¶ *Of Cinamome.*



Inamome of the best sort, groweth in the Ilande o. Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, growethe the woorst. That of the beste kynde, is of smaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choise and freshe), it is woorth CCC. [three hundred] fanans the bahar, whiche are abowte siue marchetti the ponde.

¶ *Of Ginger cauled Beledi.*



inger Beledi, groweth on euery fyde abowte Calicut from fyxe to nine myles: And is woorth the bahar. xl. fanans, and sumtymes fiftie, whiche is lesse then one marchetto the pounce.

They brynge it from the mountaynes and owt of the contrey to the citie, where they sell it by retayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it together in greate quantitie and kepe it to such tyme as the Moores shyppes arryue there, to whom they sell it, by the price of. xc. [ninety] fanans, to Cx. [one hundred and ten] whiche is lesse then two marchetti the pound, bycause the weight is greater.

¶ *Of Ginger Mechino.*



inger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Canonor. It is fmaule, and not so whyte nor so good as the other. It is woorth the bahar in Cananor, abowt. lx. fanans whiche is abowte one marchetto the pounce. They pay for the bahar fyxe fanans in money for the custome. It is fould vnclenfed or vnpurged.

¶ *Of greene Ginger in conferues.*



Bengala is founde greate plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conferues with fuger, and carie it in stone pots from Martabani to bee fould in the countrey of Malabar. And is woorth the farazuola (which is. xxii. poundes and fyxe vneces) after the rate of. xiiii. xv. or. xvi. fanans.

That that is freshe and made in conferues, is woorth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, bycause fuger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in conferues, is woorth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

¶ *Of the Apothecaries drugges: And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar.*



Acca of Martabani, if it bee of the beste, is woorth the farazuola, which is. xxii. pounce weyght and fyxe vneces of Portugale after. xvi. vneces the pounce (whiche is abowte. xl. pounce weyght of the subtyle pounce of Venece) And is in value. xviii. fanans: whiche are. xviii. marceles of syluer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of syluer.

Lacca of the contrey, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Borace that is good and in great pieces is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl. and l.
Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	lxx. to. lxxx
Camphire to annoynt Idoles,	*	* * *
Camphire for theyr chyldren to eate, is woorth the mytigel.	Fanan	iii.
Aguila is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	ccc. to. cccc.
Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is woorth	Fanan.	M.
Muske of the best is woorth the vnec	Fanan	xxxvi.
Beniamin of the beste, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	lxv.
Tamarindi being newe, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	iiii.
Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Endego to dye filke, trewe and good, the farazuola	Fanan.	xxx
Mirre, the farazuola.	Fanan	xviii. to. xx.
Frankenfence good and in graynes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xv.
Frankenfence in paste of the basest forte, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	iii.
Ambracan or amber greefe that is good. is woorth the metical	Fanan	ii. to. iii.

Mirabolanes in conferue of fuger, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xvi. to. xxv	
Cassia, freshe and good, the farazuola.	Fanan	one and a halfe	
Redde Sanders, the farazuola	Fanan.	v. to. vi.	
Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of <i>Timor</i> , the farazuola	Fanan.	xl. to. lx	
Spikenarde, freshe and good, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl.	
Nutte megges, whiche coome from the Ilande of Bandan where the bahar is worth from. viii. to. x. fanans, (which importe. vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorth in Calicut, the faraz[uola].	Fanan	x. to. xii.	
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where the Bahar is worth fiftie fanans (which import about one marchetto the pounce) are woorth in Calicut the farazuola.	Fanan	xxv. to. xxx.	
Turbithes, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xiii.	
Woorme feede of the best kynde, cauled <i>Scmenzina</i> , is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan	xv.	Seedes that kyllyse.
Zerumba, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.	
Zedoaria, the farazuola	Fanan	i.	
Gumme Serapine, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.	
Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola	Fanan	xviii	
Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.	
Reubarbe groweth abundantly in the countrey of Malabar: And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xl. to. l.	
Mirabolani emblici, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.	
Mirabolani belirici, the farazuola	Fanan	one and a halfe.	
Mirabolani citrini and chebuli, which are al of one fort.	Fa[nan]	ii.	
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the fame citrine trees	Fa[nan]	iii.	
Tutia, the farazuola	Fanan	xxx.	
Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Iaua or Giaua, are there of fmaule price, and fould by meafure without weight.			
Opium which is browght from the cite of Aden where it is made, is woorth in Calicut the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	ccxxx. to. cccxx	
Opium of an other fort which is made in Cambaia is woorth the farazuola,	Fanan	cc. to. ecl.	

¶ Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agree.



The pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. vneces. The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. vneces. viii. cantares of the owld weyght, make. vii. of the newe. And euery newe cantare, is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes after. xvi. vneces to the pounce

Euery owld cantare, conteyneth three quarters and a halfe of the newe cantar: And is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes, after. xiiii. vneces the pounce.


One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vneces, and vi. vneces more, with two fifte partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale. All the Spices and drugges, and all fuche other thinges as coome from India, are fould in Portugale by the owld weight and all the reste by the newe weyght.


¶ Hereby may we well confider that as we owght to reioyse and gyue god thankes for the abundaunce of al these thynges which he causeth the earth so plentifully to brynge forth to owre vse, so may we lament th[e] abuse of men whose couetousnesse causeth great dearth and scarfenesse in the myddest of abundance: herein no lesse offendyng the lawe of nature then doo such as by wychcrafte intermingle poyfon with thynges created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the feedes in the ground: ye rather as the unnatural mother who destroyeth the chylde whom she hath longe nuryshed.

[TWO NOTES ADDED BY EDEN, APPARENTLY TO FILL UP THE LEAF.]

 *Of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera.*



Adamustus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrown with trees and vnhabited. Yet were there many beastes, and great plentie of dooues which were vtterly without feare of men bycause they had neuer seene any men before, nor yet were accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode styl whyle snares were put abowte their neckes with longe rods and poles. The which thyng he sayth he hath also seene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great abundance of fleshe, bycause the hole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

 *Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line*



He chiefeft occupacion and liuyng of th[e] inhabitants of this Ilande, is the makynge of fuger, which they sell yearely to the shippes that coomme for it owt of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and floure, also wyne, oyle, cheefe, lether, swoordes, cuppes of glaffe, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled Porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dyffhes of the woorke of Maiolica. And if it were not that such vyttayles and prouisions were brought them owt of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchauntes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynyng to the dominion of the kinge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therefore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke slaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they fet to tyll and labour the grounde and make fuger. Amonge these whyte inhabitauntes, there are many ryche men which haue. 150. or. 200. and sum. 300. blacke slaues of men and women to tyll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was discovered foure score yeares fence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknown to the owlde wryters. It lyeth in the great goulfe of Affrike in the. 30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largeness from side to fyde. lx. Italian myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Artike and Antartyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyght without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Artike, is there inuisible: But the wardens are seene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Crosse, are seene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lying betwene Portugale and the fame, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath wrytten a goodly vyage to Conte Rimondo.



THE DEBATE AND STRYFE
BETWENE THE SPANYARDES AND PORTUGALES,

for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices: and

also for the Ilands of Molucca, which sum caule

Malucas. Wrytten in the Spanyshe toonge by

FRANCISCO LOPEZ DE GOMARA.



He[e]mperours maiestie was verye gladde that the Malucas and Ilands of the spicery were discovered: and that he myght passe vnto them through his owne countreys without any preiudice or hurte to the Portugales: And bycause also that Almanzor, Lutz, and Corala which were the lordes of the spicerie, shewed them felues to bee his frendes and became tributaries to hym. He also gaue certeyne gyftes and rewardes to Iohn Sebastian for his great paynes and good seruice, forasmuch as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the Malucas and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which perteyned vnto hym accordyng to the popes bull. And hereby it came to passe that there was great contention and strife betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the spicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reason of the returne of Iohn Sebastian and th[e]information whiche he gaue therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had neuer any enteraunce before that tyme

into those Ilandes. Here vpon, the counsayle for the Indies, aduertised Th[e]emperoure to maynteine his flete for those partes, and to take the trade of spices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne of dewtie, aswell for that those Ilandes fell on his parte, as also that he had nowe founde passage and waye through his west Indies into those regions. And finally to confyder that he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greate reuenues besyde th[e]inrychyng of his subiectes and realmes, and that with smaule coaste and charge. Th[e]emperoure beinge thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counsayle, and commaunded all thynges hereunto apperteynyng to bee furnysshed accordyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge Iohn of Portugale had knowlege what th[e]emperour determyned to doo, and the speedy hast his counsayle made for the performance herof, and of the comyng home of Iohn Sebastian of Cane, with th[e]information he made, what of stoutnesse of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed vp with anger as were also the reste of the Portugales, stormyng as though they wolde haue plucked downe the skye with their handes, not a lyttle fearyng leaste they shulde lose the trade of spices, if the Spanyardes shulde once put in theyr foote. Whervpon the kynge immediatly made supplication to Th[e]emperoure, not to fet forwarde any shyppes vntyll it were determyned to whether of theym those Ilandes shulde belonge: And that he wolde not so muche endamage hym as to cause him to lise the trade of spices which was so commodious and profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde th[e]occasion of murther and bludshed whiche were lyke to ensue thereof, yf the Spanyardes and Portugales shyppes shulde meete togyther. Th[e]emperoure althowghe he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he gladde to haue it tryed by iustice for the better iustificacion of his cause and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt lerned men, Cosmographers and Pylots which shulde determine the controuersie betwene them: promyng on bothe parties to abyde and stande to the sentence and determination made by those persons appoynted and sborne to iudge indifferently.

240

Iohn Sebastian.

The cause of
contencion.The trade of spice
perteyneth to
Th[e]emperoure.Iohn kyng of
Portugale.The trade of
Spices.The controuersie
determined by
Cosmographers
and Pylots.

¶ *The reparticion and diuision of the Indies and newe worlde betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales.*



His matter concernyng the trade of spices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reafon of the greate ryches therof was of greate importaunce and very difficultie to bee limited and drawn forth by lines. By reafon wherof, it was necessarie and conuenient to seeke wyfe and woorthypful men expert in nauigations, in Cosmographie, and the mathematicall sciences. Th[e]mp[e]roure for his syde, chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges confayle. Also the licentiate Barrientos of the counfayle of the orders: The licentiate Petro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chauncerie in Valladolid. For iudges of the propertie, he chose Don Fernando Colono the soonne of Christopher Colonus: Also doctor Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryre Thomas Duran, Simon of Alcazaua, and Iohn Sebastian of Cano. His aduocate and attorney, he made the licentiate Iohn Rodriguez of Pifa: and for his fyscal doctor Ribera, and his secretarie, Barthalome Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian Cabote, Steuen Gomes, Nunnio Garcia, Diego Riuro, being al expert pilots and cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld be present, and brynge forth theyr globes and mappes with other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the Ilandes of the Malucas about the which was al the contention and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe theyr myndes on neyther fyde, nor enter into the company of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers other, wente togyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they brought with them two fiscals and two aduocates. The principall of them, was the licentiate Antonie de Affeuedo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra the clarke of the weightes and receptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Also Peralfonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Taura, with dyuers other whose names I knowe not. Before they mette togyther, the one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes, there was much a doo amonge them beefore they coulde agree vpon the place where they shulde mete and who shuld speke fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circumstances. At the last, they concluded to meete togyther at Caya a lyttle ryuer which diuideth Castile from Portugale, standyng in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And when they were affembled togyther one day at Badaioz and an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, bothe parties were sworne that they shulde proceade and speake accordyng to truth, iustice, and equitie. The Portugales refused Simon de Alcazaua because he was a Portugale: and fryer Thomas Duran bycause he had sumetyme byn preacher to theyr kyng: So that Simon was by consent put owte of the company, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of Alcaraz. Yet fell they not to reafonyng the matter vntyll the fryer was put owt. They were manye dayes in beholdyng globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearyng what myght bee sayde, both fydes alleagyng for the right which they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in wayne contention, sayde very angerly the Ilandes of Maluca whereuppon theyr meetyng and refonyng was at that presente, fell of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before Iohn Sebastian had euer seene them. Lykewyse that the line shulde bee drawn from the Ilande of Bonauista, or the Iland cauled de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or saynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxx. leaques the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrewe. But they that haue a nawghtie matter must fet it forth with woordes and brabelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaunded that the line shulde bee drawn three hundreth. lxx. leaques more to the West from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundreth accordyng to th[e] assignement of the popes bul. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Gilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But aswell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shuld belonge to the Castilians: and that those countreys fell on theyr syde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Magallanes and Iohn Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men that founde them and obeyned them for Th[e]mperour, as the letters and presentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thither after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuste tytle thereby. For although they shulde drawe the line by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe thereof, sith aswell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas must pertyne to the Castilians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo verde shulde also pertyne to the Castilians, forsomuch as drawyng the line by Buena Vista, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours syde. They continued in these controuerfies for the space of two moonethes without anye resolution or ende

The arbytrers on the Empe[r]ours syde.

241

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of Cosmographie. The Ilandes of Maluca.

The arbytrers on the Portugales syde.

The place where they mette.

Th[e] order of theyr proces.

The Portugales. Contencion for drawyng the line of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceaued.

The Spanyardes allegations. Samatra. Malacha. China. Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

242

made. For the Portugales prolonged and put of the matter, flying from the sentence with caillations and could reasons to th[e]nde that they myght dissolue that assemble without any concludion or determination: for fo it floode them vpon. The Castilians which were the Iudges of the propertie, drewe a line in the great globe three hundredth and. lxx. [seuenty] leaques from faynt Antonies Ilande, lyinge by Weste Cabo Verde accordynge to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vpon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. These iudges gaue sentence vpon this matter, caulynge the contrary parte before them vpon the bridge of Caya in the yere. 1524. The Portugales could neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet wolde they allowe it to bee iust and accordynge to ryght: Sayinge that there was not sufficient proceffe made that they shulde passe to the gyunge of sentence. And so departed threatenynge to fley the Castilians as many as they shulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that heyr contreyemen the Portugales had already taken the shyppe cauled the Trinitie and had also taken the Castilians in Tidore. Then also departed owre men, takynge theyr iorney to the courte gyunge vp to Th[e]mperour all theyr wrytynges and declaration what they had doone. And accordynge to this declaration must bee signed and marked all globes and mappes which good Cofinographers and masters doo make. The line also of the reparticion and last diuision of the newe world of the Indies, ought to passe (lyttle more or lesse) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue fayde in an other place. And thus shall it appeare evidently that the Ilandes of Spices, and also the greete Ilande of Zamotra, do perteyne to Castile. But the lande of Brasile perteyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of faynt Augustine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneth the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundredth leaques. Beinge also fum way two hundredth leaques East and West.

And hereafter these ferious matters, wee wyll rehearse one mery thyng, which was this. It so chaunced that as Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra, and other of those Portugales of this assemble, walked by the ryuer fyde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who floode keepynge his mothers clothes which she had washed, demaunded of theym whether they were those men that parted the world with Th[e]mperour. And as they answered, yea: he tooke vp his shert and shewed them his bare arse, sayinge: Coomme and drawe yowre line here through the myddeft. Which sayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badaioz: yea euen amonge the commissioners them selues, of whom fum were angry, and fumme maruayled at the sayinge of the chyld.

¶ *The cause and autoritie wherby they diuided the Indies.*



The Castilians and Portugales had longe debated and reasoned abowt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yere of owre lorde 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso Kynge of Portugale the firste of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handefuls whyche was at that tyme when the fayde Kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingedome of Castile in the right of his wyfe Queene Iohn (cauled the excellent) ageynste the Catholike princes Isabel and Don Fernando whose it was in deede. But that stryfe was ended as fone as Don Fernando had vanquished Don Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farre from Toro, which place* Don Fernando chose rather to make warre ageinst the Moores of Granada, then to bye and fell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conquest of Affryke from the freightes forward: whiche began where the infante of Portugale Don Henrique (sonne to kynge Iohn the bastarde and master of Auis) dyd begynne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the. vi. (beinge a valentinian borne) had knowlege hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kinges of Castile without any preiudice to the Portugales who had conquered the sea coastes of Affryke. These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withoute the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryste: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawn Northe and fouth from one hundredth leaques Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes shulde not meddle in Affryke perteynynge to the conquest of the Portugales, to th[e]auoydyng of all stryfe betwene them. Kynge Iohn of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althowgh his owne ambassadours had made the selfe same request vnto his holynesse. He also found hym selfe agreede with the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discovered, depriuyng hym of the rycheffe which belonged to hym. And therefore refused to stande to the popes bull in this case: defyryng the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundredth leaques more to the Weste, beyde the one hundredth which they had graunted before: and therwith sent his shyppes to kepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to fatiffie his

The Portugales caillations.

The line of diuision.

The sentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Castilians.

The line of the last diuision.

The great Iland of Samotra. The lande of Brasile, perteyneth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

The golde myne of Guinea. Alonso kynge of Portugale.

Gold for thynges of smaull value.

Contention for the kyngdome of Castile.

Warre agens the Moores of Granada.

The conquestes of the Portugales in Affrike.

Pope Alexander.

243

The Pope maketh the diuision.

The kynge of Portugale refuseth to stand to the Popes bull.

The agreement of
the last diuision

Wherein the
Portugales were
deceaued.

mynde and to pleafe hym accordyng to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene theym: And in fine, with the consent and agreement of the pope, graunted twoo hundreth. lxx. [feenty] leaques more then the bull made mention of: At Tordefillas the. vii. day of Iune, in the yeare of owr lord 1494. And wheras owr kynges thought that they shulde haue loft grounde in grauntynge so many leaques that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, hauynge no certeyne knowlege of the situation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requested the three hundreth and. lxx. leaques rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the west. And yet for all that, I doubt whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordyng to the ordinarie accoumpte and dimenston which the pylotes and Cosmographers doo make. And after this maner they diuided the Indies betwene them by th[e]autoritie of the pope for the auoydynge of further stryfe and contention.

*Howe and by what occasion Th[e]emperoure layde the Ilandes of
the Malucas to pledge to the kyng of Portugale.*



Sebastian Cabote.

Th[e]emperour
and the kyng of
Portugale ioyned
in aliance by
marriage.

The Portugales
robbe the
Castilians

The coronation of
Th[e]emperour.

244

The gageing of the
Ilands of Malucas,
zamatra and
Malaca.

When the kyng of Portugale Don Iuan the thyrde of that name, had knowlege that the Cosmographers and pylottes of Castile hadde drawn the line from the place before named, and that he could not denye the truth, fearing also therby to liefe the trade of Spices, made sute and request to Th[e]emperoure that he shulde not fend furth Loaisa nor Sebastian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of spices nor see such euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanes. Which thynge he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of those two fletes, and made other great bargens. In the meane tyme, Th[e]emperoure maryed the Lady Ifabell yfster to kyng Iohn: and kyng Iohn maryed the lady Catharine yfster to Th[e]emperour: whereby this matter waxed coulde although the kyng ceafed not to speake hereof, euer mouynge the particion. Th[e]emperour by the meanes of a certeine Biscaine that was with Magallanes in the gouernours shyppe, had knowlege what the Portugales had doone to the Castilians in the Iland of Tidore, wherof he took great displeasure, and brought the fayde maryner face to face before th[e]ambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he fayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidore and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such other thynges as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie. But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greate, and owre necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Th[e]emperoure (who was nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529) gagied the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portugale for three hundreth and fiftie thousande ducades without any tyme determyned otherwyse then the controuerfie was defined vpon the brydge of the ryuer of Caya: for the which thynge, kyng Iohn punyshed the licentiate Azeuedo bycause he payde the money without declaration of the time. The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndely made and greatly ageynst the myndes of the Castilians, as men that wel vnderstode the profite, commoditie, and rycheffe of that trade: Affirmyng that the trade of spices myght haue byn rented for one yeare or for two, for fyxe tymes as much as the kyng gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was twyfe cauled to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tyme at Madrid, fayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged Estremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, rather then the Malucas, Zamatra, or Malaca, or other riche landes and ryuers in the Easte not yet well known: forasmuche as it maye so chaunce, that eyther by continuance of tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as though it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, Th[e]emperour considered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receaued. Th[e]emperour was often tymes counfayled to release the pledge of those Ilandes in consideration of the great vantage he myght haue therby in fewe yeares. Furthermore, in the yeare. 1548. the procuratoures of Cortes being in Valladolid, made petition to Th[e]emperour to surrender the spicerie to the kyngedome of Castile for. vi. yeares, and that they wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his. 350. thousand crownes, and after those yeares, restore the trade to the crowne, that his maieestie myght inioye the same as was agreed at the begynnyng. But Th[e]emperour beinge then in Flaunders, sente woorde to the counfayle that they shulde not assent to Cortes his request, nor speake any more hereof. Wherat, sum manueyled, other were fory, and all held theyr peace.

[Amerigo Vespucci,
and
Andreas de Corsali.]

*Of the Pole Antarctic, and the stars
about the same.]*

OF THE POLE ANTARTIKE AND THE
STARRES ABOUT THE SAME AND OF THE
QUALITIE OF THE REGIONS AND DISPOSITION OF
the Elementes about the Equinoctiall line.

Also certeyne secretes touchyng
the arte of faylynge.



Mericus Vesputius in the Summarie of his vyages,
wryteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge from Lisbona (commonlye cauled Lusheburne) the. viii. day of May, in the yeare. 1501. we fayled fyrst to the Ilandes of Canarie and from thense to Capouerde which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores caule *Bisneghe*, beinge. xiiii. degrees on this fyde the Equinoctiall line. From whense directynge owre course towarde the South pole by the South-west, we sawe no more land for the space of three moonethes and three dayes. Of whiche tyme duryng. xl. [forty] dayes, we had cruell fortune: In so muche that for that space, the heauen in maner neuer ceafed thundryng, roryng, and lyghtenyng with terrible noyse, and fearefull fyghtes of fyery exhalations flyng about in the ayer, and in maner continuall showers of rayne with darke cloudes coueryng the heauen in such forte that aswell in the day as in the nyght we coulde see none

otherwyse but as when the moone giueth no lyght by reason of thicke and darke clouds. The sea was in lyke case vnquieted with furies and monsters. After these greuous and cruel days, it pleased god to haue compassion on our liues. For wee suddenly espied land wherby we recovered our spirites and strength. This land which wee founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I suppose that we fayled more then. 800. by reason of the cruel tempest and ignoraunce of the Pylottes and mariners wherby wee were lyke to haue byn cast away. For wee were in suche dangerous places wanderyng in vnknown coastes, that if I had not byn skylfull in the science of Cosmographie we had fuerly peryshed, forasmuch as there was not one pylot that knewe where wee were by the space of fiftie leaques. In so much that if I had not in tyme prouyded for the safegarde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with my quadrant and Astrolabie instrumentes of Astronomie, wee had fyll wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had perswaded the pylots by demonstrations perteynyng to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignorant in Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculatiue knowlege. etc.

Wee fayled by the coaste of the sayde lande. 600. leaques And went oftentimes alande where wee were frendely and honorably interteyned of th[e] inhabitants: In so much that confideryng theyr innocent nature, we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth beyonde the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee fayled so farre by the sayde coaste that wee passed the wynter Tropyke towarde the pole Antartike by xvii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I sawe there, are not yet known to men of owre tyme: as the people, theyr customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the fauourable influence of heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght spher in the inferioure hemispherie or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and about the South pole, wherof neyther the owlde or newe wryters haue made any mention to this daye.

Cabouerde.
Besenegha.

A tempest.

The ignorance of
Pylots and
mariners.
The vse of
Cosmographie.
The vse of the
quadrant and
Astrolabie.

245

The pole
Antartike.

The starres about
the south pole.

Most pleasant and fruitful regions.

The earthlye Paradyse. Continual temperatnesse.

Moyst dewes

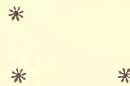
Starres vnknown to vs

The vse of Geometri. Notable stars in the inferiour hemispherie.

To wryte particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that sutch, as if Plinie had had knowlege of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his bookes of naturall histories. The trees gyue from them continually sutch sweete fauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on euery part put furth sutch gummess, liquours, and iuses, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins ageinst diseases and to mainteyne health. And fuerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes so temperate that they are neyther bytten with coulde in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is seldome darkened with clowdes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. Yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the mornyng and euenyng for the space of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylously refresshed. Lyke wyfe the firmament is marueylously adourned with certeyne starres which are not knowne to vs, wherof I noted abowt. xx. to bee of sutch clearenesse as are the starres of Venus and Iupiter when they are nere vnto vs. And wheras hauyng the knowlege of Geometri, I considered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured theyr circumference and diameter, I am well assured that they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were exceedyng cleare, and the thyrd sumwhat darke. The pole Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is seene abowte owre pole. But hath foure starres whiche compasse it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.



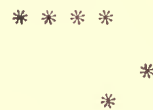
¶ When these are hydden, there is seene on the lefte syde a bryght Canopus of three starres of notable greatnesse, whiche beinge in the mydde of heauen, representeth this figure.



Most bright and shynyng starres.

After these, succede three other shynyng starres, whereof that which is in the mydde, is of measure. xii. degrees and a halfe in circumference. And in the mydde of these, is seene an other bryght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shynyng starres which in bryghtnesse passe al other that are in the eyght spher. Of these, that that is in the mydde in the superficiall part of the sayde spher, hath the measure of his circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other great Canopus, but sumwhat darke. All these are seene in the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye: And beinge ioyned to the meridiane line, shewe this fygure here folowyng.

Lactea via.



246

The inferiour hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his opinion of the raynebowe.

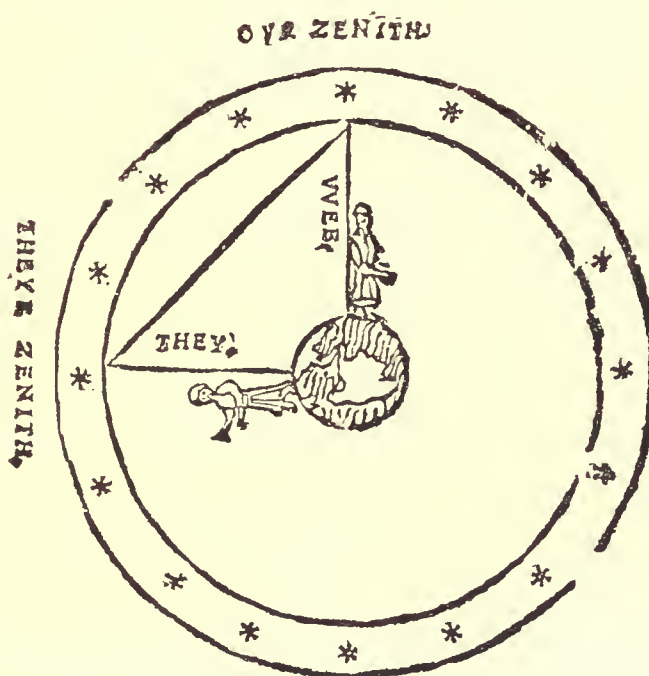
A strange opinion.



I sawe also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular boke of the same, wherin I made mention of al sutch notable thyngs as I sawe and had knowelege of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maiestie, trustyng that he wyl shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie or halfe coompasse of the heauen, I diligently considered many thynges which are contrarie to th[e] oppinions of philosphers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe abowt mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyer, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blew of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteora*, is of an other opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the soonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the soonne, as the shynyng of the same on the water, is reflected on a waulc: And that the sayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the soonne: and beinge resolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertile, and pourgeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundaunt moysture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare. xl. [forty] yeares before th[e] ende of the worlde, which shalbe a token of the drynesse of the elementes approchyng to the tyme of theyr conflagration or consumyng by fyer. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynste the soonne. It is therfore neuer seene in the South, bycause the soonne is neuer [seene?] in the North. Neuerthelesse, Plinie sayth,

that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is seene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered owte of the commentaries of Landinus vppon the fourth boke of Virgyl his Eneades, bycause I wold defraude no man of his traauyle. I sawe the fayd raynebowe twoo or three tymes. And not I onely, but also many other which were in my company. Lykewyse wee sawe the newe moone the selfe same day that shee ioyned with the soonne. Wee sawe furthermore vapours and burnyng flames flyng abowt heauen euery nyght. A lyttle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphaere. Which neuerthelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improperly in comparyson of owres. Yet forafinuche as it seemeth to represente suche a forme, I haue improperlye so named it.

Departynge therefore from Lisbona (as I haue sayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North abowt. xl. [forty] degrees, wee sayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. [fifty] degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxx. [ninety] beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordynge to the trewe reason of the number taught by the owlde autours. And by this demonstration it is manifest that wee measured the fourth parte of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lisbona on this syde the Equinoctial line abowt. xl. [forty] degrees towarde the Northe, sayled from thense. lxxx. [ninety] degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to th[e] inhabitants. l. [fifty] degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. And that the thyng may bee more playnely vnderstode, imagine a perpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pricke ouer the head) to vs both standynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and another ryght line to bee drawne frome owre Zenith to theyrs: Then grauntynge vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyson to them, it must of necessitie folowe that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyson to vs: In suche sorte that the figure of the sayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the fygure here folowynge.



The newe moone.
Fyery exhalations.
Hemispherium.

Lisbona.

The fourth part of
the worlde.

247

Zenith.



As touchyng the starres and reasons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much owt of the vyage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corsali writeth in his vyage to East India as concernynge the same matter.

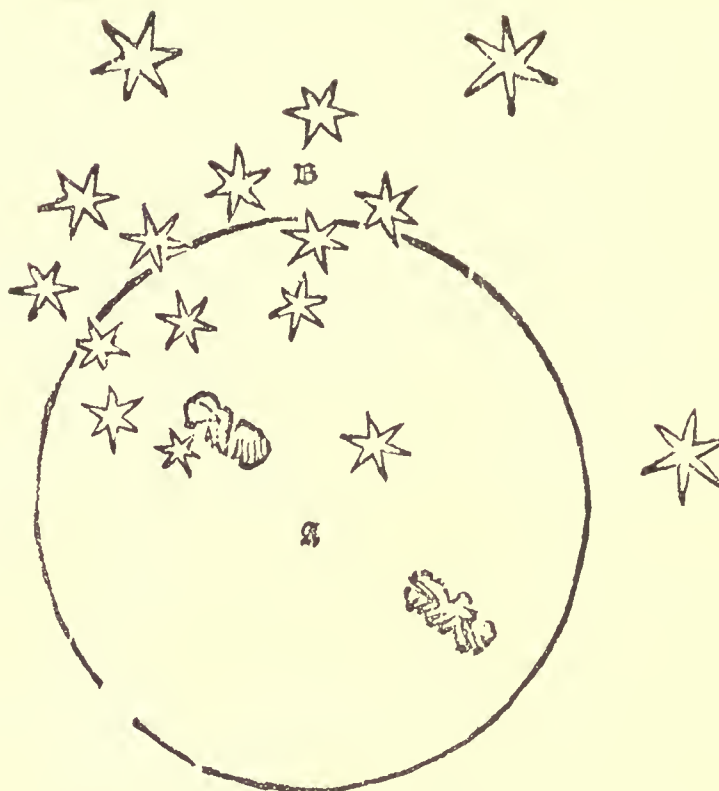
After that we departed from Lisbona, wee sayled euer with prosperous wynde, not passynge owt of the Southeast and Southwest. And passynge beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauefynge the cape of Bona Speranza a coulede and wyndy clime bycause at that tyme the soonne was in the north signes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we sawe a marueylous order of starres, so that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre northe pole, to knowe in what place and degree the fourth pole was, we tooke the day with the soonne, and obserued the nyght with the Astrolabie, and sawe manifestly twoo clowdes of reasonable bygnesse mouynge abowt the place of the pole continually nowe ryfynge and nowe faulyng, so keepynge their continuall course in circular mouynge, with a starre euer in the myddeft which is turned abowt with them abowte. xi. degrees frome the pole. About these appeareth a marueylous crosse in the myddeft of syue notable starres which compasse it abowt (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other starres whiche moue with them abowt. xxx. [thirty] degrees distant from the pole, and make their course in. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres. This crosse is so fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly gne may be compared to it as may appear by this fygure.

The vyage of
Andreas de
Corsali.
The Equinoctial
line.
Cap. de Speranza.
The starres of the
vnder hemispherie.

Clowdes abowt the
south pole.

A crosse of syue
starres.

248



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Croffe.

Hetherto Andreas de Lozali.

The coastes of
Ethiope.
Golde in Ethiope.

The vyage of
Aloisius
Cadamustus.

The chariote of
the south pole.



F the lyke matters, and of the straunge ryfyng of the foonne in the mornyng, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiope abowt the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gembra where plentie of golde is founde, fumewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wryteth in this effecte.

Duryng the tyme that wee remayned vppon the mouth of the ryuer, we sawe the north starre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the fea the height of a iauelen. We saw also fyxe cleare, bryght, and great starres verye lowe aboue the fea. And confideryng their stations with owre coompasse, we founde them to stande ryght south, figured in this maner.



The wynter abowt
the Equinoctiall.
Raine and clowdes.

Thunder and
lyghtnyng.

Hot showres of
rayne.
The day, and
ryfyng of the
soone.



W e iudged them to bee the chariote or wayne of the south: But we sawe not the principall starre, as we coule not by good reason, except we shuld first lose the fyght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a. xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of. xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnyng of Iuly. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeare. Yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of Iuly to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly abowt none after this forte. There ryse continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and southeast with greate thunderyng and lyghtnyng and exceedyng great showers of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to sowe theyr feedes. They lyue commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, flesshe, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reason of the great heate of the ayer, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the foonne ryfyng in the mornyng, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the ryfyng, it appeareth troubeled, dynme and smoky. The whiche thyng, I knowe not to proceade of any other cause then of the loweness of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION IV.

*Of Moscovy, Cathay, and
the North Regions.*

1500-1555.]

¶ A DISCOVRSE OF DYVERS VYAGES AND WAYES BY THE WHICHE

SPICES, PRECIOUS STONES, AND GOLDE WERE BROUGHT IN OWLDE

tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.

ALSO OF THE VYAGE TO CATHAY AND EAST INDIA

by the north sea: And of certeyne secreate touchynge the same vyage,

declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to an excellent

lerned gentelman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius.

Lykewyse of the vyages of that woorthy owlde man

Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande, and at this

present the gouernour of the company of the

marchantes of Cathay in the citie of London.



Tis doubtlesse a marueylous thyng to consyder what chaunges and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empire by the comynge of the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by their inuasions were extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all trades of Marchaundies that were vsed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The defolation and ignoraunce which infused hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall darkenesse amonge men for the space of foure hundreth yeares and more, in so much that none durst aduenture to go any whyther owt of their owne natiue countreys: whereas before th[e] incursions of the sayde Barbarians when the Romane Empire florysshed, they might safely passe the seas to al partes of East India which was at that time as wel knowne and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifest by that which Strabo wryteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Tiberius. For speakynge of the greatnesse and ryches of the citie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a

prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This only place of Egypte, is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by sea, by reafon of the commoditie of the hauen: And lykewyse all such thynges as are brought by lande, by reafon of the ryuer of Nilus wherby they may bee easely conueyde to Alexandria, beinge by these commodities the rycheft citie of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that Marcus Tullius sayth in one of his orations, that kyng Tolomeus furnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thousande and syue hundreth talentes, which are feuen millions and a halfe in golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what myght it then bee worth to the Romanes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of marchandies greatly increased by the traffike of Trogloditica and India? wheras in tyme paste there could hardly bee founde. xx. shyppes together that durste enter into the goulfe of

249

The romaine
empyre.

iiii. hundreth
yeares of
ignoraunce.

Easte India well
knowne in owld
time.

Strabo.
The great rychesse
of Egypte.

The citie of
Alexandria.

Marueylous
rychesse.

The gouernaunce
and reuenues of
the Romanes.

Trogloditica
and India.

The goulfe of Arabie.
Ethiope.
Rich customs
The rychesse which were brought in owlde tyme from India, and the red sea.
The commission of The[m]perours Marcus and Commodus.

250

Arabie, or shewe they proos without the mouth of the fame. But at this present, great nauies fayle togyther in to India and to the furthest partes of Ethiope from whence are brought many rych and precious marchandies into Egypt and are caryed from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubled aswell by fuche thynges as are brought thither, as also by fuche as are caryed from thence, forasmuche as greates customes arryfe of thynges of great value. And that by this vyage, infinite and precious marchaundies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other fortes then are knowen in owre tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is described the commission of Th[e]mperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearfall of all fuche stufte and marchandies wherof custome shuld bee payde in the redde sea by such as had the fame in fee ferme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces perteynyng to the Romane Empyre: and they are these folowyng.

Cinamome.	Mir.	Xilocinamome.	Jewels of Sardonica.	Dyed cloth and fylke
Longe pepper.	Amome.	Carpefio.	Ceraunia.	Carbafei.
Whyte pepper.	Ginger.	Sylkes of dyuers fortes.	Calamus Aromaticus.	Sylke threede.
Cloues.	Malabatrums.	Linnen cloth.	Berille.	Gelded men.
Costus.	Ammoniac.	Skynnes and fures of	Cilindro.	Popingiayes.
Cancamo.	Galbane.	Parthia and Babilon.	Slaues.	Lions of India.
Spikenarde.	Laffer.	Iuery.	Cloth of Sarmatia.	Leopardes.
Caffia.	Agarike.	Wodde of Heben.	The fylke cauled	Panthers.
Sweete perfumes.	Gumme of Arabie.	Precious stones.	Metaxa.	Purple.
Xilocaffia.	Cardamome.	Perles.	Vestures of fylke.	

Also that iuife or liquour which is gathered of wolfe and of the heare of the Indians.

The great riches the kynges of Egypte had by customes.
The noble enterprises of the kynges of Egypte.
Arsinoe.
Damiata.
Pelusio.

Nilus.
Copto.
Berenice.

A nauigable trench made from Egypte to the red sea

Lacus Amari.

Kynge Sesostre
Kynge Psammiticus.
Kynge Darius

Kynge Ptolomeus.

The citie Heroum.
What Plynne writeth of the nauigable trench

The largenesse and lengthe of the trench.

251

By these wordes it dooth appeare that in owld tyme the fayde nauigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel knowen and muche frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypte considering the great profyete of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wyllyng to make the same more easy and commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel which shulde begynne in the laste parte of the fayde sea, where was a citie named Arfinoe (which perhappes is that that is nowe cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Pelusio, which emptieth it selfe in owre sea toward the East abowt the citie of Damiata. They determyned also to make three causeis or hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the fayde braunche to the citie of Arfinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to bryng to passe. In fine, kynge Tolomeus furnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to fayle vpon Nilus ageynst the course of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thence to passe by a deferte countrey vntyll they coome about the redde sea to a citie named Berenice or Mioformo, where they imbarcked all their marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wrytynge fyrst of Strabo (who wryteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the fayd fosse or trench which was made toward the red sea, wryteth thus.

There is a trenche that goth toward the red sea and the goulfe of Arabie, and to the citie of Arfinoe, which is cauled Cleopatrida: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is) bitter, because in deede they were fyrst bytter. But after that this trenche was made and the ryuer entered in, they became sweete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by reason of their pleasauntnesse. This trenche was fyrst begun by kynge Sefostre, before the battayle of Troy. Sum saye that it was begunne by kynge Psammiticus whyle he was a chyld: And that by reason of his death, it was lefte imperfect: Also that afterwarde, kynge Darius succeded in the same enterpryse, who wold haue finished it, but yet brought it not to th[e]nde because he was informed that the redde sea was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuidyng bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bee drowned thereby. Kynge Tolomeus wold in deede haue finished it: but yet left it shut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, fayle to the other sea and returne without perell. Here is the citie of Arfinoe: And nere vnto that, the citie cauled Heroum in the vttermoost part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egypt with many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewyse speakynge of this trench, sayth. In the furthest part of the goulfe of Arabie, is a porte cauled Daneo, from whence they determyned to bryng a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as is the fyrst Delta. Betwene the fayde sea and Nilus, there is a streight of lande of the length of. lxii. [sixty-two] myles. The first that attempted this thyng, was Sefostre kynge of Egypte: and after hym Darius kynge of the Perfians, whome Tolomeus folowed, who made a trenche a hundreth foote large, and. xxx. [thirty] foote diepe, beinge three hundreth myles in lengthe vnto the lakes named Amari, and durste proceade no further for feare of inundation, hauynge knoweledge that the redde sea was hygher by three cubites then al the countrey of Egypt. Other say that this was not the cause: but that he doubted that yf he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of Nilus shulde haue byn thereby corrupted, which onely mynystreth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these thynges aforesayde, all this vyage is frequented by lande from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are three causeis or hyghe wayes. The fyrst begynneth at the

mouth of Nilus named Pelufio. All which way is by the fandes: In so much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyxt in the earth to shewe the ryght way, the caufei coulde not be founde by reason the wynde euer couereth it with fande. The second caufei is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this also in th[e]-ende of. lx. [sixty] myles, commeth vppon the way or caufey of Pelufius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipfon: and passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles sumwhat shorter, but full of rowgh mountaynes and great scarfenesse of water. All these causeis, leade the way to the citie of Arfinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandra by the red sea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrst that searched al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there are seene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the citie of Alcayr otherwyse cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes that of later dayes trauallye this viage by lande, ryde through the dry and baren desertes on camels both by day and by nyght: directyng theyr way by the starres and compase as do maryners on the sea, and caryng with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabie and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the selfe same where the Portugales practife theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this presente theyr women vse to burne theym felues alyue with the deade bodies of theyr husbandes. Which thyng (as wryteth Strabo in his. xv. booke) they dyd in owlde tyme by a lawe, for this consideration that sumtyme being in loue with other they forooke or poysoned theyr husbandes. And forasmuch as accordyng to this custome, the owlde poete Propertius (who lyued abowt a hundreth yeares before th[e]incarnation of Chryst) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that was amonge the Indian women which of them shuld bee burned alieue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to subscribe his verfes, which are these.

*Fælix Fois lex funeris vna maritis,
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Mamque vbi mortifero iacula est sax vltima lecto,
Vxorum suis stat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, quæ viua sequatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent victrices, et flammæ pectora præbent,
Imponuntque suis ora perussa viris.*

As touchyng these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thynges are wrytten very largely by dyuers autours which I omytte bycause they perteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north seas and the coastes of Moscouia discovered in owre tyme by the viage of that excellent yonge man Rychard Chaunceler no lesse lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylotte, in the yeare of owre lorde. 1554.

As concernyng this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the fayde lerned man Galeatius Butrigarius, and that great philospher and noble gentelman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracastor as I fynde wrytten in the Italian hystories of nauigations. As they were therefore conferryng in matters of learnyng, and reafonyng of the science of Cosmographi, the fayde lerned man hauyng in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearfyng the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discovered, and how by theyr nauigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscovered. And fayde that of the landes of the inferior hemispherie or halfe compase of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng knowne but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the streight of Magellanus. Also a part of Peru: And a lyttle about Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Also that he marueyled withoute measure that this thyng was no better considered of Christian Princes to whom god had deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyr counsaill men of great lernyng which may informe them of this thing beinge so marueylous and noble whereby they maye obteyne glorie and fame by vertue, and bee imputed amonge men as goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules and great Alexander who trauallyed only into India: and that by makyng the men of this owre hemispherie knowne to theym of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they might by the tytyle of this enterpryse, without comparyson farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Iulius Cesar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thyng they myght easely bryng to passe by assignyng colonies to inhabite dyuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued. Whereby they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but also enlarge the Christian fayth and Empire to the glory of god and confusion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of saynt Laurence, cauled in owlde

The viage bi lande from Egypte to the red sea.

What kyng Ptolomeus discovered.

Alcayre. The viage to Easte Indya frequented in owlde tyme. The customes and maners of the Indyans.

The vyage to Cathay.

Rycharde Chaunceler.

A lerned discourse of dyuers vyages The vyages of the Portugales. The worlde hangyng on the ayer. What is knowne of the lower hemispherie. The lande of Brasile. Peru. The charge and dewtie of Christian princes. Note.

252

Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued.

The great Iland of saynt Laurence or Madagasc.r.

The Ilandes of
Taprobana or
Giana.

Plinie.

The historie of
Cornelius Nepos.

Shyps of India
driuen into the sea
of Germanie.

An enterprise
wherby Princes
may obteyne trewe
fame and glory.
Cathay discouered
bi Marcus Paulus.

The citie of
Lubyke.

The kyng of
Polonie.

The duke of
Moscouia.

An ambassadour
from the duke of
Moscouia.

253

The woordes of
the ambassadour
of Moscouia.

The way from
Moscouia to the
north Ocean and
Cathay.
Volochda.
Vstiug.
Succana.
Duina.
Colmogor.

The north Ocean.
Greate wooddes.

Gothlande.

The Moscouites
haue knowlege of
the greate cane
Cathay.

Permia.
Plescora.
Catena mundi.

tyme Madagafcar, which is greater then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reachethe from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lyinge Northeaste frome the cape of Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capricorni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with abundaunce of all thynges necessarrie for the lyfe of man, and one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothyng knowne therof, except only a fewe smaule hauens by the sea side, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the Ilandes of Taprobana, Giana the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynninge to speake of the partes of owre pole, he caused the bookes of plinie to bee brought him where diligently ponderynge the. lxxvii. chapiture of the seconde booke, he founde where he reherfeth the historie of Cornelius Nepos, by these woordes: That in his tyme, one Eudoxus escapyng the handes of kynge Lathyro, departed from the goulfe of Arabie and came by sea to the Ilande of Calese. Declarynge further, that whereas this narration was many yeares reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the vertue of the Portugales, knowne to bee trewe: And that lykewyse the same Cornelius Nepos reciteth that at the tyme when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconful or lieuutenant for the Romans in Fraunce, the kynge of Sueuia gaue hym certeyne Indians which faylinge owt of India for marchandies, were by tempest dryuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these woordes, he proceeded, fayinge that the same thyng myght bee verified nowe in our tyme if the princes which confine vpon that sea wolde endeouere theyr industry and diligence to bryng it to passe. And that there coulde not any navigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendoome as this myght bee yf by this way the vyage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the ryche contrey of CATHAY which was discouered now two hundreth yeares fence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this vyage shulde bee very shorte in respect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spanyardes may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared furthermore that the citie of Lubyke beinge ryche and of great poure, and situate vpon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continuall nauigations to trauallye the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kynge of Polonie whose dominions with his realme of Lituania, extende to the sayde sea, shulde be apte to discouer this secrete: But that aboue all other, the duke of Moscouia, shulde performe the same with greater commoditie and more facilitie then any other Prince. And here fleyng a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and fayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are coome to this passe, mee thynke it shulde seeme a great discurtisie if I shuld not shewe yowe all that I knowe as touchynge this vyage, wherof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeares by occasion of the woordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it so chauned that in those dayes there came thither an ambafadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauing byn sent to dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counfayle. Of whose learnyng beinge aduertised, I fought his acquayntaunce. And talkynge with hym one day of these Indians dryuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the vyage that myght bee discouered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceaued that at the fyrste he marueyled exceedyngely, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But restynge a whyle in maner astonysht in his secrete phantasie, he toke great pleasure therin, and fayde. Forasmuch as the Portugales haue nowe compased abowt all the fouth partes supposed in owlde tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate, why shulde wee not certeinly thynke that the lyke maye bee done abowt this parte of the north without feare of coulde, especially to men borne and brought vp in that clime? Yet procedyng further, he said, that if his Prince and master, had men that wolde animate hym to discouer this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght do it with more facilitie. Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the description of Moscouia and the prouinces subiecte to the same, he declared that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca going towarde the northeast for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda and afterwarde by that, and folowyng the course therof, to the citie of Vstiug, so cauled bycause the ryuer of Ing fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they fayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, although it bee a longe tracte, as more then. 800. myles, neuerthelesse he fayde that in sommer it myght commodiously bee fayled: And that wheras it fauleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees apte to make shyppes. And the place so conuenient for this purpose, that shipwryghtes and other skylful workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may easely coome owt of Germanie. Also that the men which are vsed to trauallye the sea of Germanie abowte the coastes of Gothlande, shulde bee best and most apte to attempte this enterpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger, and laboure. He fayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue much knowlege of the great cane of Cathay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest part gyue obedience to the said great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made also demonstration in the sayde carte by the northeaste, that beinge passe the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Pefcora (whiche fauleth into the north sea) and certeyne mountaynes named *Catena Mundi*, there is

th[e]nterance into the prouince of obdora, whereas is Vecchiadoro and the ryuer Obo, whiche also fauleth into the fayd fea, and is the furthest borther of Th[e]mpire of the Prince of Moscouia. The fayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake cauled Chethai, which is the fyrste habitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Cane. And from this lake for the space of two monethes vyage (as they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the chiefest in the dominion of the greate Cane, whom sum caule the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if shippes shulde bee made on the coastes of the fayde fea, and fayle on the backe halfe of the coast therof (which he knewe by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the northeast) they shulde doubtelesse in folowyng the fame, easely discouer that countrey. Vnto these woordes he added, that although there were greate difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the waye to the fayde fea is full of thicke wooddes and waters which in the sommer make great maryshes and impossible to bee trauallyed, aswell for lacke of vyttayles whiche can not there bee founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the space of certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inhabitauntes, neuerthelesse he fayde that yf there were with his Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the charge of this vyage shulde bee commytted, he no wayes doubted but that they wolde folowe it and tynde it, forasmuch as with great ingenioufnesse and inestimable pacience, these nations haue ouercome much greater difficulties then are these which are but lyttle in comparison to those that they haue ouerpasse and doo ouerpasse in all theyr viages to India. He proceedede declaryng that not many yeares fence, there came to the courte of his Prince, an ambassadour frome pope Leo, named master Paulo Centurione a Genuese vnder dyuers pretenfes. But the principall occasion of his comyng, was, bycause he hadde conceaued greate indignation and hatred ageynst the Portugales: And therefore intended to proue yf he coulde open anye vyage by lande whereby spices myght bee brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the fea Caspium (otherwyfe cauled Hircanum) to Moscouia: And from thense to bee brought in shippes by the ryuer Riga, whiche runnyng by the countrey of Liuania, fauleth into the fea of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue eare vnto hym: and caused the fayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lordo, of the Tartars confynge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greate desertes which they shulde of necessitie ouerpasse, made them leaue of theyr enterpryse: which if it had bin purposed by the coastes of this owre north fea, it myght haue byn easely fynished. The fayde Ambassadour continued his narration, sayinge that no man ought to doubt of that fea but that it may bee fayled fyxe monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hot by reason of contynuall reuerberation of the beames of the soonne and shorthe nyghtes. And that this thyng were as well woorthy to bee proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknown, haue byn discouered and brought to ciuilitie. And here makynge an ende of this talke, he said: Let vs nowe omytte this parte of Moscouia with his coulde, and speake sumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and Baccalos or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yeare. 1534. and. 1535. Iaques Cartiar in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founde the great and large countreys named Canada, Ochelaga, and Sanguenai: which reach from the. xlv. [forty-fifth] to the. li. [fifty-first] degree, beinge well inhabited and pleasaunte countreys, and named by hym Noua Francia. And here steyng a while and lyfing vppon his handes, he fayde: Oh what doo the Christian Princes meane that in such landes discouered they do not assigne certeine colonies to inhabite the same to bringe those people (whom god hath so blessed with natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embrace owre religion, then the whiche, nothyng can bee more acceptable to god? The fayd regions also, beinge so fayre and frutefull, with plentie of all fortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, fyshes, beastes, metals, and ryuers of fuche greatnesse that shippes maye fayle more then. 180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe fydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the gouernoures of the fayde colonies to searche whether that lande toward the northe named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one firme lande with Norwaye: Or whether there bee any streight or open place of fea as is moste lyke there shulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the fayde Indians dryuen by fortune abowte the coastes of Norway, came by that streight or fea, to the coastes of Germanie: And by the fayde streight to faile northwezt to discouer the landes and countreys of CATHAY, and from thense to fayle to the Ilandes of Molucca. And these surely shulde be enterprises able to make men immortal. The whiche thyng, that ryght woorthy gentleman master Antony di Mendoza confideryng by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thyng in practife. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (so named of the great citie Mexico otherwyfe cauled Temisitan, nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the. xx. [twentieth] degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the fayde firme lande), he sent certeyne of his capitaynes by lande, and also a nauie of shippes by fea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Th[e]mperours courte, I sawe his letter wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherin was declared howe towarde the northwezt, he had fownd the kyngedome of *Sette Citta* (that is) Seuen Cities, whereas is that cauled Ciuola by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: and howe beyonde the fayde kyngedome yet further towarde the Northwezt, Capitayne Francesco Vafques of Coronado, hauynge ouerpasse great desertes, came to the fea fyde where

Obdora.
Vecchiadoro.
Obo.
The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of
Cambalu.
Note this secrete.

Difficult
trauaylyng io
Moscouia.

Commendation of
the Spanyardes
and Portugales.

The historie of
Paulus Centurio.
Of this reade more
at large in the
booke of Paulus
Iouius.
Malice may do
more with sunn
then vertue.
The Caspian sea.
Riga.
Liuania.

254
The Tartars of
Lordo.
Desertes.
The viage by the
north sea.

The woorthynesse
of this vyage.

The viages of the
Frenchmen to the
land of Baccalos.

Pleasant
countreys.
New Fraunce.
Apostrophe to the
Christian princes.

Great ryuers.
A thyng woorthy
to be searched.

The way to
Cathay and the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the northwezt
A notable
enterpryse.

The noble
enterpryse of
Antoni di Mendoza,
Viceroy of Mexico.

The discoueryng
of the northwezt
partes.

Shyps saylynge from Cathay by the north hyperborean sea to the coastes of the northwest part of the lande of Baccaloos. Cathay.

The sea from new Fraunce or Terra Britonum to Cathay.
A notable booke.
255

A great and glorious enterprise.

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylot of the west Indies.

Commendation of Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote tould me that he was borne in Brystowe, and that at .iiii. yeare owld he was caried with his father to Venice and so returned ageyne into England with his father after certeyne yeares: wherby he was thought to haue bin born in Venice.

The fyrst vyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tould me that in a region within this ryuer he sowed l. [fifty] graynes of weate in September, and gathered therof l. 256 [fifty] thousand in December as wryteth also Francisco Lopes.

he found certeyne shyppes which fayled by that sea with marchaundies, and had in theyr baner vppon the proos of theyr shyppes, certeyne foules made of golde and fyluer which they of Mexico caule Alcatrazzi: And that theyr mariners shewed by signes that they were. xxx. [thirty] dayes saylynge in comynge to that hauen: wherby he vnderstode that these shippes could bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the fayde lande discouered. The fayde maister Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discouered fo greate a space of that countrey vnto the fayd sea, that it passed. 950. leaques, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtlesse yf the Frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed by lande towarde the fayd northwest and by north, they shuld also haue founde the sea wherby they myght haue fayled to Cathay. But aboute all thynges, this seemed vnto me moste woorthy of commendation, that the fayde maister Antonie wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural and marueylous thynges whiche they founde in searhyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes and altitudes of degrees: A worke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynde, wherby wee may conceaue that yf god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he wolde or nowe haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time: beinge neuerthelesse the greatest and most glorious enterprife that may bee imagined.

And here makynge a certeyne pause, and turnynge hym selfe towarde vs, he sayde: Doo yow not vnderstande to this purpose howe to passe to India toward the northwest wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Venese, fo valiente a man, and fo well practyfed in all thynges perteynyng to nauigations and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in fo much that for his vertues he is preferred aboute all other pylottes that fayle to the west Indies, who may not passe thither without his licence, and is therefore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee fayde that wee knewe him not, he proceeded, sayinge, that beinge certeyne yeares in the citie of Siuile, and desyrous to haue sum knowlege of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was toulde hym that there was in the citie a valient man, a Venecian borne, named Sebastian Cabote, who had the charge of those thynges, being an expert man in that science, and one that coulde make cardes for the sea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, seekyng his acquaintance, he founde hym a very gentell perfon, who enterteined hym frendly and shewed him many thynges, and amonge other a large mappe of the worlde with certeine particular nauigations afwell of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes. And that he spake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venese many yeares fence to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaundies, he tooke me with him to the citie of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauynge neuerthelesse sum knowlege of letters of humanitie and of the sphere. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were browght that Don Christopher Colonus Genuese, had discouered the coastes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courte of kynge Henry the feuenth who then reigned: In fo much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a thyng more diuine then humane, to fayle by the Weste into the East where spices growe, by a way that was neuer knowen before. By which fame and reporte, there increased in my harte a greate flame of desyre to attempte sum notable thyng. And vnderstandyng by reason of the sphere, that if I shulde fayle by the way of the northwest wynde, I shulde by a shorter tracte coomme to India, I thereuppon caused the kynge to bee aduertised of my diuise, who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnysshed with all thynges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yeare. 1496. in the begynnyng of fommer. Begynnyng therefore to faile towarde Northwest, not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thense to turne towarde India. But after certeine dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the Northe, which was to me a great displeasure. Neuerthelesse, sayling alonge by the coast to see if I could fynde any goulfe that turned, I founde the lande styll continent to the. 56. degree vnder owre pole. And feinge that there the coast turned toward the East, dispayringe to fynd the passage, I turned backe ageyne, and fayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the fayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my vyttayles sayling, I departed from thense and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amonge the people, and preparaunce for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more confideration had to this vyage. Wheruppon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kynge, and queene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertised what I had doone, interteined me, and at theyr charges furnysshed certeyne shyppes wherwith they caused me to fayle to discouer the coastes of Brasile, where I founde an exceedynge great and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of fyluer, into the which I fayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then syxe hundrethe leaques, fyndynge it euery where verye fayre and inhabited with infinite people, which with admyration came runnyng dayly to owre shyppes. Into this ryuer, runne fo many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible. After this, I made many other vyages, which I now pretermitte. And wexynge owld, I gyue my selfe to rest from such traualles bycause there are nowe many younge and lusty pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardenesse I doo reioyse in the frutes of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as yowe see.

And this is as much as I haue vnderstoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers nauigations wrytten in the Italian toonge.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Moscouia was in owr tyme discovered by Richard Chanceler in his viage toward Cathai by the direction and information of the fayde master Sebastian who longe before had this secrete in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that viage, forasmuche as the fame is largely and faythfully written in the Laten tonge by that lerned young man Clement Adams scole mayster to the Queens henschemen, as he receaued it at the mouthe of the fayde Richard Chanceler. Neuerthelesse I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Moscouia as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber written in the Latin toonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archeduke of Austria and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partely instructed by the ambafadours of the duke of Moscouie fent into Spayne to Th[e]mperours maiestie in the yeare. M.D.XX.V. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

I thinke it fyrste conueniente to speake sumwhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in owlde tyme. Conferryng therfore the mooste ancient of the Greeke and latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceauie it to bee a thyng which requireth no smaule iudgement of wytte and lernynge. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day wee commonly caule Moscouites, were in tyme past (as wytnesseth Plinie) cauled *Roxolani*, whom neuerthelesse by chaungynge one letter, Ptolomie in his eyght table of Europe, cauleth *Rofolanos* as dooth also Strabo. They were also many yeares cauled *Rutheni*: And are that people which sumtyme fought manfully ageynst the Capitaynes of Methridates as Strabo wryteth. They were cauled Moscouites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Moscouia or Mosca: or (as Volaterane saith) of the riuier Mosco. They were sumtyme gouerned by duke Iohan, whose wyfe was Helena of the lynage of Th[e]mperours of Constanstinople of the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyond these Roxolanos, Strabo sayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthenians therefore or Moscouites, are people of the northeaste parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the limettes of the great ryuer Boristhenes of Scithia, on the one syde with the Lituaniens and Polonians, and on the other syde with the Tartars who cease not to vexen them with continuall warres and incurfions. Especially the great Emperour Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, resident by the sea syde in Taurico Chersoneso, molesteth them with fore warres. They are toward the north syde inclosed with the frofen sea, the lande of whose coastes beinge verie large, pertyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Moscouie. This sea is it which the owlde wryters caule *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke word *Cronos*, which the Latines caule *Saturnus* whom they fayne to bee an owlde man, of complexion coude and slowe, and thereby name all such thynges as are coude and slowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they dyd this northe sea which beinge in maner euer frofen, is slowe and coude and in maner immouable. And for lyke consideration (as saythe Plinie) Hethens nameth it in the Scythian toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde signifieth as muche as congeled or frofen. But that I wander not farre frome my purpose: Th[e]mperie and dominion of the duke of Moscouie reacheth so farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia and also of Europe. The citie of Moscouia or Mosca, is counted twyfe as bygge as Colonia Agrippina as they faythfully reporte which knowe bothe. Vnto this they haue also an other not vnequall in byggenesse cauled Fladimer. Also Blefcouia, Nouogradia, Smolne, and Otifer, al which, theyr ambaffadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyldynges, and strongly defended with waules bothe of brycke and square stone. Of these, Blefcouia is strongest and enuironed with three waules. Other which they haue innumerable are not so famous as are these wherof this duke of Moscouie and Emperoure of Russia taketh th[e] inscription of his title. For euen at this present, when so euer eyther by his ambaffadours or his letters, he dooth signifie hym selfe to bee Emperoure of Moscouie, he is accustomed to vse this title. Basilius by the grace of God Emperoure of all Russia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moscouie, Nouigrade, Blefcouia, Smolne, and Otifer. etc. And this is the tittle whereby the fayde ambaffadours saluted yowre maiestie in the name of great Basilius when they began theyr oration. This prince of Moscouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and those of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians sente for his ambaffadoure to Th[e]mperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the least. For euen he when necessitie of warre requyareth, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of. xxx. [thirty] thousande horsfemen. But this is to theyr singular commendation that they are so obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge sommoned by hym by neuer so meane an herald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god,

The vyage to Moscouia.

The hystorye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani.
Rosolani.
Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

The ryuer Boristhenes.

Th[e]mperour of Cathay.

The frofen sea.

Lacus Cronicus.

Saturnus.

Amaltheum.

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

The citie of Moscouia.

The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

257

The duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Russia.

The duke of Moscouia his tittle.

Duke Basilius.

Their poure.

Their obedience to theyr prince.

Their wars and conquestes.

Gurnes.

Only the
moscouites haue
not felt the
commodities of
peace.

Theyr language.

Dalmatia.

Pannonia.

Hungarie.

Theyr original.

The Sclauon
toonge reacheth
farre.Great woods
white beares and
blacke woolues.Abundance of
hony and waxe.

Rych furies.

Theyr maner of
bargenyngRude and wyld
people.
Tartares.

258

Ciuille people in
cities.

Theyr money

They embrace the
Christian fayth
whiche thei
receaued of the
Apostles.
The counsaile of
Nicene.Basilius Magnus.
ChrisostomusTheyr constancie
in theyr religion.The bysshoppes
define
controuersies in
religion.
Theyr byssl.ops.The
Archebysshoppe.
The patriarke of
Constantinople.
A notable exemple
of a Christian
prynce.

thynkyng nothyng more glorious then to dye in the quarell of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or three hundreth thousande men ageynst theyr enemies eyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes aswell ageynst the Turkes as the Tartars by the exceedyng multitude of theyr horfemen and continual experience in warres. At such time as Th[e]mperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre ageynst the kynge of Polonie. They vse not only bowes and dartes after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, onely the Moscouites maye seeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In so muche that yf theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place beinge impreignable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Their language agreeth much with the toonge of the Bohemians, Croatians, and Sclauons: so that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderstande the Moscouite, although the Moscouian toonge be a more rude and harde phrafe of speach. The historiographers wryte that the Sclauons toonge the name of the confusion whiche was in Babell in the tyme of that stowt hunter Nemroth of whome mention is made in the Genesis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that wheras betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclauonia) and Moscouia, both the Pannonies are situate, yet this notwithstandinge, the Hungarians toonge nothyng agreeth with the Moscouites. Wherby wee may coniecture that these nations were sumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came owt of Dalmatia thither: whiche thyng also Volateranus affirmeth, sayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moscouites) is *Semidalmatica* (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe so euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moscouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by th[e]interpretours which yowre maiestie had then in yowre court. For whereas the fayde interpretours were borne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moscouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours wordes.

There are in Moscouia, wooddes of exceedyng byggenesse, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause wherof may bee th[e]extreme cold of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of bees, wherby they haue such abundaunce of hony and waxe that it is with them of smaull price. When the commoditie of theyr countrye is neglected by reason of longe warres, they chiefe aduantage whereby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr luyng, is the gaine which they haue by theyr rych furies, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, most whyte armyns, and such other which they sell to marchauntes of dyuers countryes. They bye and sell with simple faythe of wordes exchaungyng ware for ware without any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer monyes, yet doo they for the most part exchaunge theyr furies for frutes and other thynges necessarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are also sum people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by flesshe and mylke as doo the wyld Tartars theyr borderers which dwell in wods by the coastes of the frozen sea. These people are brutyshe, and lyue in maner lyke wyld beastes. But they of the cite of Mosca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuille people: and agree with vs in eatyng of fyssh and flesshe although theyr maner of coquerie is in manye thynges differyng frome owres. Volaterane wryteth that the Ruthenians vse money vncoynd. And inquiryng further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefly to bee considered, that they imbrase the Christian fayth which they affirme to haue byn preached to them fyrste by faynt Andrew th[e]apostle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine also as vnder Constantine the greate, in the yere. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] was concluded in the fyrst generall counsaile holden in the cite of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determined by. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] bysshoppes, and also such as hath byn wrytten and taught by the Greeke doctoures Basilius Magnus and Chrisostomus, they beleue to bee so holy, firme and syncere, that they thinke it no more lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the gospell of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is such, that no man dare caule those thynges into question which haue once byn decyded by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They doo therefore with a more constante mynde perseuer in theyr fyrst fayth which they receaued of faynt Andrew th[e]apostle and his successours and holy fathers, than doo manye of vs beinge diuided into seifmes and sectes whiche thyng neuer chaunceth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touchyng the fayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the archebyshoppe and other byshoppes as to bee defined by theyr spirite: not permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconstant and ignorant people. Their archebyshoppe is residente in the cite of Mosca, where also Th[e]emperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyse dyuers other byshops: as one in Nouigradia, where also Isodorus was byshop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rosciua, an other in Sufali, an other in Otiferi: also in Smolne, in Refan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebyshop as the chiefe. Before the patriarke of Constantinople was oppressed by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this Archebyshoppe recognifed hym as his superioure. In so much that this duke of Mosconia and Emperour of Ruffia, not vnmyndefull hereof but a diligente obseruer of his accustomed religion, dooth at this daye yearly

fende a certeyne stypende in maner of almes to the patriarche of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke for th[e]ende of this his Egiptian feruitude vntyll it shal please almyghty god to restore hym to his former churche and autoritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shulde nowe forsake hym whose predicessoures haue ruled and gouerned so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the cite of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie in the whiche are three hundreth munkes lyuyng vnder the rule of Basilius Magnus in the which is also the sepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obserue theyr vowe of chastitie which none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to th[e] order of presthod, but may neuer bee a munke. The prestes and bysshops whiche are admitted to orders vnmarrid, may neuer after bee married: nor yet such as haue wiues, mary ageine when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as committe adulterie or fornication, are greuously punysshed by the bysshoppes and deprived of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from owres in dyuers thynges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chalesse as much water as redde wine, which water they vse to heate, bycaufe (not without a great mysterie) there isshewed furth of the fyde of owre lorde, both blud and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was not without heate: for els shulde it scarcely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rytes are accordyng to th[e] institutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Basilius Magnus, and Christoſtomus. In this thyng they dyffer greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to younge children of three yeares of age, which they doo with fermented breade dipte in a sponefull of wyne, and gyue it them for the bodye and bludde of Chryste.

Theyr religion.
A monasterie of
ccc. [three
hundred] monkcs

Prestes.

Masse.

A mysterie.

The primatyue
church.
A strange
custome.

¶ *A briefe description of Moscouia after the later wryters, as Sebastian Munster and Iacobus Gastaldus.*

259



He prouince of Moscouia, is so named by the ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metropolitane cite of Moscouia cauled Mosca by the name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was cauled of the owlde wryters, Sarmatia Asiatica. The bortherers or confines to the Moscouians on the one fyde towarde the East, are the Tartars cauled Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. Towarde the West, the prouinces of Liuania and Lituania. Towarde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people confinyng with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the owld wryters Rha. And towarde the North, the Ocean sea cauled the Scythian sea, and the region of Lapponia. Moscouia is in maner all playne and full of marysshes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul this Ledy, as the owld autours named it Rha. It beginneth at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake and runneth into the sea of Bachau, named of the aunciente wryters, the sea Caspium or Hircanum. Vnder the dominion of Moscouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as Alba Russia (that is) whyte Russia. Also Colmogora, Plefcouia, Bafrida, Nouogardia, with also manye places of the Tartars which are subiecte to the duke of Moscouia. The chiefe cities of Moscouia, are Mosca, Plefcouia, Nouogardia, Colmogora, Otogeria, Viatra, Smolenser, Percaslauia, Cologna, Volodemaria, Rostauia, and Cassam. The people of Moscouia are Christians, and haue greate abundaunce of hony and waxe: also ryche fures, as Sabels, Marternes, Foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars which inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of Volga, haue no dwellyng places, nor yet cities or castels. But cary about with them certeyne cartes or wagens couered with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they reste, as wee do in owre houfes.

Sarmatia asiatica.

The Scythian
Ocean.

The ryuer of
Volga.

Lacus albus.

The Caspian sea.

Theyr chiefe cities.

The wyld Tartars

Hordas.

The bynges of the
cite of Moscouia.

Syluer.

The region of
Moscouia.
Beastes.

They remoue togyther in great companies whiche they caule Hordas. They are warlike people and good horfemen, and are all Macometistes.

Sebastian Munster in his booke of Vniuersall Cosmographie, wryteth that the cite of Mosca or Moscouia conteineth in circuite. xiiii. [fourteen] myles, and that it is wyfe as bygge as the cite of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrey of Moscouia, bifyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wryteth thus. It extendeth in largeness four hundreth myles, and is rich in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome in without the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and marysshes. The beastes there by reason of the coulde, are lesse then in other countreis more southwarde. In the myddeſt of the cite

A fayre and
strouge castel in
the citie of Mosca.

The dukes
pallaice.
Theyr drynke.

They are gyuen to
drunkenesse.

Corne and grayne.

Stoues.

The famous ryuer
of Tanais.

260

The marysshes of
Meotis.

Volga.

Ocha.

The sea Euxinum.

The forest of
hircania.

Vri.

Alces.

They traunyl in
wynter on sleades.

Causeys of tymber.

Trees and frutes.

Corne and grayne.

Hony in wode and
trees.

Lakes or pooles of
hony.

A man almost
drowned in hony.

A marueilous
chaunce.

Beaes feede of
hony and bees.

Beaes inuade
bulles.

The beaers byrth.

of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and three bulwarkes so stronge and fayre, that the lyke are scarcely feene in any other place. There are also in the castell xvi. churches, and three very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere as is the maner of the mosfe parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the worlde. They are exceedyngely gyuen to droonkenesse. Yet (as fume faye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to absteine from such stronge drinkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted theym, as twyfe or thryfe in the yere. They plowe the grownde with horses and plowes of woodde. They corne and other grayne by reason of longe coulde, doo feldome waxe ripe on the ground by reason wherof they are sumtymes inforced to ripe and dry them in theyr stoues and hottes houfes, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. Moscouia is extended vnto Iurham and Corelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moscouites caule Don, hauyng his sprynges and originall in Moscouia in the dukedome of Rezenfe. It ryfeth owt of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of marysshes and wooddes. And where it proceedeth toward the East to the mountaynes of Scithia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the fouth: and commyng to the marysshes of Meotis it fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (sumtyme cauled Rha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowyng owt of Moscouia, and then bendyng into the South and increafed with many other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Asia. The woodde or forest cauled Hircania fylua, occupieth a fmal portion of Moscouia. Yet is it sumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth toward Prussia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Vri or Bifomes, as wryteth Paulus Iouius. There are also Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe snoutes of fleshe and longe legges without any bowinge of theyr houx or pasternes. These beastes, the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes. The iornaye that is betwene Vlva of Lituania by Smolenfe to Mosca, is traunyled in wynter on sleades by the snowe congeled by longe froste, and made very flypperye and compacte lyke Ise by reason of much wearynge and treadynge, by meanes wherof this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the sommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome without difficulte labour. For when the snowe begynneth to bee dissolued by continuall heate, it caufeth marysshes and quamyres inextricable and dangerous both for horfe and man, were it not for certeyne causeys made of tymber with in maner infinite labour. The region of Moscouia (as I haue said) beareth neyther vynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very plefant or fwete fauour or taste except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes and trees are burnt of the coulde blastes of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes beare all kyndes of corne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyse all kyndes of pulfe, as beanes, peafon, tares, and suche other. But theyr chife haruest consisteth of hony and waxe, forasmuch as the hole region is replenysshed with frutefull bees which make most sweete hony, not in the husbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to passe that both in the wooddes and shalowed launes, are feene many swarmes of bees hangyng on the bowes of trees, so that it shall not bee necessarie to caule them together or charme theym with the founde of basens. There are oftentimes founde greate masses of hony combes, conferued in trees of the owlde hony forsaken of bees, forasmuch as the husband men can not seeke euery tree in so great and large wooddes: In so much that in the stockes or bodies of exceedyng great and holowe trees, are sumtymes founde great pooles or lakes of hony. Demetrius th[e]ambassadour of the duke of Moscouia whom he sent to the bysshop of Rome not many yeres fence, made relation that a husbande man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, seekyng in the wooddes for hony, descended into a greate holowe tree full of hony into the which he slypte vp to the brest, and lyued there only with hony for the space of two dayes, caulynge in vayne for helpe in that deserte of wooddes. And that in fine dispayryng of helpe, he escaped by a marueilous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downwarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie ferued) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he suddainly clasped her abowt the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to inforce her strength to leape owt of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

These regions abounde with beaers whiche euery where seeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl theyr bellies, but also to helpe theyr fyght. For theyr eyes are oftentimes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greefes are eased by eatyng of hony. They haue weakeft heades, as lions haue strongest. In so muche that when (beinge therto inforced) they caste them selues downe headelonge from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr fiete, and lye for a tyme astoonysshed and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sumtyme on two fiete, and spoyle trees backwarde. Sumtyme also they inuade bulles, and so hange on them with al theyr fiete, that they wery them with weight. The beare (as sayth Plinie)

bryngeth furth her byrth the. xxx. [thirtieth] day and oftentimes two. Their byrth is a certeyne whyte masse of flesshe without forme and little bigger then a moufe without eyes, and without heare, with onely the nayles or clawes conmyng foorthe. But the damme with continuall lyckyng, by lyttle and lyttle figureth the informe byrthe. When shee entereth into the denne whiche shee hath chofen, shee creepeth thither with her belly vpwarde lest the place shulde bee founde by the steppes of her fiete. And being there deliuered of her byrthe, remayneth in the same place for the space of. xiiii. dayes immoueable as wryteth Aristoteles. They lyue without meate fortie dayes, and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyckyng and suckyng theyr ryght foote. At the lengthe chaunfyng to fynde meate, they fyll theym selues so full, that they remedy that surfecte by vomyte whiche they prouoke by eatyng of antes. Their byrthe is oppressed with so heauy a sleape for the space of. xiiii. dayes, that it can not bee rayfed eyther with prickinge or woundes, and in the meane tyme growe excedyng fat. After. xiiii. dayes they wake from fleepe, and begyn to licke and sucke the soles of theyr fore fiete and lyue thereby for a space: Nor yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vntyll the spryng tyme of the yeare. At whiche tyme begynnyng to runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprigges or branches of trees, and other herbes correspondent to theyr lypes.

Before fivie hundred yeares, the Moscouites honoured the goddesses of the gentyles: And then fyrste receaued the Christian faith when the bysshoppes of Grecia began to discent from the church of the Latines: and therfore receaued the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the soules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of preestes, nor yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinffolkes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the hystorie of the miracles of Christe and the Epistels of faynt Paule are rehearsed owt of the pulpitte. Beyond Moscouia, are manye people whiche they caule Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Prince of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdued, as are the people of Perm, Baskird, Czriremiffa, Iuhra, Corela, and Permska. These people were Idolatours before the duke compelled them to baptisme, and appoynted a bysshop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure of the duke, fleyde alyue and slewe. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them sore and assigned them a newe bysshoppe.

It is here also to bee noted that the owlde Cosmographers sayned that in these regions toward the Northe pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos and Hyperboreos, which neuerthelesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Volham doo spryng owt of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue theyr originall in the playnes.

Nexste to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora through the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increafeth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the fyeldes round about, and with abundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the couldenesse of the ayer. Wheate fowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without plowynge: and fearyng the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, spryngeth, groweth, and rypeth with wonderfull celeritie of haftyng nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Iuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marte towne named Vstiuga, beinge a hundred and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe cite of Mosca. To this mart towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious fures of marternes, fables, woolues and such other whiche are exchanged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaundies.

Hytherto Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that suche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a contrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered that lyke as spices, gums, and odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate duryng al the hole yeare without impressiō of the mortifying qualitie of could wherby al thynges are constryned as they are dilated by heate, euen so in could and moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner and more waterysshe then in hot regions) are flowres engendered more abundantly as caused by impressiō of lesse and saynter heate woorkyng in thynne matter of waterysshe moisture lesse concocte then the matter of gummess and spices and other vnctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For although (as Munster saithe here before) the region of Moscouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of sweete fauoure by reason of the couldenesse therof, neuerthelesse forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly gathered) may in sommer seafon growe abundantly in the playnes, marysshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but also on trees in coulede regions, it is agreeable to good reason that great plentie of honye shulde bee in suche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approach of the sonne, as appeareth in the spryng tyme not onely by the springinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees spryngyng before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the loweste and leafte degree of heate, as the

261
The beares denne.

Beares lyue without meate. xl. [forty] dayes.
The sleape of beares.

The religion of the Moscouites.

The Scythians subiecte to the duke of Moscouia.

It was then an opinion that al ryuers spronge owte of montaynes

The fruteful region of Colmogora.
The great ryuer Diuidna.
Wheate without plowing

The ryuer of Iuga.
Vstiuga.
Fures.

The naturall cause of much hony in coulede regions.
Gummess and spices in hot countreys.

Floures in coulede regions
262

Floures of trees.

Blossomes of trees.

An exemple of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and shorte nyghtes.
Bramble and ferne.
Spices.

The sauoure of floures.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Serius is otherwyse cauled Canicula, this is the dogge, of whom the canicular dayes haue theyr name.

What is hony

Howe hony is corrupted.

Hony of great quantitie in North regions

263
Hot nyghtes in coulde regions.
A similitude.

Natural heat dooth subtyle and digest all thynges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Could regions

Ziglerus.

lyke is seene in the arte of styllynge wherby all thinne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrste degree of the fyre: and the heuyest and thickest moystures are drawne owt with more vehement fyre. As we may therefore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummess to the heate of Iune and spices to the heate of Iuly. Euen so in suche coulde regions whose sommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with th[e] extreme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to brynge forth abundance of floures as thynges caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by their tast and fauoure in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate eyther bytyng the tooonge or offendyng the head as is in spices, gummess, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in could and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moiflure, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewyse the length of the dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer season in suche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wryteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble and ferne growe not but in could regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that spices and hotte feedes, can not growe in could regions, forasmuch as beinge of thinne substaunce, they shulde soone be mortified and extinct by excessiue could. For (as he sayth) nothing can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of frutes without the helpe of ayer agreeable to the natures of such thynges as are brought forth in the same, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of sweete fauour, forasmuch as the moysture that is in them, being thinne and but lyttle, is by meane heate soone and easely concocte or made rype. Such also as are soone rype, are soone rotten according to the prouerbe.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hystorie, Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and fets of plantes, except forell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (which some caule goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chapyture of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

This cometh from the ayer at the ryfynge of certeyne starres, and especially at the ryfynge of *Sirius*, and not before the ryfynge of *Vergilia* (which are the seuen starres cauled *Pleiades*) in the sprynge of the day. For then at the mornynge sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquoure and the heare of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the swette of heauen, or as it were a certeyne spettyl of the starres, eyther the iuife of the ayer purgynge it selfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fyrste fauleth from aboue. But nowe descendyng so far, and infected not only with such vnclene vapoures and exhalations, as it meteth with by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of sundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewyse awel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as also by longe referuyng the same in hives, it neuerthelesse reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiiii. chapyture of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of Germanie, hony is found in such quantitie that there haue bynne seene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche wordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philofophie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of sommer is temperate and continuall awell by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulde as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thynges as are fynyed by continuall heate, mouynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulde (as appereth in the art of styllynge and hatchynge of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifyng qualitie, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made rype, fower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, grosse made subtyle, harde made softe, deade made luyng, and in fine bodies made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woork of dygestion of luyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nuriffhement is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into spirites, as the like is also seene in the nuriffhement of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore, if hony bee eyther the swette of the starres, or the iuife of the ayer purgynge it selfe (as plinie writeth) or other wyse engendered of subtyle and fine vapoures ryfynge frome the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayer by the sayd continuall and moderate heate, it may seeme by good reafon that the same shulde bee engendered in sommer season more abundantly in could regions then in hot, for the causes aforefayde. And that it may by autoritie and reafon more manifestlye appeare bothe that the heate of sommer in could regions is continuall (as I haue sayd) and also that the coulde in wynter is not there so intollerable to th[e] inhabitants of those regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered owt of the booke of Ziglerus wrytten of the north regions.

**OF THE NORTH REGIONS
AND OF THE MODERATE AND CONTINVALL HEATE**

in coulde regions aſwell in the nyght as in the day in
foommer ſeaſon: Alſo howe thoſe regions are
habitable to th[e]inhabitauntes of the
ſame, contrary to th[e]oppinion
of the owlde wryters.



F this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the Northe regions in the deſcription of Scandia wryteth as foloweth.

Wee wylł intreate of this matter, not as puttyng the ſame in queſtion as dyd the owlde wryters, nor gatherynge iudgement deducted of reaſons in way of argument, forafmuch as wee are alredy more certeyne by hyltorie that theſe coulde regions are inhabited. Wee wylł fyrſt therfore ſhewe by naturall reaſon and by conſideration of the ſphere, declare how by the helpe of man and arte, coulde regions are inhabited without damage or deſtruction of luyng beaſtes: And wylł fyrſt ſpeake of the qualitie of fommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented. Yet intende I not to comprehend all that maye bee fayde in this matter, but only rehearſe ſuch reaſons and fimilitudes as are moſt apparent and eaſy to bee vnderſtoode.

In ſuch regions therfore, as are extended from the burnte line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the ſonne ryfeth hygher ouer them, ſo muche are they the more burnte with heate, as Affrica, bycauſe it ryfeth hygheſt ouer them as they are neareſt to the Equinoctiall: and taryng with them ſo much the ſhorter time cauſeth ſhorter days, with longer and coulde nyghtes to reſtore the damage of the day paſt by reaſon of the moiſture conſumed by vapour. But in ſuch regions ouer the which the ſonne ryfeth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and cauſeth ſo much the ſhorter and warme nyghtes, as reteynng warme vapours of the day paſt, which vapours helpe the woork of the day. I ſpeake as I haue founde by experience, faythe Vpfalienſis. For I haue felt the fommer nyghtes ſcarſely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, wheras I felte them coulde in Rome. This benefite of th[e]-increaſe of the day, doth augment ſo much the more in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and ceaceth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poynte of the axes or axceltree of the worlde, where the ſonne beinge at the hygheſt in fommer, is eleuate abowt. xxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day conſiſteth of. vi. monethes from the ſprynge tyme by the ſtandyng of the ſonne (cauled Solſtitium) in the ſigne of Cancer to Autumne. The ſonne therfore, without any offence of the night, gyueth his influence vppon thoſe landes with heate that neuer ceaſethe duryng that tyme which maketh to the great increaſe of fommer by reaſon of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greatly wee thinke the fommer to bee increaſed hereby.

Wee haue before declared howe hyghe the ſonne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the ſtaye of the ſonne: And ſo manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the ſtaye of the ſonne in wynter (that is) at the ſhorteſt day in the yeare. But here, in the mydde wynter, the ſonne at noone tyde is beneficiall, and bryngeth fourth floures, roſes, and ieſefloures. I haue gathered ſum in wynter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare heauen, brought fourth only by the ſonne. But this benignitie of the ſonne, continueth not paſt ſiue houres

Ziglerus.

The qualitie of
ſommer in coulde
regions.The courſe of the
ſonne.

Vapours.

Short and warme
nyghtes.

Gothlande

264

One day of. vi.
monethes.Howe the ſommer
is increaſed in
coulde regions.

Rome.

Could nights in hot regions.

The Romane wynter.

One nyght of vi. monethes Obiections.

The twylyghtes.

The lyght of the moone.

The nyght vnder the pole.

A demonstration.

265

The Moone.

Remedies of nature and art.

The owlde wryters persuaded by coniecture.

A brasen pot broken with frost.

in the naturall day, forasmuch as th[e]operation therof is extinct by the couldeneffe of the nyght folowyng. But if this benefite myght bee receaued without hindaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it shulde fuerlyc brynge foorth manye woonderfull thynges, if moysture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceaue that the Romane winter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full sprynge tyme in the same cite duryng the tyme of the fayde five houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the foonne vnder bothe places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by th[e]accesse of the foonne to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that foommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane sprynge.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the. vi. moonethes in the whiche the foonne leaueth those regions, and go[e]th by the contrarye or ouerthwarte circle towarde the south in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkeneffe and nyghtes not increased, which may be the cause that beastes can not seke theyr foode. And that also the coulde shulde then bee intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges constrayned shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde th[e]iniuries of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde perysshe before the sommer folowyng, when they shulde bringe furth theyr broode or succession: And that for these causes, the fayde coulde clime shulde bee perpetually defolate and vnhabitable. To al which obiections, we answere in this maner

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I saye, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the foonne fauleth, so fuddeynly commeth the darke night but that the euenyng dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day sprynge or dawninge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the ryfinge of the foonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no light by the fayde euenyng and mornyng twilightes, is accompysshed by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are feldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therefore cuen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the foonne descendyng from the highest halfe sphere by. xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twylyght, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succedeth: And that the foonne approchyng, and ryfynge aboute the the hyghest halfe sphere by as many paralels, dooth diminysshe the nyght and increase the twylyght. Ageyne, by the position or placeinge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralelles therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the foonne descendyng there vnder the horizon, dooth not brynge darke nyghtes to those regions vntyll it coomme to the paralele distant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

Other demonstrations hereof are made by certeyne figures of Astronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I coulde not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Duryng the tyme of these fayde fyxe moonethes of darkeneffe vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the foonne and the fayde twylyghtes, onely for the space of three moonethes, in the whiche the foonne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of three moonethes is without remedy frome heauen. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyght, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackyng lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it coommeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into three forts of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accordyngly. And this is the reason conceaued of the poure of the sphere wherby we testifie that the fommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to lyuyng beastes.

But wee wyl nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coulde so greatly feared, is more remisse and tollerable then owre opinion: so that compared to the nature of such beastes as liue there, it may be abydden. And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the which any thyng was exactly knowen or discovered of the north regions. The owlde wryters therefore persuaded onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of those places: Or rather by the estimation of heauen, the which, bycause they felte it to be hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Grecia, tooke therby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hystorie of Strabo is knowen, that a pottle of brasse which was broken in sunder with frofen water, was brought from Pontus and shewed in Delphis in token of a greuous wynter. Here therefore, they that so greatly feared the winter (such as chaunceth to the earth vnder the. xlviii. [forty-eighth] paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coulde such men trewly define vpon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they were inhabited or not? But such as folowed these, being contented with th[e]inuentions of the owlde autours,

and borne in maner vnder the fame qualitie of heauen, perfited wyllngly in the fame opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof wee nowe intreate: fo lyghtly was that opinion receaued as touching the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faithe (forasmuch as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to fiande ageynst the fentence of the owld autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabited with hearynges, coddcs, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fyfshes, with th[e] infinite number wherof, tables are furnyffhed through a great parte of Europe: Al whiche arc taken in the north fea extended beyonde owr knoweledge. This fea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dryueth furth his increafe to feke newe manfions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore alfo, euen the mouthes of the riuer of Tyber receaua a fyfsh as a newe gest sent from the north fea. This fwamme twyfe through Fraunce and twife through Spayne: Ouerpassed the Ligurian and Tufcan fea to communicate her selfe to the citie of Rome. The lakes alfo and ryuers of thofe regions are replenyffhed with fyfsh: In fo much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguyffhe th[e] increafe of the yeare folowinge, and the fuccesffion reparable fo many hundreth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it fhulde of neceffitie folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earthe and the water, fhulde be destructiue to luyng creatures, the water fhulde chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde fo tractable, that in the diepe wynter, both that increafe is brought furth, and fyffhyng is alfo exercifed. The lande is lykewife inhabited with lyke plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre: Let the fayth hereof rest in th[e] exposition folowyng, wherin we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may coomme to passe. Therefore as touchyng nature, wee fuppofe that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue gyuen fuch order to all thynges wherby euery thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremities of the elementes confent with theyr next. The ayer is groffe about the earth and water: But thinne and hotte about the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermoft fea is very falte. And falte (as wytnesseth Plinie) yeldeth the fatnesse of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natiue heate, is of propertie agreable to fyre. The fea then, beinge all of fuch qualitie, poureth furth it selfe far vppon th[e] extreme landes, whereby by reafon of the falteneffe therof, it moueth and stereth vp generatiue heate, as by fatnesse it noryffheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gyueth this frutfulnes to the earth at certeyne fluds, although the earth alfo it selfe, haue in his inner bowels the fame liuely and nuryffhyng heate, wherby not only the dennes, caues and holowe places, but alfo fprynges of water are made warme: And this fo much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suethlande are fruteful of metals, in the which, fyluer and copper are concocte and molten into veynes, which can fcarfely bee doonne in fornaces. By this reafon alfo, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceinge the earthe and the waters, and throwghe both thofe natures breathyng furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beaftes, as wytnesseth the huge byggenesse of the whales in thofe feas, with the strength of bodye and longe lyfe of fuche beaftes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coule not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiously nuryffhed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increafe is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euyl fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can prosper well. Neyther are fuch thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as though an Egiptian or Ethiopian were fuddeynly conueyed into thofe coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle browght fyrft acquaynted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the historie of holy fcripture. They that were led from Mefopotania, and that famous towre of Babilon towarde the north partes of the worlde in the fyrft difpersion of nations, dyd not immediatly passe to th[e] extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyrft vnder a myddle heauen betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to fusteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais, as he that commeth from winter to foommer, maye the better after abyde Ife and fnowe beinge fyrft hardened therto by the froffes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortall men, accustomed to beare the hardeneffe of places nexte vnto theym, were therby at the length more confirmed to fusteyne the extremes. And here alfo, if any sharpenesse remayne that maye feeme intollerable, nature hath prouyded for the fame with other remedies. For the lande and fea, hath gyuen vnto beaftes, diepe and large caues, dennes, and other holowe places and fecreate corners in mountaynes and rockes, bothe on the lande and by the fea bankes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures fo much the more intent and vehement, in howe much they are the more conffrayned by extreme coulde. Nature hath alfo gyuen valleys diuerted and defended from the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewife couered beaftes with heare fo much the thicker in howe muche the vehemencie of coulde is greater: by reafon wherof the beft and rycheft fures are brought from thofe regions, as Sables whose price is growne to great exceffe nexte vnto gold and precious stones, and are efteemed princely ornamentes. The beaftes that beare these fures, are hunted chiefly in wynter (which thyng is more fraunge) bycaufe theyr heare is thenne thicker and cleaueth faster to the skyn. Howe greauous then fhall we thinke the winter to bee there where this lyttle beaft lyueth fo well, and where the hunters may fearch

Fysshes of the North seas.

The North sea.

The qualitie of water.

The lande

The diuine prouidence in moderatyng the elements

266

The nature of the sea. Salte. Generatiue heate.

Owtwarde coulde is cause of inwarde heate.

Metals.

Vapours and exhalations. Whales.

Beastes.

Hereby maye bee considered the cause of the deathe of owr men that sayle directly to Guinea. No passage from one extremitie to another but by a meane.

Caues and dennes.

Valleys.

The best fures. Sables.

Beastes that lye
hyd in wynter.

All beastes haue
the nature of the
place where they
are engendered.

267

What exercise
may doo.

Vse maketh
masteries.

Scandia.

Scene. is fayre in
the duch toonge.

The fertilitie of
Scandia.

He meaneth
Diodorus Siculus.

Th[e]inuasions of
the Gothes

Transiluania

268

the dennes and hautes of such beastes through the wooddes and snowe? But suche beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde th[e]iniurie of coulde, eyther lye hyd in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both abroad and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the fame well dowbeled. At home, with large fyres on harthes, chymneys, and in flooues for the day, with clofe chambers, and couches, softe and warme beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme rigorous to straungers, althowghe they are to th[e]inhabitauntes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrst natural mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thinges are agreeable to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike and the beare in Sarmatia, are fierce as in theyr presente strenght and vigoure: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strenght and courage. The foule cauled *Ciconia* (which sum thinke to bee the storke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coomme at that tyme. The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuerthelesse there is none more holfoome. Such as haue byn tenderly brought vp, if they coomme suddely in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchyng, heate, passages through ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaultes. But the owld fouldier exercised in the warres, vseth these as meditations of the fieelde, as hardened therto by longe experience. He that hath byn accustomed to the shadowe of the cite, and wyll attempte the fayinge of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ara, fere nudus*, that is, naked and bare without house and home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verfe, *Habebis frigora febrem* (that is) he shall haue the coulde ague. Suche thynges therefore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by litle and litle, become more tollerable: In so much that this exercise of sufferaunce by such degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes farre beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denyed to luyng creatures. The reader may also perceauie how large matter of reasons and exemples may bee opened for the declaryng of owre opinion wherein wee rest. Let therefore th[e]autoritie of the ancient autours gyue place, and the consent of the newe wryters agree to this hyffory, not as nowe at the length comprehended (whereas before many hundreth yeares Germanie and Scandia had entercourse of marchaundies not feuered by the large goulfe of Gothia) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to light. And hauyng fayde thus much in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wryte of the north regions.

¶ SCHONDIA.



Chondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as fayre Dania or fayre Denmarke. Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandinavia if there bee no faute in th[e]exemplers. It was named Schondia, by reason of the fayrenesse and fruitfulnesse therof. And this afwell for that in beneficiall heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marte townes, abundaunce of ryuers of fyssh, plentie of beastes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities wel inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyuethe place to none other fortunate region. This was in maner vnknown to the owld Greekes and Latins as may appere by this argumente that with one consente they affirmed that in these north regions the cold zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall snowe intollerable to all luyng creatures. For few of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Amonge whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke, that Schondania is of vnknown byggenesse: and only that portion therof to be known which is inhabited with the nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie vyllages. Neyther yet is Eningia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whiche the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of moste innocente behaour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came from thence to Delphos, certeyne religious virgines with voves and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore that that nation obserued this inflitution vntyll the fayde virgins were violated of them of whome they were receaued as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of Schondia, and the people that inhabite the same, althowgh they were fence vnknown, as lykewyse the Gothes departyng from these north landes althowghe they obteyned Th[e]empire of the regions aboute the mariffhes of Meotis and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a portion which is nowe cauled Transiluania) and the banks of the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions wel known from whense they tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owld wryters are vn sufficient wytnesses to testifie of owre narrations as touchyng these landes vnknown to them, Euen so the other parte which excluded the fame as vnhabitable, are to bee conuincid leaste theyr autoritie beinge admitted, shuld engender opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moscouia, wryteth thus. Scandia or


Scandia, is no Iland (as fume haue thought) but parte of the continente or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Gothlande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke possesseth a great parte therof. But wheras the wryters of these things haue made Scandia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lumbardes came from thense, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngedomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was vnknown: And that by reason of so many mariffhes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle known. Which thynge hath byn the cause that fomme iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scandia, to bee one great Ilande.


GRONLANDE.



Gronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increafe and frutefulnessse of pasture. By reason wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as shyppes may passe thither they fet furth great heapes of cheefe and butter to bee sould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rowgh with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder th[e] ordination of Nidrosia. To one of these, was of late yeares a bysshop appoynted onely by the tytyle of a fuffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place and

difficult navigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of mouable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is sayde that they (as also the people of Laponia) doo rayfe tempestes on the sea with magical inchauntmentes, and brynge such shippes into daungeour as they intende to spoile. They vse lyttle shyppes made of lether, and safe ageynste the brusynge of the sea and rockes, and with them assayle other shippes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades of the Spanishe nauigations, that Sebastian Cabote fayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaufed vpon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of Iuly: and that diuertynge from thense, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the clime of the Ilande of Hispaniola aboue Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narration hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitfarch to the continente or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the castell of Wardhus: which thynge I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebysshoppe of Nidrosia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapones consent with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbrase the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenesse of customes to bee betwene them because they ioyne togyther in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to difagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full twoo hundreth Schœni, euery one being a space of grounde conteinyng. lx. [sixty] furlonges, which make. vii. [seven] myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaufed into such Ise. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of Iuly, I wyll contend it is not well reherfed, no althowghe he had fayled vnder the pole, for such reafons as wee haue declared before to the contrary, neuerthelesse, that at sum tyme he fayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he fayled not by the mayne sea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehendynge and imbrasyng the sea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the same cause, the goulfe of Gothland is frozen because it is streyght and narrow, in the whiche also the lyttle quantitie of falt water is ouercome by the abundance of fresshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Ilande, the sea is not frozen for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the poure of fresshe water is there ouercome of th[e] abundance of the falte water. There is a fame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyardes fayle at this presente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule *Terra viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringynge from thense fuche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the vnknown lande vnder the pole, from whense also the theues and robbers of the Pigmei coomme into this lande. Whiche is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited and almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers caule Cherfonnesi or Peninsulæ (that is) almost Ilandes:

 The description of Gronlande.

 The description of the East syde whiche lyeth towarde Norway.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]		[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
*Wardhus castell.	54 [degrees] [0']	70. 30'	The seconde extention.	28. [0']	72. [0']
Towarde the North.	53. 30'	71. 30'	Huitfarch. promont.	22. [0']	67. [0']
The fyrst extention.	40. [0']	71. 40'	The extention.	5. [0']	61. 45'
				*356. [0']	60. [0']

It is continued from thense by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos. Towarde the west and north, it is termined with an vnknown ende of landes and seas.

[* Wardoehuus is the chief village of Wardoe, an island on the N.E. coast of Norway, beyond the North Cape and near Waranger Fiord. Its true N. Lat. is 70° 23', and E. Long. 31° 7'. Therefore Ziegler's meridian in all the following dates (being 54 degrees west of Wardoehuus) is really 23 degrees W. Long., and that therefore he places Baccallos 4 degrees still further west—fixes it in 27° W. Long., which is, in high latitudes, the longitude of a part of Greenland.—E. A.]

The Gothes and Lumbardes.

Frutefull pasture.

Religion oeglected.

Inchaunters

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote to the frozen sea.

Gronlande. Wardhus.

Lapponia and Gronlande.

Schoeni

Cabote tould me that this Ise is of fresshe water, and not of the sea.

A commixtion of salt water and fresshe.

The sea betwene Norway and Ilande.

Terra Viridis.

269

Pigmei.

Baccallaos

ISLANDE.



Island cauled
Thyle.
Schoeni is lx.
[sixty] furlonges.

Miracles of nature
in Islande.

Three maruelous
mountaynes.

Helgate.
Hecla.

Straunge visions.

Ise.

Purgatory.

A straunge thyng.

Four springs of
contrary nature.

Abundaunce of
brimstone.

Dryed fysshe.

Scarsenes of corne.
270

Haukes.

White rauens.

Houses of whales
bones.

The nauigation to
Island.

Whaies.

One thyng
seruyng for
contrary vses.
A shipmans
quadrant.

Islande is interpreted the land of Ise, and is cauled of the owlde wryters Thyle. It is extended betwene the south and the north almost two hundredth schoenes in longitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath fuche frutefull pastures, that they are fayne sumetymes to dryue the beastes from their feedyng least they shulde bee suffocate with to much fatnes. This Iland is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of the which Saxo Grammaticus in his hystorie of Denmarke, and Olanus Gothus in his description of the north landes, doo make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are couered with perpetuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling with continuall flames of fyre and castyng furth brymstone. One of these is named Helga, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrde is named Hecla: whose flames neyther consume flaxe or towe, matters moſte apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with lyke force as the ſlotte of great artillerie is driuen furth by violence of fyre, euen so by the commixtion and repugnaunce of fyre, coulde, and brymstone, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Nere vnto these mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earthe of houghe byggenesse and fuche depth (especially at the mounte Hecla) that no syght can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrst appeare men as though they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr fowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to resorte to theyr owne, they aunswere with moornyng voyce and greuous fyghes, that they must departe frome thense to the mounte Hecla, and therewith fuddeynly varysshe owte of syght. Ise floweth about the Ilande for the space of seuen or eyght moonethes, makyng by runnyng together a certeyne miserable waylinge and gronyng noyse not vnlyke the voyce of man. Th[e] inhabitants thinke, that in this Ise and the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euill foules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portion of this Ise, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessell or cofer, the fame dooth so varysshe at the tyme when the other Ise about the Ilande dissolueth, that not so much as one droppe of water or Ise can therof bee founde.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng toward the sea coastes, are foure sprynges of water of moſte diuers and contrary nature. The fyrste, by reason of his perpetuall and feruente heate, fuddeynly turneth all bodies that are caste therein, into stones, referuyng neuerthelesse theyr fyrst forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollerable coldnesse. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and moſt pleasaunte to quenche thyrst. The fourth is playne poyson, pestilent, and deadely. There is furthermore in these sprynges fuche abundaunce of brymstone, that a thousande pounce weight therof is bought for lyttle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dryed fysshe, as soles, maydens, playces, falpas, stockefysshes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynges as are browght thither from Lubeck, Hamborowe, and Amſterdam. For they haue oftentymes such scarfenesse of corne, that they vse dryed fysshe in the steade of breade, althowgh in sommer the Ilande so floryssheth with greene and frutefull medowes, that they are fayne sumetimes to dryue theyr beastes from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate for to much fattenesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to bee vsed in matters of phicke. There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as falcons, gerfalcons, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows, beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue moſt swyfte horses: and such as runne. xxx. [thirty] myles continually without rest or bayte. They haue many churches: and houses buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fysshes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in sommer season: and that only for the space of foure moonethes, by reason of the coulde and Ise whereby the passage is flopped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the sea amonge the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place althowgh he haue knowlege therof, yet dooth he not punyssh them, soasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne such thynges as are doonne on the sea, but only on the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by reason of whales and such other monsters of the sea, excepte the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the shyppes with the noyse of droommes, and emptie barrells cast into the sea. There are many mynstrels and other that play on instrumentes, with the sweete noyse whereof, they vse to allure foules and fysshes to theyr nettes and snares. Many also, lye lurkyng in caues and dennes to auoyde the sharpnesse of coulde, as the Affricanes doo the lyke to defend them selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne cauled Weytzarch, (lyyng betwene Ilande and Gruntland or Gronlande) is erected a shypmans quadrant of marueilous byggenesse, made by two pirates named Pinnigt and Pothorst in fauour of such as sayle by those coastes that they may therby auoyde the daungerous places lyyng toward Gronland.

The myddest of the Ilande. 7 0' [Long.] 65 30' [Lat.] The cite Harfol. etc. 7 40' [Long.] 60 42' [Lat.]

LAPONIA.



The region of Laponia, was so named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germayns, caule all suche Laponnes, as are simple or vnapte to thynges. This people is of smaule stature, and of such agilite of bodie, that hauynge theyr quyuers of arrowes gerte to them and theyr bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caste theym selues through a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They feyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the Tartars. They are exercised in hurlynge the darte and shootynge from theyr youth: in so muche that they giue theyr chyldren no meate vntyll they hit the marke they shoote at, as dyd in owlde tyme th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilandes cauled Balears. They vse to make theyr apparell streight and close to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr woorke. Theyr winter vestures are made of the hole skynnes of seales or beares artificially wrought and made supple. These they tye with a knotte about theyr heades, leauynge onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the residue of theyr bodies couered as though they were fowed in sackes, but that this beinge adapted to all partes of theyr bodies, is so made for commoditie and not for a punisshement as the Romans were accustomed to sowe paricides in sackes of lether with a cocke, an ape, and a ferpent, and so to hurle them alyue all together into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke it came to passe that in owlde tyme it was rasshelly beleued that in these regions there were men with rowgh and hery bodies, wilde beastes, as parte made relation throwghe ignoraunce, parte also takynge pleasure in rehearfall of suche thynges as are straunge to the hearers. The Laponnes defended by this arte and industry, go abrode and withstande the sharpenes of wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of heauen. They haue no houfes, but certeyne tabernacles like tentes or haies wherwith they passe from place to place and change theyr mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the people of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobii, which vsed waynes in the steade of houfes. They are much gyuen to huntynge: and haue such plentie of wylde beastes that they kyll them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a woman to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her husbande wente owte on huntynge the same daye: nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beaste that is taken vntyll her husbande reache her on the spitte suche a portion of flesshe as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The region nuryssheth no kynde of serpentes: yet are there greate and noyfoome gnattes. They take fysshe in greate plentie: by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi. For as these drie theyr fysshe with feruent heate, so doo they drye them with coulde, and grynde or stampe them to powder as smaule as meale or floure. They haue such abundaunce of these fysshes, that they hould great plentie therof in certeyne store houfes to cary them vnto other landes nere about them, as Northbothnia and Whyte Russia. Theyr shyppes are not made with nayles, but are tide togyther and made fast with cordes and wyththes. With these they sayle by the swyft ryuers betwene the mountaines of Laponia, beinge naked in fommer that they may the better swynme in the tyme of perell, and gather together such wares as are in daunger to bee lost by shipwracke. Part of them exercise handie craftes, as imbrotherynge and weauynge of cloth interlaced with golde and syluer. Suche as haue diuised any necessary arte, or doo increase and anende th[e]inventions of other, are openlye honoured, and rewarded with a vesture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of the thyng they deuised. And this remayneth to the posteritie of theyr famelie in token of theyr desertes. They frame shippes, buylde houfes, and make diuers sortes of housholde stuffe artificially, and transporte them to other places neare abowte. They bye and sell bothe for exchange of wares and for money. And this only by consent of both parties without communicacion: yet not for lacke of wytte or for rudenesse of maners, but bycause they haue a peculiar language vnknown to theyr bortherers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued longe free, and susteyned the warres of Norwaye and Suecia vntyll at the length they submitted them selues, and payde ryche fures for theyr tribute. They chose them selues a gouernour whom they caule a kyng: But the kyng of Suetia gyueth hym autoritie and administracion. Neuerthelesse, the people in theyr futes and doubtfull causes, reforte to Suecia to haue theyr matters decised.

In theyr iorneyes, they go not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any house, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses: but in the steade of them, they tame certeyne wylde beastes which they caule Reen, beinge of the iuste byggeneffe of a mule, with rowgh heare lyke an Ass, clouen feete, and branched hornes lyke a harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They wyll not abyde to bee rydden. But when theyr peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they so ioyned to the chariotte or sleade, they runne in the space of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres, a hundreth and fiftie myles, or. xxx. [thirty] schoenos: The whiche space they affirme to chaunge the horizon thryfe: that is thryfe to coome to the furthest signe or marke that they see a farre of. Which doubtlesse is a token both of the marueylous swiftnesse and great strenght of these beastes beinge able to con-

People of great agilite.

A strange apparell.

The cause of an owlde erreour.

So doo the Tartars.

Plentie of wylde beastes.

271

No serpents.
Great gnats.

Abundaunce of fysshe.

Ships without nayles.

Science honoured.

Bargeinyng
without woordes.

No horses.
A beast of marueylous strength and swyftnesse.

What Schoenus is Loke in Gronland.
The change of the horizon.

The owld autours
cauled all the
north people
Scythians.

Erasmus lamenteth
this in his fyrste
booke de ratine
concionandi,
where he speaketh
of the peop^e.
cauled pilatii

272

Idolatrie.

A misterie of
marriage in fyre
and flint.

Experte
inchaunters.

Magical dartes.

The canker.

One nyght of
three moonethes.

Rich furies.

Plentie of sea
fyshe.

Wardhus.

tinewe runnyng for fo great a space, in the meane whyle also spendyng fumtyme in feedyng. I suppose that this thyng was sumwhat knowen to the owld wryters, although receaued in manner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wryte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therwith as are the Iuwes: but do fumtymes receaue it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of them imbrase the Christian fayth, the faute is sumwhat to bee imputed to the bysshoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of instructyng the nation, or suffered the faith of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrst spryng. For vnder the pretense of religion, they woulde haue aduanced their owne reuenues and ouerburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwyfe here then in all Christendome, which thyng is doubtlesse the cause of mozte greuous defections. I harde Iohn a bysshoppe of Gothlande fay thus: We that gouerne the churche of Vpfallia, and haue vnder owre dioceffe a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynges of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen fo absteynyng from myscheuous couetousnesse wherby religion is abused for laker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeouour that we minister none occasion whereby this nation as offended by owre finnes, maye bee the lesse wyllyng to embrase the Christian fayth. This is the state of the religion amonge the Lapones: Although of their owne institution and custome receaued of their prediceffours, they are Idolatours, honouryng that luyng thyng that they meete fyrst in the mornyng, for the god of that daye, and diuinyng thereby their good lucke or euyll. They also erecte images of stoness vpon the mountaines which they esteeme as goddesses, attributing to them diuine honour. They solemne marriages, and begynne the same with fyre and flynte, as with a mysterie fo aptely applyed to the image of stone as if it had byn receaued from the myddeste of Grecia. For in that they adhibite a mysterie to fyre, as they doo not this alone (forasmuche as the Romanes obserued the same custome) euen fo are they herein partly to be commended in that they vse the ceremonies of no noble a people. The mysterie of the flinte is no lesse to bee prayfed, both forasmuche as this is domesticall philofophie, and hath also a nere affinitie and signification to these solemnitie. For as the flynt hath in it fyre luyng hidde whiche appeareth not but by mouyng and force, fo is there a secrete lyfe in both kyndes of man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction coommeth furth to a luyng byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tye three knottes on a sryng hangyng at a whyppe. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable wyndes, When they lose an other, the wynde is more vehement. But by losyng the thyrde, they rayse playne tempestes as in owld tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and lyghtnyng. This arte doo they vse ageynst such as fayle by their coastes, and slaye or moue the ryuers and seas more or lesse as they lyst to shewe fauoure or displeasure. They make also of leade certeyne shorte magicall dartes of the quantitie and length of a fynger. These they throwe ageynst suche of whome they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer fo farre distant. They are sumtimes fo vexed with the canker on their armes or legges that in the space of three dayes they dye through the vehemencie of the payne. The sonne fauleth very lowe in these regions: and prolongeth one continuall nyghte for the space of thre moonethes in wynter, duryng whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twylyght of euenynges and mornynges. This is very cleare, but continueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght shynyng of the moone. Therefore that day that the sonne returneth to the hemispherie, they keepe holy day and make great myrth with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not fo brutyshe or saluage as woorthy therefore to bee cauled Lapones for their vnaptnesse or simplicitie as when they lyued vnder their owne Empire and vsed no familiaritie or entercourse with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of their owne thynges, neyther the pryce and estimation of their furies in owre regions, by reason whereof they soule great plentie of them for sum of owre wares of smaule value.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge th[e] extreme lande of Scondia knowen towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the worlde yet vnknown to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the vtermoost sea, accordyng to this description.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The fyrst coaste,	70 [o']	72. [o']
The coaste folowyng,	80 [o']	7. [o']
That that yet foloweth,	90 [o']	70. [o']

Frome the fyffhyng places and flore houfes of this sea, they cary foorth to Nordbothnia and whyte Ruffia, landes confinynge to them, great plentie of fyshe. Wherby we may coniecture that this sea is extended on euery fyde toward the North. Towarde the weste, it is limited with the mozte inwarde goulfe of at the Castell of Wardhus at the degree. 54 [o'] [Long.] 70 30.' [Lat.]

Towarde the Southe, it is limited by a line drawn from thence vnto the degree. 90 [o' Long.] 69. [o' Lat.]

NORWEGIA OR NORWAY.



Ordway, is as muche to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a florysshynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Frifelande and the Ilandes farre about, vntyll the domestical Empire was gouerned by the succeßion of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme while this gouernaunce ceased for lacke of dewe issue, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie that the kynges shuld be admitted by election: supposinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office forasmuche as they were placed in the same by such autoritie, and not by obteynynge the kyngedome by fortune and newe aduancement. But it came so to

passé, that as euery of them excelled in richesse, ambition and fauour by confanginitie, so were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngedome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occasions t[o]inuade foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also brynge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in th[e] infirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: which exemple, sum other princes doo folowe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken suche vertues as shulde haue shyned in them, as to bee *Patres patriæ* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proud countenance of dominion remayned, which opened licentiousnesse to th[e] iniurie of the subiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided for th[e] indemnitie of theyr owne estate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they desired to kepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edef[c]es, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayrynge theyr state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redresse of the commonweith: No man dare shewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteyne of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the nauigations of Norway, whereby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may seeme most vnfortunate, as lackynge the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From henfe is brought into all Europe a fyfthe of the kindes of them whiche we caule haddockes or hakes indurate and dried with coule, and beaten with clubbes or stockes, by reason whereof the Germayns caule them stockefyfthe. The takinge of these, is most commended in Ianuarie that they may bee sufficiently dried and hardened with coule. For such as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and putrifie: And are not meete to be caried furth.

The description of the west coaste, with the parte thereof lyinge most towarde the north.

	[Longitude.]	{Latitude.}
Wardhus (that is) the watche house, or watche towre, It is a stronge castell or fortresse appoynted to the Lapones.	54 [0']	70 30.'
The coaste folowynge, Matthkur. etc.	48 50'	70. [0']

All the coast from henfe, and the places neare about vnto the degree, 45 [0'] 69. [0'] being sumtyme leste desolate by the feditions and destruction of Norway, the Lapones chose for theyr habitations, as commynge to a more beneficiall heauen.

From the Castel of Wardhus, vnto the degree, 40 30' [Long.] 64 10' [Lat.] all the coaste in the sprynge tyme is dangerous to passe, by reason of whales of such huge byggenesse that sum of theym growe to a hundreth cubites. For these fyfthes at that tyme of the yeaere refort together for generation. Such shippes as chaunce to faule eyther vpon theyr bodies, or into suche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehemēt motions, are in great perell. The remedie to auoyde this daungour, is to poure into the sea Castoreum (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste cauled the Beuer, mengeled with water. For with this, the hole hearde of whales varyfsheth fuddeynely to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible rorynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hyghest parte of theyr forheades, standynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, beinge couered with a skynne, throughe the which they blow waters lyke showers or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge three els in circuite, and euery knotte betwene theym, of one elle: They are at the least of lx. [sixty] cubites in length: And are salted and kept in store houses. The greatest are vnprofitable to bee eaten by reason of theyr ranke and vnfaury taste which can not bee qualified.

Nidrosia standing vpon the fourth syde of the sea banke, was the chiefe and metropolitane churche through out all Norway, Ifelande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes thereabout. This citie was noble at the fyrst vnder the florysshynge Empire of Norway, conteynynge in circuite. xliiii. paryfshes, but it is nowe brought in maner to a

273

Kyngdomes destroyed by factions.

The Danes.

The default of princes.

An exemple of tyranni.

The miserable state of Norway

Stockfys[h]e.

The Lapones

Shippes in daungour by reason of whales.

Castoreum.

The rorynge of whales.

Whales salted and reserued.

The citie of Nidrosia.

274

A magnificall
churche.

village and is cauled in the Germayne toonge Trutham, as the houfe of the Dryides. There remaineth at this daye a Cathedrall churche in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge fuche that in byggenesse and workemanship of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greefes or compasse abowt the altare, was deftroide by fire, and was repaired at the same tyme that wee write this historie. The charge of the reparafion, was esteemed to bee feuen thousande crownes: by which smaule portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Churche.

Noysome beastes
of vnknown
generation.

The tracte of all the sea coastes Norwaye, is very quyete and meeke. The sea is not frofen. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule Leem or Lemmer. This is a lyttle foure footed beaste abowt the byggenesse of a ratte with a spotted skynne. These faule vppon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and suddayne showers, not yet knowen from whense they comme, as whyther they are brought by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwise engendered of thicke and feculent cloudes. But this is well knowen, that as soone as they faule downe, greene graffe and herbes are founde in their bowels not yet digested. They consume all greene thynges as doo locustes: And such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the graffe newelye sproonge. They coome together by flockes as do swalowes: And at an ordinarie tyme, eyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made pestiferous and molesteth the Norwegians with swymmyng in the headde and the iaundies) or are consumed of other beastes named Lefrat. Towarde the East, it is included within the line that is drawn by the mountaynes whose endes or vttermoſt boundes they are that lye towarde the south aboute the mouthes of the ryuer Trolhetta. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, passeth by the castel of Wardhus, and is extended to the vnknown lande of the Lapones. [Longitude.] [Latitude.]

Wardhus.
The vnknown
lande of the
Lapones.
A serpent of
houge biggenesse.

The lake cauled Mos, and the Ilande of Hoffuen in the myddeſt therof, is in the degree. 45 30' 61. [o']

God warneth vs
by signes of
thynges to coome.

In this lake appeareth a straunge monster: which is, a serpent of houge byggenesse. And as to all other places of the worlde, blasfyng starres doo portende th[c] alteration and chaunge of thynges, so dooth this to Norway. It was seene of late (in the yeare of Christ. M. D. xxii.) apperynge farre aboute the water rowlyng lyke a greate pyllar: And was by coniecture farre of, esteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortely after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monstrous thynges are fayde to bee seene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtlesse excepte wee shulde thinke that the diuine prouidence hauyng mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnyng them of their offences, dooth sende fuche straunge thynges (as also blasfyng starres and armies feyghtyng in the ayer, with fuche other portentous monsters wherof no causes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we might els suspecte that such fyghtes were but imaginations of the fence of man deceaued.

On the East side, are excedding rowgh montaynes which admit no passage to Suecia. The sea betwene Norway and the Ilandes, is cauled Tialleslund, Euripus, or the streightes.

The Ilande of Lofoth. whose myddeſt.

[Longitude.] [Latitude.]

42 [o'] 67 10'.

Langanas, whose myddeſt,

41 [o'] 67 [o']

Vastral, whose myddeſt.

41 34' 67 30'.

The streightes or
boyling sea.

The sea betwene these three Ilandes, is cauled Muscoftrom (that is) boyllyng. At the flowyng of the sea, it is swalowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the reflowyng, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This sea is nauigable vntyll it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of dewe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepooles. The fragmentes of the lost ships, are feldome cast vp ageyne. But when they are caste vp, they are so brused and freted ageynste the rockes, that they seeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, passyng the fabulous Simplegades and the fearefull Malea, with the daungerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hytherto knowen to man.

Dangerous
places in the sea.

Fruitfull Ilandes
about Norway.

The Ilandes abowt Norway, are of such fruitfull pasture, that they brynge not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouember: And do many places winter them abroad.

SUECIA, OR SVETHLANDE.



Suecia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, syluer, copper, leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and exceedynge increafe of fyssh of the ryuers, lakes, and the sea. And hath no lesse plentie of fuche wylde beastes as are taken with huntinge. Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Norway from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]nd, 51 [o'] Long.] 63 40' [Lat.] Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30'. 61. [o'] And from thense vnto the degrees. 61. [o'] 60. 30'. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the south ende of Lapponia from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]nde. 62. [o'] 70. [o'] Towarde the Easte, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. [o'] 69. [o'] etc. Stockholme the chiefe citie. 64. [o'] 61. [o'] This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in mariffhes after the maner of Venece: and was therefore cauled Stokholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The sea entereth into it with two armes or branches of fuch largenes and depth that ships of great burden and with mayne fayles may enter by the same with theyr full freight. This suffered of late yeares greuous spoyle and destruction to the singular exemple of cruel hostilitie: And fuch, as the like hath not bin lightly shewed to any other citie receaued by league and composition.

In al the tract from Stokholme to the lake about the riuier of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30'. 63. 50'. are mountaines fruitful of good siluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the salmons and plentie of other fysshes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north syde to the confines of Laponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beastes cauled Vros or Bifontes, which in theyr toonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of fuch height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hyghe as he may reach. etc. Vpfalia the chiefe citie. 62. 63'. 30. [o'] here is buried the body of faynt Hericus kynge and martyr.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome fouthwarde from the dukedome of Iemptia. Vnder this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Oplandia, is a dukedome and the nauil or middest of Scandia.

The citie of Pircho, on the north syde of the lake of Meler, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiiii. thousande men to the warres: but is nowe brought to a vyllage.

All the tracte of Oplandia, hath mynes of syluer, copper, and steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye abowte Suecia, the myddest is. 67 30' [Long.] 61 30'. [Lat.] These were cauled of the owlde wryters Oone, the reason of which name remayneth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so muche that th[e] inhabitants of the nexte coaste, fayle thyther in the mooneth of May whyle the byrdes fyt on theyr egges: which they steale and referue them in falte for a longe tyme.

BOTHNIA.



Bothnia is so named of the precious furies of all fortes that are caried from thense into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr fysshynge, they haue greate commoditie. Salmons of the best fort are taken in these seas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is diuided into two partes, as Nordbothnia, and South Bothnia, cauled Ostrobothnia. Nordbothnia, is terminated with the south ende of the Lapones vnto the ende. 78 30' [Long.] 69. [o'] [Lat.] Towarde the East, it is terminated with this end and vnto the degree. 78 30' 68 20'. Towarde the West, with the line terminynge the East syde of Suecia: And towarde the Southe, with the residue of the goulfe of Suecia from th[e]nde that hath degrees. 63 [o'] 69. [o']

Ostrobothnia, towarde the East is terminated from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende vnto the degree. 71 [o'] 66 [o']

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of Suecia. etc.

275
Golde and syluer.

Wardhus castell.

The goulfe of Suecia.

The citie of Stockholme.

Gold in cold regions.
Fyssh.

The beaste cauled Vros or Elg.

Vpsalia.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia

Byrdes.
Egges reserved in salte.

Precious furies.
Fyssh.

GOTHIA OR GOTHLANDE.



OTHIA, is by interpretacion good. For the holye name of God, is in the Germayne toonge Goth (that is) Good. At what tyme the Gothes vppon a general consent, sent furth theyr offspryng or succession to seeke newe seates or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of Meotis and Asia, none of the owlde wryters haue made mention as farr as I knowe. But they haue byn knowen fence the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Empyre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slauonie) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were also famous from the tyme of Cesar Dictator and Octauianus Augustus by reason of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge th[e]vttermoost bounde of Th[e]mperire. Neuerthelesse, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was situate, or of whom the Gothes toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknown almost to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the fouth ende of Suecia: And towarde the weste, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Suecia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trolheta. etc.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, castels, mines. etc. The cite of Visba, being in the degree. 61 30' 54 15.' was an ancient and famous marte towne as is Genua in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by th[e]incurfions of the pirates of the Danes and Muscouites, it was left defolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche testifie the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the fyrste stacions of the Gothes that possessed Meotis. It is at this daye of frutfull soyle, and famous by many goodly and stronge castels and monasteries. There is amonge other, a monasterie of th[e]order of faynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of abowt two thoufande bookes of owlde autours.

Abowt the yeare of Christ fourscore and. viii. the Gothes, vnto whom reforted a great multitude of other people of these northe partes of the worlde, as from Liunia, Prusia, Ruffia and Tartaria with diuers other countreys, makynge them dyuers Kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and brynge in subiection the more parte of Europe, inuaded Italie, destroyd Rome, inhabited that part of Italia now cauled Lombardie, and lykewyse subdued the roialmes of Castile and Aragonie. Theyr warres contynewed aboute three hundreth yeares.

FINLAND, AND ENINGIA.



Inlandia, is as much to say as a fayre lande or fine land, so named for the fertilitie of the grownde. Plinie semeth to caule it Finnonia. For he saith that abowte the coastes of Finlande, are many llandes without names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled *Sinus Finnonicus*, is so named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scithia, and runneth without all Tanais (that is to say) withoute the limetes of Europe to the confines or Asia. But that the name of Finlande seemeth not to agree hereunto, the cause is that this place of Plinie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely erreure to caule it Pannonia forasimuch as these woordes doo not greatly differ in wrytynge and founde: so that the counterfete name was foone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge also ignorant of Phinnonia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tytyle of a kingedome, it is of such largeness. But hath nowe only the tytyle of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slauons and vsyng the same tonge. In religion, it obserued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernaunce of the Muscouites. But it is at this present vnder the kyng of Suecia and obserueth th[e]institutions of the Occidentall church. Spanysshe wyne are brought thyther in great plentie which the people vse merely and cherefully. It is termined on the north fyde, by the southe line of Ostobothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the west, it is termined with the sea of Finnonia accordyng to this description: and hath degrees. 71. [o' Long.] 66. [o' Lat.] etc.

276
Th[e]inuasions of
the Gothes.

The warres of the
gothes ageynst
the Romans.

The boundes of
Gothland.

The cite of Visba.

Danes and
Moscouites.

A librarie of two
thousand bookes.
The Gothes
inuaded Europe
and destroyd
Rome.

Pannonia falsely
taken for Finnonia.

Eningia.

Spanysshe wyne.

OF THE DIFFERENCE OF REGIONS AND
 CAUSES OF GREATE CITIES, AFTER THE DESCRIP-
 TION OF HIERONIMUS CARDANUS,
 LIBER. XI. *de Subtilitate.*



Here is an other difference of regions caused of coulde and heate. For fuche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to much coulde: And fuch as are vnder the line where the foonne is of greateste force, are oppressed with heate. Such as are in the myddeft betwene both, are neareft vnto temperatnesse. Vnder the pole, it is impossible that there shulde bee populous cities bycause the lande is baren, and the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, vyttayles, and other necessaries, is incommodious. By reason wherof, it is necessarie that th[e]inhabitauntes of fuche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in fmaule vyllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, aswell for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for necessaries, as also that they may dwell better and more safely togyther then in vyllages by reason of fortifying theyr townes with walles, and exercisyng of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a tem-

277

perate region) was of fuch incredible byggenesse, the cause was that it obteyned Th[e]mpire of the worlde, by reason wherof, all nations had confluence thyther, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities bee in hotte regions: fyrste, for that in fuch regions, parte of the foile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els most frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitie, when they fynde any place meete to fusteyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that greate cities bee buylded in fuch places by reason of great concourse of people refortyng to the same. An other greate cause is, that wheras in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to fuch commodious places, they passe through many deferte and perelous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theyr better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therefore whereas fuch a societie is once knytte togyther in a commodious place, it shulde bee great hinderance aswell to th[e]inhabitantes as to marchauntes if they shulde wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of fuche as dwell neare to fuche places, and also of straungers and fuch as dwell farre of, it is necessarie that in continuance of tyme, fmaule townes becoome great cities, as are these: Quinfai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, otherwife cauled Babilon in Egipte. But if here any wyll obiecte Constantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to fuch cities as are more then. lx. [sixty] myles in circuite, yet doo we aunfwere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as wee fayde before of Rome.

THE HISTORIE WRITTEN IN THE LATIN
TOONGE BY PAVLVS IOVIVS BYSSHOPPE OF NVCERIA
IN ITALIE, OF THE LEGATION OR AMBASSADE OF GREATE
Basilius Prince of Moscouia, to pope Clement the. vii. of
that name: In which is conteyned the description
of Moscouia with the regions confininge abowte
the fame euen vnto the great and ryche
Empire of Cathay.



Demetrius the
ambassadour of
Moscouia.

Paulus Centurio.

Spices brought
from India to
Moscouia.
The ryuer Indus.

278

Oxus or Horina a
ryuer of Asia
runneth through
the desertes of
Sythia.

The sea Hircanum,
is now cauled
mare Abacuk or
mare de Sala.
Citrachan or
Astrachan.
Sarmatia is that
greate countrey
wherein is
conteyned Russia
Liuania and
Tartaria, and the
north and East
part of Polonia.
Ageynst the
Portugales.

Intende fyrste briefely to describe the situation of the region which we plainly see to haue bin little knowen to Strabo and Ptolome, and then to procede in rehearsing the maners, customes and religion of the people. And this in maner in the lyke simple style and phrase of speache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the ambassadoure, a man not ignoraunt in the Latin toonge, as from his youth brought vp in Liuania, where he learned the fyrst rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age, executed th[e] office of an ambassadour into dyuers Christian prouinces. For wheras by reason of his approved faithfulness and industrie, he had before byn sent as oratoure to the kynges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great master of Prussia, he was at the last sente to Th[e]mperoure Maximilian, in whose courte (beinge replenyshed with all fortes of menne) whyle he was conuerfant, yf any thyng of barbarous maners yet remaind in so docible and quiet a nature, the same was put away by framyng hym selfe to better ciuilitie. The cause of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio a Genuese, who when he had receaued letters commendatori of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiers of Duke Basilius as touchyng the conformation of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie and in maner owtragiouss desire, sowght howe by a newe and incredible viage, spices myght bee brought from India. For whyle before he had exercised the trade of marchaundies in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that spices myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer Indus ageynst the course of the fame, and from thence by a sual vyage by lande passyng ouer the mountaynes of Paropanifus, to bee caried to the riuer Oxus in Bactria, which hauing his original almost from the same mountaynes from whence Indus dooth springe, and violently caryng with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Hircanum or Caspium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly affirmed that from Straua, is an easy and safe nauigation vnto the marte towne of Citrachan or Astrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Volga and from thence euer ageynst the course of the ryuers, as Volga, Occha, and Moscho, vnto the citie Moscha, and from thence by lande to Riga and into the sea of Sarmatia and all the west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accensed and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauyng by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marte townes, takyng holy into their handes all the trade of spices to bryng the same into Spayne, and neuerthelesse to sell them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straightly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thereby lefte of, which were before exercised by the goulfe of Persia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the

freightes of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Aſia and Europe was abundantly ſatified and better cheape then hathe byn fence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with ſo manye incommodities of ſuch longe viages wherby the ſpices are ſo corrupted by th[e]infection of the poompe and other fylthynesse of the ſhippes, that theyr naturall fauour, taſte, and qualitie aſwell hereby as by theyr longe referuyng in the ſhoppes, ſellers, and warehouſes in Luſſheburne, varyſſheth and reſolueth, ſo that referuyng euer the freſheſt and neweſte, they ſel only the woorſt and moſt corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he ernestly and vehemently argued of theſe thinges, and ſtyrred great malice and hatred ageynſt the Portugales, affirmyng that not only therby the cuſtomes and reuenewes of princes ſhulde bee much greater if that vyage might bee diſcouered, but alſo that ſpices myght bee better cheepe bowght at the handes of the Moſcouites, yet coulde he nothinge auayle in this ſute, forasmuche as Duke Baſilius thowght it not good to make open or diſcloſe vnto a ſtraunger and vnknowne man, thoſe regions which giue enterance to the ſea Caſpium and the kyngedomes of Perſia. Paulus therefore excludyng all hope of further tranayle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambaſſadoure, browght Baſilius letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his ſuceſſoure, in the whiche he declared with honorable and reuerende woordes his good wyll and fauorable mynde towarde the byſſhop of Rome. For a fewe years before, Baſilius (then keepyng warres ageynſt the Polones at ſuche tyme as the generall counſayle was celebrate at Laterane) requyred by Iohn, kyng of Denmarke (the father of Chriſtierne who was of late expulſed from his kyngedome) that ſafe paſſage myght bee graunted to th[e]ambaſſadours of Moſcouia to go to Rome. But wheras it ſo chaunced, that kyng Iohn and pope Iulius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conuenient ſequeſter or ſoliciture, he omitted his conſultation as touchyng that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot betwene him and Sigismunde the kyng of Polonie: who obtainyng the victorie ageynſt the Moſcouites at Borithene, ſupplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquyſyng the enemies of the Chriſtian faithe, whiche thinge greatly alienated both kyng Baſilius him ſelfe and all that nation from the byſſhop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi. departed from this lyfe, and leſte Paulus nowe redie to his ſeconde vyage, his ſuceſſour Clemente the. vii. perceauyng that Paulus ſyll furiously reuolued and toſſed in his vnquiet mynde that vyage towarde the Eaſte, ſente hym ageyne with letters to Moſcouia, by the which with propenſe and frendly perſuaſions, he exhorted Baſilius to acknowledge the maieſtie of the Romane church, and to make a perpetuall leage and agreement in matters of religion, which thyng ſhuld be not only for the health of his ſoule, but alſo greatly to th[e]increase of his honour: And further promyſed, that by the holy autoritie of his office he wolde make hym a kyng and gyue hym kyngely ornamentes, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Greekes, he wolde conforme hym ſelfe to th[e]autoritie of the Romane church. For Baſilius deſyred the name and tittle of a kyng by th[e]aſſignation of the byſſhoppe of Rome, forasmuch as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the byſſhoppes maieſtie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euen Th[e]emperours them ſelues by an auncient cuſtome haue receaued there inſignes of honoure with the Diademe and ſcepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is ſayde that he required the ſame of Th[e]emperour Maximiliane by many ambaffades. Paulus therefore who with more prosperous iorneyes then great vantage, had from his youth trauayled a greate parte of the world, although he were nowe aged and fore vexed with the ſrangurie, came with a prosperous and ſpedy iornay to Moſcouia, where he was gently receaued of Baſilius, and remayned in his courſe for the ſpace of two monethes. But in fine, miſtruſtyng his owne ſtrength, and deterred by the difficultie of ſo greate a iorneye, when he had vtterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius th[e]ambaſſadour of Baſilius, before we yet thowght that he had byn in Moſcouia. The byſſhoppe commaunded that Demetrius ſhuld bee lodged in the moſt magnificent and princely part of the houſes of Vaticane, the rouffes of whoſe edifices are gylted and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnyſſhed with fylken beddes and cloth of Arreſſe. Wyllyng furthermore that he ſhuld bee honorably receaued and veſtured with ſilke. He alſo aſſigned Francisus Cheregatus the byſſhoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambaffadoure to diuers regyons) to accompanie hym and ſhewe hym th[e]order and rites of owre religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes reſted and recreate him ſelfe, waſſhyng away the fylth he had gathered by reaſon of the longe vyage, then apparelled with a fayre veſture after the maner of his countrey, he was browght to the byſſhoppes preſence, whom he honoured kneelyng with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therwith preſented vnto his holynes certeyne fures of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and alſo deluyered the letters of Baſilius, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpretoure Nicolaus Siccenſis tranſlated into the Latine toonge in this effecte as foloweth.

To pope Clemente ſheparde and teacher of the Romane church, greate Baſilius by the grace of God, lorde, Emperour and dominatour of al Ruſſia, and great duke of Volodemaria, Moſcouia, Nouogrodia, Pleſcouia, Smolenia, Ifferia, Iugoria, Permnia, Vetcha, Bolgaria. etc. Dominator and great prince of Nouogrodia in the lower contrei: Alſo of Cernigouia, Razauia, Volotchia, Rezenia, Belchia, Roſtouia, Iaroflauia, Belozeria,

The trade of
spices in owld
tyme.
Spices corrupted.

The Caspian sea.

Basilus wrot to
Pope Adriane.

Warre betwene
the Polones and
Moscouites.

The seconde viage
of Paulus to
Moscouia.
The Pope
persuadeth
Basilus to
acknowledge the
Romane church.

279

The Emperours
receaued there
diademe of the
byſſhoppes of
Rome.

Demetrius
interteynment at
Rome.

Demetrius is
brought to the
popes preſence.

Basilus letters to
Pope Clement.

Vdoria, Obdoria, and Condiuia. etc. Yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citizen of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counfayle with yowe and other Princes of Christendome ageynst the enemies of the christian faith: and that a free passage and redy way may bee opened for bothe yowe ambassadours and owres to coome and go to and fro, whereby by mutuall dewtie and indeuoure on both parties, we may haue knowlege of the state of thinges perteynyng to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hetherto happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god constantly and earnestly resisted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Christian faithe, so are we determined to doo hereafter. And are likewise redy to consente with other Christian Princes, and to graunt free passage into owre dominions. In consideration wherof, we haue sente vnto yowe owre faithfull seruaunt Demetrius Erasmus with these owre letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: defyringe yowe also shortly to dismyffe Demetrius with safegarde and indemnitie vnto the borthers of owre dominions. And we wyl likewyse doo the same if yowe fende yowre ambassadoure with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of th[e] order and administration of such thynges as yowe require: so that beinge aduertised of the mindes and intent of al other Christian princes, we may also consult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in owr dominion in owr citie of Moscouia, in the yere from the creation of the worlde, feuen thousande and three hundreth, the thyrde day of Aprell.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue fecreate commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyll shortly declare to the fenate in priuate consultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell by change of ayer, and hath so recouered his strengthe and natie colour, that beinge a man of threescore yeres of age, he was not only presente at the popes masse celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of faynt Cosmus and Damian but came also into the Senate at such tyme as Cardinal Campegius comynge fyrst from the legacie of Pannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the courte: And furthermore also vewed the temples of the holye citie with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shall returne to Moscouia with the byffhop of Scarense the popes legate, not vnrecompensed with iust rewards at the handes of his holyneffe.

The name of the Moscouites is nowe newe, although the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moschos confynge with the Sarmatians, and Plinie also placeth the Moschos at the sprynges of the great ryuer of Phasis in the region of Colchos aboue the sea Euxinus towarde the East. Their region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander about the springes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe starres cauled charles wayne or the greate beare, beinge for the most parte playne and of frutfull pasture, but in sommer in many places full of marisshes. For whereas all that lande is replenysshed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter snow and ise resolued by the heate of the foonne, the playnes and fyeldes are therby ouerflown with marisshes, and all iorneyes incumbered with continuall waters and myrie slabbyneffe vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and marisshes bee frofen ageyne, and giue safe passage to the fleades that are accustomed to iorney by the same. The woodde or forest of Hercynia (and not Hyrcania as is redde in sum false copies) occupieth a great parte of Moscouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houses buylded therein and so made thinner by the longe labour of men that it dooth not nowe shewe that horreur of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenysshed with many wyld beastes, is so farre extended through Moscouia with a continual tracte betwene the East and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse therof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiously searched th[e] ende of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde Prussia, are founde the greate and fierce beastes cauled Vri, or Bifontes, of the kynde of bulles: Also Alces lyke vnto hartes, whiche the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germaines Helenes. On the East syde of Moscouia, are the Scythians which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stede of houses they vse wagons couered with beastes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amaxouii. For cities and townes, they vse greate tentes and paulions, not defended with trenches or waules of tymbre or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsebacke. The Tartares are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toonge signifieth a confentyng companye of people gathered together in forme of a citie. Eury Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr bortherers and contende ambiciously and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appeare that they consiste of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars possesse the most large desertes euen vnto the famous citie of Cathay in the furthest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the Moscouites, are knowen by theyr trade of marchaundies and often incursions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Dromon Achillis in Taurica Chersoneso, are the Tartars cauled Precopites, the dowghter of whose prince,

280

Cardinal
Campegius.The ruines of
Rome.The description
of Moscouth.The altares of
great alexander.Marisshes in
summer.The forest of
Hercynia.Wyld beastes
The Scythian
Ocean.The beastes
cauled Vri or
Bifontes.Helenes.
Of the Scythians
and Tartars.
Amaxouii.

Horda.

The large
dominion of the
Tartars.
Cathay.
The Tartars of
Europe.

Selymus Th[e]mperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and waite the regions on euery syde betwene the ryuers of Boristhenes and Tanais. They that in the fame Taurica possesse Caffam a colonie of the Ligurians (cauled in owlde tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion and al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite regions of Asia betwene Tanais and Volga, are subiecte to Basilius the kynge of the Moscouites, and chuse them a gouernour at his assignement. Amonge these, the Cremii afflicted with ciuile seditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares loste theyr dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of Volga, do religiously obserue the frendship of the Moscouites and professe them selues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Cassanites towarde the Northe, are the Sciambani, rich in herdes of cattaille and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are Nogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly affayres. Theyr Horda, although it bee most ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wyfdome and vertue of the most ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venyce. Beyonde the Nogais fymwhat towarde the south and the Caspian sea, the noblest nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabite townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceedyng greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Iaxartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and passinge from thence about a hundreth myles, fauleth into the Caspian sea. With these people in owre dayes, Ismael the Sophi and kynge of Persia hathe often tymes kepte war with doubtfull successe: In so muche that fearyng the greatenesse of theyr poure which he refysted with all that he myght, he lefte Armenia and Taurisum the chiefe citie of the kyngedome, for a pray to Selimus the vycetourer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, descended Tamburlanes the myghty Emperoure of the Tartars whome fym caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius fayth he shulde bee cauled Themircuthlu. Thys is he that aboute the yeare of Chryste. M. CCC. lxxxviii. [1398, A.D.] subdued almost all the Easte partes of the worlde: And lastly with an innumerable multytude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiafetes Ottomanus their kynge, (and father to the greate grandefather of this Solyman that nowe lyueth) metinge at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythinia, gaue hym a fore battaile, in the whiche felle on the Turkes parte. 20000. men, and Baiafetes hym selfe was taken prifoner, whom Tamburlanes cauled to bee locked in an iren cage and so caried hym abowte with hym throwgh all Asia which he also conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquished in battayle the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chased beyonde Nilus, and tooke also the citie of Damascus.

Frome the region of these Tartars cauled Zagathe, is brought great plentie of filken apparell to the Moscouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or droues of swyfte runnyng horses and clokes made of whyte feltes: also hailes or tentes to withstonde th[e] iniuries of coule and rayne. These they make very artificially and apte for the purpose. They receaue agayne of the Moscouites, coates of cloth, and syluer monye, conteynyng all other bodely ornamentes, and the furnytur of superfluous housholde stufte. For beyng defended ageynst the violence of wether and tempestes only with fuche apparell and couerture whereof wee haue spoken, they trust only to theyr arrowes which they shoote aswell backwarde flyng as when they affayle theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts, coates of fense, and hooked swordes which they bought of the Persians. Towarde the southe, the boundes of Moscouia are terminated by the fame Tartars which possesse the playn regyons nere vnto the Caspian sea aboute the marysshes of Meotis in Asia, and aboute the ryuers of Borysthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gete, and Bastarne, inhabited these regions in oulde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Ruffia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Ruffia the lower, wheras Moscouia it selfe, is cauled whyte Ruffia. Lituania therefore, lyeth on the Northweft syde of Moscouia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Prussia and Liuania are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscouia, where the Sarmatian sea breakyng furth of the streightes of Cimbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bended with a crooked goulfe towarde the northe. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngedomes of Norwaye and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoste enuironed with the sea, are the people cauled Lapones, A nation exceedyng rude, suspicyous, and fearefull, flyng and astonysht at the syght of al straungiers and shypes. They knowe neyther frutes nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They proude them meate onely with shootyng, and are appareled with the skynnes of wild beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holow trees consumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age. Suche as dwell neare the sea syde, fyssh more luckily then cunnyngly, and in the stead of frutes, referue in flore fysshes dryded with smoke. They are of fmaule stature of body, with flatte vifagies, pale and wannye coloure, and very swyfte of foote. Their wittes or dispositions, are not known to the Moscouites theyr bortherers, who thynke it therefore a madnesse to affayle them with a fmaule poure, and iudge it neyther profitable nor glorious, with greate armies to inuade a poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the most whyte fures which wee caule Armelines for other wares of dyuers fortes: Yet so, that they flie the syght and coompanie of all marchauntes. For com-

The Tartars of Asia are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.

281

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of Volga.

Nogai.

Sigismundus cauleth them Nagaysri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars.

The ryuer of Iaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of Persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghtie Emperour of the Tartars.

The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasetes.

This apparell they haue of the Persians.

The Tartars trafficke with the Moscouites.

The tartars of the South syde of Moscouia.

Gete and Roxolani.

Russia.

Moscouia cauled white Russia.

Lituania.

Prussia.

Luania.

Denmarke.

Norway.

Suecia.

The people of Laponia.

282

Armeline fures.

Bargeninge
without wordes.
The darke region
by this darke
region and the
Pigmei, is the way
to Cathay by the
Northe sea.

The scythian
Ocean.

The region of
colmogora.
The ryuer of
diuidna.

The ryuer of Iuga
or Iug.
Vstiuga.

The ryuer of
Diuidna or Dwina.

The ryuer
Suchana.

The frozen sea.

283

Dwina and
Suchana.

Gronland or
Engronland.

Vnderstand myles
of Germany, that
is leaques.

Rych furies.
Lupi Ceruarii.

Sables.

parynge and layinge theyr wares together, and leauynge theyr furies in a mydde place, they bargeyne with simple fayth, with absente and vnknown men. Sum men of great credite and autoritie, doo testifie that in a region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north oppressed with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the people cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful grought, doo fearfully excede the stature of owre chyldren of ten yeares of age. It is a fearefull kynde of menne, and expresse theyr wordes in such chattering fort that they seeme to be fo much the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in fence and stature from men of iust heyght.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are subiecte to th[e]mpire of the Moscouites. Their regions extende to the Scythian Ocean for the space of almoste three moonethes iorney.

Next vnto Moscouia, is the region of Colmogora, aboundyng with frutes. Through this runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge one of the greateste that is known in the Northe partes, and gaue the name to an other leffe ryuer which breaketh furthe into the sea Baltheum. This increafyng at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerfloweth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nurishinge moysture, dooth maruelously resst the iniuries of heauen and the sharpe blastes of the North wynde. When it ryfeth by reafon of molten snowe and greate shoures of rayne, it fauleth into the Ocean by vnknown nations, and with so large a trenche lyke vnto a greate sea, that it can not bee fayled ouer in one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful Ilandes. For corne there cast on the grounde, groweth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of haflyng nature fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both spryng and rype in short space.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Iuga: And in the corner where they ioyn together, is the famous marte towne cauled Vstiuga distant from the chiefe cite Mosca. vi. hundreth myles.

Note that wheras Paulus Iouius wryteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwise cauled Dwina, runneth through the region of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderstode that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast fyde of Moscouia towarde the frozen sea, and the other on the southwest fyde faulyng into the sea Baltheum, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the cite of Riga in Liouonia. And forasmuch as the trewe knowlege of these and certeyne other is very necessary for all such as shall trade into Moscouia or other regions in those coastes by the northe sea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hystorie of Moscouia, most faythfully and largely wrytten by Sigismundus Liberus who was twyfe sent ambassadour into Moscouia, as fyrst by Maximilian Th[e]mperour, and then ageyne by Ferdinando kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in all the mappes that I haue seene of Moscouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor and by the cite of the same name, although the prouynce of Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northewarde from the ryuer of Vstiug or Succana, whiche is the same Dwina whereof we nowe speake, and wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth, although it bee not so named but from the angle or corner where ioynyng with the ryuer of Iug and Suchana, it runneth Northewarde towarde the cite of Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or frozen sea, as shall hereafter more playnly appeare by the woordes of Sigismundus, that the one of these bee not taken for the other being so farre distant that great errour myght enfue by mistakyng the same, especially bicause this wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth is not by name expressed in the cardes, but only the other, wherby the errour myght bee the greater. Of that therefore that runneth by the confines of Liouonia and the cite of Riga, Sigismundus wryteth in this maner.

The lake of Dwina, is distant from the sprynges of Boristhenes, almost tenne myles, and as many from the marysshe of Fronow. From it, a ryuer of the same name towarde the west, distant from Vuilna. xx. [twenty] myles, runneth from thence towarde the Northe, where by Riga the chiefe cite of Liouonia, it fauleth into the Germaine sea which the Moscouites caule Vuareczkote morie. It runneth by Vuitepsko, Polotzko, and Dunenburg, and not by Plefcouia as one hath wrytten. This ryuer beinge for the moste part nauigable, the Lyuons caule Duna.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Iouius speaketh, he wryteth as foloweth.

The prouynce of Dwina and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Iug meatyng together, make one ryuer so cauled. For Dwina in the Moscouites tounge, signifeth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the sayde sea runneth by the coastes of Swecia and Norway, and diuideth Engronlande from the vnknown lande. This prouynce situate in the ful north, perteyned in tyme past to the seignorie of Nouogorode. From Mosconia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered. CCC. [three hundred] myles: Albeit as I haue sayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obserued by reafon of many marysshes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee scarcely two hundreth myles: forasmuch as from Moscouia to Vuolochda, from Vuolochda to Vstyug sumwhat into the Easte: and laste of all from Vstyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght passage to the northe sea. This region, besyde the castel of Colmogor and cite of Dwina, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the spryngs and mouthes of the ryuer, and the castell of Pienege standyng in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vtterly without townes and castels: yet hath it many villages whiche are farre in sunder by reafon of the barrenesse of the soyle. etc.

In another place he wryteth, that Suchana and Iug, after they are ioyned together in one, loofe theyr fyrste names and make the ryuer Dwina. etc. But lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie of Paulus Iouius.

Vnto Vstiuga, from the Permians, Pecerrians, Inugrians, Vgolicans, and Pinnegians, people inhabytyng the north and northeast prouynces, are brought the precious furies of Marterns and Sables: Also the cafes of woulfes and foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes cauled Ceruarii Lupi (that is) harte woulfes, beinge engendered cyther of a wolfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bytch wolfe. These furies and skyns, they exchange for dyuers other wares. The best kynde of fables and of the finest heare wherwith nowe the vestures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are covered with the

expresse similitude of the luyng beaste, are brought by the Permians and Pecerrians, whiche they them felues also receave at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permians and Pecerrians, a lyttle before owre tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowledge Chryste theyr God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Vgolicans, is by certeyne rowgh mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperborei. In the toppes of these, are founde the beste kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodium) is whyte with spotted fethers. There are also ierfalcons, fakers, and peregrines, whiche were vnknown to the ancient princes in theyr exceffive and nife pleafures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moscouia) are other nations the last of men, not known by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuche as none of theym haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore known onely by the fabulous narrations of marchauntes. Yet is it appaunte that the ryuer of Diuidna or Dwina, drawyng with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement course towarde the northe: and that the sea is there exceedyng large: so that saylyng by the coast of the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thense to Cathay as is thought by most lykely coniecture, excepte there lye sum lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay perteyneth to th[e]xtreme and furthest partes of the Easte, situate almost in the paralell of Thracia, and known to the Portugales in India when they sayled neare thereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Chersonesus, and brought from thense certeyne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is appaunte that the cite of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

But when Demetrius was demanded whether eyther by the monumentes of letters or by same lefte theym of theyr predecessours, they hadde any knowlege of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares fence subuerted Th[e]mpire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the cite of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kyng Totilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especiallye the Moscouites: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Liuons and wanderyng Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scoundania and Ifelande, were the auctoures of that inuasion.

And with these boundes are the Moscouites inclosed on euery side, whom we thinke to be those people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubtlesse at this day their name of the riuer Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe cite Mosca named also after the same. This is the most famous cite in Moscouia, aswell for the situation thereof beinge in maner in the myddest of the region, as also for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houses, and stronge fence of so fayre and goodly a castell. For the cite is extended with a longe tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houses are made all of tymber, and are diuided into parlors, chambers, and kichins of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely height or to lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpose brought from the foreste of Hercinia? of the which, made perfectly rounde like the mases of shippes, and so layde one vpon an other that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where being made very faste and sure, they frame theyr houses thereof of maruelous strength with smaule charges and in verye short tyme. In maner all the houses haue priuate gardens aswell for pleasure as commoditie of herbes, wherby the circuite of the disperfed cite appeareth very greate. All the wardes or quarters of the cite, haue their peculiar chappels. But in the chiefe and highest place therof, is the Church of owre lady of ample and goodly workemanshype, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowlege and experience in architecture, buylded more then lx. [sixty] yeares fence. At the very head of the cite, a litle ryuer cauled Neglina which dryueth many corne mylles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almost an Iland, in whose end is the castell with many strong towrs and bullwarkes, buylded very fayre by the diuise of Italien architecturs that are the masters of the kinges workes. In the fieldes about the cite, is an incredible multitud of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chafe or persue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and straunge ambassadours to whom he giueth licence by speciall commaundement. Almost three partes of the cite is inuironed with two ryuers, and the resydue with a large mote that receaueth plentie of water frome the fayde ryuers. The cite is also defended on the other syde with an other ryuer named Iaufa, whiche fauleth also into Moscus a litle beneath the cite. Furthermore Moscus runnyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Occa muche greater then it selfe at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thense Ocha it selfe increased with other riuers, vnladeth his streames in the famous riuer Volgo, wher at the place where they ioyne, is situate the cite of Nouogrodia the lesse, so named in respecte of the greater cite of that name from whense was brought the firste colonie of the lesse cite. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originall of the greate maryshes named the white lakes. These are about Moscouia betwene the Northe and the West, and fende furthe from them almost all the ryuers that are disperfed

The mountaines cauled Hiperborei Haukes of diuers kyndes.

The passage from Moscouia to cathay.

Cathay.

Master Eliot cauleth Cathay the region of sinarum.

The Gothes subuerted the Romane Empire.

The north regions conspired against the Romans.

Moscouia

284

The cite of Mosca.

Richard chaunceler toulde me that these mastes are sumwhat holowe on the one syde, and that the hole syde of the next entereth into the same wherby they lye very close.

The castel of Mosca.

White hares and roe buckes.

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga. Nouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte lakes.

The Ryphean and
hyperborean
mountaynes.
Tanais and
Boristhenes.
The sea Euxinus.

The Caspian sea.
Astrachan.
Media.
Armenia.
Persia.
Casan.

285

Sura.
Surcium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple of
Sancta Sophia.

The eleuation of
the pole at
Nouogrodia and
Moscovia.
Heate by reason
of short nyghtes.

The citie of
Volodemaria.

The citie of
Moscha.

Otoferia.

Volga.

Riga.

The citie of
Plescouia.

The citie of
Lubeke.

From Rome to
Moscovia.

Wynter trauayle
by ice and snowe.

Marysshes in
sommer.

into dyuers regions on euery fyde, as wee see of the Alpes from whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose concourse the ryuers of Rhene, Po, and Rodanum, haue theyr increase. For these marysshes in the fleade of mountaynes ful of sprynges, minister abundant moysture, forasmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious of the owlde Cofinographic, suppose the Ryphean and Hyperborean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From these marysshes therefore, the ryuers of Dwina, Ocha, Moschus, Volga, Tanais, and Borysthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Borysthenes is at this day cauled Neper. This, a lyttle beneathe Taurica, runneth into the sea Euxinus. Tanais is receaued of the marysshes of Meotis at the noble marte towne Azoum. But Volga leauynge the citie of Moscha towarde the fouth, and runnyng with a large circuite and greate wyndynges and creekes first towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the fouth, fauleth with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea. About the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cytrachan, which sum caule Astrachan, where martes are keppe by the marchautes of Media, Armenia, and Persia. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Casan, of the which the Horda of the Casanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is distante from the mouth of Volga and the Caspian sea fyue hundreth myles. About Casan. Cl. [one hundred and fifty] myles at the enteraunce of the ryuer Sura, Basilius that now reigneth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to th[e]intente that in those desertes, the marchautes and trauailers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doings of the Tartars and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may haue a safe mansion amonge theyr customers.

Th[e]emperours of Moscovia at dyuers tymes, eyther moued therto by occasion of thynges prefente, or for the desyre they had to nobilitate newe and obscure places, haue keppe the seate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lyuon sea, not many yeares paste, was the headde citie of Moscovia, and obteyned euer the chiefe dignitie by reason of the incredible number of houfes and edifi[c]es, with the oportunitie of the large lake replenysshed with fyssh, and also for the fame of the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then foure hundreth yeres fence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryste the foonne of God, accordyng to the custome of the Emprours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouogrodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and darkenesse of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike eleuate above the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moscovia by almoste. vi. degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is sayde that at the sommer steye of the foonne, it is burnte with continuall heate by reason of the shorte nyghtes.

The citie also of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo hundreth myles distant from Mosca towarde the Easte, had the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whyther the seate of Th[e]empire was translated by the valiant Emperours for necessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at suche tyme as they keppe continuall warre ageynste the Tartars theyr bortherers. For it is situate without Volga, on the bankes of the ryuer Clefma, whiche fauleth into Volga. But Moscha, aswell for those gyftes and commodities whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the myddest of the most frequented place of all the region and Empire, and defended with the ryuer and Castel, hath in comparyson to other cities byn thought moste woorthy to bee esteemed for the chiefe. Moscha is distant from Nouogrodia fyue hundreth myles: and almost in the mydde way is the citie of Ottoferia (otherwyse cauled Otwer or Tuwer) vppon the ryuer of Volga. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and springes of the same, not yet increased by receauyng so many other ryuers, runneth but slowely and gentelly: And passeth from thense to Nouogrodia through many wooddes and desolate playnes. Furthermore from Nouogrodia to Riga the nexte porte of the Sarmatian sea, is the iornay of a thousand myles lyttle more or lesse. This tracte is thought to bee more commodious then the other, bycause it hath manye townes and the citie of Plescouia in the waye, beinge imbrafed with two ryuers. From Riga (pertenynge to the dominion of the greate master of the warres of the Liouons) to the citie of Lubeke a porte of Germanie in the goulfe of Cymbrica Cherfonefus (nowe cauled Denmarke) are numbered aboute a thousande myles of daungerous saylyng.

From Rome to the citie of Moscha, the distanse is knowen to bee two thousande and fyxe hundreth miles by the nearest way passyng by Rauenna, Taruifum, the Alpes of Carnica: Also Villacum, Noricum, and Vienna of Pannonie: and from thense (passyng ouer the ryuer of Danubius) to Olmutium of the Marouians and to Cracouia the chiefe citie of Polonie, are coumpted. xi. hundreth myles. From Cracouia to Vilna the headde citie of Lithuania, are coumpted fyue hundreth myles: and as many from that citie to Smolenzko situate beyonde Borysthenes, from whense to Moscha are coumpted fyxe hundreth myles. The iorney from Vilna by Smolenzko to Moscha, is trauayled in wynter with expedite fleades and incredible celeritie vppon the snowes hardened with longe froste and compacte lyke Ice by reason of muche wearyng. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpasse but by difficulte and laborious trauayle. For when the snowes by the continuall heate of the foonne begyn to melte and diffolue, they cause great marysshes and quamyres able to intangle bothe horse

and man, were it not that wayes are made through the same with brydges and caueys of wood, and almost infinite labour.

In all the region of Moscouia, there is no wayne or mine of golde or syluer, or any other common metall excepte iren: neyther yet is there any token of precious stones. And therefore they bye all those thynges of straungers. Neuertheless, this iniurie of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich fures, whose price by the wanton nicenesse of men is growne to such excesse that the fures perteynyng to one forte of apparell, are nowe fould for a thousande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that these haue byn bought better chepe when the furthest nations of the north beinge ignorant of our nyfe finenesse and breathyng desyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie often tymes for trybles and thynges of smaule value: In so muche that commonly the Permians and Pecerrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde together, the marchauntes of Moscouia coulde drawe through the hole where the harte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites fende into all partes of Europe the best kynde of flaxe to make linnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxen hydies, and exceedyng great masses of waxe.

They proudly denye that the Romane church obteyneth the principate and preminent autoritie of all other.

They so abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admitte them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteemyng them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late tawght the Turkes to make gunnes. Besyde the booke that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of faynt Ambrose, Augustine, Ierome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slaun tounge which agreeth with theirs. For they vse bothe the Slaun tounge and letters, as doo also the Sclauons, Dalmates, Bohemes, Pollones, and Lithuanes. This tounge is spredde further then any other at this day. For it is familiar at Constantinople in the courte of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamalukes in the courte of the Soltane of Alcayre otherwyse cauled Memphis or Babilon in Egipte. A greate number of booke of holy scripture are translated into this tounge by th[e] industry of faynte Ierome and Cyrillus. Furthermore, besyde the histories of theyr owne countreys, they haue also booke conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyse of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no maner of knowlege of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue phisicke with other liberall sciences: But such are taken for phisitians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualitie of sum vnknowne herbe.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryste, but from the begynnyng of the worlde. And this they begin to accompte, not frome the monethe of Ianuary, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throughte owte all the kyngedome, made by the equite and conscience of theyr princes, and approued by the consent of wyfe and good men: and are therefore greatly for the welthe and quyettnesse of the people sofar as it is not lawfull to peruerter them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or attorneys. They punyshe theues, rouers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coude water vpon suche as they suspecte, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of torment. But sumtymes they manacle suche as are sloborne, and wyll not confesse apparent crymes.

Theyr youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and plays resemblinge the warres, wherby they both practise policie and increase theyr strenght. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the tylte, wrestlyng, and especially shootyng. For they gyue rewardes to suche as excell therein.

The Moscouites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square fet and myghtyly brawned. They haue al grey eyes, longe beardes, shorte legges, and bygge bellyes. They ryde very shorte, and shoote backwarde very cunnynghely euen as they flye. At home in theyr houses, theyr fare is rather plentifull then deyntie. For theyr tables are furnysht for a smaule price with all suche kyndes of meates as may bee desired of such as are gyuen to most excessiue gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lyttle syluer pense the piece. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle bothe greate and smaule. The fleshe of biese that is kylled in the myydest of wynter, is so congeled and frosen, that it putrifiethe not for the space of two moonethes. Theyr beste and most delicate dyshes, are gotten by huntynge and haukyng as with vs. For they take all sortes of wylde beastes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and erens or eagles of a marueylous kynde whiche the region of Pecerra bryngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely sefantes and wylde duckes, but also cranes and wylde swannes. They take also a soule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a goose with redde ouerbrowes, whose fleshe in taste passeth the pleasauntnesse of Pheafauntes. These in the Moscouites tounge are cauled *Tetrao*, whiche I suppose to bee the same that Plinie cauleth *Erythratao*, knowen to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Rhetians whiche inhabite the laundes abowte the sprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Volga ministreth vnto them great fyshes and of pleasaunte taste: especially slurgions or

Other wryters deny this.

286

Riche fures.

The price of fures.

How many sables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.
Oxe hydies.
Waxe.

Thei abhorre the Iewes.

Their boke and religion.

The Sclauon tounge spred further then any other.

Saynte Ierome was borne in Dalmatia nowe cauled Sclauonia.

Howe they number the yeares.

Fewe and simple lawes

The exercise of youth.

Shootyng.

The corporature of the Moscouites.

Theyr fare.

287

Fleshe preserved longe by reason of coude.

Haukyng and huntynge.

Plentie of fysshe.

Fyssh longe
referred in Ise.

Wyne.

Maluasie.

All the north
parte of the firme
lande was cauled
Scythia and the
people Scythians.

Drynke cooled
with Ise.

Wyne of cherries.

Their women.

Thomas
Paleologus.
The conquest of
the turkes in
Grecia.

How the princes
chuse their wyues.

288

Duke Basilius.

War betwene the
Polones and
Moscouites.

War betwene the
Moscouites and
Tartars.

The Moscouites
army.
Their banner.

Their horses and
hors[e]men.

rather a kynde of fyssh lyke vnto sturgions: whiche in the wynter feason beinge inclosed in Ise, are longe referred fresshe and vncorrupte. Of other kindes of fysshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wee haue spoken before. And wheras they vtterly lacke natiue wyne, they vse fuche as are brought from other places. And this only in certeine feastes and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Maluasies of the Iland of Creta nowe cauled Candy, are had in moste honoure: and vsed eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excessiue aboundaunce, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wyne brought frome Candy by the streyghtes of Hercules pillers and the Ilandes of Gades, and tossed with such fluddes of the inclosed Ocean, shulde be droonke amonge the Scythian snowes in theyr natiue puritie and pleasaunteffe.

The common people drinke mede made of hony and hoppes sodden together, whiche they keepe longe in pytched barreles where the goodnes increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Germanes and Polones. They are accustomed for delycatenes in sommer to coole theyr beere and mede with puttynge Ise therin, whiche the noble men referue in theyr fellars in great quantitie for the fame purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the Iuse that is pressed owte of cherries before they bee full ripe: whiche they affyrme to haue the coloure of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verye pleasaunte taste.

Theyr wyues and women, are not with them in fuche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vse them in maner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are seldom bydden furth to any feastes: nether are permytted to reforte to churches farre of, or to walke abroad without sum greate consyderation. But the common forte of women, are easely and for a fmaule price allured to lecherye euen of straungers: by reason wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothyng esteeme them.

Iohn the father of kynge Basilius dyed more then. xx. [twenty] yeares fence. He maryed Sophia the doughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Peloponnesus (now cauled Morea) and was brother to Th[e]mperoure of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dryuen owte of Grecia by the Turkes. Of her were fyue chylde borne, as Basilius hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilius tooke to wyfe Salomonie the doughter of George Soborouius a man of synguler fidelitie and wyfdome and one of hys counsaile. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barennesse obfcured.

When the prynces of Moscouia delyberat to marie, theyr custome is to haue choysse of all the vyrgynes in the realme, and to caufe fuche as are of most fayre and bewtyfull vyfage and perfonage with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee brought before them. Which afterwarde they committe to certayne faythful men and graue matrones to bee furder vewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnserched. Of these, shee whome the prynce most lyketh, is pronounced woorthy to bee hys wyfe, not without greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, luyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgyns also which stode in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often times the same day to gratysse the prynce, maryed to hys noble men, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it sumtymes commeth to passe that whyle the princes contemne the lynage of roiall descende, fuche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely estate. In lyke maner as Th[e]mperours of the turkes were accustomed to bee chosen by cumlynesse of perfonage and warly prowes.

Basilius was vnder th[e] age of forty and feuen yeares, of cumly perfonage, synguler vertue, and princely qualities, by all meanes studious for the prosperitie and commodities of hys subiectes. Furthermore in beneuolence, lyberalitie and good successe in hys doynge, to bee preferred before his progenitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares keppe warre with the Lyuons that moued. lxxii. [seuentie-two] confetherate cities to the cause of that warre, he obtayned the victorie and departed with fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also at the begynnynge of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight and took prisoner Constantine the capytayne of the Ruthens whom he brought to Moscouia tyed in chaynes. But shortly after at the ryuer Boristhenes aboue the cite of Orfa, he hym selfe was ouercome in a great battayle by the fame Constantine whom he hadde dismissed: Yet so, that the towne of Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was now woonne by the Polons, shulde styll perteyne to the dominions of Basilius. But ageynste the Tartars, and especially the Tartars of Europe cauled the Precopites, the Moscouites haue often tymes keppe warre with good successe, in reuenge of th[e] iniuries doone to them by theyr incursions.

Basilius is accustomed to bryng to the fiede more then a hundreth and fiftie thousande horsemen deuided into three bandes and folowyng the banners or enseignes of theyr capytaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wyng, is figured the image of Iosue the capytaine of the Hebrewes at whose prayer the foone prolonged the daye and steyde his course as wytnesse the hystories of holye scripture. Armies of foote men are in maner to no vse in those great wyldernes, aswel for theyr apparel beinge loose and longe, as also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres truste rather to the swyftnesse of theyr lyght horsen then to trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Theyr horsen are of lesse then meane stature: but verye stronge and swyfte. Theyr horsemen are armed

with pykes, ryettes, mafes of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked fwoordes. Their bodies are defended with rounde Targets after the maner of the Turkes of Asia: or with bendyng and cornarde targettes after the maner of the Greekes: Also with coates of mayle, brygantynes, and sharpe helmettes. Bafilus dyd furthermore instytute a band of hargabusiers on horsbacke: and caused many greate brafen pieces to bee made by the woorkemanshype of certeyne Italyans: and the same with theyr stockes and wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Mosca.

The kynge hym selfe with pryncely magnyfycence and singuler familiaritie (wherwith neuerthelesse no parte of the maiestie of a kyng is vyolate) is accustomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and straunge ambassadours in hys owne chamber of preface where is feene A meruelous quantyite of fyluer and gylte plate standyng vppon two great and high cubbardes in the same chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the custody of hys perfon fauyng only hys accustomed famylye. For watche and warde is dylygently kepte of the faythfull multytude of the citifens: In so muche that euery warde or quarter of the citie is inclosed with gates rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man raffhely to walke in the citie in the nyght, or withoutt lyght. All the courte confysteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyse fouldyers which are cauled owte of euery regyon by theyre townes and vyllagies, and commaunded to wayte course by course at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaymed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde fouldiers and by musterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieuetenantes and capytaynes of the armye, are accustomed in all cities to muster the youth, and to admytte to th[e] order of fouldyers such as they thynke able to ferue the turne. Theyre wages is payde them of the common treafurye of euery prouynce which is gathered and partely payde also in the tyme of peace although it bee but lyttle. But such as are assigned to the warres, are free frome all tributes, and inioye certein other priuilegies wherby they may the more gladly and cherfully ferue theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occacyon is mynstred to shewe trewe vertue and manhodde, where in so greate and necessarie an institution, euery man accordyng to hys approued actiuitie and ingenious forwardnesse, may obteyne the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie.

*Vix olim vlla fides referentibus horrida regna
Mofchorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis lustramus, et vrbet.
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.
Mofchouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuolucns.
Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.*

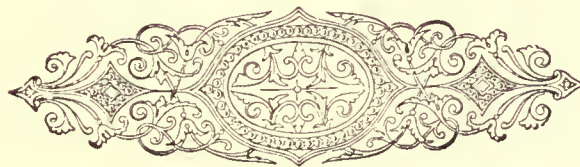
Theire armure.

Hargabusiers.
Gunnies.The Prince dyneth
openly.Sigismundus sayth
that much of this
is golde.The custodie of
the citie.

The dukes courte.

Souldyers wages
of the common
treasury.

280



OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
AS CONCERNYNGE MOSCOVIA: GATHERED OWT OF
THE BOOKES OF SIGISMVNDVS LIBERVS.

Note that when he sayth myles, he meaneth leagues.

Russia.

The browne colour
of the Russes.

Rossea.

The Slaun tounge
spreadeth farre.



From whence Russia had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Some thinke that it was so named of one Ruffus the soonne or neuie of Lech the kynge of the Polons. Other affirme that it was so cauled of a certeyne owlde towne named Ruffus not farre frome Nouogoroda or Nouogardia the more. Sum also thinke that it was so cauled of the browne coloure of the nation. But the Moscouiens confute al these opinions as vntrewe: Affirmynge that this nation was in owld tyme cauled Rosseia as a nation disperfed, as the name it selfe dooth declare. For Rosseia in the Ruthens tounge, doothe signifie disperfed or scattered. The which thyng to be trew, dyuers other people commyxt with th[e]inhabitauntes, and dyuers prouinces lyinge here and there betwene dyuers partes of Russia doo playnely declare. But whene so euer they tooke their name, doubtlesse all the people that vse the Slaun tounge, and professe the fayth of Chryst after the maner of the Greekes, (cauled in their common language Ruffi, and in the Latin tounge Rutheni) are increased to suche

a multytude that they haue eyther expulfed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to their maner of luyng, infomuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutheni by one common name.

Furthermore the Slaun tounge (whiche at this daye is sumwhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceedyng far, as vsed of the Dalmates, Boffuenser, Croatians, Istrians, and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatike vnto Forum Iulii: Of the Caruians also whome the Venetians caule Charfos: and lykewyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Drauus: Furthermore of the Stirians within Gretzium and by Muera vnto Danubius and from thense of the Mysians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople: Furthermore of the Bohemians, Lufacians, Silefians, Morauians, and th[e]inhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vsed in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Vandales inhabityng here and there. All whiche nations although they acknowlege them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germainys taking the denomination only of the Vandales, caule al them that vse the Slaun tounge, Vuenden, Vuinden, or Vuindysh.

Vandales.

The Princes of
Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest part therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of
Moscouia.

In autoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarkes of the worlde. For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppreffeth all with lyke feruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remayne with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or fendeth on an ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the soornes of the Boiarons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this autoritie aswell ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie: constitutyng what him lysteth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare diffente from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyl of god: and therefore caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyl.

By reason wherof, the prince hym selfe when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accustomed to aunswere: When god commaundeth he shalbe deliuered. Lykewyfe when any asketh a question of an vncerteyne or doubtfull thyng, theyr custome is to answere thus: God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Bafilus the foonne of Iohn, was the fyrst that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lorde Bafilus, by the grace of god kynge and lorde of all Ruffia and the greate duke of Vuolodimaria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tittle and cause of this errour. Note therefore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge signifieth a kynge, wheras in the language of the Slaunons, Pollons, Bohemes, and other, the fame woorde Czar, signifieth Cefar by whiche name Th[e]emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slaunons that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as fum Crall, other Kyrall, and fum Koroll: but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthene or Moscouite interpretours hearynge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, althowgh they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyl reade all theyr hystories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Keffar. By the lyke erreure Th[e]emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuerthelesse of antiquitie vsed no hygher tittle then the name of a kynge, expressed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vse the Slaunon tounge, caule the citie of Constantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynges citie.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to proceade of the whyte cappes, or other tyrementes they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Percia Kifilpassa (that is) redde headde. He vseth the tittle of a kynge when he writeth or fendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suetia and Denmarke, the greate master of Prussia and Liuonia, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Liuons. Yet by reason of his later conquestes, fum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycause he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kynge of Polone he vseth this tittle: The great lorde Bafilus by the grace of god, lorde of all Ruffia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc. leauynge owt the tittle of a kyng. For none of them vouchesafeth to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe tittle, as I knewe by experience at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kynge of Polone fente hym his letters augmented with the tittle of the Duke of Masouia, wherwith he was not a lyttle offended.

They glorie in theyr hystories that before Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Ruffia was baptised and blessed of saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle of Chryst, affirmynge that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Borysthenes: and that he fayled vppe the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his crosse, prophesyng also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chrystian men: Lykewyfe that he afterwarde came to the sprynges of Borysthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat descended into the lake Ilmer: from whense by the riuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the fame lake, he came to Nouogardia: and passed frome thense by the fame ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Heua, and so vnto the sea whiche they caule Vuaretzkoaia, beinge the fame that we caule the Germaine sea, betwene Vuinlandia or Finlandia and Liuonia, by the whiche he fayled to Rome, and was at the laste crucified for Chryste his gospell in Peloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

The prynce euery feconde or thyrde yeare, caufeth a muster to bee taken of the foonnes of the Boiarons, and takethe an accoumpte bothe of theyr number and howe many horses and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certeyne slypende to fuche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue seldome any rest or quyetnesse. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Liuonians, Suetians, or Tartars of Casan. Or yf it so chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooth he yearly appoynte garryfons of. xx. [twenty] thousande menne in places abowt Tanais and Occa to repress the incurfions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Precopites.

As in other matters, euen so in th[e]order of warrefare ther is great diuersitie amonge men. For the Moscouian as soone as he begynneth to flye, thinketh of none other succoure but putteth all his confidence therein. Beinge pursued or taken of his enemye, he neyther defendeth himselfe nor desirethe pardon.

The Tartar cast of from his horse, spoyled of al his armure and weapons, and also fore wounded, defendeth hym selfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strength and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym selfe destitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon,

290

Why the duke of
Moscouia was
cauled an
Emperour

The greate Turke

The whyte kynge.

The duke of
Moscouia his tittle.Russia baptised
by saynte
Andrewe the
Apostle.The Moscouites
warres

291

Dyuers maners
of dyuers people in
the wars.

The Moscouytes
army.

casting away his weapons and armure, and reching furth to the victourer his hands ioyned together to be bounde, hopynge by captiuitie to faue his lyfe.

The Moscouites in placeinge theyr armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch theyr tentes and the other make them certen arbours of bouwes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende themselues, theyr bowes, arrowes, faddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horfes to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in funder, which they fortifye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedymment, excepte perhappes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and marysshes.

Howe he
maynteyneth his
army.

It may perhappes seeme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so smaule an army as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therfore brefely declare theyre sparynge and frugalitie. He that hath fyxe or sumtymes more horfes, vseth one of them as A packe horse to beare all theyr necessaryes. He hath also in a bagge of two or three spanes longe, the floure or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and. viii. or x. poundes weyghte of swynes flesshe powdered. He hathe lykewyse A bagge of falte, myxte with pepper: so that if they chaunce to coomme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or flesshe, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr pottes with water wherunto they put a spoonefull of meale with a quantitie of falte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the master and ail hys seruantes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes inforced to faste for the space of two or three dayes. And yf the master intende to fare sumwhat more delycately, then he addeth therto a lyttle portion of swynes flesshe. I speake not thys of the best of them, but of suche as are of the meane forte. The gouernours and capytaynes of th[e]army, doo sum tynes bydde the poorer forte to theyre tables: where they feede them selues so wel, that they faste two or three dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbear all other meates. Procedyng forward to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what great armyes they assaile theyr enemyes, then eyther in the strengthe and valyantenesse of theyr souldyers, or in well instructyng theyr armye: and fyght better as farre of, then at hande: and therfore study howe to circument or inclose theyr enemyes and to assaile them on the backe halfe.

Instruments of
warre.

They haue many trumpeters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyse. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szarna. These they blowe withoute seafyng for the space of an houre together, so temperyng the fame and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe more, that the noyse seemeth continuall withoute intermyssion.

The Moscouites
and Tartars
apparell.

292

They vse all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withoute pleyghtes and with narrowe sleaues after the maner of the Hungaryans. These the Christians vse to batten on the right syde: and the Tartars (vsinge the lyke) batten them on the lefte syde. They weare redde and shorte buskyns that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the foules therof defended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr shyrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes byfette with lyttle rounde baules lyke beades, of syluer or gylted copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyrde them selues beneth the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may seme more boorely which they greatly esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almaynes.

The prouince of
Moscouia.
Extreme coulde.

The prouince of Moscouia is neyther very large nor frutfull, forasynuche as the fertylytye is hyndered with sande grounde which eyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kylleth the corne. Furthermore the immoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the foonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the corne to rype. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreame, that lyke as with vs in fommer by reason of heate, euen so there by extreame coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spettle faulyng from on[e]s mouthe, are frosen before they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came thether in the yeare 1526. sawe the braunches of frutefull trees wythyred by the coulde of the wynter before, which was so extreame that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Gonecz) were founde frosen to death in theyr sleades. There were sum that at the same tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cattayle from the nexte villagies to Moscouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through th[e]extremyte of the coulde. Furthermore, the same yeare many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunfyng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wyld beares also inforced thereto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houfes: At whose commyng while the men of the contrey forfooke theyr houfes and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them perysshed through the vehemencie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in fommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yeare 1525. in the which almost all kynds of pulfe and grayne were scorched and burnt: and such a derth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bowght for three dengas, was afterwarde sould for. xx. [twenty] or. xxx. [thirty.] Furthermore also, manye villagies, wooddes, and stakkes of corne, were sette on fyre by th[e]extreame heate: The smoke wherof so fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were fore hurte therby.

Extreme heate in
cold regions.

There arose also as it were a darke and thycke myst without fmoke which so molested the ey[e]s, that many losse theyr fight therby.

They fowe and narysshe the feades of melons with greate diligence in certeyne rayfed beddes myxte with doonge: wherby they fynde a remedy both ageynst extreame cold and heat. For if the heate exceade, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places least the feades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the coulde bee extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Theyr beastes are muche lesse then owres: yet not all without hornes as one hath written. For I haue there fene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes.

Not farre from the citie of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre of, seeme lyke vnto a citie. They saye that in thys citie is an incredible number of houfes: And that the syxte yeare before my comynge thither, the prince caused them to bee numbered, and founde them to bee more then one and fortye thousande and fyue hundredth houfes. The citie is very large and wyde: and also very flabby and myrie. By reason wherof it hath many brydges and caueys.

The ayre of the regyon is so holfome, that beyond the sprynges of Tanais, especially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the Easte, the pestylence hath not byne harde of fence the memorye of man. Yet haue they sumtimes a disease in theyr bowells and headdes not much vnlyke the pestylence. This disease they caule a heate: wherwith suche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

Sum wryte that Iohn the duke of Moscouia and sonne of Basilius, vnder the pretence of religion sacked and spoyled, the citie of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thense to Moscouia three hundredth sleades laden with golde, syluer, and precious stonnes of the gooddes of the Archebysshoppe, the marchauntes, citifins, and fraungiers.

Solowki is an Ilande situate in the north sea. viii. leaques from the continent betwene Dwina and the prouince of Corela. Howe farre it is dystant from Moscouia, can not bee well knowne by reason of manye fennes, marysshes, wooddes, and desolate places lyinge in the way. Albeit, sum say that it is not three hundredth leaques from Moscouia, and two hundredth from Bieloiesero. In thys Ilande is made greate plenty of falte: and it hath in it a monasterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgyn to enter. There is also great fysshing for hearyng. They say that here the soonne at the fommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually excepte two houres.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a castel, distante from Moscouia xii. leaques declining from the west somewhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachroma that runneth in to the ryuer of Sest. Sest also receaueth the ryuer Dubna whiche vnladeth it selfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are browght without great laboure or difficultie from the caspian sea by the ryuer Volga to Moscouia and dyuers other prouynces and cities abowte the fame.

Bieloiesero, a citie with a castell, is situat at a lake of the same name. For Bieloiesero in the Moscouites tounge, signifieth a white lake. The citie standeth not in the lake as sum haue sayd. Yet is it so enuironed with marysshes that it may seeme to bee inexpugnable: In consideration wherof, the princes of Moscouia are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. Bieloiesero is from Moscouia, a hundredth leaques, and as muche from Nouogardia the great. The lake it selfe, is. xii. leaques in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they say) three hundredth ryuers faulyng into it. Th[e] inhabitants of this place, haue a peculyar language, although nowe in maner all speake the Moscouites tounge. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctiall, is sayde to consist of. xix. [nineteen] houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the sprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he went in poste from Moscouia to Bieloiesero: And passyng ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there so couered with Ice and snow, that he was fayne to dispatch the residue of his iorney on sleades. And although the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe ripe and are gathered euen at the same tyme that they are in Moscouia. Within an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bryngeth furth brymstone: which a certen ryuer runnyng owt of the fame, caryeth with it in great quantitie flotyng aboute the water lyke a scoomme. Yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie therby.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre northe and east from Moscouia, exchange theyr fures for apparel, knyues, needles, spoones, hatchets, and suche other necessarye wares. For they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

Lyttle beastes.

The citie of Moscouia or Mosca.

Holsome ayer.

A ryche spoyle.

The Ilande of Solowki.

293
Bieloiesero.

The lengthe of the day.

The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiesero: the whyte lakes.

Diversitye of temperatour in small distances.

A lake brymstone.

Exchange of fures for ware.

¶ *The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and East
from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora,
and the prouince of Iugaria, or Iuhra: And from thence
to the ryuer Obi. Lykewyse the discription of
other countreys and regions, euen vnto
Th[e]mpire of the greate
Cham of Cathay.*

The dominion of
the duke of
Moscouia.

Vuolochda.
Werste.
Vstiug.



He dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towarde the Easte and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe descrybe. As concernynge whiche thyng, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouites tounge, and haue heard made a bryefe rehearfall of the same. I wyll fyrst therefore describe the iorney from Moscouia to Petzora, and so to Iugaria and Obi.

From Moscouia to the citie of Vuolochda, are numbered fyfthe Werstes, one Werst conteynyng almoste the space of an Italian myle. From Vuolochda to Vstiug towarde the right hande descendinge with the course of the ryuer of Vuolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are counted fyue hundreth Werstes: where within two Werstes of the towne cauled Strelze and hard by the citie of Vstiug Suchana ioyneth. Iug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the springes of the same, are numbered fyue hundreth Werstes.

Note that wheras here before the autour numbereth but fyfthe werstes from Moscouia to Vuolochda, it semeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers mystakeynge one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyfthe, for Quingenta, whiche is fyue hundreth. For the distance is no lesse from Moscouia to Vuolochda, then is from Vuolochda to Vstiug, which is fyue hundreth werstes.

294

Suchana.
Iug.
Colmogor.
Dwina.
Pienega.

Nicolai.
Kuluio.

The regions by
the North sea.

Pieza.
Piescoia.

Rubicho.
Czircho.
Czilma.
Petzora

Pustoosero.

Vssa.

Cingulus mundi.

But Suchana and Iug after they ioyned together, lose theyr fyrst names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the passage to the citie of Colmogor conteyneth fyue hundreth Werstes: from whence in the space of fyxe dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at. vi. mouthes, And the greateste parte of this iorney confysteth by nauigation. For by lande, from Vuolochda vnto Colmogor, passing ouer the ryuer Vuaga, are a thousande Werstes. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnyng from the Easte on the ryght hande for the space of feuen hundreth Werstes fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by the space of two hundreth Werstes, they come to a place cauled Nicolai: from whence within halfe a werst, shippes haue passage into the ryuer Kuluio, which hath his original from a lake of the same name towarde the north, from whose springes is. viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the same where it entereth into the Ocean.

Saylyng by the coastes of the ryght hande the sea, they passe by the regions of Stanuwische, Calunczcho, and Apnu. And saylyng about the promontorie or cape of Chorogofki Nofz, Stanuwische, Camenckh, and Tolstickh, they come at the length into the ryuer Mezen, and from thence in the space of fyxe dayes to a village of the same name, standyng in the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the which ageine ascendyng towarde the lefte hande and foommer East, they come to the ryuer Piescoia. From whence saylyng for the space of fyue Werstes, they come into two lakes in the whiche are feene two wayes: wherof one on the ryght fyde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the whiche they passe to the ryuer Czircho. Other by an other and shorter way, bryng theyr shippes from the lake directly into Czircho: From whence, except they be hyndered by tempest, they come in the space of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowyng into the great ryuer Petzora, which in that place is two Werstes in breadthe. Saylyng from hence, they come in the space of fyxe dayes to the towne and castell of Pustoosero, neare vnto the which, Petzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyxe mouthes. The inhabitants of this place, are men of simple wytt. They receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptised in the yere M. D. xviii.

From the mouth of Czilma vnto the mouthe of the ryuer Vssa, goyng by Petzora, is one monethes vyage. Vssa hath his springes in the mountayne Poyas Semnoi, being on the lefte hande towarde the foommer East, and springeth owte of a greate stone of the same mountayne, cauled Camen Bolschoi. From the springes of Vssa to the mouthes of the same, are numbered more then a thousande Werstes. Furthermore Petzora runneth from this fourth wynter parte, from whence ascendyng from the mouthes of Vssa vnto the mouthes of the ryuer

Stzuchogora, is three weekes vyage. They that described this vyage, fayde that they rested betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potzscheriema : and lefte theyr vyttayles there whiche they browght with theym from Ruffia. Beyond the ryuers of Petzora and Stzuchogora towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the sea with the Ilandes there abowte and the castell of Pustoofero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eate them felues. They haue great increase of foules, byrdes, and dyuers kyndes of beastes : as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squyrels : and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Mors : Also Vefs, whyte beares, woolfes, hares, Equiwoduani, great whales, and a fyfthe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For they are wyld, and flye the company and societie of other men.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora faylynge vp the ryuer vnto Poiassa, Artawifche, Cameni, and Poiassa the greater, is three weekes vyage. Furthermore the ascendynge to the mounte Camen, is three dayes iorney : from the whiche, descendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawifcha, and from thense to the ryuer Sibut, from whense they passe to the castell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Soffa. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici. Leauynge Soffa on the ryght hande, they come to the greate ryuer Oby, that spryngeth owt of the lake Kitafko, the whiche with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde scarcely passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it reacheth fourescore Werfles. The people also that dwell abowt this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici and Vgritzfchi. From the castell of Obea ascendynge by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Irtifche into the which Soffa entereth, is three moonethes iorney. In these places are two castels named Ierom and Tumen, kepte by certeyne lordes cauled Knefi Iuhorski, beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they fay. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and fures.

Frome the mouth of the ryuer Irtifche to the Castell of Grustina, is two monethes iorney : from whense to the lake Kitai by the ryuer Oby (whiche I fayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then three monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackynge th[e]use of common spech. They brynge with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stonnes, whiche they sell to the people cauled Grustintzi and Serponowtzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponow, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyond the ryuer Obi. They fay that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thyng and incredible. For they affirme, that they dye yearely at the xxvii. [twenty-feuenth] daye of Nouember, beinge the feast of faynt George amonge the Moscouytes : and that at the nexte sprynge abowte the xxiiii. [twenty-fourth] daye of Apryll, theye reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Grustintzi and Serponowtzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of sleapyng, aprocheth, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places appointed, which the Grustintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leauynge other wares of equall valewe in theyr places : whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuyn[g]e perceaue to bee of vnequall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne : by reason wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calami, which came thether from Obiowa and Pogofa. Beneth Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wyie) are the ryuers Soffa, Beres, Vua, and Danadim, al which sprynge owt of the montayne Camen, Bolschega, Potassa, and the rockes ioyngynge to the same. All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia.

Aurea Anus cauled in the Moscouites toonge Slati Baba, is an Idole at the mouthes of Obi in the prouince of Obdora, standynge on the furthest banke towarde the sea. Alonge by the bankes of Obi and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortresses, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the prince of Moscouia, as they fay. They fay also, or rather fable, that the Idole cauled Aurea Anus, is an Image lyke vnto an owlde wyfe hauynge a chyld in her lappe : and that there is nowe feene an other infante which they fay to bee her neuie : Also that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall sounde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it fo bee, I thynke it to bee by reason of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

The ryuer Cossin, fauleth owt of the mountaynes into Lucomoria. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whyther from the sprynges of the great ryuer Cossin, is two moonethes vyage. Furthermore from the sprynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer Cassima hath hys original : which runnyng through Lucomoria, fauleth into the great ryuer Tachnin, beyond the which (as is fayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouer-growne with heare lyke wyld beastes : other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr brestes without neckes, and with longe handes also and withoute feete. There is lykewyfe in the ryuer Tachnin, a certeyne fyfthe with headde, eys, nose, mouthe, handes, fiete, and other members vterly of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, and pleafante to bee eaten as are other fyfthes.

All that I haue hetherto rehearfed, I haue translated out of the fayde iorney whiche was deliuered me in the Moscouites toonge. In the which perhaps sum thynges maye seeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as

Stzuchogora.
Potzscheriema.
Camenipoias.

Samoged.
Foules and
beastes.

Wyld people.

Poiassa.
Camen.
Artawifcha.
Sibut.
Lepin.
Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.

Vuogolici
295

Irtifche.
Ierom.
Tumen.

Grustina.

Kitai.

Blacke men
without speache.
Serpenowe.
Lucomoria.

Men that yearely
dye and reuyue.

A straunge trade
of marchaundies.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus.
Obdora.

Cossin.

Cassima.
Tachnin.
People of
monstrous shape.
A fyfthe lyke a
man.
Plinie wryteth of
the lyke fyfthe.

	of the doomme men and the deade reuyuyng, the Aurea Anus also, and the monstrous shapes of men, with the fyfthe of human forme: wherof althrough I haue made dylygent inquisition, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had seene the fame with theyr eys, neuerthelesse to gyue further occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.
296	Noff in the Moscouites tounge signifieth a nose: and therefore they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.
Mountaynes.	The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled Semnoi Poyas, or Cingulus mundi: (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.
The greate Chan of Cathay.	Kithay, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of CATHAY whom the Moscouians caule Czar Kythaiski, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.
Lucomoria.	The places of Lucomorya nere vnto the sea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited without any houfes.
Tumen.	And albeit that the atour of thys iorney, sayd that many nations of Lucomorya are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia, yet forasmuch as the kyngdome of Tumen is neare therunto, whose prince is a Tartar and named in theyr tounge Tumenski Czar (that is) a kyng in Tumen, and hath of late doone great damage to the prynce of Moscouia, it is moste lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym.
Petzora. Papin.	Neare vnto the ryuer Petzora, (wherof mention is made in thys iorney) is the cite and castell of Papin or Papinowgorod, whose inhabytauntes are named Papini, and haue a priuate language differyng from the Moscouites.
Hygh mountaynes, supposed to bee Hyperborei, and Rhiphei.	Beyond thys ryuer, are exceedyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng enen vnto the bankes: whose ridgies or toppes by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vtterly barrayne without graff or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled Cingulus Mundi, that is the gerdle of the worlde, otherwyse cauled Catena Mundi, (that is), the chayne of the worlde. In these mountaynes doo ierfalcones breede, wherof I haue spoken before. There grow also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are seene in all the domynions of the prynce of Moscouia, which perhappes are the same that the owlde writers caule Rhipheos or Hyperboreos, so named of the Greeke worde <i>Hiper</i> , (that is) vnder: and <i>Boreas</i> (that is) the north. For by reason they are couered with continuall snow and froste, they can not without great difficultie bee traueyled: and reache so farre into the north, that they make the vnkowne land of Engroncland. The duke of Moscouia Basilius the soonne of Iohn, sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named Simeon Pheodorowicz Kurbski, and Knes Peter Vschatoi, to searche the places beyonde these mountaynes and to subdewe the nations therabowte. Kurbski was yet alyue at my being in Moscouia: and declared vnto me that he spent. xvii. [seuenteen] days in ascendyng the mountayn, and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr tounge is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dwina and Petzora. But nowe hauyng spoken thus muche of the fayde iorney, I wyll returne to the domynions of Moscouia, with other regyons lyeinge eastwarde and southe frome the same towarde the myghtye Empyre of CATHAY. But I wyll fyrst speake sumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.
Engronland.	
Stolp	
Cathay.	
The frutfull prouynce of Rezan. Iaroslav.	The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Occa and Tanais, hath a cite buylded of woodd not farre from the banke of Occa. There was in it a castell named Iaroslav, wherof there now remaineth nothyng but tokens of the owld ruine. Not farre from that cite, the ryuer Occa maketh an Ilande named Strub: which was sumtyme a great dukedome, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys prouynce of Rezan is more frutfull then any other of the prouynces of Moscouia: In so muche that in thys (as they faye) euery grayne of wheate bryngethe furthe two and sumtymes more eares: whose stalkes or strawes growe so thicke that horses can scarcely go through them, or quayles flye owt of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fyshes, foules, byrdes, and wyld beastes. The frutes also do farre exceede the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould and warlyk men.
Honny.	

¶ Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Donco.
Asoph.
Capha.
Constantinople.
297
Tanais diuideth
Europe from Asia.



Rome Moscouia vnto the castell of Iaroslav, and beyonde for the space of almoste. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place called Donco, where the marchauntes that trade to Afoph, Capha, and Constantinople, freight theyr shyppes: and thys for the moste parte in autumnne beyng a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not so abounde with water as to beare shyppes of any burden. Thys famous ryuer of Tanais, dyuydeth Europe from Asia: and hath hys orygyal or springes almost. viii. leaques from the cite of Tulla toward the south inclynyng sumwhat towarde the Eastle: and not owt of the Riphean mountaynes as some haue wrytten: But owte of a great lake

named Iwanowifero (that is) the lake of Iohn: being in length and breadth about. 1500. Werstes in a wood whiche sum caule Okonitzkilies, and other name it Iepiphawowies And owt of this lake, sprynge the twoo greate ryuers of Schat and Tanais. Schat towarde the Weste receauynge into it the ryuer of Vppa, runneth into the ryuer of Occa betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the fyrste runneth directly East: and continueth his course betwene the kyngdomes of Casan and Astrachan within fyxe or feuen leaques of Volga: And from thense bendynge towarde the fouth, maketh the fennes or marysshes of Meotis. Furthermore, nexte vnto his sprynge, is the citie of Tulla: and vppon the banke of the ryuer almoste three leaques about the mouthes of the same, is the citie of Afoph, which was fyrste cauled Tanas. Foure dayes iorney about this, is a towne cauled Achas, situate harde by the same ryuer: whiche the Moscouites caule Don. I can not sufficiently prayse this ryuer for the excedynge abundaunce of good fyshes, and fairenesse of the regions on bothe sydes the bankes, with plentie of holfoome herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and many frutefull trees growynge in suche coomly order as though they had byn set of purpose in gardens or archardes. There is also in maner euery where suche plentie of wyld beasts, that they may easely be slaine with arrowes: In so much that suche as trauayle by those regions, shal stand in neede of none other thyng to mayntayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and salte. In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes iorneyes. But as farre as I coule coniecture, from the fountaynes or sprynge of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the same iorneyinge by lande, are almost fourescore leaques. And faylynge from Donco (from whense I sayde that Tanais was fyrste nauigable) in scarfely. xx. [twenty] dayes vyage, they come to the citie of Afoph tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they say) syue dayes iorney from the streight of Taurica, otherwyse cauled Precop. In this citie is a famous mart towne vnto the which resort many marchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourse thither, free lybertie of bying and sellynge is graunted vnto all: and that without the citie euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of luyng without punysshment.

Of the altares of great Alexander and Iulius Cesar whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruines, I coule haue no certeyne knowlege of th[e] inhabitants or any other that had ostentymes trauayled these places. Furthermore the souldyers whiche the prince of Moscouia maynteyneth there yearly to oppresse th[e] incursions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answered that they neuer sawe or harde of any such thyng. Neuerthelesse, they sayde that about the mouthes of Tanais the lesse, foure dayes iorney from Afoph nere vnto a place cauled Scwerski, by the holy mountaynes, they sawe certeyne images of stone and marble. Tanais the lesse, hath his sprynge in the dukedome of Scwerski: whereof it is cauled Donetz Scwerski: and fauleth into Tanais three dayes iorney about Afoph. But suche as iorney from Moscouia to Afoph by lande, they, passynge ouer Tanais about the owlde and ruinate towne of Donco, doo sumwhat turne from the fouth to the East: In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawn from the mouthes of Tanais to the springes of the same, Moscouia shalbe found to bee in Asia and not in Europe.

☉ *More directly from Moscouia to Cathay.*



He great and large prouince of Permia, is dystante from Moscouia two hundreth and fyftie or (as sum say) three hundreth leaques directly betwene the East and North: And hath a citie of the same name by the ryuer Vischora which runneth. x. leaques beneth Kamam. The iorney by lande can scarfely bee trauayled thither but in wynter by reason of many ryuers, marysshes, and fennes. But in sommer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or smaule shippes by Vuolochda, Vstiug, and the ryuer Vitzechda which runneth into Dwina. xii. leaques from Vstiug. But they that go from Permia to Vstiug, muste sayle vp the ryuer

Vischora ageynst the course of the streame: and passing ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also conueyinge their boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Vstiug three hundreth leaques distant from the citie of Permia. There is smaule vse of breade in this prouince. For theyr yearly tribute, they pay to the prynce fures and horses. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a bysshop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For before beinge yet infantes in the fayth of Chryste, they slewe and fleyde an other bysshop that was appoynted to instructe them. This Steuen afterwarde when Demetrius the sonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for a faynte amonge the Ruthens. Of these people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites that go thither, doo not cease to conuert from theyr vayne errour. In the wynter they iorney in Artach as they doo in many places of Ruffia. Artach, are certeyne longe patentes of woodde of almost fyxe handfuls in length,

The springes of Tanais.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Casan.
Astrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.

Achas.
Frutefull regions about Tanais.

Plentie of wyld beasts.

Fire and salt.

Where Tanais is fyrste nauygable.
Asoph.
The marte of Asoph.
Libertie allureth strangers

The altars of Alexander and Cesar.

The holy mountaynes.
Tanais the lesse.
From Moscouia to Asoph.

Moscouia in Asia and not in Europe.

The prouince of Permia.

Marysshes in sommer.
298
Dwina.
Vstiug.

Tribute.
Fures and horses.

Monkes and heremites.

Patentes

Marcus Paulus
wryteth that these
dogges are almost
as byg as Asses:
and that they vse
syxe to one sleade.
Iugaria.
Hungaria.
Pannonia.
Attila.

The hygher or
superior
Hungarye, is
cauled Austria.
Polonie.
Buda.

Furres.
Pearles and
precious stunes.

Sibier.

Aspreolus, I
thynk to be
marterns: yet
sum think them
to be squerels.
Gesnerus wryteth
that the kynge of
the Tartars haue
theyre tentes
coverd without
wth the skynnes
of Lyons: and
within, with the
skynnes of sables
and Ermynes.

299
Czeremisse.

Habitacion
without houses.

Salte.

whiche they make false to theyr fiete with latches, and therewith performe theyr iorneyes with great celeritie. They vse for this purpose greate dogges in the sleade of other beastes, with the which they cary theyr farthels on sleades, as other doo with hartes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They say that that prouince toward the East confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynyng to the Tartars.

The situation of the prouince of Iugaria, is apparente by that which we haue fayde before. The Moscovites caule it Iuhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Iugaria from whence the Hungarians came in tyme paste, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherein the Moscovites doo greatly glory, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Paruus a greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Moscouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, toulde me that the Iuharici or Iuhgary, beinge subiectes to the great duke of Moscouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrste inhabited the regions abowt the fennes of Meotis, and then Pannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also that in fine they possessed the region of Morauia so named of the ryuer: and lykewyse Pollonie, so cauled of Polle, which signifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They say also that the Iuhgari vse the same tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trew or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my feruaunt beinge expert in the Hungarian tounge myght speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the prince of Moscouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stones are brought frome thense to Moscouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Pernia and Vuiathka: The whiche, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certeynly knowe. In this the ryuer Iaick hathe his originall, and fauleth into the Caspian sea. They saye that this region is deserte bycause it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that yf it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tartar Schichmamai. Th[e]inhabitanes haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of marterns, which in fayrenes and greatnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. Yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Moscouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the wrytyng of this hystorie, at Rycharde Chaunceler his fyrst being in Moscouia, Duke Iohn Vasiluich that nowe raygneth, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces euen vnto the great cite and mart towne of Astrachan and the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great cite of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his courte in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherein the Cathaynes are very expert as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus. Ther was also at the same tyme th[e]ambassadour of the kyng of Persia cauled the great Sophie. This ambassadour was appareled all in fearlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

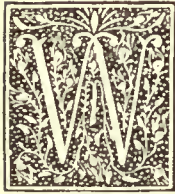
The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes beneth Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the secte of Machumet. They were sumtyme subiecte to the kyng of Casan: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of Moscouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Moscouia, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region without houfes from Vuiathka and Vuolochda, to the ryuer of Kama. All the nation aswell women as men, are very swyft of foote, and expert archers: wherein they so delite, that theyr bowes are in maner neuer owt of theyr handes: and gyue theyr children no meate vntyl they hyt the marke they shoote at.

Two leaques distante from Nouogardia the lower, were many houfes to the similitude of a cite or towne where they were accustomed to make false. These a fewe yeares fence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were restored by the commaundement of the prince.

Mordwa, are people inhabytynge by the ryuer of Volga on the fourth banke beneth Nouogardia the lower: And are in al thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue more houfes. And here endeth Th[e]mpire of the Moscovites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Asiatia, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Moscouia reacheth from the northwell to the southeast syue hundredth myles of Germanie, which are more then leaques. For they affirme that a Germane myle is more then three Englyshie myles.

¶ *Of the Tartars.*



We will nowe adde hereunto sumwhat of the people confynge with the Moscouites towarde the East: of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But before wee speake of them particularly, wee will fyrst reherse sumwhat of theyr maners and customes in generall.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they call Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Sawolhenfes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is sayde that the other Hordas had theyr offsprynge and original of this. And albeit that euery Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Sawolhenfes, Precropenfes, and Nahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euill and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes: but will them selues to bee cauled Besfermani, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to bee cauled.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouinces reachynge far on euery syde, euen so in maners and order of luyngge doo they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane stature, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with roughe and thyck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble men haue longe heare, and that exceedyng black, which they wreath on both sydes theyr eares. They are stronge of body and stout of mynde: prone to leacherye, and that vnnatural. They eat the fleashe of horses, camells, and other beastes excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe. They can so abyde fasting and hunger, that they sumtime forbear meate and sleepe for the space of foure dayes, occupied neuerthelesse aboute theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them selues beyond measure: and with that surfecte in maner recompense theyr former abfynence. And beyng thus oppressed with labour and meate, they sleepe continually for the space of three or foure days without doynge any maner of worke or labour: duryng which tyme the Lyuons and Moscouites into whose domynions they are accustomed to make theyr incurfions, assayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meate and sleepe, lynge scatered here and there owt of order withoute watch or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bee molested with hunger and thyrste, they vse to lette theyr horses blud, and with drynkyng the same, satisfye theyr present necessitye, and affyrme theyr horses to bee the better therby. And bicause they all wander in vnknownen places, they vse to dyrect theyr iorneyes by th[e]-aspecte of the starres, and especyally of the pole starre, which in theyr tounge they caule Selesnikoll, (that is) an iren nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and beleue that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eat herbes very much: and especyally such as growe about Tanais. Fewe of them vse falte. When they kynge dysftrybute any vytayles among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horse or cowe to fortye men. Of the flayne beaste, the bowells and trypes are referued for the chiefe men and capytaynes. These they heate at the fyre vntyll they may shake owt the doonge, and then deuoure them gredely. They sucke and lycke, not only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues and styckes wherwith they scrape the doong from the guttes. The heades of horses are counted delycate disshes with them as are bores heades with vs: and are referued only for the chiefe men. Theyr horses (wherof they haue great aboundaunce) are but smaule, and with short neckes: but very strong and such as can wel away with labour and hunger. These they fede with the branches and barks or ryndes of trees and the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustom them to hard feedynge, and exerceyse them to continually labour: by reason wherof (as say the Moscouytes) theyr horses are swyfter and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other faddells and steroppes then of woodd, except suche as they eyther bye of the Chrystians, or take from them by vyolence. Least theyr horse backes shulde bee hurte with theyr faddells, they vnderlaye them with grasfe and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ryuers on horback. But if when they flye, they feare the pursuyngge of theyr enemyes, then castynge away theyr faddells, apparelle, and all other impedymentes, referuyng only theyr armoure and weapons they flye amayne and with greate celeritie.

Theyr women vse the same kynde of apparell that doo the men without any dyfference except that they couer theyr heades with linnen vayles, and vse linnen hose muche lyke vnto maryners sloppes. When theyr queenes coome abroad, they are accustomed to couer theyr faces. The other multytude of the common sorte that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell made of sheepes skynnes, which they chaung[e] not vntyll theyr bee worne and torne to fytters. They tarye not longe in one place, iudgyng it a great mysery so to doo: In so muche that when they are angrie with theyr chyl dren, the greatest curse that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the stynshie of theyr owne fylthyneffe as doo the Chrystians. When they haue consumed the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr droues of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyl dren whom they euer cary about with them in Wagons: albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vse an other order of luyngge. If they be inclosed with any daungerous warre,

The Tartars of Casan.

Horda.

Besfermani.

The stature of the Tartars.

They absteyne from hogges fleshe. Abstynence.

Voracitie.

So doo the Turkes

Iorneyng by the pole star.

Mares mylke

Horse fleshe eaten. Clenly.

300

Hors[e] heades, deintie meate The Tartars horses.

Saddells and styrrops of wodde

The Tartars women.

The Tartars curse.

No iustice amonge
the Tartars.

The Tartars are
theeves and poore.

They reioyce in
spoylunge

The feeelde
Tartars.
A mery tale.

301

Casan.

The kynge of
Casan.
Archers.
Maryners.

The towne
Tartars.

Moscovia inuaded
by the Tartars.

The prince of
Moscovia tributary
to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius
army ageynst the
Tartars.

The kyng of Casan
submittech hym
selfe.

they place theyr wyues, chylde, and owld folkes, in the fauest places. There is no iustice amonge them. For if any man flande in neade of any thyng, he may without punnysshemente take it awaye from an other. If any complayne to the Iudge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coule not lacke that thyng. Then the Iudge is wonte to gyue thys sentence: If thowe also shalte haue neede of any thyng doo the lyke to other. Sum say they do not steale: But whether they steale or not, lette other iudge. They are surely a theeuyshe kynd of men and very poore, luyng only by robbing of other, and stealyn away other mens cattayle, and vyolently also caryng awaye the men them selues whom eyther they felle to the Turkes or proffer them to bee redemed by ranfome, referuyng only the younge wenches. They feldome assaulte cities or castells, but burne and waste townes and vyllyages: In so muche that they please them selues herin, that they thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged their empire, in howe muche they haue wasted and made desolate manye prouinces. And although they bee moste impacient of reffe and quyetnesse, yet doo they not kyll or destroye one an other, excepte theyr kynges bee at desention betweene them selues. If any man bee flaine in any fraye or quarel, and the autours of the myschefe bee taken, only theyr horffe, harnesse, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they dismissed. So that the murtherer by the losse of a vyle horse or a bowe, is dyscharged of the Iudge with these woordes: gette the henfe and goo aboute thy busynesse. They haue no vse of golde and syluer, excepte only a fewe marchautes: But exersyfe exchange of ware for ware. And if it fo chaunce that by fellyng of such thynges as they haue stolne, they gette any monye of theyr bortherers, they bye therwith certeyne apparel and other necessaryes of the Moscouites. The regyons of theyr habytations (the feeelde Tartars I meane) are not lymitted with any boundes or borthers. There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken pryfoner of the Moscouites: to whom when the prynce sayd, How art thou so fatte thowe dogge, fythe thowe haste not to eate, the Tartar answered, Why shulde not I haue to eate fythe I possesse so large a land from the East to the west, wherby I may bee abundantly nurysshed? But thowe mayste rather seeme to lacke, fyth thowe inhabyest so smaule a portion of the worlde, and duste daylye stryue for the fame.

Casan, is a kyngedome, also a citie, and a castell of the same name, situate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almost threcore and tenne leaques beneath Nouogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the East and South, it is termined with deserte fyeldes. Towarde the fommer East, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanski, and Kofatzki. The kynge of this prouince, is able to make an army of xxx. [thirty] thousande men, especially foote men, of the which the Czeremisse and Czubaschi are most expert archers. The Czubaschi are also cunningge maryners. The citie of Casan, is threcore leaques distant from the principal castel Vuiathka. Furthermore, Casan in the Tartars language, signifieth a brafen potte boylunge. These Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houfes, tyll the grownde, and exercise the trade of marchaundies. They were of late subdued by Basilius the greate duke of Moscouia, and had theyr kynge assigned them at his arbitrimet. But shortly after, they rebelled ageine: and associate with other Tartars, inuaded the region of Moscouia, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the citie Moscouia which they possessed for a tyme, and had vtterly destroyed the same if it had not byn for the valyantnesse of the Almayne gunners which kept the castell with great ordinaunce. They also putte duke Basilius to flyght, and caused him to make a letter of his owne hande to Machmetgirei theyr kynge to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them, wheruppon they dissolued the siege, and gaue the Moscouites free libertie to redeme theyr captiues and gooddes, and so departed. But Basilius not longe able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had putte to death suche as by flyng at the fyrst encounterynge were the cause of this ouerthrowe, assembled an armye of a hundreth and fourescore thousande men shortly after in the yeare. 1523. And sent forwarde his armye vnder the conducte of his Lieutenante: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kynge of Casan, with woordes in this effecte: The last yeare lyke a theefe and robber without hydding of battayle, thou dyddeste pryuilie oppresse me. Wherefore I nowe challenge the, once ageyne to proue the fortune of warre if thou mystruste not thine owne poure. To this the kynge answered, that there were manye wayes open for hym to inuade Moscouia: And that the warres haue no lesse respect to the commoditie of tyme and place then of armure or strength: And that he wold take th[e] aduantage therof when and where it shulde seeme best to him and not to other. With which woordes Basilius beinge greatly accensed and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome of Casan: whose kynge beinge stryken with suddeyne feare at th[e] approche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernance of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his neuie, whyle he hym selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Casan submittech hym selfe vpon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Moscouites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because theyr vittayles sayled them to maynteyne so great a multitude. But wheras duke Basilius hym selfe was not present at this last expedition, he greatly suspected Palitzki the Lieutenante of th[e] army to bee corrupted with brybes to proceade no further. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Casan sent ambassadours to Basilius to

intreate of peace : whome I sawe in the dukes courte at my beyng there : but I coulde perceave no hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Basilius to endomage the Cafans, translated the marte to Nouogardia, which before was accustomed to bee kepte in the Ilande of marchauntes nere vnto the citie of Cafan : Commaundynge also vnder payne of greuous punysshemente that none of his subiectes shulde reforte to the Ilande of marchauntes : thynkyng that this translation of the marte shulde greatly haue endomaged the Cafans : and that only by takynge away their trade of falte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Mofcouites at that marte) they shulde haue byn compelled to submyssion. But the Mofcouites them felues felte no lesse inconuenience hereby then dyd the Cafans, by reafon of the dearth and scarfenesse that folowed hereof of al such thynges as the Tartars were accustomed to bryng thyther by the ryuer of Volga from the Caspian fea, the kyngedomes of Persia and Armenia, and the marte towne of Astrachan : especially the great number of most excellent fysshes that are taken in Volga both on the hyther and further syde of Cafan.

But hauynge fayde thus much of the warres betwene the Prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Cafan, we will now procede to speake sumwhat of the other Tartars inhabytyng the regions toward the southeast and the Caspian fea.

Next beyonde the Tartars of Cafan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga about the Caspian fea at the ryuer Iaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Siber. These haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, three bretherne diuidynge the prouinces equally betwene them, possed those dukedomes. The fyrst of them named Schidack, possed the citie of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Rha or Volga toward the East, with the region confynynge with the ryuer Iaick. The seconde cauled Coffum, enioyeth all the lande that lyethe betwene the ryuers of Kaman Iaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, possed the parte of the prouince of Siber and all the region about the same. Schichmamai, is as much to fay by interpretation, as holy or myghty. And in maner al these regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth toward Scharaitz, which confysth of playnes and fyeldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Iaick, about the Caspian fea, there sumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawolhenfes. Demetrius Danielis (a man among these barbarians, of singuler fayth and grautie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is sene among these Tartars. And that his father beinge fente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Sawolhenfe, sawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne feede in that Ilande sumwhat lesse and rounder then the feedes of Melones : Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heygth of fyue spannes : And is therefore cauled in theyr tounge Boranetz, which signifieth a lyttle lamb. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eyned : with also a very thynne skynne wherwith dyuers of th[e] inhabitants of those regions are accustomed to line theyr cappes and hattes and other tyrements for theyr heades. Many also confirmed in owre presence that they had seene these skynnes. He fayde furthermore that that plant (if it may bee cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleshe : but hath in the steade of fleshe a certeyne substance like vnto the fleshe of creuysshes. The hooves also are not of horne as are the lambes, but couered with heare in the same forme. The roote cleaueth to the nauell or myddest of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the graffe and herbes growynge abowte it beinge eaten, the roote wythereth for lacke of nurysshement. They say that it is very sweete to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly defyred and fought for of the woolues and other rauenyng beasts. And albeit I exsteme all that is fayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet forasmuch as it hath byn toulde me of credible perfons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Of this straunge frute, Mandeuell maketh mention, where in the lxxxiiii. [eighty-fourth] chapture of his booke he wryteth thus : Nowe shall I fay of sum landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therefore who so goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he shall go through a kyngedome that men caule Cadiffen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a funder : and fynd therein a beast as it were of fleshe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lyttle lambe without wolle. And men eate that beast and the frute also, which is a great maruayle. Neuerthelesse, I fayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I fayde that in my countrey are tres that beare frute that become byrdes flyng which are good to bee eaten. And that that fauleth into the water lyueth : And that that fauleth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. etc.

From the prince of Schidack, proceadyng. xx. [twenty] dayes iorney toward the East. are the people which the Mofcouites caule Iurgenci, whose prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they coomme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that great Chan of Cathay.

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are these, Chan, signifieth a kyng, Soltan, the foonne of a kyng. Bii, a Duke. Murfa, the foonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counsiler. Olboadulu, the foonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh prest. Kfi, a priuate perfon.

The names of offices are these : Vlan, the seconde dignitie to the kyng. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whose counsyle they vse in al theyr weyghty affayres. Of these the fyrste is cauled Schirni : the seconde Barni : the thyrde, Gargni : The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue fayde thus muche of the Tartars, it shall suffice.

The Iland of
marchauntes

The Caspian sea.
Persia.
Armenia.
Astrachan.

302

The Tartars nere
to the Caspian sea.
Nogai.
The possession of
three brytherne.

The kynges cauled
Sawolhenfes.

A maruelous frute
lyke a lambe.

Mandeuell.

Barnacles of the
Orkeneyns.

Barack Soltan.
Cathay.

Names of dignities
amonge the
Tartars.

Names of offices.

303
Chan Cublai.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that the greate Chan, is cauled Chan Cublai that is, the great kynge of kynges : as the greate tuerke wryteth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I fawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late to the cite of Ragusa, in the which he vseth this subfeription: Soltan Soliman de felim Cham Signore de Signori in sempiterno. As concernyng Mofcouia and Cathay, I was mynded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne considerations I was perswaded to proceade no further. Vnto whose requeste, herein satisfiying rather other then my selfe, wyllunge otherwyfe to haue accomplyshed this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two causes especially mouynge me: wherof the one is, that as touchyng these trades and vyages, as in maner in all other sciences, there are certeyne secretes not to bee publyfshed and made common to all men. The other cause is, that the parteners at whose charge this booke is prynted, although the cobby wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought doo not neuerthelesse cease dayly to caule vpon me to make an end and proceade no further: affirmyng that the booke wyll bee of to great a pryce and not every mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne losse and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficial to other, as is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie respecte of priuate commoditie hath at this tyme so lyttle moued me, I take god to wytnesse, that for my paynes and traauyles taken herein such as they bee, I may vpon iust occasion thynke my selfe a loofer manye wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure and feele sum commoditie in the knowlege of these thynges, shall thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I shal repute my selfe and my traauyles so abundantly satisfiied, that I shall repute other mens gaynes a recompense for my losses, as they may bee in deede, yf men bee not vnthankfull, which only vice of ingratitude hath hyndered the worlde of many benefites.

☞ *The nauigation by the frosen sea.*



At my beinge in Mofcouia when I was sent thither by kynge Ferdinando my lorde and master, it so chauned that Georgius Istoma the duke of Mofcouia his interpretour, a man of great experience who hadde before lerned the latin tounge in the court of Iohn kynge of Denmarke, was there present at the same tyme. He in the yeare of Chryst. 1496. beinge sente of his prince with master Dauid a scotte borne and then ambassadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom also I knewe there at my fyrst legacie) made me a breefe information of all th[e] order of his iorney. The which, forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious aswel for the distaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to deseribe the same as I receaued it at his mouth.

Fyrst he sayde that beinge sent of his prince with the fayd Dauid, they came fyrst to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kynge of Denmarke, and also the duke of Mofcouia was at discention with the Suetians, by reason wherof they coulde not passe by the most accustomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr iorney by an other way longer but safer. And came fyrst from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiwlo, by a very difficult and paynfull iorney. For he sayd that this iorney which can not bee to muche detested for suche laboures and traauyles, continueth for the space of three hundredth leaques. In fine, takyng foure smaull shyppes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they sayled by the coaste on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they sawe certeyne hyghe and rowgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe saylyng. xvi. [sixteen] leaques, and passyng a great goulfe, folowed the coaste on the lefte hande: And leauyng on the ryght hand the large sea which the name of the ryuer Petzora (as haue also the mountaynes adiaacent to the same) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottagies by the sea fyde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wyld Lappians. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of Mofcouia. Then leauyng the lande of the Lappians, and saylyng fourescore leaques, they came to the region of Nortpoden vnder the dominion of the kynge of Suecia. This the Mofcouites caule Kaienska Senla, and the people Kayeni. Departyng from henfe, and saylyng alonge by the coaste of a wyndyng and bendyng shore reachyng towarde the ryght hand, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy nose, beinge a greate stone reachyng farre into the sea to the similitude of a nose: vnder the whiche is seene a caue with a whyrlepoole which swalow[e]th the sea euery syxe houres: and castyng furth the same ageyne with terryble roryng and violence, causeth the fayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the sea: and other name it Charybdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this swalowyng goulfe is such, that it draweth into it, inuoluzth, and swaloweth vp shyppes and al other thynges that comme neare it: and that they were neuer in greater dangioure. For the whyrlepoole so suddely and violently drewe vnto it the shyppe or barke wherin they were caryed, that with the helpe of ores and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had thus ouerpasse the holy nose, they came to a certeyne stonye mountayne which they shulde needes compasse abowte. But beinge there stayed with contrary wyndes for the space of certeyne dayes, the pylotte of the shippe spake vnto them in this effecte: This stone (sayth he) that yowe see, is cauled Semes: The which excepte we please with summe gyfte, wee shall not passe by withowt great daungiour. But the pylot beinge reproued of Istoma for his wayne superstition, helde his peace. And when they had byn detained ther by tempest for the space of foure days, at the length

Nouogardia.

Suecia vnder the
kyng of
Denmarke.

Dwina.
Potiwlo.

Hygh mountaynes
neare the north
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wyld
Lappians.
The region of
Nortpoden

The cape cauled
the holy nose.
A whyrlepoole or
swalowing goulfe.

304

Such whyrlepooles,
are cauled vipers

The stone cauled
Semes.
Superstition.

the tempest ceafed and they went forwarde on theyr vyage with a prosperous wynd. Then the pilotte spake vnto them ageyne, sayinge: You despised my admonicion of pleasynge the Semes, and scorned the fame as vayne and superstitious. But if I had not priuile in the nyght ascended a rocke and pleased the Semes, wee shulde surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offered to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myxt with otemele vpon the stone which wee sawe reache furth into the sea. As they sayled further, they came to an other cape named Motka, which was almost enuironed with the sea lyke an Ilande: in whose extreme poynte, is situate the castell of Barthus, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a house of defence or fortresse. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garryson of men to defende theyr marches. He sayde furthermore that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they coulde scarcely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which taryng leaste they shulde bee hyndered, they caryed on theyr shulders with greate labour, theyr barks and fardelles ouer a streyght of lande conteynyng halfe a leaque in breadth. From hense they sayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilappones to a place named Dront, beinge. CC. [two hundred] leaques distant from Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he sayth, doth the prince of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermore leauyng theyr barks here, they synnysshed the residue of theyr iorney on sleades. He further declared that there were hardes of hartes as are with vs of oxen, whiche in the Noruegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge sumwhat bygger then owre hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They ioyne them to sleades made lyke fysshers botes, as wee put horses to the carte. The man in the sleade, is tyed fast by the feete leaft he fall owte by the swyfte course of the hartes. In his lefte hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateth the course of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked staffe wherwith he may susteine the sleade from faulyng if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he toulde me that by this meanes he trauayled twentie leaques in one daye, and then dismyssed the harte, who by hym selfe returned to his owne mafter and accustomed stable. This iorney thus synnysshed, they came to Berges a citie of Norduegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the northe betwene the mountaynes: and wente from thense to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Dront and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. [twenty-two] houres longe in the sommer Equinoctiall. Blasius an other of the prynce of Moscouia his interpretours, who a fewe yeares before, was sent of his prince into Spayne to Th[e]mperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iorney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to John the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrste on foote vnto Rostowe: And takynge shyppe there, came to Pereaflaw: and from Pereaflaw by the ryuer Volga to Castromow: and that frome thense goynge feuen Werstes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: saylynge by the which, when fyrst he came to Vuolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, ouerpassynge in this vyage all the perelles and laboures that Istoma rehearsed before, he came at the length to Hafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germaines caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnynge home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liunia: and that they were a yeare in this vyage: albeit Georgius Istoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tary longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyse constantly affirme that in this iorney eyther of them trauayled a thousand threescore and ten Werstes (that is) three hundreth and fortie leaques. Furthermore also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the prynce of Moscouia to the bysshoppe of Rome, (by whose relation also Paulus Iouius wrote his description of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynges to bee trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or frosen sea, made none other answere but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundaunt flowynge, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the ryuers is frosen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liunia and other partes of Suecia. For althowgh by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Ise is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce seldome or neuer in ryuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ise gathered togyther bee lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or piefes of Ise caryed into the sea by force of the ryuers, doo flote aboue the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are ageyne so vehemently frosen togyther, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ise of manye yeares, as dooth appere by such piefes as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibly informed by faythfull men that the sea Baltheum (otherwyse cauled the goulfe of Liunia) is often tymes frosen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabyted of the wyld Lappones, the soonne in the sommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of. xl. [forty] dayes: yet that that the body therof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuerthelesse to gyue such lyght duryng that tyme, that the darkeneffe hyndereth not theyr worke. The Moscouites make theyr boste that these wyld Lappones are tributaries to theyr prynce. Wherat I do not greatly maruayle, sofarinmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr trybute is onely fures and fysshie, hauynge in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salte, and other intyements of gluttony, and lyue onely with fysshie and wyld beastes, yet are they exceedyng prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in theyr huntynge they espye any beastes whose skynnes they desyre to faue vnperysshed, they

Sacrifice to the stone Semes

The cape Motka.

The castell of Wardhus.

The region of the wyld Lappones. Dront.

Iorneyng on sleades.

Howe the hartes drawe sleades.

xx. [twenty] leaques in one day
The citie of Berges in Norway

A shorter iorney.

Rostow.
Pereaslav.
Castromow.
Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen
Liunia.
Werste, is almost an Italian nyde.
305

Paulus Iouius.

Ryuers faulyng into the frosen sea.

Wynde.
Ise.

Ise of many yeares.

The sea Baltheum
Where the sun fauleth not in. xl. [forty] days

The wyld Lappones are tributaries to the Moscouites
Fures and fysshie

Experte archers

Good felowshyp.

Necessary warres.

No vse of money.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes
continually
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer
Petzora,
306
The beaste cauled
Mors.The prouidence
of nature.The frosen sea.
Engronland or
Groneland

wyll not lightly myffe to hytte them in the nofethrylles. When they go furth on huntyng, they are accustomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues fuche marchauntes or fraungers as they haue receaued into theyr houfes. So that if at theyr returne, they perceaue theyr wyues through the company of the frangers to be myrier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the fraungers sum present. But yf they fynd it otherwyse, they thrust them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with fraungers that reforte thyther for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natiue barbaroufnesse. They gladly admitte marchauntes, bycause they brynge them apparel of grofe cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkyng cuppes, earthen and brafen pottes, with fuch other necessarie wares: So that they vse now to eate sodden and roasted meate, and doo embrace more ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparel is made of the skynnes of dyuers beastes fowed together. And in this apparell they sumtymes comme to Moscovia. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hofen, which they vse to make of hartes skynnes. They haue not the vse of golde or syluer money: but vse only barteryng of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages beyde theyr owne, they seeme amonge fraungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr cotages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne restyng habitacion. But when they haue consumed the fyssh and wylde beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthermore also the fayde ambassadours of the prince of Moscovia, declared that in the same partes they sawe certeyne hygh mountaynes continually castyng furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Ilande of Sicilia: and that euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnt in maner to affhes with fuch continuall flames. Which thynge sum confydering, fayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernyng these mountaynes of Norway, when I was sent ambassadour to Christierne kyng of Denmarke, I was informed the lyke by the gouernours of Norway who chaunced at that tyme to bee present there.

About the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are fayd to bee dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne great beast as bygge as an oxe, which th[e] inhabitantes caule Mors. This beast hath shorte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a brest sumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greate teeth growyng owte of the vpper iawe. These beastes for rest and increafe, doo sumtymes leaue the Ocean, and by great hearde ascende the mountaynes: where before they gyue themfelues to profounde sleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watchman as doo cranes for the securitie of the reste. Whiche if he chaunce to sleepe, or to bee slayne of the hunters, the residue may easely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnyng with roryng (as the maner is) immediatly the hole hearde awakened thereby, suddelynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And so faulyng from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a sleade, they cast them felues headlong into the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a whyle vpon the heapes of Ise. The hunters pursue these beastes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and especially the Turkes, make haftes for swoordes and dagge[r]s very artificially: And vse these rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauinesse thereof as summe fable. Also amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and Tartars, these teethe are fould by weight, and are cauled the teethe of fysshes.

The frosen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Petzora and vnto the mouthes of the great riuer Obi: beyonde the which they say to bee the region of Engroneland, vnknowen and seperate from the trade and conuerfation of owre men, by reason of hygh mountaynes couered and coulede with perpetuall snowe, and the sea no lesse incumbered with contynually Ise whiche hyndereth nauigations and maketh them dangerous, as they faye.



EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV
LITERARVM MISSIVARVM
QVAS ILLVSTRISSIMVS PRINCEPS

Edvardus eius nominis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septemtrionalem ac Orientalem mundi plagam inhabitantes iuxta mare glaciale, nec non Indiam Orientalem. Anno Domini. 1553. Regni fui Anno septimo et vltimo.



Edvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Rex. etc. Omnibus, Regibus et Principibus ac Dominis, et cunctis Iudicibus terræ, et Ducibus eius quibuscunque est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea

cunctis in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cœlo: Pax, tranquillitas, et honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ imperio vestro subiacent, cuique vestrum quemadmodum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt. Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor et desiderium tale, vt appetat quisque cum alijs societatem mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuique pro
307 facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime traclauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id præstare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circumlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtilis quæ Dei beneficio in

THE COPY OF THE LETTERS
MISSIVE WHICH THE RIGHT
NOBLE PRINCE EDWARDE THE. VI.
sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other
potentates inhabytyng the Northeast
partes of the worlde towarde the
myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche
tyme as syr Hugh Willoby knyght
and Rychard Chaunceler with
theyr company attempted theyr
vyage thither in the yeare of
Chryst. 1553. and the. vii. and
laste yeare of his reigne.



Edwarde the sixte by the grace of God, kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and Ierlande, etc. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Iudges, and gouernours of the earthe, and all other hauynge any excellent dignitie on the same in all places vnder the vniuersall heauen: Peace, tranquillite, and honoure, bee vnto yowe, and your landes and regions which are vnder yowr dominions, and to eury of yowe as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghty god hath gyuen vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours, such a hart and desyre, that eury man desyret to ioyne frendeshyppe with other, to loue and bee loued, also to gyue and receaue mutuall benefites, it is therefore the dewtie of all men, accordyng to theyr poure to maintayne and increase this desyre in eury man with well deferynge to all men, and especially to shewe this good affection to such as beinge moued with this desyre, coome vnto them from farre countreys. For in howe much the longer viage they haue attempted for this intent, so much the more doo they therby declare that this desyre hath byn ardent in them. Furthermore also th[e]xemples of owre fathers and predecessours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they haue euer gentelly and louyngly intreated such as of frendely mynde came to them aswel from countreis nere hand as farre remote, commendynge them selues to theyr protection. And if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such humanitie toward all men, doubtlesse the same owght chiefly to bee shewed to marchautes, who wanderynge about the worlde, searche both the lande and sea to cary such good and profitable thinges as are founde in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kyngedomes: and ageyne to brynge from the same, suche thynges as

regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atque inde viuissim referant quod suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, et ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quavis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliiretur amicitia inter omnes, singulique omnibus benefacere quærent, Hoc itaque ineundæ ac stabiliendæ amicitiaë desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones instituerunt, vt inter nostros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent: Nosque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt feruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quæsituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atque ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitque amicitia perpetua et fœdus indissolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destituuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et Principes et omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus vestris inuitis vobis. Cogitate quod homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et subditi nostri nos gereremus erga feruos vestros si quando transferint per regiones nostras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ cœlo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnorum nostrorum, nos pari benignitate feruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atque a nobis et subditis nostris, ac si nati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependam vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquam vos Reges, Principes, etc. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni prosequamini feruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iar. xiiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

308

they fynde there commodious for theyr own countreys: Bothe, aswell that the people to whom they go, may not bee destitute of such commodities as theyr countreys brynge not furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of suche thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydyng for mankynde, wolde not that al thynges shulde bee founde in one region, to th[e]ende that one shuld haue neede of an other, that by this meanes frendshippe myght bee establysshed amonge all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie all. For th[e]establysshynge and furtherance of which vniuersall amitie, certeyne men of owre realme moued hereunto by the fayde desyre, haue institute and ³⁰⁹ taken vpon theym a vyage by sea into farre countreys to th[e]intent that betwene owre people and them, a way bee opened to brynge in and cary owt marchaundies, desyryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who assentyng to theyr peticion, haue licenced the ryght valiante and woorthy syr Hughe Wylloby knyght, and other owre trusty and faithful seruantes which are with hym according to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknowen, aswell to seeke suche thynges as we lacke, as also to cary vnto them from owre regions, suche thynges as they lacke. So that hereby not only commodity may enfewe both to them and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of frendshippe be establysshed betwene vs bothe, whyle they permitte vs to take of theyr thynges suche whereof they haue abundaunce in theyr regions, and we ageine graunt them suche thynges of owrs wherof they are destitute. Wee therefore desyre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto these ovr seruantes, free passage by yowr regions and dominions. For they shall not touche any thyng of yowres vnwylling vnto yow. Confyder yow that they also are men. If therefore they shal stand in neede of any thyng, we desyre yowe of all humanitie, and for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe theym with such thynges as they lacke, receauyng ageyne of them such thynges as they shalbe able to gyue yowe in recompense. Shewe yowre felues so towarde theym, as yowe wolde that wee and ovr subiectes shulde shewe ovr felues toward yowr seruantes, if at any tyme they shall passe by owre regions. Thus doinge, wee promesse yowe by the God of all thynges that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the lyfe and tranquillitie of owre kyngedomes, that we wyl with lyke humanitie accepte yowre seruantes if at any tyme they shal coomme to owre kyngdomes, where they shall as frendly and gently bee interteyned as if they were borne in ovr dominions, that we may hereby recompense the fauour and benignitie which yow haue shewed to ovr men. Thus after we haue desyred yow kynges and princes, etc. With all humanitie and fauour to interteyne ovr welbeloued seruantes, wee pray owre almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace which neuer shall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is the chiefe citie of owre kyngedome: In the yeare frome the creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iar, the. xiiii. day of the moneth, and seuenth yeare of owre reigne.

¶ *This letter was wrytten also in Greeke and dyuers other languages.*

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION V.

Other notable things as touching the Indies,

out of the Writings and Maps of

Francisco Lopez de Gómara,

and

Sebastian Cabot.

1552-1555.]

OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES AS TOVCHYNGE THE INDIES:

AND FYRST OF THE FOREKNOWLEAGE THAT THE POET SENECA HAD
of the fyndyng this newe worlde and other regions not then knowen.

FRANCISCO LOPES.



O speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof folowe effectually. Neuerthelesse althowgh such thynges as are spoken eyther by coniecture, or by th[e]instincte of nature, or by naturall reason, doo oftentimes take place and succede accordyngely, yet are not such coniectures to bee accounted as certeyne as prophesies reueled by the spirite of god, which wee ought entierly to beleue: but not so the other gathered only by certeine apparences, similitudes, reasons, and demonstrations: althowghe it bee greatly to bee maruailed to confyder howe they hytte the truthe sumtyme: which perhappes they doo accordyng to the prouerbe that sayth: He that speaketh much shall sumtimes stumble on the truth. All this I speake confydyryng the sayyng of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his woordes seeme in all poyntes to agree with the discoueryng of the Indies founde of late by Christofer Colon and the Spanyardes. The woordes of Seneca, are these,

*Venient annis
Sæcula feris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Tiphisque nouos
Detegat orbis,
Nec sit terris vltima Thyle.*

That is to saye: There shall coomme worldes in late yeaes, in the whiche the Ocean shall vnlose the bondes of thynges, and a great lande shall appeare. Also Typhis (that is nauigation) shall discouer newe worldes: and Thyle shall not bee the furthest lande.

Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide.



The Philosopher Plato wrytethe in his Dialoges of Timeus and Cricia, that in the owlde time there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agenst Affrica, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then Affrica and Asia: affirmyng that those landes are from thense continent and greate: And that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Affrica and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earthequake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande foonke and the people were drowned: Also that there remayned so much muddle of the drownyng or fynkyng of that Ilande, that that sea Atlantike coulde not bee sayled. Sum take this for a fable: and many for a trewe

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophesie.

So do the
Egiptians.

The woordes of
Seneca.

Ilande was in
owlde time cauled
Thyle as summe
thinke.

310

Plato sayth that
these kynges were
the sonnes of
Neptunus.
An earthquake.

Marcellus Ficinus.
Proclus.

Mexico or new
Spaine.

Hesperides.

Capo Verde

Ophir.

Tharsis.

Gorgonas.

Solinus.

Lands found by the

Carthaginenses.

Aristotell.

Theophrast.

Jonas fledde to
Tharsis.

The nauigations
of Salomon.

Bermeio is the
Arabian sea.

hyflorie, as doothe Marcellus Ficinus inducinge Proclus alleagynge certeyne hyflories of the Ethiopians wrytten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the fame to bee trewe. But there is nowe no cause why wee shulde any longer doubt or dispute of the Iland Atlantide, forasmuch as the discouerynge and conquest of the west Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wrytten of the fayde landes. In Mexico also at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynyng of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyse fay that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the fame: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Gorgonas from whense Hanon brought apes: Albeit in conferryng it with Solinus, there is sum doubt by reason of the nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he speaketh. Afswell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, shulde bee those which the Carthaginenses founde and forbodde theyr citifens to make any vyages thither or to inhabite the same as Aristotle and Theophraste doo rehearse where they wryte of the marueylous and vnknowne workes of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharsis, it is not knowen what or where they bee, although many lerned men as faynt Augustine and other haue searched what citie or lande Tharsis myght bee. Saynt Ierome who was experte in the Hebrewes tounge, fayth in many places vpon the prophetes that Tharsis is as much to fay as the sea: and that whereas it is wrytten that Jonas fledde to Tharsis, he wente to the sea by a longe iorney. Furthermore as concernynge the nauigations of Salomon, it is not to bee thought that his nauies fayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thither, it was requisite for them to fayle Westwarde departynge froine the sea of Bermeio: and not Eastward as they fayled. Ageine, the west Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamondes, and such other thynges as they brought in the trade of their nauigations.

¶ Of the colour of the Indians.



Ne of the marueylous thynges that god vseth in the composition of man, is coloure: whiche doubtlesse can not bee confydered withowte great admiration in beholding one to be white and another blacke, beinge coloures vtterlye contrary. Sum lykewyse to be yelowe whiche is betwene blacke and white: and other of other coloures as it were of dyuers liueres. And as these coloures are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one from another as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men are whyte after dyuers fortes of whytenesse: yelowe after dyuers maners of yelowe: and blacke after dyuers fortes of blackenesse: and howe from whyte they go to yelowe by discouerynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by affhe colour, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye lyke vnto the west Indians which are all togyther in general eyther purple, or tawny lyke vnto fodde quynses, or of the colour of chestnuttes or olyues: which colour is to them natural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Therefore in lyke maner and with suche diuersitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees diuerflye inclynge more or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse maruayle is it to confyder that men are whyte in Siuile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of chestnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, beinge all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyse that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath or on this fyde the same line as in Mexico, Yucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape faynt Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the fame Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of these coastes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vafchus Nunnez of Balboa discouered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme that suche varietie of coloures proccadeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee although wee bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why god hath so ordeyned it, otherwyse then to confyder that his diuine maiestie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotencie and wisidome in such diuersities of coloures as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke also in beastes, byrdes, and floures, where dyuers and contrary coloures are seene in one lyttle fether, or the leaues growynge owt of one lyttle stalke. An other thyng is also greatly to bee noted as touchynge these Indiañs. And this is, that theyr heare is not curle as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same clime: neyther are they balde excepte very feldome, and that but lyttle. All whiche thynges may giue further occasion to phylosophers to search the secretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

How colours dyffer
by degrees.

The coloure of the
west Indians.

Dyue[r]s sortes of
whyte and blacke.

311

Difference of
coloure in the
same clyme.

Rio de la Plata.

Peru.

Blacke men in
the west Indies.

From whense
proccadeth the
varietie of coloures.

Gods wysedome
and poure is seene
in his workes.

Culde heare and
baldues.

¶ Why they were cauled Indians.



Vm thynke that the people of the newe world were cauled Indians bycause they are of the colour of the Easte Indians. And althowghe (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it trewe that of India they were cauled Indians.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Asia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuyded into many kyngedomes confynyng with the same. From this greate India (cauled the East India) came great companys of men as wryteth Herodotus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene

the sea Bermeia (otherwyse cauled the redde sea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: al which regions that great Christian prince Prester Iohn dooth now possesse. The sayde Indians preuayled so much, that they vtterly changed the customes and name of that lande, and cauled it India: by reason wherof, Ethiopia also hath of longe tyme byn cauled India. And hereuppon came it that Arystotell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde autours sayd that India was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later dayes owre West India was so cauled of the sayde India of Prester Iohn where the Portugales had theyr trade. For the pylot of the caruell that was fyrste dryuen by forcyble wynde to an vnknown lande in the Weste Ocean, cauled the same India bycause the Portugales so cauled such landes as they had lately discouered Eastwarde. Chrystopher Colon also after the sayde pylot, cauled the west landes by the same name. Albeit, sum thattake Colonus for an expert Cosmographer, thynke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest and vnknown ende therof reachyng into the Weste vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe beneathe vs: affirmyng that when he fyrst attempted to discouer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Iland of Cipango, which fauleth on the parte of great China or Cathay as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And that he shulde sooner come thither by folowyng the course of the soonne Westwarde then ageynst the same: Albeit manye thynke that there is no suche Ilande, or at the leaste not yet knowne by that name: wheras also Marcus Paulus obserued no exacte deseription of the place eyther of this Ilande or of Cathay.

The colour of the East Indians.

East India.

Prester Iohn came owt of India to Ethiopie.

Ethiopia cauled India.

India not far from Spayne

Prester Iohn knowne to the Portugales.

At the furthest Easte, begynnieth the west.

The Iland of Cipango. China.

Cathay. To the East by the west. Marcus Paulus Venetus.

¶ The fyrste discoueryng of the Weste Indies.



Certeyne caruell faylyng in the weste Ocean abowt the coastes of Spayne, had a forcyble and continuall wynde from the East wherby it was dryuen to a land vnknown and not descrybed in any mappe or carde of the sea: and was dryuen styll alonge by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes vntyll it came to a hauen: where in a shorte tyme the moost parte of the maryners beinge longe before verye weake and feeble by reason of hunger and trauayle, dyed: So that only the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrst discouered to theyr myffortune, but the

resydue also that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruition of the same: not leauyng or at the least not openly publyshyng any memorie therof, neyther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeare it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theirs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune. I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hystories affirme that great thynges proceade and increase of smaull and obscure begynnynge, syth wee haue seene the same veresfyed in this fyndyng of the Indies being so notable and newe a thyng. Wee neede not bee curious to seeke the name of the pylot syth death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andalusia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other say that he was a Biscayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he wente or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes as I haue sayde before. Ageyne, sum there bee that say that he browght the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to sum other of the Ilandes cauled *de los Azores*. Yet doo none of them affirme any thyng, although they all affirme that the pylotte dyed in the house of Chrystopher Colon, with whome remayned al such wrytynges and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the sayde carauell, aswell of such thynges as he obserued both by lande and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discouered.

A harde begynnyng.

312

Great thynges proceadyng of smaule and obscure begynnynge. The pylotte that fyrst founde the Indies.

Mina.

¶ *What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies.*



Chrystopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as sum say) in Nerui, a yillage in the territorie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum thynke, of the house of the Pelestreles of Placentia in Lumbardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercise on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he became a master in makynge cardes for the sea, whereby he had great vantage. He came to Portugale to knowe the reason and description of the fouth coastes of Affrica and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugale as sum say: or as many say, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at fuche tyme as the fayde caruell arryued there, whose pylot suiorned in his house, and dyed also there, bequethynge to Colon his cardes of the description of fuche newe landes as he hadde founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowlege of the Indydes. Sum haue thought that Colon was well lerned in the Latine tounge and the science of Cosmographie: and that he was therby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whereof Marcus Paulus wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges of Timeus and Cricias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscovered beinge bygger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowlege what Arifotell and Theophrastus faye in theyr bookes of maruayles, where they wryte that certeyne marchauntes of Carthage faylyng from the streyghtes of Gibraltar towards the west and fouth, founde after many dayes a greate Ilande not inhabited: yet replenished with al thynges requisite, and hauynge many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly lerned: yet of good vnderstandynge. And when he had knowlege of the fayde newe landes by the information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to certeyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchyng the lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secrete and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named Iohn Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Rabida. So that I verely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges more that he leste vnspoken, were wrytten by the fayde Spanysh pylot that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowlege of the Indies, he wolde longe before haue communicate this secrete to his owne contrey men the Genueses, that trauayle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue comme into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtelesse he neuer thought of any such thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the fayd pylot who founde those landes by fortune, accordynge to the fayinge of Plinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Chrystian opinion is, to thinke that god of his finguler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookynge downe from heauen vpon the fonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym only knowen) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein most lyke vnto the shyppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was saued as by this caruel this newe worlde receaued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dryuen to these landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this smaule begynnyng, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

Thus also began Rychard chaunceler.

Colon was not much lerned.

The Ilande Atlantide. The lande found by the Carthaginenses.

313
Colon conferred with lerned men.

Chaunce and arte. A Christian opinion.

The caruel compared to the ship of Noye.

¶ *What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies.*



After the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanysh caruell that discouered the Indies, Chrystopher Colon purposed to feke the fame. But in howe muche more he desyred this, the lesse was his poure to accomplishe his desire. For, besyde that of him selfe he was not able to furnyshe one shyppe, he lacked also the fauour of a kynge vnder whose protection he might so enioy the riches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the fame from hym or defeate hym therof. And feinge the kynge of Portugale occupied in the conquest of Africa and the nauigations of the East which were then fyrst attempted, the kynge of

Castyle lykewyfe no lesse buyed in the warres of Granada, he sent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was also priue to this secrete) to practise with the kynge of Englande Henry the feuenth beinge very ryche

The kynge of Portugale. The kynge of Castile.

Kynge Henry the feuenth.

and without warres: promyfyng to brynge hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him fauour and furnyssh the hym with shippes to discouer the newe Indies wherof he had certeyne knowlege. But neyther here beinge able to brynge his sute to passe, he caused the matter to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonso the fyfte of that name: at whose handes he founde neither fauour nor money, forasmuch as the licenciade Calzadilla the byshop of Viseo, and one master Rodrigo men of credit in the science of Cofmographie, withstoode him and contended that there neither was nor coulde any golde or other ryches bee founde in the west as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sadde and penfue: but yet was not discouraged or despaired of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found. This done, he tooke shippinge at Lisburne, and came to Palos of Moguer where he communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this disclofyng the hole secretes of his mynde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryer of th[e] order of faynt Frances in Rabida, and wel lerned in Cofmographie) and declaryng vnto hym how by folowyng the course of the son by a temperate vyage, rich and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsayle to breake the matter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Eurique of Guzman a great lorde and very ryche: And also to Don Luys of Cerda the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouision of shippes well furnysshed in his hauen of Santa Maria. But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame and as a thyng diuifed of an Italian deceauer who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando and lady Ifabell princes of Castile: affirmynge that they wolde bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to fryer Ferdinando of Talauera the queenes confessor. Chrystopher Colon therfore, repayed to the court of the Catholyke princes, in the yeare. M. CCCC. lxxvi. [1486 A.D.] and delyuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request as concerninge the discoueryng of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyng all theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores owt of the kyngdome of Granada, which great enterpryse they had alrede taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothyng esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, found the meanes to declare his sute to such as had sumtymes priuate communication with the kynge. Yet bicause he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwyse credited then by the letter of a gray fryer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilla the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: desfryng hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterteynement, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttyng hym also in good conforte that he shulde at one tyme or other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilla, Colon was brought to the prefence and audience of the Cardinal Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbyffhop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues and autoritie with the kynge and queene, who brought hym before them after that he well perceaied and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his sute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst they tooke it for vayne and false that he promysed, neuerthelesse they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispatched when they had fynysht the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuyue his spirites, with hope to bee better esteemed and more fauourably to bee h[e]ard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who before tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothyng difmayde or discouraged when so euer he debated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde theyr reach and the compaffe of theyr knowlege: thinkyng the worlde to bee no bigger then the cages wherin they are brought vp and lyue. But to returne to Colon: So hotte and vrgente was the siege of Granada, that they presentely graunted hym his demaunde to feeke the newe landes, and to brynge from thense golde, fyluer, perles, precious stones, spices, and suche other rych thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kynge of al such landes as he shulde discouer, not doynge preiudice in any thyng to the kynge of Portugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the. xxx. [thirtieth] daye of Aprell the fame yeare that the cite was woonne. And wheras the fayde Catholyke princes had not mony presentely to dispatch Colon, Luys of S. Angell the kynges secretary of accomptes, lente theym fyxe quentes of marauedes, whiche in a grosse summe make. xvi. [sixteen] thoufande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so fmaule charges they haue increased the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endyng the conquest of the Moores who possessed the kyngedome of Granada eyght hundreth yeares, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feyght ageynst infidels and enemies of the fayth of Iesu Chryst.

Barnarde knewe not all thynges.

The duke of Medina Sidonia.
The duke of Medina Celi.

314

The conquest of Granada.

What men knowe not they count fantasticall.

Colon his interteinente.

The archbysshop of Toledo.
Colon is brought to the kynges presence

The iudgement of ignorant folkes.

Colon is dispatched.

Colon his rewarde

One quent is. x [ten] hundreth thousande.

By this traualye of Colonus in fo noble an enterpryse and fo harde fuceffe, dooth the fayinge of Plinie appere to be moft trew, wher in the preface of his natural hystory wrytten to th[e]mprouer Vespasian he writeth in this maner. *Res ardua vetustis nouitatem dare: Nouis, auctoritatem: aboletis, nitorem; obscuris, lucem: fastiditis, gratiam: dubiis, fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et natura sua omnia. Itaque etiam non affectis, voluisse abunde pulchrum atque magnificum est.* That is to say: It is a dyfficulte thyng to gyue newenes to owlde thynges, autoritie to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vse: fame to the obfoure: fauoure to the hatefull: credite to the doubtfull: nature to all, and all to nature. To fuch neuertheleffe as can not attayne to all thefe, it is greatly commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the fame.

315

In the fcu[t]chen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinando and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (fo cauled for theyr warres ageynst the infidels) thefe verfes were wrytten.

*Por Castilla y por Leon,
Nuevo mundo hallo Colon.*

That is: For Cafile and for Leon,
The newe worlde founde Colon.

¶ Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico.



The cite of
Mexico or
Temixtitan.

Golde and syluer.

Sylke.
Cotton.
Alam.
Woade.
Sugar.

Shelles for money.

Corne.

Beastes.

Haukyng and
huntyng.

Paintyng.

Women
sumptuously
appareled.

A warlike nation.

Captiues sacrificed
to Idoles.

Ewe Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South frome the lande of Floryda. This was subdued to th[e]mpire of Castile by the ryght noble gentelman Ferdinando Cortese the marquesse of the vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many prouinces conteynyng in them in maner innumerable cities, amonge which that is the chiefe which the Indians caule Mexico or Temixtitan, confystyng of more then fye hundreth thousand inhabitautes. It standeth in the myddest of a lake of falte water as doth Venece in the sea. The lake conteyneth fortie Perfian myles cauled Parafange, euery one confystyng of. xxx. [thirty] furlon[g]s, and more as fum say. In these regions is founde great plentie of golde, syluer, and precious stones, with innumerable other thynges both necessary for the lyfe of man and pleasaunt: as sylke, bombasine cotton, alame, Safferne, Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe and sylke is dyed. There is also such abundaunce of fuger, that certeyne Spanysshe shippes are yearely freighted therewith and bryng the same into Siuile from whence it is caryed in maner to all partes of Chrystendome. Th[e] inhabitants of Mexico are subtyle people, and vse much craft in theyr bargening. They haue not the vse of golde and syluer monye: but vse in the steade therof the halfe shelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous money they caule Cacao or Cacanguate. In maner al kyndes of corne are there very good [and] cheape: especially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wylde bores, Lyons, Leopardest, and Tygers, which beastes wander in maner in euery place. The region is moste commodious for haukyng and huntyng for the great abundaunce it hath of beastes and foules. But the people exercise all theyr cunnyng in makyng the images of theyr Idolatry, and in paintyng. Theyr woman are valiant: and sumptuous in theyr apparell and other tyrementes. For they fo rychely frynge and byfet the fame with perles, precious stones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly differyng from owrs. In this they expresse theyr mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwise th[e] use of letters. The nation is desyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vniuolated: But delyteth rather in ciuile and most cruell battayle amonge them selues then to lyue in peace and quietnesse. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eyther by submission or otherwyse, are partely facrificed to the Idoles, and the resydue gyuen to the fouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantase of his own brayne, and gyueth therto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lytle and lytle leaue of theyr barbarous fiercenesse: and with owre religion embrase better maners. For they nowe professe the fayth of Chryst, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

Vnderstande here that as touchyng thefe regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entitiled of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediatly after the Decades, although the printer haue also wrytten the thyrd decade* ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conquest of this Mexico, Francisco Lopez hath written a large booke in the Spanysshe tounge.

* See p. 187.—E. A.

¶ *Of Peru.*



The prouince cauled Peru, was also named noua Castilia by them that fyrste founde it. This region is the west parte of America: and is situate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceedinge from the West to the East. And southwarde begynneth five degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south. This is taken to bee the rycheft lande in golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, and spyces, that euer was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in such plentie that they make pyspots therof, and other vessells applyed to fylthy vses. But this is more to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled Collao was founde a house all couered with masse plates of golde. In theyr warres also theyr harnesse was of golde and syluer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrows, flynges, dartes, and pikes. Th[e] inhabitants are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceedyng frutefull, and yeldeth corne twyfe in the yeare. It is so florysshynge with many fayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleasaunt and necessary commodities, that it seemeth in maner an earthly Paradyse. It hath dyuers kyndes of beastes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenyng kynde. There are sheepe of such heyght that they vse them in the steade of horses. Some write that they are as bygge as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very softe and fine. Also that the ewes brynge furth lambes twyfe a yeare. The people are wytty and of gentyl behaouere. Cunnyng also in artes, faythful of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee discommended, faue that they are ignorant of Chryft: who neuerthelesse is nowe knowne vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe dayly more and more if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of owre lorde, and sende labourers into his vyneyarde.

¶ *Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer.*



This ryuer reacheth very farre in length and bredth: and is cauled Vruai in the Indian tounge. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Parauae. The fyrste that sayled into the ryuer of Plata, was Iohn Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kynge of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of these seas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche Iohn Dias named Martinus Gratius bycause a pylot of his so cauled, was buried there. This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer: and is dystant from the mouth of the fame about fortie leaques. As the fayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was suddeynly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that priuillie assayled hym. Wherwith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous crueltie was not satiffyed vntyll they had torne him in piefes and deuoured hym. But many yeares after, Th[e]mperoures maieftie and kynge of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sente forth Sebastian Cabot (a man of great courage and skylfull in Cosmographie, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the starres and the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Ilandes of Tharsis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Receauynge therefore his commission and proceedinge forward on his vyage, he arryued by chaunce at this Ilande: The cause wherof was that the principall vessell was lost by shipwracke, and the men that saued theyr lyues by swymmyng were receaued into other shyppes. Perceauynge therefore that by reason of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the fayde Ilande, and theruppon to conueygh his vyttayles to land, to prepare his soldiers to th[e] inuasion, to plant colonyes, and to erect fortresses by the ryuers fyde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was riche in golde and syluer. Which thyng dyd so encorage him, that without respect of perel he thought best to expugne it by one meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchynge the ryuer, Sebastian Cabote made relation that he neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For whereas it fauleth into the sea, it conteyneth. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot sayled vp the same into the lande for the space of three hundreth and fiftie leaques as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great depth, may hereby bee confydered that manye greate ryuers faule into it: so that the chanel can not bee shalowe that conteyneth such abundance of water, and suche plentie of good and great fysshes. For there is in maner no fyssh in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. As soone as the Spaniards were set alande, they made a prooffe if the foyle were frutefull to beare corne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commytynge the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof

316

Peru is the rycheft lande that is knowen.

A house couered with gold.
Harnes of golde.
A frutful region.

Great sheepe.

The dewtie of Chrystian princes.

Parauae.

Iohn Dias Solis

The Ilande Martinus Gratius.

The viage of Sebastian Cabote to the ryuer of Plata.

Tharsis.
Ophir.
Cipango.
Cathay.

The ryuer of Plata.

317

Marielous
fruitfulnes.
Mountaynes
conteynyng golde
and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.
Men with
deformed legs.

Malacha.
Tachola.
The Ilandes of
Malucha.
The Iland of
Samotra.
Spyces.
Calocut.
Ceilam.
Cathay.
China.
Precious stones.
Sylke.
Cautan.

The way to the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the north sea.

The Spanyardes.

Gasper
Cortefreales.

318

Insula
Cortefreales.

Snowe and Ise.

Furres.

two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowyng: wherin sume beinge deceaued and mistakyng the thyng, haue wrytten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fystie thousande and two. The like fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermore th[e]inhabitautes declared that not farre from that place, ther are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to bee other mountaynes no lesse frutefull of syluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. Th[e]inhabitautes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherin they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of breade of Maizium. There are sheepe of suche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as sum say. Theyr woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the synnesse of fylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyfference, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of owre regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr coloure therof) are blackyshe or purple of the coloure of fine Iren or fleete. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyriete and legges are lyke the legs and riete of the foule cauled the oystreche.

¶ Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.



IN this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngedomes: as the kyngedomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Erancangui, Daufian, Capelam, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wryters Aurea Chersonesus: whose chiefe cite is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Vnder this kyngedome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whereof the principall are these: Iaua the greater, Iaua the lesse, Polagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Gilolo, with infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha, is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Taprobana, in the which are the kyngedomes of Pedir, Biraen, Pazer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and all the other cauled Maluche, bryng furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome, nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spyces excepte pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calcut and the Ilande of Ceilam. All these fortes of spices are caryed to Malacha to bee foulded. But the greatest parte of them is caryed to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of precious stones. The people are very subtile and ryche. They are all appareled eyther in fylke or cloth, or vestures of other woorkemanshippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They do not gladly permitte the Portugales or other straungers to trafike in theyr kyngedome: whose moste famous place vpon the sea syde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, cauled of the owlde wryters the sea of Sina.

¶ Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies.



MANy haue trauallyd to search the coast of the lande of Laborador, aswell to th[e]intente to knowe howe farre or whyther it reachethe, as also whether there bee any passage by sea through the same into the sea of Sur and the Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the Equinoctiall line: thinkyng that the waye thither shulde greatly bee shortened by this vyage. The Spanyardes as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices pertyne, dyd fyrst seeke to synde the same by this way. The Portugales also hauyng the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauallye to synde the same: although hetherto neyther anye such passage is founde or the ende of that lande. In the yere a thousande and fye hundreth, Gasper Cortefreales, made a vyage thither with two carauelles: but founde not the streight or passaghe he sought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Cortefreales, lyinge in the L. [fifty] degrees and more: and browght from that lande about three score men for slaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the houge quantitie of snowe and Ise. For the sea is there frofen exceedyngly. Th[e]inhabitautes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare braselettes and hoopess of syluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and

dyers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in wynter, and owtwarde in foommer. This apparell they gyrde to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton or the fynewes of fyffhes and beastes. They eate fyffhe more then any other thyng, and especially salmons, although they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houfes of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the fleade of tyles, couer them with the skynnes of fyffhes and beastes. It is sayde also that there are grifes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are white. To this and the Ilandes abowt the same, the Britons are accustomed to reforte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and borne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norwayes also sayled thither with the pylot cauled Iohn Scoluo: And the Englyfhe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccalaos, is a greate tracte: and the greateft altitude therof, is. xlviij. [forty-eight] degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the fyrst that browght any knowlege of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the feuenth, he furnysshed two shippes at his owne charges or (as sum say) at the kynge, whome he perswaded that a passage might bee founde to Cathay by the north seas, and that spices myght bee brought from thense foner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tracte of Islande vpon the cape of Laborador at. lviij. [fifty-eight] degrees: affyrmyng that in the monethe of Iuly there was such cold and heapes of Ice that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. [sixty] degrees, the longest day is of. xviii. [eighteen] houres. But confydeyng the coulde and the straungenes of the vnknown lande, he turned his course from thense to the West, folowynge the coast of the lande of Baccalaos vnto the. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] degrees, from whense he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Brytons and Danes haue sayled to the Baccalaos: and Iaques Cartier a frenche man was there twyfe with three galeons: as one in the yere. xxxiiii. [thirty-four] and the other in the. xxxv. [thirty-five] and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. [forty-fifth] degrees to the. li. [fifty-first] beinge as good a lande as Fraunce, and al thynges therein commune to such as fyrst possesse the same.

Of these lands, Iacobus Gastaldus wryteth thus: The newe lande of Baccalaos, is a coulde region, whose inhabytauntes are Idolatours and praye to the soonne and moone and dyers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rustical. For they eate fleshe and fyffhe and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes also they eate mans fleshe priuilye so that theyr Caciqui haue no knowlege therof. The apparell of both the men and woman, is made of beares skynnes, although they haue fables and marternes, not greatly estemed bycause they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in foommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Brytons and Frenche men are accustomed to take fyffhe in the coaste of these landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which th[e] inhabitauntes caul Baccalaos wherof the lande was so named. Northwarde from the region of Baccalaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beares and wylde bores. Th[e] inhabitauntes are Idolatoures and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccallaos. In all this newe lande, is nyether citie or castell: but they lyue in companies lyke heardes of beastes.

¶ *The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda.*



He gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquena Iohn Ponce of Leon beinge discharged of his office and very ryche, furnysshed and sente foorth two caruels to seeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or springe whose water is of vertue to make owld men younge. Whyle he trauayled fyxe monethes with owtragioues desyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he fought, and coulde fynde no token of any such fountayne, he entered into Bimini and discouered the lande of Florida in the yere. 1512. on Easter day which the Spanyardes caule the floryfshyng day of Pascha, wherby they named that lande

Florida. And supposyng that great ryches myght be browght from thense, he returned into Spayne and couenaunted with kynge Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by the intercession of Nicolas de Quando and Peter Nunez de Gufman, the kynge dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bemini and Florida, but also sente furthe with hym three shippes from Siuile toward his second vyage in the yere. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Guacana otherwyse cauled Guadalupe, and sent to lande certeyne of his men with the landresses of the shyppes: whom the Canibales lyng in ambuffhe, assayled with theyr inuenemed arrowes: and slaying the most parte, caryed away the women. With this euyll begynnyng, Iohn Ponce departed frome henfe to Boriquen and from thense to Florida wher he went alande with his souldyers to espie a place moste commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians comynge furth ageynst hym to defende the entrance,

Fysshe.

Gryfes.
Beares.
The britons.

Sebastian Cabot.

The land of Baccallaos.
The vyage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth.

Ise in Iuly.

Baccallaos.
Brytons.
Danes.
Iaques Cartier.

The people of Baccallaos

Fysshyng for tunnyes.
Laborador.

Iohn Ponce.
Water of great vertue, of this reade in the Decades.

319

Bemini.

Guacana.
The Canibales.

Boriquena.

The death of
Iohn Ponce.

The land of
Floryda.

Ferdinando de
Soto.

The valient
myndes of the
Spanyarden.
The thyrde
attempte of the
conqueste of
Florida.

Certeine fryers
attempte the
conquest onely
with wordes,
but with euyll
successe.

The fryers are
slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of
disgrading

affayled the Spanyarden fiercely and flewe and wounded many of them. At which confliete also he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of Cuba: and so endynge his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheffe he had before begotten at faynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This Iohn Ponce had before fayled with Chrystopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yere. 1493. He was a gentel souldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nycolas de Ouando that conquested the fame. The region of Floryda is a poynt or cape of lande reachynge into the sea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notorious place amonge the Indians by reason of many Spanyarden that haue bin slayne there. But wheras by fame this Floryda was esteemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men defyred the conquest therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly inryched by th[e]mprisonment of kyng Atahaliba) attempted a vyage thither with a good bande of men, and spent fyue yere in seekynge of golde mynes, supposynge that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym without inhabytynge that lande, in the which the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyarden not discouraged by these myfaduentures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentelmen defyred this conquest in the yere. 1544. amonge whom was Iulyan Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterpryse. But neyther th[e]mprour beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Don Phylippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste. Neuerthelesse not vtterly contemnyng the matter which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyse bee browght to passe, they sent thither fryer Luys Cancell of Baluastro with other fryers of the order of faynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuerte the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Chryst and obedience to Th[e]mperoure, onely with wordes. The fryer therfore goynge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yere. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachynge, many of the Indians of the sayd Florida reforted to the sea syde, where without gyyunge audience to his wordes, they caryed hym away with three other of his companions and dyd eate them, whereby they suffered martyrdom for the fayth of Chryst. The resydue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe and kept them selues for confessours as sum say. Many that fauoure th[e]intente of the fryers, doo nowe confyder that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be brought to owre frendshippe and religion. Neuerthelesse, that if it coulde so haue byn browght to passe, it had byn better. There came of late from that shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the sayd fryers in one of theyr temples.

320

¶ *An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations about the same.*



He anciente wryters diuided this owre worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thowghe the same had byn better by the sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerfeth and passeth through the lande from the Ocean to the sea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Iafet: also that he fayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres. In

fine we nowe conclude that the three sayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Melpomeme, scorneth them that make Europe and Asia equall: affirmynge that Europe in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it passeth them in latitude, wherin he speaketh not greatly owt of square. But to speake more of this elfwhere, not perteynynge to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherfeth Pomponius Mela in his thyrde booke. Strabo in the fyrst boke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Higinius also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe Solinus doo erre in mistakinge the names of the seas, supposynge that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea without participacion of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus fayled three or foure tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde

Noe gaue names
to Africa, Asia,
and Europa.

Asia.

Europe.

The hole earthe
is an Ilande.

The Caspian sea.
Caliz is a ryuer.
Nauigations from
the red sea to
East India.

fea (cauled the goulfe of Arabic or Bermeio) presented to the fame kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thenfe. Kynge Iuba also proued this nauigation from Caliz to India as wryteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the nauigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knowen and frequented, althowgh not so much as at this present, the fame beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie or trauayle by the coastes of hotte regions. But to fayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doubtlesse a difficult and daungerous thyng, wherof is no memory amonge the owlde autours fauyng onely of one shyppe as Plinie and Mela doo wryte, reherfyng the testimony of Cornelius Nepos who affirmed that the kynge of Sueuia presented to Quintus Metelius Celer Lieuetenaunt of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dryuen by tempest into the fea of Germanie: if the same were not of the lande of Laborador or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in theyr colour. For sum say that lykewyse in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbarossa, certeyne Indians were browght in a Canoa from the cite of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermore pope Eneas Syluius wryteth that the Sarmation fea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian fea. Nowe also there is great knowlege and experience how the nauigations and passage may be attempted by Norwaye and other north regions vnder the fame north, and to folow that coaste to the fouth fea of Sur and keepe that course by the tracte of China. Olanus Gothus the archbysshop of Upsalia and borne in Gothlande, hath wrytten muche of these north regions and nauigations by the north fea. In the tract of this vyage by the north fea, are the Ilandes of Islande and Gruntlande, althowgh there is doute whether Gruntlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is. xl. [forty] leaques, from Lapponia, and sumwhat more frome Finmarchia a lande of Scandinauia in Europe. The people of Gruntland are stronge men and of coomly stature. They sayle with smaull shippes or barkes covered close aboue with lether or beastes hydes for feare of the coulde and fyfshes. Gruntlande as sum say, is fyftie leaques from the north parte of the firme lande of the West Indies by the lande of Laborador. But it is not yet knowen whether this land be continent or adherent with Gruntlande, or if there bee any streight of fea betwene them. If all bee one firme lande adioynge by any parte, then the two great partes of the world seeme to ioyne togyther abowt the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leaques from Finmarche to Gruntland: wherby it may appere that althowgh there be any such straight diuidyng them, yet are they neyghbours and not farre in funder. Furthermore from the land of Laborador by th[e]accompt of the pilottes, is abowte foure hundreth leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyse cauled the Ilandes of Soria lyinge in the West Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompte the lande of Laborador is abowte fide hundreth leaques from Irland, and fixe hundreth from Spayne.

The vyage to India by the north seas.

The hystorie of Cornelius Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in Lubec

The Sarmatian sea.

Ilande. Gruntlande. Lapponia. Finmarchia. Gruntlande.

The distance from Gruntlande to the lande of Laborador.

321

[Narrowness] of the streight if it be.

The Ilandes of Soria, or Azores. From laborador to Irland.

That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiere to fiere ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e] opinion of the owlde writers.



ALt the ancient philosphers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from owre hemisphere or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antipodes by reason of the burnt line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean fea lyinge in the mydde way, wherby this vyage shulde be hyndered and impossible, as Macrobius wryteth at large in his commentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chrystyan phylosophers, Clemente wryteth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean: and other wryters of later tyme, seeme to confirme the fame. In deede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, aswell for that euer presuppofyng the thyng to bee impossible they neuer attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a nauigation to bryng them knowlege herof, as haue the Spaniardes to passe the Ocean vnto them: In so much that at this present this vyage is by dayly experience so well knowen vnto the Spanyardes and Portugales, that they can in maner go thither blynd-fielde, contrarye to th[e] opinion of those phylosophers. I wyll here omytte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynaryly frome Spayne to India, and speake onely of the shyppe Victoria which compassed about the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or three Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, wherby is declared the ignorance of the fage antiquite. In this nauigation, they founde many fecreates, amonge the which this is strange and woorthy memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the fea, lay on their backes and turned their faces vpwarde: but the gentyles lay ail groouelyn

Macrobius.

Clement.

The Indians are Antipodes.

The shyppe Victoria.

A straunge thinge.

Shadowes
towards the south.

The sonne rysynge
on the ryght hande.

The vyage of
Magellanus.

Antipodes.
Guinea.
The north starre.
The needle and
compasse.

322

Septentriones, are
the vii. starres.
that are sene by
Charles wayne or
the great beare.
Argo of Iason.

Vlysses.
Iohn Sebastian.

on theyr bellyes. They also perceaued the foonne and moone to keepe a contrary courfe from that they doo here, and euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges towards the fouth: whiche thynges also was knowne to sum of the owlde wryters. For this is manifeft that the fonne ryfeth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtye degrees on th[e] other fyde the Equinoctiall: fo that lookynge towards the fonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: wherby it appeareth to bee trew that they affirme. They consumed three yeares lackynge. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes in goynge and commynge, and lofte a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feaste of Easter on Mundayes: fo that they ouerleaped a day (not faylynge in the calender) and kept no iust rekenynge of the bifextile. The cause wherof whyle some haue searched by phylofophie, they haue erred more then the maryners. They fayled. x. [ten] thoufande leaques and. xiiii. [fourteen] myles by theyr accompte, albeit they shulde haue gonne lesse, if theyr way hadde line ryght forth. But as they were enforced partely of necessitie, and partely to fynde that they fowght, they made many wyndynges and turnynges. They trauerfed the Equinoctiall line fyxe tymes without burnynge, contrary to th[e] oppinion of the owlde autours. They remayned fyue monethes in the Iland of Tidore, whose inhabitants are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, wherby it is apparenre that wee maye communicate with them. And although they lost the fyght of the northe starre, yet dyd they euer dyrecre theyr courfe therby. For beinge in the. xl. [forty] degrees of the fouth, they fawe the nedle of the compasse stande as directly towards the north as it dooth in the fea Mediterraneum: although sum fay that it loofeth his force sumwhat. About the poynt of the Southe or pole Antartike, they fawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure starres lyke vnto a croffe with three other ioynynge therunto, which refemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the fouth exeltre of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the fleete of Salamon, but greater was this of Th[e]mproours maieftie Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argos of Iason whiche the antiquitie placed amonge the starres, fayled but a lyttle way and a shorte vyage in comparafon of the shippe Victoria whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arfenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of fo famous an enterpryfe. The daungours, paynes, traуayles and laboures of Vlyffes were nothyng in respecte of fuche as Iohn Sebastian susteyned: whereby in the feu[t]chion of his armes in the stead of a monstous or inuincible beaft, he woorthely gaue the woorld with this circumfcription: PRIMVS CIRCVMDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrst that hath compaffed me about.

As touchynge the needle of the compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that faylynge as farre fouth as Cap. de Bona Speranza, the poynt of the needle styll respected the northe as it dyd on this fyde the Equinoctiall, fauyng that it sumwhat trembeled and declyned a lytle, wherby the force seemed sumwhat to be diminished, fo that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

¶ Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof.



The chiefeft partes
of the shyppe.

Magnes.

The Spanyardes
and Portugales.
Why the needle
turneth to the
north.

The Iland of
Tercera.

The Iland of
Magnet.

Peakynge much of nauigations. it myght seme a thyng vndecent to omit to fay sumwhat of the needle of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderynge coniectures, euen fo shulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the fame, forasmuche as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courfes were directed by the needle and compasse, which owght therefore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principall instrumentes of faylynge. The fyrst that founde the needle and the vse therof (as Blondus and Maphes Girardus doo wryte) was one Flavius of Malpha a cite in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Neopolitans glory to this day: and that by good reason, forasmuch as a citisen and neyghbours chyld of theyrs, was the fyrst fynder of fo commodious and profytable a thyng, to the fecreate wherof fo many excellent wyttes as were before hym coude not attayne, although they hadde both iren and the lode stone (cauled *Magnes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto Flavius, the chiefe commendation is dew to the Spanyardes and Portugales by whose daylye experience, the fame is brought to further perfection, and the vse therof better knowen: although hytherto no man knoweth the cause why the iren touched with the lode stone, turneth euer towards the north starre, as playnely appeareth in euery common dyall. In maner all wryters attribute this to a fecreate and hyd propertie, sum of the north, and other of the mixture or naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the fayde stone. If it bee the propertie of the north or north starre, then (as the pylots make theyr rekenynge) neyther shulde the needle make anye chaunge or dyffer in northeftynge, (as in faylynge northeaste without the Ilande of Tercera beinge one of the Ilandes of Azores or Soria and two hundreth leaques from Spayne towards the West East-west) neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as fayth Olanus) in passynge from the Ilande of Magnet, that is, the Iland of the lode stone, which is vnder or neare aboute the northe pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what fo euer bee the cause, trewth it is that the nedle turneth euer to the north although wee fayle about the fouth

We owght therefore to vnderstande that the lode stone (whiche wee falsely caule the adamant) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum fay. The iren that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceafeth to turne dyrectly towarde the north, as is to see in the dyals that are made to the foonne. The rubbyng of the fiete ferueth for the fouth: as doo lykewyse the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note the quarters of the lode stone.

Note here that yf a piece of this stone, of the byggenesse of an egge or a walnutte, or more or lesse, bee broken into manye smaule pieces as bygge as dyce or leffe, yet euery of thofe smaule piefes, hath heade, foote, and armes, as is fayde here before.

¶ *The Situacion and byggenes of the earth.*

323



T may to sume seeme a vaine thyng to feke the situacion and byggenes of the earth, although it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situate in the myddeste of the worlde as the center of the same, beinge enuironed and as it were borne vp of the sea which compaffeth it about. Mela sayth that the pyllers that susteyne it, are Easte, West, North, and South: which sayyng Dauyd confirmeth in the C.vi. [106th] psalme. These foure are the most notable pyllers or sustentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordyng to the motions wherof, all vyages are ruled on the earthe, frome whense they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the dyuers qualities of vapoures and exhalacions rayfed by the sonne and otherwyse. Eratosthenes put none other sustentacions then the north and south poles, and parteth the earth by the course of the foonne: which particion Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreable to reason. The poles are firme and immouable as an exeltre about the which the heauen moueth and is therby susteyned. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with also the largenes of heauen and commensuration of the earth. As for exemple: the streyght of Gibraltar, (accomptyng from Spayne) is from the north, or to speake more playnely from the poynte of the earthe that is or may be directly vnder the north pole, about. liiii. [fifty-four] degrees which make. ix. hundreth and. lxxx. [980] leaques according to the common computacion of the Cosmographers and Astronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees: which added to the other. liiii. [fifty-four] make. [1x]xxx. [ninety] degrees, beinge the hole distance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diuydyng the earthe by the myddeste, and the quarter or fourthe parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compasse and how many leaques or myles it conteynethe, is easy to perceaue accomptyng euery degree. lx. [sixty] myles. But that yowe may the better perceaue what degrees are, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat more hereof.

The sea.
The wyndes

The poles.

The measuryng the circumference of the earth

¶ *What degrees are.*



I the owlde tyme theyr maner was to measure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, pafes, and fiete, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wryters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chryst, that maner of accompte was receaued as the best. Ptolomie diuided all the hole body and face of the land and sea into three hundreth and fixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: so that the hole globe of the baule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lykewyse to euery degree three score myles, whiche make. xvii. [seuenteen] Spanyfhe leaques and a halfe: In such sorte that the globe or baule of the earth measured directly by any of the foure partes of the same, conteyneth in circuite syxe thousand and two hundreth leaques. This computacion and meafuryng, is so certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experience, so much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that th[e]inuention hereof was iudged so dyfficult by Iob and the preacher, that no man had founde the measure of limites of the same. They name thofe degrees of longitude, that they accompte from foonne to foonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the East to the Weste by the myddle of the globe or baule of the earth. These can not well be obserued, forasmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no syxt or permanent signe whereunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or instrumentes. For the foonne, althowghe it be a moste clare signe, yet doothe it dayely change the place of ryfynge and faulyng, and keepethe not the same course the day folowyng as the Astronomers affirme. And although there is no number of them that in trauallyng strange landes and seas haue spent theyr gooddes and almoste theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longiudyng without errour as are found the degrees of latitude and heygth, yet is there none that hytherto hath any trewe knowlege therof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the south, the commensuration or meafuring

Ptolome founde degrees.

Longitude and Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of Longitude.

The degrees of Longitude are not known.

The degrees of latitude.

324
The north starre.The circuite of
the earth.The inferior
hemispherie.Hyperborei.
Hypernocii.

wherby, is most certeine by reason that the north starre is perman[nt] and remayneth styll in one place, or at least moueth about the pole which is theyr firme and stedfast signe wherby they accompte theyr degrees and directe theyr vyages. By the degrees therefore accompted by these most certeine signes, is vnfailably measured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuidyng the same into foure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, are. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other. lxxx. [ninety.] Ageyne on the contrary side, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reason aswell of th[e] inferioure hemisphery wherof a great parte is knowen vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifest relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the south pole beinge the other exeltree of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodotus sayth) yf there bee any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is fuche as are vnder the north) ther is also of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhappes are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghtes of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what these landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowlege vntyl sum man shal haue compassed about the lands vnder the south pole as did Iohn Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotacions of the Indies, haue I translated owt of the bookes of Franciscus Lopes, wrytten in the Spanysshe tounge to Th[e]mperours maiestie: and partly also owt of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

¶ *A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth.*

The eye is
deceaued.

A ryng.

A circle.

Any ignorant men thynke that the earthe is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in manye thynges not only of the woorkes of nature, but also of fuche as are doonne by the flight and arte of man. For they say: Howe can it bee rounde forasmuche as though a man trauayle neuer so farre eyther by land or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line without any such circuite or compassyng, ascendyng or discendyng, as perteyneth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is grose and simple, proceadyng of the narrownesse of the vnderstanding of such as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be answered with this simple demonstration. In a ryng that serueth for the synger of a mans hande, the space of halfe an ynche or lyttle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a ryng or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althowghe it bee not so in deede, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to confyst of a cyrcle, sithe the partes must needes bee conformable to the hole, confystyng of such vniforme partes as are in mathematical. But not to wander to farre in these subtylties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so shal a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne forme: As for exemple, imaginyng a circle whose diameter (that is measure from fyde to fyde) confysteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may seeme a ryght line, as yowe may otherwyse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere that the large circumference of the earth well confyded, a much greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man conceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he contynually to walke vppon a playne forme forasmuch as euery part of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for a simple and briefe demonstration and induction for fuche as are desyrous to seeke furth to knowe the truth herof.

¶ *What credit ought to bee gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.*



He moſte auncient wryter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wryteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous ſtraungenes and noueltie of ſuche thynges as are deſcrybed in owre bookes, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to owre hyſtorie, let hym with ryght iudgement conſider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he ſhall the eaſelyer perceauē the woorkes of nature and approue owre wrytynges. For owre ayer dyffereth ſo much from theyrs, that it myght ſeeme incredible if experience were not more certeyne then doubtfull reaſon. In ſume regions

the coulde is ſo extreme that greate ryuers are ſo froſen, that laden cartes and armies of men paſſe ouer the immouable iſe. Wine alſo and other moiſt thynges are ſo conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is more marueylous, that th[e] extreme partes of ſuche apparell as menne weare, are ſo bytten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are alſo dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural bryghtneſſe: and braſen veſſelles and images are broken. Sumtime by reaſon of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther ſeene or harde in ſuch regions. Many other thynges more marueylous then theſe hath nature wrought, which may ſeeme incredible to the ignorant: but eaſy to ſuch as haue experience. In the furtheſt partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the ſonne is ſo extreme abowt noone, that noo man can ſe hym that ſtandeth by hym, by reaſon of the thicke ayer cauſed by the vapoures and exhalations rayſed by the heate. None can go without ſhoos but haue theyr fiete ſuddeynly blyſtered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrſt, dye immediatly except they haue drynke at hande, the heate ſo faſte conſumeth the moyſture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in braſen veſſelles, is ſodde in ſhort ſpace by the heate of the ſonne without other fyre. Yet they that are borne and brought vp in ſuch regions, had rather wyllyngely ſuſteyne theſe incommodities then bee inforced to liue otherwyſe: ſuch a loue of theyr natiue countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: cuſtome of continuance from younge yeares being alſo of force to ouercomme the maliciouſneſſe of the ayer. Neuertheleſſe, theſe places of ſuch contrary natures wherby ſuche ſtrange effectes are cauſed, are not farre in ſunder or diuided by any great diſtance. For, from the maryſhes of Meotis or Meotides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue fayled with ſhyps of burden to Rodes in the ſpace of ten dayes: and from theſe to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whence paſſynge through Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue arryued in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the couldeſt partes of the worlde to the hotteſt regions, is no more then. xxiiii. [twenty-four] continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is ſuch in places of ſo ſmaule diſtance, it is no marueyle that the cuſtomes and maners of lyuynge of the people of thoſe regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and ſuch thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owres.

325

The diuerſitie of ayer in dyuers regions.

Extreme colde.

Extreme heate

The force of education.

Extreme heate and colde in A ſmaule diſtance.

From Scythia to Ethiopia.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VI.

Vannuccio Biringuccio.

Pyrotechnia.

[First printed in 1540.]

THE PREFACE TO THE BOOKE OF METALS.



O this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thought good to adde the booke of metals, for three causes especially me mouynge: whereof the fyrst is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vndecent to reade so much of golde and syluer, and to knowe lyttle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most defyred, but also such without the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer without many aduersities, forasmuch as pouertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported by ryches, fyth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is become the slaue to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the defyre that men had to golde, but for th[e] innocencie of luyng in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it crueltie by breakynge the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the courte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and syluer the feedes of al mischiefes and angels of such a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good confydera-

tion) paynted blynde, affirmynge also that of hym golde and syluer haue receaued the propertie to blynde the eyes of men. But fyth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to seke ayde by that which was sumtymes a myfchefe, it resteth to vse the matter as doo cunnyng phisitians that can mynister poyson in proportion with other thynges in such forte qualysyinge the malicioufnesse therof, that none shall therby bee intoxicated. Forasmuch therefore as golde and syluer haue obteyned this prerogatiue that they are suche necessarie euyls which the lyfe of man can not lacke without detriment, not only they but other metals also perhappes more necessarie althowgh not so precious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knowen then only by name, fyth they are th[e] instrumentes of all artes, the prices of all thynges, the ornamentes of al dignities, and not the least portion of nature, wherby the contemplation of them is no lesse pleasaunte then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyll speake of the seconde cause: which is, that if in trauaylyng strang[e] and vnknown countreys any mans chaunce shalbe to arryue in such regions where he may knowe by th[e] information of th[e] inhabitants or otherwyse, that suche regions are frutefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum iudgement to make further searche for the same. The thyrde cause is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englande be ful of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men suppose, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue any greate skyll thereof, or any thyng wrytten in owr tounge, whereby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and fyndyng of the same: as the lyke ignorance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cosmographie and nauigations vntyll I attempted accordyng to the portion of my talent and simple lernynge to open the fyrst dore to the enterance of this knoweledge into owre language, wherin I wolde wyshe that other of greater lernynge wolde take some peynes to accomplysse and bringe to further perfection that I haue rudely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaste I bee iniurious to any man in aserybyng to my selfe the trauayles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knoweledge of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hole woorke of Pyrotechnia wherof I fynnyshed. xxii. [twenty-two] chapitures nowe more then three yeares fence, and leste the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttinge to speake of other ingrattitudes) I was therby discouraged to proceade any further in that woorke. Neuerthelesse, fythe this hystory of the Indies hath ministred occasion to intreate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne translated three of the fyrst chapitures of that booke, which seeme most necessary to bee knowen in this case. And hereof to haue fayde thus much in maner of a preface it may suffice.

326

OF THE GENERATION OF METALLES AND
THEIR MYNES WITH THE MANER OF FYNDINGE THE SAME:

WRITTEN IN THE ITALIEN TOUNGE BY *VANNVCCIUS BIRINGVCZIUS*
IN HIS BOOKE CAVLED *PYROTECHNIA*.

To his louynge frende Master Bernardino Moncellese, greeting.



The mineral tree.

The mynes doo
growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of metals.

327

Signes and tokens
of metals.

Hereas I promysed yow to wrytte of the natures of metalles in particular, I am nowe inforced to declare euery thing in generale, and especially of the places of their generation and their order, with the forme and maner of woorkynge in the same, and the instrumentes therto perteyninge. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes of metalles are founde in the mooste partes of the worlde, more or lesse according to the diligence of witti searchers: and shew them selues standinge in the grounde in maner in fuche forte as the veynes of bludde are disparted in the bodies of lyuing beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde forth diuers wayes. Wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches planted in the myddeste of the base of a mountayne, from the whyche are diriued dyuers and many bouwes and branches, sum greate and sum smaule, muche like vnto verrye trees that are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge, they euer ingrofe them selues and reache towarde the heauen, conuertynge into theyr nature the mooste disposed and neare matter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the highest parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr selues with manifeste apperaunce, putinge furthe in the steade of bouwes and floures, certeyne sumofites of blewe or greene coloure, or marchasites with smaule veynes of ponderous matter, or fuche other compositions of tinctures. And when by this means they shewe them selues vnto us, we may make firme coniecture that fuche mountaynes are minerall, and that accordinge to the demonstracions they shewe more or lesse, they are richer or porer of myne. Therefore the searchers, according to th[e] apperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto them: and with hope and securitie of profecte, apply al their possible diligence with witte and expenes to digge or gette owte fuche thynges as the signes and owtewarde apperaunces declare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn exalted to the highest degree of riches. Wheras therfore by this meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the ey[e]s of confideration and right Iudgemente, and see the places where the mineralles are ingendered and comprehende in maner their quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordynge therevnto, wheras they shulde otherwyse wander by chaunce, because no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good iudgement, and shulde make searche for the same neuer so curiously by litle and litle. It shal therfore in this case be necessary to folow the certificat and apperaunces of signes, and to encounter the same as nere as may be, with ey[e]s and eares euer attentiu where they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by enquyringe of shepardes and other anciente inhabitauntes of such regions in the which mineralles are engendered. And this I speake the rather for that I am perswaded that at

the first sight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrenesse and roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great abundance of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good iudgemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knoweledge that metall is containd in such mountaynes, vntill the searchers haue with charges and trauail caused miners in sundry places to discouer the same. And therefore I also beleue that one man although be bee neuer so stronge, wyttie, and farre castinge, shall not be able in a newe and straunge contreye, to searche by smaule portions not onely all the mountaynes of one or moo prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the secretes of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum conyderinge the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte, it shuld be requysite to worke by the arte of Negromancie, which I thynke to be a fable without further knoweledge. But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this their arte helpeth them no further in the worke after that they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say. Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begynnyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddest and the ende to brynge the same to further perfection, as to gette it owte, to brynge it to fusion or meltyng, and to purifie or poure it from drosse, which doubtlesse it shulde haue poure to doo if it may bee beleaued that it can doo the other. But forasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that they owght not or can not be practised of al men, and also perhappes bycause such maner of woorkyng is not knowen, I thinke it not good to be vsed: but thinke rather by good reason that this arte is so much the more to be omytted and contemned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnyng of dyggyng of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god that it may please hym to be presente with his ayde to owre doubtfull and traualous worke. Lettyng passe therefore this deuylishe diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I exhorte yowe to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes minystrd vnto yowe by the benignitie of nature, bothe grounded vpon the foundation of truth and approued by th[e] experience of many practicionars, not conyfyng in woordes or promysse of thynges vayne and incomprehenible. With these signes therefore shall yow searche the bankes and sides of the valleys, with the clyffes and ryftes of the stonnes, and the backes, toppes, or ridges of the Montaynes: Also the beddes, chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookyng diligently amonge theyr sandes, and the ruines of theyr fosses, amonge the whiche yow shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes of mynes, or other dyuers tinctures of metals, whereby yow may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which yowe shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchyng the clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After these aduertisements, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places and mountaynes are mineral, owt of the which many springes and great abundance of crude water dooth isshewe, hauyng with theyr clearenes a certeyne minerall taste, and such as at variable seasons of the yere chaunge theyr qualitie, beinge warme in the spryng tyme and coulde in sommer. And this thyng owght yow to beleue the more when yow shall see the aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage without earth or trees. Or so that yf there bee a litle earth found vpon the same with a smaule veyne of herbes or grasse yowe shall perceaue the grenenes therof to be faynt and in maner wythered and dried. And albeit that sumtymes also, mines are founde in mountaynes hauyng earth and frutefull trees in the toppes therof, yet are they for the most part found in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by litle and litle to feke the bankes of theyr sydes. But amonge all these, the best and most certeyne signe that may bee gyuen, is wheras on the superficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the myne dooth shewe it selfe apparente to syght. Sum there are that for a good signe do greatlye commende the residences which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a tyme and beinge dried vp of the heate of the sonne, do often tymes shewe in certeyne partes of theyr residences dyuers tinctures of mynerall substaunce. Summe other are accustomed to take such waters, and in a vessell of earth or glasse or other matter, cause them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs or residence remaine in the bottome well dried in the likenes of a grose earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by the ordinarie tryall of fyre, or after some other maner as lyketh them best. And by this meanes (although they attayne not to th[e] exacte knoweledge of the truth) yet do they approche to a certeyne knoweledge of the thyng wherby they haue sum intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is which they seeke, before they be at any great charges in solowyng the same: Prouydyng alway that with all diligent aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine mountaynes be curiously searched, with also the bankes and sydes of the selfe same mountayne, and all such superficiall partes therof, where any stonnes are founde discouered eyther of theyr owne proper nature or by the course of water: presuppofyng euer that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche mountaynes containe any mynes, they muste needes shewe furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations. Yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is not of vaporable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els perhappes bycause the mountayne is greate and the myne very low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficient to put furth any signes of fumofities. The cause also hereof maye bee that sum stonnes lyke vnto that cauled *Albasano* (which I thynke to be of that kynde which we caule the greete stonnes) or blacke and whyte marble of

Mountaynes in
the which metals
are engendered.

Ageynst seekyng
metals with the
rod which they
caule Virgula
diuina.
Negromancie.

The maner of
searchyng for
mynes.

A generall signe.

Rough and barren
mountaynes.

328

The best signe.

The residence
of waters.

Marchasites are
the tinctures
of myneral
exhalations.

Metals in fruitful mountaynes.

Howe the signes are to bee considered.

The assay of the mines.

329

The richer myne further within the mountayne.

Consideracions how the caue ought to bee made.

The bodie of the myne.

Howses of office for the myners.

Baptisinge and dedication of the caue.

The makinge of the caue.

thycke and refyftyng nature, may be found to lye betwene and so to floppe the passages, that the sayde fumosities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the vppermoste parte of the earth: by reason wherof, it is possible that suche mountaynes may bryng furth trees and herbes forasmuche as the earth therof dooth reteyne his vertue and may nurysh theirootes not beinge incinerate or burnt with hotte and venemous vapours of the mynes: so that the shoures of rayne or fluds with their courses can not cary away the earth as in such places wher the same is found fore dryed. And therefore vpon such mountaynes I haue seene great wooddes of cheffnutte trees, beeches also and okes, with well cultured and frutfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the signes of the rowghnesse or barennesse of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may also haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be searched and folowed. But forasmuch as these signes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll speake more determinately of them in the places where I entreate of theyr proper mynes: Not intendyng here to faye muche of these thynges in generall, but only to induce yow to sum clearnesse of the fyrst lyght. And therefore that yow may gyue the more diligent aduertisement, I faye vnto yowe that all the mynes which yow shall fynde by such signes, by what meanes so euer they shall coome to yowre handes, whether they be found in stones, earthe, or sande, after that at the fyrst syght they haue shewed them selues to bee mynes of metals, yow owght to confyder of what ponderositie of weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, so much the more dooth it shewe both the perfection and goodnesse of the substaunce, and also the more quantitie of the mine. And thus presuppofyng that by the signes or other meanes yow haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceauyng of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie yowe hereof and also of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewyse of what puritie it is of it selfe, or of what euill disposition or malice it is founde to bee, it shall herein be necessary before yow be at any further charges therwith, to proue the same by twoo or three assayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particular place of assayes. Beinge therefore certified of the myne, and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it conteyneth, syndyng it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare the charges, I exhorte yowe bouldely to gyue the fyrst attempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to folowe yowr enterpryse: assuryng yowre selfe, that of what so euer mynerall matter yow shall take assay accordyng to the proportion of that pi[e]ce which yow tooke of the vppermost or owtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, yow shall fynde that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within the mountayne. And thus being certified by the assay of what quantitie the thyng is that appered by the signes, and of all other reasonable consideracions apperteynyng to the worke, yow shall with all celeritie dispose yowr selfe to faule to dyggyng, to th[e] intent that yowe may shortly cyther here enioye the frute of yowre trauell, or els where with better successe proue yowre good fortune. But in th[e] attempte of this enterpryse, yow owght principally to haue respecte to the situation of the place where yowe intende to make the begynnyng of yowr caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertisement that it be commodious for the labourers that shal worke therein: prouydyng aboute all thynges that it haue an easie enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in shorter tyme to arryue vnder the signes which yowe haue taken: encounteryng the same as muche as is possible as it were by a ryght line, fyrst with iudgemente and then with workemanshypp, vntyll yow stryke on the grose masse or bodye of the myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard compositions, as quarreys and stones ouerthwartyng the same: hauyng euer respecte to the owtwarde signes whiche yow folowe, forecallyng in yowre mynde how yowe may directly arryue to the same, euen as the maryners directe theyr course by theyr compasse and syght of the north starre. Also bysyde that place where yow haue determined to make the enteraunce and begynnyng of the caue, yow muste take choyse of an other place, cyther on the front of the mountayne or on the syde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and necessitie of the workemen. One of these must bee appoynted for theyr dormitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other worke, and that yow may the more commodiously be present and assystaunte to theyr doynges, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforte them in theyr laboures: also to dispence and bestowe theyr vyttayles as shall bee nedefull, and to referue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a smythes forge wherin theyr worne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to th[e] intent that the worke be not hyndered for lacke of flore of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus synysshed, with good prouision of vyttayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, causyng a preste to blesse the mountayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedicatyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to our Lady or to the name of sum other saynt which yowe haue in deuotion, with inuocation to theym to prosper yowre attemptes, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the same withoute ceasyng as farre as yowre abilitie shall reache, or vntyll yowe haue passed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes before named: Takyng euer diligent heade that yowe begyn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a right line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the shortest and safest way that may bee deuised. For it often times chaunceth, that although

the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners beinge withdrawn from the ryght courfe by the hope of fuche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attempted courfe, and from the signes which they owght to haue folowed. And byfyde other preceptes, see that yow beare in memory to procure that in dyggyng, yow efchewe as muche as yowe maye, the cuttyng of softe or brykell stoncs, aswell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as also that it feldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in such stoncs. But yf yow shal chauce fo to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I confort yow that where fuche caufe of feare sheweth it selfe, both that yow lose not the charges of the caue and for the better safegarde of yowre woorkemen, it shalbe necessary that yowe vse all possible diligence in well vpholdyng and fortyfyng the caue with arches of waulcs trauffered with stronge postes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, susteyned with grofe and stronge pyles made of goode and stronge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owght yow to proceade in dyggyng yowre myne that yow may with more securitie enioy the frute of yowr trauayle. But in the owld tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to see in the caues lefte of them) folowed an other maner: so that in the steade of begynnynge the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hygheft parte where the daye discouered the myne, dyggyng downewarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowyng the same sumtyme on the one fyde, and sumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the veyne shewed it selfe to theyr fyght: whereof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in th[e] opinion of many men, this way dooth seeme much better and of more securitie to fynde that they seeke, then to dygge by the fydes: bycause that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or lesse as a line to leade them to the grosse masse. Yet who so conyldereth the thyng well, shall vnderstande that the later myners haue better conceaued the reason of this woork, in respecte (as is to see) of many more commodities and securities which infue rather of this maner of woorkyng then of the other: as the difficultie to descende and ascende the caue, and the daungour lest it bee stopped vp by many ruines, byfyde the trauaylous labour to draw owt the mine with the rockes and fragmentes of stoncs: And aboute al thynges, that they shal not bee able to drawe owt the waters whiche are often tymes so abundaunt that they greatly increafe the charges and trauayles of the patrones of the mynes by reason of the greate ayde and helpe which shalbe requisite to haue in that case and also for the makynge of wheeles, troughes, pypes, and pumpes, with such other instrumentes feruyng for the purpose to drawe owt the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chaunceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet shal they be inforced to forsake their profitable and laudable enterpryse. So that to conclude, I saye (as yowe maye well vnder stand) that it is a much better way and of more securitie to begynne the diggyng of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne and to enter into the same by litle and lytle a slope vpwarde, then to begynne at the toppe or the hygheft backe therof. And this both for the more commodious passyng furthe of the water, and also for the casier trauaile of the labourers. Obseruyng euer diligently the change of the signes whiche appere vnto yow owtwardly. vsyng the rudder and compasse as do they that sayle on the sea. For hereby the myners shalbe instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by the conductyng of wytte and arte, they bee brought to the place of the grofe masse or bodie of the tree, whyche is the cause, fontayne, and original from whence the sayd tinctures, fumosites, and mineral signes, are diriued and sente furth to the superficiall partes. And as concernyng this purpose, I thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedome of *Austria*, betwene *Innspruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye yeares, I sawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number of mountaynes, by the myddest wherof a ryuer passed through of greate abundaunce of water: and in maner in all the montaynes that are there about, is digged great plentie of mine, wherof the moste parte are of copper or leade, although also in maner euery of them is founde to holde sum portion of siluer. Amonge these mountaynes, I sawe one in the whyche th[e] inhabitants of the countrey dwellyng there about allured by the sight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after the maner wherof we haue spoken: In so muche that (as it appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue, they had digged little lesse then two myles before they sawe any sparke or shadowe of any myne. And beinge arryued with the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folowed, they were encountered with a veyne of the harde stone cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they passed through with greate trauayle and longe tyme, and with the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren hardened to woork in fuche stoncs. And when they had thus passed through this quarry of stone, they chaunced vpon a veyre great veyne of the myne of copper of such forte that when I was there, lookinge betwene the one and the other, I sawe on euery fyde as it were a waulc of the hard stone of *Albazano*, and therein a voyde place of fuche largenes from the one fyde to the other that more then two hundred men al at one time, had sufficiente roome to stande labouryng from the hygheste parte to the lowest, hauyng non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they saw the vre or myne shewe it selfe: and thus ceased not to woork continually both day and nyght, courfe by courfe, a thyng fuerly marvelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I sawe great abundaunce of mine partely

Causes of hinderaunce.

Soft stoncs.

330

The fortifying of the caue.

Howe the caues were made in olde tyme.

Abundaunc[e] of water in the mynes.

The beste maner of makinge the caue.

The change of the signes.
The rudder and compasse.*Austria*.

Mynes of copper and leade holding siluer.

A caue of two myles.

A large caue of the myne of copper holding siluer.

331

Candle light

A greate masse
of pure myne.

Abundaunce of
water in the
mynes.

Water is the
nearest principle
of minerales.

A general rule.

Great riches
obtainyd by
searchinge of
mynes.

Magnanimitie
and pacience.

The mountaynes
are the matrices
of riches.

The grace of god
is receaved by
owre endeouore.

Monye begetteth
ryches.

332

Necessarie
aduertismentes.

Plentye of woodde.

Cotages and
edifices.
The situacion of
the place.

The vse of water.

mixt with the stone of the vre, and partely chofen and feperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one con-
filynge of a hole masse of pure mine of such biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre coulde
scarcely drawe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue fayde. But to magnifie it they cauled it syluer,
bycaufe it helde suche plentye thereof that it furmounted the charges, whereas they had also the copper for
aduantage. Yowe shall further vnderstond that in the mydde of the caue, there was a chanel or gutter whyche
gathered together the waters that fell into it continually on euery syde from the ruptures or broken places and
cliffes. These waters ranne through the chanel with so vehemente a streame, that I fuerly beleue that it might
well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In fo muche that in goynge in and comming owt of the caue, I remem-
ber that by the contynual faule and sprinkeling of the waters from aboue and beneth, I was as wet as though
I had passed through a greate shoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the lesse when I consyder that water is the
fyrst and nearest principle of the whiche the substauce of minerals is engendered. By reason wherof, such men
of vnderstandynge as haue searched the natures of these thynges, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule,
that all those mountaynes owt of the whiche spryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo also aboude with myne.
The which thyng well consyderynge, and weyinge the greatnes herof, I faule into this accompte with my selfe,
that if to the patrones of the fayde caue, the charges of the same hadde byn a hynderaunce or greefe, eyther for
the length therof, or for despayre that they shuld not haue found that they fought, they wolde surely haue for-
faken it. And beinge nowe comme to this harde stone after they had fusteyned so great charges bysyde the
trauayle both of mynde and body, if they shulde then haue leste of theyr enterpryse, they shulde not haue come
to such ryches whereby they haue obteyned many commodities aswell profitable for them selues as also for theyr
lordes and princes, theyr countrey, theyr kinsfolkes and famelic. Neyther yet shulde they haue byn so wel able
to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientnesse of theyr constant myndes
and peristyng in so good and commendable an enterprife. Wherfore to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to
attempt any such thyng, must be of good courage and much pacience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the
least vntill yow knowe by the signes what the thyng is: hopinge euer that in goynge forwarde, the day folow-
ynge (as it is possible) shal discouer the thyng that yowe seeke and content your desyre: Wherof yow may bee
the better assured, if yow well consyder that the moother and matrices of most esteemed ryches, and the myntes
of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and yowr ingenious indeuoure)
yow shall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where suche
thynges lye hyd, but shall also bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and dignitie as they of whome we haue
made mention before: forasmuch as most beningne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promesse
good successe to suche as seeke ryches by such honest meanes. The whiche way surely is muche rather to be
folowed, then eyther the warre full of trowbles and miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wander-
ynge about the worlde, or suche other fastidious cares perhappes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as
fume men vse to speake) the syndynge of mynes bee an especial grace of God, neuerthelesse, forasmuch as we
are borne to laboure, it shalbe necessary that we seeke the same in suche places where they are brought furth by
the woorke of nature, and by fearchyng to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this
meanes to receaue the grace of God with applyng owre owne diligence therto, with helpe of the disposition of
fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet shal not this only suffice without sufficiencie of money able to
fusteyne the charges and continue the woorke: to th[e]nde that if yow can not synysse it with yowr owne
expenses, yow maye supplye the same by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe
cease to reason any further of these thynges. Presuppofyng therefore that yow haue already passed the charges,
and haue not only founde the myne yow fought, but also haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof,
it shal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefly to be consydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder and
examen both the commodities of such thynges as shall occurre, and also of such wherof yow shall haue neede:
as tymber and woodde of all fortes, with water and vyttayles: of all the whiche, yow muste haue great plentye:
and especially of woodde, wherof yowe muste haue great quantitie, aswell to ferue to the proportion of the myne,
as also to make coles to the vse of meltyng, synyng, dryng, garboylng, and such other broylnges, bysyde
that which must ferue to fortifie the caue and to buyld shoppes and cotages with such other edifices. Diligent
consideration must lykewyse be had to the situacion of the place where the buyldynges shalbe erected: as that
the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauynge a good faule. Also not onely of plentye
of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of such as may ferue the turne. And of all other incommodities,
yowe muste chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thyng of greatest importaunce and most necessary in this
effecte. For by the force and weyght of the course herof, wheeles and dyuers other ingenious instrumentes are
adapted with ease to lyfte vppe greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beat with hammers of great
weyght, and to turne myghtie and stronge engens, by the force whereof the trauayles of men are so much
furthered, that without such helpe, it were in maner impossible to ouercome suche tedious trauayles or to arryue
to the ende of the woorke, forasmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more safely then the

paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It shal therefore be needefull to haue great confyderation hereof, not only to make these edifices or houfes of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpose, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessaries. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantynge, the coste, tyme and trauallye, shulde bee cast away: forasmuch as these thynges doo so much the more relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woorke not a lyttle yf any be separate. But bycause these commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe owght to wey with your selfe which of the twoo serueth for mo necessarie vses, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine most commodious to the houfes, and accordinge there vnto to place the houfes nere vnto the same if the commoditie of water wyll so permytte. Albeit, if it were possible, it shulde be much better if al these necessarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas otherwyse yowe muste contente your selfe as occasion serueth.

Nowe therefore to conclude, bysyde that whiche I haue declared vnto yow of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other confiderations, I exhorte yowe further to faule to practyse with sum myne of your owne, that yow may therby take occasion to ryse to the degree of ryches whyche yow desire. And therefore I aduertise yow that after yow haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, yow shal euer go forwarde with a boulede mynde and floute corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one serueth the other in the sleede of ey[e]s to enter where they can not. Gyue no credit to that whiche many ignorante folkes doo fay and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet owght we to trust more to art and practyse then to chaunce. And when yow are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memory that yow haue presently with yow the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby yowe may trauffer the veyne of the myne when yow are coomme to it. For if yow shulde folowe it by the course as it lyeth, it is possible that yowe might folowe it a greate way not paste the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhappes lesse: By reason wherof, it might happen that yow shuld lose it and neuer find it ageyne. The like shuld chaunce vnto yow if after that yow haue begun to digge a caue, it shulde repent yow of the charges, and that for the bafnes therof yowe shulde forsake it, as many haue doone who bycause they coulde not fynde the mine at the first stroke, despayringe that they shulde neuer fynde it, haue forsaken it as a thyng vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt losse and damage: And thus furiously leaue of their enterpryse, not regardinge that they may leaue the frute of theyr expences and trauallye to an other that may folowe their begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the distance of a cubet, a spanne, or a finger. We may fay therefore that suche men doo willingly forsake their good fortune as many haue doone. He therefore that hath begunne to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away th[e] estimation of the bafenes therof, and not to feare the streyghtnesse of the way, but rather to applye all his possible diligence without remorse, hopynge thereby no lesse to obteyne honour and ryches, then to auoyde shame and infamie for omittynge so profitable an enterpryse. And that yow may the more circumspectly behaue your selfe in all thynges, besyde the former instructions, I further aduertise yowe to set euer fresshe men a woorke by course in such order, that in euery fixte or eyght houres (accordynge to the number of the myners) yow appoynt such to the woorke as haue reposed or taken theyr rest, that yow may by this meanes the sooner come to th[e] ende yow defyre, whereunto (after yow haue layde so fure a fundation) I exhorte yow to runne without a brydle. And wheras to these effectes it shalbe necessarie to haue many instrumentes adapted for the purpose, I can none otherwyse speake of them then in generall, confyderynge that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it shalbe necessary to vse instrumentes and iren tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in such wherwith yow shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete stone, and harde freese stone, or such other. For the dyggyng of such as are found in deade and tender stones, as Alabafter and marle, it is requisite to haue apte and stronge instrumentes, as great beetels, mattockes and spades of iren, also great and longe crowes of iren to lyfte great burdens: lykewyse greate and smaule picke axes sum of iren and sum of steele: furthermore greate maules with handels and without handels, and such other bothe of iren and fine steele hardened, if the hardenes of stone shall so requyre. But as for such as shall serue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and softe stones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common forte may suffice, and necessitie shall dayly furth[e]r instructe yow to diuise such as shal serue for your purpose. Albeit, for the moste parte, they are beetels, maules, mattockes, pikes, shouels, spades, and such lyke. But as well for the softe stones as for the harde, it shalbe necessarye to haue great plentie of al fortes, to th[e] ende that the myners may lose no tyme, and that the woorke may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the patrones of the mine. Bysyde these before named, it shall also be requisite to haue plentie of greate baskettes, spades, shouels, sleades, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheelles and without wheelles: also sackes made of raw or vntande hydes to carye the fragmentes owt of the caue. It shall furthermore be requisite to haue greate quantitie of vnetuous liquours to maintayne fire: as are the oiles of oliues, of nuttes, of line seede and hempe seede: Lykewyse the roots of putrified trees, or talowe of beastes, or fatte and oyles of fyshes. For without the lyght of fyre, it is not possible for the labourers

Necessarye considerations.

A false opinion

The trauffersinge of the veyne.

Continuance in the worke.

333

Fresshe men.

Instrumentes.

Fyre in the caue.

The conueyance
of eyer.

to worke : Nor yet can any fyre be mayntayned in the caue except it receaue the ayer by sum respiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funell or trunk of woodde or such other open instrumēt wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

¶ *Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular.*

The excellencie
of golde.



Forasmuche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the phylosophers and all men of vnderstandynge, is founde to be of greatest perfection amonge all other myxt minerals, it is iudged by the vniuersal opinion of such men, that for the bewtie and excellent qualitie thereof, it shulde be of excessiue vertue to helpe and confort men. And therefore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte lyuyng creatures) it is chiefly esteemed. By reason wherof, I also the more to honour it, wyll fyrst speake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the most apparent qualities therof.

The originall and
substance of
golde.

334

The which although it be a metall most known, defyred also and sought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what substaunce or natural mixtion it consisteth. But that yow shulde not be one of them that knowe it onely by name or superficiall app[er]e[n]ce, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter therof, is none other then elementall substaunces with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, most perfectly purified by the subtyl worke of nature. For of these beinge thus ioyned togyther (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and most perfect mixtion by the helpe of fermentacion and decoction of the minerall heate, wherby is caused such a permanent vnion betwene the sayde elementes, that they are in maner inseperable: So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by th[e] order of most prudent nature, or by all these causes concurrant, such substaunce is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue sayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixtion, is condensate and made thicke, in such sorte that the elementes therof can not be vnbounde or loosd, so that it remayneth in maner incorruptible: The cause wherof is, that it eyther conteyneth in it no maner of superfluitie, or the same to be but very litle. And hereof commeth it, that although it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with rust or canker for that neyther of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyre whose force doth incinerate or brynge to ashes and resoluē in maner all creatures: And yet is the poure hereof so farre vnable to destroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Lykewyse the sayde perfecte vnion or mixtion, causeth it to be a body without fleame, and without vntuous or fat superfluitie: which is the cause that it euer remayneth in the natiue bryghtnes and sayrenes of coloure, in so much that when it is rubbed vpon any thyng, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelowe colour, as doo in maner all other metals: Nor yet hath it any taste or sauour that may be perceaued to the fence. Furthermore, if it be eaten eyther wyllingly or by chaunce, it is not venemous to the lyfe of man, as are sum of the other metals: but is rather a medicine curyng dyuers diseases. In so much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiar propertie, a vertue and priuilege to conforte the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulnes and myrth to the spirites, disposyng thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryses. Which singular qualities, sum wyse men affirme that it hath receaued by th[e] influence of the sonne, and that it is therefore of such grace and poure to helpe men: especially such as haue many great bagges and chesles full therof. To conclude therefore, this metall is a body tractable and bryght, of coloure lyke vnto the soonne: And hath in it inwardely such a naturall attractiue or alluryng vertue, that beinge seene, it greatly disposeth the myndes of men to defyre it and esteeme it as a thyng most precious: although many there are whiche crye out agaynst it and accuse it as the roote and sede of most pestiferous and monstrous couetousnesse, and the cause of many other myscheues. But whether it bee the cause of more good or euill, we entende to lette passe this disputation as a thyng vnprofitable. To proceade therefore as I haue begun I say (as before) that the woorthynesse which is founde in it, hath caused me to intreate of it before any other metall. And this the rather for that th[e] order of this presente worke [see]meth so to requyre, that I may the better descende to the degrees of other metals, to th[e] ende that in these owre partes of Italy, yow may haue sum instruction of practyse, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue sum lyght: beinge well assured that newe informations, wilbe the feedes of other newe wittie diuises in the vnderstandynges of suche men as with these keys shall open theyr wyttes to arryue to suche places whyther they can not els coomme or by any meanes approche. And nowe therefore, byfynde that which I haue sayde vnto yowe in generall, I wyll further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the same, with also the signes whiche it sheweth furth, that I do not omitte any thyng. Last of all, I wyll shewe yowe howe it owght to bee purged from superfluous

Mineral heate.

The temperature
and purenesse of
golde.
Golde is
incorruptible.

The bewtie of
golde.

Golde is
medicinable.
Golde is
comfortable.

The attractiue
qualitie of golde.

earthynes of the mine, after that I shal haue expresse the maner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes seene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practise, I wyll only shewe yow (hauynge made diligente inquisition for the same) what hathe byn toulde me of credible persons, or what I haue gathered in readyng of dyuers autours, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greatest plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scythia*, in those prouinces which we commonly caule the East partes, where the soonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of these places India is thought to be the chiefe, and especially those Ilandes which the ships of Th[e]mperours maiestie and the kynge of Portugale haue founde of late: as the Ilandes about *Peru* and *Paria* with the firme lande of the same which extendeth it felues very farre on both sydes the Equinoctiall. In Europe also, golde is founde in many places: as in *Astesia*, and in many places in Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apsa. Plinie sayth that it is lykewyse founde in *Austria* and in Portugale: and that the Romans had from thense yearely. xxiii. [twenty-four] pounds weyght. And thus speakeynge of this precious metall, I beleue certeynly, that it is and may be engendered in all suche places wher the influence of the heuens dispofeth the elementall causes to brynge furth an apte substaunce for this purpose. But nowe intyndynge more particularly to speake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stones in great and rowgh mountaynes, and suche as are vtterly bare of earth, trees, graffe, or herbes. And amonge all the stones of this myne, that is best which is of a blewe or asurine coloure lyke vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not bryght and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum*: but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyse founde in many prouinces in the sandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the mountaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarrey ioyned with the sayde Azurine stone and myxte therewith. They saye that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the heuyer and of hyghe colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold. They say furthermore that it is engendered in an other stone lyke vnto false marble: but it is of a deade colour. And also in an other whose colour is yelowe with certeyne redde spots within it. They affirme lykewyse that it is founde in certeyne blacke stones, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of coloure lyke vnto cley and very heauy, hauynge in it a great fauour of brymstone: And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all togyther syne, yet very harde to bee gotten owte, bycause it confysteth of so smaule sparkes lyke vnto inuisible atomes of such lytelnesse that they can hardlye bee perceaued with the eye. And herein may yow not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stones, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the sands of ryuers: the which the more it is wasshed, the more it fauleth to the bottome: and in meltyng with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporat it selfe therewith in a brickle substance. But in fine, with much pacience and by one meanes or an other, or by the helpe of quicke-syluer, it is drawen owte. Ageyne (as I haue sayde before) it is found in the sandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: In *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In Hungarie and Boheme, it is founde in *Lafesia* in dyuers ryuers: And in Italie, in the sands of *Tefino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places where in certeyne cloddes the sande is discouered in the tyme of the ouerflowynge of the ryuers when the water leaueth behynde it a fine sande wherewith the sayde golde is myxte in the forme of certeyne smaule scales, and shynynge graynes. Then in the sommer season, with pacience and ingenious practise, the searchers to poure it from the grosse earthinesse of the myne, and washe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne tables made eyther of the tymber of plane trees, or elme, or whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be sawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, and notches, with the helpe of the sawe or such other instrumentes of iren. Vpon these tables standynge sumwhat a slope or declynynge, with a holowe shouel they cast a great quantitie of water myxt with the sayde sande, which they cast so, that the water runne downe directly alonge with the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matter most heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the sawne hackes, and there restynge and cleauynge fast, is so diuided from the sande. When therefore they perceaua a sufficient quantitie of golde thus remaynynge on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a trey or great shallowe dyshe of wod lyke vnto those which the golde finers vse: And in these they washe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from al fylth or vnclenynesse. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with Mercurie or quicke-syluer, whiche afterward they seperate ageyne from the same eyther by straynyng and pressynge it through a bagge of lether, or by styllynge or euaporatynge the quicke-syluer from it in a styllatory of glasse and so fynde they the golde remaynynge in the bottome of the vessell in the lykenes of fine sande, which they brynge into a metalline body by meltyng it with a lytle borage, or salt petre or blacke sope, and so cast it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyse as lyketh them best. And this is the exacte maner of drawynge golde owte of the sandes of ryuers, which many haue vsed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather bycause that in folowynge this order of worke in the poungynge and diuydyng of golde, it shall not bee requisite as in other maner of practises, to bee at greate charges by reason of many men which shall be needefull, with manye murals, fornaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers:

Where moste plentie of golde is found.

Cathay.

335

Golde in the Ilandes of the weste indies.

Golde in Europe.

The influenc[e] of heauen.

The mountaynes and stones in the whiche golde is engendered.

Lapis Lazuli.

Orpemente.

Golde in other metals.

Golde in the sandes of ryuers.

Gold in earth.

Golden duste.

Ryuers in the whiche gold is founde.

The washing and poureinge of golde.

Howe golde is deuided frome sande.

The Spanyardes make these dishes with handels.

The drawynge out of golde wth quicke syluer.

336

From whence golde is deriued into the sandes of ryuers.

That golde is not engendered in the sandes of riuers.

This mater is apparent in the golde founde in the ryuers in the Indies.

The faule of waters from mountaynes.

337

Springs of water in mountaynes.

Vegetable golde growinge owt of the earthe.

Of this, reade *Alexandro ab Alexandro. lib. 4. Genialium dierum. Cap. 9.*

Golde founde in A deade mans heade.

wheras in woorkyng after this forte, one man may suffice with one table and one holowe shoouell, with a lyttle quickefyller and sufficient abundaunce of water. But lettynge passe to speake any further of these thynges: perhappes summe man wolde here demaunde from whence this golde is deriued into the sandes of the sayde ryuers, and whether it be brought thither by the water, or engendered there. As touchynge which question, I haue often tymes deliberated with my selfe not without great marueyle: and especially of that which is founde in the sandes of the ryuers of *Tefino, Adda, and Po*, bicause (wheras I haue sayde before that it is brought thither by the course of the water) I can not perceaue from whence it shuld be brought, forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knowen, nere to any of those places. By reason wherof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, feinge also that it is th[e]oppinion of certeyne wryters, that it is engendered euen where it is founde: The which, if it so be, it is not trewe that it is brought thither by the water. Ageyne, if it be engendered there, it seemeth to me a dyfficult thyng to comprehend whether it be brought furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of these shuld be the cause of the generation hereof, it seemeth agreable to reason that it shulde bee both founde and engendered throughout all the beddes of such riuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the most prepotent cause of this effecte, then it seemeth to me that it shuld woork immediatly, bicause it can not otherwyse obserue th[e]order whiche nature vseth in the generation of metals: fyrst brynginge it furth to the open shewe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall isshewe of water, which owght also to be of such force as to remoue the earthy substaunce thereof from place to place, and not to intermixte such great inequalitye of coulde nesse and moistnes. And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld not be disseuered or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it appeareth to me that the showers of rayne and increase of fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to distemper, breake, and vtterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered in such places, forasmuch al thynges are conceaued by rest and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyrste elementes. And therefore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it is engendered only in these places and not in other: and why in lyke maner, fyluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters of an easyer composition of nature then it is, by reason of the perfecte vnitie and concordance with puritie of substaunce and perfecte concoction which is in golde aboute all other metals: whereas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there are founde many sparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour amonge the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers: And yet these only in certeyne particular places of the sayde riuers: wherby it appeareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where they are founde. By all which reasons and apparent effectes, it seemeth most agreable to truth that the golde which is found in such sandes, is rather brought thither by the water, then engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more playnely herein, I suppose that this chaunceth only in great ryuers which receaue abundaunce of waters of dyuers springes, fosses, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the meltyng of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche faulyng in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and sydes of [the]minerall mountaynes, washe away parte of the earth of theyr bankes and the ouerhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the substaunce of golde: Or otherwyse, that in such places, there are ordinarie mines in the hygh mountaynes or other superficiall owt places, perhappes inaccessable and eyther such whyther men can not come for extreme heate or cold or other hynderaunces, or els such as they haue contemned to searche: And yet the same to bee so consumed by the force of water as we haue sayde, and by the course therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers: And that in the space of many yeares, the springes isshewynge owt of the same, may eyther bee dried vp (whiche thyng hath byn seene) or els turne theyr course an other way. So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknowne euen vnto them that dwell nere such places. But in fine, howe so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thyng, I owght worthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reason or effectuall app[er]eance, there arise many doubtfull coniectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible persons: That is, that in sum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde spryngeth owt of the earthe in the lykenesse of smaule herbes, wrethed and twyned lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggenesse of a pack threade, and foure syngers in length or fume a handfull. As concernynge which thyng, Plinie also in the. xxxiii. [thirty-third] booke of his naturall hyftorie, wryteth the lyke to haue chaunced in *Dalmatia* in his tyme. The which (if it bee trewe) fuerly the husbände men of these fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and brought furth of nature without theyr trauallye or arte. A grace doublelesse most especial, fyth that in so great a quantitie of earth graunted to the possession of men, in maner onely this is thought woorthy so hygh a priuilege. But what shall I say of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wryteth in his booke of minerals, affirmynge that he hath seene golde engendered in a

deade mans heade : And that the same beinge founde by chaunce in dyggyng, and perceaued by the weyght and coloure to conteyne sum minerall substaunce, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde mixte with smaule sande. And in deede his woordes seeme to found to none other fence but only that this precious metall was engender[e]d there by the great disposition of the place and stronge influence of heauen : The which fuerlie is a thyng hardely to be beleued. Yet confyderynge th[e] autoritie of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superiour causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather gyue sayth hereto then rashely to contemne the iudgement of so greate a clarke. And forasynuche as I haue begun to tell yow of these effectes, I wyll not omitte to shewe yowe of a straunge thyng which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie, where a myne of gold was so found by chaunce and vsought for, that it may neuerthelesse be an aduertisement to other to searche diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the contrey beinge accustomed to resort with her bucke of clothes to wasshe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a lyttle water, and vsynge to beate and rubbe them vppon a stone which seemed commodious for her purpose, chaunced at the length by her good fortune to espie on the stone, a veyne of golde trauerfynge or ouertwhartinge the same abowte the byggenefie of a grofe packe threede, shewynge fayre and bright by reason of her much rubbyng. Wherat marueyllynge dayly more and more, at the length opened the matter to her familiers : who conferryng with such as hadde better skyl of the thyng, founde it in fine to bee a veyne of pure golde : And that the quarrie of that stone, trauerfed the course of the water of the fosse. Remouynge therefore the water, and turning the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and folow the mine which hath now continued certeyne. C. [hundred] yeares fence it was fyrst found : And hath not only greatly enriched that contrey, But also all Christendome hath had great commoditie by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the rather that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitte any signe or token wherebye yowe may bee certified of greate thynges : not contemnyng the shadowe of any smaule tokens : but aswel to gyue attentyue eare and eye vnto them, as to feare and foresee all such thynges as may hynder. For (as yow may hereby well perceau) if credit had not fyrst byn gyuen to the woordes of the simple wooman, and the thyng afterwarde well folowed, perhappes they shulde neyther nor euer hereafter haue enjoyed the frute of so great a commoditie. Men therefore of good courage folowynge suche ryche signes, dyd nother feare the smaulenesse of the veyne or hardnesse of the stone : presuppofynge by good reason that golde and syluer can not lightly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same shal be able to furmouthe the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yowe shall enter into the stone, as chaunceth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, saye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perhappes they say trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And fuerly it seemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amonge men, confyderynge in how many places it is dayly gathered aswel in mountaynes as in sandes of ryuers, byfyde that whiche is founde accompanied and ioyned with other metals. A further profe hereof may that bee, which is consumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men : As that whiche the paynters bestowe in adournyng their woorkes : And goldefmythes both in gyltynge other metals and also in makynge dyuers woorkes of massie golde : byfyde that which the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume : with such as imbrotherers and fylke woomen spende about the vanities of men and womens apparell and tyrements. Also such as is consumed vppon trappers and furnimentes for horses, with gylted harnesse and such other sumptuousnesse as perteyneth to the warres and magnifical buydinges of noble mens houses and temples : Byfyde that also whiche the couetousnesse of men hath hydde in stronge waules, and buried in the grounde, inclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes : And that which ferueth to the dayly vses of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchauntes. The whiche thynges well confyded, who so thinketh that nature bringeth furth but lyttle golde, shall perceau that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as may satisfie the thirst of theyr couetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Italie, although there bee no myne of golde knowen in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces : Notwithstandinge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as nowe of late in owre tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it about. xl. [forty] yeares paste. But who knoweth (as hath chaunced in the dayes of owre valient prediceffors) whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to chastise them and so to inuade theyr regions that wee maye woonne owre owne ageyne with increafe of dowble vsurie. Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunte vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, confyderynge and feynge that this owre region of Italie is replenysshed with as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde shulde bee wantynge, wheras it bryngeth furth such plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not without the mynes of these also, although they be not yet discouered to the knowlege of men : As I am persuaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the fayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and fundry

A myne of golde
founde by chaunce

A vayne of golde
in a stone.

No signes to be
omitted.

338

Golde is not
founde in like
quantitie as are
other metals.
Argumentes of
plentye of golde.

Howe diuers
wayes golde is
consumed.

Many haue to
muche, but fewe
haue enough.
Italie wasted by
the barbarians.

Commendacion
of Italie

Golde and tynne

Meane minerals

The golde of
Italie.

Golde containyd
in other metals.

The maner of
pourginge of golde.

339

Lapis lazuli.

Asure.

Howe golde is
drawn frome
Lapis lazuli with
quickefyluer.

The baine or
test of leade.

The maner of
pourginge golde
with leade.

meane minerals which are founde in many places and adiudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, felte, or feene, we owght not therby to affirme that they are not. To conclude therefore, I thinke that in owr partes of Italie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amonge the marchauntes) then after twoo fortes, wherof the one is that which is founde in the sandes of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the industrious and fubtyl art of partyng gold from new fyluer, or from giltynge fyluer, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not sum smaull portion therof, more or lesse according to the mixtion and permanencie of theyr fubstances, or accordynge to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owre partes of Italie. Nowe therefore to returne to the matter whereof is owre chiefe intente to intreate, hauynge before spoken sufficiently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto yowe howe it owght to be poured from earthly superfluitie, and especially that whiche is founde lyinge in the forme of veynes, and although I haue not feene the edif[c]es and engens wherwith the myners are accustomed to get it owt, yet wyll I shewe yow howe by other practifes I haue learned to poure it, that yow may not bee without sum knowlege yf your fortune shalbe so good as to fynde any in Italy. When yow haue therefore dygged owt the myne and placed it in order, yow owght to confider in what kynde of stone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste yow so drawe owte the golde that yowe also faue the stone, bycause perfecte Afure is made therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurro Ultramarino*, that is, Afure of beyonde the sea, which they greatly esteeme and bye it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that yowe fyrst beate it into fine powder, and then put it in a trey or brode treene dyshe, and wasshe it fayre and cleane with water. This done amalgame or rubbe it well with quickefyluer vntyll it haue lycked vppe and drawne al the golde into it and left the stone pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickefyluer from the golde through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a flyllatorie of glasse: And thus shal yowe fynde the golde in the bottome of the vessell in maner pure without quickefyluer, as I haue fayde before. And if yow haue no respecte to faue the stone, it shall suffice to vse the common experience, meltyng it in a fornace in a bayne or teste of leade. But in my opinion, the best maner to brynge it to purenesse, is fyrst to burne the mine with a gentell fyre in an open fornace, and to suffer it to euaporate well if it bee not in such stone as yowe desyre to faue. Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with pestel'es adapted with a wheele vntyll it be brought to fine powder. And when yow haue wel wasshed it and so much wasted the superfluous earthynesse therof, then put it in a teste made accordynge to the quantitie of the same, and melt it therin with leade whiche yowe shall consume partely by vapoure and partely with drawynge it owt by the fyde of the teste (as is the maner) vntyll yowe come to the pure golde whiche yowe shall in fine brynge to perfecte purenesse in vtterly confumynge the remanent of the leade with vehement fire increased by the helpe of sronge bellows. And this is the vniuersal maner which yow may vse not only in pourginge the myne of golde, but also the mynes of all other metals.

☞ Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof.

Whether syluer
haue A mine by
hit selfe or no.



Here are (as I vnderstande) diuers opinions emonge the practitioners of the mynes, whether fyluer haue a proper myne by it selfe or no. The reasons of suche as writte of the natures of mineralles, and th[e] autoritie of the most, persuade me to assent to the affirmatiue: Not only to see the naturall matter distincte, as is to perceauce in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in theyr mynes are found pure by them selues without mixtion, but also that I vnderstand that there hath bin found likewyse certeyne pieces aswell of this mettall of siluer, as of gold and copper, brought to his laste fynesse by th[e] only worke of nature. And

Georgius Agricola.
A table of mineral
syluer.

this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in Saxonie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral siluer of such bignes, that the duke the prince and patrone of that place, caused a chayre and square dynyng table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withoute any further woorke of mans hande: Gloryng often tymes that in this thyng he surmounted the greatnesse and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in deede (excepte copper) I haue feene no metall taken owte of the caue pure without his vre. Yet doo I beleuee it a thyng possible, confyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, th[e] ende of whose woorkynge euer intendeth to bringe all thynges to perfection as farre as it is not otherwyse hyndered. Yet (as I haue fayde) of the moste parte of those mynes whiche I haue feene, none of theym haue byn without mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn also myxte with other metals: And especially this of syluer more then any other, excepte onlye that which was digged in *Schio*, in *Vicentina*. And therefore not without sum shadow of apparent reason, haue suche doubttes risin

The workes of
nature.

Mixte metales.

amonge the practicionars of the mynes. And yet (as I haue sayd) I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine, forasmuche as euery substance that maye be conuerted into metall, may aswell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde, as eyther separte or mixte with other, as is often times seene in one masse in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speaketh of the mine of siluer, may with the same brethe and withowt distinction, speake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the moste noble and ryche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be esteemed aboue other, therefore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iren, (as doo the moste parte) yet if they holde also golde or syluer, they are cauled gold mynes or syluer mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when suche mynes are mixte of dyuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosities of tinctures and marchasites, as signes where they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they shewe furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blewed stones, sum greene, sum yelowe, and sum of vndistinct colours accordyng to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrst matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of syluer, the philosphers speculours of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substance more watery then fyerie, of complexion feminine and flegmatike in comparifon to gold: receauyng more of th[e] influence of the moone then of the son, and therefore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the soonne: consistyng also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndygested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainly perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practicionars affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and also in an other stone of a ruffet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stone lyke vnto *Treuertino* or in *Treuertino* it selfe. The myne hereof, is very ponderous, and hathe in it often tymes certeyne shynyng graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynte of a needle so muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixation. And when it is founde in a whyte stone, or leade stone, it is so muche the better, bycause it maye be the easyer poured from the stone and earthynesse. When also it is founde lyinge as it were loofe amonge certeyne scales or cloddes of earth, they saye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye suche replendence as other are wonte to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke ruffet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is shynyng of the coloure of iren or redde. And that yowe may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the foresayde metall, yowe shall vnderstand that euen togyther with the myne, eyther where it is fyrst founde, or nere vnto the same, yowe shall see certeyne marchasites of yelowe coloure lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of suche hyghe colour, so much the more do they shewe adust or burnt matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therefore accordyng to the degrees of suche colours, yow may in maner iudge of what fatnes or leanenesse the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchasites therefore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, owght in coloure to approche to whytenesse as much as may bee, and to consyft of smaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchasites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the goodnesse of theyr myne. This myne of syluer is also often tymes founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, bicause it is founde in a harde stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is found in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not furrmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles also, it so chaunceth that these thre metals are founde accompanied togyther in one myne: In whiche case it shalbe necessarie to vse aduertisement of arte. And presuppofyng that yowe desyre to separte the syluer frome the other metall, it is necessarie that yowe increafe the leade. But if yow passe not to faue neyther the syluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requisite to proceade with longe and great fyers vntyl the weakeft matters bee consumed. But this owght to be doone especially in such mines as hold iren. Yet neyther for this or those, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordyng vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owght they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with sum drye earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters altogyther euaporable and burnt, or of harde substance to bee reduced to fusion or meltyng: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnprofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often tymes be gyuen, then theyr owne ignoraunce by reason of extraordinarie and longe fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they woorke inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fusion or meltyng with such thynges as may defende them from the fyer. For wheras is suche abun-

340
Diuers metals in
one masse.

In the Indies
golde founde in
greate quantitie,
pure and vnmixte.

The colours of
mineral fumosities.

The generacion
and qualite of
siluer.

The influences
of the moone.

Stones in the
which syluer is
engendered.

The myne of
syluer.

The mountayne.

Marchasites of
siluer.

What marchasites
are the beste
signes.

Syluer myn[e]s
in harde stones.

Syluer with
copper or leade.

The denyng of
siluer from other
metals.

341

Iren.

Metals mixte with
Antimonie or
Arsenike

Howe metals are
preserued in
fusion.

Sulphur and
mercurye.

Grinding and
wasshinge of
mynes.

The amalgamyng
of mines with
Mercury.

Mines holdyng
the fourth part
of syluer.

Copper holding
syluer.

Three vnces vi. of
syluer in euery
hundreth of mine
War betwene
Maximilian
Th[e]mperour
and the Venecians.

The mynes of
Almanye.

The marchasite
mixte with the
myne.

342

daunce eyther of burnt matter, or of superfluous waterynesse, wherof the one is cauled *Sulphur* or brymstone, and the other Mercurie or quicksyluer not fixed, or arsenike, it is necessarie that the one burne the syluer, and the other cary it a way, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an earthye substaunce infusible and not able to bee molten. To faue the fayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much pacience and conueniente meanes, fyrste after the common maner of woorkyng to euaporate the myne (as wee haue fayde) or withowt euaporation to grinde it fmaule: then to wasshe it often, and in fine, if not by great fyers, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to poure it. And to bryng this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow ought to proue in the same grindyng or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vsed of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in those forte of mynes which I fayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. Proue it therefore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue spoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdyng a fourth part of syluer, and sum more then halfe. And this was founde lyeing in maner in the superficiall parte of the earth: and sum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin founde vnder the rootes of fuche trees as haue byn ouerthrowen by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all the mynes whiche I haue seene in the dominions of Venice, as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not faye that I haue seene any better: Although there bee many caues wherof the most parte are of copper holdinge syluer: and emonge other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the company of certeyne other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged. And bycause the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente by occasion twyfe into high Almanye to see the mynes of that countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to faule to practyse at my returne. In so much that I founde the mine which we had taken in hande to folowe, to bee very good and ryche: holdyng more then three vnces and a halfe of syluer in euery hundreth of the myne. And doubtlesse we shuld haue obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had not rayfed warre betwene Maximilian Th[e]mperoure and the signorie of Venecy: which was the cause that those places of *Frioli* and *Carnia*, coude not be quietly inhabited: whereby we were enforced to forsake owre enterpryse, and to rase and destroy th[e] order which we had begunne. And by reason that the warres continued longe, we were constrained to diuide owr company, where I also departed an other way, hauyng euer in mynde to folowe owre attempted enterpryse when better oportunitie shulde ferue. In the meane tyme returnyng ageine into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent fearch to knowe the mynes then before: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaißer*, *I[n]-spruch*, *Alla*, and *Arotinbergh*: frome whense I wente into dyuers places of Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche I haue fene to holde most of syluer, are those that are founde in *Vicentina* in certeyne stoness of a dark grey, or ruffet colour, as I haue fayde before. And nowe for a generall aduertisement, I wyll not omyt to tell yow, that when yow haue attempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchasite and the myne myxt together, yowe shall leaue of yowre woork, bycause it signifieth that the myne is neare to the superficiall part of the earth, and that it is of but lyttle quantitie. And thus as touchyng this myne of syluer, I can fay no more fauyng that I haue not yet shewed yowe the maner of pourgyng it from earthely grofenes and to bryng it to perfect metall. But bycause I haue determined to speake largely hereof in the proper place of the fusion or meltyng of all metals, I haue thought good to speake no further of this matter at this presente.

THE MANER OF WORKYNGE IN GOLDE
MYNES IN EGIPTTE IN OWLDE TYME, AFTER THE
DESCRIPTION OF DIODORVS SICVLVS, WHO WROTE HIS HISTORIE
cauled Bibliotheca, fūmwhat before the dayes of th[e]mperoure
Octavianus Augustus, and before th[e]incarnation of
Christ about. xl. [forty] yeares.

He wryteth therefore in his fourthe booke as foloweth.



WE haue not thought good to pretermitt howe golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge the Egiptians. In the confines therefore of Egipte where it borthereth with Ethiopia and Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of metalles, owt of the whiche, golde is digged with great labour and expenes. For a blacke earthe of minerale nature, hath certeyne vaynes of moste white marble excedinge bright and shyninge. The surueyours of this woorke, haue assigned them a great company of men to woorke and coyne golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accustomed to appoynte to these paynefull trauailes, all sūche as haue byn conuicte for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken prifoners in the warres, or sūche as haue byn committed to prifon through the indignation of princes who by this meanes haue bothe great vantage by theyr labour, and punyshe them sufficently for theyr offenses. For barbarous and strange fouldiers of diuers languagies, bare rule ouer them and keepe them to theyr worke, in sūche forte that th[e]use of speache beinge taken from theym, they can not bee corrupted by loue or intratie. They drawe golde owt of the hardest earth decocte with much fyer. The softest stone which is broken with meane labour, is digged with instrumentes of iren by the trauaile of many thousandes of men. The scrier which decerneth the veines of the myne, go[eth] before the workemen, appoynting them the places where they shall digge. The marble stone whiche he sheweth them, they breake and cleaue with wedgies of iren by the mere strenght of theyr bodies withowte arte. They make theyr fosse or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwyse darke and obscure by reason of theyr fundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryinge lyght before theyr for[e]-heades, digge great stones owt of the myne, whyche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer rest, inforced to contynual woorke with strokes and contumelious wordes. Children of th[e]age of. xii. [twelue] or. xiii. [thirteen] yeares or vppewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the stones into finaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broken. They that are past th[e]age of. xxx. [thirty] yeares, receaue the sayd broken stones at theyr hands and beate them in vessels of stone with maules of iren, to the quantitie of tares or fytches: which afterward they cast into many milles, whereby the labour of two or three women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grounde as finaule as meale. The fylthinesse of the bodies of these labourers, is apparent to all men. For not so muche as their priue members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies byfyde so fylthy, that no man can beholde them withowt compassion of theyr miserie. But no pitie, no reste, no remission is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fycke or feeble: But are all with strokes inforced to continuall labour vntyl the poore wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In so much that many of them for feare of theyr lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorfe then the present payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the stones very finaule, they cast that substaunce vppon brode tables inclynynge fūmwhat fliepe or standynge a slope, and cast water thereon, sterynge continually the fayde poudre of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is wasshed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doone thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with theyr handes and rub it with thynne sponges, owt of the which they presse a soft earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden sande. After that this preparation is fynnysshed, other workemen receaunye it at theyr handes by measure and weyght, cast it into earthen pottes, puttyng thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with branne of barley, and weedes of the sea cauled reites or oufe. These thynges proportioned accordingly, they close the pottes diligently with cley, and so let them stand in a furnesse with fyer for the space of fyue continuall dayes and nyghtes. In which space, al other thynges of contrary mixture beinge consumed, only the golde is found in the vessels, fūmwhat dimynysshed of the fyrst weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde possessed in the furthest parte of Egipt. Wherby, euen nature her selfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in syndynge, tedious in purfynge, daungerous in keepynge, and in vse constitute betwene pleasure and sorowe.

Gold in a black earthe, and white marble

Then damned to the metales as nowe to the gallies.

The scrier of the vayne.

Golden marble.

The woorke of chyldren.

Mylles.
The misery of the miners

The pourginge of the metall frome the vre.

The melting of golde.
343

Alge.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VII.

*The first two Voyages out of
England into Guinea.*

1553-1554 A.D.]

THE DISCRIPTION OF THE TWO VIAGES
MADE OWT OF ENGLAND INTO GVINEA IN AFFRIKE
AT THE CHARGES OF CERTEYNE MARCHAVNTES ADVENTVRERS
of the citie of London, in the yeaere of owre Lorde.

M. D. LIII.



That these vyages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate from other vyages, the cause hereof is, that after I had deliuered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was desyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these vyages, that sum memorie myght thereof remayne to owr posteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme consumyng all thynges, or ignoraunce creepynge in by barbarousnesse and contempte of knowleage, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attemptes, so much the greatlyer to bee esteemed as before neuer enterprysed by Englysshe men, or at the leaste so frequented as at this present they are and may bee to the greate commoditie of owre marchantes, if the same be not hyndered by th[e]ambition of such as for the conquestynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amonge naked people, thinke them selues woorthy to bee lordes of haife the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enioy the commodities which they them selues can not holy possesse. And although such

Ambition.

as haue byn at charges in the discouerynge and conquestynge of such landes, owght by good reason to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme somewhat rigorous and ageynst good reason and conscience, or rather ageynst the charitie that owght to bee amonge Chrysten men, that such as violently inuade the dominions of other, shuld not permit other frendely to vse the trade of marchandies in places neuer or seldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in such places where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of theyr trafike. But forasmuche as at this presente it is not my intent to accuse or defend, approue or improue, I wil cease to speake any further hereof, and proceade to the description of the fyrst viage as briefly and faythfully as I was aduertised of the same by th[e]information of such credible persons as made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof as much as shalbe requisite, omyttinge to speake of many particular thynges not greatly necessarye to be knowen: whiche neuerthelesse with also th[e]exact course of the nauigation, shal be more fully declared in the second viage. And if herein fauoure or frendshyppe shall perhappes cause sum to thinke that sum haue byn sharply touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendshippe and gyue place to truth, that honest men may receaue prayse for well doinge, and lewde persons reproche as the iust stipende of theyr euyl desertes, wherby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attemptes.

But that these vyages may bee more playnely vnderstode of al men, I haue thought good for this purpose before I intreate hereof, to make a breefe description of Affrica beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coast of Guinea at Cabo Verde about the. xii. [twelue] degrees in latitude on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the meafuryng line, so runnyng from the north to the south and by east in sum places within v. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so furth in maner directly east and by north for the space of. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees or there about in longitude from the West to the East, as shall more playnely appere in the descryption of the seconde viage.

Africa.

The coast of
Guinea.

A BREEFE DESCRIPTION OF AFFRIKE.

Tunnes.
Bugia.
Tripoli.
Numidia.

Ilandes of Tunnes.
Malta.
The disertes of
Libia.

Barbarie.
Mauritania.
The kingdoms of
Fes and marrock.
Tremesin.
Oram.
Nassaquiber
Salla.
Azamor.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Guinea.
Ethiopians.

Marrocko.
Fes.
Tremesin.
Guinea.

Africa the great.

Affrike the lesse.

Carthage.

Prester Iohn.

Cape de Buona
Speranza.
The sea of sande.
Alcair.

345

From whence the
queene of Saba
came.

Manicongni.

The earthly
Paradyse.
The trees of the
soome and
moone.



IN Affrica the lesse are these kyngedomes: The kyngedome of Tunes, and Constantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and also the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Ezzab. This part of Affrike is very baren by reason of the greate desertes, as the desertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunes are these: Goletta, Bizerta, Portofarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Constantia and Boua with dyuers other. Vnder this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarea, Limoso, Beit, Gamelaro, and Malta where at this presente is the greate master of the Rodes. Vnder the southe of this kyngedome, are the great desertes of Libia. Al the nations [of] this Africa the lesse, are of the secte of Machomet and a rusticall people luyngge scattered in vyllages. The beste of this parte of Affrike, is Barbaria lyinge on the coaste of the sea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is diuided in two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Cefariensis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocko. The principall cite of Fes, is cauled Fessa: and the chiefe cite of Marrocko, is named Marrocko. Mauritania Cefariensis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremisen, with also the cite cauled Temisen or Trelensin. This region is full of desertes, and reacheth to the sea Mediterraneum to the cite of Oram with the porte of Massaquiber. The kyngedome of Fes reacheth vnto the Ocean sea from the West to the cite of Argilla: and the porte of the fayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocko is also extended aboue the Ocean sea vnto the cite of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean sea towarde the West of the fayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanea (that is to fay in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocko) are in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde time the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the fouth of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Iaioso, Gamba, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger. In the fayde regions are no cities: but only certeyne lowe cotages made of bouwes of trees plastered with chauke and couered with strawe: In these regions are also very great desertes.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it these feuen kyngedomes: Hea, Sus, Guzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many: as Fes, Temefne, Azgar, Elabath, Errisi, Garet, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions: Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazaet, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours without profession of any religion or other knowlege of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde knowen in owlde tyme and feuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus: On the West, from Europe by the pillers of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Affrike the lesse is in this wyfe bounded: On the west it hath Numidia: On the east Cyrenaica: On the north, the sea cauled Mediterraneum. In this cuntry was the noble cite of Carthage.

In the East syde of Affrike beneth the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghtye Emperour and Chrystian kyng Prester Iohan, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on euery syde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym trybute. This myghty prynce is cauled Dauid Th[e]mperour of Ethiopia. Sum wryte that the kyng of Portugale fendeth hym yearely. viii. [eight] shyppes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Affrike towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape *de Buona Speranza*: and on the other syde with the sea of sande cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous sea, lyinge betwene the great cite of Alcaer or Cairo in Egypte and the cuntry of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many vnhabitable desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the fayde Chrystian Emperour were not hyndered by those desertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and especially of water) he wolde or nowe haue invaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the cite of Alcaer. The chiefe cite of Ethiopia where this great Emperour is refydent, is cauled Amacaiz beinge a fayre cite, whose inhabitauntes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the cite of Saua vppon the ryuer of Nilus where Th[e]mperoure is accustomed to remayne in the foommer seafon. There is lykewyse a great cite named Barbaregaf: And Ascen from whence it is fayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wyfdome of Salomon. This cite is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiopia. In the fayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kyng is a Moore and tributarie to Th[e]mperour of Ethiopia. In this prouince are many excedyngge hyghe mountaynes vppon the which is fayde to be the earthly Paradyse: And fun fay that there are the trees of the soonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thither by reason of greate desertes of a hundreth dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza. And to haue fayde thus much of Affrike it may suffice.

THE FYRST VYAGE TO GVINEA.



N the yeare of owre Lorde. M. D. LIII. the. xii. [twelfth] day of August, sayled from Porchemouth two goodly shyppes, the Primrose and the Lion, with a pynnesse cauled the moone: beinge all well furnysshed aswell with men of the lustiest forte to the number of feuen score, as also with ordinaunce and vyttayles requiite to such a vyage: Hauynge also two capitaynes, the one a straunger cauled Antoniades Pinteado a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyse, discrete, and sober man, who for his cunnyng in saylynge beinge aswell an expert pilot as polytyke capitayne, was sumtyme in greate fauoure with the kynge of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and Guinea were comytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the sea in those partes: and was furthermore a gentleman of the kinge his masters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promifeth but deceaueth, neuer rayfeth but casteth downe ageyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes companions emulation and enuie,

he was after many aduersites and quarels made ageynst hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euyll matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnlyke matche of most sundry qualities and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many fowly spotted, knowen of many without profyte, and defyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whose smaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuersation an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and she for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the coompany that had owght to doo with hym: in so much that it was no maruayle that so goodly an enterpryse with so noble a furniture of men, shyppes, and ordinaunce of all fortes, with all kynde of vyttayles and that of so great abundaunce, had so smaule successe: which could be none otherwyse wher so foule a spotte dyd blemyshe, ye rather deface the rest. Thus departed these noble shyppes vnder sayle on theyr vyage. But first this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his shyp at Porchemouth, a kynfeman of one of the headde marchauntes, and shewynge herein a muster of the tragical partes he had conceaued in his brayne, and with such smaule begynninges nurysshed so monstrous a byrth, that more happy, yea and blessed was that younge man beinge lefte behynde then if he had byn taken with them, as sum doo wysse he had doonne the lyke by theyrs. Thus sayled they on theyr vyage vntyl they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wynes for the flore of theyr shyppes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great galion of the kynge of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet suche as coule not haue preuayled if it had attempted to withstande or resyst owre shyppes, for the which cause it was fet furth, not only to lette and interrupte these owre shyppes of theyr purposed vyage, but all other that shulde attempte the lyke: Yet chiefly to frustrate owre vyage. For the kyng of Portugale was sinisterly informed that owre shyppes were armed to his castel of Mina in these parties, wheras nothing lesse was ment.

After that owr shyppes departed from the Ilandes of Madera forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine Pinteados forowe as a man tormented with the company of a terrible hydra who hytherto flattered with hym and made hym a fayre countenance and shewe of loue. Then dyd he take vppon hym to commaunde all alone, settynge nowght bothe by capitayne Pinteado with the reste of the marchaunte factours: sumtymes with opprobrious woordes and sumtymes with threatenynge most shamefully abusynge them, takinge from Pinteado the seruice of the boys and certeyne mariners that were assigned hym by th[e] order and direction of the woorthypfull marchauntes, and leauynge hym as a common maryner, which is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a Portugale or Spanyarde to be dimynysshed their honoure which they esteeme aboute all rycheffe. Thus saylyng forward on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, continuyng their course from thence vntyll they arryued at the Ilande of saynt Nicolas where they vyttayled them selues with freshe meate of the

The Prymrose
The Lyon.
The Moone

Pinteado.

Brasile.
Guinea.

The flatterynge of
fortune.

The enel
conditions of
Wyndam.

The Ilandes of
Madera.

A galeon of
the kinge of
Portugale.

The castel of
Mina.

346
Howe Wyndam
abused Pinteado

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
The Ilande of
S. Nicolas.

Guinea.	fleshe of wylde goates whereof is great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng else. From henſe folowynge on theyr courſe, and tarynge here and there at the deſerte Ilandes in the waye, bycauſe they wolde not coome to tymely to the countrey of Guinea for the heate, and tarynge ſumwhat to longe (for what can bee wel mynyſtred in a common wealth where inequalitye with tyrannie wyll rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrſt lande of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ryuer of Seſto where they myght for theyr marchaundies haue laden theyr ſhyppes with the graynes of that countrey, which is a very hotte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of ſmaule feedes, ſo is the ſayde frute ful of graynes which are loſe within the codde, hauynge in the myddeſt thereof a hole on euery fyde. This kynde of ſpice is much vſed in coulde countreys, and may there be ſolde for great aduantage for th[e]exchange of other wares. But our men by the perſuaſion or rather inforcement of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and fettyng lyght by that commoditie in comparafon to the fine gold they thriſted, ſayled an hundreth leaques further vntyl they came to the golden lande : where not attemptinge to come nere the caſtell perteynynge to the kyng of Portugale, whiche was within the ryuer of Mina, made ſale of theyr ware onely on this fyde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the quantitie of an hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght, there beynge in caſe that they myght haue diſpatched al theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counſayle and experience of Pinteado. For when that Wyndam not ſatiffied with the golde whiche he had (and more myght haue had if he had taryed abowt the Mina) commaundyng the ſayde Pinteado (for ſo he toke vppon hym) to leade the ſhyppes to Benin beynge vnder the Equinoetial line and a hundreth and fiftie leaques beyonde the Mina where he loked to haue theyr ſhyppes laden with pepper : And beynge counſayled of the ſayde Pinteado conſyderynge the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further but to make ſale of theyr wares ſuch as they had for golde wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam not affentynge hereunto, fell into a ſuddeyne rage, reuilyng the ſayde Pinteado, caulynge hym Iewe with other opprobrious wordes, ſayinge. This horſon Iewe hath promiſed to brynge vs to ſuch places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the maſt. Pinteado gaue the ſorſayde counſayle to goo no further for the ſafeguard of the men and theyr lyues, which they ſhulde put in daungioure if they came to late for the roſſia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for ſmotherynge heate with cloſe and cloudy ayer and ſtorminge wether of ſuche putryfynge qualitie that it rotted the cotes of theyr backes : Or els for coomynge to ſoonne for the ſcorchyng heate of the ſonne which cauſed them to lynger in the way. But of force and not of wyll, browght he the ſhyppes before the ryuer of Benin : where rydynge at an anker, ſente theyr pinneſſe vp into the ryuer fiftie or threſcore leaques, from whenſe certeyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Pinteado, Francisco a Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were conducted to the courte where the kyng remayned. x. [ten] leaques from the ryuer fyde : whyther when they came, they were browght with a greate company to the preſence of the kyng who beynge a blacke moore (althoughe not ſo blacke as the reſt) fat in a great houghe haule longe and wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the rooſe of thynne boordes open in fundry places lyke vnto louers to lette in the ayer.
The ryuer of Seſto. Graynes.	
The thriſt of golde.	
The caſtel of mena. The quantitie of golde.	
Benin. Pepper.	
Furie admitteth no counſayle.	
The Roſſia. Rottinge heate. Scorchinge heate. Benin.	
Franciſco. Nicolas Lambert. The kyng of Benin his court.	
347	
Reuerence toward the kyng.	And here to ſpeke of the great reuerence they gyue to their kyng, beynge ſuch that if wee wolde gyue as much to our ſauour Chryſt, we ſhuld remoue from our heades many plages which wee dayly deferue for owre contempte and impietie.
The communication between the kyng of Benin and our men.	So it is therefore, that when his noble men are in his preſence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but ſyt courynge, as wee vppon owre knees ſo they vppon theyr buttockes with theyr elbowed vppon theyr knees and theyr handes beefore theyr faces, not lookynge vppe vntyll the kyng commaunde them. And when they are coomynge toward the kyng as farre as they do ſee hym, do they ſhewe ſuch reuerence ſytting on the grounde with theyr faces couered as beefore. Lykewiſe when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backes toward hym, but go creapyng backwarde with lyke reuerence.
Pepper.	And nowe to ſpeake ſumwhat of the communication that was betwene the kyng and owre men, yowe ſhall fyrſt vnderſtande that he hym ſelſe coulde ſpeake the Portugale tounge which he had lerned of a chylde. Therefore after that he had commaunded owre men to ſtande vp, and demaunded of them the cauſe of theyr coomynge into that countrey, they answered by Pinteado that they were marchauntes trauallyng into thoſe parties for the commodities of his countrey for exchange of wares which they had browght from theyr countreys, beynge ſuch as ſhulde bee no leſſe commodious for him and his people. The kyng then hauynge of owld lyeinge in a certeyne flore houſe thirtie or fortie kyntals of pepper (euery kyntall beynge an hundreth weyght) wyllynge them to looke vppon the ſame, and ageyne to brynge hym a ſyght of ſuche marchaundies as they had browght with them. And thervppon ſent with the capitayne and the marchauntes certeyne of his men to conducte them to the waters fyde, with other to brynge the ware from the pinneſſe to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares ſeene, the kyng grewe to this ende with the marchauntes, to prouyde in thirtie dayes the ladyng of all theyr ſhyppes with pepper. And in caſe theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the value of ſo muche pepper, he promyſed to credite them to theyr nexte returne : and thervppon ſente the countrey rounde about
The kynges gentienſſe toward our men.	

to gather pepper, caufynge the fame to be browght to the courte : So that within the fpace of xxx. [thirty] days they had gathered foure score toonne of pepper.

In the meane feafon owre men partly hauynge no rule of them felues, but eatyng without meafure of the frutes of the country, and drynkynge the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the fame, and in fuch extreeme heate runnyng continually into the water, not vfed before to fuch fuddeyne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were therby browght into fwellynges and agues. In fo much that the later tyme of the yeare commyng on, caufed them to dye funtymes. iii. [three] and funtymes. iiii. [four] or. v. [five] in a day. Then Wyndam perceauyng the tyme of the xxx. [thirty] dayes to be expyred, and his men dying fo faft, fente to the courte in poſte to capitayne Pinteado and the reſt to come away and to tary no longer. But Pinteado with the reſt, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifyng hym of the greate quantitie of pepper they had alre dy gathered and loked dayly for much more : Defyryng furthermore to remember the great prayfe and name they ſhulde wyne if they came home prosperouſly, and what ſhame of the contrary. With which anfwere Wyndam not fatified, and many of theyr men dyinge dayly, wylled and commaunded them ageine eyther to coomme away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pinteado harde this anfwere, thynkynge to perſuade hym with reaſon, tooke his way from the court towarde the ſhyppes beinge conducted thither with men by the kynges commaundement.

In the meane feafon Windam all rageinge, brake vppe Pinteados Caben, broke open his cheſtes, ſpoyled fuche prouifyon of coude ſtilled waters and fuckettes as he hade prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instrumentes to fayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulinge fyecke hym ſelfe, dyed alfo. Whoſe death Pinteado comming aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dereſt frend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd ſpete in his face, ſum caulynge hym Jewe, faying that he had browght them thether to kyll them : And ſum drawynge theyr ſwordes at hym makinge A ſhewe to ſley hym. Then he perceauinge that they wolde nedes away, defyred them to tary that he might fetch the reſte of the marchauntes that were lefte at the court. But they wolde not graunte his requere. Then defyred he them to gyue hym the ſhippe boate with as muche of an owlde fayle as myght ſerue for the fame, promiſynge them therewith to bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the reſt into England : But all was in vayne. Then wrotte he a letter to the courte to the marchauntes informynge them of all the matter, and promyſynge them if god wolde lende hym life to returne with al haſt[e] to fetch them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordſhippe ageynſte his wyll, thruſt amonge the boyes of the ſhippe, not vfed like a man, nor yet like an honeſt boy : But glad to find fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr ſhippes behynde them, whiche they ſoonke for lake of men to cary her. After this within fixe or ſeuē days faylinge, dyed alfo Pinteado for very penſueneſſe and thought that ſtrooke hym to the harte : A man worthy to ſerue any prince and moſt vilely vfed. And of ſeuē ſcore men came home to Plymmuowth fearſely fortye, and of them many dyed. And that no man ſhulde ſuſpecte theſe wordes which I haue fayd in commendation of Pinteado, to be ſpoken vpon fauour otherwyſe then truth, I haue thought good to adde herevnto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcytle hym at ſuche tyme as vpon the kynges his maſters diſpleaſure (and not for any other cryme or offence as may appere by the fayde letters) he was onely for pouertie inforced to coomme into Englande where he fyrſt perſuaded owre marchauntes to attempte the fayde vyages to Guinea. But as the kyng of Portugale to late repented hym that he had ſo punyſhed Pinteado vpon malicious informations of ſuch as enuid the mans good fortune, euen ſo may it hereby appere, that in ſum cafes, euen Lyons them ſelues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempt or ayded by the helpe of the pore myſe accordynge vnto the fable of Eſope.

¶ *The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kyng of Portugale made hym knyght of his houſe after all his troubles and imprifonment, which by wronge information made to the kyng, he had ſuſteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laſte deliuered, his cauſe knowen and manifeſted to the kyng by a grey fryer the kynges confeſſoure.*



The kyng do gyue yow to vnderſtande lorde Francis Deſſeofa one of my counſayle and ouerfeer of my houſe, that in conſideration of the good ſeruiſe which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the ſonne of Iohn Anes, dwellyng in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleaſure is, to make hym knyght of my houſe, alowynge to hym in penſion ſeuē hundredth reys monethly, and euery daye one alcayr of barley as longe as he kepeth a horſe, and to bee payde accordynge to the ordinaunce of my houſe. Prouydyng always that he ſhal receaue but one mariage gyfte : And this alſo in ſuch condition that the tyme which is excepted in owre

The diſorder and death of owre men.

The furie of Wyndam.

The death of Wyndam.

Pinteado euil vſed of the maryners.

348

The death of Pinteado.

Seuen hundredth reys are. x. s. [ten ſhillings]. Alcayr, is halfe a buſhel.

ordinaunce forbyddyng such men to mary for gettinge such chyldren as myght succede them in this allowance, which is fyxe yeares after the makynge of this patente, shalbe fyrste expired before he do mary. I therefore commaunde yowe to cause this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricula of owre housholde vnder the tytyle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, let the clerke of the Matricula for the certentie therof, wryte on the backe fyde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the leafe wherein this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym returne this wrytynge vnto the sayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in Almarin the xxii. [twenty-second] day of September, in the year of owre lorde. 1551. And this beneuolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the. xxv. [twenty-fifth] day of Iuly this present year.

Rey. * *
 * *
 * *

349

¶ *The secretaries declaration wrytten vnder the kynges graunt.*



Owre maiestie hath vouchsafed in respect and confyderation of the good seruice of Antonie Anes Pinteado dwellynge in the porte, and foonne of Iohn Anes to make hym knyght of yowre houfe with ordinarie allowance of feuen hundreth reys pension byt he moneth and one Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keepeth a horfe: And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of yowr houfe with condition that he shall haue but one mariage gyfte: And that not within the space of. vi. [six] yeares after the makynge of these letters patentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricula. Fol. 683.

Francisco de Siquera.

¶ *The coppie of the letter of Don Lewes th[e] infant and brother to the kyng of Portugale: sent into Englande to Antonianes Pinteado.*

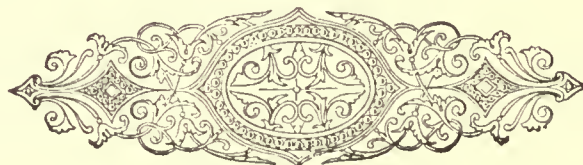


Antonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kynge, haue me hartely commended vnto yow. Peter Gonfalues is gone to seeke yow, desyryng to bryng yowe home ageyne into yowr country. And for that purpose, hath with hym a safe conduct for yow, graunted by the kynge, that thereby yowe may freely and without all feare come home. And although the wether be foule and stormy, yet fayle not to come. For in the tyme that his maiestie hath gyuen yow, yow maye doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifying the kynge, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladde: and to bryng the fame to passe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte. But forasmuch as Peter Gonfalues wyll make further declaration hereof vnto yow, I fay no more at this present. Wrytten in Luxburne the. viii. [eighth] day of December. Anno. M. D. LII.

¶ *The Infant don Lew[ε]s.*



These forsayd wrytynge I saue vnder se[a]le in the houfe of my frende Nicolas Lyese with whom Pinteado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithstanding all these frendly letters and fayre promyses, Pinteado durste not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his country men without the prefence of other, forasmuch as he had secrete admonition that they intended to sleigh hym, if tyme and place myght haue serued their wycked intent.



☞ THE SECONDE VYAGE TO GVINEA.



S in the fyrst vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory then the course of the nauigation, whereof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the discription of this seconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to shew the course of the same accordyng to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of the maryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a brieue declaration of the same as he founde and tryed all thynge not by coniecture, but by the arte of saylynge and instrumentes perteynyng to the mariners facultie. Not therefore affuminge to my selfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther fo boulde as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwise dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by arte and experience, I haue thought good to set furth the same in such forte and phrafe of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therefore as foloweth.

In the yere of owre lorde. M. D. LIIII. the. xi. [eleuenth] day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly shyppes, th[e]one cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of feuen score toonne: Th[e]other cauled the Barthelmewe a shyppe of the burden of. lxxx. [ninety tons]. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of feuen score toonne. With the sayde shyppes and two pynneses (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forward on owr vyage, and steyde at Douer. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes. We steyde also at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Darthmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at. ix. [nine] of the clocke at nyght departyng from the coaste of Englande, we fette of the stert bearyng fouthwest all that nyght in the sea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the sayde mooneth abowt noone, makynge owr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day of the sayde mooneth, makynge owr way good foutheast, dyd runne euery three houres two leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. [sixteen] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day to. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day, runnyng fouthwest in the sea, dydde runne. xii. [twelve] leaques.

Item runnyng from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] day runnyng foutheast, dyd runne. xviii. [eighteen] leaques.

And so from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] daye vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day, runnyng fouthsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. [two] leaques which amount to. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day tyl. iii. [three] of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, fouthsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, vntyll. iii. of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day, runnyng fouthsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day tyll. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day, dyd fouthsoutheast in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques.

Also from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day vntyl. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. xi. [eleventh] day,

dyd run fouthfouthwest the sum of. xii. [twelve] leaques, and from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke tyll. vi. [six] of the fayde day, dyd run. vi. [six] leaques.

Runnyng fouth and by west in the sea from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xi. [eleuenth] day tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xii. [twelfth] day, dyd run. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques.

From. vi. [six] of the clocke at after none the. xii. [twelfth] daye tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the xiii. [thirteenth] day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. [thirteen] leaques.

Item from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day, tyl. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day at after none that we were becalmed that wee could lye fouthwest with a fayle. And the. xv. [fifteenth] daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the East and easte northeast. The. xvii. [seventeenth] day in the mornynge, we had fyght of the Ile of Madera which doth ryse to hym that commeth in the north northeast parte vpryght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the fouth foutheast a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a saddle through the myddeste of it, standeth in the xxxii. [thirty-two] degrees: and in the weste parte, many springes of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and many whyte fyeldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and sum whyte houfes to the foutheast parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if yow may fe it, and in the north-east parte there is a byght or bay as though it were a harborowe. Also in the fayde part, there is a rocke a lyttle distance from the shore: and ouer the fayde byght, yow shall fe a great gappe in the mountayne.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke, we had fyght of the Ile of Palmes and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme ryseth rounde and lyeth foutheast and northwest, and the northwest parte is lowest. In the fouth, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll aboue that in the lande.

There is betwene the foutheast parte of the Ile of Madera and the northwest parte of the Ile of Palme. lvii. [fifty-seven] leaques. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. [twenty-nine] degrees. And owre course from Madera to the Ile of Palme was fouth and fouth and by west, so that we had fyght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The foutheast parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth foutheast and northwest. And betwene them is. xx. [twenty] leaques. Teneriffa and the greate Canarie cauled Grancanaria, and the west part of Fortifuentura standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and a halfe. Gomera is a fayre Ilande and very ragged and lyeth west fouthwest of Teneriffa. And who fo euer wyll come betwene theym twoo Ilandes, must come fouth and by east, and in the fouth parte of Gomera, is a towne and a good rode in the fayde parte of the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and three terces. Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a greate hyghe picke lyke a fuger lose. And vpon the fayde picke is snowe throughout all the hole yeare. And by reason of that picke, it maye bee knowen aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx [twentieth] day of Nouember from. vi. [six] of the clocke in the mornynge vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

¶ Betwene Gomera and Capo de las Barbas.



The. xxii. [twenty-second] day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the foonne goeth downe west and by fouth.

Vpon the coast of Barberie. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques by north cape blanke at. iii. [three] leaques of the mayne, there is. xv. [fifteen] sadome and good shelly grounde and sande amonge, and no stremes, and two smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. [twenty-two] degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hundreth leaques and owr course was fouth and by east. The fayde cape standeth in. xxii. [twenty-two] and a halfe: and all that coast is flatte. xvi. [sixteen] or. xvii. [seventeen] sadome deepe, vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leaques of frome the ryuer de Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vse many Spanyardes and Portugales to trade for fysshynge duryng the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coast is verye lowe landes. Also wee went from cape de las Barbas fouthfouthwest and fouthwest and by fouth: tyll we brought owre felues in. xx. [twenty] degrees and a halfe, rekenyng owr felues vii. [seven] leaques of: and that was the least sholes of cape Blanke.

Then we went fouth vntyll we brought owre felues in. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, rekenyng owre felues. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques of. And in. xv. [fifteen] degrees, we dyde reere the crossiers: and we myght haue rered them fooner if we had loked for theym. They are not ryghte a crosse in the moonethe of Nouember by reason the nyghtes are shorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the fyght of them the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde mooneth at nyght.

The fyrst of December owte. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, we sette owre course fouth and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. [nine] degrees and a terce, rekenyng owr felues. xxx. [thirty] leaques of the sholes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west fouthweste of them: The which sholes be. xxx. [thirty] leaques longe.

The Ile of Madera

The Ile of palmes.
Teneriffa.
The Canaries.

Frome madera to the Ile of Palmes.

Grancanaria.
Fortes Ventura.
The Iland of Gomera.

351

Teneriffa.
Snowe.

The coast of Barbarye.
Cape blanke.

The ryuer of de Oro.

The crossiers or crosse starres.

Rio Grande

The fourth of December, we beganne to fette ovr course southeaste, we beinge in. vi. [fix] degrees and a halfe. The ninth day of December we set ovr course east southeast.

The. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre course east, we beinge in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe, rekenynge owre felues. xxxvi. [thirty-fix] leaques from the coast of Guinea.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre course east and by north, rekenynge owr felues. xvii. [seventeen] leaques distant from cape Mensurado, the fayde cape beinge east northeast of vs, and the ryuer of Sesto beinge east.

The. xxi. [twenty-first] day of the fayde mooneth we fel with cape Me[n]surado to the southeast about two leaques of. This cape may be easely knowen, by reason the ryfyng of it is lyke a porpose hedde. Also towarde the southeast there are three trees, wherof the eastermost tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemost is lyke a heye flacke, and the southermost lyke vnto a iebet : and vpon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylles ryfyng one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the southeast of the three trees, is thre trees lyke a brandierwyfe : and all the coaste alonge is whyte sande. The fayde cape standeth within a lyttle in. vi. [six] degrees.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] of December, we came to the ryuer of Sesto, and remayned there vntyll the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde moneth. Here we thought it best to sende before vs the pynnesse to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnyng of the market before the commynge of the Iohn.

At the ryuer of Sesto, we had a toonne of graynes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. [six] degrees lackynge a terce. From the ryuer of Sesto to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. Rio Dulce standeth in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Sesto is easy to bee knowen by reason there is a ledge of rockes on the southeast parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the hauen, are fyue or fyxe trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborowe : but very narrowe at the enteraunce into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the hauen mouth right as yow enter. And all that coast betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth southeast and by east, northwest and by weste, beinge three leaques of the shore. And yow shall haue in sum places rockes two leaques of : and that betwene the ryuer of Sesto and cape de las Palmas.

Betwene the ryuer of Sesto and the riuier Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. And the hygh lande that is betwene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques from the ryuer of Sesto. And to the southeastwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shawgro and an other cauled Shyawe or Shauo, where yow may get fresshe water. Of this Shyawe, lyeth a ledge of rockes : and to the Southeastwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betwene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. [nine] or. x. [ten] leaques. To the Southeastwarde of, is a harborowe cauled faynte Vincent. Ryght ouer ageynst faynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the shore. To the southeastwarde of that rocke, yow shall see an Ilande about three or foure leaques of. This Ilande is not paste a league of the shore. To the east southeast of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water : and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow shall knowe by the fayde ryuer and rocke. The northwest fyde of the hauen, is flat sande : and the southeast fyde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plotte without any trees, and fo is it not in any other place.

In the rode, yow shall ryde in. xiii. [thirteen] or. xiiii. [fourteen] fadomes, good owes and sande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northwest lande togyther. And here wee ankered the last of December.

The thyrde day of Ianuary, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But summe lowe places therof by the water fyde, looke like redde cliffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the southermost lande in all the coast of Guinea : And standeth in foure degrees and a terce.

The coast from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes or de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daungour.

xxv. [twenty-five] leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And about. x. [ten] leaques before yow comme to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryfeth styll hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before yowe coomme to the fayde cape after other fyue leaques to the northwest parte of it, there is certeyne broken grounde with twoo greate rockes : and within them in the byght of a bay, is a castel cauled Arra, perteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Yow shall knowe it by the fayde rockes that lye of it : For there is none such from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coaste lyeth easte and by north, west and by south. From cape de las Palmas to the fayde castel, is foure score and. xv. [fifteen] leaques. And the coaste lyeth from the fayde castel to the Westermost poynte of the Trepoyntes, southeast and by south, northwest and by north. Also the Westermost poyntes of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande lyinge halfe a myle owt in the sea : and vpon the innermoste necke to the landewarde, is a tufte of trees, and there we arruyed the. xi. [eleventh] day of Ianuary.

The. xii [twelfth] day of Ianuary, we came to a towne cauled Samma or Samua, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques

Cape Mensurado.
The riuier of Sesto.

The riuier of Sesto.
Rio Dulce.

Cape de Monte.
Cape de las Palmas.

352
The lande of
Cakeado.
Shauo.
Croke.
Saint Vincentes
harboroue.

The riuier Dulce.

Cape de las
Palmas.

The coast of
Guinea.
Cape de
tres puntas.

The castel of
Arra.

The towne of
Samma.

The p[re]d[ic]t was
sir Iohn Vork
his nevie.

Cape Corea.
The castel of mina
p[er]teynynge to
the kyng of
Portugale.

Perecowe.
Perecowe grande.
Monte Rodondo.

353

The currants

Frome mina
homewarde.

Rio de los Potos
Iverye.

Cape de las
Palmas.

Currantes

The Ile de Flore.

The Ile of Corvo.

Where they lost
the sight of the
northe starre.
Howe the
compasse dooth
varie.

The pryrose.

from cape Trepoyntes toward east northeast. Betwene cape Trepoyntes and the towne of Samua, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the sea. Wee continued foure dayes at that towne: and the capitayne therof wolde needes haue a pledge a shore. But when they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym styl and wolde traffike no more, but shot of theyr ordinaunce at vs. They haue two or three pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The. xvi. [sixteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we made rekenynge to come to a place cauled cape Corea where capitayne Don Iohn dwelleth, whose men interteyned vs frendly. This cape Corea is foure leaques eastwarde of the castell of Mina, otherwyse cauled *La Mina*, or *Castello de Mina*, where we arriued the. xviii. [eighteenth] day of the mooneth. Here we made sale of al our cloth fauyng two or three packes.

The. xxvi. [twenty-sixth] day of the fame mooneth, we weyd anker and departed from thense to the Trinitie which was. vii. [seuen] leaques eastwarde of vs where the folde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wyllid vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. [eight] or. ix. [nine] leaques to fel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, and an other named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of both these, which yow shal knowe by a great rounde hyl nere vnto it named Monte Rodondo lynge westwarde from it. And by the water syde are many hyghe palme trees. From hense dyd we fet furth homewarde the. xiii. [thirteenth] day of February and plyed vppe alongest tyll we came within. vii. [seuen] or. viii. [eight] leaques to cape Trepoyntes. Abowt. viii. [eight] of the clocke the. xv. [fifteenth] day at after noone, we dyd cast abowt to seawarde. And beware of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue yow fore.

Who so euer shall coomme from the coast of Mina homewarde, let hym be fuer to make his way good west vntyll he reken hym selfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant setteth alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. [twenty] leaques eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio de los Potos where yow may haue freshe water and balasse enough, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces.

And when yow reken yowre selfe as farre shotte as cape de las Palmas, beinge in a degree or a degree and a halfe, yow may go west or west and by north vntyll yowe comme in three degrees: and then yowe maye go weste northwest, and northwest and by west vntyll yow comme in fwe degrees and then northwest. And in the. vi. [six] degrees, wee mette northerly wyndes and greate roostynge of tydes. And as wee coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north northwest. Furthermore betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go great currantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] daye of Apryll, wee were in. viii. [eight] degrees and two terces: and so we ranne to the northwest, hauynge the wynde at northeast and eastnortheast, and sumtymes at easte untyll we were at. xviii. [eighteen] degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And so from. xviii. [eighteen] and two terces, we hadde the wynde at east and east northeast, and sumtymes at east foutheast: and then wee reckoned the Ilandes of cape Verde easte foutheast of vs, wee iudgynge owre felues to be. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques of. And in. xx. [twenty] and. xxi. [twenty-one] degrees, wee had the wynde more easterly to the southwarde then before. And so we ran to the northwest and northnorthwest, and sumtymes north and by west and north vntyll wee came into. xxxi. [thirty-one] degrees, where we reckoned owre felues a hundreth and foure score leaques southwest and by fouth of the Ilande de Flore or de los Flores. And there we met with the wynde at fouthfoutheast, and fet owre course northeast.

In. xxxiii. [thirty-three] degrees, we had the wynde at the fouth and southwest: and then we fet our course north northeast, and so we ranne to xl. [forty] degrees: and then we fet our course northeast the wynde beinge at the southwest and hauynge the Ile de Flore east of vs, and. xvii. [seventeen] leaques of.

In. xli. [forty-one] degrees, we met with the wynd at northeast, and so we ranne northwestwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west northwest and at the west within. vi. [six] leaques runnyng towarde the northwest: And then wee cast abowt and ley northeast vntyll we came in. xlii. [forty-two] degrees, where we fette our course east northeast, iudgynge the Ile of Coruo fouth and by west of vs and. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques distant from vs.

A remeberaunce that the. xxi. [twenty-first] day of Maye, we communed with Iohn Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeast, and iudged hym selfe. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. [thirty-nine] degrees and a halfe.

Note that in the fourth day of September [December?] vnder nine degrees, we lost the syght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the. xlv. [forty-five] degrees the compasse is varied. viii. [eight] degrees to the west.

Item, in. xl. [forty] degrees, the compasse dyd vary. xv. [fifteen] degrees in the hole.

Item, in. xxx. [thirty] degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied. v. [five] degrees to the west.

Be it also in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepoyntes, the pynneffe went alongest the shore thinkynge to fell sum of our wares. And so we came to anker three or foure leaques west and by fouth of the cape Trepoyntes where we lefte the Trinitie.

Then owre pynneffe came a boorde with all our men. The pynneffe also tooke in more wares. They toulde me more ouer that they wolde go to a place where the Primrose was and had receaued much golde at

the fyrfte vyage to thefe parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vppon the coaft, dydde wey and folowe theym, and lefte the Trinitie abowte foure leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynfte that towne foure dayes: fo that Martine by his owne defyre and affente of fum of the commiffioners that were in the pinneffe, wente a fhore to the towne. And there Iohn Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge three myles of trafekyng at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrfte townes where wee did trafficke for gold, to the northeaft of cape Trepoints:

Hetherto continueth the courfe of the vyage as it was defcribed by the fayde pilot. Nowe therefore to fpeake fumwhat of the contrey and people, and of fuche thynges as are brought from thenfe.

They brought from thenfe at the laft vyage, foure hundreth pounce weyght and odde of golde of. xxii. [twenty-two] carrattes and one grayne in fineneffe. Alfo. xxxvi. [thirty-fix] buttes of graynes: and about two hundreth and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quantities. Of thefe, I fawe and meafured fum of. ix. [nine] fpannes in length as they were coked. Sum of them were as bygge as a mans thygh about the knee: and weyed abowte foure feore and ten pounce weyght a peece. They fay that fum one hath byn feene of a hundreth and. xxv. [twenty-five] pounce weyght. Other there were which they caule the teethe of calues of one or two or three yeares, wherof fum were a foote and a halfe, fumme two foote, and fum three or more accordyng to th[e] age of the beafte. Thefe great teethe or tufkes, growe in the vpper iaw downewarde, and not in the nether iawe vpwarde, wherein the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this lafte vyage was brought from Guinea the headde of an elephant of fuch huge byggenesse, that only the bones or crauwe therof befyde the nether iawe and greate tufkes, wayed abowte two hundreth weyght, and was as muche as I coulde well lyfte from the grounde. In fo muche that confideryng alfo herewith the weyght of. ii. [two] fuch great teethe, the nether iawes with the leffe teethe, the tounge, the greate hangyng eares, the bygge and longe fnowte or troonke, with all the fleffe, braynes, and fkyne, with all other partes belongyng to the hole headde, in my iudgemente it coulde wey lyttle leffe then fyue hundreth weyght. This headde dyuers haue fene in the houfe of the woorthy marchant fyr Andrewe Iudde, where alfo I fawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes, but much more with the eyes of my mynde and fpirite confydered by the woork, the cunnyng and wyfdome of the woork mafter: withowt which confyderation, the fyght of fuch ftraunge and woonderfull thynges may rather feeme curiofities then profitable contemplations.

The elephant (which fum caule an oliphant) is the biggeft of all foure footed beafes. His forelegges are longer then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his fiete vndiuided. His fnowte or troonke is fo longe and in fuch forme that it is to hym in the fteede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by bryngyng his troonke to his mouth. Therwith he helpeth vp his mafter or keeper: therwith he ouerthroweth trees. Byfyde his two greate tufkes, he hath on euery fyde of his mouth foure teethe wherwith he eateth and gryndeth his meate. Eyther of thefe teethe, are almoft a fpan in length as they growe alonge in the iawe: and are abowte two inches in height and almoft as much in thicke- nefe. The tufkes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lyttle, and fo farre in his mouth that it can not bee feene. Of all beafes they are moft gentyll and tractable. For by many fundry ways they are taught and do vnderftand: In fo much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke fence and sharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once feafoned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephant lyueth two hundreth yeares, or at the leaſte one hundreth and twentie. The female almoft as longe: but the floure of theyr age, is but. lx. [fixty] yeares as fum wryte. They can not fuffer wynter or coulede. They loue ryuers and wyll often go into them vp to the fnowte wherwith they blowe and fuffe, and play in the water: but fwymme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodyes. Plinie and Soline wryte that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wylderneffe beinge owt of the way, gentyllly they wyl go before hym and bryng hym into the playne waye. Ioyned in battayle, they haue no fmaule refpecte vnto them that be wounded. For they bryng them that are hurt or wery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkynge the iufe of barley. They haue continuall warre ageynft dragons which defyre theyr bludde bycaufe it is verye coulede. And therefore the dragon lyyng awayte as the Elephant paffeth by, wyndeth his tayle (beinge of exceedyng length) abowt the hynder legges of the elephant: and fo fleyng hym, thruſteth his heade into his tronke and exhausteth his breth, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his tronke. And when the elephant waxeth faynt, he fauleth downe on the ferpente beinge nowe full of bludde: and with the poyle of his body breaketh hym: fo that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth owt of hym mengineled togyther: whiche beinge coulede, is congeled into that fubſtaunce which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, other-

The towne of
Samma.
354
Golde.

Golde foure
hundreth weyght
Graynes.
Iuery.
Elephantes teethe.

The head of
an Elephant.

The
contemplations
of gods woorkes

The description
and properties of
the Elephant.

Debate betwene
the Elephant and
the dragon.

355

Sanguis Draconis

Cinnabaris.

wyfe cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermillion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

Thre kyndes of elephantes.

They are also of three kyndes, as of the marysshes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no lesse differynge in condicions. Philostratus wryteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horse of Nyfea, so much doth the elephantes of India exceede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, sum haue byn seene of the heyght of. ix. [nine] cubites. The other do so greatly feare these that they dare not abyde the fyght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuskes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tusked. They are of dyuers heyghtes, as of. xii. [twelue] xiii. [thirteen] and. xiiii. [fourteen] dodrantes, euery dodrant beinge a measure of. ix. [nine] ynches. Sum wryte that an elephant is bygger then three wylde oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a mouse. But they of Ethiopie or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde and withowte heare or brydels. Their eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very lyttle. Owr men sawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in Guinea as they fayled into the lande.

Workes of Iuery.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vse in the warres, of theyr generation and chastitie, when they were fyrste seene in the theatres and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they cast theyr tuskes, with th[e]use of the same in medicine, who so desyreth to know, let hym rede Plinie in the. viii. [eighth] booke of his natural hystorie. He also wryteth in his. xii. [twelfth] booke, that in owlde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes teeth: as tables, treffels, postes of houfes, rayles, lattesses for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and vncoloured and intermyxte with sundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and viginalles.

They had such plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Iosephus wryteth that one of the gates of Hierusalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whytenesse thereof was so much esteemed that it was thought to represent the naturall fayrenesse of mans skynne: In so much that such as went about to set furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynges, were reprobued by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candefacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes also describynge the fayre neckes of bewtiful virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes.

The people of Africa.

And to haue fayde thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may suffice.

Nowe therefore to speke sumwhat of the people and their maners and maner of luynges, with also an other briefe description of Africa.

It is to vnderstande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coast of Guinea and the mydde partes of Affrica, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions about the same, were in oulde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beastly luynges, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and so scorched and vexed with the heate of the foonne, that in many places they curse it when it ryfeth. Of the regions and people about the inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Gemma Phrysius wryteth thus.

Libia Interior.

Lybia Interior, is very large and defolate, in the whiche are many horrible wyldernes and mountaynes replenished with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monstrous beastes and serpentes. Fyrst from Mauritania or Barberie toward the south is Getulia, a rowgh and saluage region whose inhabitantes are wylde and wanderynge people. After these folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Pharufii whiche wander in the wyldernesse caryinge with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aphrica, and are extended to the West Ocean. Southwarde also they reache to the ryuer Nigritis whose nature agreeth with the ryuer of Nilus forasmuch as it is increased and diminysshed at the same tyme, and bryngeth furth the like beastes as the Crocodile. By reason wherof, I thinke this to be the same ryuer which the Portugaies caule Senega. For this ryuer is also of the same nature. It is furthermore maruelous and very strange that is fayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde therof, th[e] inhabitants are of hyghe stature and blacke: and on the other side of browne or tawny colour and lowe stature, which thynges also owre men confirme to be trewe.

Getulia.

Ethiopes.
Nigrite.
The ryuer Nigritis
or Senega.

356

A strange thynges.

There are also other people of Lybia cauled Garamantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respect to chastitie. After these are the nations of the people cauled Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilice Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Nubi. These haue the same situation in Ptolomie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Nubia. Here are certeyne Christians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiopie cauled Prester Iohn. From these towarde the west, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricerones: whose region (as farre as maye bee gathered by coniecture) is the same that is nowe cauled Regnum Orguene, confinynges vpon the east partes of Guinea. From henfe westwarde and sumwhat towarde the north, are the kyngdomes of Gambia and Budomele not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from henfe towarde the inlande regions and alonge by the sea coast,

Garamantes.

People of Lybia.

Prester Iohn.

Regnum Orguene
Gambia.

are the regions of Ginoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Gynne. On the west side of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cauled *Cabouerde* or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyrst directe they courfe when they sayle to America or the lande of Brasile. Then departyng frome henfe, they turne to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the south. But to speake sumwhat more of Ethiopia. Although there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuyled into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this perteyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbrased rounde abowte with the stremes of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reigned in oulde tyme. Iosephus wryteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thenfe to Hierusalem to heare the wyfedome of Salomon. From henfe towarde the East, reigneth the sayde Christian Emperoure Prester Iohn whom sum caule Papa Iohannes, and other say that he is cauled Pean Iuan (that is) greate Iohn, whose empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended to the coastes of the redde sea and Indian sea. The myddle of the region is almost in the 66. degrees of longitude, and. xii. [twelue] degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people cauled Clodii, Rifophagi, Babilonii, Axiunite, Mofyli, and Molybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose inhabitauntes dwell in caues and dennes. For these are theyr houses, and the fleshe of serpentes theyr meate, as wryteth Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but rather a grynnyng and chatteryng. There are also people without heades cauled Blemines, hauyng their eyes and mouth in theyr breste. Lykewyse Strucophagi and naked Ganphafantes. Satyrs also which haue nothyng of men but only shape. More ouer Oripei great hunters. Menones also, and the region of Smyrnophora which bryngeth furth myrre. After these is the region of Azania in the whiche manye elephantes are founde. A great parte of the other regions of Afrike that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe ascrybed to the kingdome of Melinde, whose inhabitauntes are accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kyng is ioyned in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Prester Iohn.

The other Ethiope cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiope, is not yet known for the greatnesse therof but only by the sea coastes. Yet is it described in this maner. Fyrste from the Equinoctiall towarde the south, is a greate region of Ethiopians which bryngeth furth whyte elephantes, tygers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region that bryngeth furth plentie of Cinanome, lying betwene the braunches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habassia, a region of Christien men, lying both on this syde and beyonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi (that is) such as lyue only by fyfhe: and were sumtyme subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the Ethiopians cauled Rhapsii, and Anthropophagi that are accustomed to eate mans fleshe, inhabite the regions nere vnto the mountaynes cauled *Montes Luna*, (that is) the mountaynes of the moone. Gazatia, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne. After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bonæ Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, by the which they passe that sayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, forasmuche as the fame are in euery globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wryte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians bycause it is without coule. For the Greeke letter Alpha or, A, signifyeth pryuation, voyde, or without: and phrice, signifieth coule. For in deede although in the steede of wynter they haue a cloudye and tempestious season, yet is it not coule, but rather smothering hot with also hot shoures of raine and sumwhere suche scorchyng wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they feeme at certeyne tymes to liue as it were in fornaces, and in maner alrede halfe way in Purgatorie or hel. Gemma Phrisius writeth that in certeyne partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night season is seene flynyng with many straunge fyers and flames ryfing in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are sumtime harde as it were the founde of pipes, trumpettes, and droommes. Whiche noyses may perhappes be caused by the vehemente and fundry motions of such fyery exhalations in the ayer, as we se the lyke in many experiences wrought by fyre, ayer, and wynd. The holownesse also and diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes hereof, bysyde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the sayd fyery exhalations ascending thether are suddenly stryken backe with greate force. For euen common and daily experience teacheth vs by the whyffinge of a burnyng forge what noyse fyre maketh in the ayer, and much more where it striueth when it is inclosed with ayer as apereth in gonns, and as the lyke is sene in only ayer inclosed, as in orgen pipes and such other instrumentes that go by winde. For wynde as say the philosophers is none other then ayer vehemently moued, as we see in a payer of belowes and suche other.

Sum of owre men of good credit that were in this last vyage to Guinea, affirme ernestly that in the nyght season they felt a sensible heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thyng although it be straunge and insensible to vs that inhabite coulede regions, yet doothe it stande with good reason that it may so be, forasmuch as the nature of the starres and planets (as wryteth Plinie) confysteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauyd seemeth to confirme in his. Cxx.

Guinea or Ginoia.

Cap. Verde.

The Portugales nauigations to Brasile.

Ethiopia.

The Ilande of Meroe.

The queene of Saba.
Prester Iohn emperour of Ethiopia.

People of the east syde of Africa.

Ophiophagi.

People without heades.

Myrre.

Azania.

Regnum Melinde.

Ethiopia Interior.

Whyte elephantes

Habassia.

Ichthiophagi
Anthropophagi.
Montes Luna.
Gazatia.

357

Cap. Bonæ Spei.

Aphrica without coule.
The winter of Africa.

Flames of fire and noyse in the ayer.

The myddell region of the ayer is coulede.
The strife of elementes.

Wynde.

The heate of the moone.

The nature of the stars.

Spoutes of water
fauling out of
the ayer.

Cataracts of
heauen.

Vehement motions
of the sea.

A straunge
thyng.

The poure of
nature.

358

They rase their
skinnes.

Fine iewells.

A braslet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogs chains of
golde.

A muske cat.

Their houses

Their feeding

Fleing fishes

A straunge thyng

[120th] Pfalme, where speakyng of such men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he sayth thus : *Per diem sol non exuret te, nec luna per noctem.* That is to say. In the day the foonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

They say furthermore that in certeyne places of the sea, they sawe certeyne stremes of water which they caule spoutes faulynge owt of the ayer into the sea : And that sum of these are as bygge as the greate pyllers of churches : In so muche that sumtymes they faule into flyppes and put them in greate daungiour of drownynge. Sum phantasie that these shulde bee the cat[ra]ctes of heauen which were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be suche fluxions and eruptions as Aristotle in his boke de Mundo, saith to chaunse in the sea. For speakyng of suche thynges as are seene often tymes in the sea, he wryteth thus : Often tymes also euen in the sea are seene euaporations of fyre, and suche eruptions and breakyng furth of sprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whyrlepooles, and fluxions are caused of such other vehement motions not only in the middest of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is fuddeynly lysted vp and caryed abowt with the moone. etc. By which woordes of Aristotle it dooth appere that such waters maye bee lysted vp in one place at one tyme, and fuddeynly faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes pertyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he harde Sebastian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther about the coastes of Brasile or Rio de Plata, his flyppe or pinnes was fuddeynly lysted from the sea and cast vpon the lande I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and suche other lyke woonderfull and straunge woorkes of nature whyle I conyfyder and caule to remembreance the narownes of mans vnderstandynge and knowleage in comparyson of her mighty poure, I can but cease to maruayle and confesse with Plinie that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose poure is not yet knowen to men.

Many thynges more owre men sawe and conyfydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put sum in memory that the reader maye aswell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hystorye.

Amonge other thynges therefore touchynge the maners and nature of the people, this maye seeme straunge that their princes and noble men vse to pounse and rafe their skynnes with prety knottes in diuers formes as it were branched damafke, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, braslettes, hoopcs, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my selfe haue one of their brafettes of Iuery wayng twoo pounde and vi. [six] ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] ounces. This, one of their women dyd weare vpon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and sumwhat carued, with a hole in the myddest wherin they put their handes to weare it on their arme. Sum haue of euery arme one and as many on their legges, wherewith sum of them are so galded that although they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyl they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum weare also on their legges great shackles of bryght copper which they thynke to bee no leffe cumly. They weare also collars, braslets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blewe stones lyke beades. Lykewyfe sum of their women weare on their bare armes certeyne foresleeues made of the plates of beaten golde. On their fyngers also they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chyldeyn make in a ryng of a ruffe. Amonge other thinges of golde that our men bowght of them for exchange of their wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in their bargenyng, and wyl not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspecte in occupyinge the same. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gently for they wyl not trafike or bryng in any wares if they be euyl vsed. At the fyrst viage that our men had into these parties, it so chaunfed that at their departure from the fyrst place where they dyd trafike, one of them eyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mystruftyng that that shulde haue hyndered their bargenyng in an other place whyther they intended to go. But for all the hast they could make with full sayles, the fame of their mysfusage so preuented them that the people of that place also offended therby, wold bring in no wares : In so muche that they were inforced eyther to restore the catte or pay for her at their price before they could trafike there.

Their houses are made of foure postes or trees, and couered with bouwes.

Their common feedynge is of rootes and such fysshes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also such flyng fysshes as are seene in the sea of the Weste Indies. Owre men salted of their fysshes hopynge to prouyde store therof. But they wolde take no salte : And muste therefore be eaten furthwith as sum say. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be salted immediately after they be taken, they wyl last vncorrupted. x. [ten] or. xii. [twelue] dayes. But this is more straunge, that parte of such flesshe as they caryed with them owte of Englande and putrified there, became sweete ageyne at their returne to the clime of temperate regions.

They vse also a straunge makinge of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two stoncs with their handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice their famelic. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they stycke vpon sum post of theyr houfes, where it is baked by the heate of the fonne: So that when the master of the houfe or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.

They haue very fayre wheate, the ere whereof is twoo handfulles in length and as bygge as a great bulruffhe, and almost foure ynches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, semeth to be almost as bygge as the lyttle fynger of a mans hande, or lyttle lesse. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as owr peafon: rounde also, and verye whyte and sumwhat shynynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substauce of theym turneth into floure, and maketh lyttle branne or none. I toulde in one ere twoo hundreth and three score graynes. The ere is inclosed in thre blades longer then it felse, and of two ynches brode a piece. And by this frutefulnessse the foonne seemeth partly to recompence such greefes and molestations as they otherwyfe receaue by the feruent heate thereof. It is doubtlesse a woorthy contemplation to consider the contrary effectes of the foonne: or rather the contrary paffions of suche thynges as receaue th[e] influence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iuse that droppeth from the cut branches of the barren date trees cauled Palmites. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the fayde branches euery euenynge and let them so hange all nyght, or els they set them on the ground vnder the trees that the droppes may faule therin. They say that this kynde of drynke is in tast much lyke vnto whey, but sumwhat sweeter and more pleafaunt. They cutte the branches euery euenynge bycause they are fered vp in the day by the heate of the foonne. They haue also great beanes as bygge as chestenuttes, and verye harde with a shell in the stede of a huske.

Many thynges more myght be sayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monstrosus thynges that are engendered in Afrike. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of such thynges as owre men partely sawe and parrely browght with them.

And wheras before speakyng of the frute of graynes, I descrybed the same to haue holes by the syde (as in deede it is as it is browght hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that those holes were made to put slynges or twygges throughe the frute therby to hange them vp to drye at the fonne. They growe not paste a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them selues, are cauled of the physicians, Grana Paradyfi.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr shyppes were maruelously ouergrown with certen shels of. ii. [two] ynches length and more as thyecke as they coule stande, and of such byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of them. They certeynly affirme that in these there groweth a certeyne slimy substauce which at the length slypping owt of the shel and fauling in the sea, becometh those foules which we cal barnacles. The lyke shelles haue byn seene in shyppes returning from Islande. But these shelles were not past halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I sawe the Prymrose lyeinge in the docke, and in maner couered with the sayd shelles, which in my iudgemente shulde greatly hynder her saylynge. Theyr shyppes were also in many places eaten with the woormes cauled Bromas or Biffas whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betwene the plankes whiche they eate throughe in many places.

Amonge other thynges that chaunced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that whereas they sayled thether in feuen weekes, they coule returne in no lesse space then. xx. [twenty] weekes. The cause wherof they say to be this: That about the coast of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the East by reason whereof they were enforced to sayle farre owte of theyr course into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the west to brynge them home. There dyed of owre men at this last vyage abowt. xxiiii. [twenty-four] whereof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the landes of Soria and Englande. They browght with them certeyne blacke slaues, wherof sum were taule and stronge men, and coule well agree with owr meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyst ayer dooth sumwhat offende them. Yet doubtlesse men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate resolueth the radical moisture of mens bodies, as could constreyneth and preferueth the same.

This is also to bee considered as a fecreate woork of nature, that througheout all Afryke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the same on bothe sydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contrarily such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curle and short wolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afryke, but of the

Their bread.

Their wheate.

359

The soonne.

Their drinke.

Graynes.

Shelles that cleaue to shyppes.

Barnacles.

Bromas.

A secreate.

The death of owr men.

Could may be better abiden then heate.

The West Indies.

coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades : the caufe of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

360 It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the soonne, so that they had it north from them at noone the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of Marche.

And to haue fayde thus much of these vyages it may fuffice. For (as I haue fayd before) Wheras the parteners at whose charges this booke is prynted, wolde longe fence haue me proceded no further, I had not thought to haue wrytten any thyng of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encoraged me to attempt the fame. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

THE MANER OF FYNDYNGE THE LONGITVDE OF
REGIONS BY DYVERS WAYES AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF
GEMMA PHRYSIVS.



Perceauynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by trauaylynge the sea haue obserued the starres, but also amonge sum men that are skylfull in mathematicall sciense, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the course from the East to the Weste) can not be perfectly knowen, I haue thowght good for the better fatiffying of such as desire to haue sum knowleage hereof, to interprete such demonstracions as I haue redde of the declarynge of the same in Gemma Phrysius, who as touchynge this matter hath added th[e]inuentions of other, a more certeyne way of his own diuise wherby (as he fayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions although he were dryuen owt of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknowen and of vnknowen distance. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

When yow haue founde the place of the moone, yow ought to confyder the houre when she occupied that place. Then eyther by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonfus yowe owght to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the same signe of the Zodiake in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knowen. Then reducyng the houres to. xxiiii. [twenty-four] the lesse number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres and mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. [fifteen] and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctiall conteyned betwene two meridians. And if after this diuision there remayne any minutes, multiplie them also by. xv. [fifteen] and therby shalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the same longitude if they be lesse: So shall yowe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknowen from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or style that moueth abowt the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupyeth the place assigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntyll the style that sheweth the houre, be coomme to the houre in the whiche yowe fowght the vnknowen place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall distaunte or diuyded from the moueable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which yow seeke. Neuerthelesse, the more certeyne way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thyng that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipyses of the moone. For the dyuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the fayd eclipyses chaunce in dyuers regions, the longitude maye thus aswell be knowen by geometrie and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at al tymes nor to all men, and the other way is sumwhat difficult, neyther at al tymes redy by reason of the coniunctions of the moone and furthermore also sumtymes vncerteyne and varying sumwhat from the truth for the dyuers

By the moone.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Howe to fynd
the longitude by
the globe

The Eclipyses of
the moone.

aspectes and latitudes of the mone, it fo chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the fame very vncerteyne of many regions, and especially of those which the Spanyardes haue of late discouered. For no certentie doubtlesse can be knowen by such commensurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of such vyages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cofmographie. I wyl therefore adde herevnto sum thyng of myne owne inuention whereby by an eafy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all vyages and nauigations.

361

¶ *A newe maner of fyndyng the Longitudes of regions.*

Little clockes



See that in these owre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are very artificially made the whiche for theyr smaule quantitie are not comberous to be caryed abowt in all vyages. These often tymes moue continually for the space. of. xxiiii [twenty-four] houres: and may with helpe continewe theyr mouyng in maner perpetually. By the helpe therefore of these the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Before wee enter into any vyage, wee muste fyrste forefee that the fayde clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whense we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplysshynge therefore. xv. [fifteen] or. xx. [twenty] myles of the vyage, if wee defyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dystant frome the place of owre departure, we must tary vntyll the poynt or stile of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of sum houre: and at the same moment by owr Astrolabie or globe, owght wee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which yf it agree in minute with the houres which the Horoscopium or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longitude: and that owre course hath byn towarde the south or north. But if it dyffer one hour or any mynute, then are the same to bee reduced to degrees or minutes as we haue tought in the chapiture here before. And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thousand myles owt of my attempted course and in an vnknowne distance, but the latitude must fyrste bee perfectly knowen.

By the Astrolabie
and globe.
Horoscopus or
the Ascendent.

The latitude.

F I N I S.

¶ *A bryefe reherſal of the contentes of the bookes of the fyrſt Decade, and ſo folowynge of all the other Decades. Folio. i. [p. 65.]*



IN the fyrſt booke is declared howe Chriſtophorus Colonus otherwyſe cauled Columbus, perſuaded Fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of Spayne, to ſoother his attempte in ſearching newe and vnknowne landes in the Weſt Ocean. Alſo of the. vii. Ilandes of Canarie, by whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonus founde the Ilandes of Hiſpaniola, and Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes, which are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſſhe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maizium, wherof the people of the Ilandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the fandes of ryuers, and of the ſerpentes which are without hurte. Alſo of turtle doues, duckes, and popyngeiayes.

Of Maſtix, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vnknowne to vs: and of the fruteſulnes of the Iland of Hiſpaniola which the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the ſeconde vyage of Colonus into theſe regions, and howe he was furnyſſhed with. xvii. ſhyppes and a thouſande and two hundreth ſouldyers, with all kynde of artiliarye, artificers, and grayne to fowe. And of the tree frome the which water droppeth continually into a trenche made by mans hande.

¶ *The contentes of the ſeconda booke. Fol. 4. [p. 68.]*

¶ Howe Colonus departynge from the Ilandes of Canarie, ſayled. viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques in. xxi. dayes, and came to Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant fauour of ſpices which proceeded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of Galanta or Galana and Guadalupea, and of the trees which beare that kynde of cotton whiche the Italians caule Bombafine, and the Spanyardes Algadon.

Of dyuers kyndes of poppingiayes: And of the Iland of Martinino or Madinino, being inhabited only with women: Alſo of dyuers other fruteſull Ilandes: And of a conflicte which the Spanyardes had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are ſeene the mynes of metals and precious ſtones: and of the fruteſull and peopulous Ilande cauled Buri-chena or Boriquen. or *Infula S. Iohannis*.

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrſt vyage he lefte in Hiſpaniola, were ſlayne in his abſence by the rebellion of Guaccanarillus, kynge of the Region of Xamana: and of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the vſe of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which ſwamme. iii. myles in the ſea: And of the maner of gatherynge of gold in the fandes of ryuers.

¶ *The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10. [p. 73.]*

¶ A particular deſcription of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, whiche Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kynge Salomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous fruteſulnes of Hiſpaniola, and of the ſuger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibaua, and of the ryuers in whoſe fandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of exceadyng great quantitie.

Of wylde vines of pleaſaunt taſte, and of graſſe which in foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of the Eaſt and the Weſt: And of the fruteſull and peopulous Ilande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had ſayled abowte the loweſt hemiſpherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a ſecrete of Aſtronomie touchynge the ſame matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundreth Ilandes, and paſſed by three thouſande vnnamed.

Of certeyne ſerpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote longe, whoſe fleſſhe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whoſe water is very hotte: and of the huntyng ſyſſhe which taketh other ſyſſhes.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyſes as bygge as targets, and of a fruteſull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed ſhape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and pynepaple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare ſpices, and of cranes of exceadyngne bignes.

Of ſtocke doues of more pleaſaunte taſte then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernoure as touchinge the immortalitie of the fowle: Alſo of the rewarde of vertue and punyſhment of vice.

A ſimilitude of the golden worlde, and of prouiſion withoute care.

Howe the admirall tell ſicke by reaſon of to much watchynge: And of a ſedition which roſe among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hiſpaniola.

¶ *The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18. [p. 79.]*

Howe the Kynges of the Ilande of Hiſpaniola, were by the Spaniardes myſbehauour prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall ſent for them.

Howe kinge Caunaboa the Lorde of the houſe of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, conſpired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were taken priſoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hiſpaniola: and howe the Admirall builded certeyne fortrefſes.

Of a piece of rude golde waighinge. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plentie of Amber and orepente: And of the wooddes of braſile trees.

Howe the inhabitants are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region diſpoſethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Caunaboa came ageynſte the Admirall with an army of ſiue thouſand naked men: and how he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the fruteſull vale Magona, in the fandes of whoſe ryuers is founde greate plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirlewyndes and tempeſtes.

Howe the Admirall ſente forth his brother Bartholomeus Colonus with an army of men to ſearch the gold mines and of the ſoffes which he found to haue bin digged in old tyme

¶ *The Contentes of the v. booke.* Fol. 22. [p. 82.]

Howe the Lieuetenaunt builded a fortresse in the golde mynes : And prepared instrumentes for the pouring and fynyng of the golde.

Howe certeyne shippes laden with vyttayles, came frome Spayne : And howe the Lieuetenaunt sent the kynges which rebelled, with three hundred captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunte remoued his habytacion : And buylde a fortresse which he cauled faynt Dominickes towre Also howe he passed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entered into the wooddes of brasyle trees.

Howe the great kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, frendly enterteyned the Lieuetenaunt, and brought hym to his pallayce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortresses which were erected in Hispaniola : And howe the Lieuetenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt fette vppon the kynges vnwares in the nyght seafon, and tooke. xiiii. of them pryfoners.

Howe kyng Guarionexius, capitayne of the conspiracie was pardoned, and howe he persuaded the people to obedience.

Howe kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, sente messengers to the Lieuetenaunt to repayre to his pallayce where he founde xxxii. kynges redy with theyr tributes : And howe the queene Anacaona entyfed hym to eate of the serpentes fleshe.

Howe the serpentes fleshe is prepared to be eaten : And how delicate meate theyr eggges are yf they be foddren.

Howe queene Anacaona, fyfter to kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, enterteyned the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche housholde stuffe and many vessels of Hebene woodde artificially wrought and carued.

Howe kyng Anacaucha and the queene his fyfter went aboarde the Liefetenaunt his shyppe, and howe greatly they were amased to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the Lieuetenauntes absence : by whose mysdemeanour also kyng Guarionexius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, and with hym Maiobanexius the kyng of the mountaynes.

¶ *The contentes of the syxte boke.* Foli. 28. [p. 87.]

¶ The thyrd vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from his accustomed rafe by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rours.

Of the. xiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hesperides, and are now cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or Cabouerde. Also of the Tortoyfes of the Ilande of Bonauista, wherwith the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was cleuate onely syue degrees : And how failyng from thence westward, he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ryfynge as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admirall faylynge westwarde, and neuer passyng owte of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region and people of goodly corporature : And what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita : and of the swift course or faule of the Ocean from the East to the weste.

Of the goulfes cauled Os Draconis : And of the conflict betwene the freshe water and the salte.

Of a sea of freshe water : And a mountayne inhabited onely with monkeys and marmafettes.

Of the fayre, riche, and large region of Paria : And howe frendly th[e] inhabitants entreated the Admirall and his men. Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerse fruites : And of greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana, beyng regions of the large prouince of Paria : And of the sea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn secrete as touchyng the pole starre and the cleuation of the fame : Also of the roundnesse of the earth.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Colonus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradise to be situate : And whether Paria be part of the firme land or continent of India.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 33. [p. 90.]

¶ Howe Roldanus Xeminus with his confetherates, accused the Admirall to the kyng : And howe he poured hym felde and accused them

Howe kyng Guarionexius rebelled ageyne : And with hym kyng Maiobanexius : Also howe they with other kynges came ageynst the Lieuetenaunte with an armye of. viii. thousande naked and paynted Ciguaians. Also twoo rare exemples of frendshyppe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe Colonus the Admirall and the Lieuetenaunte hys brother, were sent bounde into Spayne : And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the viii. booke. Fol. 37. [p. 94.]

¶ The nauigation of *Petrus Alphonsus* frome Spayne to Paria, where in the region of Curiana, he had in shorte space. xv. vncces of pearles and greate plenty of vytailes for haukes bellees, pynnes, lookinge glasse, and suche other tryfelles.

Of certeyn coniectures wherby Paria is thought to bee parte of the firme lande : And of the golden region of *Cauchieta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe Alphonsus had a conflict with the Canibals : and howe they are accustomed to inuade other contreys.

Of greate abundaunce of falte in the region of Haraia : and howe the dead bodyes of theyr prynces are dried, referued, and relygiouly honoured.

Howe Alphonsus at his returne to Spayne frome Curiana, brought with hym threecore and. xvi. pounce weight of pearles which he bought for owre tryfells amountinge only to the value of fise shillings.

The contentes of the ix. booke. Fol. 40. [p. 96.]

¶ The Nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus and Anes Pinzonus, and howe they sayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loste the fyght of the northe starre, and founde the starres in other order.

Howe Vincentius passynge the equinoctiall towarde the fourth pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great stature : And of the sea of freshe water.

Howe Vincentius directing his course towarde the north weste from the equinoctiall, recouered the fyght of the northe pole, and by the regions of Mariatamball, Camomorus, and Pericora, came to the fayre and ryche prouince of Paria, and to the regions of Os Draconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana, &c.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land now cauled America) shulde be parte of the firme lande or continent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no Ilande : And of the excedyng great riuer Maragnonus replenished with Handes.

Of Boriofomeca and Spiriofomeca, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Ister : And of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria. Also of the woodes of brasyle trees.

Of many trutfull Ilandes wasted and lesse defolate by reson of the Caniballes crueltie : And of the trees of Cassia Fistula. Also of other trees of excedyng bygnessie.

The description of a certayne monstrous beaste, And how Vincentius loste two of his shippes by tempestes.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious stoones cauled Topases. And of the nauigations of certayne other inhabitantes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the diuerse superstitions of the inhabitantes of Hispaniola. Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of deuyles, whiche they caule Zemes.

¶ *The Contentes of the x. booke.* Fol. 48. [*p.* 103.]

Of great plentie of golde, perles, and frankensence found in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in shape dyfferynge from owres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them felues to conquere the newe founde landes, beyng in largeness thryfe as great as Europe beyde the fourth landes parteynyng to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti

Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Also of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workyng in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyinge thre thousande thre hundreth and tenne pounde weyght.

Howe the golde is fyned and diftrybuted: And howe that only in the meltynge shoppes of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearlye above thre hundreth thousande pounde weyght of golde.

Howe th[e]nterpryfes of the Spanyardes are not inferior to th[e]actes of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admyrall discovered the lande ouer ageynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanaffa.

¶ *The Contentes of the bookes of the seconde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 51. [*p.* 106.]

¶ Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kynge gaue free lycence to all suche as wolde attempte any vyages: And of the nauigations of Diego Nicuefa, and Alphonsus Fogeda

Of the Ilande Codego and the region of Caramairi: And of certeyne sweete apples whiche turne into woormes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alfonso Fogeda, the Lieutenaut of Vraba, encounterynge with the barbarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this conflict, fyftie of his men were slayne with Iohannes de la Coffa theyr capytayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuefa the Lieutenante of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr companyons: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulsd from the golde mynes by the fiercenesse of the barbarians vfyng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost confumed with famyn.

Howe a brigantine was drowned with the stroke of a fyfthe: And of the nauigation of Ancifus from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the Lamentable shypwrecke of Ancifus: And of the date trees and wylde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yere.

Howe onely thre of the Canibales with theyr bowes and inuenemed arrowes asslayed Ancifus with a hundreth of his men: In which conflict they wounded and slewe many. Also of theyr swyftnesse of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And how Ancifus encountered with fyue hundreth of th[e]inhabitauntes of the goulfe of Vraba and put them to flyght. Also howe he founde greate plentie of wrought golde and houfholde stufte in a thycket of reedes.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 58. [*p.* 111.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa loste his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he fought: And howe the capitaynes of the other shyppes consulted how to fynde hym. Also of the ryuer Lagartos in the which great Lyfartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forooke theyr shyppes that the fouldyers myght bee without hope of departure: And of the miserablen chauce of Petrus de Vmbria and his felowes.

By what chauce Nicuefa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company susteyned. Also of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerabaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Mathei.

Howe Nicuefa caused them to remoue theyr habitacion from Beragua to poynte Marmor where he bylded a fortresse. And howe his men by warre and famyn, were confumed from feuen hundreth and odde, to scarcely one hundreth.

Howe one Vafchus Nunnez vsurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieutenanteshyppe of Vraba in th[e]absence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the ryuer Gaira defcendynge from the toppe of a hygh mountayne couered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflict ageynst the barbarians, loste. xlvii. of his men by reason of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the poyson wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the same. Also howe Colmenaris by gunneshot and kyndelyng fyers on the hygh toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes lefte defolate in Dariena.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 61. [*p.* 114.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa was fought forth to acquiete the contentions of Vraba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Vafchus Nunnez inuaded, tooke prysoners, and spoyled the kynges bortherynge about the region of Vraba: And howe Ancifus Lieutenaut for Fogeda was cast in pryson, and afterwarde fet at libertie.

Howe Ancifus tooke his vyage from Vraba to Spayne to accuse Vafchus: who also at the same tyme sent Valdiuia awell to speake in his defence, as also to certifie the kynge of theyr doynge.

Howe kynge Careta conspired with the Spanyardes ageynst kynge Poncha whom they put to flyght and spoyled his vyllage.

Howe kynge Comogrus frendely enterteined the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallaice where he shewed them the dried Carkases of his auncestours refered and sumptuously apparelled: And howe the kynges elder sonne gaue Vafchus and Colmenaris foure thousand vneces of wrought gold and fiftie slaues. Also a wyttie oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certified theym of a countrey exceedynge ryche in golde, &c.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 66. [*p.* 118.]

¶ Of horryble thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which waxeth ripe thryfe a yere. Also how digestion is strenghtened by owtwarde coulde.

Howe Valdiuia is sent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counsaile there to sende into Spayne to the kynge for a supplie of a thousand fouldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe

he earyed with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and other thynges.

Howe Vafchus inuaded the kynges inhabytyng the regions about the goulfe of Vraba, and howe he put kyng Dabaiba to flyght, in whose vyllage he founde wrought golde amountyng to the weyght of feuen thoufande Castellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle doones which fumtyme byte men in the nyght in their sleepe, whose bytyng is also venomous: but is healed with water of the fea or by cauterization as are also the woundes of venomous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafistula, and a towne of fyue hundreth houfes, whose kyng Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceedyng bygnesse and heyght: And howe kyng Abibeiba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was inforced to defeende and entreate of peace.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 69. [p. 120.]

¶ Howe kyng Abraiba flewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caufed the kynges to rebell. Also howe they were put to flyght and many of theyr men flayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundreth great Canoas and fyue thousand men: And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris sacked the vyllage of Tichiri and honged the kyng therof with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte through with arrowes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyxte booke.* Fol. 72. [p. 122.]

¶ Howe Vafchus with his confetherates, sente Iohannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hispaniola and from thence to Spayne to the kyng for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions: And what miseris they susteyned in that vyage. Also of the death of Val[di]uia, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancifus. And howe godde wrought miracles by the simple fayth of a mariner. Also how god respecteth th[e]infancie of fayth for zeles fake: And howe one religion turned into another, holdeth still many thynges of the fyrste.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptised by reason of the miracles: And howe they rewarded the prestes by whome they were baptised.

Howe Ancifus shortly after his arryuall in Spayne, reforted to the courte and made his complaynt to the kinge of th[e]infolencie of Vafchus, wheruppon the kyng gaue sentence ageynst hym: And howe apte the barbarous nations are to embrace the Christian fayth.

¶ *The contentes of the seuenth booke.* Fol. 79. [p. 126.]

¶ Howe Quicedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably enterteyned at the courte and brought to the kynges pefence: And howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayer.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected gouernour and Lieutenant of Dariena: And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the bysshop of Burges spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousand and two hundreth souldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges: And of the kynges custome house in the cite of Ciuile, cauled the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered themfelues to go at theyr owne charges: And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reproueth Aloisius Cadamustus a wryter of the Portugales vyages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departure frome Ciuile, lost two of his shypes and was dryuen backe ageyne by tempest: And howe beinge newly furnished, hee passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrde vyage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the

regions of Paria where encounteryng with th[e]inhabitauntes he put them fyrst to flyght: but after faulyng to entreate of peace, they gaue hym greate plentie of golde and abundaunce of masculine frankenfence with dyuers other princely pefentes.

Of the greate multitude of poppingiayes which are in the region of Paria, and howe th[e]inhabitours are appavelled. Also of the fyue kynges that made a league of frendeshyppe with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius sayled Eastwarde by the tracte of the regions of Paria vntyll he came to the poynte [*Cap. S. Augustini*] of that longe lande which the autour supposeth to be the greate Ilande Atlantike wherof the owlde wryters make mention.

¶ *The contentes of the viii. booke.* Fol. 80. [p. 129.]

¶ A contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concernyng the diuision of the newe founde landes: And howe the controuerfie was fynished by the bysshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrystopher the gouernour of the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, was slayne by the Canibales and the bysshop put to flyght. Also of the other bysshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux, slew and eate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to the Chrystians and made faggottes of theyr bones: And how querelyng with owre men, they put them to silence.

¶ *The contentes of the ix. booke.* Fol. 81. [p. 130.]

¶ Of the maruelous frutesfulnes of the regions of Beragua, Vraba, and Dariena: And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and frutes. Also of the pleasaunt taste of fwynes fleshe beinge fedde with the frutes of Mirobalane trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beastes: And of a beaste of strange forme.

Of the ryuers of the goulfe of Vraba, as the ryuer of Dariena and Rio Grandis: And howe the great serpentes cauled Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers byfyde Nilus in Egypte. Also howe th[e]autour of this booke was sent Ambassadour to the Soldane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Senega founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the multitude of byrdes and foules beinge in the maryshes of Dariena.

A phylofophicall discourse of th[e]originall and generation of sprynges and ryuers: And of the breadth of the lande diuidyng the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradyfe: And howe sprynges are engendered by conuercion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the fea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlde wryters: And howe certeyne ryuers runnyng through the caues of the earthe, breake furth into sprynges afarre of.

¶ *The contentes of the x. booke.* Fol. 86. [p. 134.]

¶ Howe the newe founde landes discouered by the Spanyardes in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bygger then Italie besyde that which the Portugales possesse: And of the cardes of the fea drawn by Colonus and Americus Vesputius.

The order of meafuryng the lande: And howe a league conteyneth foure myles by fea and but three by lande.

The Nauigation of Iohannes Dias, and of the fundrye eleuations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boiua or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water beinge dronke, caufeth owld men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicuefa and his souldiers were so oppressed with famin, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, toades, and deade men: And howe a brothe made of a dogges skinne, was foulded for many pieces of golde.

¶ *The contentes of the bookes of the thyrde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 88. [p. 137.]

¶ Of the desperate aduenture and good fortune of Vafchus: And how with a hundreth fourscore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was sente with a thousande and two hundreth fresshe fouldyers.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Vafchus in one conflicte, slewe fyxe hundreth barbaryans with theyr kynges: And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with vnnatural lechery, commaundyng that the kyng and fortie fuche as he keppe for that purpose, shulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he vsed to serue in the warres ageynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores: And howe Vafchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuyng thanks to god, he behelde the newe fourth Ocean neuer before sene nor knowen to men of owre worlde.

Howe Vafchus put kyng Chiapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendeshyppe with hym: And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundreth poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquera was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frendeshyppe, gaue Vafchus fyxe hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes: And of the manly courage and godly zeale of Vafchus. Also of the ryfynge and faulyng of the fourth sea.

Howe kyng Tumaccus beinge dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue Vafchus. vi. hundreth and. xiiii. pesos of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the greatest and fayrest pearles: And howe the kyng caufed his men to fyshe for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues: And of the abundaunce of sayre and great pearles founde therein.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line: And of the Portugales nauigations to the Antipodes inhabytyng the fyue and fiftie degree of the fourth pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the starres about the fourth pole.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 95. [p. 142.]

¶ Of the maner of fysshynge for pearles and of the three kyndes therof. Also dyuers other questions concernynge perles.

Of the multitude of the shell fysshes wherin perles are engendered and founde in maner in all places in the fourth sea: And of abundaunce of golde founde almoste in euery house. Also howe the treasure of nature is in those coastes: And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kyng Teaocha gaue Vafchus. xx. poundes weight of wrought golde and two hundreth perles. Also of desertes full of wyld beastes, and howe Vafchus was troubled with greate heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in peeces: Also howe Vafchus gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fiercenesse of the Canibales.

Howe kyng Bononiana fauoured the Chrystians and gaue Vafchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Vafchus.

A similitude prouyng greate plentie of golde in the regions of the fourth sea, and of the trauayles which owld fouldyers are able to susteyne.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 99. [p. 146.]

¶ Howe kyng Buchibuea submytted hym selfe to Vafchus, and sent hym certeyne vesselles of golde. Also howe kyng Chiorifus sente hym. xxx. dyffhes of pure golde.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the life of our fyrste parentes.

Howe kyng Pocchorrofa submytted hym selfe, and gaue Vafchus. xv. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumauama the great kyng of the golden regions towarde the fourth sea, is taken prifoner. Lykewyfe howe he gaue Vafchus. xxx. pounce weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kyng Comogrus baptised by the name of Charles, gaue Vafchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Vafchus, and howe he was turned from Goliath to Elifeus, and from Anteus to Hercules: And with what facilitie the Spanyardes shall hereafter obteyne greate plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fiercenesse of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chrystian princes to sette forwarde Chrystes religion.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 104. [p. 150.]

¶ The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hispaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coastes of the firme lande: Also of the floryfshynge Ilande Guanaffa.

Of feuen kyndes of date trees, wyld vynes, and Myrobalanes: Also of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly stature which vse to paynt theyr bodyes: And of the swyfte course of the sea from the east to the west. Also of fresshe water in the sea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana: And of greate Tortoyfes and reedes. Also of the foure frutefull Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Ilandes cauled Limonares.

Of sweete fauours and holfome ayer: And of the region Quicuri, and the hauen Cariai or Myrobalanus: Also of certeyne ciuyle people.

Of trees groynge in the sea after a straunge sorte, and of a straunge kynde of Moonkeys which inuade men and feight with wyld bores.

Of the greate goulfe of Cerabaro replenished with many frutefull Ilandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the similitude of dyuers wyld beastes and foules.

Of fyue vyllages whose inhabitautes gyue them felues onely to gather-ynge of golde, and are paynted, vsynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Also of seuen ryuers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceafeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodyes, and couer theyr priue members with shelles, hauynge also plates of golde hangynge at theyr noses.

Of certeyne woormes which beinge engendered in the seas nere about the Equinoctiall, eate holes in shypes: And how the Admirals shypes were destroyed by them.

Howe the kynge of Beragua enterteyned the Lieuutenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there aboute: Also in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieuテナナント and his company wold haue erected a colonie beynde the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulged by th[e]inhabitautes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Iamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne moonethes: And by what chaunce he was faued and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holfome regions, temperate ayre, and continual spring al the hole yeare: Also of certeyne people which honour golde religiously duryng theyr golden haruest.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heght and hygher then the cloudes: Also the discricion of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the fame to Italy.

Colonus his opinion as touchynge the supposed continente, and ioynynge of the north and south Ocean. Also of the breadth of the sayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Vraha and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis Also of certeyne maryffhes and desolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the fame.

Of xx. golden ryuers about Dariena and of certeyne precious stones, especially a diamunde of marueilous byggenesse bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroical factes of the Spanyardes and howe they contemne effeminate pleasures. Also a similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde and precious stones.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 113. [p. 156.]

¶ The nauigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hispaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Also of the Ilandes of Madanico, Guadalupea, and Galanta.

Of the sea of herbes and mountaynes couered with snow: Also of the swyfte course of the sea towards the west.

Of the ryuer Gaira, the region Caramairi, and the porte Carthago and Sancta Martha: Also of Americus Vesputius and his expert cunnynge in the knowledge of the carde, compasse and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales affayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and shot of theyr venomous arrowes euen in the sea. Also of theyr houses and housholde stuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Quietus founde a saphire bygger then a goose egge: Also emerodes, calcidonies, iaspers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of woddes of brafile trees, plentie of golde, and marchasites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Gaira, and Saturma. Also of a straunge kynde of marchaundies exercised amonge the people of Zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradise: And of the frutefull mountaynes, and pleasaunte gardeynes of the fame.

Of many goodly countreys made desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Also of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whose iuice is deadly poyson in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, hartes, wylde bores, foules, goslampine, whyte marble, and holfome ayre. Also of the greate ryuer Maragnonus descendencyng from the mountaines couered with snowe, cauled Serra Neuata.

Howe Petrus Arias wasted certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the swyfte course of the sea, his shypes were caried in one nyght fortie leagues beyond th[e] estimation of the beste pylotes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfte booke.* Fol. 118. [p. 161.]

¶ Of fundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft a course from the East to the west: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebaftian Cabote from Englande to the frofen sea, and howe being repulged with Ice in the moonethe of Iuly, he sayled farre westwarde.

Of people apparelled with beastes skynnes: And howe beares take fysshes in the sea and eate them.

Howe Sebaftian Cabote after that he had discovered the lande of Baccalaos or Baccallearm, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of th[e] assistance of the counsaile of th[e] affayres of India, and of his second viage.

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a storke lyghted in the gouernours shippe. Also howe he arryued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Vafchus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

Howe Petrus Arias the newe gouernour distributed his army to conquire the south regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the fame.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of th[e] expedition ageynst the kynge of that region.

Of the Violent course of the sea from the east to the west: And of the difficulte saylynge ageynst the fame.

Of the pettiferous and vnwholfome ayre of Sancta Maria Antigua in Dariena: and howe the Spanyardes were of necessitie inforced to plant theyr fyrst colonie and habitation there.

The cause of the varietie of regions lyinge all vnder one degree or parallelle, and by what meanes the sonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a house fet on fyre with lyghtynge.

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodile [*Tanquam canis e Nilo*], and of the venemus bytynge of great bates. Also of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beastes.

Howe in these regions all foure footed beastes growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrste broode. Also of certeyne trees of whose planckes if ships be made, they are safe frome the woormes cauled Broma or Byffas.

Of a tre whose wod is present poyson yf it be only borne about: And of an herbe that is a preferuatiue ageynst the fame.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynst the Canibales.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 124. [p. 165.]

¶ The particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues lyinge in the South sea. Also of the greate abudaunce of bigge pearles founde in the fame.

Howe the autoure compareth Hispaniola to the earthly Paradyse: And howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrst inhabitours of Hispaniola and of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitautes of Hispaniola in theyr songes and rhymes had certeyne prophesies that appareled men shulde come to theyr contrey and bryng them into seruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with spirites. Also howe those spirites haue no more appered to them sence they were baptised.

Of theyr expertenesse in swymynge: And of theyr delycate serpentes, byrdes, foules, and poppingiais.

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe coulde is in sum place thereof accidentall and not by the situation of the region.

Of oxen and swyne of exceedinge bygnesse: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the braun. Also howe the swyne are fedde with myrobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, brasyle, mastix, gossampyne, Electrum &c.: And of th[e]incommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the prouynces are devided into regions.

Howe Andreas Moralis sayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hole ryuers denoured of fuch caues. Also of the confycte of the waters.

Of a standyng pole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe ferne and bramble buffhes growe only in coulde regyons.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke.* Fol. 130. [p. 170.]

¶ Of a greate lake or standyng poole of fowre and falte water, and of the fea fysshes in the fame in the myddelcande of the Ilande. Also of deuouryng fysshes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers fauling into the lakes, and of. CC. [200] springes in the space of a furlonge.

A meruelous hystory of a kynge stryken dumme and lame by a miracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe fuche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caste vp ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddeste of the standyng lake. Also of a lake of fresshe water, and an other of falte and fresshe water.

Of a large playne of two hundreth myles in length: And an other of a hundrethe and twentie.

Of the meruelous fyfthe or monster of the fea, cauled Manati or Matum, fedde with mans hande: and howe she caryeth men ouer the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hispaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaines and golde and fysshes in all ryuers.

Of falte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increafe from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe there is no hurtefulle beaste in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hispaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabited and situate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the clowdes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnesse.

Howe pure and maffie golde is founde in the region of Cotoy or Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a luyng tree. Also of the rootes, branches, and floures of the fame, and howe certeyne caues are fusteyned with pyllers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearely from Hispaniola into Spayne: And of the falte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as stones and cleare as cristall. Also sprynges of falte, fresh and fower water.

Of certeyne wyld men luyng in caues and dennes without any certeyne language: And of theyr meruyulous swiftnesse a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke and two kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vfed in the steede of paper. Also howe th[e]inhabitantes thinke that the Christians can make those leaues speake and disclose all secreates.

Of a stronge coloure made of the iuse of a certeyn apple: And of the herbe whose smoke is poyson.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 136. [p. 175.]

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th[e]inhabitauntes of Hispaniola lyued fyrste, and howe they came to the knowlege of Iucca. Also howe Ceres fyrst found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Why theyr kinges are cauled by dyuers names, and by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

Howe they make theyr testaments, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buried with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola: And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and vyllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hispaniola: and of the other Ilands about the fame

Of a spryng which runnyng vnder the fea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arethusa: Also of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Anima Album*: And of the Canibale[s]. Also whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generation of greate Tortoyfes and of theyr egges.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke.* Fol. 140. [p. 178.]

¶ Of the expedition ageynste the kynge of the Ilande Dites in the fourth fea: And howe after foure conflictes, submyttinge hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundreth and ten pounce weyght of greate pearles. Also howe he agreed to pay yearely a hundreth pounce weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more esteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnys. Also howe the kynge of Dites and his famelie were baptized.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the bysshop of Rome bowght a perle for four and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundreth pearles founde in one shel fyfthe. Also of the byrth of pearles.

Of the regions of the Easte fyde of the goulfe of Vraba: And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumeifed people which haue the knowledge of letters and vse bookes: And what chaunced of the capitaynes which Petrus Arias fente furth dyuers wayes. Also howe Iohn Solysius was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe Iohn Pontius was repulged of the Canibales, and of the lewde behaour of Iohn Aiora.

Of the variable fortune of Gonfalus Badaicius: And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was spoyled of all. Of the golden region of Coiba Dites: And howe theyr flauers are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the fourth fea: And of the regions from whence the Portugales fetch their spices.

Of a straunge kynde of fowlyng: and of the trees that beare gourdes.

Of the later opinions as touchyng the fwyfte course of the Ocean towarde the weste: and of the continente or firme lande. Also of the vyage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena: and the maner of gatheryng of golde in the fame: Also of the dropie of couetoufnes which is not satysfied with ryches.

¶ *For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately found reade the margente notes of the same.*

¶ T H [E] I N T E R P R E T O V R S E X C V S E .

I haue not in wrytynge byn very curious
To auoyde the scornes of Rhinoceros nose,
Or the fyled iudgement of feuere Aristarchus
Not fearynge thereby any thyng to lose,
But haue thought it sufficient to be open and playne
Not lookynge for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well.
If I be not barbarous I defyre no more,
I haue not for euery woorde asked counfell
Of eloquent Eliot or fyr Thomas Moore.
Take it therefore as I haue intended,
The fautes with fauour may soone be amended.

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,
Lacked not Zoilus to be his fo[e] :
Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe sentence.
That no man lacketh suo bargello :
For as no beaste lyueth without woorme or flye,
So no man lacketh his priue enemye.

Rumpatur Zoilus.

¶ *Fautes escaped in the pryntynge. F. the leafe. L. the line. B. the backe fyde of the leafe.*

[These corrections have all been embodied in the Text.]

¶ Imprinted at London in Paules Church-
yarde at the signe of the Wyble
by Rycharde Jug.

[In other copies.]

yarde at the signe of the Bell by
Roberte Coy.

Anno. Domini. M. D. LV.

Index

of

Personal names, and names of places, chiefly outside Europe.

∴ The Contents Pages at vii.-x., 12, 45, and 391-397 have not been indexed.

- | | | | |
|---|--|--|---|
| <p>Abarien island, 255
 Abdua river, 315
 Abenamachie, King, 119, 120, 121
 Abibeiba, King, 120, 121
 Abila mountaynes, 236
 Abraham, 51, 52
 Abraiba, 120, 121
 Abrayme Prouince, 226
 Aburema river, 135, 152
 Acatan, 34
 Acateba, 153
 Achaia, 176
 Achas town, 325
 Achemenides, 135, 154
 Achilles, 5
 Achor, Vale of, 50
 Acla village, 231
 Acuna, The Licentate, 272
 Adam, 229, 338, 340
 Adams, Clement, xxxviii., 289
 Adda river, 363, 364
 Aden, 13, 24, 267, 269
 Aden, King of, 13
 Adialbenicus, Emperor, 176
 Adipson, 285
 Adriane, Pope, 309
 Adriatike sea, 133, 155, 318
 Aeneas Siluius, 8, 41, 50, 347
 Africa, xix., xxi., xxix., 9, 13, 35, 52, 56, 126, 129, 139, 230, 245, 248, 250, 261, 262, 273, 285, 295, 298, 337, 338, 340, 346, 373, 384, 385, 387.
 Africa, Gulf of, 270, 374.
 Afrijken, xxxi.
 Agathyrsi, 91
 Agermannia, Dukedome of, 305
 Agisimba, Region of, 41
 Agnaneo island, 135
 Agnes, Vincentius, 105, 128, 129
 Agricola, Georgius, xli., xlv., 7, 366
 Agrippa, Cornelius, xlv.
 Agus, Antipater, 319
 Ahumada, Peter de, 346
 Aiaguutin river, 153
 Ajora, Gonsalus, 181
 Ajora, Johannes, 162, 181
 Alamino Antonie, 187, 188
 Alaminus, 192, 193, 194, 195
 Alba Russia, 291
 Albertus, Magnus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Alcalá, 63</p> | <p>Alcantara, 165
 Alcaraz, Antonie of, 272
 Alcayr [<i>Cairo</i>], City of, 13, 14, 63, 131, 153, 172, 186, 267, 285, 307, 315, 374
 Alcazaa, Simon of, 272
 Alday, James, xix., xx.
 Alexander, xxix., xxxiii., xlv., 5, 32, 50, 74, 129, 176, 201, 241, 248, 273, 274, 285, 310, 315, 325, 339, 385
 Alexandria, City of, 110, 153, 217, 267, 283, 351
 Alexandryne, Patriarch of, xxx.
 Alfonsus de Ponte, 157
 Alla, 359, 368
 Allago, xxviii.
 Allen, Richard, xiii.
 Almanzor, 271, 272
 Almayne [<i>Germany</i>], Emperour of xxx.
 Almaynes, 56, 97, 116, 292, 320, 328
 Alonso, 341
 Alonso, Don, 273, 341
 Alonsus, Petrus, 36
 Alpha, Poynt, 75, 76
 Alpheus river, 134, 176
 Alphonsus, 40, 389
 Alphonsus, Petrus, 94, 96
 Alvarado, Peter, 187
 Alverado, Spatense, 192
 Amacaiz, City of, 374
 Amaiauna, Cave of, 99
 Amaltheum sea, 289
 Amaquei, Region of, 169
 Amari, Lake of, 284
 Amaxobii, 301
 Ambalao island, 260
 Ambon island, 260
 America, xi., xiii., xviii., xxi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., xl., 3, 8, 32, 35, 43, 61, 205, 243, 281, 335, 343, 353, 371, 385
 Americus, xxi.
 Amerigo Vespucci, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 275, 277, 279
 Anacaona, Queen, 85, 176
 Anacauchoa, Beuchius, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
 Anata, King, 182, 183
 Anbon island, 344</p> | <p>Anacisus, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124, 125, 126, 137
 Anycra, 311
 Andalusia, xiii., 130, 220, 225, 339
 Andalusia, Noua, 130
 Andreas, Moralis, 134
 Andrewe, Lawrence, xxvi.
 Andronicus, xlvi.
 Anes, John, 377, 378
 Angleria, 43, 63, 65, 186, 207, 246, 299
 Anghiera, xxxvii.
 Annez, Vincentius, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Anniuci, Region of, 169
 Antei, 285
 Anteus, 149
 Anthiochyen, xxxi.
 Anthiocus, 8
 Anthropophagi, 23, 29, 41, 66, 385
 Antiglia island, 38
 Antilia island, 66
 Antiqua, Island of, 177
 Antonie, Master, 288
 Antony di Mendoza, 287
 Anunctus, 191
 Apianus, 10
 Apollo, 10, 102, 172, 296, 298
 Apnu, Region of, 322
 Aprutium, Bishop of, 309
 Apsa, 363
 Aquanil, Province of, 187
 Aquillaris, Hieronimus, 192, 193
 Arabia, xxviii., xxxi., 8, 9, 13, 14, 20, 56, 129, 153, 156, 165, 180, 235, 284, 285, 286, 369, 385
 Arabia, Gulf of, 284, 286, 339, 347
 Arabia, Sea of, 309
 Arabo, 168
 Aragon, King of, xxx, 51
 Aragonie, Cardinal of, 64, 73, 79, 82, 87, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Aramaná, Region of, 168
 Arambec, xiv.
 Arbolantius, 141
 Archimedes, xlvi., xlvi.
 Arcimboldus, 127
 Ardagni, Kingdom of, 344
 Arethusa, 134, 176
 Arenalis, 88</p> | <p>Areuado, 232
 Argilla, City of, 374
 Ariane, 245
 Arias, Helizabetha Boadilla, 127
 Arias, Petrus, 61, 126, 127, 136, 137, 142, 156, 157, 158, 162, 165, 178, 179, 181, 198, 199, 214
 Arimathia, Joseph of, 56
 Arion, 171
 Aristarchus, 398
 Aristocleon, 41
 Aristotle, xliii., xlv., 9, 10, 67, 142, 179, 278, 293, 313, 338, 339, 340, 386
 Arkey, Laurence, xii.
 Armenes, xxx.
 Armeneten, xxxi.
 Armenia, xxvii., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., 176, 311, 314, 329
 Armenicus, Emperour, 176
 Armennyten, xxxi.
 Arnold, R., xxv., xxvi.
 Arnheim, xxv.
 Arotinbergh, 368
 Arra, Castle, 381
 Arsina, xxix.
 Arsinoe, City of, 284, 285
 Artawischa river, 323
 Artawische, 323
 Artemisia, 49, 128
 Arucetto island, 260
 Arzina Ford, xxxix.
 Asasi, xx.
 Ascanius, 63, 64
 Ascanius Sphorcía [<i>i.e.</i>, Sforza], 65, 68, 103, 127
 Ascham, Roger, xl.
 Ascon City, 374
 Asia, the less, 7
 Asoph, 324, 325
 Asopus, 142
 Assuedo, Antonie de, 272
 Assyryen, xxxi.
 Astesia, 303
 Astrachan, 308, 314, 325, 326, 329
 Astur, Ouētenses, 135
 Asturia, 54, 116
 Asyen, xxx.
 Atahaliba, King, 346
 Atamea village, 152
 Ath, xliii.
 Atiei, Region of, 169</p> |
|---|--|--|---|

- Atlantike island, 129, 337, 338, 340
Atlas mountains, 129
Atlas, the greater, 385
Attabeira, 99
Attibani, Region of, 169
Attibunicus river, 73, 168, 171
Attila, 326
Auanzo mountains, 368
Augusta, City of, 286
Augustinus de Ceratta, 54
Augustus, Emperour, 8, 283, 306, 369
Auila Alphons[o], 187, 192
Auis, 273
Auleta, King, 283
Aurea Anus, 323, 324
Aurea Chersonesus, 32, 40, 75, 247, 313, 344
Ausonia, 167
Austria, Archduke of, 289
Auxendia, xxviii.
Auxerre, xlv.
Ay Ay islands, 69, 130
Ayqueora, Region of, 169
Azamor, City of, 374
Azania, Region of, 385
Azafi, 374
Azeuedo, 274
Azgar, 374
Azion Gaber, 7
Azores, Islands of, 203, 204, 219, 339, 347, 348
Azotus, 57
Azoum river, 314
Azuum village, 176
Azzuei, Region of, 169
- Babbareo lake, 170
Babel, Tower of, xxxii.
Babell, 290
Babilon, 14, 56, 57, 63, 172, 187, 241, 266, 284, 285, 297, 307, 315
Babilon, Soltane of, 153, 172
Babilonii, The, 385
Babilonyon, xxxii.
Bacanor, 265
Baccallaos, Land of, xix., 55, 161, 162, 195, 242, 287, 288, 299, 344, 345, 347
Bacchian island, 259, 260
Baccia, 126
Bachau sea, 291
Bacon, Lord, xxii.
Bacon, Roger, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
Baetria, 308
Badaocius, Gasper, 165
Badaocius, Gonzalus, 181, 182, 183
Badaioz, 272, 273
Badajos, xlii.
Bafrida, 291
Baguanimaho, Region of, 168
Bahaboni, 166
Bahuan river, 172
Baian, 171
Baia Natiuitatis, 129
Bainoa, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 176
Baiohaigua, Region of, 169
Bajasetes, Ottomanus, 6, 311
Balassia, Region of, 264
Balboa, Vaschus, 149, 162, 178, 338
Baleares islands, 301
Ballard, William, xlii.
Balthem sea, 299, 312, 331
Baluaastro, 346
Banda island, 22
Bandan, xxix., 260, 269
Banderana, xxix.
Bangalla, King, 21
Bangella, City of, 21
Baptiste, Elisius, 85, 99
Baptiste, Master, xliii.
- Barack, Soltan, 329
Barbai island, 256
Barbaregaf, City of, 374
Barbarossa, Emperour, 347
Barbata island, 177
Barbary, xix., xx., xxviii., xxxviii., 237, 374, 380, 384
Barbessa, Adoardo, 258
Barcha, 374
Barnarde of Mesa, 130
Barramedabas, 87
Barrientos, 272
Barthema [*i.e.*, *Varthema*], Ludivico, xlviii.
Bartholomeus Colonus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
Barthus castle, 331
Barutti, xii.
Basilides, 41
Basilius, 289, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
Basilius, Andreas, 316
Basilius, Demetrius, 316
Basilius, George, 316
Basilius, John, 316, 319
Basilius, Magnus, 290, 291
Basilius, Symeon, 316
Basing, xxxix.
Baskird, 293
Basle, xxxvii.
Bastard, Count L. de, xlv.
Bastarne, 311
Bastimento island, 235
Bath, Earl of, xix.
Bauruco, Region of, 169
Bazantium, Emperours of, 314
Beata port, 107, 113, 177, 213
Beaton, Cardinal, xxxviii.
Bebeid, Chan, 329
Beda island, 35
Beit island, 374
Belchia, 309
Belozeria, 309
Benaia island, 260
Beneu island, 260
Bengala, Province of, 261, 264, 267, 268, 344
Benin, 270, 376
Beragua, Region of, 107, 108, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 128, 130, 132, 134, 135, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 163, 165, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 234
Berenice, City of, 284
Beris river, 323
Berges, City of, 331
Beringocius, Vannucius, xlv.
Berma, 344
Bermeio, Sea of, 338, 339, 346, 347
Bermuda island, 233
Berosus, xlviii., 346
Beryn, John, 383
Beselchel, 49
Besermani, The, 327
Besson, xlvii.
Betanchor, 65, 166
Betis river, 127, 157
Beuchius Anacauchoa, King, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
Beyrout, xii.
Bezerra, Franciscus, 165, 181, 183
Bian, Sancti, Johannis gulf, 194
Biddle, Mr, xv.
Bieloiefero, 321
Bimini, 345
Binthaitel, 100
Bion, 41
Biraen, 344
Biringuccio Vannuccio, xxxvii., 353, 356
Biron, Master, xviii.
- Biscaine, 274
Bisinagar, City of, 15
Bisineghe, 277
Bithymia, 290, 311
Bitsagitsch, xxviii.
Bizantium, 307
Bizantium, Emperour of, 314
Bizerta port, 374
Blasius, 331
Blemines, The, 385
Blesconia, City of, 289
Blondus, 348
Boadilla, Governour of, 105, 127
Boadilla, Helisabetha, 127
Bodenham, Roger, xviii.
Boheme, King of, xxx., 312
Bohol island, 256, 258
Boilus, 79
Boiuca island, 135
Boium, gatti river, 109, 132
Bolgaria, 309
Bolschega mountains, 323
Bombassa, xxviii.
Bonauventura, 105
Bonauista island, 87, 272
Bonanum, City of, 84
Boneface, 56
Bonham, W., xxxvii.
Bononiamia, King, 145
Bononie, Aristotles of, 313
Bononie, Galeatius Butrigarius of, 106, 127, 283, 285
Boriostomea river, 98
Boriquena island, 45, 345, 346
Boristhene river, 289, 309, 311, 312, 314, 316, 319
Bornei islands, 22, 23
Bosphorus, The, 59
Boua port, 374
Boubige, xlv.
Bourne, Mr H. R. Fox, xvi.
Bowyer, Sir William, xlii.
Boyuca island, 345
Braalin island, 260
Brabant, xliii.
Brasil, xv., xvi., xvii., 250, 251, 253, 273, 285, 288, 375, 385, 386
Brewer, Rev. J. S., M.A., xlii.
Bridger, Mr C., xlviii.
Brocardus, xlv.
Brooke, John, xviii.
Bryaces, 49
Buchebeuca, King, 146
Buchema island, 30
Buda, 326
Budia island, 260
Budomel, 384
Buen Abrigo Point, 273
Buena Vista, 272
Bugia, Region of, 374
Buiaici, Region of, 169
Bullen, 9
Buona Speranza, 261, 262, 338, 374, 385
Bur island, 344
Borges, Bishop of, 126, 127, 134
Burgonie, Duke of, 208
Burichena island, 45, 70, 104, 130, 159, 173, 176
Burleigh, Lord, xxxvii.
Burnei island, 258
Burney island, 272
Burrough, Stephen, xxxviii.
Buru island, 260
Buthuan island, 255, 259
Buthuan, King, 255
Butler, John, xlv.
Buttricius Galeatius, 106, 127, 283, 285
Buts, Sir William, xviii., xix.
- Butts, Thomas, xviii., xix.
Byzantium, xi.
- Cabedus, Johannes, 130, 157
Cabot, Loaisa, 274
Cabot, Sebastian, xlii., xv., xix., xxxviii., xxxix, xl., xlv., xlvii., 6, 55, 61, 161, 162, 195, 272, 274, 283, 288, 289, 299, 335, 343, 345, 348, 350, 386
Cabouerde [*i.e.*, *Cape-Verde*], 74, 87, 97, 129, 134, 272, 277, 385
Cacacubana, Region of, 169
Cacausu, City of, 24
Cacedus, John, 198
Caccius, 72, 89, 128, 223
Caccicus Caunaboa, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
Cacique Chimán, 225
Cadamustus, Aloisius, 127, 270, 280
Cades, 86
Cadissen, 329
Cadona, Duke of, 173
Caghaina island, 258
Cahaymi, Region of, 169
Cahini island, 168
Cahonas island, 166, 172
Caiabi, Province of, 168, 172, 173, 176
Caiacoa, Province of, 168, 173
Caiguam mountain, 171
Caigui, City of, 26, 171
Caihabo, Province of, 168, 169, 170
Cailon island, 344
Caiouana, Valley of, 170
Cairo, 374
Cairus, 307
Caizcimu, Province of, 168, 169, 170, 173
Cakeado, 381
Calaghan island, 255, 256, 259
Calantan, 260
Calauera, Barnardino de, 108
Cales, 86, 87, 93, 94, 97, 181
Calese island, 286
Calicium, 38
Calicut, 7, 8, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 24, 32, 39, 256, 261, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 344, 374, 385
Calicut, King of, 14, 17, 18, 19, 21
Calidonia, 143, 177
Caliz, 346, 347
Callienten, xxix.
Calligula, 59
Calpe mountains, 236
Cals, 68, 73
Caluacam, Region of, 188, 189
Calunezfocho, Region of, 322
Calzadilla, 341
Camaie, Region of, 169
Cambaia, 8, 13, 14, 20, 261, 267, 269
Cambaia, King of, 40
Cambalu [*i.e.*, *Pekin*], City of, 24, 25, 287, 307, 326
Cambie, 259
Camemorus, Region of, 183
Camen mountains, 323
Camen Bolschoi mountains, 322, 323
Camenekh, 322
Cameni, 323
Camenipoias mountains, 323
Camigna, Don Christopher of, 130
Camomorus, Region of, 98, 132
Camoteia island, 166
Campaa, Region of, 260
Campbell, Dr M. F. A. G., xxv., xxvi.
Campechium, Province of, 187, 188

- Campegius, Cardinal, 310
 Campion, Gasper, xvii., xviii.
 Camul, Province of, 27
 Canabocoa, Region of, 169, 172
 Canada, 287
 Canary islands, xliii., xxviii., 28, 30, 32, 36, 38, 40, 41, 65, 66, 68, 87, 97, 150, 157, 166, 177, 181, 199, 210, 245, 250, 277, 339, 374, 375, 380, 389
 Cananor, xxviii.
 Cananor, King of, 15
 Cancell, Luys, 346
 Canchietans, The, 95
 Canechians, Region of, 36, 95
 Cane, 271
 Canghu island, 256
 Canglu, City of, 24
 Canibals, Islands of the, 30, 66, 68, 78, 160, 162, 177, 180
 Cannahistula island, 119
 Cano, 272
 Canonor, Kingdom of, 14, 15, 20, 261, 268
 Canthan, City of, 260
 Cape Blanke, 380
 Cape Bona Speranza, 129, 279, 285, 286, 348, 350
 Cape Breton, xiv., xviii.
 Cape Cattigara, 253
 Cape Corea, 382
 Cape de Bas, xiv.
 Cape de Buona Speranza, 374
 Cape de Monte, 381
 Cape de las Palmas, 381, 382
 Cape de tres Puntas, 381
 Cape de Sper, xiv.
 Cape Trepyntes, 381, 382, 383
 Cape of Good Hope, 129, 385
 Capelan, City of, 21, 344
 Capna, 324
 Caphi island, 260
 Capira, Region of, 234
 Capling, William, xii.
 Capo Desiderato, 252
 Capo Verde Islands, 32, 35, 36, 65, 74, 87, 129, 203, 204, 250, 261, 262, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280, 338, 373, 382, 385, 387
 Capronus, 86, 91, 92
 Capucar, 265
 Caput Bonæ Sperantiæ, 129, 385
 Caput Sancti Augustini, 129, 134, 181, 183
 Caput Veride islands, 32, 35, 36, 74, 87, 129, 385
 Caracaracoles, 100
 Caramairi, Region of, 106, 107, 109, 134, 144, 157, 158, 159, 160, 162
 Caramatexius, King, 171
 Carandra, Gulf of, 285
 Caraqueira island, 177
 Carcham, Province of, 26
 Cardano, Girolamo, xxxviii., 158, 161, 207, 217, 250, 294, 307
 Carenas, 191
 Careta, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Caria, King of, 49, 128
 Caria, Queen of, 49, 128
 Carini, Region of, 151, 152, 156
 Caribana, 107, 119, 180, 183
 Caribdis, 304
 Caribes islands, 68
 Carles, Captain, xlvi.
 Carnica, 314, 368
 Caromoram, 25
 Carter, Master, xviii.
 Carthage, 176, 340, 374
 Carthage, Hannibal of, 139
 Carthage, 134, 157, 160, 214, 215, 226
 Carthaginis Portus, 106
 Carthago, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 134, 157, 162, 165
 Cartier, Jaques, 287, 345
 Carueeria, 69, 157, 159
 Casa Francisus, xlvii.
 Casan, King of, 326, 328
 Caspia, 8, 169, 170, 173
 Caspian sea, 170, 287, 291, 308, 309, 311, 314, 321, 326, 329, 346
 Cassam, City of, 291, 311, 314, 319, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329
 Cassima river, 323
 Cassius mountain, 285
 Castaglione, Baltassar, 9
 Castaneda, 272
 Castella, Aurea, 130
 Castella de Mina, 382
 Castella Vetus, 68
 Castile, King of, xxx., 37, 201, 203, 340
 Castile, Queen of, 201
 Castile, Isabel of, 273, 274, 341
 Castile, Ferdinando of, 51, 52, 65, 73, 127, 131, 201, 208, 209, 211, 229, 236, 273, 341, 342, 343, 345
 Castlen, Edward, xli.
 Castor, 250
 Castoreum sea, 303
 Castromow, 331
 Catalonia, 173
 Catarapa, 237
 Catena Mundi mountains, 286, 324
 Cathay [*i.e.*, *China*], xliii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., 8, 22, 24, 25, 26, 59, 98, 261, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 308, 310, 312, 313, 321, 322, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 339, 344, 345, 363
 Cathay, Cham [*i.e.*, *Khan*], of, xxi., 21, 24, 25, 26, 27, 60, 286, 287, 289, 322, 324, 326, 329, 330
 Cathay, Emperour of, 25, 60
 Catighan island, 256
 Catherine, Queen, 51, 71, 274
 Catherine, Saint, 84
 Cato, 122
 Cattigara, 262
 Cattigara, Cape, 253
 Caucasus mountains, 18
 Cauchieta, 95, 98
 Caunaboa, Cacicus, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
 Caunana, 99
 Caunoa, Region of, 169
 Cauta, 99
 Cautan, City of, 344
 Caya river, 272, 273, 274
 Caya bridge, 273, 274
 Cayrus [*i.e.*, *Cairo*], City of, 14, 186
 Cazacubuna mountains, 172
 Cazibaxagua, 99
 Cecil, Sir W., xxii., xxxviii., xliii.
 Ceden, xxx.
 Ceilam island, 344
 Celaruri island, 260
 Celer, Quintus Metellus, 347
 Cemaccus, King, 110, 119, 121, 122, 198
 Cemobal, 196
 Cenalo island, 255.
 Cenegales, 155
 Central America, xi.
 Centurione, Paulo, 287, 308, 309, 310
 Cerabaro, Region of, 112, 135, 152, 154, 155, 156, 163, 182
 Ceratta [*i.e.*, *Zaratte*] Augustinus de, 54
 Cerda, 341
 Ceres, 175
 Cernigonia, 309
 Cesar, 59, 305
 Cesariensis, 374
 Chabot, C., xlv.
 Chacouam island, 260
 Chagre river, 234, 235
 Cham, 346
 Chamailaha, Prince, 129
 Chan Cublai, 330
 Charles V., xlii., xlv.
 Charles, King, 63
 Charles IX., xlv., xlvi.
 Charybdis, 163, 330
 Chaucer, xxxvii.
 Chaunceler, Richard, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., 59, 285, 289, 326, 333, 386
 Chedsey, Dr, xxxix.
 Cheke, Sir John, xliii., xlv.
 Cheregatus, Francis, 191, 309
 Chethai lake, 287
 Cheru, King, 182
 Chiacones, King, 128
 Chiapes, King, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145, 178
 Chiauaccha, Prince, 129
 Chiman, Cacicque, 225
 China, 20, 260, 261, 267, 269, 272, 339, 344, 347
 China, Gulf of, 260
 Chionsus, King, 146
 Chiouia mountain, 319
 Chirara, 152
 Chippit island, 258
 Chitaza, 152
 Chorogoski Nosz, 322
 Chrisostomus, 290, 291
 Christiernus, 304, 309
 Christophori Sancti, 105
 Ciamba, 130, 150
 Cibana, Region of, 73, 74, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 105, 168, 171, 172
 Cicero, Marcus Tullus, xlv., 49, 132, 283, 284
 Cielopes, 154
 Cicylian, King, xxx.
 Ciguaios, 86, 91
 Ciguana, 91
 Cilapulapu, Prince, 285
 Cilicia, 7, 8
 Cimbrica Chersonesus, 311, 314
 Cimhulon, King, 258
 Cinchital, 27
 Cingaporta, 260
 Cingulus Mundi mountain, 324
 Ciniana, Region of, 36
 Cipanga, Region of, 73, 80, 81, 82, 167, 253, 339, 340, 343
 Citrachan, 308, 314
 Ciuola, 287
 Claudius, 54
 Clement VI., Pope, 308, 309, 347
 Cleodii, The, 385
 Cleopatra, 141, 142, 166, 283, 315
 Cleopatrida, City of, 284
 Clesma river, 314
 Cloelia, 71
 Cochin, King of, xxix.
 Cochinus, 183
 Cockeram, Martin, xvii.
 Codego island, 106, 215
 Coi Cathay island, 343
 Coiba Dites, 182
 Coiba, Gulf of, 108, 115, 116, 164, 182
 Coiba, King of, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Colchis, Region of, 51, 135, 262, 310
 Cole, Master, xix.
 Colen, xxix.
 Coligny, Admiral, xlv.
 Collao, City of, 343
 Collocutea, Region of, 183
 Colluacana island, 189, 191, 195, 196
 Colmenaris, Rodericus, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126, 157, 183
 Colmogora, Region of, 291, 293, 312
 Colmogor, City of, 286, 322.
 Colmum, City of, 290
 Cologna, 291
 Colonia Agrippina, City of, 289
 Colum, xxix
 Columbus (or Colonus), Bartholomeus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
 Columbus (or Colonus), Christophorus, 28, 29, 35, 38, 41, 65, 66, 67, 69, 79, 80, 87, 94, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 115, 118, 127-130, 132, 134, 135, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157, 163, 177, 184, 191, 192, 202, 209, 236, 272, 288, 337, 339, 340, 341, 342, 346
 Columbus (or Colonus), Diegus, 115, 118, 122, 127, 177, 184, 240
 Columbus (or Colonus), Fernando, 272
 Columna, 313
 Commendator, King, 123, 124, 125
 Comi, 187
 Comogra, 116, 162, 179
 Comogrus, King, 116, 117, 118, 120, 122, 137, 146, 147-149, 162
 Commodus, Emperour, 284
 Comoiaxna, 172
 Compostele, 100
 Conception, Tower of, 80, 82, 84, 86, 92, 93, 105, 130
 Condé, Prince de, xlv., xlv
 Condiuia, 310
 Conigangui, 26
 Connulaha, City of, 260
 Constantina, 374
 Constantine, 290, 316
 Constantinople, Bishop of, xxxi.
 Constantinople, Emperour of, 316
 Constantinople, Patriarche of, xxx., 290, 291
 Conte Rimondo, 270
 Cooper, xxxvii.
 Coperdalia, 305
 Copto, 284
 Coquera, King, 140
 Corala, 271
 Corales, 180
 Corduba, 162, 181, 186, 192
 Corea, 382
 Corelia, 292, 321
 Corichotuni, 102
 Corimucol, 20
 Corinthus, City of, 80, 100
 Coro island, 215
 Coronado, 287
 Coronati, 238
 Cortes, xlii., xl., xlv., xlvi., 274
 Cortesreales, Gasper, 344
 Cortesreales islands, 344
 Cortesius Fernando, 191, 192, 195, 198, 238, 342
 Corsali, Andreas de, 275, 279
 Corus, 382

- Corytho, 166
 Cossa, Johannes De la, 126, 134, 156
 Cossa, 107
 Cossin river, 323
 Cossum, 329
 Cotam, 26
 Cotochus, King, 146.
 Cotohi, 172, 173
 Cotoy, 169
 Cozumella island, 40, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193
 Cozunellaus, King, 188
 Cracouia, 314
 Crayford, 7
 Creta, 166, 172, 316
 Cretenses, xlviii., 172
 Cresus, 42, 146
 Croke, 381
 Crystente, xxxiv.
 Cuadalchiber, 210.
 Cuba island, 6, 31, 40, 66, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 90, 104, 105, 123, 125, 128, 130, 150, 154, 161, 163, 167, 173, 176, 177, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 210, 231, 233, 239, 241, 262, 299, 338, 344, 346
 Cuba, Governour of, 191
 Cubagua island, 213, 214
 Cubana, 169
 Cubigar river, 153
 Cuchibachoa, Region of, 98, 108, 113, 128, 134
 Cuella de Segovia, xv.
 Cueva, 219, 237
 Cuguibacoa, 165
 Cugureo, 340
 Cuhabo, 168, 169
 Cuiriza, 146
 Culchas, 141
 Culata point, 119, 121, 122
 Cumana, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128, 156, 165, 213, 214
 Cupoton King, 187
 Curiana, 89, 94, 95, 96, 98, 128
 Cursius Quintus, 241
 Curtana, 36, 95
 Cuti river, 226
 Cuzibet island, 23
 Cybaho, 169
 Cyrenaua, 374
 Cyrria, 100
 Czar Kythaiski, 324
 Czilma river, 322
 Czircho river, 322
 Czirremissa, 293

 Dabaiba, King, 119, 121, 122, 163
 Dabaiba river, 132, 155, 183, 199
 Dabiague, 169
 Dacicus, 176
 Dahabon, 169
 Dahabonici, Region of, 169
 Dahatio, 168
 Dajagu mountains, 173
 Daiguani mountains, 171
 Dalekarle river, 305
 Dalion, 41
 Dalmacyen King, xxx.
 Dalmatia, 290, 364
 Damascus, 56, 311
 Damian, 310
 Damianus a Goes, 51, 58
 Damiata, City of, 284
 Danadim river, 323
 Danowe river, 131
 Danaus, xlviii.
 Daneo port, 284
 Dardanus, 166
 Dariena, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 121, 123, 125, 126, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143, 145, 148, 149, 156, 157, 158, 162, 163, 164, 165, 178, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 192, 198, 199, 207, 218, 220, 226, 236, 238, 262
 Darien river, 110, 132, 191
 Darius, King, 59, 284
 Darnasseri, 20
 Dartmouth, 379
 Daubeny, Oliver, xviii.
 David, xlvii., 51, 349, 385
 David, Master, 330
 Dausian, 344
 Davis, xlv.
 Decan, 264
 Dechan, 14
 Dedalus, 55
 Deerfeorth, Cornelius, xxxviii.
 De las Perlas island, 54
 De la Sal island, 272
 De la Flore island, 382
 Delagartos river, 132
 Delapuente, Franciscus, 183
 Deli mountains, 268
 De los Azores, 203, 204, 339
 Delphis, 296, 298
 Demahus river, 168
 Demetriowe, City of, 321
 Demetrius, 59, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 325, 329, 331
 Demogorgon, xlv., 161
 Denham, Henry, xiii
 Denmark, King of, xxx., 299, 304, 308, 309, 319, 331, 332
 Deptford, xxxviii.
 Desborch, John of, xxv., xxvi., xxviii.
 Desiderata island, 177, 210
 Desideratus, Portus, 188.
 Destam island, 192
 Desseosa, Francis, 377
 Deza, 130
 Diagu, Region of, 169
 Diaz, Johannas, 105, 135, 165
 Didacus, 75, 77, 78, 79
 Dido, 166
 Diego, Henriques, 378
 Diego, Nicuesa, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Dieguan sea, 266
 Diegus Marques, 157
 Diegus Mendez, 154
 Diegus Ordassus, 192
 Diegus Valasquen, 186
 Dikilappones, Region of, 331
 Diodorus, xlviii., 351
 Diodorus Siculus, 53-54, 369
 Dites, 165, 178, 183
 Diun, City of, 13
 Doesborch or Doesburg, xxv.-vi.
 Doesburgh, Jan Van, xxv.-vi., xxviii.
 Dolateranus, 10
 Dominica island, 30, 68, 70, 105, 130, 150, 157, 163, 174, 210
 Dominikes, Tower, Seynt, 82, 84
 Domitian, 284
 Don Alonso, 341
 Don Eurique, 341
 Don, John Captain, 382
 Don, John, of Austria, xii.
 Don Lewes, 378
 Don Luys, 341
 Don Pascual de Gayangos, xiv.
 Don P'hyllippe, 346
 Donco, 324, 325
 Donetz Scwerski, 325
 Doria, Juanette, xvii.
 Doria, Pedro, xvii.
 Dorpe, Roeland van den, xxv., xxvi.
 Dover, 379
 Dragonis, Os, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108
 Dranus river, 318
 Drauer, Master, xviii.
 Dromon, Achilles, 310
 Dront, 331
 Dryades, 83, 101
 Duas Arbores, 176
 Dubna River, 321
 Duchala, 374
 Dudley, John, xxxix.
 Duna River, 312
 Dunenburg, 312
 Duraba, 135, 153
 Duran, Thomas, 272
 Durriba, 153
 Dyonisius, King, xlv.

 East India, xii., 8, 9, 32, 79, 103, 133, 234, 235, 247, 262, 279, 283, 285, 339, 344
 East Indian Sea, 8
 Easte Sea, 8, 9, 24, 161
 Ebro river, 363
 Ebetere, 153
 Eccampi island, 186
 Edel river, 292, 314
 Eden, Alban, xlviii.
 Eden, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xx., xxii., xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., xlii., xliii., xlv., xlv., xlv., xlvii., xlviii., 1, 3, 6, 7, 13, 43, 49, 270
 Edward VI., xii., xix., xxxviii, 1, 333
 Egypt, xi., xxx., xlviii., 8, 41, 51, 75, 110, 131, 132, 141, 153, 155, 172, 175, 193, 217, 283, 284, 293, 296, 307, 308, 315, 351, 369, 374
 Egypt, King of, 284
 Egypt, Pyramides of, 49
 Egypt, Soltane of, 311, 369
 Egyptian sea, 199
 Elabath, 374
 Elbes, 272
 Elcauz, 374
 Elder, John, xxxix.
 Elgazaet, Region of, 374
 Elias, xlvii.
 Elide, City of, 176
 Eliot, 398
 Eliot, Hugh, xvi., xxi.
 Eliot, Master, xiv.
 Elis, City of, 134
 Elizabeth, Queen, xii., xvii., xl., xlv., xlv., xlv., 65, 201, 209, 288, 342
 Elzaba, 8
 Emanuel, King, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., 16, 37, 39, 40
 Embigar, 153
 Eneas, 135, 166
 England, King of, xxx., xxxvi.
 Engronlande, Region of, 312, 324, 332
 Eningia, 298, 306
 Ephesyn, xxxi.
 Epileguanita, 102
 Erancanqui, 344
 Erasmus, 57, 58
 Eratosthenes, 41, 349
 Eridanus, 133
 Errifi, 374
 Erythra, King, xlviii.
 Esaras, 49
 Eson, Colchis of, 135
 Esope, 377
 Esquegua, 23C, 234
 Estremadura, 274
 Ethiopia, xxx., 8, 13, 14, 39, 41, 51, 88, 132, 139, 169, 175, 248, 250, 284, 339, 351, 369, 374, 384, 385
 Ethiopia, King of, 374
 Eude island, 260
 Eudoxus, 286, 346
 Eue, 229, 338
 Euergetes, Tomoleus, 346
 Eugenius, Pope, 290
 Euphrates river, 41, 51, 308
 Eurique, Don, 341
 Euripus sea, 304
 Eusebius, xlviii.
 Euxinus sea, 155, 292, 298, 310, 314
 Evangelista island, 77
 Exer, 266
 Ezzab, 374

 Faber, Jacobus, 246
 Faber, John, 289
 Facies, Combusta King, 135
 Faial island, 347
 Faro, Strait of, 208
 Fartalio, xlv.
 Faubourg, xlv.
 Fernie the Great, xxxiii.
 Ferdinando Cortese, 238, 342
 Ferdinando de Soto, 346
 Fernandina islands, 186, 187, 190, 191, 195
 Fernando de Vega, 96
 Fernandes Franciscus, 186, 187, 192
 Fernandus, Gonzalus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241
 Fernelius, Johannes, xlvii.
 Ferraria, xlv.
 Ferrea island, 65, 66, 68, 157, 181
 Ferrières, Francois de, xlv.
 Ferrières, Jean de, xlv.
 Ferrum island, 41
 Fes, 374
 Fessa, City of, 374
 Feti, 180
 Feinusa, Marcilius, xlii., 338
 Fin, Jean de la, xlv.
 Finland, 229, 306, 312, 319
 Finlappia, 330
 Finmarchia, 8, 347
 Fioraanti, Leonardo, xlviii.
 Fladamer, City of, 289
 Flaius, 348
 Flaunders, Earl of, 208
 Fletcher, John, xix.
 Florida, 32, 55, 191, 288, 342, 345, 346
 Flores [i.e., Flores] island, 214
 Flumen Amazonum, 160
 Flumen, S. Johannis, 155
 Fogeda, Alphonsus, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 123, 126, 128, 134, 145, 165, 180, 183
 Fonseca, Johannes, 126
 Forrest, George, xvii.
 Fortis island, 107, 108, 109, 134, 162
 Fortisventura, xx., 65, 157, 380
 Fortunate islands, 28, 37, 40, 166, 374
 Forum Julii, 318
 Foxe, John, xxxix.
 Fracta laucea island, 41
 France, King of, xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 France, Lieutenaut of, 347
 Francis, St., 130
 Francisco, 376
 Francisco de Siquera, 378
 Francisco, Lopez de Gomara, xxxviii, 271, 337
 Frederike, King, 73, 102, 103
 Fretum Herculeum sea, 161
 Fretum trium fratrum, 9
 Friseland, 303
 Friole, 308
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, xiii.

- Fronowo, 312
 Fryer, Ferdinando, 341
 Fugui, 26
 Fuluaia, 122
 Furatado, Captain, 121
 Futeraca, 180
- Gades islands, 28, 30, 34, 65, 68, 73, 75, 94, 97, 150, 181, 316
 Gaira river, 113, 132, 157, 158, 159
 Galana island, 68, 157
 Galanta island, 68, 157, 177, 210
 Galeatius, Butrigarius, 106, 127, 285
 Galian island, 260
 Galitia, 10, 96, 311
 Gamba, 280, 374, 384
 Gamelaro island, 374
 Ganges river, 9, 32, 75, 98, 133, 155, 363
 Gangeticus, Gulf of, 39
 Ganphasantes, 385
 Garcia Nunnio, 272
 Gardiner, Bishop, xl., xlv.
 Garet, 374
 Garsia de Padilla, 130
 Gasper, Cortesreales, 344
 Gastaldus, Jacobus, 291, 345
 Gates, Sir T., xxxix.
 Gaza, 57
 Gazatia, 385
 Gedion, 51
 Gelders, Land of, xxvi.
 Geminus, Thomas, xxxvii., xxxviii., xl.
 Gemma Phrysius, 55, 384, 385, 389
 Geneen, xxviii.
 Genua, City of, 28, 65, 155, 206, 310, 340
 Genoa, xvii., xxx.
 Georgians, xxx., xxxi.
 Germanicus, Emperour, 176
 Ger[r]ard, Sir William, xix., xl., xli.
 Gesnerus, 326
 Getulia, 384
 Giaua island, 23, 260, 269, 286
 Giauntes island, 38
 Gibeth island, 34
 Gibilterra, 233, 236, 262
 Gilolo island, 259, 272, 344
 Gilona island, 34
 Gintera island, 41
 Gines Navarro, xv.
 Gioghi island, 260
 Giouan Dulsaraz, 250
 Girardus Mapheus, 348
 Giunti, L. A., xiv.
 Goa, City of, 40, 261
 Godfrey, John, xvii.
 Golden Castile, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 236
 Goleta, Port, 374
 Goliath, xlvi., 149
 Gómara, Francisco Lopez de, xxxvii., xxxix., 271, 335, 337, 342, 350
 Gomera island, xliii., 65, 66, 157, 210, 380
 Gomes, Steuen, 242, 272
 Gonsalues, Peter, 378
 Gonson, Richard, xvii.
 Gonson, William, xvii.
 Gonzales, Don Pero, 341
 Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdes, xiv., xv., 158, 205, 241, 242
 Gonzalus Badaocius, 181, 182, 183
 Gorecius, Leonhardus, xxxix.
 Gorgodes, Meducias island, 97
 Gorgonas island, 338
 Goruzalanus, 72
 Gothia, 298, 306
 Gothicus, Emperour, 176
 Gothland, 9, 286, 295, 299, 306, 347
- Gothland, Bishop of, 302
 Gothus Olanus, 347
 Graesse, xliii.
 Grafton, xii.
 Grafton, Richard, xliii.
 Granada, 36, 52, 63, 67, 73, 103, 110, 133, 191, 201, 202, 273, 274, 340, 341
 Grancanaria islands [*the Canaries*], 41, 65, 157, 210, 380
 Grandis river, 131, 132, 199
 Gratia Dei, 112, 182
 Gray, Richard, xvii.
 Great John, 385
 Great Khan, xv.
 Great Sophie, 326
 Grecia, 54, 56, 155, 262, 296, 302, 319
 Greenland, 299
 Gregorie, 112
 Gregorye I., 56
 Gresham, John, xliii.
 Gresham, William, xii.
 Gretzium, 318
 Grisalva, John, 187, 188, 189, 190, 192, 194
 Gronland, 299, 300, 303
 Grosapha, King of, 40
 Groueland, 8
 Grounzwyk, xxxii.
 Grubes, Master, xiv.
 Grustina, Castle of, 323
 Grustintzi, 323
 Grutland, 245, 300, 347
 Guacana island, 345
 Guacarapita, 99
 Guaecaa lake, 170
 Guaccaiarima, 168, 169, 173, 176
 Guaccanarillus, King, 66, 70, 71, 72, 168
 Guadalupea island, 68, 69, 157, 159, 177, 181, 210, 345
 Guadalqueuir river, 127, 157, 210, 220, 238, 250
 Guadiana river, 273
 Guahabba, 169
 Guahague, Region of, 169
 Guaiagua, Region of, 168
 Guamaonocon, 99
 Guamaretus, King, 102
 Guanabba island, 85
 Guanahaini island, 75
 Guanahattabenechina, 176
 Guanania, Region of, 168
 Guanapan island, 190
 Guanassa island, 105, 150, 163
 Guanguan island, 190
 Guaniba, Region of, 170
 Guaninicabo river, 170
 Guannabo, Region of, 170
 Guariagua, Region of, 173
 Guaricco, Region of, 169
 Guarionexius, King, 79, 80, 82, 84, 86, 87, 91, 92, 93, 102, 168, 171
 Guarionexius, Vale of, 171
 Guarizacca island, 170
 Guaturo, 216, 226
 Guaturo, King, 226
 Gaurabo, Lake, 171
 Guinea, xii., xvi., xix., xxviii., xxxix., xl., 250, 270, 273, 297, 348, 371, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388
 Guise, Duke of, xliii., xlv.
 Gunson, William, xii.
 Guserath, 266
 Gutschyn, King of, xxix.
 Guzerat, Gulf of, 14
 Guzman, Enrique of, 341
- Guzman, Peter Nunez de, 345
 Guzula, 374
- Iabacoa, 169
 Habacucke, 57
 Habissia, Region of, 385
 Habech, Region of, 385
 Hafnia, City of, 331
 Hagueigabon sea, 170
 Haiba river, 168
 Haina, 223
 Haitho, 24, 60
 Haiti island, 166, 167, 168, 338
 Hakluyt, Richard, xii., xliii., xiv., xv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxxviii., xl., xlviii.
 Halicarnassea, 128
 Halle, R., xii., xliii.
 Ham, Kingdom of, 344
 Hamadriades, 74, 101
 Hamburg, 300
 Hannibal, 139
 Hanon, 338
 Haraia, Region of, 96
 Hardie, Master, xviii.
 Harsol, City of, 300
 Hathathiei, 171
 Hawkins, Sir John, xvi., xvii., xlviii.
 Hawkins, William, xvi., xvii.
 Hayhay island, 159
 Hazchora, 374
 Hazlitt, W. C., xxvi.
 Hazoa, Region of, 168
 Hazua mountains, 169, 176
 Hea, Kingdom of, 374
 Heben, 284
 Hebrewes, Captain of the, 316
 Helga mountain, 300
 Helisabeth, 73, 127, 129, 167
 Helisabeth a Boadilla, 127
 Heliseus, 149
 Hellespontus sea, xlviii., 59, 155
 Hely, John, xii.
 Henrique, Don, 273
 Henriques, Diego, 378
 Henry, King, 127, 162, 340, 345
 Henry IV., xxxix.
 Henry V., xxxix.
 Henry VII., xxi., 288
 Henry VIII., xii., xliii., xiv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxxvii., xlv., 6
 Henry, King of France, xlvii.
 Herbert, W., xxxvii., xxxix.
 Hercinia, 313
 Hercules, 50, 105, 138, 149, 156, 236, 285
 Hercules Pillars, 86, 135, 236, 316, 374
 Hercyua, 310
 Herodotus, 248, 339, 346, 350
 Heroum, City of, 284
 Hesiod, xxxviii., xli.
 Hesperides islands, 32, 74, 87, 97, 167, 338
 Heua river, 319
 Hibusson island, 255
 Hiebra, 135, 153, 154
 Hieron, King, xlvii.
 Hieronimus Aquillaris, 192, 193
 Hieronimus Cardanus, 307
 Hieronimus Fracastor, 285
 Hierusalem, 7, 8, 49, 51, 56, 57, 82, 100, 384, 385
 Hierusalem, King of, 82, 208
 Hierusalem, Temple of, xlvii.
 Higinus, 346
 Higuei, 168
 Higucl, 346
 Hircania Sylua, 292
- Hircanian sea, 169, 170, 287, 291, 308, 310, 314
 Hispania island, 6, 28, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 40
 Hispaniola island, xv., 6, 35, 40, 45, 54, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 78, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 87, 89, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 149, 150, 153, 154, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 173, 176, 177, 178, 184, 186, 191, 192, 193, 199, 209, 210, 215, 219, 228, 230, 233, 235, 238, 239, 241, 262, 299, 346
 Hojedus, 72, 79, 81
 Holstrocke, William, xvii.
 Holtrop, Mr, xxv.
 Holy Nose, 330
 Homer, 5, 41, 346, 398
 Honorucco, 169
 Horace, 58
 Hore, Master, xviii.
 Hossuen island, 304
 Hozama, 168, 170
 Huban island, 344
 Hungary, King of, 208, 312
 Iuhabo, 168, 169, 172
 Huinaghan island, 255
 Huitsarch, 299
 Humos point, 273
 Humphrey, Laurence, xl.
 Hyperborean sea, 288
 Hyperboreos mountains, xli., 293, 313, 314, 324
 Hyperbories, 142, 155, 350
 Hyram, 49
- Iberia, 53, 54
 Ichthiophagi, 301, 385
 Ida mountains, 172
 Iguamu, 171
 Iguanama, 173
 Illirium, 306
 Ilmer Lake, 319
 Inacus, Jopez Mendocius, 103
 India, xxi., xxix., xxx., xxxii., 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18, 19, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 40, 50, 52, 65, 67, 75, 79, 90, 98, 103, 120, 127, 155, 180, 198, 203, 204, 209, 216, 219, 227, 233, 239, 261, 263, 264, 266, 269, 272, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 308, 309, 313, 329, 339, 346, 347, 363, 384
 India, Governour of, 274
 India *major*, xxi., xxviii., xxxi., xxxii., 261
 India *minor*, xxi.
 Indian sea, 9, 39, 308, 347, 385
 Indies, 52, 53, 54, 162, 213, 220, 221, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 232, 235, 238, 246, 271, 272, 273, 274, 337, 338, 340, 341, 345, 348, 350, 355
 Indus river, 13, 308, 309
 Infortunate islands, 28, 33, 37, 41, 253
 Innocentius, Pope, xxxi.
 Inspruck, 359, 368
 Insula crusis, 30, 69
 Insula, S. Johannis, 70
 Insulæ Latronum, 254
 Insulæ verides, 39
 Insulas Sancti Barnardi, 162
 Inuagana island, 34
 Ionicum sea, 191
 Ionium, 163
 Ipsicratea, 128

- Irtische river, 323
 Irus, 42
 Isabella, City of, 74, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 86
 Isabella island, 73, 167
 Isabella, Lady, 341
 Isaias, 52, 56, 57
 Ismael the Sophi, 311
 Isocrates, 346
 Isodorus, Bishop, 290
 Isopes, 53
 Israell, 51, 52, 56
 Israell, King of, xxxiv.
 Isseria, 309
 Ister river, 98, 131
 Istoma Georgius, 330, 331
 Ity island, 38
- Jaccha, 168
 Jacchi, Region of, 169
 Jache river, 168
 Jachem river, 73
 Jaciga river, 168
 Jacob, xxx.
 Jacobi, Sancti, 97
 Jacobus Gastaldus, 345
 Jafet, 346
 Jagohaihuco, Region of, 169
 Jaina, 100, 163
 Jaick river, 326, 329
 Jainagua, Lake, 170
 Jaioso, Region of, 374
 Jamaica island, 31, 75, 78, 150, 154, 177, 193, 210, 241
 Jamaizi, Region of, 169
 James, St., Island of, 97
 James, St., Tower of, 84
 James the elder, 10
 Jamgoma, Region of, 260
 Janua, 155
 Janus, 155
 Japhet, 155
 Jaques Cartier, 345
 Jaroslavia, 309
 Jaroslaw, Castle of, 324
 Jason, 51, 262
 Jausa river, 313
 Java island, 23, 269, 344
 Jaxartes river, 311
 Jean de Ferrieres, xlv.
 Jemptia, 305
 Jenkenson, Anthony, xviii.
 Jenkynson, Master, xliii.
 Jenuen, xxx.
 Jericho, Priests of, xlvii.
 Jerom, Castle of, 323
 Jerusalem, Patriarche of, xxxv.
 Job, 11, 349
 Joga, 14
 Johan, Duke, 289, 293
 Johanna island, 28, 29, 66, 70, 74, 75, 104, 241
 Johannes, Cursius, 106
 Johannes, Diaz, 105
 John, King, 65, 129, 273, 274
 John, Lake of, 325
 John of Desborough, xxv., xxxvi.
 John, Pope, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 John, Queen, 273
 John the Evangelist, 10
 Jonas, xxv., 338
 Joppa, 181
 Joseph of Arimathea, 56
 Josephus, xlviii., 8, 384, 385
 Josuah, 316
 Jouanaboina, 100
 Joubert, Francoise, xlv.
 Jovius, Paulus, 292, 331
- Joy, Master, xviii.
 Juan, 182
 Juanaga, Region of, 234
 Juba, King, 347
 Jucataana island [i.e., the peninsula of Yucatan], 40, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193, 238
 Juda, Princes of, 56
 Judde, Sir Andrew, 383
 Judea, 7, 18, 57
 Jug river, 286, 312, 322
 Juga river, 293, 312
 Jugaria, 322, 326
 Juggé, John, xlvi.
 Juggé, Richard, xxxix., xlvi., 398
 Jugoria, 309
 Juharici, 326
 Juhgary, The, 326
 Juhra, 293, 322, 326
 Julius, Pope, 309
 Julyan Samano, 346
 Junna river, 73, 168, 172
 Jura, 116
 Jureche, 152
 Jurham, 292
 Jwanowosero, Lake of, 325
- Kaienska Semla, Region of, 330
 Kama, Region of, 326
 Kaman river, 325, 329
 Katharine, Queen, 65
 Kele river, xxxvii.
 Kerry, John, xix.
 Khan, Great, xv.
 Kingsley, Rev. Canon, xvi.
 Kitai, Lake, 323
 Kitaisko, Lake, 323
 Kithay, Lake, 324
 Kohl, Mr J. G., xv.
 Kuliwo river, 322
 Kurbski, Simeon Pheodorowice, 324
 Kyui, 20
- La Desseada island, 210
 La Ferté, xlv.
 La Mina, 382
 La Spagnuola, 210
 Labrador, xliii., xv., 287, 344, 345, 347
 Lachroma river, 321
 Lacossa, Johannes de, 107
 Lactantius, 10, 11, 142
 Lacus, Albus, 291
 Lacus, Cronicus, 289
 Ladoga, Lake, 319
 Lagartos river, 111
 Lagoma island, 260
 Laletania, 173
 Lamas, 155
 Lambert, Francis, xviii., xix.
 Lambert, Nicolas, 376, 377
 Lamer, xlv.
 Lampaloda island, 374
 Lancelotus island, 65, 157
 Lancerota, xx.
 Landinus, 279
 Landman, David, xix.
 Langanas, 304
 Lantchidol sea, 261
 Laon, xlv.
 Lapponia, Region of, 8, 291, 299, 301, 302, 305, 347
 Lares, 176
 Lasiesia, 363
 Laterane, 309
 Latium, 66, 166, 167
 Lathyro King, 286
 Laurence, xvii., xlviii.
 Lazaro, Archipelago di San, 254
 Lazarus, King, 187, 188
 Lech, King of the Polons, 318
- Ledisma, Johannes, 144
 Ledyl river, 291
 Legion, 201
 Legion, King of, 203
 Leigh, Doctor, xvi.
 Lemures, 85
 Leo, Bishop of Rome, 64, 106, 137, 287, 308, 309
 Leochares, 49
 Leon, 342
 Leon, John Ponce of, 345, 346
 Leonhardus Gorecius, xxxix.
 Lepanto, xii.
 Lepin Castle, 323
 Lesbos, 69
 Levante, The, xii., xiii., xvii., xviii., xix., 233
 Leviathan sea, 50
 Lewes, Don, 378
 Libane, 110
 Libernus, Sigismundus, 298, 312, 318
 Libia, 8, 54, 56, 70, 81, 166, 177, 374, 384
 Libicum, 163
 Libra, xlii.
 Ligurian sea, 297
 Lima, 338
 Limonares island, 151
 Limoso island, 374
 Lincoln, Bishop of, xl., xlv.
 Lisbon, City of, 16, 39, 267, 277, 279, 341
 Lithuania, Duke of, 318
 Lituania, Realme of, 286, 291, 292, 311, 314, 318, 326
 Linié, 132
 Liunia, 287, 291, 306, 308, 311, 312, 319, 331
 Lock, Sir William, xiii.
 Locke, Michael, xix.
 Lodge, Thomas, xl.
 Lodovike, 73, 79, 82, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Longon, 260
 Lop, City of, 26
 Lopes, Diego, 272, 273
 Lopez Francisco, 288, 335, 342, 350
 Lordo, 287
 Losoth island, 304
 Louat river, 319
 Lozon island, 260
 Lucane, 310
 Lucomorya mountains, 323, 324
 Ludovico Bartheta (i.e., *Vartheta*), xlviii.
 Luft, Hans, xxv.
 Lugo, Alphonsus, 66
 Luigo, 252
 Lumatola island, 260
 Lumbardie, 306, 340
 Lupus Sosa, 199
 Lusheburne [i.e., *Lisbon*], xxvii., xxviii., xxix., 277, 309
 Luther, xxvi.
 Luttrell, Sir John, xix.
 Luxanus, 74
 Luys of S. Angell, 341
 Luys, Cancell, 346
 Luys, Don, 341
 Lutz, 271
 Lybien, xxxi.
 Lyese Nicolas, 378
 Lyon sea, 314
- Macecina, Region of, 169
 Maccchian island, 259, 260
 Macedonia, xxxiii., 14
 Machiam sea, 344
 Machinnech, King, 100
- Machmetgirei, King, 328
 Machochael, 99
 Macorix, Region of, 168
 Macrobius, 41, 298, 347
 Madagascar, 7, 23, 285, 286
 Madanino, 69, 157
 Madera islands, 35, 40, 41, 87, 260, 270, 339, 340, 375, 380
 Magellanus Ferdinando [i.e., *Fernam de Magelhaens*], 9, 32, 33, 34, 35, 243, 249, 250, 252, 258, 272, 274
 Magellanus, Straits of, 8, 33, 35, 161, 183, 252, 285, 350
 Magna Canaria, 157
 Magna fors island, 41
 Magnete island, 348
 Magnus, Albertus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Magona, 81
 Magua, Region of, 169
 Maguacochios, 167
 Maguana, Region of, 169, 171, 172, 176
 Mahaitin mountain, 169
 Mahumet, 14, 23, 25, 27, 40, 57, 326, 374
 Maia, Region of, 150, 163
 Mainguariti, Region of, 169
 Maïam, 187
 Maiobanexius, King, 86, 91, 92, 93
 Maiolica, 270
 Malabar, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269
 Malacca, xxix., 21, 32, 34, 40, 75, 247, 255, 256, 260, 261, 267, 269, 271, 274, 313, 344
 Malea, 155, 304
 Maligny, Seigneur de, xlv.
 Mallua island, 260
 Malpha, Flavius of, 348
 Manibrone, xxx.
 Manabaho, Region of, 169
 Manabaxao, Region of, 169
 Manacapana, Region of, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128
 Manache, Sibill, xx.
 Manati, Lake, 171
 Mandeuell, 329
 Mangalor, 265
 Manglando, City of, 259
 Mangi, 25, 26
 Manicauxius, King, 82
 Manicheus, 10
 Manicongo, 270, 374
 Manilius, Marcus, xlv.
 Mans, xlv.
 Mansus, Alfonsus, 130
 Manuel, Petro, 272
 Maragnonum river, 98, 132, 134, 155, 160
 Marburg, xxv.
 Marchautes island, 329
 Marchena, 340, 341
 Marcellius Ficinus, 338
 Marco da Niza, 287
 Marcus Antonius, 315
 Marcus, Emperour, 284
 Marcus Paulus, 55, 286
 Marcus Paulus Venetus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Mare island, 35, 259, 260
 Mare Congelatum, 8
 Mare de Sabione, 374
 Mare del Sur [i.e., the Pacific Ocean], 54, 211, 214, 223, 225, 230, 233, 234, 235, 252, 262, 338, 344, 345, 347
 Mare Pacificum, 252, 253
 Margarita island, 54, 88, 96, 141, 165, 178, 214, 233

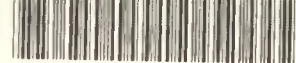
- Margarita, Peter, 79
 Mariatanbal, Region of, 98, 132
 Marien, Region of, 169, 172
 Mary, Virgin, xxvi., 69, 124, 192, 198
 Marmarica, 8
 Marmor, 112, 114, 135
 Marobu, 100
 Marocco, xix., xx.
 Marques, Diegus, 157
 Marris, 122
 Marrocko, 374
 Marrok, 161
 Martabani, 268
 Martine, 383
 Martinus Gratiast island, 343
 Martire, Pietro, or Martyr, Peter, xiii., xxxvii., 43, 61, 63, 64, 65, 102, 186, 207, 241, 246, 299
 Mary, Queen, xii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 1.
 Mary of Nemegen, xxvi.
 Massana island, 34
 Massaquer port, 374
 Mathan island, 258
 Mathien island, 35
 Mathinino island, 100
 Matinino island, 30, 69, 157, 166, 210
 Matritis, 123, 184
 Matthkur, 303
 Maucara, 169
 Maurevert, xlv.
 Mauritania, 8, 374, 384
 Mauritania Cesariensis, 374
 Mauritania Tingitania, 374
 Mausolus, King, 49, 128
 Maximilian, Emperour, 290, 308, 309, 312, 368
 Mecca, 166, 267
 Medecis, Catherine de, xlv.
 Media, 314
 Medina Celi, Duke of, 341
 Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 250, 341
 Medina de Campo, xxxix., 232
 Medon, xxxi.
 Meersch, P. C. van der, xxv.
 Megha, xxviii.
 Mela, Pomponius, 346, 347
 Melaqua, City of, xxix., 21
 Melcha island, 39
 Melchoir, 71, 72
 Meler, Lake, 305
 Melinda, xxviii., 132, 385
 Melo, Frances de, 273
 Meluza, 20
 Memi, City of, 241
 Memphis, City of, 307, 315
 Mendala, 344
 Mendez, Diegus, 154
 Mendocius, Inacus Jopez, 103
 Mendoza, Anthony di, 287
 Mendoza, Cardinall Pero Gonzales of, 341
 Mendoza, Luigo of, 252
 Mendoza, Mentia of, 214
 Menmones, 385
 Mense, 56
 Mensurado, Cape, 381
 Meotis, 155, 292, 298, 306, 311, 314, 325, 326, 351
 Mercado, Lodouicus, 165, 182
 Mercedes, Saynte Mary of, 77
 Mericke, William, xli.
 Meroc island, 8, 385
 Merore, 41
 Mesa, Barnarde of, 130
 Messana island, xvii., 256
 Messina, King of, 256, 257, 258
 Mesopotania, 297
 Meta Inognita, xiii.
 Metellus Celer, 9
 Methymna Campi, City of, 68, 70, 72, 80
 Methyna, Duke of, 96
 Mexico, Viceroy of, 287
 Mexico, City of, xiii., 55, 61, 287, 288, 338, 342
 Mezen river, 322
 Mezentium, 66
 Michael Passamonte, 213
 Midnall, Thomas, xiii.
 Mien, 24, 261
 Milan, City of, 14, 63, 67, 103, 131, 141
 Milenoes, 65
 Mina, 339, 375, 382
 Mina, Castle of, 382
 Mina river, 376
 Minera, xviii.
 Minos, xviii.
 Mioformo, City of, 284
 Mirobalanus, Region of, 151
 Mitaini, 167
 Mithridates, 128, 129
 Moguer, 341
 Mogunce, Bishop of, 56
 Molucca islands, 8, 9, 20, 32, 33, 34, 35, 54, 183, 234, 235, 247, 249, 256, 258, 259, 260, 271, 272, 273, 274, 286, 287, 344
 Molybe, 385
 Momsabith, xxviii.
 Moncellese, Master Bernardino, 356
 Monoch island, 22
 Mons Crucis, 300
 Mons Farratus island, 30
 Mons Serratus island, 69, 177
 Monte Rodondo, 382
 Montegio Francis, 187, 190, 191, 192, 195
 Montes Luna, 41, 132, 217, 385
 Montes Niuales, 157, 160
 Monyuye, 240
 Moore, Sir Thomas, 398
 Morales, Andreas, 134, 156, 165, 167, 169, 184, 185
 Morales, Gasper, 178, 179, 214
 Morantes, Christophorus, 186
 Morauia, Region of, 326
 Morea, The, 316
 Moren, xxxi.
 Morgan, Sylvanus, xlv.
 Morley, Professor II., xxxviii.
 Moronites, xxx., xxxi.
 Morroraes, xxx., xxxi.
 Mos, Lake, 304
 Moscow, 187, 286, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 308, 312, 313, 314, 317, 321
 Moscovia, xxxix., 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovia, Andreas of, 316
 Moscovia, George of, 316
 Moscovia, Helena of, 289
 Moscovia, John of, 289, 316, 319, 321, 324, 325, 326
 Moscovia, Sophia of, 326
 Moscovia, Simeon of, 316
 Moscovia, Demetrius Ambassadour of, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 316, 325, 329, 331
 Moscovia, Dukes of, 283, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 314, 318, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovites, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 306, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331, 332
 Moses, xxi., xlvii., 11, 49, 50, 51, 57, 110
 Mosyli, The, 385
 Motka, Cape, 331
 Mouy, Count de, xlv.
 Moxica, Michael of, 65
 Moxus river, 313, 314
 Mozambique, 261
 Muera, 318
 Müller, Mr Frederick, xxv., xxvi.
 Multoxuman, King, 195
 Mumu, 112
 Münster, Sebastian, 3, 13, 42, 249, 291, 293
 Murcien, 176
 Muscostrom sea, 304
 Muthil island, 34
 Mutir island, 259, 260
 Mysians, xviii., 318
 Naeldwyek, Jan van, xxvi.
 Nagai, 329
 Nagaria, xxix.
 Naiba, 83
 Naiba river, 73, 83, 168, 172
 Nansao, Earl of, 214
 Naples, King of, xxx.
 Narmaria, xxix.
 Narsinga, 14, 15, 20, 263, 264, 265
 Narsinga, King of, 14, 40, 264
 Nativitatis, Baia, 129
 Nauaryen, King of, xxx., xviii.
 Nauchin, City of, 260
 Navarre, King of, xxx., xviii.
 Nebrissa, 135, 165
 Neglina river, 313
 Negro river, 374
 Nehemiah, 56
 Neibaymao, Region of, 169
 Neibaymas mountain, 169
 Nemea, 143
 Nemroth, 53, 290
 Neper river, 314
 Nepos, Cornelius, 9, 286, 347
 Neptunus, xviii., 55, 163, 165, 176
 Nereiaes, 74, 101, 127, 165, 176
 Nero, 41
 Nerui, 340
 Nestorius, xxx., 27
 New Andalusia, 130
 New France, 287, 288
 New India, 3, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41
 New Spayne, 236, 238, 241, 287, 342
 New World, 68, 127, 137, 156, 174, 245, 247, 272, 273, 337, 338, 339, 342
 Newfoundland, xiii., xiv., xv., xviii., xvi.
 Nicaragua, 338
 Nicene, 290
 Nicolai, 322
 Nicuesa, Diego, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Nidrosia, 299, 303
 Nidrosia, Archbishop of, 299
 Nignus, 94, 126
 Nigritis, 132, 384
 Nile river, 8, 41, 110, 111, 131, 132, 153, 155, 169, 175, 193, 199, 217, 283, 284, 285, 293, 309, 311, 312, 339, 346, 351, 374, 384, 385
 Nimaca, 169
 Nizaus, 169
 Noah, xlvi., 51, 155, 340, 346, 386
 Noceumor island, 260
 Nogais, 311, 329
 Nomen Dei, 113, 234, 235
 Norduegia, 331
 Noricum, 314
 Northumberland, Duke of, xxxviii., xxxix., 5
 Nortpoden, 330
 Norumbega, xiv.
 Norway, Governours of, 332
 Norway, King of, 331
 Norwegia, King of, xxx.
 Nova Castilia, 343
 Nova Hispania, 55, 213, 238, 241, 287, 342
 Novogradia [i.e., *Novgorod*], City of, 289, 290, 291, 309, 312, 313, 314, 318, 319, 321, 326, 328, 329, 330
 Nova Scotia, xv.
 Nubia, 384
 Nuceria, Paulus Jouius, Bishop of, 308, 312, 331
 Numidia, 374
 Nunnez, Alphonsus, 123
 Nunnez de Gusman, Peter, 345
 Nycolas, Saynt, 75, 78
 Nysa, 100
 Nysea, 384
 O [i.e., *Omega*] point, 75, 76
 Obdoria, 287, 310, 323
 Obea, Castle of, 323
 Obi river, xli., 287, 322, 323, 332
 Obiowa, 323.
 Occoa river, 170, 292
 Ocha river, 292, 308, 313, 314, 319, 324, 325
 Ochelaga, 287
 Ocho Lupus, 186
 Odia, 260
 Odoardo Barbessa, 258
 Ognai Sancti Marigalante island, 210
 Olanus, Gothus, 300, 347, 348
 Olanus, Lupus, 111, 112
 Olsa, 319
 Olmutium, 314
 Oloan, 188, 191
 Ooliab, 49
 Oone, 305
 Ophir, 7, 51, 66, 73, 82, 338, 343
 Oplandia, 305
 Oram, City of, 374
 Ordassus, Diegus, 192
 Orpei, The, 385
 Ormuz island, 13, 20, 261, 266
 Oro river, 380
 Orsa, 316
 Oryenten, xxx., xxxi.
 Os Dragonis, Straits of, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108, 128, 132, 134, 151, 178, 180
 Ostrich, Henry, xix.
 Ostrobothnia, 305, 306
 Osep, Gregorevitch Napea, xl.
 Otho, 9
 Otifer, 289, 290
 Otogeria, City of, 291
 Otoque island, 233
 Otto Brumfelsius, xliii.
 Ottomanus, Bajasetes, 60, 311
 Ottoeria, City of, 314.
 Otwer, City of, 314
 Ovandus, King, 190
 Ovandus, Nicolaus, 165
 Ovetenses, Astur, 135
 Ovielus, Gonzalus Fernandus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241.
 Oxford, Earl of, xxxvii.

- Oxus river, 308
 Ozama, 240
- Pacra, King, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147
 Padilla, Garsia de, 130
 Padus, 133
 Pahan, 260
 Paleacate, 263
 Paleologus, Sophia, 316
 Paleologus, Thomas, 316
 Palitzki, Lieuetenaunte, 328
 Palma island, 41, 66, 157, 177, 380
 Palmaria, Region of, 189
 Palmas, Cape de las, 381, 382
 Palmer, Sir T., xxxix.
 Palos, 96, 97, 99, 341
 Pan, 166
 Panama, City of, 214, 223, 233, 234, 235, 338
 Panchi, City of, 26
 Panes, 101
 Pannonie, 133, 155, 290, 306, 310, 314
 Panonome, King, 182
 Pantalarea island, 374
 Panuco, 241
 Papa, Johannes, 385
 Papin, City of, 324
 Papinowgorod, City of, 324
 Paracelsus, xlvi.
 Paraue river, 343
 Paria, 36, 38, 89, 90, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 113, 128, 129, 130, 132, 135, 151, 156, 163, 165, 178, 180, 181, 184, 338, 363
 Paria, Gulf of, 130
 Paricora, 98, 132
 Pariza, 183
 Paropanisus mountain, 308
 Parthoepa, Queen, 103
 Parthia, 284
 Parthicus, Emperour, 176
 Paruaim, 7
 Parus, Georgius, 326
 Passamonte, Mychel, 213, 240
 Patani, 260
 Patagoni, 252
 Patalo river, 363
 Pauloghon island, 258
 Paulus, Pope, 179
 Paulus, Jovius, 60, 287, 308, 312
 Pazer, 344
 Pean, John, 385
 Pecerra, Region of, 315
 Federnales mountains, 219
 Pedir, 344
 Pedrarias da Villa, 229
 Pedro Doria, xvii.
 Pegu, 20, 21, 261, 263, 264, 344
 Peim, 26
 Pellegrine de Maricourt, xliii.
 Peloponeso, 134, 316, 319
 Pelusio river, 284, 285
 Pelusius, 285
 Penguin island, xviii.
 Peralfonso de Melo, 272
 Peraria, F., 65
 Percaslavia, City of, 291, 331
 Perecow, 382
 Perez, John, 340, 341
 Perillus, 49
 Periquete, King, 182
 Perm, 293
 Permia, 286, 309, 325, 326
 Permska, 293
 Persia, xxviii., 15, 26, 267, 309, 314
 Persia, Gulf of, 82, 308
 Persia, King of, 284, 311, 319, 326
 Persides, 75
- Pert, Sir Thomas, xiii., 6
 Peru, xiii., xxxix., 6, 54, 130, 285, 338, 343, 346, 363
 Pescora River, 286
 Peter, 125
 Petit, F., xxxviii.
 Petrus Alphonsus, 94, 96
 Petrus Arias, 126, 127, 142, 214, 229
 Pettislego, xl.
 Petzora River, 322, 323, 324, 330, 332
 Phaeton, 73
 Pharis River, 262, 310
 Phenicen, xxxi.
 Phidias, 74
 Philadelphus, King, 284, 285
 Philip, King, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 52.
 Philistines, xlvii., 51
 Philo, xlv.
 Philostratus, 384
 Phoenicia, xi.
 Phrysius, Gemma, 384
 Phylippe, the Apostle, 57
 Pichet, John, xvii.
 Piedmont, xlv.
 Pienege, 312, 322
 Piescoya River, 322
 Pieza River, 322
 Pigafetta, Antonio, 243, 246, 247, 249, 255, 258
 Pignonem, 153
 Pinnigt, 300
 Pinsteado, Antoniades, 375, 376, 377
 Pinsteado, Antonic Anes, 378
 Pinsteado, John Anes, 377, 378
 Pintiguanus, Chiaconus, 129
 Pinzon, Martin Alonso, 341
 Pinzonus, Aries, 96, 98
 Pinzonus, Vincentius Annez, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Pircho, City of, 305
 Pisa, John Rodriguez of, 272
 Pius Secundus, 8, 9, 41
 Pizarro, Francisco, xiii., 108, 110
 Placentia, 340
 Plata river, 338, 343
 Plato, xl., xliii., xliiii., xlv., 10, 337, 338, 340
 Plaipeir, 368
 Plescouia, 291, 309, 312, 314
 Pliny, xliii., xlvi., 8, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 41, 53, 67, 75, 120, 133, 142, 152, 175, 179, 208, 221, 225, 227, 231, 236, 245, 248, 278, 284, 285, 286, 289, 292, 294, 297, 298, 306, 310, 315, 340, 342, 347, 349, 363, 364, 383, 384, 385, 386
 Plummer, Thomas, xvii.
 Pluto, xlv., 149, 355
 Po river, 133, 314, 363, 364
 Pocchorrosa, King, 147, 148, 162, 163, 178
 Pocchorosa, Region of, 162, 163
 Pogosa, 323
 Poiassa river, 323
 Polagua island, 344
 Polen, King of, xxx., 318
 Politianus, Angelus, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
 Polo island, 256
 Polomus Chiaconus, 129
 Polonie, 314, 318, 326
 Polonie, King, 286, 290, 318, 319
 Polonie, Russus of, 318
 Polonie, Sigismunde of, 309, 319
 Polotzko, 312
 Polybius, 41
 Pomponius Mela, 346, 347, 349
 Ponce, John, 165, 181, 345, 346
- Poncha, King, 115, 116, 121, 137, 138, 139, 140, 149, 178
 Poncius Johannes, 165, 181, 345, 346
 Ponet, John, xxxvii.
 Ponte, Alfonsus de, 157
 Pontike sea, 131, 262, 296
 Pontus, 297, 308, 318
 Porcena, 71
 Porne, King of, 34
 Porne island, 22, 34, 258
 Porte Joppa, 181
 Portofarnia, 374
 Porto Rigo, xv.
 Portucarerius Alsons, 191, 192, 195
 Portugal, Alonzo of, 273, 341
 Portugal, Emanuel of, 16, 37, 39, 40
 Portugal, Henrique of, 273
 Portugal, Johan of, 129, 271, 273, 274
 Portugal, Lewes of, 378
 Portugal, Kings of, xvi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxvii., xxix., xxx., 13, 40, 41, 54, 74, 129, 256, 261, 267, 270, 271, 273, 274, 340, 341, 363, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 381, 382, 385
 Portus Bellus, 112, 135, 153, 177
 Portus Cathaginis, 106
 Portus Desideratus, 188
 Portus Platea, 176
 Portus Regalis, 71, 105, 176
 Potanchaus, King, 189, 194
 Potassa, 323
 Potiwlo, 330
 Pothorst, 300
 Potto, Chiaconus, 129
 Potzcheriema river, 323
 Powell, William, xxxix., 43
 Poyas Semnoi mountains, 322, 323
 Poynings, Sir Adrian, xlv.
 Pozon island, 256
 Praga, City of, 291
 Prato, Albertus de, xiv.
 Preciosus, Johannes, 51
 Precop, 325
 Prester, John, xxi., xxxii., xxxiii., xxxv., 51, 339, 374, 384, 385
 Proclus, 338
 Prometheus, 57
 Propertius, 285
 Prussia, Master of, 308, 319
 Psammiticus, King, 284
 Ptolomeus, 8, 41, 210, 236, 262, 284, 285, 289, 308, 313, 349, 384, 390
 Pulaoan island, 258
 Pulisachnites river, 25
 Purchas, Samuel, xii., xiv.
 Puren, 152
 Pustoofero, 322, 323
 Puta, 88
 Pyconye river, xxxiii.
 Pyne, H., xv.
 Pynson, Richard, xxv.
 Pyrinei mountain, 53
 Pythagoras, xlvii., 215
 Pythis, 49
- Quadrado Gulf, 344
 Quando, Nicolas de, 345, 346
 Quareba, 153
 Quarequa, King, 138, 178
 Quarequa, Region of, 138, 139, 338
 Quatour Tempora island, 151
 Quauhtema, 338
 Quaxaca, 342
 Quenquinasu, City of, 24, 25
 Queraquiera island, 69, 157, 159
 Quicedus, John, 123, 126
- Quicuri Region of, 151
 Quinsai, 26, 55, 307
 Quiola, xxviii.
 Quintanilia, 341
 Quintilian, xlviii.
 Quiriquetana, 150, 151
 Quitilla island, 190
 Quito, 338
 Quizqueia island, 166, 167
- Rabida, 340, 341
 Ragusa, City of, 330
 Raja, Calauar, King, 258
 Raja, Capitayne, 120
 Raja Columbu, King, 255
 Raja Humabuon, King, 257
 Raja Sautoa, King, 260
 Raja Siagu, Prince, 255
 Raja Siripada, King, 258
 Raja Sultan Manzor, 259
 Ramonus, 99
 Ramusio, J. B., xiv., xv., xxxviii
 Rase, John, 382
 Rastall, John, xx.
 Rastall, Master, xviii., xix.
 Rastall Sarieant, xviii.
 Ratcliff, xxxviii.
 Ravenna, 314
 Razania, 309
 Red sea, xxix., xlviii., 7, 13, 51, 143, 180, 284, 285, 339, 346, 374, 385
 Regio Baccalarum, 32, 55
 Regnum Orguene, 384
 Resan, City of, 290
 Reyre, Region of, 168
 Rezan, 324
 Rezense, 292, 309
 Rha river, 291, 292, 313, 329
 Rhapsii, 385
 Rhene river, 56, 314, 363
 Rhodes, xii.
 Ribera, Doctor, 272
 Richard I., King, xxvi.
 Richard II., King, xxxix.
 Rico Porto, xv.
 Ridley, Master, xviii.
 Riga river, 287, 308, 312, 314
 Rio Dulce river, 381
 Rio Grande river, 380
 Rio de Chicora river, xv.
 Rio de los Perdidos river, 151, 156
 Rio de la Plata river, xxxix., 54, 288, 338, 343, 386
 Rio de los Potos river, 382
 Ripheca, 155
 Ripheos mountains, 293, 324
 Risophagi, The, 385
 Riuro Nigro, 120, 121
 Riuro Nigrum, 191
 Rivero Diego, 272
 Robbyn Hood, 53
 Rocumdulfe, Earl of, xlvii.
 Rodanum, 314
 Rodericus Colmenaris, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123
 Rodes, 351
 Rodes, Grand Master of the, 374
 Rodrigo, 341
 Rodriguez, John, 272
 Rogers, John, xxxix.
 Roldanus, Ximenus, 86, 87, 90
 Rome, Adrian, Pope of, 309
 Rome, Pope Alexander VI. of, 37, 74, 129, 201, 273, 274, 315
 Rome, Pope Clement VII., 368, 309, 347
 Rome, Cloelia of, 71
 Rome, Consul of, xlv.
 Rome, Emperour of, xxxii.
 Rome, Gregory, Bishop of, 56

- Rome, Julius of, 309
 Rome, Leo X. of, 64, 106, 109, 111, 113, 114, 123, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 145, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 159, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 172, 174, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185, 287, 308, 309
 Rome, Paul III. of, 51, 58, 179
 Rome, Pius II. of, 8, 9, 41
 Rosciua, City of, 290, 291, 309
 Rosolanos, 289
 Rostowe, 331
 Rotunda, Sancta Maria, 69
 Rubicho river, 322
 Ruiz, Bartholome, 272
 Ruiz, Peter, 272, 274
 Rummie, James, xvii.
 Russia, Basiliius of, 289, 290, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
 Russia, Emperour of, 290
 Russus, Town of, 318
 Rut, John, xiv., xv., xvi.
 Ruthens; Constantine, Captain of the, 316
 Ruthens, Czar of the, 319
 Saba, S, 385
 Saba, Queen of, S, 374, 385
 Sabea, 129, 385
 Saction, City of, 27
 Sacrificios; Sacrifice, Island of, 189, 192
 Safale, xviii., 36
 St Ambrose, 10, 315
 St Andrew, 290, 319
 St Angell, Luys of, 341
 St Antonie islands, 272, 273
 St Aubin, Sieurde, xlv.
 St Augustine, 10, 142, 165, 218, 238, 315, 318, 338
 St Augustine, Cape of, 129, 155, 165, 181, 183, 218, 250, 273, 338
 St Benedict, 306
 St Bernardi islands, 162
 St Catharine, Castle of, 84
 St Christopher, Gold mine of, 105
 St Christoval, Island of, 210
 St Clare [electrical fire on masts], 251
 St Cosmus, 310
 St Cruz islands, 30, 130, 159, 188
 St Cyrillus, 315
 St Domingo, xv., 45, 82, 84, 130, 154, 168, 169, 170, 176, 209, 210, 213, 240, 338, 346
 St Dunstan's parish, xlviii.
 St Francis, 130, 176, 198, 240, 341
 St George, xxxi., 39, 323
 St Germain, Town of, xlv.
 St Germain, Bay of, xv.
 St Gregory, 315
 St Helen [electrical fire on masts], 251
 St Hericus, 305
 St James, xxviii., 10, 186
 St James island, xxviii., 97, 186, 261, 262
 St James, Castle of, 36, 84
 St Jerome, 195, 338
 St John, Gulf of, 194
 St John, Port, 192
 St John's island, xv., 45, 104, 130, 155, 159, 173, 176, 210, 213, 241
 St John's harbour, xiii., xiv., xv., 192
 St John of Jerusalem, Knights of, xii.
 St Julian, Port, 252
 St Lazaro, Archepegalo di, 254
 St Lazarus, 187
 St Laurence [i.e., Madagascar], Island of, 285
 St Leger, xlv.
 St Luca, or Lucar, de Barrameda, 157, 210, 262
 St Lucas Guild at Antwerp, xxv.
 St Maria Antigua, Island of, 30, 69, 110, 134, 163, 198, 207, 218, 226, 229, 236, 238
 St Maria Rotunda, Island of, 30, 69
 St Maria de Gratia, Island of, 238
 St Marina, 190
 St Martha, 156, 157
 St Martinus, Island of, 30, 69
 St Marye of Mercellis, 77, 240
 St Matthei, Region of, 112, 132, 135
 St Michael's Gulf, 54, 140, 162, 165, 182, 183, 214
 St Nicolas [electrical fire on masts], 250
 St Nicolas island, 375, 376
 St Nicolas, Port of, 75, 78
 St Paul, xlviv., 7, 11, 55, 56, 204, 293
 St Peter, 130, 203, 204, 250, 290
 St Romaine, Tower of, 226
 St Sergius, 291
 St Sophia, 314
 St Thomas, xxix, xxx., xxxiv.-vi., 74, 79, 80, 250
 St Thomas, Island of, 250, 270
 St Thomas Tower, 31, 74, 79, 80
 St Vincent, Cape, 250
 St Vincent, Harbour of, 381
 Salaye, Dr Sancho, 272
 Saleno, Monsieur de, xlvii.
 Salla, Port, 374
 Salsburg, Cardinal of, 24, 247, 248
 Salvaterra, 176
 Samano, Julian, 346
 Samarcandia, 311
 Samson, xlvii.
 Samma, Town of, 381, 383
 Sammaterra, Town of, 383
 Samogeds, The, 323
 Samotor, 20
 Samotra [i.e., Sumatra], 7, 21, 22, 32, 344
 Samua, Town of, 381, 383
 Sananton island, 272
 Sancta Cruce, xiii., xx., 30, 40, 130, 188
 Sancta Fec, 341
 Sanders, Blaise, xli.
 Sanguenai, 287
 San Juan island, xv.
 Saragossa, xxxviii.-ix., 247
 Sardinia, 56
 Sardonica, 284
 Sardus, 163
 Sarmatia, 170, 284, 291, 295, 298, 308, 311, 314, 326, 347
 Sarmatians, 155, 301, 310
 Saturma, Region of, 157, 158, 160, 163
 Saunders, Laurence, xxxix.
 Sava, City of, 374
 Savoy, The Master of the, xliii.
 Sawolhenses, The, 327, 329
 Saxogrammaticus, 300
 Saxony, Duke of, 366
 Sbozzo, 368
 Scandia, 298
 Scandinavia, 298, 347
 Scarense, Bishop of, 310
 Scharutzick, City of, 329
 Scharnitz, 329
 Schat river, 325
 Schavo, 381
 Schichmamai, 329
 Schidaek, 329
 Schio, 366, 368
 Schondania, Region of, 298
 Schondenmarchia, Region, 298
 Selavonia, 290, 306
 Selavons, 290, 306, 315, 318, 319
 Scolus, John, 345
 Seombria Islands, 106, 107
 Scordia, Region of, 293, 298, 299, 302, 305, 313
 Scopra, 49
 Scoria, King, 183
 Scutum Cateba island, 135
 Scwerski, 325
 Scythia, 155, 289, 291, 292, 297, 306, 310, 312, 313, 316, 347, 363
 Sea, Admiral of the great Ocean, 29, 35, 67, 79, 94
 Sebastian, John, 271, 272
 Segovia, 126, 127
 Seina, Capreansis de, 137
 Selani Island, 34
 Selencus Nicanor, S, 59
 Selle, xiv.
 Selymus, Prince, 311
 Sem, 346
 Semnoi Poyas mountains, 324
 Seneca, 48, 67, 337, 339
 Senega river, 280
 Senegal river, 132, 374, 384
 Sequeryra, Diego Lopez of, 272, 273
 Serena, 274
 Serponowitzi, 323
 Serra Nevata mountains, 108, 160
 Serranus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160, 258
 Serrationa [Sierra Leone], 39, 250
 Sesostris, 284
 Sesostris, King, 284
 Sesponow castle, 323
 Sest river, 321
 Sestau island, 192
 Sesto river, xvi., 376, 381
 Setebos, 252
 Sette Citta, Kingdom, 287
 Seville, xiv., xvi., xl., 50, 210, 246, 250, 262, 288, 338, 342, 345, 348
 Sforza Ascanius, 65, 68, 103, 127
 Shava, 381
 Shawgro, 381
 Shyawe, 381
 Sian, Zacabedera King of, 260
 Sianfu, City of, 26
 Sibier, Prouinee of, 326, 329
 Sibut river, 323
 Sibylla Erythrea, 135
 Sicensis, Nicolaus, 309
 Sico island, 260
 Siech, Ismael, 266
 Sigismundus Liberius, 298, 312, 318
 Siguera, Francisco de, 378
 Siloli island, 34
 Silver of Rever, 288, 343
 Silvius Pandonus, 133
 Simonides, 41
 Sina, Kingdom of, 32, 313, 344
 Sinum Perditorum, Point, 135
 Sinus Arabicus, 13
 Sinus Finnicus, 306
 Sinus Magnus, 248
 Sinus Persicus, 20, 32, 41, 82
 Smith, Sir T., xxxvii., xlii., xlv.
 Smolense, 290, 291
 Smyrnophora, 385
 Soborovius, George, 316
 Sofa, Lupus, 199
 Solinus Julius, 16, 54, 338, 346, 347, 383
 Solo island, 34
 Solowki island, 321
 Solysius, Johannes, 181
 Sorachi village, 180
 Soria islands, 347, 348, 387
 Sossa river, 323
 Soto, Ferdinando de, 346
 Spacheford, Thomas, xiii.
 Spaengian, xxxi.
 Spagnuola island, 199, 210
 Spain, Emperor Charles V., 32, 47, 63, 208-14, 216, 223, 225, 226, 229, 233-6, 238, 240, 246-8, 255, 257, 259, 271-4, 278, 287, 343, 348, 350, 363
 Spain, Emperor Phillip, 54, 59, 346
 Spartaria, 176
 Spatense Alverado, 192
 Sperantia castle, 84
 Spirostomca, 98
 Spice islands, 235, 247, 271, 273, 274, 286, 344
 Spinosa, Gasper, 183
 Stanmoische, Region of, 322
 Steven, Bysshop, 293, 325
 Stoidum, 143
 Stora, 374
 Strabo, xlviii., 10, 56, 283, 284, 285, 289, 296, 308, 346, 349
 Strava, 308
 Strelze, 322
 Strub island, 324
 Strucophagi, 385
 Stzuchogora river, 323
 Subuth, King of, 34
 Succana river, 286, 312, 322, 331
 Suchana river, 322
 Suchur, Province, 27
 Suetia, 299, 301, 304-6, 311, 312, 319, 330, 331
 Suevia, King of, 9, 286, 301, 306, 308, 347
 Suez, 13, 284, 285
 Sulacho island, 260
 Sumatra, 7, 20, 21, 22, 32, 261, 267, 272-4, 344
 Sumatra, Kings of, 22
 Sumbit island, 253
 Sumideros, 155
 Sura river, 314
 Surcium river, 314
 Sus, 374
 Sussex, Earl of, xxxix.
 Sustali, 290
 Sutton, Edward, 42
 Taboga island, 233
 Tabor, King, 182
 Tacarequi Margarita island, 54, 233
 Tachola, 344
 Tachola, City of, 344
 Tachnin ryver, 323
 Tadius, City of, 24
 Taghima island, 259
 Taia, Region of, 150
 Tainsu, Kingdom of, 25
 Taismer, John, xliii.-vi.
 Talvera, Ferdinand of, 341
 Tamburlane, 311
 Tanagora, xxix.
 Tannais, 133, 155, 291-3, 297, 306, 310, 311, 314, 319, 321, 324, 325, 327, 346
 Tangut, Region of, 26, 27
 Tapia, Francisco de, xv.
 Tapobana [Ceylon], 21, 22, 32, 41, 143, 180, 261, 286, 344
 Taquenazabo, Region of, 169

- Taracuru, King, 182
 Tararequi, 214, 233
 Tarchontan, King, 66
 Tarenate island, 259, 260
 Tamasserie, 20, 21, 22
 Tartary, 24, 26, 39, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 306, 344, 387
 Tartary, Machmetginei, King of, 328
 Taurisium, City of, 311, 314
 Tartars, 286, 287, 289, 290-2, 301, 310-14, 316, 319, 320, 324-9, 332
 Taura, Johannes de, 157
 Taura, Simon de, 272
 Taxmarus, King, 193
 Teaccha, King, 143, 146
 Telde, 374
 Temesne, 374
 Temixtetan, City of, 54-5, 57, 287, 342
 Tenado island, 344
 Tendilla, Count of, 103
 Teneriffe islands, 41, 66, 157, 250, 280
 Tenerissa, xiii., 41, 380
 Tenetum island, 260
 Tenez, 374
 Temulos, 273
 Tequinas, 215
 Terasequi island, 214
 Terceira, 344, 348
 Terra Baccalarum, 242, 287
 Terra Britonum, 287, 288
 Terra de Laborador, 287
 Terra Viridis, 299
 Terra Florida, 32, 55, 57
 Terra de Papagalli, 253
 Tesino river, 363, 364
 Tharant island, 35
 Themiscnthlu, 311
 Theodori island, 35
 Theodosia, Colony of, 311
 Theophrastus, 8, 338, 340
 Thomas, J., xix.
 Thorne, iv., xiii., xiv., xxi.
 Thorne, R., xvi.
 Thoms, Mr., xxvi.
 Thyle, Land of, 300, 337
 Tialleslund sea, 304
 Tiba, King, 149, 151
 Tichin village, 122
 Ticobon island, 256
 Tidore islands, 259, 260, 262, 272-4, 348
 Tierra frome, xv.
 Tighe, xlvi.
 Timor island, 260, 261, 269
 Tingin, City of, 24
 Tirecotus river, 172
 Tiusi village, 107
 Tison, Thomas, xiii.
 Todos Sanctos islands, 177
 Tolstickh, 322
 Toro, 273
 Totonogo, King, 182
 Totilas, King, 313
 Toy, R., xii., xxxvii., xxxix., 388, 398
 Transylvanus, Maximilian, 247, 249, 262
 Trelensin, City of, 374
 Tremisen, 374
 Trepojentes Cape, 381-3
 Tripoli, 374
 Trohetta river, 304, 306
 Trutham village, 304
 Tucke, Master, xviii.
 Tuckfield, Master, xviii.
 Tulla, City of, 324
 Tumaceus, King of, 140-2, 178
 Tumaceus, Region of, 140
 Tumanama, King of, 117, 147, 148, 162, 163
 Tumanama, Region of, 162, 163
 Tumen, Castle of, 323, 324, 326
 Tumenski, King of Tumen, 324
 Tumum, King, 66
 Turni, King, 119
 Turufy village, 183
 Tuver, City of, 314
 Tyrma, 166
 Udall, Nicholas, xxxviii.
 Udoria, 310
 Uhabo, 170, 173
 Ulna, 292
 Ulysses, 135, 348
 Umbria, Petrus de, 111, 112
 Unefride, 56
 Ungerien, King of, xxx.
 United States, xv.
 Uppa river, 325
 Upsala, Archbishop of, 300, 347
 Upsolensis, 295
 Uraba, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 118, 119, 123, 128, 130, 131, 132, 134, 143, 150, 155, 162, 163, 180, 192, 198, 199, 218, 229
 Uracha, 230, 234
 Urse, M. de, xliv.
 Uschatio, Peter Knes, 324
 Ussa river, 322
 Usting, City of, 286, 312, 322, 325
 Ustiuga, Town of, 293, 312
 Ustyug, 312
 Utterson, Mr., xxvi.
 Vadianus, 56
 Vagoniona, 99, 100
 Vagus river, 318
 Valdés, Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo, xxxvii.
 Valdiuia, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 192, 193
 Valentia, 199
 Vallacum, 314
 Valladoletto, xiv., 125, 127, 133, 274
 Valleiis, 165, 181, 183
 Vannuccio, Biringuccio, xxxvii., xlvi., 353, 356
 Varro, Marcus, 349
 Vascho Nunnez de Balboa, 61, 113, 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 122, 125, 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 155, 156, 162, 165, 178, 198, 199, 338
 Vasilivich, John Duke of, 326
 Vasques, Captain Francesco, 287
 Vassy, xliii.
 Vastral, 304
 Vaticane, The, 100, 309
 Vecchiadoro, 287
 Vega, Fernando de, 96
 Velasquen, Diegus, 186, 187, 190, 195
 Valasquen, John, 192
 Vendôme, Francois de, xliv.
 Venetus, Marcus Paulus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Vera, Petrus de, 65
 Verazzano, xv.
 Vere, Edward, xxxvii.
 Vesalius, A., xxxvii.
 Vespasian, Emperour, 208, 342
 Vespucci, Amerigo, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 158, 275, 277
 Vespucius, Johannes, 127, 157
 Vetcha, 309
 Viatra, City of, 291
 Vibba, 153
 Vicezza, 247
 Victoria, Town of, 194
 Vidame de Chartres, xliv., xlv., xlvi., xlvi.
 Vigentina, 368
 Vilna, City of, 314
 Villanoua, 176
 Villa Ricca, 196
 Villegas, Peter Ruiz of, 272, 274
 Vincentina river, 366, 388
 Vincentius, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincentius, Agnes, 105, 128, 129
 Vincentius, Annez, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincenza, City of, 246
 Virgil, 11, 50, 91, 135, 279, 298
 Visba, City of, 306
 Vischora river, 325
 Visco, Bishop of, 341
 Vitry, xlv.
 Vitzechda river, 325
 Volaterane, 289, 290
 Volga river, 291, 292, 293, 308, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321, 325, 326, 328, 329, 331
 Volham river, 293
 Volochda river, 286
 Volodemaria, City of, 291, 309, 314
 Volotchia, 309
 Volut, City of, 290
 Vrida river, 135, 153
 Vua river, 323
 Vuaga river, 322
 Vuarectzkoai sea, 319
 Vuareczkote Morie sea, 312
 Vuithka, 326, 328
 Vuilma, 312
 Vuinlandia, 319
 Vuitepsko, 312
 Vuolochda, 312, 322, 325, 326, 331
 Vuoloon river, 319
 Vuolodimaria, 319
 Vuolok, Lake, 319
 Wade, Armigil, xviii.
 Wade, William, xviii.
 Waranger fiord, 299
 Wardhus, Castle of, 299, 302, 303, 304, 305, 331
 Wardoe, 299
 Wardoehuus, 299
 Warwick, Earl of, xxxviii.
 Watson, Thomas, xl., xlv.
 Weyszarch mountain, 300
 Whalley, Richard, xliv.
 Whally, Thomas, xliv.
 Whitcome, Roger, xii.
 White Russia, 301, 302, 311
 Wickes, Master, xviii.
 Willes, Richard, xii., xlvi.
 Williamson, John, xvii.
 Willoughby, Sir Hugh, xxxviii., xxxix., 59, 333, 334
 Winchester, Bishop of, xxxvii., xl., xlv.
 Winter, Sir W., xlvi., xlvi.
 Wolsey, Cardinal, xiv.
 Wright, Master, xviii.
 Wroth, Sir Thomas, xix.
 Wyndam, Captain, xix., xxxviii., 375, 376, 377
 Wynterton Ness, xli.
 Xaccoei river, 170
 Xagua, Region of, 168
 Xaguaguara, Region of, 153
 Xamana, Region of, 70, 169, 170
 Xaragua, Region of, 83, 84, 85, 86, 169, 176
 Xericium, City of, 65
 Xerses, 59
 Ximenus Roldanus, 86, 87, 90
 Xuarez, Petrus, 130
 Yaguana, Region of, 169
 Yaguino, Region of, 176
 Yamiroa river, 176
 Ymizui Hibahaino mountain, 169
 Yorke, Sir John, xix., 382
 Yucatan, 61, 338
 Yucatos, 238
 Zacabedera, 260
 Zagathei, 311
 Zahondaderos, 155
 Zamal island, 254, 260.
 Zamara island, 32
 Zamatra, 274
 Zamotra island, 273
 Zamudius, 115, 116, 122, 126
 Zanzibar island, 23
 Zanzibar, King of, 23
 Zarate, Augustin de, xxxix.
 Zasia, xx.
 Zauana, Region of, 148, 169, 173, 176, 212
 Zaylon island, 20
 Zebodus, 10
 Zeilam island, 264, 265, 266, 267
 Zeilon island, 256
 Zelande island, 214
 Zenete, Marquesse of, 214
 Zenu, Region of, 158
 Zerbi island, 374
 Zerema, 180
 Ziglerus, 294, 295, 299
 Zobroba river, 135
 Zobraba, 153
 Zohoran river, 153
 Zolo island, 259
 Zolot island, 260
 Zorobua island, 260
 Zubut island, 256, 257, 258, 272
 Zubut, King of, 256, 257
 Zula, Prince, 258
 Zulan island, 254





056863831



